





Class \_\_\_\_\_

Book \_\_\_\_\_

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT





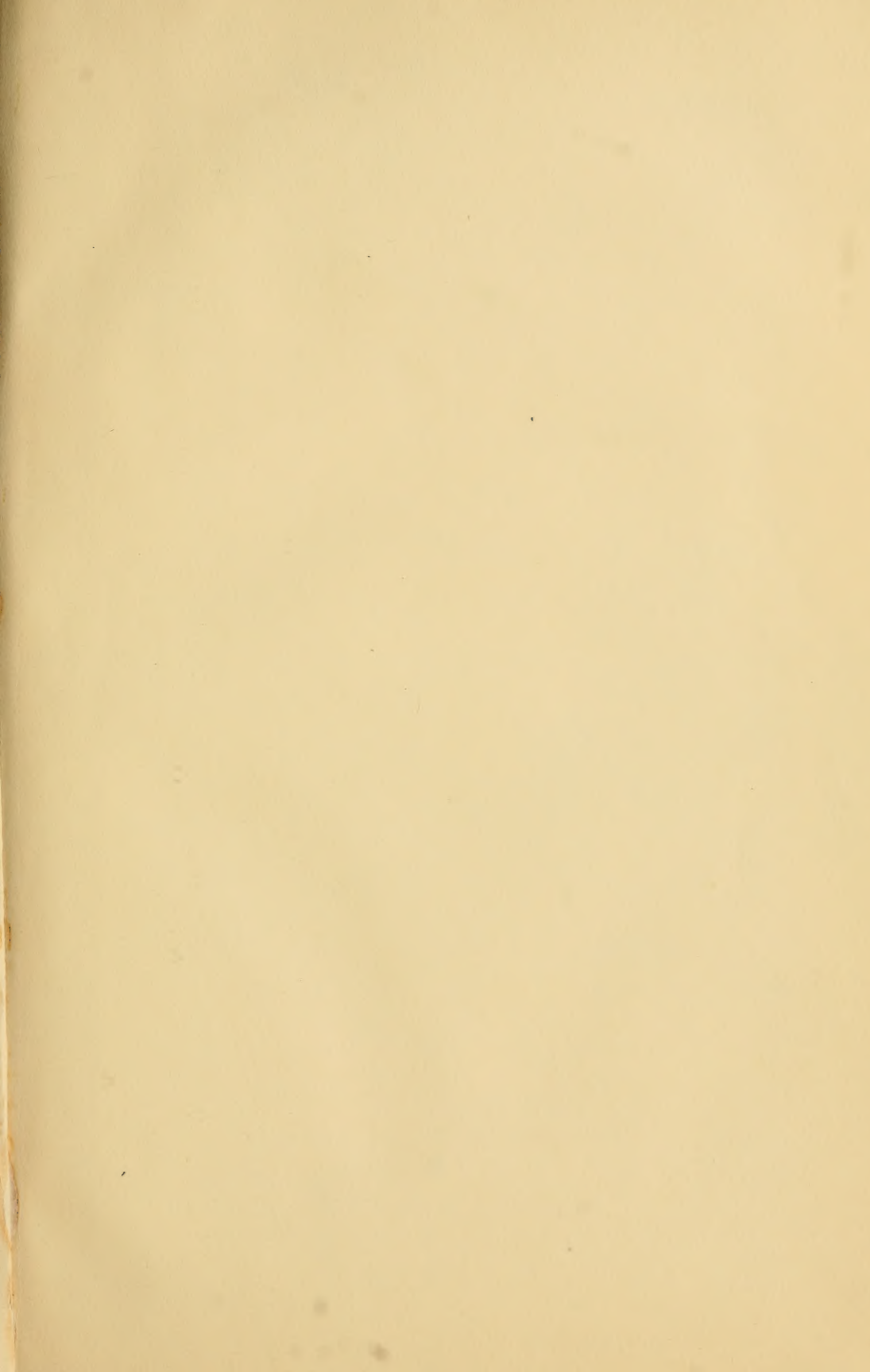


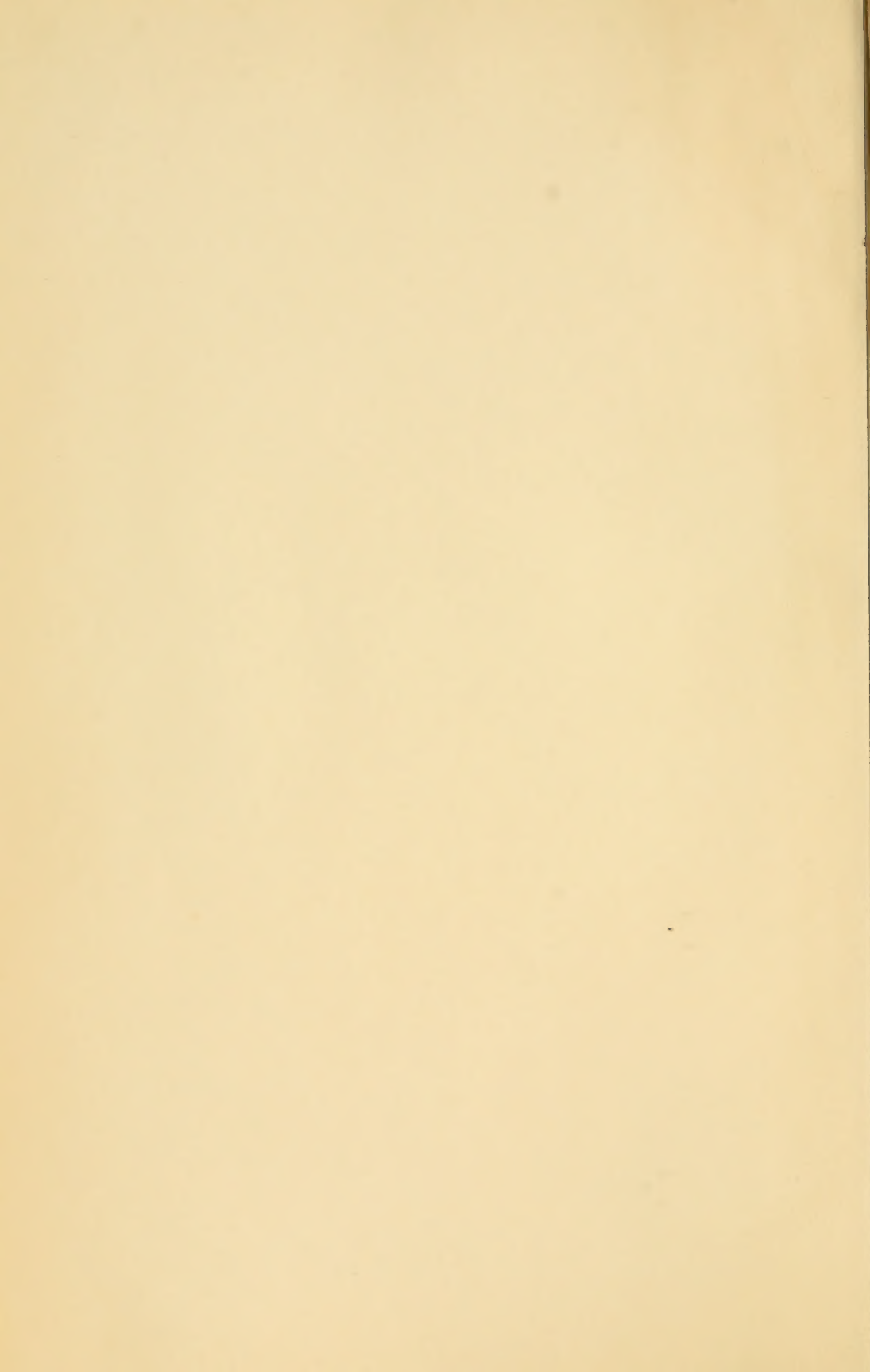


















EASTERN GABLE OF THE OLD STONE HOUSE

*From a photograph by Percy Moran.*



THE  
STORY OF AN OLD FARM

OR

LIFE IN NEW JERSEY IN THE EIGHTEENTH  
CENTURY

By ANDREW D. MELLICK, JR.

*17*

WITH A GENEALOGICAL APPENDIX



The Unionist-Gazette  
Somerville, New Jersey  
1889.

*copy 3*

F142  
.S6 M7  
copy 3

Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1889, by  
ANDREW D. MELLICK, JR.,  
of Plainfield, New Jersey, in the office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.



## PREFACE.

---

WHEN the writing of the "Story of an Old Farm" was undertaken it was not anticipated that the completed volume would find readers beyond a limited circle. The narrative it was supposed would prove interesting only to the descendants of the founder of the homestead which had been the inspiration of its pages, and, perhaps, also, to a few local readers. But as the work progressed its scope broadened, until the compilation gradually assumed a character calculated to interest lovers and students of general history. Finally, valuable material accumulating, the author found embodied in the chapters so much fresh information relating to colonial and Revolutionary times in New Jersey as to warrant his seeking readers beyond the realm of kinsfolk and township residents. It was still necessary to preserve the original plan of the narrative, but it is hoped that the general reader will take in good part, and not find objectionable, the slight filament of family annals that runs through the successive chapters. After all, it is but a gossamer thread, and one that has served an excellent purpose—now as a silken clue to the labyrinth of historical research, and always as the continuous cord upon which has crystallized a mass of interesting facts, traditions and incidents, illustrative of times and customs now long bygone.

If there is any virtue in writing from an inward impulse, the pages of the "Story of an Old Farm" should furnish easy reading and bear the marks of a "free and joyous expression." Though not by birth a son of the soil, heredity, environment and sympathy had made the author a Jerseyman to the core, and in telling the story of this old Somerset farm he brought to

the task an enthusiastic love for the subject. Throughout boyhood and youth all summers were passed in Bedminster township, in which this ancestral plantation is located ; thus was imbibed a deep affection for its waving grain fields, breezy uplands, broad meadows and babbling streams—an affection that has grown with each year of later life. This love for its physical aspects and natural beauties inspired a corresponding interest in, and regard for, the memories of those men and women of previous generations who had passed their lives on this old homestead. So it was that a desire for investigation and research was incited, tending to divulge all that could be learned of the daily walk and conversation, not only of such persons as had called the “Old Stone House” home, but of their contemporaries throughout the county and state. This resulted in the collection of material that, though the writing of this book was not in contemplation at the time, ultimately powerfully promoted the completion of the work.

All of the foregoing is not properly a preface but an explanation. The true preface is to be found in the two chapters that open the story. They will tell of this Jersey homestead and its early founder, and make plain the inspiration of this volume. And yet, all things considered, it is for these opening pages that the reader’s most indulgent criticism is desired. The book contains forty chapters. Of thirty-eight but little apprehension is felt as to their accuracy, for the statements therein have been subjected to the most rigid tests of severe scrutiny and repeated investigation. But for Chapters I. and II. it is confessed that allowances must be made. The picture they present of the farm, of its approach, and of the surrounding country, is painted by the hand of affection—an artist always prone to be too lavish with color. Scenes that were witnessed by the boyish eyes of nearly thirty years ago are now reproduced with a faithfulness that is of the past, rather than of the present. While writing these chapters the walls of the author’s chamber, under the touch of a loving remembrance, fell away, disclosing the sunny slope of a Somerset hill on which an old country house, with low eaves and thick stone walls, lies back from the meadows that border the north branch of the Raritan river, just where Peapack brook loses itself in that stream. This sturdy dwelling—seen with the eyes of memory—has a wealth of old-fashioned accessories, and



its surroundings are in perfect keeping with its happy expressions of utilitarian simplicity and homely picturesqueness. The short, thick turf of its dooryard is shaded by contemplative elms, and studded with tall, bulbous bushes of box and roses of Sharon. At its eastern gable, in an ancient garden, bloom hereditary lilies, sweet peas and many-colored asters. The little windows that pierce the western gable survey a colony of barns, haymows and strawricks; while still beyond, an old orchard flanks the highway which creeps up a long hill until it disappears over its crest, a quarter of a mile, or more, away. Plenteous harvests gladden the fields, fleecy sheep whiten the hillsides, cattle, deep in the clover of the meadows, are steeped in sweet content, while in the house, at the barns and on the surrounding acres is to be heard the voice of happy industry. This is memory's picture—one full of cherished associations. Now, alas, all is changed! Adversity and the grave have played sad havoc with the aspect and condition of the "Old Farm," and a visitor would look in vain for much that is apparently promised by these pages.

The warmest acknowledgments of the author are due to the many persons who by their knowledge and advice have aided in the preparation of this work. To enumerate them all would be to present a formidable list of coadjutors. It would be the sum of ingratitude, however, not to express the deep sense of obligations he is under to Doctor John C. Honeyman of New Germantown, N. J., whose patience and kindness have been unremitting. In the genealogical appendix his help has been invaluable, and the chapter treating of Zion Lutheran church would have been a mere skeleton of its present proportions without the information he has furnished. In many other ways the "Story of an Old Farm" has greatly benefited by Doctor Honeyman's intimate acquaintance with New Jersey's colonial and Revolutionary history. It is also desired to make particular mention of the valuable services freely given by William P. Sutphen, Esq., of Bedminster township—a life-long resident on the "Old Farm" and an antiquarian by nature and habit. To him the author is indebted for many original papers, and much interesting lore regarding the old people and times of Bedminster. Much has also been learned from Adjutant-General William S. Stryker of Trenton, an eminent authority as to New Jersey's Revolutionary

period—from William Nelson, Esq. and the Honorable Frederick W. Ricord of the State Historical Society—and from the Reverend Henry P. Thompson of Readington, N. J. Efficient aid has been furnished by Charles W. Opdyke, Esq. of Plainfield, N. J., William O. McDowell Esq. of Newark, N. J., and the late S. L. M. Barlow, Esq. of New York, the latter having kindly placed at the author's disposal his valuable library of Americana. Here is also the proper place to recognize the courtesy of the editors of the *Magazine of American History*, the *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography*, and the *New York Evening Post*, who have permitted the reproduction in this volume of considerable matter that has already appeared in their columns.

On the coming pages there will be found numerous statements of a historical nature, some of which have not before been published, while many of them appear for the first time in a consecutive or connected form or order. In reaching information that may appear fresh and new naturally some readers will deplore the omission of foot notes containing references to authorities. To such persons it is desired to explain that much care has been taken in preserving and tabulating the titles of books, the names of authors and individuals. and the evidence, generally, upon which all facts and statements, new or old, contained herein are based. The writer will at any time cheerfully turn to these notes in order to answer personal applications for sources of information. In addition, a very comprehensive list of authorities will be found in the appendix.

And now ends this long and very personal prologue. The bell rings! The curtain rises on the first scene, showing the Peapack stage, with horses harnessed and luggage strapped, only waiting for you, reader, to start for the "Old Farm."

PLAINFIELD, NEW JERSEY, OCTOBER 23, 1889.





## CONTENTS.

---

### CHAPTER I.

THE PEAPACK STAGE—SUNDAY MORNING AT BEDMINSTER CHURCH—A  
RETIRED HAMLET. 1-11.

From Somerville to Bedminster—Scenes on the Way—A Loquacious Stage-driver—An Ancient Tavern—The Blue Hills—The Revolutionary Village of Pluckamin—A Picturesque Ford—Van der Veer's Mills—The Venerable Church of Bedminster—Incidents of a Morning Service—The Foot-Path through the Graveyard—A Motley Array of Vehicles—The Small Boy and the Delightful Old Lady—The Village of the Lesser Cross Roads—Rusty Houses and Old-Fashioned Gardens—A Queer Little Shop—Wiseacres at the Village Store—The Old Schoolhouse—Boyish Reminiscences—The Admonitory Gad—The Mine Brook Swimming Hole—Over the Hills to the Old Farm.

---

### CHAPTER II.

THE OLD FARM—ITS UPLAND ACRES, BROAD MEADOWS, AND ANCIENT  
STONE HOMESTEAD. 12-21.

Walking North From the Village—Observations by the Way—The Charms of a Country Road—A Neglected God's-acre—The Confines of the Old Farm—A Royal Grove—The Landscape Full of Sentiment and Beauty—A Buoyant Country, and Grassy Cascades—The Outlook From the Long Hill—Summer Vegetation and the Lovely Mystery of Color—The Brawling Peapack Brook—A Grand Old Maple—The Old Stone House Rests on a Sunny Bank of Turf—Its Comely, Quaint Presence, and Wealth of Old-fashioned Accessories—A Charming Rural Picture—The Interior a Bit of the Old World—The Outer Kitchen and Dutch Oven—The Founders of This Old Homestead in 1752—Why Their Story is Told in These Pages.

---

### CHAPTER III.

BENDORF ON THE RHINE—JOHANNES MOELICH EMIGRATES TO AMERICA—  
THE CONDITION OF GERMANY IN THE SEVENTEENTH AND EIGHTEENTH  
CENTURIES. 22-34.

Coblentz and its Ancient Town Wall—The Vast Fortification of Erhenbriest-stein—Terraced Vineyards and Valleys Stored with Legend and Romance—



Bendorf Surrounded by Apple Orchards—The Aspect and Architecture of the Town—One of the Oldest Churches in Germany—The Home of Johannes Moelich and His Wife Mariah Katrina—He Sets Sail for America—The Great German Exodus and its Cause—German Happiness Before the Thirty Years' War—The Miseries of that Contest—The Country People Fly From Their Dismantled Villages and Wasted Lands—Peace Banquets are Spread in 1648—But Little Comfort Comes to the Rhine Valley—Subsequent Continental Wars—Louis XIV. Devastates the Palatinate—Despotic Princes, Petty Persecutions and Cruel Conscriptions—The German Turns His Back on Fatherland—The Great Flood of Emigration to America.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

GERMAN EXPATRIATION—THE DISTRIBUTION OF TEUTON EMIGRANTS IN THE AMERICAN COLONIES. 35-49.

First Movement to America—William Penn and Pennsylvania—Pastorious Settles Germantown—Neuwied—Settlement of the German Valley in New Jersey—Newburgh Founded by Kockerthal—The Great Hegira to England in 1709—Cause of the Movement—Camping on Blackheath—Thirty Eight Hundred Palatines Remove to Ireland—The Sufferings of Heidelberg—Emigrants from Heidelberg Found Newbern, North Carolina—Governor Robert Hunter—Ten Ship Loads of Palatines Brought by Him to New York—Settlement at Livingston Manor on the Hudson, and in Schoharie, Montgomery, and Herkimer Counties, New York—Disatisfaction of the Colonists with Their Treatment by the New York Authorities—Pennsylvania Grows in Favor with Emigrants—Arrivals between 1700 and the Revolution.

---

## CHAPTER V.

JOHANNES MOELICH REACHES PENNSYLVANIA IN 1735—HIS EXPERIENCES IN PHILADELPHIA AND GERMANTOWN. 50-64.

The Crooked Billet Wharf—Arrival of the Ship Mercury with Johannes Moelich—The Aspect and Area of the City—Johann Peter Moelich—Impressions on Landing—A Walk on Chestnut Street—A Gang of Newly Imported Negroes—The Slave Auction—Colonial Houses—Quaint Interiors—Dogs as Meat Roasters—Whipped at a Cart's Tail—Stocks and Pillory—Flinging Eggs at Malefactors—The New State House—Visits of Savages to the City—Indian King Tavern—Christ Church—Odd Costumes—Quakers and Gallants—Old Gentlemen and Servants—Penn's House—His Second Visit to Pennsylvania—William Trent—The Founding of Trenton in 1719—The Blue Anchor Tavern—Philadelphia Equipage in 1735—Pack Horses—Introduction of Wagons—Johannes Starts for Germantown—The Ride Through the Woods—The Aspect of the Settlement.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

LETTERS FROM THE OLD COUNTRY—BENDORF COMES UNDER THE DOMINION OF THE MURDERING MARGRAVE OF ANSPACH. 65-73.

Joh. Georg Hager, the Village Preceptor Writes in 1745, Giving all the

Bendorf Gossip—A Great Fire Burns all the Houses Between the Stein-Gate and the Bach-Gate—Who Have Died, Who Have Married, Who Grown Rich and Poor—Bendorf Transferred to Anspach—The Many Separate Kingdoms of Germany—Frederick and Maria Theresa—Despotic German Princes—Their Taxes and Oppressions—The Idiosyncracies and Wickednesses of Bendorf's New Ruler—German Lawyers—A Letter from Cousin Joh. Anton Kirberger in 1749—How the Second Silesian War Distressed the Inhabitants of Bendorf—The Banks of the Rhine a Highway for Troops Marching between Holland and Austria—Billets and Forages Impoverish the People—More German History.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

JOHANNES MOELICH APPEARS IN NEW JERSEY IN 1747—HIS BROTHER GODFREY—ECHOES FROM THE ANCIENT WALLS OF ZION LUTHERAN CHURCH AT NEW GERMANTOWN IN HUNTERDON COUNTY. 74-96.

Johannes and Godfrey Moelich in Sussex County, N. J.—In 1750 Johannes Is Living on 400 Acres in Readington Tp., Hunterdon County—He and His Son-in-law, Jacob Kline, there Establish a Tannery—Our Ancestor Is a Warden and Trustee of Zion Lutheran Church—Ralph Smith Conveys the Church Property to Johannes Moelich and His Co-Trustees in 1749—Balthazar Pickel—David, Jonas and Tunis Melick—The Religious Fervor of Early German Emigrants—"Father Muhlenberg" Comes from Germany to Take Charge of the American Churches—His Saintly Character and Life Labors—An Old Time Missionary Who Could Fight the Devil But Was in Terror of Women—The First Permanent Pastor of the Church Is Joh. Albert Weygand—A Pastoral Message from the Last Century—Reverend John Peter Gabriel Muhlenberg, Afterwards the Revolutionary General—Interesting Information Regarding Zion's Successive Pastors—The Worthies of the Congregation—A Letter from Father Muhlenberg to Johannes' Son Aaron and His Co-Trustees—William Graff's Long and Useful Pastorate—A Methodist Missionary Makes a Schism in Zion—Henry Miller and His Devout Wife—How Johannes Signs His Name to Church Documents—St. Paul's Church in Pluckamin, Somerset County—George III. Grants a Royal Charter to Zion and St. Paul's—Aaron Moelich, One of the Petitioners—The Varied Spelling of the Family Name—In 1751 Johannes Decides Where to Plant the Permanent Homestead—A Survey of His Family in That Year.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

PURCHASE OF THE "OLD FARM" IN 1751—THE TITLE AND EARLY NEW JERSEY HISTORY. 97-111.

Johannes Buys 367 Acres of Land in Bedminster, Somerset Co.—Bedminster Indians—The Algonquins and Naraticongs—Present Traces of the Red Men—First and Last Indian Purchases—Fair Dealings with the Natives by New Jersey People—Early New Jersey History—Charles II.'s Grant to the Duke of York—He Presents New Jersey to Sir George Carteret and Lord John Berkeley—Origin of the Name—Governor Philip Carteret at Elizabethtown—Pepys' Testimony As to the Virtue of Lady Elizabeth for Whom the Town Was Named—The Claim of the Elizabethtown Associates Under the Nicolls Grant—Concessions and Agreements Published in New England Increase the Popula-



tion—Settlement of Piscataway, Woodbridge and Newark—The Province Divided into East and West Jersey—The Sale of West Jersey.

## CHAPTER IX.

THE TWENTY-FOUR PROPRIETORS OF EAST NEW JERSEY—GEORGE WILLOCKS AND THE PEAPACK PATENT. 112-128.

Carteret Dies, and His Executors Sell East New Jersey—The Twenty-four Proprietors—Their Manner of Alienating the Whole or a Portion of Individual Interests—Perth Amboy, the Capital—The Origin of the Name—Population Under the Proprietors—Settlement of Monmouth County—Interesting Information Regarding the Morris and Stout Families—Ancient Dutch Settlers of Bergen—Governors Under the Proprietors—Surrender of the Government to the Crown—John Heywood, Robert Burnett and James Willocks—In 1683 Burnett Conveys One-eighth of His Right to James Willocks—Doctor George Willocks Inherits from His Brother James—He Emigrates to East Jersey—His Possessions and Important Offices—Willocks's Ferries to Perth Amboy—Saint Peter's Church at Amboy and Its Benefactors—Thomas Gordon Settles near Plainfield—The Proprietors Convey to George Willocks and John Johnstone the Peapack Patent—Andrew Hamilton and John Johnstone—Scotch Emigration to East New Jersey.

## CHAPTER X.

THE STORY OF THE TITLE COMPLETED—EARLY SOMERSET LAND GRANTS 129-144.

The Peapack Patent Includes Nearly all of Bedminster Township—Distinguished People Associated with Somerset Freeholds—Interesting Facts Concerning Gouverneur Morris and the Duchess of Gordon—The First Real Estate Purchase in Bedminster—Daniel Axtell, a Son of the English Regicide Buys a Large Slice of the Peapack Patent—Some Corrections as to Generally Accepted Beliefs in the History of Somerset Land Titles—The Value of Bedminster Acres in 1726—William Axtell, Patriot and Royalist—George Willocks' Death—His Will and its Benefactions—It Directs Partition and Sale of Peapack Patent—No Record of Such Proceedings Can be Found—Disagreements Between the Proprietors and the Willocks Heirs—John Johnstone's Will—Authorizes a Compromise as to Peapack Patent—George Leslie, in 1744, Receives a Grant of 2,000 Acres Out of the Patent—Its Area Includes the Present Site of Bedminster and the Old Farm—the Deed from George Leslie to Johannes Moelich—Thomas Bartow, Secretary of the Province—Judge Samuel Nevill and His Laws—The "New American Magazine"—James Parker, New Jersey's First Printer—The Bonds Johannes Gave in Buying the Farm—His Signature and Handwriting—The Pleasures of a Manuscript Lover.

## CHAPTER XI.

THE BUILDING OF THE "OLD STONE HOUSE"—REDEMPTIONERS—WHITE SLAVERY IN THE COLONIES, 145-155.

Johannes Occupies the Bedminster Land—A Temporary Log House is

Erected—Scenes at its Building—The Raising Dinner—The Old Stone House is Built in 1752—Preparing for the Work—Caspar Berger, a Redemptioner Stone Mason, Lays its Walls—His Advent in the Colony and Sale—He Obtains His Freedom by Building Stone Houses—All About Redemptioners—Indentured Servants and Freewillers—Fraud Practised on them in the Old Countries—Inhumanities of Ship Captains—Colonial Laws as to Redemptioners—How this Class of Emigrants Thrived in the Province—The Walls of the "Stone House" go up Apace—Mariah Katrina Carries Mortar on Her Head—The Good Wife Objects to so Many Windows—The Completion of House and its Appearance—The Hanging of the Crane—The First Supper in the Living Room—A Home at Last on this Peaceful Bedminster Hillside.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

JOHANNES GOES TO THE POST OFFICE—BEDMINSTER AND THE ADJACENT TOWNSHIPS IN 1752, 156-168.

Perth Amboy the Nearest Post Office—But two Post Offices in the Colony—Johannes Starts in the Capital of the Province—Bedminster Still a Wilderness—The Settlement of Morristown and Mendham—Lamington Church and Jane McCrea—Basking Ridge and its Flourishing Presbyterian Community—Lord Stirling's Residence—Jacobus Van der Veer's Log House—Establishing Van der Veer's Mills—Ephraim McDowell's Homestead—Johannes Dismounts at Eoff's Tavern at Pluckamin—Christian Eoff as Innkeeper—The Origin of the Name of Pluckamin—Aspect of the Village and its First Storekeeper John Boylan—Early Families of the Neighborhood—Colonel McDaniel's Saw Mill—Somerville Not Yet in Existence—The First Court-Houses of Somerset County—William McDonald's Grist Mill—Johannes Smokes his Pipe as He Follows the Trail Over Pluckamin Hills—Wild Beasts and Bounties for Their Extirpation—Our Traveller Descends to the "Great Raritan Road" and Reaches Bound Brook.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

BOUND BROOK IN THE OLDEN TIME—THE RARITAN VALLEY IN 1752, 169-181.

Somerset's Oldest Settlement—Indian Corn Grounds—How Bound Brook Derived its Name—The First Land Purchase in the County—Thomas Codrington's Homestead, Racawackhana—The Houses of George Cussart and Samuel Thompson—Lord Neil Campbell and his Plantation—The Presbyterian Church of Bound Brook is Founded in 1700—Michael Field's Bequests to the Congregation—Colonial Lads and the Pedagogues—William Harris' Tavern—Van Norden's Folly—Citizens of Bound Brook at the Time of Johannes' Visit—Prevalence of Lotteries—Johannes Rides Down the Raritan Valley—Country More Thickly Settled—English and Dutch Residents—Raritan Landing and its Industries—Mills in Franklin Township—Cornelius Lowe, Jr's., Stone Mansion—Johannes Reaches New Brunswick.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

FROM AN INDIAN PATH TO THE KING'S HIGHWAY—NEW BRUNSWICK AND HISTORIC PISCATAWAY. 182-199.

The Oldest Highway in New Jersey—The Lenni-Lenape Path From the Hudson to the Delaware—An Indian Thoroughfare From Minisink to the Sea—The Path up the Raritan—The Indian Path Becomes the Dutch Trail—The English Make it Their Road Across the Jerseys—The Growth of Settlements Along the Path—Indians Ferry Established—The Founding of New Brunswick—Its First Church in 1717—The Aspect of the King's Highway in 1748—New Brunswick's First Charter—Its Early Citizens—The Appearance of the City at the Time of Johannes' Visit—Our Traveller Continues His Journey—Historic Piscataway—Its Ancient Importance and Present Torpor—Interesting Fragments of Antiquity From Its Town Records—The Baptists Build a "Meeting-house" in 1685—Edmund Dunham, in 1707, Forms the First Seventh-Day Baptist Church in New Jersey—St. James Episcopal Church is Established in 1704—Early Missionary Work in New Jersey—A Graveyard Two Centuries Old—Johannes Rides Along the King's Highway Through Bonhamtown.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

THE ANCIENT CAPITAL OF THE PROVINCE—PERTH AMBOY IN 1752. 200-214.

Perth Amboy in the Olden-Time—A Chartered City in 1718—Governors under the Crown—The Pomp of the Advent of Royal Governors—The Early Beauty of Amboy—Love Grove—Old English Fairs—George Willocks's Long Ferry—The Town Green and the Royal Cross of St. George—The Town Hall, and the Scenes it Has Witnessed—Thomas Bartow, his House and Garden—The Homes of Doctor John Johnstone, and His Son Andrew—John Watson, The First American Painter—His House and Collection of Paintings—The Dwelling in which John Nevill Wrote the Laws of the Province—The Parker Homestead, Built in 1720—George Willocks and the Old Parsonage—The Effectiveness of Colonial Roofs—The City's Churches in 1752—Gilbert Tennent and His Severe Text—The Religious Atmosphere of the Last Century.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

SOCIAL ASPECT OF PERTH AMBOY IN 1752—THE GENTRY—SLAVERY—TRAVELLING. 215-232.

The Picturesqueness of Colonial Times—Local Color of Civilization at New Jersey's Capital—Indians, Soldiers, Hunters and Redemptioners—The Sturdy German Yeomanry—Society Distinctions—The Magnificence of the Gentry—We Are Introduced to a King's Councillor—His Vain Hopes for Amboy's Commercial Greatness—The Ladies of the Last Century—Hallam's Theatre Company at the Town Hall—Sunday Morning at St. Peter's Church—Pomp and Parade at the Capital—The Mayor's Mace Bearer—Judicial Wigs and Robes of Office—The Flourish and Ceremony upon Opening Court—The Stately Minuet, and Royal Governor's Balls—The Many Negroes To Be Seen at Amboy—A Short History of Slavery in New Jersey—The British Government Fosters the Slave Trade—Extent of the Traffic in the Colonies—Cruel Punishments in N. J.—Burning, Maiming and Hanging Negroes—Somerset County Farmers and Their Slaves—Abolition of Slavery in New Jersey—Johannes' Choice of a Tavern—Travel Between New York and Philadelphia—The Miseries of the Journey—Clumsy Sloops, Springless Wagons, and Bad Roads.



## CHAPTER XVII.

CLEARING THE BEDMINSTER LAND—LIFE ON THE "OLD FARM" FROM 1752 TO 1763. 233-246.

German Farmers in New Jersey—Johannes Attacks his Timbered Hillsides—Manner of Clearing Land—Primitive Agriculture—Richness of the Soil—The Land Exhausted Ultimately for Want of Nourishment—Lime First Used as a Fertilizer—Natural Meadows the Only Grass Land—Introduction of Clover Seed into Somerset—Homemade Ploughs and Other Implements—Wheat, Rye, and Buckwheat are Cut with a Sickle—Establishing the Tannery—Horticulture in the Olden Time—Living, in the "Old Stone House"—What Colonial Farmers Had to Eat—Some Extraordinary Dishes—The Beverages of That Time—The Industries of Farm Families—Old-Fashioned Frolics and Amusements—A Visit to the Bedrooms and Garret—Picturesque Garb and Curious Fabrics—Mariah Katrina as a House-Wife—A View of the Farm Kitchen—Flax and its Uses—Delicate Girls at a Discount—The Tribulations of Washing Day—Aaron Malick Marries Charlotte Miller—Changes in the Family—Another Letter from the Old Country.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

THE DEATH OF JOHANNES AND MARIAH IN 1763—CHANGES IN THE TOWNSHIP—THE DUTCH CONGREGATIONS OF THE RARITAN VALLEY—THE BUILDING OF BEDMINSTER CHURCH. 247-265.

Johannes in his Old Age—He and His Wife Die in 1763—Aaron Succeeds Him in the "Stone House"—Changes in Bedminster—Settlement on the Axtell Tract—Jacobus Van Doren and Captain Joseph Nevius—The Dutch Reformed Churches in Somerset—The Log Church at North Branch—Raritan Church at Van Veghten's Bridge—Three Mile Run, Six Mile Run, and New Brunswick Churches—The Reverend Theodorus Jacobus Frelinghuysen as Pastor of the United Congregations—His Son John Succeeds Him in 1750—Dinah Van Bergh Marries Dominie Frelinghuysen—The Young Divinity Student, Jacob R. Hardenbergh—He succeeds His Pastor, and Marries His Widow—Disparity of their Ages—The Religious Character and Attainments of the Juffrouw Hardenbergh—Reformed Dutch Congregation of Bedminster Organized in 1758—The Building of the New Church—Donations of Jacobus Van der Veer, and Guisbert Sutphen—Description of the Edifice—The First Service.

## CHAPTER XIX.

MORE CHANGES IN BEDMINSTER—THE MILLS ON PEAPACK BROOK—BOYISH REMINISCENCES—MARRIAGES AND DEATHS. 266-279.

Aaron Improves the Farm, and Enlarges the Tannery—A Saw and Grist Mill Established on Peapack Brook in 1751—William Allen, the First Miller—His Sons Sell the Mill to Stephen Hunt in 1767—The Building of the "Folley"—A Famous *Rendezvous* for Bedminster Boys—Penetrating the Hogback—A Picture of the Old Grist Mill with Its Pond and Rock-paved Stream—Youthful Remembrances—Fishing and Swimming in the "Jinny-Hole"—Miss Jane Bailey, Bedminster's Meg Merriles—Rural Sights and Sounds—The Loss of Water in Bedminster Streams—Aaron's Family Increases—Little Elizabeth Is Killed in

the Bark Mill—Philip and Peter Moelich Marry Sisters—Borrowing Money for Bedminster Church—The Ancient Bond of Jacobus Van der Veer, Marcus King and Aaron Malick—John Van der Veer Has Five Different Ways of Spelling His Surname—Mariah Moelich Marries Simon Ludewig Himroth, and Removes to Pennsylvania—More News from Bendorf—Another Interesting Letter from the Herr Præceptor.

---

## CHAPTER XX.

THE MUTTERING THAT PRECEDED THE STORM OF THE REVOLUTION—STAMP ACTS, REVENUE BILLS AND OTHER UNJUST IMPOSTS WEAKEN THE LOYALTY OF THE NEW JERSEY PEOPLE—ARMING FOR THE FRAY. 280-292.

The Approach of the Heroic Period of New Jersey's History—The Stamp Act and Its Repeal—New Jersey's Attitude of Hostility to Great Britain—The First Revolutionary Newspaper Is Printed at Burlington—The Boston Post Bill and Tea Duties—The British Government Applies the Torch of Coercion—Organizing for Defence—The Province Sends Deputies to the Continental Congress in September, 1774—Formation of Committees of Correspondence—The Meetings of the Provincial Congress—An Historic Journey—Minutes of the First Meetings of the Bedminster Committee of Observation and Inspection—Among the Members are Aaron Malick, Cornelius Lane, John Wortman—An Express-Rider Flies Through New Jersey Announcing the Battle of Lexington—Hudrick Fisher as President of the Second Provincial Congress—Three Other of Its Officers are from Somerset County—John Wortman and Guisbert Sutphen of the Bedminster Committee Are Sent to the Congress at Trenton on May 25, 1775—Bedminster Proceeds to Arm for Defence—A New Brunswick Man Employed to Drill the Men—Stephen Hunt Is Sent to New York to Buy Arms—The Difficulty of Obtaining Munitions of War—Leaden Window and Clock Weights and Pewter Dishes Are Run into Bullets—Treating the Men When Training—The Third Session of Provincial Congress Convenes on the Fifth of August, 1775—A Committee of Safety Is Appointed—Among the Members Are Five from Somerset.

---

## CHAPTER XXI.

THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE AND THE OVERTHROW OF THE PROVINCIAL GOVERNMENT—THE ARREST OF THE ROYAL GOVERNOR, WILLIAM FRANKLIN. 293-303.

The Third Session of New Jersey's Provincial Congress—The Agitations and Excitements that Ruled the Hour—Complaints of the People—Strengthening the Militia—Meeting of the Second Continental Congress in Philadelphia—Declaration of Independence Submitted by Jefferson—The Appeal for the Document Made by John Witherspoon, of Somerset, Insures its Acceptance by the Members—The Most Important of all of New Jersey's Provincial Congresses Meets on June 10, 1776—On July 18 it Assumes the Title of the Convention of the State of New Jersey—All the Colonial Governors Adhere to the Crown Except Jonathan Trumbull of Conn.—Governor William Franklin is Arrested at Perth Amboy—His Character, Origin and History—William Livingston, the State's First Governor—He Holds the Position Owing to Repeated Re-elections



until 1792—A Tribute to His Services and Ability—William Patterson One of New Jersey's Great Men—His Residence on the Raritan—The Beginning of Things for the United States of America—The Condition, Area and Population of the Country in 1776.

## CHAPTER XXII.

THE TURBULENT SEA OF THE REVOLUTION—THE SOLDIERS OF SOMERSET  
—WILLIAM ALEXANDER, LORD STIRLING; CAPTAIN ANDREW MALICK;  
AND PRIVATE JOHN MALICK. 304-318.

Notwithstanding the War the Industries at the Old Farm Continue—Peter Malick Inherits from his Father Land Fronting on the Lamington Road—He Builds a House and Settles Where is now the Village of Bedminster—Aaron Retains the Tannery, Homestead and the Rest of the Farm—His Brother Andrew Settles in Sussex County—In 1770 he Aids in Founding St. James Lutheran Church Near Phillipsburg—Andrew is Commissioned as Captain in the First Battalion, Sussex Militia, and Serves During the War—Aaron's Son, John, Enlists in Jacob Ten Eyck's Company of the First Battalion—Somerset Militia—Lord Stirling is its First Colonel—His Home in Bernard Township and His Military Record—The Noble Services of New Jersey Militiamen—John Malick as a Minute Man—The March of Colonel Nathan Heard on Long Island—The Tories of Kings and Queens Counties—a Special Regiment of Hunterdon and Somerset Militia is Organized to Re-inforce Washington's Army—It marches to New York Under Colonel Stephen Hunt with John Malick in its Ranks—The Battle of Long Island—The Death of Col. Philip Johnston—The Capture of John Malick by the Enemy—He is Thrown into a New York Sugar House—The Inhumanities of his Jailor, Provost-Marshal Cunningham—The Brutality of the Provost in Conducting the Execution of Nathan Hale—John Malick is Exchanged and Re-enlists in the Continental Line—Washington's Army Enters New Jersey.

## CHAPTER XXIII.

THE BRITISH IN NEW JERSEY—WASHINGTON'S RETREAT TO THE DELAWARE—  
GENERAL LEE IN SOMERSET COUNTY. 319-334.

Cornwallis Enters New Jersey—The Garrison at Fort Lee Joins the Main Body at Hackensack—Retreat and Pursuit—Tories and Whigs Alike Plundered by the Enemy—Washington Driven from New Brunswick—His Army Melts Away with Each Mile of the March—What Is Left of the Army Cross the Delaware on the Eighth of December—The British go into Winter Quarters at Bordentown, Trenton, New Brunswick, and Other Towns—The Rapine, Violence and Cruelty of the English Forces—Individual Instances of Sufferings in Somerset and Middlesex Counties—The Ayres, Dunns and Dunhams in the Revolution—The Ferocity Exhibited by Tories—Cavalry Raids on Pluckamin—Amnesty and Protection Offered by the Enemy—Many Become Disaffected—Aaron, Andrew, and Philip Melick Do not Waver in Their Colonial Sympathies—Peter Melick Accepts a Protection Paper from the British—His Disaffection Fostered by Frequent Visits to Perth Amboy—The Royal Sentiment Openly Displayed at That Provincial Capital—The Attitude of the Church of England During the Revolution—Methodists Considered Enemies to the Public Weal—

Quakers as non-Combatants—General Charles Lee's Army Reaches Bedminster on December 12—The Appearance His Troops Presented—Hunting-Shirts for Uniforms and Fowling Pieces for Guns—The Jersey Blues are Uniformed by Patriotic Women.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

THE CAPTURE OF GENERAL CHARLES LEE—HIS ARMY ENCAMPS ON PETER MELICK'S LAND IN BEDMINSTER TOWNSHIP—THE BATTLE OF TRENTON. 335-351.

General Lee's Army on the Night of December 12, 1776, Encamps on Peter Melick's Farm—Because of His Disaffection the Troops Damage His Property—Peter's Daughter, Catherine, Lives until 1863—Her Written Statement as to what Transpired on that Night—The "Old Stone House" Entertains a Number of Mounted Officers—Fresh Details as to the Capture of Lee at Basking Ridge—The Generally Accepted Belief that His Army Lay at Vealtown an Error—Lee's Character and Military Achievements—The Ridiculous Appearance Presented by Colonel Sheldon's Connecticut Light Horse—All about the Sixteenth British Light Dragoons, which made the Capture—Aaron Malick is Suspected of Having Notified the Enemy of Lee's Whereabouts—He is Forced to go to New Germantown to Prove His Innocence—Sullivan Marches to Pennsylvania by Way of Lamington and Clinton—The Effect on the Country of Lee's Capture—The Darkest Days of the Revolution are those of December, 1776—Washington Undaunted—By the Tenth of December His Army is Reduced to Seventeen Hundred Men—In Less than Two Weeks He Increases His Force to 6,000—He Crosses the Delaware and Captures the Hessians at Trenton—The Effect of the Victory Upon the Country.

## CHAPTER XXV.

THE HESSIANS IN NEW JERSEY—JUST A LITTLE IN THEIR FAVOR—A CORRECTION OF SOME FALSE TRADITIONS THAT HAVE BEEN FOSTERED BY PREJUDICED HISTORIANS. 352-370.

How the News of the Battle of Trenton Was Received at the "Old Stone House"—Some of the Hessian Prisoners Have Probably Been Fellow Townsmen of Aaron Malick at Bendorf—Sympathy for the Germans—Prince Charles Alexander of Anspach, Bendorf's Ruler, Furnishes George III. with Two Regiments—Detailed Accounts of the British Army's German Auxiliaries—Repugnance of the Hessians to Come to America—How Germany's Despotic Princes Justified the Mercenary Traffic—Schiller's Protest Against His Countrymen's Lives and Services Being Bartered for Gold—The Hatred of the Americans for the Mercenaries—The Terror They Inspired Dissipated by Better Acquaintance—Many of the Barbarities of the British Unjustly Charged to the Hessians—Count Donop's Troops Treat the People of Mount Holly with Great Civility—Uniforms and Equipments of Hessians—General De Heister's Treatment of Lord Stirling—The Courtesy and Good Breeding of Hessian Officers—Abundant Testimony That the Memory of the German Troops Has Been Held in Undeserved Obloquy—Many Desert and Settle in America—Some of Their Descendants Rank Among the Leading Men of the Country—How Christopher Ludwick Entertained Eight Hessians Captured at Germantown—Ludwick's Wise Policy

Resulted in Many Desertions—President George Washington's Coachman an Ex-Hessian Soldier.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

WASHINGTON'S MARCH FROM TRENTON TO MORRISTOWN—THE BATTLES OF ASSUNPINK AND PRINCETON—THE AMERICAN ARMY ENCAMPTED AT PLUCKAMIN—DEATH AND BURIAL OF CAPTAIN WILLIAM LESLIE. 371-389.

Cornwallis Marches his Army to the Delaware—The Americans Hold the British in Check on the Banks of Assunpink Creek—Washington's Army Steals Away under Cover of the Night of January 2—Some Description of the Commands Forming this Little Army—The Battle of Princeton—Why so Many Commissioned Officers Were Killed—Captain William Leslie of the Seventeenth British Regiment Fatally Wounded—John Witherspoon, the President of Princeton College and the Earl of Leven—Surgeon Benjamin Rush takes Charge of the Wounded Leslie—His Previous Acquaintance with That Officer's Family—The Exhausted Condition of the American Army Prevents an Attack on Howe's Base of Supplies at New Brunswick—Washington Marches Up the Valley of the Millstone Seeking the Protection of the Hill Country—The Encampment at Millstone on the Night of January 3—The Army Reaches Pluckamin on the Afternoon of Saturday the 4—Leslie Dies on Entering the Village—Incidents of the Encampment—One Thousand Laggards Rejoin the Army—The Troops Spent Sunday, at Pluckamin—The Country-People Flock to the Village—230 Prisoners in the Lutheran Church—Aaron Malick Visits the Camp—Leslie Is buried With the Honors of War—Captain Stryker's Troop of Light-horse Captures Cornwallis' Baggage Wagons—The Army Breaks Camp on the Morning of the 6th, and Reaches Morristown that Evening—Formation of the Column and Line of March.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

WASHINGTON'S ARMY AT MORRISTOWN IN THE WINTER AND SPRING OF 1777—THE OLD FARM ON A MILITARY THOROUGHFARE. 390-407.

Bustle and Activity in Bedminster—Continental Officers at the "Old Stone House"—Washington in Somerset—Farmers Made Welcome at Morristown Camp—The Different Spirit Animating British and American Soldiers—Forming a New Army—Where Different Generals Quartered at Morristown—Festivities in Camp—The Death and Military Funerals of Colonels Hitchcock and Ford—General and Mrs. Washington Meet at Pluckamin—What Ladies Were in Camp—Mrs. Washington's Expenses in Going to and from Virginia—Successful Military Enterprises in January—Washington Orders the Disaffected to Deliver up their British Amnesty Papers—Peter Melick's Political Change of Heart—Different Cantonments in New Jersey—Somerset Maidens and the Handsome Major Burr—The Military Attainments of General Greene—His Division Moves to Basking Ridge—He Quarters at Lord Stirling's—The Ladies of the Household and their Guests—Governor Livingston's Three Bright Daughters at the Stirling Mansion—Revolutionary Society at Basking Ridge—The Second Establishment of New Jersey—Colonel Daniel Morgan Arrives from Virginia—The Military Record of this Jerseyman.



## CHAPTER XXVIII.

THE CONTINENTAL ARMY IN SOMERSET COUNTY IN THE SPRING AND SUMMER OF 1777—SCENES AND INCIDENTS AT BOUND BROOK AND MIDDLEBROOK—BRITISH EFFORTS TO MARCH TO THE DELAWARE DEFEATED. 408-426.

Fighting at Bound Brook—General Lincoln Narrowly Escapes Capture—Brigadier-General Muhlenberg Reaches Morristown—German Lutherans Give the Parson-Soldier a Warm Welcome—He Visits the "Old Stone House"—Dominie Muhlenberg in Virginia—Hunting with Washington—He Becomes a Political as Well as a Religious Leader—Is Commissioned Colonel of the Eighth Virginia Regiment—His Farewell Sermon—A Dramatic Incident—His Military Record—The British Display Activity in Their Camps—The New American Army and Its Generals—Colonel Clement Biddle and His Wife—The Continental Army Takes Possession of the Heights in the Rear of Bound Brook—Camp Middlebrook Established—Cider Vinegar as a Remedy for Fever—The Campaign Suddenly Opens—Howe Advances in Force from New Brunswick—His Endeavor to Entice Washington from His Stronghold—Abandons the Attempt to Reach Philadelphia by Land—Falls Back to New Brunswick and Thence to Amboy—Greene, Muhlenberg, Wayne, and Morgan in Pursuit—Washington Advances to New Market—Howe by a Rapid Flank Movement Vainly Endeavors to Surround the Continental Army—Lord Stirling and Morgan Fight the Enemy at Plainfield and Woodbridge—Howe, Outgeneraled in Every Movement, Evacuates the State on June 30—The British Embark on Transports—Anxiety Lest Howe Should Combine with Burgoyne—Washington Marches to the Hudson—The Fleet Sails out of "the Hook"—The Continental Army Hurries Toward the Delaware—Muhlenberg, Commanding Greene's Division, Marches Through Bedminster—Sword and Holster versus Prayer-Book and Sermon—After a Long Delay the Fleet Enters Chesapeake Bay—The Army Bids Good-bye to New Jersey for that Year.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

THE STATE OF RELIGION IN NEW JERSEY IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY—THE EFFECT OF THE REVOLUTION ON PUBLIC MORALS—THE STRONG DUTCH REFORMED AND PRESBYTERIAN CONGREGATIONS OF BEDMINSTER—CURIOUS CHURCH CUSTOMS AND PRACTICES. 427-447.

The Continental Army Marches Down the Delaware to the Collision on the Brandywine—The Reader Abandons Historic Figures for the Companionship of Simpler Forms of Humanity—Bedminster People Are Not Checked in Their Ordinary Pursuits by the War—Rigid Views Held by Our Ancestors As to Amusements—The Low Condition of Religion Early in the Century—The Preaching of Frelinghuysen, Dickinson, Whitefield, Edwards and Others Animates the People to a More Vital Piety—The Revolution Has an Unfriendly Influence on Religious Affairs—Church Edifices Used for War Purposes—The R. D. and Pres. Congregations Hold Strongly Together—The Patriotism of Domine Hardenberg and the Reward for His Arrest—Intellectual and Educational Influences of the Pulpit—Sunday at the Bedminster Dutch Church in the Olden Time—Introduction of Singing by Note Strenuously Opposed—Sunday a Dreary Day for Children—How Sunday was Observed in Ashbel Green's Family—Ministers and Church Members Oppose Sunday Schools—Aaron



Malick's Church Connections—Reverend John Rodgers Supplies Lamington Pres. Pulpit; His Character and War Experiences—Presbyterians During the Revolution—The Sacrifices and Sufferings of Its Clergy and Laity—Sunday at Lamington Church—Curious Practices and Observances—Betty McCoy's Appetite and Piety—The Elders Take a Drink with the Minister Between Services—An Installation Ball.

### CHAPTER XXX.

REVOLUTIONARY EVENTS OF 1777 AND 1778—WASHINGTON'S ARMY AGAIN AT CAMP MIDDLEBROOK IN THE WINTER AND SPRING OF 1779—INTERESTING INCIDENTS OF THE ENCAMPMENT. 448-460.

The Advantages Reaped by the Americans in the Campaigns of 1777 and 1778—Burgoyne's Surrender and the French Alliance—The Enemy's Retreat Across the Jerseys—The Battle of Monmouth—Curious Scenes at the Sandy Hook Embarkation—Condition of the Country at the Close of 1778—Washington, with Eight Brigades of Infantry, the Artillery and Some Separate Commands, Winters in New Jersey—The British make a Futile Effort to Recapture Burgoyne's Cannon—Camps Middlebrook and Pluckamin Established in December—Washington Quarters at the Wallace House at Somerville—Mrs. Washington Joins her Husband in Camp—Guests at Headquarters—The Daily Dinner an Affair of Ceremony—Table Service and Appointments—Interesting Facts as to Household Manners and Customs—The Open Winter and Warm Spring of 1779—Parson General Muhlenberg Commands Putnam's Division—How Soldier's Log Huts were Constructed—Muhlenberg Gives a Ball and Supper on New Year's Night—Where the Different Generals Quarters—Universal Testimony as to General Greene's ability—Derrick Van Veghten, the aged Patriot—Mrs. Greene's Brilliant Qualities Attract Many Visitors to the Van Veghten House—Middlebrook Tavern—Mad Anthony Wayne's Encampment on the Weston Road—This Officer's Reputation in Somerset.

### CHAPTER XXXI.

THE ARTILLERY PARK AT PLUCKAMIN—GENERAL AND MRS. KNOX AT THE VAN DER VEER HOUSE—THE FRENCH ALLIANCE FETE—GENERAL STEUBEN AT BOUND BROOK. 461-473.

An Attractive Military Village—The Capacious Academy and Its Uses—The Artillery Officers and Men are Uniformed in Black and Red—A Popular Error Corrected as to Revolutionary Uniforms—How the Different Regiments Under Washington were Dressed—General Knox Quarters with Jacobus Van der Veer near Bedminster Church—His Popularity in the Vicinity—Mrs. Knox Spends the Winter with Her Husband—Social Intercourse at the Van der Veer House—Two Young Lady Visitors from Boston—Tea Drinkings and Hops at the Artillery Park—The Grand Celebration on the Anniversary of the French Alliance—Washington, his Staff and Escort, Reach the Park at Three o'clock—Mrs. Washington and the President of Congress Arrive in a Coach and Four—Distinguished Guests—The Charms of Lady Kitty Stirling Attract William Duer to the Fête—The Banquet in the Academy—Balls in the Olden Time—Washington Opens the Dance with Mrs. Knox—Judge Linn's Daughter and the General in a Stately Minuet—The Society Reporter in Revolutionary Days

—The Death of Mrs. Knox's Infant Daughter in July—The Bigotry of the Consistory of the D. R. Congregation Prevents the Burial of the Child in the Graveyard—Drills and Inspections at Camp Middlebrook—General Steuben as a Disciplinarian—His Distinguished Appearance—His Quarters at the Staats House, Below Bound Brook—Entertainments at this Old Mansion.

## CHAPTER XXXII.

FESTIVITIES AND CEREMONIES AT CAMP MIDDLEBROOK—THE FRENCH MINISTER, M. GERARD, AND THE SPANISH ENVOY, DON JUAN DE MIRALLES, VISIT WASHINGTON—THE GRAND REVIEW IN THEIR HONOR. 474-492.

Social Intercourse in the Army—Frequent Reunions at the Different Headquarters—Mrs. Greene's Guests and Their Amusements—Tea Drinkings and Little Dances at the Van Veghten House—The Close Friendships of Cornelia Lott and Mrs. Greene—Brilliant Young Men Connected with the Army—Colonels Tilghman and Hamilton—Captain Colfax and Washington's Life Guard—Colonel Scammell's Great Sacrifice—Lady Visitors at Washington's Headquarters—Light Horse Harry Lee at Phil's Hill—Philip Van Horn and His Five Handsome Daughters—The Arrival of M. Gerard and Don Juan de Miralles—The Spanish Envoy and His Mission—The Army Parades in their Honor—A Gala Occasion for Old Bound Brook—The Grand Stand and the Costumes of its Occupants—The Appearance Presented by Washington, His Generals, and Guests on the Field—Disposition of the Troops—Evolutions and Field Manœuvres of the Army—Enthusiasm of the Multitude when the Battalions Pay the Marching Salute—After the Review Steuben Entertains Washington, the Foreign Guests and Sixty Officers—Merriment and Hilarity at the Banquet Under the Trees—The Clever Young Men of the Baron's Military Family—Indians in Camp—Five Soldiers Sit on their Coffins Under the Gallows—The Jersey Brigade in the Indian Campaign—In July the Troops Break Camp and March to the Hudson.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

THE WEDDING OF WILLIAM DUER AND LADY KITTY STIRLING—PRINCETON COLLEGE IN THE REVOLUTION—THE FAMOUS RAID OF THE QUEEN'S RANGERS THROUGH THE RARITAN VALLEY. 493-510.

Wedding Festivities at Basking Ridge—Civic and Military Guests—How Lord Stirling Lost His New Jersey Property—Princeton College Has Its First Commencement Since the Outbreak of the War—Nassau Hall and the Presbyterian Church Stripped by the Enemy—The Graduating Class of 1783—Washington and Continental Congress Listen to the Valedictorian, Ashbel Green—Echoes from the Walls of "Old Nassau"—The Name Occasioned by the Humility of a Royal Governor—The Founding of Presbyterianism in New Jersey—Some Early Ecclesiastic History—In 1747 the College Removed from Elizabethtown to Newark—Reverend Aaron Burr, Its Second President—The Beginning of Things at Princeton in 1757—The Simplicity of the College Curriculum in Colonial Times—In October, 1779, the Queen's American Rangers Raid Through the Raritan Valley—Major Robert Rogers, the First Commander of This Partisan Corps—Lieut.-Col. John Graves Simcoe Assumes Command in 1777—This Raid Conceded to Have Been a Brilliant Military Enterprise—Its Object and the Details of the March—Destruction of Washington's Boats and the Dutch

Reformed Church at Van Veghten's Bridge—The Court House and Two Dwellings Burned at Millstone—The Rangers Meet Disaster in an Ambuscade—Simcoe Is Made a Prisoner—The Raiders Charge Some Mounted Militia-men, and Kill Capt. Peter V. Voorhees—They Escape to South River, Joining Their Supporting Body of Infantry—Jonathan Ford Morris' Services to Col. Simcoe—The Sequence of This Raid Was the Founding of Somerville.

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE COLD WINTER OF 1780—WASHINGTON'S ARMY AGAIN AT MORRISTOWN—VARIED AND INTERESTING CAMP EXPERIENCES—FIGHTING AT CONNECTICUT FARMS AND SPRINGFIELD. 511-527.

The Current of Bedminster Domestic Life—The Army Goes into Winter Quarters Between Morristown and Mendham—Family Arrangements at Headquarters—The Main Encampment on Kimball Hill—Watch Towers, Beacons and Alarm Guns—Nearly Five Months of Snow—The Frozen Raritan a Highway for Teams—The Great January Storm—Citizens and Militia Fighting Snow Drifts—The Army in an Extremity for Food and Clothing—Some Curious Examples of Currency Depreciation—Lord Stirling's Unsuccessful Enterprise on Staten Island—Elizabethtown Surprised and the Presbyterian Church Burned—Social Features of Morristown Camp Life—Elizabeth Schuyler's Arrival Causes a Flutter in Military Circles—Colonel Tilghman Describes her Fascinations—Her Engagement to Colonel Hamilton—Distinguished Foreign Visitors at Morristown—Another Grand Review and Public Ball. Don Juan de Miralles Dies at Headquarters—The Ostentation and Display at his Funeral—Disatisfaction of the Soldiers at Remaining so Long Unpaid—A War of Plunder on the Inhabitants Threatened—Dramatic Scenes at an Execution—Fighting at Connecticut Farms and Springfield—The Youthful but Gray-haired Captain Steele Commands Mrs. Washington's Guard—Members of Congress as Volunteers and Trencher men—The Jersey Militia Cover Themselves with Glory—Breaking Camp in Kimball Hill—Arrival of the French Army—The Treachery of Arnold and the Death of Andre.

## CHAPTER XXXV.

THE MUTINIES OF THE PENNSYLVANIA AND NEW JERSEY LINES—THE FRENCH ARMY IN BEDMINSTER ON THE WAY TO VIRGINIA—THE HANGING OF CAPTAIN JOSHUA HUDDY AND THE CASE OF CAPTAIN ASGILL. 528-546.

The Last of Campaigning in Somerset and Morris Counties—The Penn. Troops Mutiny and March for Philadelphia under their Non-Commissioned Officers—The Country People Alarmed Lest Depredations be Committed—Gen. Wayne's Admirable Behavior Prevents Excesses—Sir Henry Clinton Sends Two Tories, Offering the Rebels his Support, and Rewards for Desertion—The Spies Delivered by the Soldiers to American Authorities—Congress meets the Insurgents at Princeton and Adjusts Their Difficulties—Two Weeks Later the New Jersey Line Mutinies at Pompton—The Revolters Are Subdued, and their Ringleaders Punished—Gates' Disasters, and Greene's Successes at the South—La Fayette's Rapid March Through New Jersey—The American and French Armies Combine in July on The Hudson—How Washington Deluded Sir Henry Clinton—The Operations of Cornwallis in Virginia—In August the Allied



Aaron Malick Pays a Government Tax for the Use of One—The People's Protest Against this Impost—How Somerset's Paupers Were Treated—Aaron and Daniel as Overseers of the Poor—Some Interesting Bills and Papers Showing Their Care—Snuff for the Widow Bidderman, Pork for Joseph Nicholson, and a Shirt in which To Bury Thomas Cary—Nicholas Arrowsmith Presents a Bill to the Overseers—All About This Worthy Citizen—Dr. Robert Henry and his Care of the Poor—His Revolutionary Record—Lawyer Thomas P. Johnson Argues and Loses a Case for the Bedminster Overseers—In 1792 Daniel Melick Goes on a Trading Voyage to Georgia—Cutting Off Negroes' Ears and Branding their Foreheads—Raffles and Horse Races—He Boards at the Widow Spencer's at Savannah—The Goods He Buys and Sells—The Voyage Home On the "Ship Jenny"—In 1786 Aaron Malick Buys Yombo, His First Slave—His Wife's Quaker Nature Rebels Against Slaveholding—Unprepossessing Yombo, and his Idiosyncracies—A Survey of the Occupants of the Old Stone House in 1797—Aaron Buys From General John Taylor a Whole Family of Slaves—Honest Black Dick, Nance, and their Many Children—Death of Charlotte Malick—Slave Life on the Old Farm—Pleasures and Privileges of the Bondspeople—Dick and Nance Give a Christmas Party—They and Their Flock go to "General Training"—The Death and Funeral of Aaron Malick—His Will Directs the Future Manumission of Some of his Slaves—Scenes at the Vendue of his Effects—Dick, Nance, and their Youngest Child are Bought by Daniel Melick—The Distribution of the Other Negroes—Daniel at the Head of the Household.

---

## CHAPTER XL.

WHAT THE OLD PAPERS HAVE TO SAY ABOUT THE DRINKING HABITS OF OUR FOREFATHERS—THE LAST CENTURY'S TIDAL WAVE OF INTemperance—NATIONAL REFORM—FAREWELL TO THE OLD FARM. 613-625.

The Story of the Growth of Intemperance in the American Colonies—Ancient and Modern Laws Concerning Drunkenness Compared—Intemperance the Gradual Growth of Many Hundred Years—Its Worse Stage is Reached at the Close of the Last and the Beginning of the Present Century—The Introduction of Rum and Apple-Jack into the American Colonies—Sweet, Rich Brandies are Distilled from Peaches, Pears, Plums and Persimmons—Apple-Jack Becomes the New Jersey Standard Tipple—The First Still for its Manufacture is Set up in Morris County—Some Curious Examples of the Extent of the Drinking Vice—Topsy Guests Dance at Weddings, Topsy Mourners Reel at Funerals—Even Clergymen do not Escape the Contagion—Drinking at Installations and at Con-sociation Meetings—Ministers as Distillers—The Cultivation of Lands Neglected and Soil Planted with Orchards—Eight Distilleries in One Township Along the Raritan—Early Efforts to Stem this Overwhelming Torrent of Human Folly—The Lamentations and Warnings of John Wesley, John Adams, and Israel Putnam—Doctor Benjamin Rush Becomes the Pioneer of Temperance Reform—His Protest, in 1777 Against the Government Supplying Liquor to the Troops—In 1785 He Issues His Famous Temperance Tract—The Doctor's Tireless Energy in the Cause Enlists Sympathy of Others—Lyman Beecher's Powerful Sermons for Reform—The First Temperance Society in 1808—The Progress of the Movement Exceedingly Slow—An Unpropitious Time for Instilling Restrictive Ideas in the People's Minds—Crude Views as to Moderate Drinking—It is 1826 Before the Cause is Recognized as a Power for Good—The Rearing of the Grand Superstructure of National Reform—Farewell to the Old Farm—What Our Searches Have Revealed—A Final Survey of its Generations.



## ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

EASTERN GABLE OF THE OLD STONE HOUSE.....	Frontispiece
BEDMINSTER CHURCH.....	facing page 6
EVANGELICAL HEAD-CHURCH, BENDORF.....	facing page 92
THE OLD STONE HOUSE.....	facing page 154

[See ADDENDA, p. 713.]



*"This field is so spacious, that it were easy for a man to lose himself in it: and if I should spend all my pilgrimage in this walk, my time would sooner end than my way."*

—BISHOP HALL.





# THE STORY OF AN OLD FARM

OR

Life in New Jersey in the Eighteenth Century.

## CHAPTER I.

*The Peapack Stage—Sunday Morning at Bedminster Church—  
A Retired Hamlet.*

THE traveller by the old highway—the post or stage road—leading from Somerville to Peapack, in Somerset county, New Jersey, will remember the village of the Lesser Cross Roads, which faces one when some eight miles on the journey, perched on the southerly side of a sloping eminence.

“One of those little places that have run  
Half up the hill beneath the blazing sun,  
And then sat down to rest, as if to say,  
‘I climb no farther upward, come what may!’”

Just here is located the “Old Farm,” whose story, or rather the story of whose early settlers and their contemporaries, it is purposed to chronicle. Let us visit this little hamlet and learn something of its history, and of the generations that have lived, toiled and died amid the cheerful hills and smiling valleys of the rolling country north of the village; for it is the gateway of Somerset’s most pleasing regions—the approach to scenes of quiet beauty and pastoral loveliness unsurpassed in this portion of New Jersey.

We will choose one of those generous June days when early summer has veiled its youthful bloom in a maze of leaf, mystery and shade. That our approach to this secluded village may be with an humble spirit, in harmony with the rural calm of its homely atmosphere, we will journey down—or rather up—by the travel-stained stage-wagon that for so many years has lum-

bered out of Somerville every afternoon about three o'clock. Squeezing in on the front seat by the driver's side, our legs and feet are soon seemingly inextricably entangled with mail bags, bundles, whiffletrees and the horses' tails. Well! the stage is "loaded up," three on a seat—twelve inside—with quite a mountain of luggage piled up behind. Rattling down the main street, and turning north on the Peapack road, the town, with its outlying villas standing amid parterres of flowers and shaded gardens, is soon left behind. Pounding over a wooden bridge that spans a little stream the fair-ground is passed, and the team settles down to its regulation jog of five miles an hour, over the pleasant levels of Bridgewater township. On either side lie well-tilled fields, rich with the promise of bounteous harvests. Barn-swallows twitter in a farmyard hard by; a kingfisher, with a loud cry, sails away at our approach, and another little tenant of the air salutes us from behind a hedge with a flood of sweet harmony. From over the fences come the sound of whetting scythes, the rattle of mowing knives, and the talk and laughter of the haymakers; while the breeze for miles away is fragrant with the perfume of freshly tossed clover-cocks.

Insensibly the passengers grow more sociably inclined as they exclaim over the charming weather, the rustic beauty of the landscape, and the sweet sounds of nature on every side. Our driver proves to be loquacious, and familiar with all the gossip of the long road he has travelled twice daily for many years, so he soon has his passengers in animated talk as to the news of their respective neighborhoods. Stop after stop is made at farm-houses and cottages by the roadside; now to leave a morning paper—twelve hours from the New York press—now a bundle or package, which latter has to be fished from under the seats, calling out nervous giggles from the women, with numerous "oh mys!"—"that's my foot!"—and like ejaculations. Now and then some one is "taken up," or "let down," the last stop for that purpose having been to discharge a stout farmer's wife from the rear seat of the stage; the intervening passengers must need crouch, half standing, holding down the backs of the seats, while she wades to the door, dragging after her a large newspaper parcel, a spreading turkey-feather fan, and a huge paper bandbox encased in blue checked gingham. This *impedimenta*



carries in its wake several hats and belongings of her fellow travellers. The stout woman receives a warm welcome from two buxom girls and a sunburned farmer, who wait behind a paling fence, with a background of well-sweep, rusty clapboards, and porch o'erclambered with honeysuckle and June roses. The wide-open, brown eyes of the shorter and plumper girl take in with lively interest each occupant of the stage. While leaning gracefully over the gate, the sunlight burnishing her rich waves of chestnut hair, the maiden's glances rest a little longer, perhaps, on the younger men of the party. But her glimpse of the travelling world is transitory, for soon our Jehu, having collected his fare, has returned a fat wallet to his trouser-leg, and climbed over the front wheels to his seat. The stage rattles on, and reaching a short incline bounces over a "thankee-marm," sending the trunks on the shakky rack behind springing in air, and the rebound almost bumping together the knees and chins of those of us on the front seat.

We are now on the new road—so the driver tells us. There is certainly nothing in the highway peculiarly applicable to newness, but like the New Forest in England, or Harper's New Monthly Magazine in New York, having once been new it never can grow old. Besides, it must be new—you can see for yourself the old road meandering off toward the foot hills on the east, taking in on its way an ancient weather-beaten tavern, that once did a flourishing business. But this "cut off" was opened some thirty years ago, leaving the old hostelrie stranded in the shallows of deserted traffic. Should the ghost of its former proprietor, the genial Bill Allen, ever walk its crumbling porches, he could easily discern across the fields the tide of travel setting along the new road, which once paid tribute in a silvery stream to his now decaying till.

By and by the horses are tugging and straining up the long ascent of a spur of the "Blue" range of New Jersey hills, which the people hereabouts delight in calling "the mountains." Reaching the crest, we pause for a breathing, and enjoy an extended view of a charming landscape, richly diversified with the variegated hues of the luxuriant June vegetation. In the foreground lies the Revolutionary village of Pluckamin; church spires rising above the dense foliage of the clustering trees,

mark the hiding places of other little villages that dot the undulating western plain; while, far north, binding the horizon, are billows of verdure—the swelling hills and green valleys of Bedminster and Peapack. On descending the hill and crossing Chambers brook, which is the line between Bridgewater and Bedminster townships, one of the oldest houses of the neighborhood is passed. It was built in 1756 by an Irishman named Laferty, who afterwards became unpleasantly notorious as the father of a very beautiful and profligate daughter, who brought upon more than one prominent family in this part of Somerset much shame and grief. Her son, hung in Somerville the early part of this century, is the only white man who has suffered capital punishment in this county since the Revolution.

Presently the stage is clattering through the main street of Pluckamin, and draws up in front of the tavern\* door, offering to the village loungers who adorn the empty dry-goods boxes in front of the several stories, their daily ten minute dose of mild excitement. Here the mails are changed, and we embrace the opportunity to stretch our legs on the tavern porch. Some of the party, “athirst with breezy progression,” disappear inside, in search of what a jocose Californian would call “interior decorations,” but in the vernacular of this part of the country is known as “a leetle apple.” This is historic ground. On the open space facing us, where the different roads converge, Washington, Knox, Greene and the conquerors at Princeton have stood about, and talked over the needs and plans of the Revolutionary army. Many of the ancient buildings in this vicinity are unchanged, save by the picturesque hand of time, since those doughty days. But we must be off!—the horses have been watered, the driver is on his seat. While telling the story of the “Old Farm,” we shall more than once have occasion to visit Pluckamin, and repeople its streets with almost forgotten worthies, with whom we can gossip at our leisure over those stormy days of long ago.

The next point of interest on the route is the North Branch of the Raritan, which the road crosses where it flows through a shady glen, near Van der Veer’s mills. The banks are fringed with forest trees whose interlacing branches form over the

---

\*Since destroyed by fire.

devious stream a roof of almost impenetrable foliage. At times the waters brawl over the shallows, offering to thirsty cattle a convenient and picturesque ford; but now, owing to early summer rains, the river is brimming. Rumbling over the bridge we hear the musical sound of falling waters, and looking up under the overhanging boughs discover the torrent plunging headlong over the dam\* in an impetuous flood. The cool afternoon breeze blowing down the river comes to us laden with delicious, woodsy, watery odors, which quicken our recollections and agitate our youthful remembrances. Again we are boys, with cork dobbers, buckshot sinkers and hickory poles, angling in the pond above for the slippery catfish, the darting dace, or the elusive sucker. Featherbed Lane is what they call the bit of road beyond the bridge. Successive years have brought successive loads of stone, until the roadway has risen above the lowlands on either side, and travel is no longer impeded by the annual spring freshets, as of yore. Time was when just here and beyond stood a fine forest of over four hundred acres; but that was during the life of that eccentric genius, Doctor Henry Van der Veer, who was blessed with the good old English prejudice against the felling of timber. But with his death came the iconoclastic heir, who soon robbed the estate of its chief pride and glory. Let us hope that the Doctor's rest in Bedminster churchyard was undisturbed by the ring of the woodsman's axe, and the crash of the fall of the sturdy oaks he loved so well. Let us hope, too, for the hastening of the time when Somerset's farmers may learn the agricultural and climatic value of timber, and be as eager to set out new patches of woodland as they are now to denude the already tree-impoverished country.

At the next turn in the road we are suddenly confronted by the venerable church of Bedminster, standing with stately dignity overlooking an attractive little green. No bewildering maze of tower, transept, clerestory, gable, or rich ornamentation impresses the beholder. It is an oblong wooden structure painted white, with green blinds covering its double rows of square capped windows, and with an octagonal tower which supports a round-topped cupola. It is not, however, without good architectural proportions, or a general effect which is imposing; in fact,

---

\*Fire and flood have since destroyed both mill and waterpower.



it is an excellent example of what Emerson calls the only original type of American architecture, the New England Meeting-House. But to appreciate what a religious and social factor is Bedminster Church in this well-ordered community, it should be visited on the first day of the week—on a pleasant Sunday morning, when a quiet spirit broods over field and wood, when even busy nature seems at rest and filled with calm repose. But the world awakens, when, with gentle swell, over the valleys and echoing hills sounds the sweet music of the swinging bell, pealing from the belfry windows, the old, old invitation, Come to prayer! Come to prayer! They come, these country worshippers, from farm, from village and from mill; they come on foot, in wagons, on horseback; some by the dusty highways, some over the peaceful meadows, some through the shady lanes—the immense congregation gathers. Many approach the sanctuary over the green, stepping from the elastic sward to the broad portico which hospitably faces the portals. Others, leaving the highway at the rear of the building, enter the churchyard through a little wicket, and following a foot path that lies in and out among the graves and winds along the side of the edifice they reach the porch through a second gate. Others, loitering among the grassy mounds, read the crumbling inscriptions on the ancient headstones; while little groups of twos and threes, in sombre garb, stand with bent head and reverential attitude over where sleep their dead, awaiting resurrection.

Not the least interesting feature of a Sunday morning at this old church is the motley array of vehicles standing at the fences and trees on both sides of the road for a quarter of a mile or less. A strange collection, indeed, embracing every kind of trap in use for the past half century. Here, is a sulky, to which the spruce young farmer has driven his favorite colt to “meetin;” there, a long-bodied, black-covered Jersey wagon, with a rotund old lady backing out over the front wheel and whiffletrees, aiding her descent by clutching at the cruppers of the horses, who are passive enough after a week at plough or harrow. More modern equipages are not wanting, and occasionally is to be seen the old-time, white-covered, farm wagon, carpeted with straw, with splint chairs from the farm-house for seats.

An old country church like this, which draws its people from





BEDMINSTER CHURCH.



miles around, means much more than one located near populous towns and cities. It is the beating heart, the life-giving centre, around which all the neighborhood interests and hopes circulate. It is also a weekly interchange of news and gossip, and the people on Sunday morning lay in a store for the coming six days not altogether confined to uses of religious and spiritual comfort. As the hour for service approaches the women have passed inside, but the men gather about the door or under the trees, discussing their horses, the crops and whatever may have been of interest during the past week. This Sunday morning talk is not limited to the one sex, for, on entering, we would find the wives and daughters in animated converse over the backs and partitions of the pews. When the sexton has rung the last bell, by stoutly pulling two ropes depending from the belfry to the vestibule floor, the men come clattering through the doors, which face the congregation on either side of the pulpit. The elders and deacons, first depositing their hats on the sides of the tall pulpit stair, seat themselves to the right and left of the minister, their faces settling into the dignified composure due their official positions. Gradually a hush pervades the congregation, preceding the solemn invocation. The blessing over, a stir and bustle in the rear gallery proclaim the large choir to be standing. The cheery-cheeked girls are shaking out their frocks, the stalwart youths are clearing their throats; now is the ear of every child in the assemblage alert to hear the first twang of the tuning fork, following which comes the long concerted "*do-mi-sol-do*," of the choir. They have the pitch, and break away into a loud psalm of praise, or song of thanksgiving, the large congregation taking up the refrain, till the old church rings with that most jubilant of all music, hearty congregational singing.

And so the service continues, with prayer and praise, and sermon and doxology, not forgetting the collection, taken up in funny little black bags poked down the pews at the end of long poles. I must acknowledge it is many years since I have been in this time-honored church; but, doubtless, there have been few or no changes since the closing pastorate of Domine Schenck, some thirty or so years ago. How well I remember, in those days, the pleasure with which a certain small boy, in a round-about brass-buttoned jacket and nankeen trousers, looked for-

ward to a summer Sunday morning at the old church. His seat was well up toward the pulpit, and, did the service grow wearisome, through the open door could be seen the horses biting at the flies, the leaves stirring in the soft south breeze, and the hovering butterflies floating in the sweet sunshine over the close-knit turf of the green. Will ever be forgotten the delightful old lady who sat in a great square pew immediately in front of the one occupied by that same small boy; and who, when he, lulled by the monotone of the sermon, or the droning of the drowsy bees that circled in and out the open door, nodded with sleep, would surreptitiously pass behind little bunches of penny-royal, or other fragrant herbs, and on rare occasions—ah happy day!—a store-bought peppermint lozenge. But enough of boyhood and Bedminster church. It is quite time for us to be looking about the village.

All this time our stage-wagon is still rolling on; not very rapidly it is true; the horses seem exhausted by a previous journey. You must remember they have dragged a heavy load from Peapack—twelve miles—this morning; now, when thus far on their return, the slackening trace and more pronounced jog proclaim their protest against speed. Presently our goal is in plain sight, facing us as we drive along the straight road which stretches over a level country, 'twixt meadows, orchards and comfortable homesteads. The attractive parsonage, with its surrounding glebe, is behind us on the left; beyond, on the right, down a tree-embowered lane, a glimpse is obtained of a substantial farm house and its old-fashioned garden. On we roll, passing the forge with its waiting horses, loud-breathing fire, and dusky interior, until the stage creaks and strains as it mounts the side hill, and comes to a stand-still at the Bedminster tavern, which rests on the edge of the first terrace of the incline. Here ends our ride; Bedminster and the Lesser Cross Roads, owing to a recent fiat of the Post-office Department being one and the same.

First impressions are not always to be relied upon. Perhaps you do not like my village? I must confess it has an air rather unkempt and forlorn: it can hardly be called a village,—just a wayside hamlet. In the last century, when these four roads met here, or rather, the two highways crossed each other, the nat-



ural consequence was that industrial germ of all new settlements—a blacksmith shop. Later came the store and tavern. Little houses have since dropped hap-hazard along the roadsides, but the village has long been finished, and now seems quite in the decadence of age. Its most pleasing aspect is along the north road, where the rusty old houses with their gable ends fronting the highway picturesquely cluster in patches of white and gray on the successive terraces that form the ascending hillside. Trees and generous shade were evidently not considered adjuncts to rural beauty by “the forefathers of the hamlet;” yet, notwithstanding the bareness of the place, it has a quaintness of its own, due to the antiquated houses with their old-fashioned gardens, which offer a rather pleasing contrast to the newness of the buildings in so many of the New Jersey villages contiguous to the railways.

The small structure on the corner, opposite the tavern, is that magazine of wonders, a country store. Is it not a funny little shop? Just like one of the wooden houses that come in the boxes of toy villages. Its interior is odd enough to satisfy the most diligent searcher after the queer and old. The counters are worn smooth by the dorsal extremities of the neighborhood Solons, who have gathered here for sixty years of evenings, to settle the affairs of the nation and comment on the gossip of the country for miles around. Many an ancient joke has here over again won a laugh—many a marvelous tale has been listened to with open-mouthed wonder by country lads, who have tramped miles for the pleasure of an evening in general society. Although it is a wee-store, here can be found everything, from a fishhook to a hayrake, from a quart of molasses to a grindstone. Dress patterns and calicoes—fast colors—rest on shelves; nail kegs and sugar-barrels offer seats for waiting customers; boots, pails and trace-chains decorate the ceiling; while dusty jars tempt the school children to barter eggs for sticks of peppermint and wintergreen, or the succulent Jackson-ball.

Of the roads focusing here, the one from the south we have travelled, and with the one towards the north we shall soon grow familiar. The west road leads to Lamington, New Germantown and the pleasant agricultural lands of Hunterdon; while the one on the east stretches away beyond the North

Branch of the Raritan river, over the historic hills on which rest Liberty Corner, Basking Ridge and Bernardsville, villages rich in Revolutionary reminiscences.

Down this east road a little way—you can see it from the corner—stands the school-house. Your guide has been soundly thrashed more than once in that little building, or in one on the same site; but that was more than a quarter of a century ago, when he, a brown-cheeked, barefooted boy, trudged over these hills each morning before half past eight, carrying his dinner in a tin *bliekie*. The school teacher of that day would hardly have appreciated Anthony Trollope's suggestion, that those school-masters, insisting upon following the doctrines of Solomon, should perform the operation under chloroform. Surely the boys of that time have not forgotten the Cross Roads pedagogue, who never spared the rod, or rather rods, for he had two. With one, a young sapling cut fresh each morning, he could plant a welt on the shoulders of a boy six feet away. This was but the admonitory gad. When serious business was meant the luckless culprit must mount the back of a larger boy, who, gathering the victim's legs under his arms, tightened his trousers over the point of attack; then would "the teacher" lay on with a short, sharp switch. The office of under boy was no sinecure, for did the descending birch miss its shining mark, it must needs fall upon the coadjutor's legs, to the great amusement of his comrades,—boys are such unsympathetic wretches! I wonder do the girls still have standing in the corner of the school lot the stone playhouse, filled with broken bits of china; and the old stone fort in the opposite corner, is it still intact, and well supplied with pebbles to resist assault? I will go bail the boys of the present know, as well as did we old fellows, the short cut across lots to the Mine Brook hole, a deep pool guarded by gnarled oaks and overhanging sycamores. A plunge in its cool depths must at any time be the *ultima thule* of delight in a school boy's summer nooning.

The day wears on. You will soon think me garrulous if I am allowed to continue talking of boyish times at the "Cross Roads." The stage has long ago lurched and jolted eastward, and is now creeping along the road that stretches over the bottom lands beyond the river, thus avoiding the hills which we

must proceed to climb. You are forgiven for not falling in love with the village—perhaps, it was hardly to be expected—but now that we approach the “Old Farm,” I shall be disappointed, indeed, if you fail to appreciate the singular and peculiar beauties of its grassy hillsides, interspersed with ancient orchards, its broad meadow spaces, its groves of oaks, and streams of sinuous course.





## CHAPTER II.

### *The Old Farm—Its Upland Acres, Broad Meadows and Ancient Stone House.*

He who loves his fellow man, and he who loves nature, must be fond of a country road; it appeals in tones both human and divine, for it is the bond connecting the works of the Creator with the productions of humanity. This sentiment is peculiarly appropriate to highways that traverse distant and retired neighborhoods, such as we are at present visiting. The road running north from Bedminster, up which we now bend our steps, is in happy accord with such suggestion, and gives most agreeable promises of rural loveliness as it leaves the village and wanders over the hills, hedged in by banks from which outcrop the shale forming the foundations of this part of the world. The reddish brown roadway lies on the sunny rise in pleasing contrast to the flushed, time-stained grays of the gables of the bordering houses, which peer down over the banks from their settings of sweet briar, marigolds and snowballs. As we climb the hill, I, at least, am filled with the most delightful anticipations. In approaching a spot hallowed by memories of early associations it is always better to alight from your carriage and proceed on foot. You are thus nearer to nature's heart and better able, in "pedestrian observation and contemplation, to enjoy the pleasures of recollection." We mount for a quarter of a mile or less, and soon see, beyond, the rounded tops of a brave bit of timber. It is the confines of the "Old Farm." Originally its lines extended to and embraced much of the "Cross Roads;" had the early owners declined to sell, that settlement would have been a one-sided affair: different parcels have been conveyed, none within half a century, until the tract now includes about one



hundred and forty acres. The farm lies to the right, on the east side of the highway. Before reaching it we pass a neglected "God's-Acre." It is the simple burial place of slaves and their posterity, who once formed an important element of the work-a-day world of this township. The headstones, if there ever were any, have long since disappeared; the decrepit fences are covered with a rambling growth of weeds and creeping vines, and the rains of many years have beaten level the humble mounds of the dusky toilers.

But the hoary trees of the deep green wood beckon us on. Here we are—the "Old Farm" at last. Did you ever see a finer patch of woodland? It is primitive forest. Venerable oaks have thrown their shade over the slopes, glades, copses and leafy recesses of this royal grove, since the days the Indians roamed at will over these fair lands. Looking far in the timbered acres to where the shadows and sunlight alternate, and "one leafy circle melts into another," does it not suggest Sherwood Forest? Free from underbrush, with the majestic trees, standing at stately distances, one can well imagine seeing, where the sunshine darts through yon sylvan bower, Robin Hood and his merrie men kneeling on a soft bed of green moss, at the base of a sacred oak, while jolly Friar Tuck invokes a blessing on some new marauding enterprise.

Let us push on over the breezy uplands. The road scales a small ridge, then lies along a short level, and sinks into a little dell, only to mount higher on the farther side. Its trend is now eastward, and the flanking banks are surmounted by rusty grey rail fences, whose straddling posts rise from a tangle of milkweed, sumac, wild blackberry and alder bushes. Just here a long lane leads to a colony of farm buildings—the Abram D. Huff homestead—with a background of dark woods. The eye ranging south and west overlooks a charming prospect for miles away. The ebbing sunshine, flooding down wide streams of light, intensifies every shade of color in nature's wonderful mosaic of tillage and fallow, of level sweeps of pasture and waving fields of grain. On the other side of the road the hillsides of the "Old Farm" fall away abruptly in great, grassy cascades, till they blend with the meadows that stretch to a line of waving trees, marking where winds a silvery stream hastening to join the Rari-

tan. One can hardly phrase the harmonies that dwell in the peaceful atmosphere of such a landscape. It possesses what some one has said of the Blue Grass region of Kentucky—"the quality of gracefulness." The face of the country is buoyant and rolls away in billowy undulations, now subsiding into quiet valleys, now gently ascending woodland slopes, the deep soil of the green fields lying in continuous, lawn-like surfaces, presenting between the eye and the horizon in every direction a panorama of symmetry and beauty.

On our left a cross-country road, running north and west, leads to the Holland neighborhood and divides the Huff and Oppie farms. The latter is a little fifty-acre homestead formerly a part of the "Old Farm." From here the main road runs due east over a high level, and soon has on both sides the broad upland acres of our ancestral plantation. Walking on, we reach the edge of a long, steep descent, known for a century past as the "Melick hill." Here the road plunges down over a series of plateaus, until, nearly two thousand feet away, it disappears around a graceful bend, where it crosses the brawling Peapack brook, in this direction the boundary of the farm.

One may journey many miles in many countries without finding a lovelier outlook than from this hill-top. Perhaps you think that the fertile valley below, luxuriant with the freshness of gentle summer showers, smacks too much of utilitarian beauty? True, nature does not here present herself in a grand or majestic aspect; precipitous rocks, bold declivities and long ranges of serrated peaks are not features of the landscape. But nature in its various phases fits all moods, and it has other charms than those of the wildly picturesque; those unveiled in the homely and restful scene of these peaceful hillsides have a quiet fascination, far more satisfactory than if emanating from gorge, chasm, or upheaved rocks. It is the domesticity of the scene that charms. As you watch the slanting sun illumine the meadows with their meandering brooks, the orchards, farmsteads and great barns, emblems of plenty; as you watch the afternoon shadows settling in the valley and slowly creeping upward and backward on the opposite slope, you are reminded of one of those lovely vales in midland England; vales which Henry James describes as mellow and bosky, and redolent of human qualities.

We are told that one born with a soul for the picturesque finds in American landscapes naught but harsh lights, without shade, without composition, without the subtle mystery of color. Is that true? Standing here overlooking this charming countryside, do you discover anything garish, any tones that offend? Color—why here is the very essence of the mystery of color. See yonder! that little island of cloud-shadow float over the field of bending grain, a field of a most delicious green interspersed with suggestions of yellow, the promise of golden harvests soon to come. Observe, beyond the river! how in those broad acres of young corn the tender green stands out against the rich dark loam from which it draws its lusty strength. See, too, the luxuriant verdure of the woodland, topping the undulating rise beyond yon sloping pastures. Here are light, shadow, form and color, and all that go to make a picture of quiet, restful beauty, with an atmosphere of sweet content. Bear with my enthusiasm. I love these hills and all that can be seen from their kindly sides.

Come! we will go down into the valley. The terraces give pleasant breaks to the steep incline of the road. As we proceed, the faint sound of mill-wheels and brooks comes up from below, and the air is fresh and cool with the palpable breath of the waters pouring over the dam. Presently, across the fields on the left, an antique orchard intervening, are to be seen the large barns, hovels and farm buildings, and not far beyond, a little lower down, wreaths of blue smoke curl above the long brown roof of the old homestead. Just before reaching the foot of the hill we come to a grand old maple, whose spreading branches have for a century of summers waved a leafy welcome to comers to the "Old Farm." To you, perhaps, it is but a fine tree, but I indeed would be devoid of all sensibility if deaf to the music of the leaves stirring amid its venerable branches. Their sound excites the most agreeable sensations, awakens memories of the many happy, youthful days that have witnessed my return to the refreshment of this old maple's shade, and to all the pleasure that invariably followed a visit to this cherished homestead. Here we leave the highway, and, turning to the left up a short incline, are in front of the Mecca of our hopes—the Old Stone House. Facing an antiquated door yard and



shaded by elms, it rests lovingly against the side of a sunny bank of turf, springing from the grassy slope as if part of the geological strata rather than a superstructure raised by the hand of man. They builded well in those old days, and now the walls of this sturdy dwelling, humanized and dignified by five generations of occupants, are as stanch and apparently as well preserved as when laid in 1752; as firm as when Johannes Moelich erected here in the then wilds of colonial New Jersey a home that should be to him like unto those ancient houses of masonry he had always known, bordering the banks of the winding Rhine, in far away fatherland.

There is nothing pretentious about this dwelling; nothing suggestive of the fine mansion; just a quaint low house, with a comely old-time presence. Almost a cottage in size—it has but nine or ten rooms—the whitewashed walls, massive enough for a citadel, are pierced in a hap-hazard sort of way with odd little windows, from which twinkle queer diminutive panes of glass. At the west end it is one and a half stories high, but the slope of the hill gives another storey at the eastern gable. Formerly the roof was thatched with straw, and among my many treasures prized as souvenirs of this old farm are a pair of the original thatching needles, made of iron and shaped like a sickle. Buildings, like people, have facial expressions peculiar to themselves. This homely house bears on its aged face a gentle and benign expression of invitation and welcome, as if reflecting a great interior heart, beating with generous hospitality.

There is an air of comfort and repose about this farm-house that renders it distinctive among dwellings. Without the ostentation of a fine villa, or the pertness of an ambitious cottage, it has an atmosphere of friendliness and good cheer that fills all comers with pleasant anticipations. Crossing a wooden-seated porch the open door ushers us into an ample hall. An ancient time-piece ticks at the foot of the stair and the cool evening breeze draws through the upper half of the rear door, beyond which is a view of a pleasant stretch of meadow disappearing down a steep bank into a belt of trees bordering a mill pond. From the back porch you can see at the foot of the hill on the east the buildings of Schomp's grist and saw mills. Together with their contiguous dwelling, the dam and the beautifully shaded



stream below, they present a charming rural picture. Formerly the bottom lands on this side of Peapack brook were checkered with square vats, for the owners of the "Old Farm" have not only been farmers, but for four generations were tanners of leather and grinders of bark. But the tan vats have long been filled up, the bark mill is a picturesque ruin, and the waters that once turned its busy wheel now run to waste in their sluices and race-ways.

But to return to the Old Stone House. You see it is only a plain farm-house, after all, with no remarkable staircases or ancient tiles to interest the visitor. It is true quaint cupboards with curious little panes of glass peer out from the corners of some of the rooms, and those extraordinarily complicated locks on the doors are of German manufacture, and were put on at the building of the house. The incline of the floors is not due to the old age of their supports or the weakening of the walls—the latter will not weaken till some inhuman one uses their foundations for a quarry. But when this old house was new, carpets were unknown among farmers, and these floors were laid on an incline in order that each morning, before being freshly sanded, the old sand and dirt could be more readily swept into the hall. By far the most interesting room is the farm kitchen, or living-room, downstairs. There is an outer kitchen resting against the east gable in which is built the great Dutch oven. What batches of rye and wheaten loaves have browned in this capacious salamander. On opening the furnace door the savory fumes of baking cake seem in the air; you almost see the plethoric pans drawn from the heated vault, the rich crusts, puffed with the pride of their own sweetness, towering till they burst in golden crevices. Picture to yourself in all the years of generous living the endless procession of pies, puddings, creature-comforts and dainty delicacies that have been discharged from the mouth of this broad oven. Both tradition and memory bear witness as to there having always been good cooks in the Old Stone House.

To the east of this outer kitchen is a neglected garden begirt by a crazy fence of ancient construction. Clambering hop and other straggling vines partially hide the weakness of the aged inclosure, while a luxuriant growth of currant and gooseberry bushes, intermingled with all sorts of weeds and creepers, give to the

fence an air of substantiability which it is far from possessing. The black loam, enriched with years of rotting leaves, plants and vegetables, feeds patches of hereditary lilies and old-time flowers, grown from seeds brought from Germany. Several ancient plum and twisted quince trees cluster in one corner, their trunks grey with the lichen of time, though still thrifty from the long drinking of the rich juices of exuberant vegetation. Were it later in the season a few choice yellow pumpkins and crooked-necked summer squashes would be seen turning their ripening backs to the warm sun, swelling with the possibility of future pies; and pale green cucumbers, fattening on the black soil, would sprawl among the beds. But now the narrow paths are bordered with pinks and sweet-williams; between them stand early beets in sober rows, and young bean vines just reaching for their rusty poles, while blossoming potato and tomato plants contribute their bit of color, and give a finish to this old-fashioned picture.

The threshold of the farm kitchen, or living-room, even in my time was guarded by a double Dutch door, but the demon of improvement has replaced it with a more modern entrance. We can step directly from the grass and trees of the dooryard to its interior, and at once are in a bit of the old world. Coming out of the daylight the room seems dark, with mysterious corners and outlets, for it is lighted by small windows set deep in the thick stone walls. As for the outlets, I know well that the corner one farthest from the door leads into the large cool cellar, where are firm yellow pats of butter and pans of rich cream, where stone crocks stand on the earthen floor filled with moist pot-cheeses, nut-cakes and all manner of good things, while corpulent jars distended with sweets, and rows of pies stuffed with lusciousness, adorn wooden shelves hanging from the ceiling. How often have big-hearted housewives disappeared within its dark recesses only to return laden with good cheer for my delectation. Most of the furniture of this room dates back to the last century. The hugh press standing against the west wall was built in Germany before 1735, and is a curiosity in its way. Though the wood is of walnut it is black with age, and its height is so great as to preclude the use of its round black ball legs, which for years have served as children's playthings in the gar-

ret. This massive piece of brass-mounted furniture is capped by an overhanging cornice that projects some twelve inches, and has stood in its present position since the house was built.

What a wealth of old associations cluster about the dusky corners of this low-ceilinged room. While these oaken beams were growing dark with the mellowing hand of time, golden-haired children have sat about this ancestral hearthstone, building in the glowing embers pictures wrought of their budding fancies. These same beams, still unbent by the burden of age, though brown with the deposits of years, have seen those same children, now old men and women, picturing in the ashes of the lighted logs the memories of their past lives. And so the generations have come and gone, and so they have moved "gently down the stream of life until they have slept with their fathers;" like trees of the forest, the old falling that the young may thrive, sending out offshoots into the world until, since the great crane was first hung in the cavernous fireplace, from the Gulf to the Lakes, from the ocean to the Rockies, nearly a thousand descendants of the builder of this dear old home have peopled our broad land.

And who was the German immigrant who felled the forest of this Bedminster valley? Nobody! And who were his children and his children's children, who have wrested from these sunny slopes their treasures of grain and abundant grasses, and have dotted the pastures below with glossy cattle? Just nobodies! At least so the world would say. You do not find their names emblazoned on the pages of history, nor do they appear high among those of the counsellors of the nation. Neither have their vices or profligacies distinguished them as subjects for memoirs, plays or novels. An honest, simple, God-fearing folk; with the homely virtues of industry, integrity, frugality and hospitality, they have tilled the soil, tanned leather, built churches, supported schools, occupied modest positions of public honor and trust in the community, and fought the battles of their country. Quietly have many of them passed their uneventful but well-ordered lives, and quietly at life's close have they lain down in Pluckamin or Bedminster churchyard, their memories embalmed in the respect and affection of their fellows. It is the characters and virtues of just such plain people that have constituted the



bulwarks and strength of the American nation. The annals of families and communities are the real basis of all history. We are told that the history of a nation is to be read in its political life. An obviously true proposition, but to present to the mind the complete progress of a people, it is not only necessary to understand the superstructure of politics and civil life, but that substratum of society, as well, which cultivates the arts of peace and gradually develops the country; that substratum of living men and women of their time, whose acts and the daily routine of whose existence form the true foundation of history.

During the past ten years it has been my pleasure to make a study of that little slice of New Jersey embraced within Bedminster township, or rather a study of its people as connected directly and indirectly with the settlers and occupants of the "Old Farm." As such investigations and researches continued the field they covered gradually widened until it embraced all the middle and northern counties, and to some extent included the state at large. Over two hundred ancient documents, letters, deeds, bonds, bills and manuscripts have been collected. In reading between the lines of these papers one finds almost a complete historical narrative of the "old times" of this section. Light is thrown upon the most interesting facts as to the cost and manner of living, the fashion in dress, the habits, characteristics, personal relations and daily life of the inhabitants of New Jersey in the last century. Knowing that throughout this country there are many descendants of Johannes Moelich, who have never visited the "Old Farm" and have but little knowledge of its history associated with their own families, I have thought it a duty, and found it a labor of love, to give in a connected form the result of my researches. Having drawn on the preceding pages an outline picture of these homestead acres, and of the approach from the railway, in the coming chapters an endeavor will be made to give some idea as to what manner of people were their early settlers, from whence they came, and why they came. In like manner I shall hope to convey to the reader some impressions of the succeeding generations that have called the Old Stone House home. With their story will be interwoven much fact and some tradition, regarding the experiences of the New Jersey people in the eighteenth century and such matters of local county his-



tory as it has been my good fortune to gather. The story of the "Old Farm" is the easier told because of its setting. Somerset landscapes present a succession of beautiful pictures, whose charms are greatly enhanced by their historical backgrounds. Every corner of the county has a story of its own full of interest, and as we walk abroad pursuing our task, we shall find on all sides pregnant facts and well-grounded traditions moving hand in hand down the long avenues of the past.





### CHAPTER III.

*Bendorf on the Rhine—Johannes Moelich Emigrates to America in 1735—The Condition of Germany in the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries.*

The storied beauty of the winding Rhine is nowhere more famed than in the vicinity of the ancient city of Coblenz—the “*Confluentes*” of Roman days. Here have nature and man combined in forming a scene of rare and picturesque loveliness. On reaching this quaint settlement it is not the old town with its massive walls stretching along the banks of the Rhine that first impresses one; nor is it the Moselle, whose waters here swell the flood of the greater river. It is the majestic fortress of Ehrenbreitstein, crowning the almost perpendicular rocks on the farther shore, four hundred feet above the stream, that dominates the scene and dwarfs every object within its frowning presence. This vast fortification, the Gibraltar of the Rhine, is inaccessible on three sides, and dates back to the Franconian King Dagobert, in the seventh century. From its extensive glacies, fosses and towers the eye ranges over a charming and varied landscape, embracing hillsides terraced with vineyards, bold declivities stored with legends, and green valleys filled with the romance of the Middle Ages. Immediately below are the palaces, turrets and red roofs of the second city of importance on the river. The old basilica of St. Castor elevates its hoary towers above an angle in the town wall where the rivers join, and beyond the massive arches of a bridge of heavy blocks of stone take fourteen huge strides across the Moselle. On the south, in plain sight, are the stately, grey-stone battlements of the royal chateau of Stolzenfels, capping a timbered eminence, while down the river can be seen a succession of picturesque villages, whose long Rhine streets almost form one continuous settlement. About four miles away

in this direction the convent island of Niederwerth splits the current of the stream. A little beyond and a mile or so back from the right bank of the river, in a valley surrounded by apple orchards, rests the ancient village of Bendorf.

With us a place of over four thousand inhabitants would feel entitled to be considered a town, but on the continent of Europe a settlement requires more than population to attain such dignity. Bendorf has the appearance of grey antiquity common to most of the old settlements along the Rhine. Its narrow streets, without sidewalks, are lined with low, two-storey, stone houses, though the continuity is occasionally broken by a tall, steep, red roof studded with odd dormers, or an overhanging gable, which casts a deep shadow across the contracted roadway. Other architectural surprises are not wanting. The stroller over the rough cobbles of the ill-paved streets comes again and again upon an antique turret protruding from the upper storey of some time-stained structure, or upon picturesque wooden houses, with their blackened constructive timbers exposed, enclosing panels of white plaster. Often the quaint facades are curiously carved with heraldic devices, grotesque conceits and odd German lettering.

Ambushed behind a shadowy corner is a venerable Romanesque church, its age-seamed walls and mediæval towers bearing in many places marks of the devastating hand of time. It may well look old, as it is claimed that the edifice was completed by the Counts of Sayn before the year 1205. It is certainly one of the most ancient in Rhineland, and although the early archives of the congregation did not escape the conflagrations of the Thirty Years' and other wars, the architecture of the main structure bears abundant evidence of its antiquity. It is a three-naved basilica of purely Roman features showing no traces in its original outlines of the transition from that style to the Gothic. Its symmetry has been marred, however, by some "improver," who in the pointed period replaced a round window, that formerly adorned the circular-depressed place above the main entrance with a long one, and who destroyed the agreeable proportions of its facade by elevating and pointing the centre of the front wall. At the same time a Gothic chapel was erected, and later a modern extension was constructed on

the south-west, in which the Catholics worship. The congregation housed by the original, or main building, is entitled the Evangelical Head-Church—*Evangelische Haupt-Kirche*. Together with the congregation of the town of Winnigen it was among the first in Germany to fall under the sway of the Reformation. In 1578, Count Henry IV of Sayn, who had become a follower of Luther, inherited Bendorf. He at once established a Lutheran congregation under the pastorate of Reverend Johannes Camerarius and from then till now this little town has been a stronghold of Protestantism. More than one American congregation can trace its origin to this Rhenish Lutheran Society, and in its archives, referring to the first part of the last century, frequently appear names that a few years later became familiar in Hunterdon and Somerset counties, New Jersey. Among them those of MOELICH (Melick), KLEIN (Kline), HIMROTH (Himrod), FASSBENDER, WORTMAN and others.

To an appreciative American, one who having always lived amid the new loves and reveres the old, there are few experiences in foreign travel more satisfactory than the mere fact of being within the shadow of a building that has withstood the elements for five or six centuries. So was the writer affected one summer morning a few years ago, while standing in the presence of this hoary temple, the church of his forefathers. Looking up at the crumbling window-arches that pierced its grey, gloomy facade, it was difficult to realize that when those walls were new the ruined castles which frequent this part of the Rhine were alive with steel-encased feudal lords and their armed retainers; that Barbarossa, the red-bearded emperor, had just sunk beneath the Asiatic waves, while on the third Crusade; that the sunny lands of what is now southern France were running with the blood of those devoted peasants, the Albigenes, in the unholy war fathered by that most cruel of all popes, Innocent III; and prosecuted by that most bloodthirsty of all commanders, Simon de Montfort, that the haughty English barons, on the banks of the Thames, were extorting from wicked and degraded King John, *Magna Charta*, that precious document that proved to be the foundation of the liberties of all English-speaking people. But a truce to mediæval history; we will pass over five hundred years.



Here in Bendorf, in the early part of the eighteenth century, lived a sturdy burgher—a tanner and a freeholder of good repute—Johannes Moelich, who was born on the twenty-sixth of February, 1702. His family comprised four children, equally divided as to sex, and his wife Maria Catherina, a rotund German matron who prided herself upon being the daughter of Gottfried Kirberger, the burgomaster of Bendorf. Having been born on the sixth of January, 1698, she was nearly four years the senior of her husband, to whom she had been married on the first of November, 1723. As she is familiarly known in family annals as Mariah Katrina, by this name she will in future be designated on these pages. The children were: Ehrenreich (Aaron), born the twelfth of October, 1725; Veronica Gerdrutta (Fanny), born on the twenty-first of November, 1727; Andreas (Andrew), born on the twelfth of December, 1729; and Marie Cathrine, born on the sixth of December, 1733.

One morning, while the year 1735 was yet young, Johannes gathered together his family, his household goods and effects, including considerable furniture, and taking with him his youngest brother Gottfried (Godfrey), departed through the *Bach*-gate of the town wall to the bank of the river. Here he embarked on one of the clumsy barges of that day and floated away, borne up by Father Rhine, to Rotterdam, where he took ship and sailed for America. This emigrant was the son of Johann Wilhelm and Anna Katherine Moelich, who came to Bendorf in 1688 from Winningen,\* a town on the Moselle, four miles west of Coblenz. They had many relatives and friends in both places, and we can well fancy that the departure of Johannes and his family was an important event for these communities. It would be interesting to learn just what cause led to his emigration. It could not have been poverty, as was the case with many of the thousands of his countrymen who had preceded him across the water, for we know that he owned property in Bendorf and had ready money for investment in the new country. Perhaps he appreciated the responsibility of his little family, and hesitated to bring up his children under a government that had already brought much misery and distress on its subjects.

---

\* For description of Winningen and Bendorf see introduction to genealogy in appendix, p. 628.

He had already established relations beyond the sea, his younger brother Johann Peter having landed at Philadelphia in 1728, from the ship *Mortonhouse*. Doubtless he had received letters from this brother, and from friends among the many emigrants who had found an asylum in America, drawing an enticing picture of the liberal government of William Penn, which had secured to them in the fruitful valleys of Pennsylvania peaceful retreats where they no longer feared religious persecution or political oppression. Between the beginning of the century and the time of Johannes' emigration some seventy thousand Germans had turned their backs on the mother country and sought homes in foreign lands.

The old-world and its people, two hundred years ago, were well tired of each other. So some one tells us, and the student of early emigration to the American colonies soon discovers abundant evidence verifying this statement. He finds that in the latter part of the seventeenth and early in the eighteenth centuries a countless host of dissatisfied and oppressed Europeans, turning their faces from the east, embarked on the frail vessels of that period. For weary weeks they rolled and staggered over the briny troughs of an almost unknown sea, whose western waves broke on the shores of a vast continent that beckoned them thitherward as a haven of security and peace; a new world whose hospitable harbors, in the faith of these migrators, seemingly offered promises of an asylum free from political oppressions, and a retreat full of that repose which they knew from bitter experiences would be denied them in their own countries.

The birth of society is no older than is the love of man for the land of his nativity. All ordinary rules and principles governing the actions of men seem contradicted by emigration from an old to a new country, whereby men voluntarily combat the dangers and difficulties of savage nature in a wilderness beyond the seas, after abandoning the graves of their ancestors, the friends of a life-time, and the hearth-stones around which have centred all the affections and sympathetic experiences of their own families and those of their progenitors. Yet, at the time of which we write, notwithstanding the prevalence of this universal and world-wide sentiment, it was powerless to stem the great tidal wave of humanity that rolled irresistibly America-ward. Ship

after ship, their decks crowded with Scotch refugees, dropped anchor off Perth Amboy, enriching, as Grahame writes, East Jersey society "by valuable accessions of virtue that had been refined by adversity, and piety that was invigorated by persecution." Quakers and Dissenters from Old England landed in Pennsylvania, and Puritans from that same little island joined their brethren in Massachusetts, augmenting that sturdy stock who were laying the foundations of the future American nation. The forests, which had for centuries fringed both banks of the Delaware, were felled by the brawny arms of fair-haired Swedes. Huguenots, among them the best blood of France, as well as her most skilled artisans, swelled the population of New York and the more southern provinces, while rotund Hollanders, smoking long Delft pipes, still sailed their high-pooped shallops up Hudson's river, settling on its shores, and penetrating to the little Dutch settlement which has since grown to be the capital of a great State. Though home-seekers, these latter had not left Holland from religious or political motives.

But nowhere on the continent of Europe did this spirit of unrest hover with greater persistency than over the beautiful valleys of the Rhine and its tributaries. The cycle of the eighteenth century had not rolled away many of its years before thousands of Germans had turned their backs on all they would naturally hold most dear and sought homes in foreign lands. Expatriation is a severe ordeal even when the native shores of the exile are sterile and barren of fruitfulness; how much more severe must be this experience to one who, by unjust laws and an unrighteous government, is forced to sever the invisible links of affection that bind him to a land of pleasant abundance, and a home seated amid environments of picturesqueness and beauty.

The Teuton is by nature stable; his affections intuitively take deep root in the soil of his native land, and no one holds in greater reverence the sacred names of home and fatherland. How, then, do we account for this great exodus from Germany, especially from those fair regions bordering the valleys of the Rhine, the Moselle, the Nahr and the sinuous Neckar? If his native hills, rivers and homesteads are so dear, how is it that at the present day we find the German to be in the greatest number of all the foreign population in far-away America? To



properly answer this question it will be necessary to consider the political aspect of Germany at the time referred to, and to take a hurried retrospective glance at the history and condition of the common people for several anterior decades.

One does not delve very deep in Continental annals of the eighteenth century without discovering that at this time the condition of Germany was most deplorable. Many of the innumerable kingdoms, duchies, principalities, independent towns and free cities that were strewed disconnectedly over the land between the Rhine and the Danube had rulers who claimed an almost absolute sway over their hapless subjects. They often demanded their lives, their fortunes, their services; the latter not called upon always for the benefit and protection of their own country or community, but to be bartered for gold to other governments. Successive furious wars had raged with but short intermission for several generations. And the end was not yet; the map of Europe was to undergo many changes, and the destiny of all Germany was to be determined. The great Frederick was yet to mould his small kingdom into the powerful nation of Prussia. Even when that work was accomplished, and fifty years after that illustrious king had returned from the Seven Years' War, the German people gathered themselves together for the greatest struggle they had yet attempted; but it was with happier hearts and a more abounding faith that they entered into this contest, for they felt the glow of a national patriotism, and each blow struck was for a common cause and fatherland. The sun of peace, prosperity and greatness, as has been well said, did not rise on Germany till the year 1813, which saw the end of the prolonged struggle that may be considered to have commenced with the Thirty Years' War.

But we must go back of the year 1700 to look for the original cause of German emigration. In the early part of the seventeenth century the peasants, burghers and the great middle-class of Germany were well to do. The prosperity was occasioned by the long continued peace, giving to the people the opportunity of cultivating their fields and promoting agriculture, the foundation of opulence in all countries. Some historians consider that garden and field cultivation in 1618 were superior to that of two hundred years later, arguing that the present cen-



tury has only seen Germany brought back agriculturally to where it was those long years ago. Tillage, of course, produced much less variety, many of the grains and vegetables of the present century being then unknown. Flax was a staple, and much money was made from the cultivation of anise and saffron. Everywhere were vineyards, and in the fields were to be seen hops, wheat, horsebeans, turnips, teazel and rape. The houses were much inferior to those of to-day, but they were not deficient in interior comforts. Many a German matron of the present time exhibits with pride the curiously carved chairs and cupboards, ornamented spinning wheels, and treasures of earthenware and drinking vessels that, having escaped the vicissitudes of the years gone by, have been handed down to her as precious heirlooms of those ancient days.

Yes, it was a happy time for the common people of Germany. The scars of war were healed. Of course they had their burdens. The nobles were oppressive. There was the door tax, the window-tax, and other heavy impositions, and much that was earned must go to support the comforts and luxuries of the castles and manorial houses. But as the people knew nothing of true liberty they were satisfied and happy in following their peaceful avocations. They gave no thought to war, or to the fact that the politics of Germany was a bubbling cauldron of conflicting interests, on the verge of boiling over, and little they recked of the horrors in store for them in the near future. What did they know of the bloody horoscope that was being cast by the disputes of the house of Hapsburg and the German rulers, or of the princes that were unfurling the banners of the two hostile religious parties? In Catholic communities the inhabitants were well content with their parish priests, and in the Protestant towns and hamlets the faithful pastors filled all the needs of the people. In the village *Gasthaus*, in the evenings, there may have been talk of fighting and suffering in Bohemia; but it mattered little to the villagers, as they drank their beer and smoked their porcelain pipes, except as furnishing subject for chat and wonder. As the months and years rolled on, rumors grew more rife, and localities named grew much nearer; by 1623 it was in Thuringia that conflicts were reported; by the next year there was no longer any doubt that Middle Ger-

many was being overrun by foreign troops; in a few months the Spanish soldiers, under General Spinola, broke in the lower Palatinate, and all the miseries of war fell upon the entire Rhine valley. For over a quarter of a century the whole country was devastated by contesting armies. Hordes of Cossacks, Poles, Walloons, Irish, Spaniards, Italians, English, Danes, Finns and Swedes, together with their camp followers, tramped over German soil, settling like swarms of locusts on the comfortable villages and fat fields, obliterating in a few months' stay in a locality every vestige of the accumulations of years of patient toil.

Readers of German history are familiar with the bitterness and woe of the next three decades,—an epoch fraught with such distress that the mind almost refuses to contemplate the detailed and prolonged sufferings of the German people. Gustav Freytag, who has pictured in strong outline the desolations of this time, considers the reason that the war raged for a whole generation and exhausted a powerful people was because none of the contending parties were able to prosecute it on a grand or decisive scale. He claims that the largest army in the Thirty Years' War did not equal an ordinary corps of modern times. The Austrian commander, Tilly, thought forty thousand to be the greatest body of men that a general could properly handle; during the war it was rare that an army reached that magnitude. The fighting was mostly done by smaller bands distributed over a wide area of country, and the distress brought upon the communities was not more caused by the sacking and pillage of the soldiery than by the wretched system of camp followers in vogue at that time. Not only the officers but the privates, also, were accompanied on their campaigns by wives, mistresses and children; they, in their train, often had a following of a much worse character, and all the dissolute men and women of a community were generally to be found about the camp of an occupying army.

This condition of affairs was not confined to the foreign soldiers, but the evil also attached to the German troops. Wallhausen reckons as indispensable to a German regiment of infantry four thousand women, children and other followers. At the close of the war in 1648, General Gronsfeld reports that the Imperial and Bavarian armies contained forty thousand drawing

rations, and one hundred and forty thousand who did not. These figures give some slight idea of the horrors of war at that period. Picture an army made up of many nationalities, with its greater army of followers, largely composed of the depraved of both sexes from all parts of Europe. The troops were paid, clothed and fed by their respective governments; but what of the great outlying camp? It could only subsist and exist by thieving, oppression and crime. The thatch was torn from the cottages that the horses of the marauders might be bedded. The cottages were razed to furnish materials for building huts. The carts were taken from the yards, the oxen from their stalls. The passage of an army meant the entire disappearance of all the cattle. The immense flocks of parish sheep that nibbled the grass on the sides of the stony heights and roamed over the abundant verdure of the meadows found their way to the roasting-ovens and stew-pots of the great mob, and the national wool of Germany, known in every market of the world, was lost forever. The large cities proved a place of refuge for the upper classes, as in them some semblance of government and order was maintained; but for the country people there were no such retreats. They were robbed and maltreated; and if they did not promptly disclose the hiding places of their treasures, were beaten, maimed and often killed. Their lads swelled the ranks of the soldiery; their daughters, alas, were often kidnapped and coerced into the ranks of the concubines. Did an army remain long in one locality fear seized upon the inhabitants; and the effect of the feeling of terror and insecurity, and the horribly vicious associations with which they were surrounded, produced a condition of despair and moral recklessness which were appalling. Frequently the villagers themselves turned robbers, wives deserted their husbands, children their parents, and many fled to the mountains and forest for a place of safety. It was a time when the face of Jehovah seemed turned away from Germany—when the whole land apparently lay under the shadow of the Almighty displeasure!

The middle of the century brought peace. The thirty years of tears and blood were over. The graves could not give up their dead; the treaty of Westphalia might assert the triumphs of religious and political liberty in Germany, but it could not



restore the virtue of the dissolute, nor the prosperity of the communities. Nor did the sorrows end with the war; there were still desolated homes, abject poverty and rampant crime! For thirty years the vagrants of Europe had made Germany their abiding place. They did not all leave with the troops, but wandered about the country, a disorderly rabble, terrorizing the people. Still there was peace! Bells were ringing, bonfires burning, and in the cities peace banquets were spread, and anthems sung. The rocky fastnesses, the distant forests and the larger cities gave up their refugees. The people again gathered in their dismantled villages and on their wasted lands, the gutted fields were inspected, holes in the barns repaired, and their damaged and often tottering houses were made habitable. The broken links of society were welded, and the forging of the great chain of progress and growth which had been so rudely broken was again undertaken.

Recuperation, however, was slow, and the impoverishment of the people so great as to render them almost helpless. In some neighborhoods sixty per cent. of the population had disappeared, and three-fifths—yes, four-fifths—of all property had been dissipated. Furniture, tools and utensils were gone, and the peasants in again attempting their industrial pursuits found themselves almost in a state of nature. In some principalities the improvement was more rapid than in others. Prussia was raised from the lowest depths of misery and desolation by the energy and wisdom of Frederic William, the great Elector, who ruled from 1640 to 1688, and in the south and east, where the country enjoyed the blessings of peace for comparatively a number of years, slow but continued strides were made toward betterment. But on the western frontier and along the valley of the Rhine and its tributaries no such opportunity was given the exhausted people for regeneration and revival. Peace had not come to stay! For nearly a century yet, these fair regions were to lie devastated and prostrate, the plunder and fighting ground of France and her allies.

I have dwelt thus long on the detailed horrors of the Thirty Years' War, and the subsequent years, because it was a time fated to have a momentous effect on the future of our own country. The result of that cruel contest, and the after-paralyzed condi-



tion of affairs, was the tide of emigration that rose toward the close of that century, swelled to a great flood in the next one hundred years, and since then has rolled, and even now is rolling, a vast human sea of Germans across the American continent. Without doubt other influences assisted and encouraged this great movement. Despotic princes, petty differences between small states, sumptuary laws, extortions, and cruel conscriptions in later wars, all helped to wean the German from his country. The revocation of the Edict of Nantes, in 1685, which cost France seven hundred thousand of her best citizens, brought much suffering on the Protestants of Germany. Huguenots from over the borders flocked in great numbers to the shelter afforded by the Lutheran Palatine elector. This insured to that prince and his people the vengeance of Madame de Maintenon; she gave peremptory orders, through Louvois, that the Palatinate should be utterly destroyed, and one hundred thousand French soldiers were despatched by Louis XIV. to do the work. Thousands of Germans were forced to escape religious persecution by flight. But the original idea of emigration, the first setting in motion of the ball of expatriation, was due to that foundation of all Germany's subsequent miseries, the Thirty Years' War; and had it not been for that prolonged conflict, which so weakened the country as to render the people unable to withstand their future trials, our nation would to-day be without millions of citizens who now honor it, and make it the greater, because of their intelligence, industry, frugality and virtue.

In 1672 Louis XIV. astonished Europe by the rapidity with which he conquered three provinces and forty fortresses in Holland; but the dykes were cut and the newly elected stadtholder, William of Orange, formed an alliance with Germany and Spain. In the several years of war that followed, the Rhine country was repeatedly ravaged, the devastation earning for General Turenne and the French the execration of the world. Hardly had this war terminated by the treaty of Nymeguen, in 1679, before Louis XIV. laid claim to several German territories, leading to another distressing contest of four years, the Rhenish provinces bearing the brunt of the suffering. The treaty of Ratisbon, in 1684, ended this conflict, but within two years William III. of England formed the league of Augsburg against

France, and in 1688 Louis' army was again desolating the Palatinate and other portions of Germany with fire and sword, destroying the towns, villages and castles, until to this day, from Drachenfels to Heidelberg, the line of march is marked by crumbling walls, ruined battlements, and blown-up towers. A short rest was brought the Germans by the peace of Ryswick, in 1697; but it is useless to continue the narrative of Germany's wars through the conflict of the Spanish Succession, Frederic the Great's campaigns, and the continuous fighting of the eighteenth century. Sufficient has been recounted in the above rapid review to bring before the mind of the reader ample evidence to show why the Germans, especially those of what is now Rhenish Prussia, should have, notwithstanding their love of home, been so impoverished and disheartened as to be constrained to sorrowfully turn their backs on Germany, and seek in the new world that peace, freedom and protection which had been denied to them and their fathers on their native soil.





#### CHAPTER IV.

##### *German Expatriation—The Distribution of Teuton Emigrants in the American Colonies.*

In the preceding chapter an endeavor has been made to show that even early in the seventeenth century the Germans had good cause for deserting fatherland. When resolved on expatriation their steps nearly all turned westward, and they seemed of one mind as to what country offered the greatest inducements to home-seekers, and presented the most complete assurances of relief from the heavy burdens under which they had groaned in Europe. The tide of emigration set steadily toward America, and from those early days till now, the name and thought of our country has been as a sweet savor in the nostrils of oppressed Teutons. Commencing as a little rill the current gradually increased in volume, until, as we learn from recently published statistics, between 1880 and 1884 the yearly exodus from Germany averaged nearly one hundred and seventy-five thousand souls; while of two millions, six hundred and one thousand Germans now living outside of the Empire, two millions are citizens of the United States.

There is no accurate record of the earliest Teuton emigration to America. Edward Eggleston, a diligent student of colonial history, claims that Germans came with the colonists of Massachusetts Bay, and, without doubt, some of the so-called Dutch of the New Netherlands were High Dutch, or Germans, from the Rhine, beyond the Holland border. Before the close of the Thirty Years' War the vast movement from the Rhine country may be said to have commenced, and the year 1640 found Germans settled on the Delaware in the Swedish colony planted by the Lutheran king, Gustavus Adolphus.

But until 1682 the arrival of immigrants in this country was neither frequent nor regular. In the preceding year William Penn had advertised to the world his liberal government, and offered in Pennsylvania homes for the persecuted and oppressed of all nations. Penn had acquired his great American grant of forty thousand square miles of territory from the Crown, in payment of a debt of sixteen thousand pounds due his father. The King named the tract after the elder Penn, and it is interesting to know, as illustrating the modesty and simplicity of the son, that he strongly objected to this appellation, even going so far as to attempt the bribing of an under-secretary, that the name might be changed. In 1683 Francis Daniel Pastorius, a Franconian German of education, arrived with other immigrants at Philadelphia, taking up land at Germantown, commencing that settlement with thirteen families. Arents Klincken erected the first two-storey house, Penn being present, and helping to eat the "raising dinner." Within a few years the settlement was augmented by the arrival of over one thousand Germans, among whom were the ancestors of the present prominent Pennsylvania families of Rittenhouse, Shoemaker, Carpenter, Potts and Van Wart. The most of them came from near the city of Worms, in Westphalia. They must have felt grateful for their quiet provincial homes when they heard of the dreadful ravages of the French, in 1689, who laid waste the entire country from which they had emigrated, the flames rising from every hamlet, market place and parish church in the Duchy of Cleves, in which Worms is situated.

The greatest influx of Germans commenced about 1700. Within the following twenty-five years vast numbers fled from the desolations and persecutions at home to the English colonies in America, and it is estimated that over fifty thousand within that time reached the province of Pennsylvania. A few miles from Bendorf, on the Rhine, is the well built and attractive town of Neuwied; it has now a population of about ten thousand, comprising Romanists, Lutherans, Moravian Brethren, Baptists and Jews, who live together in harmony. Count Frederic of Wied, whose descendants still occupy the spacious palace at its north end, founded the town in 1653, on the site of the village of Langendorf, which was entirely destroyed in the Thirty Years' War.



Here, in 1705, arrived a number of Lutherans, who had fled from persecutions at Wolfenbrüttel and Halberstadt. The then Count of Wied, who welcomed all comers without distinction of religion, gave them residence and protection. Here they remained for some time, and then went on down the river to Holland, where they embarked, in 1707, for New York. After a severe and protracted voyage a violent storm drove their small ship south of Sandy Hook, obliging the master to take refuge in the capes of the Delaware, and ultimately land his passengers at Philadelphia. Determined to continue to the province of New York the immigrants left the Quaker City, journeying overland. Travelling thitherward, they reached the crest of the Schooley's Mountain range, in Morris County, New Jersey, and were suddenly confronted by the view of a charming valley. Below were the pleasant reaches of the Musconetcong, flowing tranquilly between grassy banks, with rich meadows rolling back in gentle undulations, seeming fairly to invite settlement. To these tempest-tossed wanderers it appeared, indeed, a land of promise; what more could they desire in a search for homes? New York province certainly would offer no richer or more inviting locality, so here they decided to remain. Descending the mountain side they drove their tent stakes, and laid their hearth-stones, as the commencement of a settlement which has been known from that day to this as the German Valley. It is claimed that many now well-known families in Morris, Hunterdon and Somerset Counties take their origin from this ancient little Lutheran community.\*

---

\*This account of the first settlement of German Valley is based on statements made in Rupps' "Early German Emigrants to Pennsylvania," Mott's "First Century of Hunterdon County," Blauvelt's "Historical Sketch of the German Reformed and Presbyterian Church of German Valley," and Snell's "History of Hunterdon and Somerset Counties." Persons well informed in the history of Morris and Hunterdon doubt this story; indeed, do not hesitate to deny the possibility of its truth. Various objections are made to the belief that these Brunswick and Prussian emigrants were the progenitors of the present resident German families of Clinton, Lebanon and Tewksbury, in Hunterdon, and of Washington, in Morris county. The most tenable one advanced is that there is not a particle of documentary evidence to show that there were many, if any, Germans occupying the region now forming those townships previous to the year 1720, and that the family names of Pickel, Welch, Appgar, Alsbaugh, Philhower, Kline, Rhinehart, Eick and others, which have been credited as being those of persons descended from those persecuted immigrants, can all be accounted for as importations after the year 1720, and most of them after 1730.

Hendrick Hudson, after his voyage in the "Half-Moon," in 1609, in writing of the locality on which now, a populous crescent, the city of Newburgh rests, mentions it as "a pleasant place to build a town on." As the Palatine parish of Quassaick, on this "pleasant place," a town was laid out, about one hundred years later, by emigrants from Germany. The company comprised forty-two persons, who, under the guidance of their pastor, Joshua Kockerthal, had been sent to America by Queen Anne, who had guaranteed them nine pence a day for a year's support, and a grant of land on which to settle. They had been driven to the fields in mid-winter by the destruction of their homes by the French, and had applied to the English government for aid, as Protestants who were suffering from abject poverty, because of their religious beliefs. On reaching New York Lord Lovelace had them transported to Quassaick creek, and ultimately his successor, Governor Hunter, issued to them a patent for twenty-one hundred and ninety acres of land. The first place of worship in Newburgh was a little Lutheran church, twenty feet square, built by these foreigners. The settlement as a German community did not prosper. The Palatines, who were mostly husbandmen, found the rough hillsides much inferior for cultivation to the rich lands they had known over the seas. Attracted by descriptions from friends, located in Pennsylvania, of the fertile regions they inhabited, the individual owners gradually sold the plots originally apportioned them and removed to that Quaker colony. By 1743 practically the place had changed from a German settlement to a Scotch-English neighborhood. Notwithstanding the comparatively short time the Palatines lived on Quassaick creek, they left an indelible mark on the country, and a record of which the people of Newburgh are still proud. That city's historian, E. M. Ruttenber, writes that "no citizens of more substantial worth are found under the flag of this, their native land, than their descendants; no braver men were in the armies of the Revolution than Herkimer and Muhlenberg. Had they done nothing in the parish but made clearings in its forests and planted fields they would be entitled to grateful remembrance; but they did more—they gave to it its first church and its first government, and in all its subsequent history their descendants have had a part."

The citizens of London were astonished to learn, in May and June, 1709, that five thousand men, women and children, Germans from the Rhine, were under tents in the suburbs. By October the number had increased to thirteen thousand, and comprised husbandmen, tradesmen, school teachers and ministers. These emigrants had deserted the Palatinate, owing to French oppression and the persecution by their prince, the elector John William, of the House of Newburgh, who had become a devoted Romanist, though his subjects were mainly Lutherans and Calvinists. Professor Henry A. Homes, in a paper treating of this emigration read before the Albany Institute in 1871, holds that the movement was due not altogether to unbearable persecutions, but largely to suggestions made to the Palatines in their own country by agents of companies who were anxious to obtain settlers for the British colonies in America, and thus give value to the company's lands. The emigrants were certainly seized with the idea that by going to England its government would transport them to the provinces of New York, the Carolinas and Pennsylvania. Of the latter province they knew much, as many Germans were already there. Pastorious, the founder of Germantown, had published circulars in Germany, extolling the colony and inviting settlement. Penn had also well advertised in the Palatinate the inducements for settlers offered by his grant. The emigrants may have heard of the success of Pastor Kockerthal's little colony which had gone to New York the previous year, and they were all eager to be transported to a country where rich lands were to be had at no cost, and where their efforts for subsistence would be undisturbed by oppressions.

The English government was much distressed by the arrival of this vast number of impoverished emigrants. Their coming not having been anticipated, no plans had been made for their distribution in the colonies, or their care in England. Means were taken at once to notify the Dutch and German authorities that no more would be received. This certainly had the sympathy of the elector Palatine, who had already published an order punishing with death and confiscation all subjects who should quit their native country. Great efforts were made to prevent suffering among these poor people; thousands of pounds



were collected for their maintenance from churches and individuals all over England; they were lodged in warehouses, empty dwellings and in barns, and the queen had a thousand tents pitched for them back of Greenwich, on Blackheath. Here, on that historic moor, where Wat Tyler and Jack Cade had assembled the rebellious men of Kent, and where later, Claude Duval, and other bold riders of the road, were wont to relieve belated travellers of their gold and jewels, was presented the strange spectacle of an encampment of five thousand alien people, speaking an alien tongue, awaiting with patience and confidence a help and relief they felt sure would come from the sympathy and compassion of Protestant Englishmen.

Although Mortimer, in his "History of England," says it was never known who encouraged them to this emigration, a committee of the House of Commons appointed in 1711 elicited facts, as its report shows, going to prove that the Queen's government was not altogether guiltless in provoking the movement. The Palatines testified that they had left their country because of books and papers containing Queen Anne's picture that had been distributed, urging their coming to England that they might be sent to Her Majesty's plantations in the colonies. It is hardly to be believed that they would have come almost at one time, and in such great numbers, without having received encouragement from agents or others, who must, at least apparently, have made promises with authority. The Germans evidently expected that immediately on arrival in England they were to be dispatched in a body across the sea; but no one stood ready to carry out such a programme. If the government had made promises it was with expectation of no such liberal response. To carry thirteen thousand people would require a great fleet of the small vessels of that time, and there were no ships for such a service. Much time would also be required in preparing for their arrival in America, and in perfecting arrangements for their final settlement. Notwithstanding the great efforts made by the English people, very much distress followed this unhappy hegira. Disease decimated their ranks, and many wandered about England, becoming a poverty-stricken incubus on the parishes. Numbers of the younger men enlisted in the British army serving in Portugal, and some made their



own way to Pennsylvania, presumably by effecting arrangements with the masters of vessels, whereby, on arrival, their services were to be sold for a term sufficient to secure payment of their passage-money. This was not an unusual means of emigration to the colonies at that time.

The Lord Lieutenant of Ireland petitioned the Queen that some of the people might be sent to him, and by February, 1710, thirty-eight hundred had been located across the Irish Sea, in the province of Munster, near Limerick. The government granted them temporary help, and within three years twenty-four hundred pounds had been expended on their removal and maintenance while settling. In 1715 they became naturalized citizens. Professor Homes recites in his monograph that they "now number about twelve thousand souls, and, under the name of Palatinates, continue to impress a peculiar character upon the whole district they inhabit, both in a social and economical way." Farrar writes of them, in the beginning of this century, that they have "left off sauer-kraut and taken up potatoes, though still preserving their own language;" that "their superstitions savor of the banks of the Rhine, and in their dealings they are upright and honorable." Kohl, a German traveller of 1840, testifies that they have not lost their home character for probity and honor, and that they are much wealthier than any of their neighbors.

According to "Luttrell's Diary" about one-tenth of the whole number that reached England were returned by the Crown to Germany. This action of the authorities seems to have been provoked in consequence of the portion returned not being Protestants, and for that reason out of favor.

Among the exiles were a large number of people from Heidelberg. Professor Rupp thinks that more than six thousand persons had left that vicinity within twelve months. They had suffered persecution because unable to change their religion as often as did their government. The Elector Palatine, Frederic II., became a Lutheran; Frederic III. turned Calvinist; Ludovic V. restored the Lutheran Church, while his son and successor embraced the Calvinist faith; he was succeeded by a Catholic prince who cruelly oppressed the Protestants. All travellers remember with pleasure the beautiful university town of Heidel-

berg, that, almost hidden in dense foliage, occupies a narrow bench of land between the lofty Konigstuhl and the restless Neckar, which here forces its foamy way through a narrow gorge to the broad Rhine plain, just below. Away up on the side of the mountain, clinging to the very edge of a wooded precipice, is the most magnificent ruin in Middle Europe. The royal residence and stronghold of generations of electors, it was three hundred years in growing from a castle to a palace; then came the French, with their claim to the Palatinate, and this royal architectural pile was battered and desolated, but fortunately not entirely destroyed. Beyond the castle, higher up, on a little plateau, is a restaurant and garden—the Wolfsbrunnen. Here the citizens of the town meet on Sundays, fête days and holidays to listen to music, and chat under the trees with their neighbors. As they blow the foam from their cool steins of beer and overlook the ivy-clad ruin, with its quadrangles, bastions, moated exterior walls, and graceful interior façades studded with sculptures and statues, they must find abundant subjects for thought and conversation. If they are inclined to “mourn over Israel” they need not give all their tears to the defacement of that effective mass of stone; their minds and sympathies can revert to the miseries of their townspeople in the years gone by, before they had become a portion of United Germany.

In the early part of the Thirty Years’ War the imperial Count Tilly sacked Heidelberg, putting five hundred of the inhabitants to death. Later on, in the same war, the generals of the French captured the city, and people without number were slaughtered. In 1688 the French were again in Heidelberg; this time they burned the place to the ground, reducing the castle, and blowing up its ancient and massive corner tower, although the walls were twenty-one feet thick; one-half of the structure fell into the moat below, where it lies intact to this day, a most picturesque ruin. Heidelberg was rebuilt only to be once more, in 1693, overwhelmed by the armies of Louis XIV.; flames again rose from every building, and the citizens—men, women and children—fifteen thousand in number, stripped of everything, were turned at night into the fields. Not long after, the elector induced the inhabitants to rebuild the town under a promise of liberty of conscience and thirty years’ exemption from taxes.

Within a few years this same elector, growing more devoted to his Romanist faith, served God in his fashion, which was by breaking his promises, and beginning severe persecutions against his Protestant subjects. It was then, Rupp tells us, that thousands from this vicinity, despairing of a future at home, escaped to England.

Before we return to Blackheath, where we left some of them under tents, let me place in strong contrast to the wretchedness just portrayed the picture a traveller draws, a few years later, of the happiness and peace of Germans in the American colonies. Some time before 1745 Germans from Pennsylvania penetrated the Shenandoah Valley, near Harrisonburg, Virginia. The traveller, before referred to, visited that neighborhood during the French and English war, and writes as follows of the country and people :

The low grounds upon the banks of the Shenandoah River are very rich and fertile. They are chiefly settled by Germans, who gain a sufficient livelihood by raising stock for the troops and sending butter down into the lower part of the country. I could not but reflect with pleasure on the situation of these people and think if there is such a thing as happiness in this life they enjoy it. Far from the bustle of the world they live in the most delightful climate and on the richest soil imaginable. They are everywhere surrounded with beautiful prospects and sylvan scenes—lofty mountains, transparent streams, falls of water, rich valleys and majestic woods ; the whole interspersed with an infinite variety of flowery shrubs constitute the landscapes surrounding them. They are subject to few diseases, are generally robust and live in perfect liberty. They know *no* wants, and are acquainted with but few vices. They possess what many princes would give half their dominions for—health, contentment and tranquility of mind. —*Howe's Coll. of Va.*

The Lord Proprietors of Carolina agreed, in 1709, with Christopher de Graffenried and Lewis Michell, from Switzerland, to sell to them ten thousand acres of land in one body, between the Cape Fear and Neuse rivers. They formed a land company, and, of course, were much in need of settlers. They covenanted with the English authorities for the transfer of about seven hundred of these poor Heidelberg refugees to the colony. Before the end of the year they had arrived with them at a point in North Carolina, where the rivers Neuse and Trent join. Here they established a town, calling it New-Berne, in honor of Berne, Switzerland, de Graffenried's birthplace. Each man, woman and child was granted one hundred acres of land, tools for building houses and cultivating the soil, and with provisions for twelve months' subsistence. De



Graffenried proved false to these people. In their ignorance, they failed to secure titles, and later on he mortgaged the entire grant for eight hundred pounds, and the lands ultimately, through foreclosure, fell into the hands of the heirs of the mortgagee. Notwithstanding this great check to their prosperity, the Germans, by their industry and economy, acquired other property and comfortable homes. Many years later they petitioned the king, and were partly indemnified by a grant of ten thousand acres, free for ten years from quit-rents. As is the experience of all new colonies, they at first suffered great trials and privations. Before two years had passed, one hundred of their number had been massacred by the Tuscarora Indians. But, as is shown by Williamson, the historian of North Carolina, their industry and frugality triumphed over all obstacles, and the state is to-day greatly benefited by the wealth and holdings of the descendants of these persecuted emigrants from the valley of the Neckar.

It has not been found possible to properly account for all the thirteen thousand Palatines who reached England. Queen Anne sent some of them to Virginia, settling them above the falls of the Rappahanock, in Spottsylvania County, from whence they spread into several adjoining counties, and into North Carolina. Irving mentions that when George Washington, in 1748, was surveying lands in this portion of Virginia, he was followed by German immigrants with their wives and children. Most of them could not speak English, but when spoken to answered in their native tongue. "Such were the progenitors of the sturdy yeomanry now inhabiting those parts, many of whom still preserve their strong German characteristics."

After the Irish transportation, the largest number that was moved in one body, and probably the final one under government auspices, was the fleet-load that in the spring of 1710 was despatched to New York. Lord Lovelace having died, Robert Hunter was commissioned as "CAPTAIN GENERAL, GOVERNOR-IN-CHIEF of and to the provinces of NEW YORK and NEW JERSEY and territories thereunto belonging, and VICE-ADMIRAL and CHANCELLOR of the same." Gordon writes of him as a man of merit and personal beauty, and a friend of Steele, Addison, Swift and the wits and the literati of that day. His appointment was said to have been due to the influence of his friend Addison, who at



that time was Under-Secretary of State. He had received in 1705 the commission as Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia, but while on his way to that colony his ship was captured by the French, who carried him a prisoner to Paris, where he was confined for some months. On reaching the colonies Governor Hunter, growing much interested in the province of East Jersey, became a large owner of its lands, acquiring tracts and plantations both north and south of the Raritan, and probably in Hunterdon, for we find that in 1713-14, when that county was set off, it was named in his honor. The Governor established a home at Perth Amboy, on the bluff overlooking the lower bay and ocean. Here he retired when in need of rest from the labors of the New York administration, and while enjoying the beautiful panorama of hills, islands and watery expanse, and the sea breezes blowing fresh from Sandy Hook, employed his leisure by correspondence with Swift, Addison, and other English friends. In 1719 Hunter went to London and did not return to this country; while there he exchanged with William Burnett, son of the celebrated bishop, who succeeded him in the executive office. He did not, however, lose his interest in New Jersey, but continued to acquire land in the province, and retained his friendship with the people through correspondence.

Before this royal governor embarked for America he was invited by the Board of Trade to make suggestions regarding the disposition of the remaining Palatines. Among the many plans proposed it was decided to transfer them to the New York colony, for the purpose of engaging in raising and manufacturing tar, resin and turpentine for naval purposes. A fleet of ten ships set sail with Governor Hunter in March, having on board, as is variously estimated, between three and four thousand Germans. They covenanted before embarking that after arrival they would labor for a sufficient time to discharge the cost of their transportation and settlement, after which each emigrant was to receive forty acres of land, exempt from taxation for seven years. The voyage was of nearly five months' duration, the ships arriving at intervals between the middle of June and the last of July. The immigrants were encamped on Nut, now Governor's Island, for about three months, when a tract of six thousand acres of the Livingston patent was purchased for them, one

hundred miles up the Hudson, the locality now being embraced in Germantown, Columbia County. Eight hundred acres were also acquired on the opposite side of the river at the present location of Saugerties, in Ulster county. To these two points most of the immigrants were removed. Professor Homes names twenty-two hundred and nine as the greatest number settling on the river; the papers signed by the Palatines themselves in the "Documents relating to the Colonial History of New York" reduce the number by several hundred, and Edward Eggleston, who has lately been making researches in the British Museum on the subject, writes me that "in the manuscript report of the Board of Trade and Plantations, dated 1721, the number of Palatines settled contiguous to Hudson's river is set down at twenty-two hundred and twenty-seven." It is known that over four hundred died during the voyage. From one hundred and fifty to two hundred, mostly widows and sick persons, remained in New York city, and the orphans, amounting to almost as many more, were apprenticed by Governor Hunter in New York and New Jersey. Among the poor widows was Johanna Zenger, with three children, one of whom, John Peter, at that time, thirteen years old, was bound to William Bradford, printer. His, it was, whose trial for libel, in 1734, was a *cause celebre* in the early legal history of the city of New York.

The manufacture of turpentine and naval stores did not prove a successful undertaking. During the two years necessary to await the result of their labors, the Germans grew dissatisfied; they complained of ill-treatment, and especially of the bad character of the provisions supplied by Livingston, the government inspector and contractor. Growing insubordinate, Governor Hunter attempted coercion, which but widened the breach; many wandered off seeking new homes, and, in the autumn and spring of 1712-13, seven hundred deserted the Hudson, and, making their way sixty miles northwest, settled in one of the fertile valleys of Schoharie county. Owing to ignorance regarding land-tenure, and the carelessness with which they had taken up their individual holdings, much suffering was eventually caused these migrators by the discovery that the titles to many of their properties were invalid. After nearly ten years of harassing litigations and contests, one half the settlers for a third time moved

on, floating down the Susquehanna river for three hundred miles, and finally finding homes under the friendly government of Pennsylvania. Palatine Bridge and township, in Montgomery County, New York, indicate the point to which a second portion of these Schoharie Germans removed, and a third contingent settled in Herkimer county, at a place since known as the German Flats.

The Livingston Manor immigrants always felt that they had great cause for grievance against the authorities of the province of New York. Whether they were right or not, it is at this late day difficult to determine, but there is no doubt that the existence of such feeling resulted in after years to the great advantage of Pennsylvania. Peter Kalm, a Swedish naturalist, who travelled in America in 1748, remarked on the populousness of Pennsylvania, and that the province of New York had much fewer inhabitants. He explains that fact in the following manner :—"In the reign of Queen Anne, about the year 1709, many Germans came hither, who got a tract of land from the English government which they might settle. After they had lived there some time, and had built houses, and made cornfields and meadows, under several pretences they were repeatedly deprived of parts of their land. They returned violence for violence and beat those who thus robbed them of their possessions. The most active people among the Germans being taken up, they were roughly treated and punished with the utmost vigor of the law. This, however, so far exasperated the rest that the greater part of them left their houses and fields and went to settle in Pennsylvania. There they were exceeding well received, got a considerable tract of land and were indulged in great privileges, which were given them forever. The Germans, not satisfied with being themselves removed from New York, wrote to their relations and friends and advised them, if ever they intended to come to America, not to go to New York, where the government had shown itself so inequitable. This advice had such influence that the Germans, who afterwards went in great numbers to North America, constantly avoided New York and always went to Pennsylvania. It sometimes happened that they were forced to go on board such ships as were bound for New York, but they were scarce got on shore, when they hastened to Pennsylvania, in sight of all the inhabitants of New York."



By this time the fever for emigration was deeply seated in Germany. Ship after ship sailed up the Delaware from over the seas, black with Palatines, Hanoverians, Saxons, and Austrian and Swiss Germans. Spreading over the present counties of York, Lancaster, Berks, Adams, Montgomery and Northampton, they soon made their industrious presence known by the innumerable houses of logs that fastened themselves to the sloping sides of the valleys, and by the shrinking back of the forests from the patches of well-tilled clearings that began to mosaic the Pennsylvania wildernesses. They brought with them their axes, mattocks and mauls, and land that had lain for ages under the dark canopy of the trees, fattening on the richness of decaying leaves and vegetation, was opened to the warm sunlight, until acres of forest were converted into arable fields, smiling with the results of well-directed labor. It was not that province alone which benefited by the spirit of unrest that had seized upon Europeans. Maine, Virginia, Georgia, North Carolina, Mississippi and Louisiana received accessions to their populations by the arrival of emigrants. Gayarre, the historian of the last state, says that some of Louisiana's best citizens and wealthiest sugar-planters have sprung from a little colony of three hundred poor Germans who settled on the river, thirty or forty miles above New Orleans, in 1722. But it was toward Pennsylvania that the great tide of emigration steadily set. By 1717 such vast numbers were arriving as to cause much uneasiness to some of the early English settlers in the province. The governor's council in that year made note of the fact that it might be a very dangerous consequence, having so many foreigners from Germany daily disposing of themselves, without producing certificates from where they came, or what they were, and without making application to any of the magistrates. This led to measures being taken whereby all arriving immigrants were obliged to be registered by the secretary of the province. In that way, over thirty thousand names of the later foreign arrivals are preserved, and on file at the state house in Harrisburg. This unnecessary fear of the German influx did not prove of long duration. We find the royal governor saying, in 1738, "This province has been for some years the asylum of the distressed Protestants of the Palatinate and other parts of Germany; and, I believe, it



may truthfully be said that the present flourishing condition of it is in a great measure owing to the industry of those people."

Pennsylvania continued, up to the time of the Revolution, to be the objective point for German emigrants. Ships, brigantines, scows, pinks and bilanders, mostly English bottoms, plied with great regularity between the Maas and the Delaware, transporting the Palatines, as they seem to have become historically known, from Rotterdam to Philadelphia. The vessels were small and the voyages prolonged, but the frequency with which the same craft—as shown by the records—entered the capes of the Delaware, implied a traffic partaking somewhat of the character of a ferry. For, year after year, the ships "St. Andrew," "Phœnix," "Dragon," "Patience," "Mortonhouse," "Pennsylvania," "Two Brothers," "Nancy," and many others, discharged their human cargoes at Philadelphia, the average passenger-list embracing one hundred and fifty souls. In the year 1719 some six thousand are said to have landed, and Proud avers that in the year 1749 twelve thousand Germans arrived in the province. Sypher claims that prior to 1727 fifty thousand people, mostly from the Rhine country, had emigrated to the Quaker colony. In 1766 Benjamin Franklin testified before a committee of the House of Commons that he supposed that there were in Pennsylvania about one hundred and sixty thousand white inhabitants, of whom one-third were Quakers and one-third Germans.

And so it was that each twelve months saw the population of the province much increased and enriched by a people who brought with them the greatest of all wealth, industry and integrity, and characters that had been superpoised and developed by years of suffering and persecution.





## CHAPTER V.

### *Johannes Moelich Reaches Pennsylvania in 1735—His Experiences in Philadelphia and Germantown.*

In early colonial days King, now Water, street, in Philadelphia, lay close to the edge of the Delaware. A low, one-storey, rambling tavern-house stood fronting it, near the corner of Chestnut, its creaking sign bearing in dull paint the legend of a crooked stick of wood. It was here that Benjamin Franklin ate his first dinner in the Quaker City. This inn gave to the short dock facing it the name of the Crooked Billet Wharf, often mentioned in old-time Philadelphia annals. Any one loitering on this dock on the morning of the twenty-ninth of May, 1735, could have heard the splash of a right-bower, and the rattle of an anchor chain—but hold! a historian is privileged to be prosy but never to be untrue—nearly seventy-five years must elapse before a Philadelphian, or any one else, will hear the musical clank of a paying-out cable, and in the meantime many a stout ship will drift to its destruction on the rocks, because of its hawser being cut by submerged ledges. Well! the loiterer would at least have heard the splash of the anchor, and, on looking up, discovered the ship “Mercury,” Captain William Wilson, from Rotterdam, swinging round to the tide. As she lies in the stream the vessel shows repeated marks of her weeks of battling with the fierce waves of the Atlantic, and her sides are streaked by the salt spray of many a weary gale.

The log of this ship has not been preserved, so we know nothing of the particulars of her voyage or of the date of sailing. She was without doubt a small vessel, and many days must have elapsed since the yellow arms of Dutch wind-mills had waved farewells to her passengers from behind the dunes of the low Hol-

land coast. Something may be learned of the time usually occupied in such a voyage from a German MS. in the library of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, which recounts the incidents in the journey of David Sholtze and eighteen associate Schwenckfelders. They set sail from Rotterdam on the twenty-fourth of June, 1733, on the brigantine "Pennsylvania Merchant," Captain John Stedman. The journal of these Germans tells of but little save head winds, seasickness, and the occasional death of an emigrant. The first occurred on the eleventh of July, and an account is given of the body being sewn in a sack, weighted with sand, and dropped by the sailors into the sea, the passengers singing the hymn, "*Nun lasset uns den Leib begraben.*" The ship rested for seven days in the harbor of Plymouth, and on the twenty-eighth of September reached Philadelphia. It is fair to presume that the "Mercury's" passage was of equal length, and that it was yet February when she spread her canvas at the mouth of Maas, and made her first bow to the rollers of the North Sea.

Among the one hundred and eighty-six sun-burned, weather-beaten Germans and Swiss who leaned over her taffrail, looking with curious eyes upon the little entry port of Pennsylvania, was Johannes Moelich and his family. The aspect of this provincial town in its setting of dark forests must have presented a strong contrast to the animated quays, and the spires, belfries, lofty pinnacled houses and dark windmills of the quaint old city from which he had embarked. It would be pleasant to be able to narrate Johannes' impressions and experiences on landing. Had he known that one hundred and fifty years later many of his posterity would have been glad to read of his movements in Philadelphia, he doubtless would have kept a faithful journal. In the absence of such forethought on his part we must draw upon our knowledge of the Quaker City in those early days, and, with the help of Watson, that delightfully garrulous Boswell of old Philadelphia, we shall be able to see with Johannes' eyes as he and his family make their way up into the city.

It was now over fifty years since the little ship "Welcome," of only three hundred tons burthen, had landed William Penn in Pennsylvania, and its capital had grown in population to some eight thousand souls, among whom were 1,621 taxables and

1,097 voters. Thomas Lawrence was mayor, Philadelphia having been a chartered city since 1701. It was a compact little town of about one thousand houses, nearly all of brick, one and two storeys high, with double-hipped roofs, although occasionally a more pretentious dwelling elevated its dormers above a third storey. The area was not very extensive; a very short walk would bring one to the outlying commons and woods. Beyond Fourth street the houses were but scattering; of course there were no pavements, and westerly there were no streets marked out beyond Seventh. The highway leading out of town followed the line of High, now Market, street, and after crossing the location of the present Eighth street, the forest commenced, and extended to the Schuylkill.

Did you ask was there any one to welcome Johannes? Though no message from below had announced the coming of the "Mercury," without doubt the arrival of the ship was soon noised through the city; let us hope that the immigrant was expected and that when he landed on the Crooked Billet Wharf he found awaiting him some warm-hearted compatriot, who seized his hand and bade him a hearty welcome to America. In fancy, at least, we will picture him so greeted. We have already learned that his younger brother, Johan Peter, had reached Philadelphia in the ship "Mortonhouse," Captain John Coultas, on the twenty-fourth of August, 1728. Perhaps he was among those who thronged the wharf on this May morning. In all the thirty thousand names of foreigners preserved in the Pennsylvania archives as reaching that province between the years 1727 and 1776, those of Johannes' family and that of Johan Peter are the only Moelichs that appear.

We will constitute ourselves one of the party as they leave the wharf and make their way along Water street, the children hanging back to look into the shop windows, for in the year 1735 that street was the centre of the retail trade of the city. They are going to the State House to fulfil the first duty of all newly arrived foreigners, the registering of their names with the secretary of the province. What is more delightful than the first few hours spent in a new country, where everything is totally different from one's ordinary surroundings? Weeks of pleasurable experiences may be passed later, but the peculiar charm



of the first uprolling of the curtain will never return. Though their own country had been rich in the picturesque, the Moelichs found much to excite both interest and wonder, and in the short time occupied in reaching the State House they received many new and strange impressions. An American on visiting England or the Continent for the first time finds himself attacked by a strange illusion. As he feels himself surrounded by an atmosphere of hoar antiquity, while wandering from one ancient town to another, his whole nature saturated with the charm of quaint architecture and picturesque effects, imperceptibly there steals over him a faint impression of a prior acquaintance, as if revisiting scenes familiar in some previous existence; and he finds himself almost doubting that the retina of the eye is actually receiving the impression of a picture seen for the first time. He recognizes the illusion and fully appreciates that what he sees is really new because not viewed before—he recognizes, also, that to him, at least, it is truly old and familiar; old in a thousand impressions and desires, born of books and the talk of travellers, consequently, he is rarely if ever confronted by the entirely unexpected. Johannes and his party were not troubled by this double vision. They had read no books descriptive of America, nor had they listened to the oft-told tales of returned travellers. To them all the panorama of the Quaker City existence was novel and interesting. Probably the life of the streets affected them as the most peculiarly foreign and odd—indeed, not only the Germans were so impressed for we, who have attached ourselves unbidden to this little party, find no less cause for wonder at the strange sights of these provincial thoroughfares. Proceeding westward along Chestnut street they are met by such a procession as has never been seen on the highways of Europe; a drove of negroes, coupled two by two, recently imported from the Guinea coast, and probably just landed from Barbadoes, which at that time was the distributing mart of the English slave trade. On reaching the next corner there was to be seen an even sadder phase of this barbarous institution. In front of a tavern, from a rude platform resting on two upright hogsheads, was being held a slave auction. “Likely negro boys” and “breeding wenches,” as the placarded bills announced, were being knocked down at a few hundred dollars a head, for, as

importing at that time was brisk, slaves did not approach in value to those of our *ante-bellum* days.

As the Moelichs walked along the street the bordering, detached houses had a kindly, domestic presence, due to their comely little porches with pent-house roofs shading wooden seats, seemingly extending to the passer-by a hospitable invitation to tarry. This air of hospitality was further enhanced by the attractive balconies that faced even the smaller dwellings, on which their occupants were wont to gather to enjoy the air at the cool of the day. Occasional glimpses of quaint interiors were obtained, through open windows that swung on hinges inward, with small panes of glass set in their leaden-framed lattices. In some of the finer houses the best rooms were wainscoated in oak and red cedar, but in most instances the walls were plainly whitewashed. No carpets were to be seen, the floors being covered with silver sand drawn into fanciful figures by a skillful use of the sweeping brush, in which the housekeepers took much pride. Lofty chests of drawers, with round black balls for legs, extended nearly to the ceiling, and all the family china was to be seen through the diamond lights of odd little corner cupboards. On the massive Dutch dresser were displayed brightly polished porringers and platters of pewter, the dinner plates of that day being nearly altogether of that metal, though the use of wooden trenchers was not entirely out of date. Sometimes, through farther doors opening into the kitchen, our party was much amused at the sight of a peculiar feature of household economy. Before cavernous fire-places, often girt with ancient Dutch tiles, were set baking-ovens, whose spits were turned by little bow-legged dogs trained to run in a hollow cylinder, like a squirrel, by which means was the roasting meat kept revolving. "Mine host" Clark, of the State House Inn, advertises about this time in Andrew Bradford's weekly "*Mercury*," and in Benjamin Franklin's "*Pennsylvania Gazette*," that "he has for sale several dogs and wheels, much preferable to any jacks for roasting any joints of meat."

But what means this turmoil and uproar, and from whence comes this advancing crowd, enveloped in dust? Johannes' party quickly leaves the street and takes to a little foot-path that runs diagonally from the corner of Third to High and Fourth streets. Standing there, they see surge by an unfragrant

rabble, in the centre of which, tied to the tail of a cart, a poor wretch is bellowing with pain, as stroke after stroke from a constable's whip falls on his naked back. The Germans look stolidly on the scene; they are too familiar with despotic punishments to be surprised or affected thereby, but their accompanying ghostly posterity—meaning you and me, reader,—find it an inhuman spectacle. Following the cart are a number of petty criminals surrounded by constables. It is the weekly market day parade of evil-doers. After their tour of the city, and their suffering from the turbulence of the ribald torrent of the populace, they will drift into no quiet eddy within the seclusion of the jail. They must take their places on the pillory and in the stocks that have been set up for their reception, opposite the prison on High and Third streets. This day addled eggs will sell as well as those freshly laid, for many a passer-by of this rough age will deem it a virtuous action to have a fling at the culprits, for the pleasure of seeing them dodge their heads in the endeavor to avoid the noxious missiles. Benjamin Franklin, in his "Autobiography," says that the position of a Philadelphia constable was at that time one of a considerable profit. The management of the city-watch was in their hands. It was the duty of the officer of each ward to summon a certain number of resident householders to attend him each night to aid in patrolling his district. This service could be avoided by paying six shillings, which was supposed to go to hiring substitutes. The number who paid for the exemption was much greater than those hired by the constables to walk the rounds, consequently the officers put much unlawful money in their pockets. This system resulted in the night-watches being largely composed of irresponsible persons who undertook the duties for a little drink-money, but quite neglected to fulfil their obligations. Evidently that time was no more the golden age of municipal purity than is the present.

Returning to Chestnut street our party, rambling on, is soon in front of that noted structure which the events of later years baptized as Independence Hall. The Philadelphian of the present day, who halts for a moment in the sturdy presence of this time-honored, historic building, looks with veneration on its homely façade. To him it bears amid the surrounding turmoil



a dignified expression of peace and rest, as if emanating from the consciousness of a deserved repose, after a great work, nobly performed. Very different the aspect it presented to the newly-arrived Germans. No throbbing tide of humanity ebbed and flowed beneath its shadows; Chestnut street, not yet the artery of a great city, did not pulsate at its portals. At this distance out it was but little better than a country road, and the State House, just completed, faced it square and prim, bright, from lintel to roof-tree, with red bricks, fresh paint and white mortar. There was then no beautiful park as a rich setting; the unkempt grounds extended but half across the square, and several small detached brick dwellings fronted Walnut street, at its rear.

Upon the original book of record in the Department of State of Pennsylvania, there is still to be seen the signature made by Johannes on that day; it is evidently the writing of a man of intelligence, as it is not only legibly inscribed, but would stand as an example of good penmanship. Most of the arrivals by the same vessel, being unable to write, made their marks. The names are preceded by the following entry:

At the Court House, Philadelphia, present, the Honorable Patrick Gordon, Esq., Lieutenant-Governor Thomas Lawrence and Charles Read, Esquires. The Palatines, whose names are underwritten, imported in the ship *Mercury* of London, William Wilson, master, Rotterdam, but last from Cowes, did this day subscribe the oaths to the Government, May 29, 1735.

The grounds about the State House, on this May morning, framed an interesting picture. Johannes, on leaving the building, after registering, was a good deal surprised by the sight of an encampment of Indians, who happened that day to have taken possession of the open space. For a long time after this, it was the practice of bands of red-men to occasionally make excursions to the city for the purpose of purchase and barter. Generally they would remain for a week or more, and it was their custom to establish themselves, with their squaws and children, in the State House yard. While the young bucks roamed about the streets, shooting coins off posts with their arrows, and visiting the stores for trade, the squaws and old men occupied themselves in camp by making and selling plaited baskets, beaded moccasins and porcupine-quill work. The aborigines of this portion of the British colonies were known as "Delawares,"



because first found in the vicinity of that river, though they called themselves *Lenni-Lenape*, which means "The original people." The great mass of this tribe, or clan, had moved toward the setting sun in the year 1728, but at this time there remained several thousand in Pennsylvania, who were much dissatisfied with the sale of their lands; a discontent which was greatly increased, a few years later, by what was known as the "Walking Treaty," they claiming to have been swindled by the English in the great area of territory acquired by the Europeans in that famous bargain. It was not till ten or fifteen years later that the Pennsylvanians, by calling to their aid the Six Nations of the North, induced these remaining Indians to depart for the "Sweet Waters of the West."

Again we find ourselves deploring the fact that Johannes neglected his journal. Where did he go on leaving the State House? After so long a voyage he must have desired to stretch his legs by a more extended walk, but, perhaps, Mariah Katrina and the children were not so eager for exercise. We will suppose that he established them comfortably at the Indian-king tavern on High street, where, before sallying out for a prowling about the city, he refreshed himself with his first glass of West-India rum, at that time the only liquor imported in quantity into the colony; or with a foaming tankard of ale, which was then in such common use that most dwellings had small brew-houses connected with their kitchens. Johannes could not have been put to a very great expense at the tavern, as only modest charges for board and lodging were known in those early days. Professor Kalm, the Swedish botanist, narrates in his account of his travels that, when in Philadelphia, in 1728, he lodged with a Quaker where he met many honest people. "I and my Yungstraem, the companion of my voyage, had a room, candles, beds, attendance and three meals a day for twenty shillings per week in Pennsylvania currency." Two dollars and eighty-eight cents.

On leaving the tavern, Johannes' friends carried him to see Christ Church, then just completing, and, after the State House, at once both the pride and the wonder of the people. It reared its impressive bulk on an open square, adjoining a pond which reached from Arch to High streets, once a noted place for shooting ducks. This, then considered, lofty architectural pile

appeared much as at the present day, though wanting its graceful spire—that, came seventeen years later as the result of a lottery. It lacked more than a spire; it was new, and however grand a new church edifice may be, until it has been consecrated by years of service, it does not seem entitled to that hallowed reverence, born of old associations and decades of prayer and praise, that, involuntarily, an ancient temple evokes from its worshippers. Though, at the present day, this church is without many of its original quaint characteristics, such as the high-backed slips, bedroom pews and brick-paved aisles, their loss is more than compensated for by the acquisition of that mellow atmosphere of age, with which kindly time has enveloped the building's antique walls and gables, until it appears as venerable as the steadfast hills.

Of course the mysterious friend, with whom we have generously supplied Johannes, insists upon a pilgrimage to the house of William Penn at Second street and Morris' alley; for that is a shrine at which newly-arrived foreigners earliest worshiped. Penn's reputation was as a cherished heritage to all oppressed Europeans, and his memory, as the father of Pennsylvanian immigration, was especially revered by the German heart. As our visitors strolled in that direction, the streets were enlivened by numerous and varied odd costumes. It seemed very singular to meet so many long-drawn Quakers, moving at measured pace with solemn visage, clad in lengthy shad-breasted drab coats adorned with horn buttons, their flapping waistcoats extending far down over the small-clothes that covered their sober strides. The long, straight hair of these peripatetic monuments of sedateness was covered by broad-brimmed felt hats, looped at the side with strings. These Quakers offered an excellent foil to the brilliantly-arrayed young gallants, who tripped jauntily by, under gold-laced cocked-hats, with their gaily embroidered coats cut low at the neck behind, that the great silver buckles fastening their plaited stocks might be displayed. In that picturesque period it was the fashion for young gentlemen to wear short, straight, steel rapiers, often with jewelled hilts, which gave them quite a martial appearance, though not altogether in keeping with their clocked silk stockings, paste-buckled shoes and ruffled wrists and throats.

Gay apparel was not confined by any means to the younger men. Old gentlemen, met on the way, were frequently resplendent in plush breeches, vests of various hues, and skirts stiffened with buckram till they stood out at an angle. Often double rows of solid silver buttons extended down their coats, and it was not uncommon to see suits decorated with conch-shells set in silver. A brilliant sight they presented in all the glint of polished metal, as they stamped along, shaking their powdered wigs, striking the pavement with their long silver-headed canes, stopping occasionally to greet some old friend and extend a pinch of snuff, not so much because of generous proclivities, as the desire to display their chased silver and gold snuff-boxes, which were generally carried in the hand. The kaleidoscopic changes of colors, to be noted among the people thronging the streets this bright May day, were not all to be attributed to the well-to-do of the populace: body-servants contributed their full share to the brilliant hues of the colonial costumes, and as they minced over the pavements at a respectful distance behind their masters and mistresses, often presented a gorgeous appearance. An absconding one is described in an advertisement of that year as wearing damask breeches, copper-colored cloth coat trimmed with black, and black stockings. A barber's servant, who ran away a few years before that time, wore, according to the notice in the "Weekly Mercury," a light wig, a gray kersey jacket lined with blue, a white vest faced and lined with red, and having yellow buttons, a pair of drugget breeches, a pair of black stockings and a red leathern apron. The last feature of his dress, his apron of leather, was at that time a distinguishing badge of servitude; they being worn not only by workingmen, but by all apprentices, clerks, and employees of store and shop-keepers. It was also the custom for the wives and daughters of tradesmen, who assisted them in the business, to wear short skirts of green baize.

On reaching Penn's house, it was found to be a sturdy edifice with bastions and salient angles. Its flanking gables fronted on the street, but the main portion of the building set well back, so that the house faced three sides of a small court. At the rear were beautifully shaded gardens, extending half-way to Front street and nearly to Walnut street. This edifice was built in the



earliest days of the city by one of its greatest improvers, Samuel Carpenter, and it was fitted up for Penn's occupancy on the occasion of his second coming to America. Penn brought with him his family and household gods, expecting to make his home permanently in Pennsylvania; but within two years after taking possession of this mansion, owing to the distaste of his wife for colonial life, and owing to the fact that his enemies in London were dangerously threatening his powers and rights in America, he was forced to return to England. It was thought his absence would be temporary, but his affairs becoming more and more involved, he fretted away year after year in a vain endeavor to return, until he finally died, in 1718, without again visiting his colonial possessions. In 1704 Samuel Carpenter sold this house to William Trent for eight hundred and fifty pounds. This was the same Trent, who, in 1719, established mills on the Delaware, thus founding Trent-town—now Trenton. He died there, in 1724, as Chief Justice of New Jersey. Penn's mansion ultimately became, and continued to be until many years after the Revolution, a fashionable boarding-house. From there was carried, in 1782, the body of the eccentric General Charles Lee, which was interred in Christ Churchyard.

Our German friends, while wandering around the town visiting its many points of interest, probably found their way to another spot associated with the founder of the colony—the Blue Anchor Tavern, on the corner of Second and Dock streets, it being the first house he entered on reaching the city. Penn arrived at Newcastle by the ship "Welcome," in October, 1683. After spending a little time there, and at Chester, he proceeded to Philadelphia, landing at a low sandy beach fronting this tavern, at the mouth of Dock Creek, which, at that time, had grassy banks and rural surroundings. Tradition designates this inn, then just completing, as being the first substantial house erected in the city. For many years it was the point at which landings were made from small vessels trafficking with New Jersey and New England. It was also used as a ferry-house by persons crossing to Society Hill, to the New Jersey shore, and to Windmill Island, where a Dutch-looking structure ground the grain of the early settlers.

Meanwhile, the day is wearing on, and the Moelichs have

still a journey before them, for it is not to be supposed that newly arrived Germans will remain in Philadelphia when but a few miles beyond is a thriving settlement, composed entirely of their own countrymen. The good Pastorius, the faithful pastor, magistrate, teacher, patriarch, and friend of Teuton folk, had died fifteen years before, but he left behind him, at Germantown, seven miles away as the road then ran, a sturdy German community, and a firmly established Lutheran church. It was the pole toward which the needles of all Rhenish emigrants turned, and we must conceive of some means of transporting Johannes and his party to that prosperous place. The human imagination is quite capable of bridging centuries and of creating situations, so there is no reason why we should not be equal to this task, especially as we feel confident of the assistance of Thomas Skelton, who advertises in the "Gazette" that he has "a four-wheeled chaise, in Chestnut street, to be hired." This was the only public conveyance in the city. It was twenty-five years later before Jacob Coleman began running the first stage—"with an awning"—from Philadelphia to the King of Prussia Inn, at Germantown.

In 1735 the city boasted of but eight four-wheeled coaches, one of which belonged to Deputy-Governor Gordon. The streets were singularly clear of vehicles of every description. There were but six four-wheeled, one-seated chaises, drawn by two horses, besides the one that Shelton had to hire. The few carriages, if they could be so called, to be seen were two-wheeled, one-horse chairs, a cheap sort of a gig with a plain painted body, ornamented with brass rings and buckles, resting on leathern bands, for springs. The general means of conveyance, both for goods and people, was by horses; farmers' wives came to town on pillions, behind their husbands, and stout market-women rode in from Germantown, panniers, filled with produce, flanking their horses' sides. Much of the freighting of the province was done by pack-horses, and it was a common sight to see a long line of them entering Philadelphia, laden with all manner of merchandise—some so enveloped in fodder as to leave exposed only their noses and hoofs, others bearing heavy casks suspended on either side, whilst still others staggered along beneath the weight of bars of iron, bent so to hang as to escape

the bordering trees of the contracted trails and roadways. There were but few carts; the man who brought the silver sand to the different doors each morning owned one; and we have seen to what base purpose another has been put by the town constable. That peculiar Pennsylvania institution, the big blue-bodied wagon, had not yet made its appearance, though it was not many years before the prosperity of the province was such as to result in every farmer having his wagon. Their first introduction caused great indignation among the owners of pack-horses, who feared that their business would be ruined. In 1755, when Postmaster-General Franklin found Braddock fretting and fuming at Frederick, in Maryland, because his contractors had failed to provide means of transportation, he at once agreed to furnish one hundred and fifty wagons, with four-horse teams, from Pennsylvania, and have them at Will's Creek within ten days. Franklin fulfilled his agreement, and thus was Braddock's army enabled to move on to its disastrous overthrow.

We will impress one of the carts into the service of aiding Thomas Skelton in moving our party. Johannes must return on some other day for his heavy luggage and furniture, as the "Mercury" will hardly as yet have commenced discharging from her hold. The Germantown road left town at the upper end of Front street, and, after following the river for a short distance, wound in a northwesterly direction, and plunged into a dense forest, the haunt then, as it had been for centuries, of bears, wolves, deer and wild turkeys. The wolves seemed to have proved the most annoying to citizens, as we find bounties for their extirpation offered for many years after. The highway was not much more than a trail, the branches of the giant trees, that stood in solid phalanxes close to the wheel tracks, forming over the travellers' heads a roof of impenetrable foliage. Occasionally the shade was broken by the sunshine of a clearing, in the centre of which stood a log house, having a long sloping roof of thatch—the harbinger of the future greatness of suburban Philadelphia. Some of the clearings were already green meadows, in which no sign of trees appeared; others were studded by stumps showing the recent marks of the pioneer's axe. On nearing Germantown the road traversed a swamp, the wheels of the cart and chaise jolting over the rough logs of the corduroy road-bed that made the bog passable.



Our friends, listening to the tales of their guides, as they moved slowly through the woods, must have been filled with the most agreeable anticipations, on approaching the end of their journey. They found Germantown to be as thoroughly German, in language and in the appearance of the people, as any of the villages they had left, perched on the picturesque banks of the river of the Schoppen in the mother country. With its one long street bordered by straggling houses, it still presented much of the aspect of a frontier settlement. Many of the dwellings were the primitive structures of the early comers. They were built of logs, the interstices filled in with river-rushes and clay, and covered with a thin coat of plaster; their gables confronted the street, and a man of ordinary size could easily touch the eaves of their double-hipped roofs. The more modern houses were of dark glimmer-stone, with little windows set deep in the thick walls, and with huge chimneys rising at the corners. These low substantial buildings, with their steep roofs and protecting eaves, were planted well back from the highway, and surrounded by fruit-trees. The comfortably-rotund matrons of these dwellings, who looked out at the new arrivals from the open upper half of their Dutch doors, were all busily knitting, for these Germantown housewives had already acquired an inter-colonial reputation as the manufacturers of superior stockings.

The first German newspaper in Pennsylvania, and the first in America printed in a foreign language, was issued in Germantown the year of Johannes' arrival. This place retained all its German characteristics down to the year 1793. Until that date all the public preaching was in German; it was the language of business and society, and even that of the boys playing in the streets. The outbreak of yellow fever in Philadelphia, in the year '93, caused the offices of the general and state governments, and of the city banks, to remove to this suburban town. This introduced an English speaking element, and a population, which proved to be, in part, permanent. Germantown thus becoming favorably known to Philadelphians, rapidly increased the number of its English speaking people.

And now we must bid Johannes a many years' farewell—here he and his family fade for a time from our sight and knowledge. By the aid of a lively fancy, we have been able, for one day, to

clothe him with all the attributes of existence and experiences, but to continue that for a decade would be to tax the powers of your scribe beyond his capabilities. Family tradition asserts that he remained in the vicinity of Philadelphia for ten years. We will leave him there to acquire the language, educate his children, rub off his foreign characteristics, and gradually to assimilate himself and his family with the manners and customs of the people of the new country of his adoption. Our next knowledge of his life is from the pages of a letter he received from Bendorf in the year 1745. That interesting communication will be presented in the coming chapter.





## CHAPTER VI.

### *Letters from the Old Country—Bendorf Comes under the Dominion of the Murdering Margrave of Anspach.*

It is before me as I write—this old letter—a little torn in places, and tanned by time to the color of old gold; yet, in a good state of preservation, and the penmanship almost like copy-plate in excellence. Its writer, Johannes Georg Hager, was an “Evangelical Præceptor,” (teacher of a Latin school), and clerk of the Bendorf church; such a person in a German village being second only to the pastor and burgomaster. The parish register, in speaking of his death, in 1775, in his sixty-first year, records that he had been active for thirty-four years in his church and school duties. This letter served as his first introduction to Johannes’ immediate family, as, in 1744, the preceptor had married Magdalena Christina Catharina Antonetta, the twenty-year-old daughter of Georg Peter Otto, whose wife, Veronica Gerdrutta, was the sister of Mariah Katrina. The communication is interesting, not only on account of the news it gives of the middle of the last century, but because of the piety evinced in its solemn invocation and benediction, and also as showing the stately and courteous style of writing at that time.

BENDORFF, June, 1745.

Corner torn off.	MR. COUSIN AND LADY CHILDREN.
---------------------	-------------------------------------

—dear friend with all my heart sympathy [torn] all wish extraordinary joy by the long [torn] expected wish from the foundation of [torn] the heart that the Almighty [torn] continually bless you also for the future and all your acts [torn] and that although in a foreign country our friendship may get cultivated and grow stronger, for the sake of Jesus Christ, Amen! You may perhaps think what a new cousin I may be, wherefore I commence by informing you that after the



death of Mr. [torn] pold in 1742 I was called here as preceptor and was married last Fall, 1744, with Magdalena Catharina, the only daughter of your brother-in-law, Otto, which accounts for our new relationship. To our all desolation our Lord has taken from us in 1741 my mother-in-law, in consequence of a fever—the same sickness which caused the death of young Mrs. Giegmann and many others. [torn] On 31 Jan., we had a calamity here as you will perhaps be aware already, whereby 75 houses were burned down. The fire commenced at the Forsten house, near the Steingate, but how it originated has not been ascertained, so far, and from there everything burned down to the Herrschafts Keller House, touching also my school house; the principal street burned down as far as Cæsar's house, and on the other side down to the pastor's house. So that between the Stein-gate and the Bach-gate there was not a single building remaining, and as you are acquainted yet with the locality you may judge for yourselves who are the people who are burned out, and if you had been present yet you would have been a sufferer too. The misery was terrible for these poor people, to see their fruits and corn a prey of the flames, and the whole was done so remarkably quick that in half an hour's time all the buildings, actually burned down, stood in full flames. It was lucky that it happened in day-time and not during the night, as otherwise many a life would have been lost; but thousand times thanks to our Lord there was no accident of the kind. On a conflagration which came so suddenly scarcely nothing of personal property could be saved; many of them have commenced rebuilding like [several names torn out,] cousin Andreas Kirgerber, who sends thousand greetings, and many others. As we are now under a different "regime," that of the Landgraf of Anspach, which is near Nuremberg, many things are changed here, the town having formerly been under the dominion of Hackenburg, but now in consequence of an exchange we belong to the margrave alone, whereby changes in the manner of building are to be observed which cause many expenses, and no one can build up his house again on the spot it formerly stood on, but had to build in conformity with certain street regulations. The fire made many people poor, and the loss of the 1740 barrels of wine and vineyards, during the late war, reduced the inhabitants so much that I am afraid that Bendorff will never be again what it was before—commerce and trade in general being in poor condition. Amongst other news I may mention that Pastor Schmitt and his wife are dead, also Knobels, and your cousin, Mrs. Ruckert, away from seven children.

Of your four letters we have not received one, except the first one, whereupon we wrote again immediately and would have written oftener since, if we had known of an opportunity available. I am very much surprised that cousin Henry in Hochstenbach, did not write to you through the opportunity which was offered to him. It seems, however, as if your sister dear, our cousin, had died, some information of the kind having reached us at the time my mother-in-law was still living. Her loss was very much lamented by my mother-in-law and all the friends, and they all wished she would live yet. \* \* \*

As regards her succession cousin Anton Kirberger has been curator over it, and was trying to get something out yet, but the matter was treated so copiously that the lawyers made the most of it.

Although he took the matter at heart more than a brother, he could not attain his purpose to have bankruptcy declared, in which case everything would have been divided honestly. \* \* \*

Our Lord the Almighty restitute it to you 1000 times, and bestow upon you good health and a long life; 1000 greetings to all relations and friends whatever

their names may be, and that they all may prosper. I would most obediently request that you may avail yourself of the first opportunity offering to write again, and we shall surely answer by returning opportunity. You would at the same time do us a favor to write us something about the customs of the country, the description of houses, mills, furniture, gardening, vegetables and what the difference is between those we have in Germany, and about iron for the mechanics, and cloth, and anything connected with husbandry and agriculture? And now I leave you all to the mercy and providence of our Lord, recommending myself to your continued remembrance, and remain with our best salutations and much esteem,

Your all, sincerest friend and servant,

JOH. GEO. HAGER, Præceptor.

“On the human imagination events produce the effect of time.” I am indebted to Cooper for this idea—No! not for the idea, but for the words expressing it; for no one discourses more eloquently, than does this novelist, of the links of recollection that bring back to the mind the innumerable changes in a comparatively short period, which causes a recent date to appear as remote as the days of dark antiquity. A. D. 1745 is not a long time ago; the span of existence of but few lives would bring us back to that year; but yet, when one contemplates the astounding alterations that have taken place in the map of Europe since that date, events seem to mark a far greater lapse of time than do the intervening years. When the writer of this old letter was rounding his sentences, Germany was composed of hundreds of separate kingdoms and principalities, each with conflicting interests, their rulers at all times ready to pounce on each others’ territory in defence of real or imaginary rights, or in vengeance for fancied wrongs. Prussia was still in the throes of its birth; Frederick, not yet the Great, was in his direst stress, and in imminent danger of having to abandon to Maria Theresa, that Silesia which he had bought with so much blood and treasure. But, two days after this letter was written, he was saved from that humiliation by the battle of Hohenfriedberg, once of world-wide renown, now almost forgotten.

It is when the mind reverts to the altered conditions of the political and personal relations between ruler and subject in Germany, and the great strides taken on the Continent in the advancement of individual rights, that one recognizes how different, as affecting the daily lives and destinies of mankind, is the world of yesterday from that of to-day. In the preceptor’s letter there is no sentence weighted with

such meaning as the few words announcing the transfer of Bendorf from the sovereignty of Hackenberg to that of Anspach. Late in the seventeenth century Bendorf was included in the county of Sayn-Altenkirchen, which also comprised the districts of Friedewald, Freusburg and Altenkirchen. It was probably known to the Herr Præceptor as the sovereignty of Hackenberg because of the records having been preserved in that town. This territory was the personal estate of Johannetta, wife of the Duke Joh. George I., of Sachsen-Eisenach. By her will of the thirtieth of November, 1685, it was to descend, under the rule of primogeniture, in the line of her eldest son. In 1741, the male line having become extinct, it passed to the descendants of her daughter, Eleonora Sophie, wife of the Margrave Johann. Fredrick of Brandenburg-Anspach, and consequently fell to her grandson, the Margrave Karl Wilhelm Friedrich, of Anspach, who reigned from 1729 to 1757. I have already spoken of the despotic power of petty German princes in the eighteenth century. They ruled over dominions often no larger than one of our counties, and outside of the boundaries of Prussia and Austria, Germany was a patchwork of—when you include free cities and the estates of imperial knights—hundreds of large and small governments. Nor were they compact, as their several possessions were frequently at detached distances, as we see by this letter was the case in the margrave of Anspach acquiring Bendorf. All these princes maintained courts and armies, and their poor subjects were taxed and oppressed to support the luxury and state of the rulers and privileged classes. The peasants were not much better off than serfs, and hordes of officials levied tribute on even the middle and better classes occupying the towns and cities. In some localities sumptuary laws regulated the dress and the food of the people. As Frederick of Prussia grew stronger in his government, matters in this regard were much improved, his example having a beneficial effect on the better class of sovereigns, inducing them to have some respect for the rights of their people; but yet, freedom of the individual, such as was at that time known and enjoyed in the American colonies, had no holding or understanding in the average German mind.

When Johannes read this letter, if he knew anything of



the character of the margrave of Anspach, he had good cause for devoutly thanking God that he and those dear to him were no longer citizens of Bendorf, and, consequently, subject to the will and caprice of a ruler who was entirely without sympathy for the rights and wrongs of his people, and who himself was governed by impulse and prejudice, rather than by a knowledge of justice, and an intuitive sense of what was due a community over which the chance of birth had placed him. Like all men controlled by their impulses, he could, at times, be generosity itself, but, nevertheless, his subjects preferred to give him a wide berth, acting as had done those of the previous king of Prussia—Frederick the Great's father—who used to fly around corners on the approach of their doughty monarch, fearing to be whacked over their shoulders by his stout cane. But, when the margrave was in a bad temper, and his judgment distorted by passion, his cruelties were apt to be of the most atrocious character. This was rendered more deplorable by the power he wielded over the destinies of the people he ruled; at such a time woe betide the noble, burgher or peasant upon whom he set his malignant eye in anger. Numerous instances are given of the severity and excesses of this prince. In 1740 he imprisoned for life one Christopher Wilhelm Von Rauser, who was merely suspected or accused of posting up caricatures of the court. Once, on hearing that his dogs were not well fed, he rode to the house of the man who had them in charge and shot him dead on his own doorstep. In 1747 he hanged, without trial, a poor servant girl, who was accused of helping a soldier to desert. As the margrave was riding out of his castle one day, he asked the sentinel on guard, who happened not to be a regular soldier, for his musket; the unfortunate fellow, recognizing his prince and not daring to disobey, unhesitatingly gave up his piece, whereupon the margrave called him a coward and no soldier, and had two hussars drag him through the mill-pond; of which treatment he died. It is not my purpose to continue the recountal of the idiosyncracies and wickednesses of this murdering prince. The personality of such a ruler could not but have a far-reaching influence for evil on all his representatives, and the citizens of distant Bendorf had to bear their proportion of the sorrows occasioned by such a government. Nor was escape by emigration any longer an easy matter, as

under the new régime, no subject could leave the dominions of the margrave without his permission, and that permission was not be had for the asking. I shall again have occasion to refer to Anspach, when we find, some thirty years later, the troops of that principality marching across Somerset county, in New Jersey, in their endeavor to assist King George III. in his hold on the revolted American colonies.

Communications by post convey in their pages a subtle charm quite wanting in spoken words. Letters sent from persons for whose views and opinions one cares but little when present, are often received with pleasure and read with interest, when the writer is but a few days' journey away; such is the mysterious something an enclosed missive carries within its envelope. If this be so, how important an event must have been the arrival of this long message from Germany. Letters were great affairs in those days, and three, four, and often five months were occupied in their coming from the old country. We can easily picture with what eager interest Johannes' family gathered about him as he read aloud these closely-written pages from Bendorf. Perhaps they expressed surprise at the marriage of Magdalena with the schoolmaster, though they were surely glad of a new relative who could write so good a letter. But Mariah Katrina could not forget his predecessor, Preceptor Kippold, whose wife had been her best friend, and had stood godmother for her second boy, Andrew, in 1729. How they all wondered, as they heard of the great fire; what words of sympathy fell from their lips as were mentioned the names of friends and neighbors whose all had been devoured by the flames. Tears doubtless fell as the death of this or that loved one was made known. They probably already knew that Maria Katrina's sisters, Mrs. Otto and Mrs. Kirberger, had died, but that the dearly-beloved pastor, Joh. Georg Schmidt and his wife, were no more was, indeed, a new grief. Had not the reverend man been the life-long friend of the parents? Had he not married them, baptized all of their children, and stood at the open graves of the two little ones they had left lying under German sod? They had tender thoughts for the seven children that the wife of the fruit-dealer, Simon Ludwig Rückert, had left motherless; and they were sorry enough to hear of the death of their old friend, Gottfried Knebel,

who had stood godfather for, and given his name to Johannes' youngest brother in 1724. How the good wife must have shuddered at the recital of the losses and distresses caused by the late war, and have thanked God, too, that there was no prospect of war and its bitterness in America. You may be sure that all the gossip of the preceptor was read and re-read. That they regretted the copiousness of the lawyers in settling the estate of Mariah Katrina's sister is a matter of course,—the cormorants of the profession evidently did not originate on this side of the water.

Anton Kirberger, the curator, who was so unsuccessful in preserving the estate from the hungry attorneys, was not a brother of Mariah Katrina, but probably a cousin, being the son of Joh. Wilhelm Kirberger of Bendorf, and a prominent citizen and court assessor of that place. He was certainly closely allied to the family, and, in 1724, stood godfather with Knebel to Johannes' youngest brother, Gottfried, and, in 1732, performed the same service for Johannes' son, Georg Anthon. It was his brother, Ehrenreich Kirberger, who, in 1725, acted as godfather for, and gave his name to, Johannes' oldest son, Ehrenreich, or Aaron. Their father was probably the brother of Burgomaster Gottfried Kirberger. This magistrate married, in 1673, the "right respectable *Jungfrau*" Veronica Gerdrutta, the daughter of the deceased Rev. Joh. Thumers, of Bendorf. Their children were Anna Barbara, Johannes Jack, Johann. Philipp, Anna Cathrina, Johann. Weimar, Andreas and Elizabeth. In 1694 the Burgomaster married, as his second wife, Elizabeth Margaretha, daughter of Peter Israel, of Altenkirchen. Their children were Veronica Gerdrutta, who married Georg Peter Otto; Maria Margaretha; Maria Catherina, who married Johannes Moelich; and Johann. Heinrich. It seems odd that the first-born of this second marriage should receive the name of the first wife—it certainly shows that the burgomaster's second choice had a patient and self-sacrificing nature. Her youngest child was the "Cousin Henry" mentioned in Preceptor Hager's letter, he being at that time the burgomaster of Hochstenbach.

I have another old letter from Bendorf, dated four years later. Like the first, it is yellow and time-stained, though its odd old-German characters are as legible as if lately penned. The



writer was Johannes' wife's cousin, the curator, and he tells the same story, as did the preceptor, of marriages and deaths, of wars, and of the great fire, which latter seems to have been the most important event of that age in the existence of the villagers. But, here is the letter!—let it speak for itself.

BENDORF, 25th May, 1749.

HIGHLY ESTEEMED COUSIN AND LADY: I have seen with great pleasure from your letter that you and your good lady with your family are well, and so are we and our other friends and acquaintances. We are glad to hear, and so are these people, that you are doing well. As regards myself, my wife and our children, we are, thank God, in good health and spirits; the Almighty keep them and ourselves so for many years longer! Otherwise there has been transpiring a good deal of news which, of course, we cannot write all. I don't know whether you have heard of the great fire which we had here in 1743. All that part from the Oberbach Gate to the pastor's house, and on the other side down to the Caesar's house up to Ralter house was destroyed, burning down everything to the ground, including the gates and your former house. Pilberger's house is the only one which was saved, all the rest being burnt down, so that no one could recognise certain places any more at all. Much cattle was burnt, too, but, thank God, no lives were lost. A good deal has been built up again since, but there is plenty of waste-ground yet, and the new buildings are erected much costlier than before. We belong now to the Margrave of Anspach, who ordered an architect to be sent who suprintends the erection of buildings, laying them all out in straight streets. I have, thanks to God, got through with my building; I have put up a house about six times as large as my former dwelling was. Your brother-in-law, Holingshausen, lives in Pilberger's house.

[two lines illegible.]

but he is in bad circumstances, he cannot do much any more, because he trembles so much, just like his mother did.

In consequence of the fire many people moved away, others became sick and many died. Your cousin, Otto, died half a year ago; Joh. Weimar Kirberger died two months ago; old Hergemann died eight days ago; Pastor Schmit and his beloved are dead long ago, which you have, no doubt, heard already. We also had a good deal of war since, but have peace now. Joh. Michael Moelich is still living, but his wife is dead.

I would wish that we could converse verbally, but as this cannot be the case, I send my greetings to all of you,

And remain your sincere cousin,

JOH. ANTON KIRBERGER.

It will be seen by this letter that Maria Katrina was now called upon to mourn the death of her half-brother, Johan. Weimar, and her sister Veronica's husband, Georg Peter Otto. The peace referred to by the writer of this letter was that following the second Silesian war, between Prussia and Austria and their numerous allies. Frederick II. had withdrawn from the conflict in 1745, but the war was continued by Austria

against France and Spain till the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748. It was during these later years that Marshall Saxe gained his famous victories of Laufeldt, Raçoux and Fontenoy, the latter being fought in the presence of Louis XV. and the dauphin. The vicinity of Bendorf suffered but little from actual conflicts, but the Rhine was the highway between Austria and Holland, which latter country was the fighting ground of the war. Bodies of troops were constantly passing and repassing along its banks, exacting from the villagers billets and forages, and impoverishing the people by the thefts and extortions always inflicted on a rural community by a foreign soldiery. Cousin Kirberger might well rejoice at the advent of peace, and the opportunity for recuperation it brought to the people of his neighborhood. The repose, alas! was not to be for long. The Seven Years' War, but a few years ahead, was lying in wait for its victims—that great combat, in which nearly all Europe was to be engaged, and which was to emblazon on the pages of history, for all time, the illustrious name of FREDERICUS MAGNUS; that conflict which ultimately resulted in the unification—in the kingdom of Prussia—of the many electorates, duchies, bishoprics, and dominions of landgraves and princes that then formed the inextricable jumble, and most extraordinary patch-work, called the map of Germany.





## CHAPTER VII.

*Johannes Moelich Appears in New Jersey in 1747—All About His Brother Godfrey—Echoes from the Ancient Walls of Zion Lutheran Church at New Germantown.*

Johannes faded from our view at Germantown, Pennsylvania, in 1735. He emerges from the mists of the years in December, 1747, in Greenwich township, Sussex, now Warren, county, New Jersey, where he appears as the purchaser from John F. Garrets of four hundred and nine acres of land fronting on the Delaware river and "Pohohatacong" creek. This investment was made for the joint benefit of himself and his youngest brother Gottfried, whom it will be remembered as a lad of eleven accompanied Johannes to America. Gottfried—known in family annals as Godfrey—was born in Bendorf on the Rhine in 1724, and after reaching this country continued to be a member of our ancestor's household until he was twenty-one years old. On growing to man's estate he settled on this land bordering "Pohohatacong" creek and the Delaware, in which vicinity many of his posterity are now living.

On the twenty-eighth of November, 1758, Johannes conveyed to this brother one hundred and eighty-one acres of the four hundred and nine that he had acquired from John F. Garrets. The deed recited that at the time of the conveyance he, the grantee, was in actual possession of the land conveyed, and that "he, the said Godfrey Moelich, was a prime purchaser, and was to have been a party in the grant and conveyance of the said four hundred and nine acres, and for that purpose paid one hundred and forty-nine pounds, his share of the consideration money agreed by them to be paid by the said Godfrey Moelich, the receipt of which said sum, he, the said Johannes, doth hereby acknowledge to



have had." From all of the above it would appear that Johannes acted as guardian for his younger brother, having brought funds with him to America to insure his proper settlement when of age. Godfrey increased his possessions that same year by purchasing one hundred and fifty acres of land from William Lovet Smith, for one hundred and fifty pounds. Long before this time he had built a stone house on the Garrets land, and for ten years had been married. In May, 1748, he took unto himself a bride of fifteen summers, Margaret, the daughter of Christopher Falkenberger, a young woman of some education and refinement, as is evidenced by her correspondence, preserved by her descendants.

Johannes does not seem to have occupied his portion of the land on the Delaware. On his death it became the homestead of his second son, Andrew. Papers in my possession show that in the year 1750 he was living in Readington township, Hunterdon county, where he was interested in a tannery with Johann. Jacob Klein (Jacob Kline), who had, a few years before married his eldest daughter, Veronica Gerdrutta (Fanny). Though I have no documentary evidence in proof of the assertion, there is every reason to believe that at that time the homestead of Johannes was a farm of four hundred acres—two hundred of which was in black oak timber—located adjoining the present line of the Central Railroad of New Jersey, midway between the White House and North Branch stations. The land lay on both sides of the County Line road, and extended north to the slope of Leslie's ridge, being crossed from east to west by Leslie's brook. Whether the title to this land vested in our ancestor, or whether he merely occupied it in conjunction with his son-in-law I am not informed. Ultimately it came into the sole possession of Jacob Kline, and there is no doubt that here he and his father-in-law established a tannery, probably the first one in northern New Jersey. The Hon. Joseph Thompson, when eighty years of age, wrote me that he well remembered the old bark and currying houses that stood on the Kline property; and that John, the grandson of Jacob Kline, had often pointed out to him the location of the dwelling of his grandfather, Moelich, as being just south of the brook, and on the other side of the road from his—John's—residence. On this

property Jacob Kline and his sons and grandsons carried on an extensive tannery business for over seventy-five years. The land is no longer in possession of the family, the original four hundred acres being now sub-divided into the farms of George W. Coles, Walter Opie and George Stillwell. "The Ridge" obtained its name from George Leslie of Perth Amboy, of whom we shall learn much in a future chapter. It is a rise of land commencing at Leslie's brook, and in breadth extends nearly two miles to Rockaway creek and Lamington river. In length it is traversed by the New Brunswick and Easton turnpike, which soon after leaving North Branch village (going westward) attains a considerable elevation that is maintained three or four miles until White House is approached, where by a gradual descent the general level of the country is again reached. Here on this breezy upland and along its slopes, from which the surrounding county is viewed like a map unrolled, have dwelt, and still dwell many of the descendants of Johannes' son-in-law, "Old Jacob Kline."

We learn from the records of the "*Kirchen Buch der Corporation von Zion in New Germantown in West Jersey*," that Johannes Moelich was an active member and officer of Zion Lutheran church in Tewksbury, then Lebanon, township, in the same county. The exact date of the establishment of this congregation is not known. As early as 1730 there were German-Lutherans in the vicinity of what is now New Germantown, it being supposed that they came from Germantown, Pennsylvania. In 1749, Zion corporation had been for some time in existence, and in that year a new church building "was solemnly dedicated to the service of God by the brethren Brunnholtz, Handschuch, Hartwig, Schaum and Kurtz." This antique structure is still standing, and its thick stone walls will doubtless continue to house congregations for generations to come. Since those early days, however, it has undergone many alterations, and in present appearance differs materially from that of the original edifice, which in outward form was not unlike the little church on Pohick creek in Virginia, built a few years later, where Washington worshiped. An immense roof, converging to the centre, capped the walls, in which small windows were set high from the ground. A huge sounding board sur-

mounted the lofty pulpit, and in the center of the building, in the broad middle aisle, was a square pit in which burned in cold weather a bright charcoal fire. It has been suggested that this fire served not only for the comfort of the worshipers but as an illustration for the preacher, who pointed his finger at the glowing bed of coals when dwelling on the everlasting fire that awaited the ungodly. In 1831 the quaint building was remodeled. The old barrack-like roof made way for one more modern in style, Gothic windows were introduced, the exterior walls were covered with a composition of lime, sand and pebbles, and a vestibule, spire and bell added. Within ten years still greater changes followed, and the auditorium was made to more nearly conform to the present fashion of church interiors.

There is still in existence the original instrument by which Ralph Smith conveyed to the trustees of Zion congregation seven and one quarter acres of land, which included the site of the church then "newly erected." It is in the form of a lease running one hundred and four years, demanding an annual quit-rent of "nine pence three farthings for each one acre, of Proclamation money." This portentous document is elaborately inscribed on a heavy piece of sheep-parchment over two feet in breadth, the ink of the text still being distinctly black, although that of the signatures has grown pale, while yet perfectly legible. The leasehold was ultimately converted into a fee by the commutation of the quit-rent. The phraseology of the conveyance begins in this wise :

This Indenture made this tenth Day of November in the Year of Our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred and Forty-Nine, Between Ralph Smith, Esq., of Lebanon in the County of Hunterdon and Province of New Jersey, on the One Part, and Baltis Bickle, Hones Melek, Philip Phise, alias White, Casper Hender-shot, Lowrence Rulifson, Samuell Barnard, David Melek, Jacob Cline, Adam Vockerot, Jacob Shipmann, George Swart and Joseph Hornbaker, Trustees to the Luthern Congregation in the Countys of Hunterdon, Somerset and Morris, on the other part, Witnesses, etc.

None of the names of the lessees are correctly spelled. The second one is, of course, that of our German ancestor. The writing of the lease, which is in a good, round, clerkly hand, is that of Smith, the lessor, who wrote Hones for *Honnes*, which is Hollan-disch, or Low Dutch, for John. Ralph Smith was an English-



man of wealth, and a large land-holder in what is now New Germantown. He came to Lebanon township from Boston in 1734, and is said to have been ambitious to found a town, which he desired should be called Smithfield. With the influx of Germans, however, his influence was not strong enough to prevent the village from being named after the Pennsylvania town from which many of these new-comers had migrated. Although all early documents mention this neighborhood simply as "King Street," or Tewksbury, Smith persisted in using the name Smithfield in his leases, even after the high-sheriff of Hunterdon plainly designated it in a public advertisement as New Germantown. The first record of this last name appears in a legal instrument drawn by Richard Stockton of Princeton, dated the twentieth of July, 1760. While Ralph Smith was unable to control the nationality of new arrivals, he endeavored, at least, to dictate the nature of the religious observances they should introduce into the neighborhood. He inserted in the lease of the church lot a clause which provided that Zion society should not allow "any other doctrin to be taught but that, according to the Lutherrien scheem, excepting a farther advance towards the Protestant Churches now established, according to the doctrins, contained in the Thirty-nine Artickles of the Church of England, or according to the Presbyterian scheem as professed and adhered to in America." The lessor was evidently solicitous that no popish errors should be propagated in the community. But imperfectly understanding the Lutherrien scheem (as he styled it)—for the services of that church were mostly in German—he was careful to provide that the preaching in the new house should not deviate in any essential respect from the doctrines of the Thirty-nine Articles and the Westminster Confession of Faith.

For several reasons this conveyance from Ralph Smith possesses an interest for the historian of Johannes Moelich. First, as showing who were at that time his co-trustees in Zion; and second, in the fact that his name appears among the first of the trustees. As their names were probably placed in the order of their importance, it is fair to presume that Johannes ranked among the most prominent of the officers and congregation. "Baltis Bickle," or more properly speaking, Balthazar Pickel,

was easily the first in possessions, age and social consequence in that German community. He was a native of Hamburg, and early in the century settled in Hunterdon county, purchasing a large tract of land at the foot of that considerable elevation which in consequence of that purchase lost its euphonious Indian appellation of Cusketunk, and has since been known as Pickel's mountain. Here his descendants for several generations have lived, and a portion of the original purchase is still in possession of the family. At the death of Balthazar Pickle, by his will he bequeathed one thousand pounds to Zion church, the intention of the pious donor being that the interest on this sum should pay the whole of the minister's salary. In this regard his expectations were not fulfilled. The money willed must have been in colonial pounds, as the total amount realized from the bequest by the trustees was a little less than two thousand dollars. Baltis and his wife Charity, "good old mother Pickel," lie buried close to the east walls of Zion. His grave stone bears the following inscription:

Here lies the body of  
Baltis Pickel  
Who departed this Life, Dec. 5th, 1765,  
In the 79th year of his age.  
Remember me as you pass by,  
As you are now so onst was I,  
As I am now so must you be  
Prepare for death and follow me.

Near by is the grave of a youth of twenty, bearing the same name, upon whose stone is the following curious verse:

My Dwelling Place is here  
This Stone is got  
To Keep the Spot  
That men dig not too near.

The date of the advent in Hunterdon county of David Moelich—mentioned as one of the church trustees—has not been ascertained. He is believed to have been our ancestor's cousin. David was born in Bendorf in 1715, being the son of Hans Peter, who it is supposed, was a brother of Johannes' father. Jonas Moelich, a bachelor brother of David, who was born in Bendorf in 1710, was also at this time a Hunterdon resident and a member of Zion congregation. There was

still another of the name then living in Lebanon township, who later became prominent in the affairs of Zion society. This fourth Moelich was Antony, Anton or Tunis, Johannes' nephew, he being the son of Johann. Peter, who emigrated unmarried from Bendorf in 1728, but who must have found himself a wife soon after arrival, as his oldest child, Tunis, was born in 1730.

It would be very agreeable to tell the whole story of the rich historical memories that cling to these old walls of Zion. Such a story would entail the narrative of the growth of population in this section of New Jersey; but, just now, our interest in this church lies with some of its early founders and their successors, and we must confine our notice to such incidents in the life of the society as relate to our German ancestor and his children. It may be mentioned, however, that as early as 1745 it appears that the Reverend Henry Melchior Muhlenberg occasionally supplied Zion pulpit, while at the same time having general charge of the affairs of the congregation. This divine,—familiarily known as Father Muhlenberg—was born in Hanover in 1711; after graduating at the University of Gottingen, which he had entered in 1735, he settled at Halle. The early German emigrants to America were essentially a religious people, and to them no distress connected with exile was more grievous than the loss of the religious instruction they had known in the old country. During the first four decades of the last century there was not in New York or New Jersey a properly-accredited clergyman of the Lutheran persuasion. The people of that faith repeatedly implored the home church to send them a minister. After much urging, Mr. Muhlenberg consented to accept charge of the American churches, and reached Philadelphia on the twenty-fifth of November, 1742. The Germans realized in him the consummation of their highest hopes for a priest, and with great joy they welcomed the ministering of holy religion in the form and manner of the church in fatherland. The labors, sufferings and successes of this Lutheran patriarch are matters of ecclesiastical history. To the character of an humble and sincere Christian were joined natural qualifications and educational acquirements that peculiarly fitted him for the arduous and varied duties incidental to his position. He was a skilful surgeon as well as a ripe theologian, and could preach to his con-



gregation with equal facility in English, German and Low Dutch. Gentleness and firmness in him were singularly blended; his wise counsel and tender sympathies won such respect and devotion that throughout his life his influence among the Germans was unbounded. We are told that his eloquence was of an order that would equally move and melt the heart of the wildest frontiersman, or rivet the attention of the most cultured and educated member of the synod. In 1745 he removed from Philadelphia to the village of La Trappe—New Providence—in Montgomery county, Pennsylvania, which at that time contained the largest and most important German congregation in the country. From then until his death, in 1787, he seems to have had a general oversight of, and to have exercised a sort of presiding eldership over, the churches of the Lutheran denomination. He was a wonderful organizer of congregations. Heat nor cold, storm nor wind, robbers nor Indians, could daunt his energies or repress the enthusiasm of the missionary spirit, which led him to travel thousands of miles through the Middle and Southern States at the call of his German brethren. The rare virtues and talents of this unusual man were, to a remarkable degree, transmitted to his posterity through successive generations. As clergymen, soldiers, statesmen, educators, authors and poets, we find that his children, grandchildren and great-grandchildren have taken rank with the most distinguished men of the country.

The first missionary of Zion church was the Reverend Johannes Christophorus Hartwig, (anglice), John Christopher Hartwick, who contributed his erratic services during the years 1747-1748. He did not tarry long in Tewksbury as his usefulness was much impaired by an unfortunate repugnance he felt towards all womankind. Neighborhood gossip recites that he would cross the road, or even leap a fence, to avoid meeting one of the gentler sex. The story is told that when preaching in New York state, on awaking one morning at the home of a parishioner, he found that the good woman of the house had arisen in the night and silently spread a thick petticoat over the bed, lest he should suffer with the cold; so indignant was the clergyman that he made his way to the stable, saddled his horse, and rode off before breakfast. On the seventh of September,

1748, there arrived at Philadelphia, by the ship "Hampshire," Captain Thomas Cheeseman, from Rotterdam, the Reverend Joh. Albert Weygand. At the instigation of Father Muhlenberg, he was soon preaching at New Germantown as a candidate, and in the following year this immigrant-minister was invited to be the regular pastor of the congregation. Among the seventy-eight names signed to his call were those of Baltus Pickel, Johannes Moelich, Samuel Barnhardt, Jacob Kline, Joseph Hornbaker, Philip Weiss, Lawrence Roelifson and others. Mr. Weygand's services proved very acceptable to the people and it was during his pastorate that the church edifice was completed and dedicated. How long he officiated is not exactly known, but it is certain that in a printed publication of 1755 he is spoken of as "the minister of the old Lutheran Church at New York and Hackensack"—serving alternately the people of Bergen and Rockland counties, and the congregation of New York city.

Following Mr. Weygand came, in about the year 1754, Pastor Ludolph Heinrich Schrenck; his stay was short and his departure is unrecorded. During these changes and vacancies Father Muhlenberg continued his episcopal direction of Zion's people. In the autumn of 1760 he sent a young man—Reverend Paul Bryzelius—on horseback to the "hill country of New Jersey," to preach to the waiting congregations of Zion and St. Paul. Of the latter church society we shall learn something shortly. With him he dispatched a letter addressed to his "highly respected and dearly beloved Brethren Messieurs Balthasar Pickel and John Moelich, senior, at Racheway, etc." This last word expresses Father Muhlenberg's endeavor to spell Rockaway, the name of the stream which drains the country west and south of Tewksbury township, and upon the south branch of which lived Balthazar Pickle. The writer of this letter makes another effort to anglicise—this time a foreign, not a native word. The name "Brucelius" is written in English, and was evidently an attempt to convey in Roman characters the sound of the young clergyman's name. In subsequent entries upon the church books Muhlenberg wrote it *Bryzelius*. Doctor Hazelius, afterwards of Zion's pulpit, and himself of Swedish origin, spelled it "Brize-lius." But enough of preface! Here is a translation of this pastoral message from the last century:

WORTHY AND BELOVED FATHERS AND BRETHREN: Herewith I send in my place on a visit an honest teacher, namely, Ddmine Brucelius, who studied in Sweden and traveled several years in Germany and England, and tried many things. He is still in his best years, cheerful and very industrious, humble and friendly in company, lives sober, godly and exemplary, and understands well how to deal with the rich and poor, with the learned and unlearned, with the sick and healthy; has a great knowledge in the true Christianity, and tries to lead souls to Lord Jesus; understands good English and German. Since, however, in past years he preached mostly in Swedish and English, and had little practice in the German language, therefore, German seems a little difficult. He will very soon, however, regain his knowledge of German when he has had just a little practice. You will hear and see for yourselves wherein he will please you in doctrine and conversation, and write me what you think of him.

I am for the present not able to pay his traveling expenses, and hope the dear brethren will take care of this out of love because he has hired from his congregation a horse for the journey, which he must himself pay for.

Receive him in love as a true servant of Jesus, and make his conversation useful to you. To your wives and worthy relations, especially to the long-suffering sick mother, Pickel, give consolation out of the abounding love of Jesus, and be true even unto death; then will you receive the crown of life and glory.

Thus wishes, worthy and beloved fathers and brethren, your old well-wisher and friend,

HENRY MUHLENBERG.

NEW PROVIDENCE, 25 Nov., 1760.

This day I have buried my youngest son.

This young minister found such favor with the good people of the hill country as to be regularly called as their pastor, and he continued preaching to the congregations of New Germantown and Pluckamin until 1767, when he removed to Nova Scotia. He was the first occupant of the parsonage near the first named village. In May following Mr. Bryzelius' removal, Father Muhlenberg was elected "Rector" of the united churches of Zion and St. Paul. As the patriarch never resided in New Jersey, and continued, as before, the pastor of the Lutheran churches of Philadelphia, the inference is that the election and formal acceptance was a prudential measure intended to further the temporal interests of the united congregations. During the vacancy of their pulpits he occasionally occupied them, as did the Rev. Christian Streit, who was afterward the pastor of a Lutheran congregation at Easton, Pennsylvania. Father Muhlenberg appears, however, at all times to have given his personal care and direction to the affairs of the society. Not long after the departure of Mr. Bryzelius he addressed to the brethren the following quaint and characteristic letter, advising them as to their course while without a spiritual guide. The reference to Bedminster will be



made plain, later, when we come upon the founding of St. Paul's congregation at Pluckamin. The superscription in English reads :

To the Wardens and Vestries of the United Lutheran Churches in New Germantown and Bedminster.

The original letter is in German :

HONORABLE CORPORATION, BELOVED BRETHREN: I recently wrote a letter to you and gave it to Mr. Bartles. Rev. Kurtz, our old minister, has promised to make a visit to the United Congregations after the Holy days of the dear Lord. If he should be too feeble for so difficult a winter journey, some one younger will come. I beseech, however, the Honorable Corporation that she take care of her charter and order, and open the churches to no disorderly preachers or tramps. The fugitives who run where they have not been sent must stop with their equals. Because where the carcass is there gather the eagles.

The Honorable Corporation will take also into consideration and provide that during the coming spring the parsonage may be set in habitable order. It would be very good if the God-fearing members of both congregations would assemble on Sundays in their churches, would sing together an edifying hymn, order something to be read, and would pray. Some one will be amongst the brethren who can do it.

I send you my hearty greeting, and hope we may soon meet again.

I am your old

FRIEND MUHLENBERG.

Philadelphia, 10 Dec., 1767.

The next incumbent at New Germantown came to New Jersey confident of possessing the affections and esteem of her people, for he was John Peter Gabriel Muhlenberg, the eldest son of the patriarch, who after much solicitation had consented to serve as resident deputy-rector for his father. He occupied Zion's pulpit for the first time on the fifth of February, 1769, and continued to supply that and St. Paul's for three years. He awakened an enthusiastic devotion in the members of his flock, and though at this time but twenty-three years old, he soon won their respect as well as their affections. In 1772 his father was applied to by the Germans of the valley of the Blue Ridge, Virginia, for a minister for their new church at Woodstock, the county-town of Dunmore, they asking that his son might be sent. This request was acceded to, and the young minister made his way beyond the Potomac, where he so conducted himself as to insure his name ever being honorably preserved on the pages of history. We shall pass some interesting hours in this

excellent man's company on his return to New Jersey, after exchanging his rector's gown for the blue and buff of a Continental general.

For several years following the loss of Peter Muhlenberg, Zion's pulpit appears to have been without an occupant, Father Muhlenberg continuing his oversight of the congregation. Repeated requests were made to the rector that he would send one of his two remaining sons to fill the office of "assistant minister." While this desire was never gratified—at least to the extent of a residence of either for a continuous period—it is in evidence that Henry Ernst, the youngest, occasionally supplied the churches, and presided at regular vestry councils. His consent was at one time obtained to become the rector in place of his father, but the joint congregations of Philadelphia refused to release him from a prior engagement, and so the arrangement was not consummated. That, meanwhile, unsuccessful efforts were made to secure a minister is shown by the following letter of Father Muhlenberg addressed to Ehrenreich Moelich and his co-trustees. Our immigrant ancestor, Johannes, having by this time become a member of the congregation of that greater and eternal Zion, his eldest son had taken the sire's place among the fathers of the earthly church. As it is dated the year previous to the one in which Peter Muhlenberg severed his connection with the New Jersey congregations, it would seem that he was absent from his charge during some part of 1771. He may have been on a visit to the valley of Virginia, and evidently had already notified his parishioners that he intended to leave them.

WORTHY AND BELOVED BRETHREN: I received your dear letter of the 16th September from Bedminster, through the dear brother, Anthony Melick, and understand from it: 1st, That the majority of the members of St. Paul's church met on Wednesday and voted for Mr. Kuntze and Mr. Buscherch. 2nd, Now, as far as Mr. Kuntze is concerned, he thanks the dear brethren heartily, because they have been so good as to vote for him. It is not possible for him to accept the call, since the corporation of Philadelphia positively will not release him, neither can they let him go, nor will they, and he himself also before God has neither conviction nor desire to leave without a cause the congregation entrusted to him. 3rd, And because the beloved brethren have also voted for Mr. Buscherch, and I have heard that Mr. Buscherch will preach next Sunday in New Germantown; if then the Bedminster corporation thinks that Mr. Buscherch is strong and qualified enough to feed your three congregations, and the corporation of Zion's church, likewise, thinks and agrees with you, then can you ask him by chance if he is willing to accept a call from you or not. The congregations have,

indeed, a right to vote, nevertheless the question remains whether the preacher for whom they voted truly can accept the call, or will. For this time I don't know anything further to answer, except that I greet you all heartily and kiss you in Christ, who for the comfort of the Believers has promised "Look, I am with you every day, until the end of the world." I remain your old wellwisher and intercessor,

HENRY MUHLENBERG.

Philadelphia, 22 Sept., 1771.

My next record of a shepherd to this Lutheran flock is that of William Anthony Graff, a native of Grunstadt in Rhenish Bavaria, and a graduate of the university of Gressen in Hesse-Darmstadt. This godly man came in 1775 and preached until his death, thirty-four years later, his memory being still preserved as a precious heritage by the descendants of the fathers of Zion. His certificate of ordination, dated in September, 1760, is in the handwriting of Father Muhlenberg, and it records in stately, scholastic Latin that he was called in that year to the charges of Hackensack and Ramapo, "prefectures of New Jersey belonging to the kingdom of Great Britain." With those congregations he remained for fifteen years, until called to New Germantown. This certificate shows further that the newly-ordained one vows "to abhor all fanatical opinions, such as pontifical, anabaptist, sacramentarian and similar errors." And then to him is entrusted, with pious ceremony, "the office of teaching the gospel and administering the sacraments according to the calling and rule prescribed in the Prophetic and Apostolic writings, whose sum is comprehended in the three Symbols, Apostolic, Nicene and Athanasian,—in the Augsburg confession presented to the Emperor Charles V. in the year 1530, and in the Apology of the same—likewise in the smaller and larger catechisms of Dn. Dr. Luther, and in the articles to which signatures were appended in the assembly of Schmalcald." The whole closes with the handsome signatures and seals of

CAROLUS MAGNUS WRANGEL,  
S. S. THEOL. DOCTOR CONCIONATOR AULIC.  
ORD. SUECORUM REGIS & ECCLESJARUM,  
SUECO LUTHER-IN AMERICA PRAEPOSITUS.

HENRICUS MUHLENBERG.  
MINISTERU GERMANICO  
LUTHERANI PRAESES ET  
SENIOR.



The first signature, with its appended title, may be translated: Charles Magnus Wrangel, Doctor of Sacred Theology, Regular Court Preacher to the King of Sweden, and Head of the Swedish Lutheran Churches in America.

About the time of the coming of Pastor Graff we may conclude that this Lutheran congregation was in a flourishing condition. Before me lies an original list of the communicants of the church, dated the second of May, 1773, showing their number to have been ninety. It is in the handwriting of the elder Muhlenberg, and the names present a singular mixture of German, Latin and English spelling. Among them are to be found, Ehrenr Moelich, evidently intended for Aaron Moelich, the first name standing for Ehrenreich; his wife is set down as Charlotta; Jonas Moelich; Christian Meelich; Mr. Anthony Meelich, n fr. Eleonora; Mr. Balthas Pickel; Mr. Jacob Klein, n fr. Euphronica; Gottfried fein n fr. Magdalena; Marcus Koenig, n fr. Elisabeth; Joh. Appelman, n fr. Ursula Magdal; Mr. Thomas van Busshkerk, n fr., Esther; Frau Müllerin Henrichs. The Christian Meelich mentioned above was the son of Johannes' cousin David; Anthony Meelich, as we have already learned, was Johannes' nephew, while Frau Müllerin Henrichs was Maria Catherine, a sister of Anthony at Tunis, who, in 1755, became the wife of Joh. Henry Müller—*Anglice*, Miller. Her husband emigrated from Germany in 1750, and three years later settled near New Germantown, where he became a valued citizen, being for thirty-four years the clerk of the township. Although a devoted Christian, he was of the German Reformed persuasion, consequently we do not find his name on Zion communion lists, where that of his wife for a number of years frequently appears. Eventually she proved a wandering sheep and strayed from the Lutheran flock—the church of her forefathers. In the year 1782 a Methodist minister arrived in Tewksbury who secured the good-will of her brother, Tunis—then a church warden—with whom he lodged. Among the few persons that he succeeded in converting to the new, and generally considered heterodox, faith, was his host's sister. This did not accord with the views of her husband, Henry Miller, who, thereupon, interviewed the missionary, and reported the result in writing to his wife's pastor, Mr. Graff,

declaring that he found the newcomers religious beliefs to be "scandalous and despicable of the church." On the following Sunday, the rector, from the pulpit, denounced the itinerant as a "proselyting upstart." This brought Tunis Melick to his feet in defence of his guest, and he angrily interrupted Mr. Graff, being joined in his protest by Godfrey Rinehart, another churchwarden. A great commotion was produced in the congregation, and the two malcontents were subsequently tried and deposed from the vestry. Tunis Melick and his wife adhered to the new faith, and with a few others stemmed the current of opposition, until their perseverance was finally rewarded by the establishment of a Methodist congregation, in which their descendants have been prominent to this day.

Catherine Miller was much beloved, and was long remembered in Tewksbury because of the impress made by her strong character and deeply religious nature upon the people among whom she spent her life. John Fine, who died in 1861 at the age of eighty-two, and who himself was as modest and humble as he was good, used to tell that in his boyhood he was indentured for a term of years to Henry Miller. He soon found his master's wife to be not only very pious, but exceedingly strict. She treated him well, but insisted that he should comprehend his duties and perform them all in their proper time and order. On one occasion, being seriously punished for running the milch cows from the field, he was inclined to resent the whipping, and did revenge himself by some ugly boyish trick. "In after years I regretted it very much," said the good old man, "and more especially did I grieve over it, when, upon the death of Mother Miller, it was discovered that she had knelt so often and so long in secret prayer that '*callusses*' had grown upon her knees, resembling those upon the hand of a common working-man." Henry Miller upon the death of his wife thus recorded the event in his family Bible: "1807. To-day the 22nd Jan.: at 12 o'clock noon, has my dear wife Maria Catherina fallen peacefully asleep in the Lord, and will be buried on the 25th day. After we have lived fifty-one years, nine months and three weeks together in the Holy estate of matrimony. And she is the first one who has died in my house. May the dear God prepare us who are left behind to follow piously after, for the sake of his dear Son, Jesus Christ,

Amen." "Good old Father Fine," who has preserved to us the story of Catherine Miller's habit of prayer, seems to have reached a height of spirituality unattainable by his contemporaries, and he left a name that stands as a synonym for Christian piety in all the Tewksbury region. He was a man of "wise saws, sententious apothegms and apposite anecdotes," and the tales, related by the village gossips of his biblical honesty, are the wonder of the present generation. He and his wife were early converts to Methodism, he being blessed with a help-mate as heavenly minded as himself. "Mother Fine" was renowned for sanctity, for charity, for every tender feeling. A clerical bull is associated with her name. An Irish minister said to her at a social meeting, "Sister Mother, please lead our devotions!"

But these reminiscences are carrying us too far away from Pastor Graff, to whom we must return. At the time of his coming to Zion and St. Paul's he was in the prime of manhood, being about eight and forty years old. An interesting family, consisting of a wife and half a dozen children (of whom four were daughters), constituted the whole of his worldly wealth—if we may except a traditional "roach-backed" horse, with riding equipments, and a certain weather-stained "shay" of a comically antique construction. Father Graff's parishioners delighted in his imposing appearance. He was very fond of the saddle, and wearing a three-cornered hat and military boots, was often to be seen astride of his faithful steed, riding between New Germantown, Pluckamin, and on to Roxbury, where he also supplied a Lutheran pulpit. Mr. Graff's salary was to be the interest on the Pickel legacy (supposed to amount to sixty pounds), and sixty pounds more to be raised by contributions from the congregations of Pluckamin and Roxbury. For this the New Germantown congregation was entitled to preaching twice monthly, while the lesser flocks were forced to be contented with Sunday visitations of once a month. He soon dropped from his official title "deputy," or "pro tem" as Father Muhlenberg, hearing of the excellent choice of the congregations, very willingly resigned the rectorship.

Mr. Graff preached alternately in German and English, but his efforts to conquer the latter tongue were never entirely successful. It is said that to the end of life he persisted



in calling the village of his residence "New *Shurrmantown*," and that of the location of St. Paul's church "*Blook-a-meen*." The story is told that once, when delivering a sermon on the temptation of Eve, the word, serpent, slipped his memory. Try hard as he would it continued to elude him. After an awkward hesitation and much endeavor he stammered out in broken English: "*Dot old—dot—dot old Tuyfel, der shnake*." The good rector may have been a little uncertain in his language, but there is no doubt that his virtues and attainments were of the most positive character. All testimony is concurrent as to his having been a devoted, diligent and loving pastor, and a truly learned and pious man. Possessed of an eminently happy disposition he was esteemed and beloved by his people, both for the many amiable qualities of his personality, and for the faithful performance of his pastoral duties. During the last four years of his life, age and infirmity seriously interfered with his public ministrations. Children, however, were brought to his house for baptism, marriage rites were not considered complete without his blessing, and he even performed the last offices for the dead while supported in his tottering steps by dutiful and affectionate parishioners. We shall see him standing by Aaron Moelich's coffin within a few weeks of his own death. At last, on the thirty-first of May, in the year 1809, after days and nights of wearisome pain, his soul was gently released from its decaying tenement, and good old Father Graff's pastorate was over. At the north-east corner of the village church, which he so faithfully served for nearly thirty-four years, a plain, brown-stone slab marks his final resting place, and chronicles in simple language the span of his life. With Mr. Graff we will conclude the enumeration of Zion's ministers, for with him ends the line of those who baptized, married and buried the descendants of Johannes Moelich.

Among the archives of the church are two interesting documents bearing the signatures of our German ancestor. He spells the name "*Mölich*;" the diæresis over the o, denoting the omission of the letter e. The first signature is attached to an obligation in which he was a co-signer with twelve other elders and deacons. It reads as follows:

Know all men by these Presence that We, to wit, I, Lorentz Ruloffs; I, Jacob Shuppmann; I, Andreas Abel Sen.; I, Johannes Moelich; I, Adam Fükeroth; I,

George Schwartz; I, Phillipp Weiss; I, David Moelich; I, Casper Hindersheidt; I, Samuel Bernhard, signed [Barnhardt]; I, Joseph Hernbekker; I, Jacob Klein, and I, Jacob Fasbinder, at this time elders and deacons of the High Dutch Lutheran Congregation belonging to the Meeting house Called Zion in Lebanon, are held firmly bound in the name of the forsaid Congregation, and Meeting house unto Baltes Bickel of Reading-Taun in the County of Hunterdon and Province of New Jersey, his heirs etc, etc, unto the sum of Eighty Two Pounds, lawful Jersey money at Eight Shillings per ounce, to be paid etc. etc, Dated the Eighteenth day of December in the year of our Lord God, One Thousand Seven Hundred and Fifty.

Of the thirteen elders and deacons, six, viz: Johannes and David Moelich, Fükeroth, Weiss, Klein, and Fasbinder, signed in German character, two—Barnhardt and Hernbekker—signed in good plain English, while the remaining five were obliged to make their marks. It would seem the ancient congregation of the *Evangelische Haupt-Kirche* of Bendorf on the Rhine, contributed a number of officers and members to the "Honorable Corporation" of Zion church at New Germantown. We have already seen that Johannes, David, and Jonas Moelich, had been members of the German congregation, and now we find another of Zion's trustees, Jacob Fasbinder, to have been transferred from the parish on the Rhine. He was born in Bendorf in 1683, being the son of Jacob Fassbender, who migrated to that place from Homburg, and is named on the church register as a "*reuter*," or military horsemen. Jacob Fassbender, the younger, was probably attracted to New Jersey, because of the number of his fellow-townsmen who had preceded him across the water. He was over sixty years old before he emigrated, as he landed at Philadelphia from the ship *Loyal Judith*, James Cowil, master, on the second of September, 1743. Still another member of this New Jersey Lutheran congregation came from the Bendorf church—Gottfried Klein (Godfrey Kline). He was a son of Christian Klein, who, in 1733, stood godfather to Johannes' daughter, Marie Cathrine. I have not discovered any connection between this Christian Klein and Johan Jacob Klein, who married Johannes' daughter, Veronica Gerdrutta. Christian's son, Godfrey, was the emigrant ancestor of another Hunterdon line of that name. Should further researches in the Bendorf parish register be made, it is not improbable that additional names would be found identical with those of the Hunterdon congregation. There is good reason for believing that this inter-

esting German church was the means of founding the New Jersey corporation.

The second document on which the signature of Johannes appears is a faded, yellow, slightly torn, and much worn paper of the date of December 1st, 1757. It is a bond, written in German, for money borrowed in behalf of the congregation to be used in the erection of a parsonage on the glebe land. A stone dwelling was erected one mile and a half from New Germantown, on the road to Lebanon. It has only recently disappeared; a gaping cellar choked with weeds and rubbish is all that is left to mark the spot where it stood. The musty, warped, leather-bound church-book, shows Johannes and David Moelich to have been appointed by the vestry a committee to superintend the building of this house. In the bond it is interesting to note their attempt to spell English words in a German fashion. It commences in this wise :

Know all men by these Presence, that we, to wit, I, *Daviird* Moelich in *Riedens-Daiin* in *Hünder-daiin*, *Caiindi* in the *bro Viincs* of West new Jersey, and I, Johannes Moelich in *Lebanon-Daiin*, same *Caiinti* and *brovurns*.

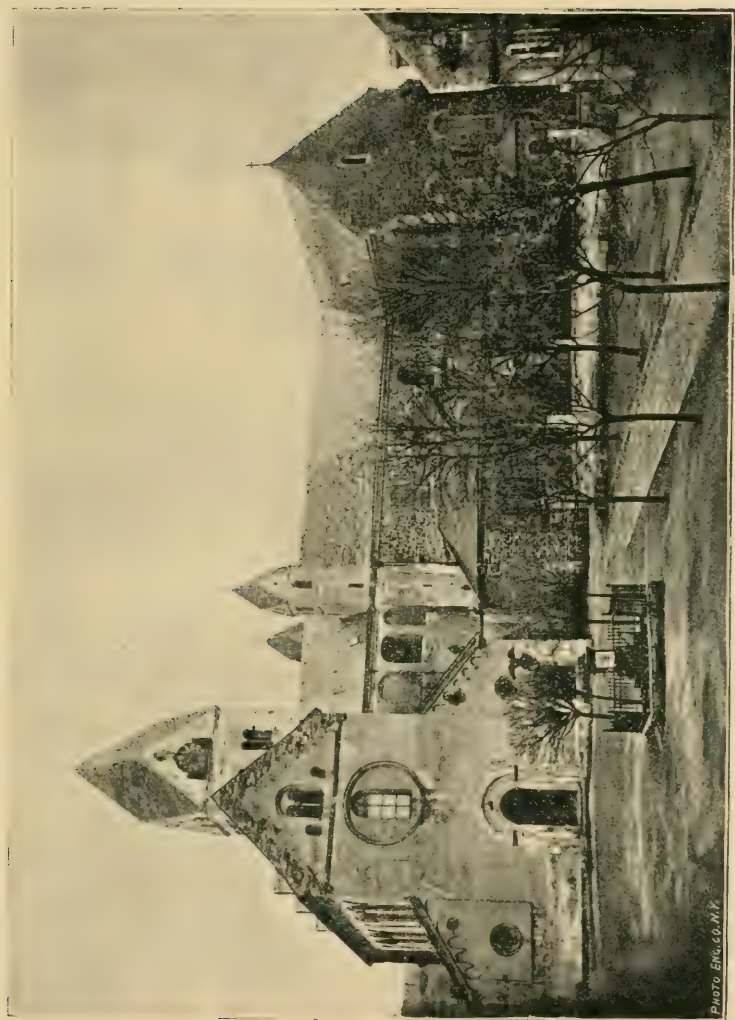
Johannes continued his connection with Zion church until his death in 1763. At a meeting of the vestry in the year 1756, it was resolved to erect a new sanctuary for the benefit of the many members of the congregation living in the adjoining county, on the east. Consequently steps were taken for the erection of St. Paul's church in the village of Pluckamin, in Bedminster township, Somerset county. The original subscription list, circulated at that time in order to raise the necessary funds, is still in existence, and the appeal reads as follows :

BEDMINSTER, Ye 7th Day of December, 1756.

A Subscription For Raising a Sum of money For Building a Church In Bedminster town.

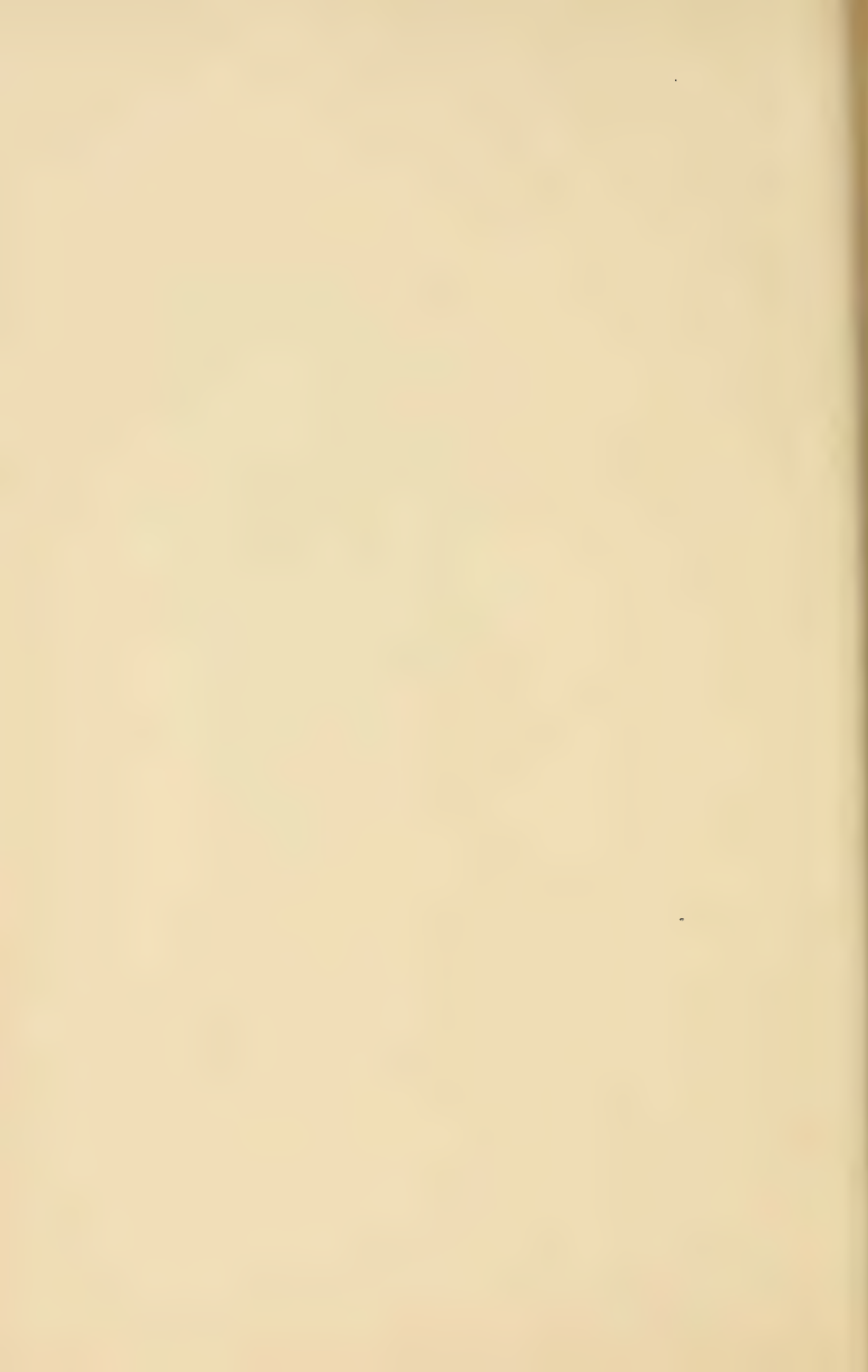
Whereas the members of the Lutheran Congregation In and near Bedminster town Being necessitated For a Place of Public Worship Think a Proper Place to Erect a House for To Worship God, and it is further agreed By us the Subscribers That one half of the Preaching, or Every other Sermon Preached By any minister Chosen the Said Lutheran Congregation Shall be in the English Language and the other in High Dutch. We, therefore, the underscribers, Do Promise To Pay or cause to be Paid The Sum or Sums annexed to our names for the uses above mentioned To any Person or Persons Chosen Collector of Said money by the said Congregation. The Money is not To be paid until Said Church is a Building and the money wanted for that Use. We most Humbly would Desire





EVANGELISCHE HAUPT-KIRCHE,  
BENDORF-ON-THE-RHINE.

Photo Eng. Co. N.Y.



the assistance of all our well Minded friends and neighbors That are well wishers for Promoting So Good a deseine To Be helpful to us and subscribe such a matter To this our undertaking which will be Accepted with Greatest Humility and thankfulness, and will be Attending to the advancement of ye Glory of God.

Then follow the signatures of one hundred and thirty persons, many of them being members of the Presbyterian congregations of Lamington and Basking Ridge, and of the Dutch Reformed churches on the Raritan, and below. Among these names are those of Johannes Moelich, Marcus King, Jacob Eoff Sen., James Linn, Aaron Malick, Hendrick Van Arsdalen, John and George Teeple, Guisbert Sutfin, Abraham Montanyea and Mary Alexander. The total amount subscribed was about three hundred and fifty pounds. The church was built on land donated by Jacob Eoff, senior; it stood until early in this century when it was taken down, its abuse during the Revolutionary war having so weakened the walls as to have rendered them dangerous. Its location was a little southeast of the present Presbyterian church; the burial ground of that denomination originally surrounded the edifice of St. Paul's, and in it are interred many members of that Lutheran flock, including Johannes Moelich and his son, Aaron. Among the heir-looms of the "Old Stone House is the altar cloth of this church, which is preserved as an interesting relic of the days of the family's German ancestry.

With the turn of the century the Lutherans of Bedminster had in numbers become a feeble folk, and by the year 1806 St. Paul's communion appears to have fallen into a moribund condition. This is shown by the original draft, now before me, in the handwriting of Pastor Graff, of the will of John Appelman, dated in that year. The testator must have died an old man, as in 1767 he was elected a vestryman of this church "in Bedminster town," with Aaron Malick, Mark King, Peter Melick, Jacob Eoff, David King and others. This instrument, which constitutes Aaron's son, Daniel, one of the executors, recites:

It always has been my will and Intention since Providence gave to me no Heirs of my Body, to give and make a certain sum in my Last Will for the *Best* of our Lutheran church at Pluckamin to uphold our holy Religion, but since by all human appearance our particular Denomination in Pluckamin as Lutheran



will soon lose ground on account of the smallness of its Professors, it is, therefore, now my Will and Intention, not to Limit the proposed sum of One hundred Pounds, intended to our church at Pluckamin only, but to give myne assistance in general towards upholding our holy Religion under the assistance of a merciful God in all our united Lutheran churches in these Parts \* \* \* \*

These ancient echoes of the walls of Zion are carrying us on much too fast. We must return to the dates appropriate to the regular progression of events in the story of our ancestor's life. Before doing so, however, we will make one final reference to these interesting Lutheran congregations. In the royal charter granted by George III. in 1767, "to the Rector, Church Wardens and Vestrymen of the united Churches of Zion and St. Paul," the following names appear as its petitioners; Lucas Dipple, David King, Jacob Eoff, John Appelman, Leonard Streit, Conrad Meizner, Aaron Malick, Jacob Volser, Mark King, Christofer Teeple and John Teeple, all being residents of the townships of Bridgewater, Bedminster and Bernards, in Somerset county. It will be seen that Johannes always adhered to the German spelling of his name. As is shown by the St. Paul's subscription list as well as by the petition for the charter, his oldest son, who had made his advent in this country as "Ehrenreich Moelich," now appears with his name anglicized to "Aaron Malick." In all the letters, bonds and papers in my possession bearing his signature the name is spelled as above. The same may be said of his brother, Andrew. Johannes, his sons and their posterity have written their names with varied spelling; their signatures appear as Möelich, Melich, Malick, Melegh, Meelick, Mellick and Melick. As late as 1805, old pastor Graff of Zion church spelled it in the old book of record, Moelich, while away back in 1770 the Rev. Peter Muhlenberg—the afterwards distinguished Revolutionary general—wrote the name in the same old book as Melick. As Shakespeare seems to have been a little uncertain in the spelling of his patronymic, we may excuse the same doubts in the early members of this old family during the transitional period from the German to the American. Even at this late day there is no uniformity in the spelling, as it is found in New York and New Jersey, Mellick, Malick and Melick, and in Pennsylvania Moelich, Malick and Melick, though in this latter state the accent is often placed on the first syllable and the division is made between the l and i, thus giving it the sound as if

spelled with two *l*'s. Rector Graff, referred to above, judging from the church register, was often at a loss as to the spelling of his own cognomen. It is written Graff, Graf, Graaff and Graaf.

The year 1751 approaches—one of the most important, perhaps, in the family annals, as it is the one in which Johannes finally decided where to plant the permanent homestead. Meanwhile let us consider the changes that have taken place in his flock since the arrival in America. Aaron, the oldest son—the great-grandfather of the writer—has grown to be a man of twenty-six years and is still unmarried. Veronica Gerdrutta (Fanny), who is now twenty years old, as we have seen, has married her father's partner, Jacob Kline, who was born in Germany on the sixth of March, 1714. Their first child John William is now beginning to walk and talk, having been born on the fifth of January, 1750. Johannes' second son Andrew has reached majority, while his second daughter Maria is just budding into womanhood, being eighteen years old. Since reaching America two sons have been born—Philip on the ninth of October, 1736, and Peter on the fifth of December, 1739.





## CHAPTER VIII.

### *Purchase of the "Old Farm" in 1751—The Title, and Early New Jersey History.*

And now the current of our history changes. The stream that has heretofore taken wild leaps from America to Europe, from Germany to Pennsylvania, will for a time flow peacefully between pastoral banks, amid the pleasant vales and gently swelling hills of East Jersey. Later on, when England has let loose the dogs of war upon her American subjects, it will rush through wild and turbulent scenes. But for some years to come this little river of narration will flow tranquilly in quiet haunts, skirting broad meadow spaces, meandering through retired villages, and turning the wheels of busy mills seated in deep valleys; telling the pleasant story, as it flows, of old Bedminster, and its transformation from a wilderness—the home of bear, deer and primitive settler—to a rich agricultural country, peopled by a well-ordered and prosperous community.

Since the arrival of Johannes in New Jersey he had been in search of a location that would meet all the requirements of a permanent home. His needs were not confined to good agricultural lands; a water power was also desired, advantageously situated for establishing a tannery. In 1751 Bedminster township in Somerset county was decided upon as his future place of residence. On the first of November in that year he purchased of George Leslie of Perth Amboy three hundred and sixty-seven acres of wild or forest land, having a front of about three-quarters of a mile on the north branch of the Raritan river. The following is the description shown in the deed:

Beginning at the Easter most corner of Daniel Axtell's land, where it touches Peapack river, below a log house that John Burd now lives in. Thence running



South, seventy-three degrees West, along the said Axtell's line, sixty chains to a corner of the land William Hoagland now possesses, belonging unto the said George Leslie. Thence North, forty-eight chains. Thence South, seventy-six degrees, West forty-nine chains. Thence North and by East, thirty-two chains. Thence North, seventy-six degrees, East fifty-nine chains to Lawrence's brook. Thence down the said brook and Peapack river to the first mentioned place of beginning. Bounded East by the said river, Southerly by said Axtell's land, and on all the other sides by the land belonging unto the said George Leslie.

The confines of the property as relating to roads and adjoining owners nowadays would be defined as follows: The description commences at a point where the Mine brook, or Lamington road, crosses the north branch of the Raritan, which river was the eastern boundary of the estate. From there the line followed the centre of this road to a point in the west boundary of the house-lot of Clark D. Todd, in the village of the Lesser Cross Roads (Bedminster). Thence, northerly, to a hickory tree standing on the side of the Peapack road, near the gate, or entrance, to what was lately the homestead farm of Abram D. Huff. Thence along this road to the Holland road, where, turning west, the line followed the latter road to the southwest corner of the Opie Farm. Here the Holland road bears north of west, but the line continued westerly, on the left of the highway, to a corner of lands, now or late of Henry Woods. Thence northerly, following Woods' line, and crossing the Holland road, it extended twenty-one hundred and twelve feet to a corner of land, now or late of Edward Hight. Thence, easterly, thirty-eight hundred and ninety-four feet to a point in the Peapack brook near the head of Schomp's mill-pond, from where the line continued down the brook and the north branch of the Raritan river to the place of beginning. By the above it will be seen that the original purchase, in addition to the one hundred and forty acres now constituting the farm, embraced so much of the village of Bedminster as lies north of the Lamington road; a portion of the Huff farm on the Peapack road; and all of the Opie, and a portion of the Hight and Woods farms on the Holland road.

The price paid for this property was "seven hundred and fifty-four pounds current money of the province, at eight shillings per ounce." This last clause of the consideration materially modifies the cost of the land. Money at eight shillings to the ounce meant

a considerable depreciation from the standard values. In the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries English silver was coined on the basis of five shillings and two pence per ounce. The silver coin mostly in use in the American colonies was the Spanish milled dollar or "piece of eight," which the English mint found to be worth four shillings and six pence sterling, or one pound equalling four dollars and forty-four and four-ninths cents. This was established as the standard relative value. But early in the eighteenth century the weight and quality of the Spanish milled dollar did not continue to realize this ratio. The circulation of clipped and inferior coins rapidly depreciated all currency values, hence, as Professor Sumner of Yale college, says, "Any such rating as eight shillings to the ounce was only one stage in the various grades of depreciation; it was a conventional attempt to compromise on a standard of weight allowing some depreciation." This rating consequently reduced the pound sterling from four dollars and forty-four and four-ninths cents to three dollars and fourteen and one-quarter cents. Thus we find that the actual consideration for the purchase of the Bedminster land was twenty-three hundred and sixty-nine dollars and forty-four cents, or about six dollars and forty-five cents an acre.

With Johannes' acquisition of this property, issues may be said to be joined between the reader and the writer. The story of the "Old Farm" will now commence for we have at last reached the source of the narrative. Perhaps it will interest some of Johannes' posterity to learn something of the title to this little portion of mother earth, from which so many members of the family have been nurtured. It is readily told, as, previous to the Leslie conveyance, the holders of the land had been but few. The Indians, of course, as far as Europeans know, were the first—the *Naraticongs*, a clan of the *Lenni-Lenape*, or Delawares, a branch of the great Algonquin family. All the lands of New Jersey at the time of the first settlement by the whites were vested by right of occupation and possession in these aborigines. The country lying between the Hudson and the *Lenni-Wihittuck*, as they called the Delaware river, was named by them, "*Scheyichbi*." Whether these natives were, like the trees, indigenous to the soil, or themselves owned the land as conquerors of a dispossessed race, is a vexed question; as is also that other question which

has been debated for so many years, whether Indians are descended from the Jews, the Welsh, the Mongols or the Malays. The Algonquins embraced about a quarter of a million souls; they were divided into many tribes, among which were the Mohigans, Delawares, Micmacs, Illinois, Monseys, Chippewas, Ottawas, Pottawatamies, Sacs, Foxes and Miamis. They occupied much of the country lying between Chesapeake bay and the St. Lawrence river, almost surrounding their hereditary enemies, the Huron-Iroquois family. These latter embraced the Five Nations of New York, the Hurons of Upper Canada, and the Tuscaroras of North Carolina, who had joined the confederated tribes.

The clan of the Delawares roaming the country north of the Raritan, as has been said, were the *Naraticongs*, though the whites gave them the name of the river along which they were located. Their dress was a blanket, or skin, thrown over the shoulders, deer-skin fastened with thongs about the legs, and the feet covered with moccasins of the same material, so dressed as to be soft and pliable, being ornamented with quills and wampum beads. At the time of the settlement of Bedminster there were comparatively few natives in that part of the province; those remaining were of a friendly character, and proved of great service to the settlers in supplying them with game, skins and furs. The haunts of the tribe had been originally on the head waters of the Raritan, which O'Callaghan's History of New Netherlands describes as "a rich and fertile valley situated between two high mountains, some distance the one from the other, through which flowed a fresh-water river that disemboughed in the Navesink Bay." O'Callaghan further states that some thirty years after the Raritans were first known to Europeans their provisions were destroyed by a freshet, and they were repeatedly harrassed by the Sankhicans. Consequently they moved farther down the river, making a treaty of amity with the Dutch, which they preserved even when the other tribes were retaliating for the massacre of the Indians on the west bank of the Hudson. They established their principal seat where is now Piscataway, in Middlesex county, and here were living their two chiefs, CANACKAWACK and THINGORAWIS, when, in 1677, they conveyed to the whites their lands in that vicinity.



That at one time the savages must have been in plenteous numbers in the Bedminster neighborhood is shown by the traces of them still to be found. The "Old Farm" has produced a generous crop of stone implements and arrow-heads planted by the aborigines in ante-European days. It is Hawthorne who writes of the "exquisite delight of picking up for one's self an arrow-head that was dropped centuries ago and has never been handled since, and which we thus receive directly from the hands of the red hunter. Such an incident builds up again the Indian village and its encircling forest, and recalls the painted chief, the squaws, and the children sporting among the wigwams, while the little wind-rocked papoose swings from the branch of a tree." All this, you will say, is quite foreign to the subject! Yes, you are right! but, much earlier in these pages, you must have learned that your scribe has a vagrant fancy—a mind that is easily seduced from the dry detail of a chain of title by the picture of a dusky Indian, with wampum belt and feathered crest, lurking beneath the shadows of the grand congregation of trees of primitive Bedminster.

Of the extinguishment of the claims of the red men, it is necessary to say but little. The modes of procedure in such cases were much the same in all portions of the colonies. Generally the usual number of blankets, jugs of rum, strings of wampum, guns and handfuls of powder were exchanged for treaties and deeds which conveyed great areas of territory. In New Jersey the early settlers, before acquiring the legal title to their purchases, were obliged to satisfy the claims of the natives. The Indian title to the territory which embraced the "Old Farm" was conveyed to John Johnstone and George Willocks on the twenty-ninth of October, 1701, by TALLQUAPIE, NICOLAS and ELALIE. The deed called for thirty-one hundred acres, but on being surveyed the area conveyed was found to contain over ten thousand, as it included all the land lying between the north branch of the Raritan and the Lamington rivers, and a point above the Morris county line and the crest of the first mountain below Pluckamin;—but more of this hereafter. According to Doctor Abraham Messler, Somerset's first historian, the earliest Indian sale in the county of lands lying north of Bound Brook was in 1683. Among the papers of the late Ralph

Voorhees is a deed dated in 1723, made by COION, NUTOMUS and QUATON, three Delawares. It conveyed two hundred acres of land lying near the Millstone river—part of the Peter Sonmans tract—and is thought to be the last Indian conveyance.

As the purchases from the natives multiplied they gave rise to complications and disputes. In addition, during the French wars the agents of Louis XV. intrigued with the Indians, causing violent outbreaks in Pennsylvania and exciting ferment among the natives of northern New Jersey. The authorities deemed it expedient to appoint commissioners to confer with the tribes in order to ascertain and remove all causes of discontent. A series of conferences were held, extending from 1756 to 1758, at Crosswicks, Burlington and Easton, the final one being held at the last place, when Governor Bernard, together with the lieutenant-governor of Pennsylvania and five commissioners, met in convention five hundred and seven Indian delegates from fourteen different tribes. This resulted in conveyances being made which it was supposed entirely freed and discharged the province from all native claims. In 1832, however, the New Jersey legislature appropriated two thousand dollars to pay forty Indians—the last remnant of their tribe—for a claim they made as to their hunting and fishing rights, which they considered had not been included in the transfer at Easton. The "Colonial History of New Jersey" bears testimony to the fact of there always having been the most equitable dealings between the Jersey people and the Indians. The Six Nations, at a meeting held for the purpose of confirming the acts of the Easton conference, honored the governor of the province by calling him SAGORIGHWEYOGHSTA, or the "Great Arbiter or Doer of Justice." The people of Somerset—the descendants of its first settlers—have always reflected with much pride on their clean and wholesome record in all Indian transactions. They delight in remembering the words of one of their county's most gifted sons, Samuel L. Southard, uttered before the legislature, on the occasion of the purchase of the native hunting and fishing rights, before referred to. "It is a proud fact in the history of New Jersey," said the senator, "that every foot of her soil has been obtained from the Indians by fair and voluntary purchase and transfer—a fact that no other state of the Union, not even the land which bears the name of Penn, can boast of."

On this occasion the red men were represented by *Shawrisk-hekung*, or Wilted Grass, a Delaware Indian of pure native blood. He was a graduate of Princeton college, having been educated at the expense of the Scotch Missionary society, which had given him the name of Bartholomew S. Calvin. At the age of twenty-three he entered the Continental army to fight for independence, and at the time he presented to the legislature the petition for pay for the Indian fishing rights, he was upwards of eighty years old. In advocating the claim of his people he warmly indorsed the just tribute paid to the state by Mr. Southard. The aged Indian closed his address with the following words, testifying to the honorable policy and actions which had distinguished the people of New Jersey in all their treatment of and dealings with the aborigines:

"Not a drop of our blood have you spilled in battle;\* *not an acre of our land have you taken but by our consent.* These facts speak for themselves and need no comment. They place the character of New Jersey in bold relief and bright example to those states within whose territorial limits our brethren still remain. Nothing save benisons can fall upon her from the lips of a *Lenni-Lenape*. There may be some who would despise an Indian benediction; but when I return to my people and make known to them the result of my mission, the ear of the Great Sovereign of the Universe, which is still open to our cry, will be penetrated with our invocation of blessings upon the generous sons of New Jersey."

The manner of the white man's acquiring possession of and title to lands in New Jersey has been often and variously told; it is always an interesting story. All historians agree in naming Friday, the fourth of September, 1609, as being the day on which New Jersey soil was first pressed by the feet of Europeans. On the preceding day Henrick Hudson, in his little Dutch "*Vhe-bout*," the "*Half Moon*," entered the Lower bay, and the next

---

\*Calvin's statement that not a drop of Indian blood had been spilled in battles with Jerseymen is almost, if not literally, true. In the early days of the Dutch occupation of New Amsterdam there were individual instances of murders of whites and Indians, and a few skirmishes took place on the banks of the Hudson and Delaware between natives and traders. But no state of war ever existed between the English colonists and the New Jersey Indians. So states Samuel Allinson—an excellent authority.



day, dropping anchor in the Horse Shoe, in four and a half fathoms of water and two cable lengths from the Monmouth beach, sent some of his men on shore to discover what manner of men were the natives, and whether they were kindly disposed. When the crew landed they saw "a great store of men, women and children who gave them some tobacco and some dried currants." The natives were dressed "some in mantles of feathers and some in skins of diverse sorts of good fures. They had red copper tobacco pipes, and other things of copper they did wear about their necks."

When the Half Moon again crossed the bar, her sails spreading for the homeward voyage, she left one of her company lying at the foot of a stunted cedar on Sandy Hook, filling the first white man's grave in New Jersey. John Coleman, with four shipmates, on the sixth of September explored the harbor in a small boat. Penetrating "two leagues to an open sea" (Newark bay), he reported that the bordering lands "were as pleasant with Grasse and Flowers and goodly Trees as any they had seene, and very sweet smells came from them." While returning, the fateful arrow of a treacherous red man ended Coleman's voyaging for this world. And now, after nearly three centuries, the miniature waves of the Lower bay are still sobbing on their yellow sands lullabies to the lonely sleeper of this pioneer grave, while on the outer beach the Atlantic rollers sound eternal requiems. The Hollanders on learning of this fair country dispatched other vessels to America, and by the year 1620 had made settlements in New Jersey at the mouth of the Hudson river, and were soon in peaceful possession, and for forty-three years occupied what is now New York and New Jersey, under the title of New Netherlands. After establishing New Amsterdam on Manhattan Island, the Dutch soon made their way westward, and to some extent occupied what is now known as the counties of Hudson, Bergen, Essex, Monmouth and Middlesex. It is believed, however, that earlier than the year 1681 there were in Somerset county no permanent inhabitants.

All of this time the English claimed title to this portion of North America, resting their right on the voyage of the Cabots, who in 1497-8, sailed along the coast from New Foundland to Florida. Under the English law, discovery and conquest

secured to the British Crown title to all heathen and uncivilized countries. In the year 1664 the English expelled the Dutch government from New Netherlands. Having conquered the country, the king's claim now rested, not only on discovery, but by right of conquest as well. James, Duke of York, received from his royal brother, Charles II., on the twelfth of March, 1664, a patent for an area of territory which included what is now New Jersey. He took immediate possession, thus establishing the first link in a chain of title emanating directly from the King of England. The duke's grant conveyed not only property but the powers of government, and, as said Courtlandt Parker in his address at the bi-centennial celebration of the Proprietors of East New Jersey, in 1884, "No other title to the soil of New Jersey than his was ever recognized by the law."

The Duke of York not long after this, on the twenty-fourth of June, conveyed that portion of the land included within the present boundaries of New Jersey, together with the accompanying powers of government, to John, Lord Berkeley, Baron of Stratton, and to Sir George Carteret, of Saltrum in Devon. The nominal consideration was ten shillings, and an annual rent of one peppercorn, to be paid on the day of the nativity of St. John the Baptist, if legally demanded. The true incentive for the conveyance was the desire to reward the grantees for their distinguished loyalty during the civil war. The territory was named *Nova Cesarea*, or New Jersey, in honor of Cartaret who, while governor of the channel-island of Jersey, had defended it valiantly against the parliament soldiers. He was the last commander within the circuit of the British Isles to lower the royal standard. Sir John Berkeley had been an exile with Charles II., and was raised to the peerage on the restoration. The word Jersey is a corruption of "*Czar's-ey*," or "*Cæsar's-ey*," meaning the island of Cæsar. It was intended that *Nova Cesarea* should be properly the title, but, as the population of the province increased, the people preferred its translated name rather than the classical appellation. At the time the duke transferred New Jersey to these noblemen he had but a slender acquaintance with the value of what he called his "plantations," but it was soon made known to him that his act had been one of haste and improvidence. Governor Nicolls, who was already representing

him on this side of the water, remonstrated warmly with the duke against the cession of so important a portion of his American possessions. So the king and his brother at once bestirred themselves in an endeavor to remedy the error. Lord Berkeley, a victim to the variable moods of princes, was already out of favor and office. In order to restore himself to the good graces of his royal masters, he readily acceded to a proposition to surrender New Jersey in exchange for a patent of Delaware territory; he also visited Sir George Carteret, who was then in Ireland as lord treasurer, and prevailed upon him to do the same. The proposed exchange was all but completed, when some ugly questions arose between the Duke of York and Lord Baltimore as to priority of title to the Delaware lands; consequently, the transfer of New Jersey to the duke was not consummated. Had this been done there is every reason to believe that at present the state of New York would include that of New Jersey.

In August, 1665, there arrived in the Kills the ship "Philip," having on board several families, and Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of the Manor of La Hogue, in the parish of St. Peter, Jersey, who bore the commission of the owners as governor of the province. The baronet, Sir George, and Philip were fourth cousins, being the great-grandsons, respectively, of Edward and Richard, sons of Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen, Island of Jersey, who died in 1500.\* The new governor landed at what is now Elizabeth, where he established his home and capital, naming the place in honor of the Lady Elizabeth, wife of his cousin, Sir George Carteret. This gentlewoman, the good god-mother of one of New Jersey's most ancient towns, though living in a profligate court, was possessed of rare virtues. Pepys, in his diary of 1660, bears testimony that "she cries out against the vices of the court, and how they are going to set up plays already. She do much cry out upon these things, and that which she believes will undo the whole nation." This was the third

---

\* Governor Philip Carteret, in 1681, married Elizabeth, the daughter of Richard Smith, of Smithtown, Long Island, and widow of Captain William Lawrence, of Fews Neck, Long Island. He built a large white house on Elizabeth creek, in the centre of the present city of Elizabeth, in which he died in 1682. His widow, in 1685, married Colonel Richard Townley, a leading citizen of Elizabethtown, who subsequently sold the governor's house to Peter Schuyler, who converted it into the "Ship" tavern.



settlement made in New Jersey, and the first by the English. The statement has frequently been made that before the founding of Bergen, in 1618, by the Dutch and Scandanavians, a Turkish family named Houghubot had settled at Turkey, now New Providence, in Union county. This story has no historical foundation. The fact remains that the claims of Elizabeth for being the first English-speaking settlement in the state have never been refuted.

When Governor Carteret landed he found on the site of his new capital four families, as the nucleus of a population. These people claimed title to the land they occupied. In the previous year a large area of territory had been purchased from Staten Island Indians by some Long Islanders. Governor Nicolls, acting as the deputy of the Duke of York, patented, in December, 1664, this Indian purchase to John Ogden, Luke Watson and their associates, eighty in all. At the time of the governor's issuing this grant he had no knowledge of the duke's having divested himself of all rights to the lands in question by the conveyance to Berkeley and Carteret. There is abundant evidence that Governor Carteret, on discovering that Nicolls had patented so valuable a portion of his principals' domain, was greatly at a loss what course to pursue. At first, it appears that to some extent he conceded to these prior settlers their rights under the grant, and, unhappily for the future comfort of himself and his grantees, attempted to disarm opposition by following a conciliatory course. In furtherance of this policy, before 1666 he purchased, individually, John Bailey's interest in the patent, and acted in concert with the other owners. But eventually the lords-proprietors refused to recognize that they had any rights in the premises, claiming that the grant by Nicolls was void and of no avail, as it was impossible that he, acting as deputy, could pass a title that no longer vested in the duke. This grant has become historically known as the Elizabethtown patent. The claims of Berkeley and Carteret and their successors came frequently in conflict with those of the Elizabethtown associates and their assigns, giving rise to legal commotions that continued until the Revolution. The history of these complexities is embalmed in a suit, instituted on the thirteenth of April, 1745, by the Earl of Stair and others against "Benjamin Bond

and some other Persons of Elizabethtown." The bill filed at that time in Chancery made a voluminous document, which was published by James Parker in 1747, and, familiarly known as "The Elizabethtown Bill in Chancery," is to be found in the library of the New Jersey Historical Society.

The recipients of this princely gift of New Jersey from the merry King Charles, and his more churchly but none the less vicious brother, James, soon found that to give value to their estate it was necessary to secure inhabitants. In the autumn of 1665, through their representative, Philip Carteret, the newly-arrived governor, they wisely dispatched agents into New England, who published what was known as the "Concessions and Agreements of the Lords-Proprietors." These publications, by their liberal inducements, such as property in estates and liberty in religion, resulted in quite a migration to New Jersey. The agreements as to lands were very advantageous to settlers. They stipulated that the area of the province should be divided into parcels of from twenty-one hundred to twenty-one thousand acres. These plots were to be subdivided into seven parts, one of which was to be reserved for the lords-proprietors, while the remaining six-sevenths of each plot were to be held for distribution, free of cost except quit-rents, among such persons as might come to occupy and plant the same. These latter were called headlands, and the fundamental rule by which they might be acquired was in this wise: all persons arriving in the province within a certain limited time were entitled to receive grants for a stipulated number of acres, paying to Berkeley and Carteret a yearly quit-rent of a half-penny per acre. The quantity of land to be granted to settlers depended upon the time of their coming, the size of their families and the number of people they brought with them, either as free servants, indented servants, or slaves: the number of acres per head varied from thirty to one hundred and fifty.

The immediate result of the publication of these "Concessions" in New England was the advent of people who established three important settlements in New Jersey. Among those who removed to the province in response to this invitation were John Martin, Charles Gilman, Hugh Dun. and Hopewell Hull. Making their way westward, along the Indian path that stretched

from Elizabethtown-point to the Delaware, they reached an attractive spot on the high levels bordering the Raritan, where a few log huts had already been erected on the site of an old native village. Being pleased with the locality, they applied for, and received on the eighteenth of December, 1666, a grant for a large area of territory. To this point they brought their own and numerous other families from Piscataqua, in the province of Massachusetts—now Maine,—of which the name, Piscataway, is a corruption. Of this place, more, hereafter.

Another consequence of the distribution of copies of the "Concessions" in the East, was the arrival in New Jersey of John Pike, Daniel Pierce and seven associates, from Newbury, Massachusetts. They entered into an agreement on the eleventh of December, 1666, whereby, on the third of December, 1667, they received from Governor Carteret and some of the Elizabethtown associates a grant of land, embracing what is now the township of Woodbridge. They, as the representatives of at least sixty families, on the first of June, 1669, were granted a charter creating a township covering six miles square. The name of their new settlement was derived from their late pastor, John Woodbridge, of Newbury. In laying out this township it was agreed that Amboy-point should be reserved, to be disposed of by the lords-proprietors as the seventh part to which they were entitled under the "Concessions," and which, in the original agreement with Pierce, Pike and others it was settled should stand for one thousand acres of upland and meadow. This available and attractive spot was afterwards selected as the place of government. Among the persons allotted lands by the governor and his associates, and the most of whom, it is believed, settled on their estates, were the following: John Pike, Daniel and Joshua Pierce, Obadiah Ayres, Henry Jaques, Thomas Bloomfield, Elisha Parker, Richard Worth, John Whitaker, Jonathan Dunham, Hugh Dun and Robert Van Quellen. Most of the newcomers were from Newbury and Haverhill, Massachusetts, though a few families had planted themselves at this point in 1665, having reached the province with Governor Carteret by the ship, Philip. John Pike was the ancestor of that General Zebulon Montgomery Pike who in the year 1806 wrote his name among the clouds on one of the loftiest peaks of the



Rocky mountains. Thomas Bloomfield was the ancestor of one of New Jersey's later governors. Obadiah Ayres and Richard Worth were sons-in-law of John Pike, who may be called the patriarch of the settlement. Worth, either because of his name or his virtues, seems to have been much more highly esteemed by his father-in-law than was Ayres, as John Pike in his will left the latter six-pence, while the former received the munificent bequest of one shilling. Another legacy of this will is interesting, as showing the scarcity and value of literature in those early times. He left to his son, Thomas, a "half right in my book, writ by David Dickson." Robert Van Quellen, also known as De La Prie and La Prairie, emigrated from Holland, but is said to have been a Norman, coming originally from Caen. He early became an important man in the colony. Governor Carteret secured his services as a member of the first council, and for many years he was surveyor-general of East New Jersey. In addition to his holdings in Woodbridge township he became a large owner of lands on the upper Raritan, and his name is a frequent one in connection with old New Jersey titles.

The third New England migration was as follows: In the winter of 1665 and 1666 some of the inhabitants of Guilford and Branford, in Connecticut, finding themselves in need of larger areas of farming lands, sent a deputation to report on the condition and prospects of the country in the neighborhood of Elizabethtown. Their impressions being favorable, in the following May thirty families, under the leadership of Robert Treat, purchased of the Indians a tract embracing the present townships of Newark, Springfield, Livingston, Orange, Bloomfield and Caldwell. Their new town on the Passaic was first named Milford, but two years later, with other arrivals, came an aged congregational minister, Abraham Pierson. At a salary of thirty pounds per annum, he was the faithful pastor of the colony until his death. In his honor the name was changed to Newark, after the town on the Yarrow, in England, where this minister had been ordained. These settlers from Connecticut were, for a time, disinclined to recognize the rights of the lords-proprietors, and preferred resting the claim to their holdings on the Indian title. They, by this disaffection, materially added

to the complications growing out of the conflicting interests of Berkeley and Carteret and those claiming under the Nicolls' grant.

The first general assembly of the province, composed of the governor, council and house of burgesses, convened in Elizabeth, in 1668, and, with the exception of occasional meetings at Woodbridge, Middletown, and Piscataway, continued assembling there until 1682. In 1686, it met at Perth Amboy, and with but few exceptions alternated between that place and Burlington until the state capital was established at Trenton.

Lord John Berkeley was an old man, and having been greatly disappointed in the financial results of his American investment, he decided to dispose of, and did, on the eighteenth of March, 1673, sell his share in New Jersey to two English Quakers, John Fenwicke and Edward Billinge, for one thousand pounds. These purchasers quarrelled as to their respective interests, but, under the arbitration of William Penn, an amicable division was made, Fenwick receiving one-tenth as his share. Soon after this, Billinge becoming bankrupt, his interest was sold to Penn, Gawen Lawrie and Nicholas Lucas, as trustees for his creditors. They, in conjunction with Fenwicke, divided the whole proprietorship into one hundred equal parts, the trustees placing their ninety shares in the market. Before this time—on the twenty-ninth of July, 1674—a new grant had been given by the king to the Duke of York, and by the duke to Sir George Carteret and to the grantees of Lord John Berkeley. The necessity was occasioned by the treaty of Westminster, in 1674, in which New Jersey was ceded to the King of England by the Dutch, New Netherlands having been captured and occupied by them during the previous year. In 1675, John Fenwicke, with a large company, sailed from London in the ship "Griffin," and landing near the head of Delaware bay, established on its eastern shore the town of Salem. This was the first English settlement in West Jersey. The second one was made two years later when a party of immigrants, principally Yorkshire and London Quakers, landed from the ship "Kent," and laid out a town which they first called New Beverly, then Bridlington, afterwards Burlington.

In the second grant of New Jersey, made by the Duke of York, a dividing line was mentioned as running from Barnegat creek to

the Rancocus. From this it would appear that previous to the time of issuing the patent Berkeley and Carteret had agreed upon a division of the province. It was not, however, until the first of July, 1676, that a formal partition of New Jersey was made between Carteret and the Quaker proprietors, it being effected by a conveyance known as the Quintipartite deed, because of its comprehending Sir George, Penn, Lawrie, Lucas and Billinge. Thenceforth Carteret's share of the province was what has since been known as East Jersey. It embraced all the territory lying east of a line, which, starting at a point on the Atlantic coast, on the east side of Little Egg Harbor inlet, ran northwesterly to a point in the Delaware river a few miles below Minisink island, in Sussex county. This line crossed the Raritan river just west of Somerville, the point being still marked by a surveyor's stone standing by the roadside, on the south bank of the river, nearly opposite a residence built some years ago by John V. Veghte.







## CHAPTER IX.

### *The Twenty-four Proprietors of East New Jersey—George Willocks and the Peapack Patent.*

In the year 1679, Sir George Carteret died. By his will he devised his East Jersey property to trustees, empowering them to sell the same for the payment of his debts. For over two years East Jersey government was administered in the name of "The Right Honorable the Lady Elizabeth Carteret, Baroness, Widow, the relict and sole Executrix of the Right Honorable Sir George Carteret, Knight and Baronet, deceased, late Lord Proprietor of the said Province, and Grandmother and Guardian of Sir George Carteret, Baronet, Grandson and Heir of the said Sir George Carteret deceased, the present Lady Proprietrix of the Province aforesaid." In 1682 the trustees, together with the widow as executrix, in consideration of thirty-four hundred pounds, conveyed all of East Jersey to twelve purchasers, William Penn, Robert West, Thomas Rudyard, Samuel Groom, Thomas Hart, Richard Mew, Thomas Wilcox, Ambrose Rigg, John Haywood, Hugh Hartshorne, Clement Plumsted and Thomas Cooper. They, in their turn, sold one-half of their undivided interests to twelve associates, Robert Barclay, Edward Billinge, Robert Turner, James Brain, Arent Sonmans, William Gibson, Gawen Lawrie, Thomas Barker, Thomas Warne, James, Earl of Perth; Robert Gordon and John Drummond. Thus was constituted the "Twenty-four Proprietors of East New Jersey," an association of land owners that has a corporate and active existence to this day. On the fourteenth of March, 1682, their title was further assured by a confirmatory deed from the Duke of York, giving to the proprietors all necessary powers for establishing a council and managing and govern-

ing their estate or province. We now find that one undivided twenty-fourth part of East New Jersey is by these conveyances as fully and completely vested in each proprietor as if the territory was a farm or a city lot. Each one had full power to alienate the whole or a portion of his interest, or the privilege of locating for himself certain lands which the joint proprietors would secure to him in severalty by a warrant, which acted as a release of the interests of his associates. It also expressed what amount or proportion of his common stock was severed and represented by these located lands.

The "Twenty-Four Proprietors" established their seat of government at Perth Amboy, deriving the name from the Earl of Perth—one of their number—and from *Ambo*, the English corruption of an Indian word which is generally believed to have meant point. The latter appears variously spelled in early documents; as *Ompoge*, *Emboyle*, *Amboyle* and *Ambo*. The late Thomas Gordon, of Trenton, considered the derivative of Amboy to be the Indian word *Emboli*—meaning hollow, like a bowl; so named because of a depression in the ground, a little north of the city. The Scotch word Perth is said to be a corruption of *Barr-Tatha*, or the "height on the river Tay." It is on this river that the ancient city of Perth is situated.

The new proprietors modified somewhat the "Concessions and Agreements" of their predecessors, though retaining many of their most important provisions. The liberal feature of offering headlands to settlers, free of cost except quit-rents, was retained and continued in force for a number of years. Very complete descriptions were published in Europe of the advantages that would accrue to adventurers who removed to the province; the manner of the disposition of the lands was explained, and a full account given of the physical condition of the country. In these published descriptions detailed statements were made as to the "goodness and richness of the soil;" that the country was "well stored with deer, conies, wild fowl" and other game; that the "sea-banks were well stored with a variety of fish, such as whales, cod, cole, hake, etc.;" and that "the bays and rivers were plentifully stored with sturgeon, great bass and other scale fish, eels and shell fish, such as oysters, etc., in great abundance, and easy to take." Much stress was laid on the fact of there

being safe and convenient harbors, affording excellent opportunities for the export of the products of the province, among which were enumerated whale-fins, bone and oil, and beaver, mink, raccoon and martin skins. After dwelling on the salubrity of the climate, the good temper of the Indians, and the manner and costs of setting out from the old country, the descriptions, or advertisements, closed with the following excellent advice to the prospective emigrants :

All persons inclining unto those parts must know that in their settlement there they will find their exercises. They must have their winter as well as summer. They must labor before they reap; and, till their plantations be cleared (in summer time), they must expect (as in all those countries) the mosquitos, flies, gnats and such like, may in hot and fair weather give them some disturbance where people provide not against them.

The mosquitoes seem to have been early recognized as among the most active of the inhabitants of the new country. This is not the only time they are mentioned by the first settlers. John Johnstone—whose better acquaintance we shall shortly make—in a letter written in 1684, though “mightily well satisfied with the country,” could not forbear referring to a little flea that was occasionally blown toward the Raritan from Elizabethtown by an east wind. The distribution abroad of these plans and prospectuses induced a considerable emigration from Europe, especially from Scotland, which country was undergoing at that time great political convulsions. East Jersey is to this day greatly benefited by the Scotch blood that was then transfused into her veins. The unhappy scenes that, just before and after the year 1700, were enacted in the Haymarket of the gray-castled city of Edinburgh, and the hunting of poor refugees through the mists of the bleak Highlands of that grim, sea-beaten land, resulted in the planting among the hills of Somerset of a sturdy stock which speedily developed into the three strong Presbyterian congregations of Bound Brook, Basking Ridge and Lamington; and in many ways the immigrant Scots have contributed to the individual strength and virtue of the people of that county.

When East Jersey came under the dominion of the twenty-four proprietors, in 1682, their historian, William A. Whitehead, estimates the total population of the province to have been thirty-five hundred in the towns and about fifteen hundred on the plantations. The towns then existing were as follows :



SHREWSBURY, in Monmouth county. The township, embracing thirty thousand acres, had a population of about four hundred, among whom was Colonel Lewis Morris. He was a brother of that Richard Morris, who, flying from England to the province of New York at the time of the Restoration, received a grant in 1661 of three thousand acres on the Harlem river, which he called Morrisania; at his death, Colonel Lewis Morris came from Barbadoes, and assumed the guardianship of Richard's infant son, who in later life became governor of New Jersey. Colonel Morris married for his first wife, Tryntje Staats. His second wife was Tryntje's own niece, Sarah, daughter of Isaac Gouverneur, whose wife, Sarah, was the daughter of Major Abraham Staats of Albany, and an East Indian "Begum" or princess, whom the Major had married in Java. These two marriages brought to Colonel Morris three distinguished sons. By the first, General Lewis Morris who signed the "Declaration;" by the second, Gouverneur Morris, and General Staats Morris who married the Duchess of Gordon; the acquaintance of this Scotch noblewoman we shall make later in Bedminster. Before the time of the twenty-four proprietors coming into possession of East New Jersey Colonel Lewis Morris had established at Shrewsbury extensive iron-works, which gave occupation to about seventy slaves, in addition to white servants and employees. His grant, under date of 1676, covered thirty-five hundred and forty acres; he named it Tinturn—now called Tinton—after his home in Britain, which was in the vale of Tinturn, in the extreme south of Monmouthshire, Wales. There it was that Theodoric, Christian king of Glamorgan, vanquished the pagan Saxons, though so wounded that he died shortly after the battle, in the near-by parish of Matherne. "This is the vale," writes Gray, "that is the delight of my eyes and the very seat of pleasure." Morris was also instrumental in giving Monmouth county its name, he calling it after the Welsh shire. The name Monmouth is generally accepted as meaning, and shortened from, Monnow-mouth, the English town of Monmouth being situated on a tongue of land at the mouth of the river Monnow.

MIDDLETOWN, covering about the same area as Shrewsbury, contained about five hundred people and many improved plantations.

This township disputes with Bergen, in Hudson county, the claim of being the first permanent white settlement in New Jersey, and connected with the introduction of its Dutch occupation is a strangely romantic and interesting story. When Hendrick Hudson carried the news to Holland of the discoveries he had made in the new country, ships in numbers soon came sailing over the watery waste to visit this "goodly land." From then till now the ribs of many a stout craft have been battered to fragments on the bars and beaches of Sandy Hook. The first shipwreck known to have occurred at this point was as early as 1620, and connected with the stranding of the vessel there has come down to us an account of a most remarkable instance of the preservation of human life. On board was a young woman from Holland by the name of Penelope van Princis; at least such was her maiden name, that of her husband, who accompanied her, being unknown. Those of the ship's company who reached the shore in safety made their way on foot to New Amsterdam (New York). Penelope's husband, being badly injured, was unable to undertake the journey; so she remained with him in the woods on Sandy Hook. Soon after the departure of their shipmates they were attacked by Indians, who left them for dead. The husband was, indeed, so, but the wife, though fearfully injured, revived. Her skull was fractured, and her left shoulder so cut and hacked that she never after had the use of that arm. Her abdomen had been laid open with a knife so that the bowels protruded and were only kept in place by her hands. Yet in this deplorable condition she lived for several days in a hollow tree, sustaining life by eating bark, leaves and gum.

At the end of a week Penelope was discovered by two Indians who were chasing a deer. One of them, an old man, moved by her condition and sex, conveyed her to his wigwam, near the present site of Middletown, where he dressed her wounds and treated her with great kindness. Here she remained for some time, but, eventually, the Dutch of New Amsterdam, on learning that there was a white woman living with the natives in the woods beyond the great bay, came to her relief. Her preserver, who had cured her wounds and tenderly cared for her, interposed no objections to her rejoining her friends, by whom she was welcomed as one from the dead.

Some time after, when in her twenty-second year, this young Dutch widow married a wealthy English bachelor of forty, named Richard Stout, a son of John Stout, a gentleman of good family of Nottinghamshire, England. This remarkable woman was the ancestress of the very large and important family of Stouts in New Jersey, and her history, you may be sure, is often told by her posterity. She survived her marriage eighty-eight years, attaining the extraordinary age of one hundred and ten, and leaving at her death five hundred and two living descendants.

After Penelope became Mrs. Stout she did not forget the fertile soil and natural beauties of the *Nau-ves-sing*, or Navesink country, and there is every reason to believe that she was the means of interesting her husband in that locality. The descendants of these Monmouth pioneers claim that immediately after marriage they settled where is now Middletown, and that in 1648 they and six other families were the only white inhabitants of that region. The historian, Smith, says: "A while after marrying to one Stout. they lived together at Middletown among other Dutch inhabitants." In April, 1665, Governor Nicolls, as the representative of the Duke of York, patented the whole of Monmouth and part of Middlesex counties to Richard Stout and eleven associates, the patentees agreeing to "manure and plant the aforesaid land and premises, and settle there one hundred families at least." The late ex-Governor Joel Parker is my authority for saying that this Monmouth patent authorized and put in operation the first local government in New Jersey of which we have any authentic record. The holders under this grant, as was the case with those holding under the one made by Nicolls to the Elizabethtown associates, came into frequent litigious conflicts with the grantees of Berkeley and Carteret.

PISCATAWAY had about four hundred inhabitants, the township embracing nearly forty thousand acres.

WOODBIDGE contained about thirty thousand acres in the township, and had a population of six hundred.

ELIZABETHTOWN, the seat of Carteret's government, possessed seven hundred inhabitants, with fifty thousand acres in the township.

NEWARK also had fifty thousand acres in the township, and a



population of five hundred. In addition, it possessed jurisdiction over the plantations of Sandford, Kingsland, Berry and Pinhorne, upon the Passaic and Hackensack rivers. The latter estate was at Secaucus, near Snake hill, and the name of the present Penhorn creek is derived from that of its owner. William Pinhorne was an Englishman who came to this country with Governor Edmund Andross in 1678. Establishing himself in New York city he became a successful merchant and occupied many positions of public trust. On removing to his estates in New Jersey, he was appointed to the king's council, and was chosen member of the assembly and judge of the supreme court. The Sandford, Berry and Kingsland plantations were at what is now known as Rutherford, then called New Barbadoes' neck. This vicinity was first settled by Captain William Sandford, and Isaac Kingsland who came from the West Indies—hence the name.

BERGEN had three hundred inhabitants, and jurisdiction over several improved plantations on the bays, rivers and kills, besides over sixty thousand acres within its own township, which embraced all the present county of Hudson lying east of the Passaic river. Bergen was established in 1660. Among the earlier settlers were Cornelius Van Voorst, Englebert Steenhuysen, Tielman Van Vleck, Lourens Anndriessen (Van Boskerk), Christian Pieterse, Michael Jansen (Vreeland) and Gerrit Gerritsen (Van Wagenen). This is considered the most ancient permanent settlement in New Jersey, dwellings having been erected at Pavonia, within the confines of the township as afterwards established, as early as 1630. The latter name is derived from Michael Pauw, burgomaster of Amsterdam and Lord of Achtienvoven, who in that year obtained from the Indians a conveyance of a large acreage, lying on the west shores of the Hudson. This is believed to be the first conveyance of lands in East Jersey. His title was further assured by the Dutch government, and its owner was created one of the original patroons of New Netherlands. Pauw gave his name to this territory, first latinizing it into *Pavonia*, *pauw* in the Dutch, and *pavo* in the Latin, meaning peacock. Why should not this proud bird, significant of the first legal occupation of New Jersey, be impressed on the great seal of the state?

Authorities differ as to the origin of the name of *Bergen*. New Jersey's earliest historian, Smith, derives its title from the capital of Norway, there having been Scandinavians as well as Dutch among its early settlers. Barber, Whitehead, and Gordon accept this derivation, but Taylor, in his "*Annals*" considers *Bergen op Zoom*, in Holland, to have been the godfather of East Jersey's oldest town. Winfield shows that the towns of *Bergen* in both Norway and Holland received their names from their respective nearby hills. The New Jersey village being located on an eminence overlooking the marshes on the east and west, and the lowlands bordering the Hudson, he believes received its name from the same local circumstances, the word *Bergen* meaning hill. This seems by far the most reasonable explanation of the origin of the name.

The first governor under the proprietors was Robert Barclay, one of the associates, who was appointed for life with the right of ruling by deputy. To represent him he selected Thomas Rudyard, a London attorney of distinction. On arriving out, in November, 1682, this deputy wrote home that he was delighted to find that the province was occupied by "a sober, professing people, wise in their generation, and courteous in their behaviour." Before the end of 1683 Rudyard was superseded by Gawen Lawrie, whose successor was Lord Neil Campbell, who in turn was followed by Andrew Hamilton. In the autumn of 1690 Robert Barclay died, the power of governing reverting to the proprietors. Deputy-Governor Hamilton, who was then in England on a visit, thereupon, though after some delay, received the appointment of governor-in-chief.

Many years had not gone by before the number of proprietors and the subdivision of their interests caused much disturbance and confusion in the manner of government, and the choice of governor was attended by great rivalry and discord. As each proprietor was at liberty to dispose of his propriety in as many parts as he pleased, these sales were frequently made in small fractions; consequently the number of proprietors was not only greatly augmented, but their distribution in different countries caused much embarrassment. At this time New Jersey experienced its first political convulsion, finally resulting, in 1709, in an armed resistance to the authori-

ties. It must be remembered that the people had no choice in the selection of the chief magistrate—that right devolved on the proprietors or owners of propriety interests. These individual holdings so multiplied as to almost render concerted action impossible. The following list of portions of shares acquired by George Willocks—of whom much more hereafter—will best exemplify the extent to which trading was done in these propriety rights :

DATE.	ORIGINAL PROPRIETOR.	GRANTOR.	QUANTITY.
1702, January 23---	Ambrose Rigg.	John Johnstone----	1-5 of 19-20 of 1-24.
1692, February 15---	Thos. Rudyard.	Benj. Rudyard-----	1-2 of 1-24.
1695, December 2---	Thos. Rudyard.	Robt. Wharton-----	1-2 of 1-4 of 1-24.
	Thos. Rudyard.	Margaret, widow of Sam'l Winder, mar- ries Geo. Willocks--	1-2 of 1-2 of 1-24.
	John Heywood	James Willocks dies, and devises to George Willocks -----	3-4 of 1-8 of 1-24.
1696, September 18 -	John Heywood	Robt. Gordon-----	1-64 of 1-24.
1727, July 17-----	John Heywood	John Parker-----	1-8 of 1-24.
1725, October 10---	John Heywood	John Hamilton-----	1-16 of 1-24.
1708, July 6-----	Thomas Cooper	Thomas Gordon----	1-20 of 1-48 of 1-24.
1716, December 28-	Thos. Rudyard	Andrew Johnstone--	1-8 of 1-24.
1727, June 28-----	Thomas Barker	John Johnstone----	1-2 of 1-24.

Willocks also purchased of William Violent the one-twentieth of Thomas Cooper's original twenty-fourth, the share being conveyed to him and Andrew Hamilton with right of survivorship ; at Willock's death this interest vested in Hamilton as survivor. On the twentieth of February, 1698, George Willocks conveyed to Jeremiah Basse seven-eighths of one twenty-fourth.

On the eighth of April, 1698, Governor Alexander Hamilton was succeeded by Jeremiah Basse. In the following year numbers of the inhabitants refused to him obedience on the alleged discovery that his appointment had not received the prescribed form of royal approbation, nor the sanction of a sufficient number of proprietors. The disturbances were further increased by the colonists in the hope that continued agitations would provoke the Crown to deprive the proprietors of authority, in which case the land-owners thought to be able to rest their titles on the Indian grants, and thus be relieved from quit-rents. The New Jersey magistrates imprisoned some of these malcontents, whereupon other citizens rose in arms, broke open the jails,



and confusion and anarchy ensued. This condition of affairs was increased by certain of the proprietors reappointing Hamilton as governor. Those of the people who sympathized with Basse, refused support to the new administration, resulting in still greater turbulence. Justices were assaulted, sheriffs were wounded, and such general confusion prevailed among the people that the proprietors, weary of contentions, were glad to abandon their government, in 1702, to Queen Anne, reserving, however, to themselves every other right that had been granted them. The proprietors, though their importance was much abridged, remained a powerful association of land owners, and the fountain head of the title to all the undisposed acres of East Jersey. The owners of West New Jersey, as the assigns of Lord John Berkeley, having had equal difficulties in the government of their portion of the colony, joined with East New Jersey in the surrender of the right of ruling. The two divisions again became one, and, on the fourth of August, 1702, Lord Cornbury became the first governor under the Crown.

Among the proprietors, and one of the original twelve, was John Heywood, a Quaker. His title to the one twenty-fourth part of East New Jersey emanated not only from the estate of Sir George Carteret—he held as well, in conjunction with his associates, a confirmatory grant from the Duke of York, dated the fourteenth of March, 1682. A copy of a deed in my possession shows that on the twenty-third day of the same month Heywood transferred all his rights and interests in and to the province, to “Robert Burnet, of Lothentie, in Scotland, Gent.” By an “Indenture,” as the conveyance recites :

Made the first day of July, in the five and thirtieth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, Charles the Second, by the Grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, defender of the faith, etc., Anno Dom., 1683.

Burnet upon receiving title to his share of East Jersey, conveyed to James Willocks, “Doctor in Phisick” of Kenny, in the Kingdom of Scotland :

“In consideration of”—so runs the deed—“the sum of one hundred and sixteen pounds, thirteen shillings and four pence, of good and lawful money of England, one undivided eighth part of his undivided twenty-fourth part of the said tract of land, and of all and every, the isles, islands, rivers, mines, minerals, woods, fishings, hawkings, huntings, fowlings, and all other royalties, profits, commodities and hereditaments, whatsoever, reserving always to the said Robert Burnet and

his foresaids, the right of the government, simply and allonerly as it is now established in the persons of the Twenty-four Proprietors."

It does not appear that Doctor James Willocks ever visited America. He applied for, and on the sixteenth of April, 1687, received from the joint proprietors a warrant, which confirmed to him in severalty four acres of land at Perth Amboy, and a tract of eight hundred and fifty acres, lying on the east side of the Millstone river at its conflux with the Raritan. Soon after this the doctor died, his brother, George, inheriting his real estate.

In April, 1698, George Willocks sailed from England on the ship "Despatch, William Fiddler, Master." He reached Amboy with a cargo of goods belonging to the proprietors, of which he had charge, and he was also empowered to act as attorney for his associates in collecting quit-rents from settlers. He soon removed to Monmouth county, and married Margaret, widow of Samuel Winder, daughter of Deputy-Governor Rudyard. From that time to 1754 he lived again in Amboy, on Staten Island, in Elizabethtown, and in Philadelphia. Not long after reaching East Jersey, Willocks was appointed "Chief Ranger," whatever that may have been, also a commissioner for the court of small causes. He was deputy-surveyor of the province under John Reid in 1701. During Burnet's administration he was a member of the king's council. He does not seem, however, to have been in accord with the governor; their repeated differences resulted, in 1722, in his suspension from office, being charged with acting as leader for a cabal of intriguers. "HIS MAJESTY KING GEORGE," under the great seal of the province of New Jersey, granted him, in 1719, "the sole right, benefit, and advantage of keeping a ferry over the Raritan river from Perth Amboy." He also established a ferry across the sound from Amboy to Staten Island. He served the public in many ways, among others as that of one of the commissioners, appointed in 1720, for settling the boundary between the provinces of New York and New Jersey.

The memory of George Willocks is most revered by the people of Perth Amboy from the fact of his having been one of the founders and a generous benefactor of St. Peter's Episcopal church, one of the earliest organizations of that sect in New Jersey. A congregation for services according to the rites of

the Church of England was established in 1698. For a number of years it worshiped in an ordinary dwelling-house, standing on the banks of the Raritan near the foot of High street, the pulpit being supplied by various missionaries sent out from England by the Bishop of London, and the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." Lewis Morris writes, in 1700: "We have made a shift to patch up an old ruinous house and make a church of it, and when all the churchmen in the province are got together we make up about twelve communicants." In 1709 the Reverend Edward Vaughan's services were secured, who officiated for two years in conjunction with his home charge at Elizabethtown. He was much esteemed by the people, which is more than can be said of his successor, Mr. Halliday, who entirely failed in gaining their affections, he being stigmatized by some members of his congregation—among them Governor Hunter—as a wretch, a knave and a villain. Finally, in 1713, after openly denouncing Willocks from the pulpit, the doors of the sanctuary were closed against this minister, and shaking the dust of Amboy from his feet he betook himself to other parts.

Again Mr. Vaughan acted as an occasional supply, and in 1720 St. Peter's obtained its first rector, a Scotch divine of blessed memory. This was the Reverend William Skinner. He was a Mac Gregor, by some, thought to be chief of the clan. Being obliged to fly from Scotland after the battle of Preston in 1715, he came by way of Holland and Barbadoes to Philadelphia, where while studying theology he supported himself as a tutor. In 1721 he visited England to receive ordination from the Bishop of London. While there he was appointed by the "Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts" as missionary to Perth Amboy. On arrival he met with such favor from the people, that in the following year he was called to be the permanent pastor of the society, which position he filled faithfully and acceptably until his death at the age of seventy-one, in the year 1758.

In 1718 a charter was granted by the Crown to the congregation, and the erection of a church edifice was commenced in the following year. This building withstood the elements for one hundred and thirty years, it giving place in 1852 to the present structure, which occupies the same site, a beautiful elevation



overlooking the bay and ocean. St. Peters had many benefactors among the early Scotch worshipers. Our first knowledge of Mr. Willocks in such a rôle is from the minutes of the Board of Proprietors, which record that, in 1702, he and Miles Foster advanced six pounds for repairing the dwelling, then occupied for services. When the first church edifice was erected, the grounds (still in use) were donated by him, Thomas Gordon and John Barclay. Later on, he and John Harrison presented the congregation with twelve acres of land lying adjoining the town. On the first of January, 1723, he conveyed to trustees two acres of land fronting on Water street, upon which was a substantial stone and frame residence. Under certain restrictions and limitations they were to hold the property, as the deed recites :

For the use of a Presbyter of the Church of England, qualified and admitted into said St. Peter's Church, to serve the Cure thereof—provided always notwithstanding such incumbent or incumbents being admitted and qualified, &c., that any time hereafter such incumbent or incumbents that shall differ from the doctrine, discipline and rules of the Church of England, shall from thenceforth have no benefit, or advantage by the benefactions aforesaid.

More of the ecclesiastical gifts of George Willocks will appear when we come, presently, to learn something of the contents of his will.

In grateful remembrance of the above, and other generous donations, the congregation, in 1825, affixed to the walls of the church auditorium a marble tablet, upon which is still to be read the following inscription :

THIS TABLET.

is designed to express the gratitude of the  
Congregation of St. Peter's Church in this city,  
to the benefactors of the said church, -

whose names follow :

GEORGE WILLOCKS,

who died in 1729.

MARGARET WILLOCKS,

his wife,

who died in 1722.

THOMAS GORDON,

who died April 28, 1722,

and

JOHN HARRISON.

They loved the habitation of God's house and  
the place where his honor dwelleth.

Erected A. D. 1825.

John Harrison was the first sheriff of Perth Amboy, and in the old record his name is often met with as the agent for the proprietors in locating lands and buying the Indian rights. Thomas Gordon came from Pitlochie, Scotland, in 1684, with his wife, Helen, four children and seven servants, and proved no small addition to the virtuous and refined society that his fellow countrymen were establishing in East Jersey. He selected a plantation some ten miles from salt water, on Cedar brook, near the present village of New Brooklyn, or South Plainfield. In February of the next year, he wrote to the old country as follows :

I am settled here in a very pleasant place upon the side of a brave plain, almost free of woods and near the water side, so that I might yoke a plough where I please, were it not for want of hay to maintain the cattle, which I hope to get helped the next year, for I have several pieces of meadow near me—There are eight of us settled here, within half a mile or a mile of another, and about ten miles from the town of New Perth or Amboy point, so that I can go and come in a day—Blessed be God, myself and wife and children and servants have been, and are still in good health, which God continue.

His prayer was futile ; in less than two years he was the only one of his family alive. His wife and her six children lie in the old burying-ground of Perth Amboy, where a large stone with an antiquated inscription can yet be seen.

Altogether we may readily persuade ourselves that George Willocks was a man of ability and an important personage in the community. Mr. Whitehead tells us that his time was principally employed in attending to his large landed estates, he having become deeply interested in real property. He purchased other portions of propriety shares, and gradually his undivided interest in the province was converted into holdings in severalty, he obtaining warrants and releases from his brother proprietors for large tracts of land in Middlesex, Monmouth, Hunterdon, Somerset, Bergen and Passaic counties.

Among the many large bodies of land acquired by George Willocks from the proprietors was one lying in Somerset county, known as the Peapack \* patent. The warrant is made to him

---

\* Evidently an Indian name. A native thoroughfare which ran from east to west through northern New Jersey, crossing the Lamington river at its falls, was called the "Peapack Path," and was frequently mentioned as the boundary of early land grants.

and John Johnstone in severalty, as joint tenants, on "the seventh day of June, in the thirteenth year of the reign of William the Third, over England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, etc., Annoque Dom. 1701," and is signed by the acting governor of the province, Andrew Hamilton, and five proprietors. Perhaps you may wonder at so few associates joining in the conveyance. By this time the proprietries had become divided into many small parts, and their owners were distributed into various portions of the world; consequently it was impossible that all of the proprietors, or even a majority of them, could join in a release to an associate. It was the custom, therefore, for a certain number of them to meet with the governor and examine and pass upon applications for propriety lands. Those who met for this purpose were called the "Council of the Proprietors," and to secure a valid conveyance it was necessary that the patent, or warrant, should be issued under the great seal of the province, and be signed by the governor, and at least five of this council. Andrew Hamilton, who executed the grant to Johnstone and Willocks, was a brother-in-law of the latter, and originally a merchant in Edinburgh. He was one of that band of well-born Scotchmen who came to Amboy about the same time, establishing a little coterie of worth and aristocracy in East Jersey which long left its impress on the morals and manners of the people. He reached America in 1685; coming as one of the proprietors he occupied a seat in the council of Lord Neil Campbell and succeeded him as deputy-governor in 1686. He was governor from 1692 to 1698, and again from 1699 to 1701, and died at Amboy in 1703.

John Johnstone, the joint owner with Willocks of the Peapack patent, was another of East Jersey's valued Scotch citizens. He had been a druggist in Edinburgh, "at the sign of the Unicorn;" he was also a skilful physician and much esteemed by both rich and poor, especially by the latter, who were his particular care. Doctor Johnstone arrived in the province in December, 1685, by the "Henry and Francis, of Newcastle, a Ship of three hundred and fifty Tun, and Twenty great Guns, Richard Hutton, master," in company with nearly two hundred of his banished and oppressed countrymen. This ship had been chartered by George Scot, THE LAIRD OF PITLOCHIE. This Scotch nobleman had



been many times fined and imprisoned "for absence from the King's host," attending conventicles and other offenses obnoxious to the government, and was finally released from prison upon his engaging to go to the plantations. He then published that "Model of the Government of East New Jersey in America," which is to be found bound with Whitehead's "East New Jersey under the Proprietors," and is the source of much of our information as to the earliest days of the province, and especially of its Scotch immigration. The promulgation, by Scot, of all the facts regarding this transatlantic retreat for the persecuted, induced many of his countrymen to join him in the undertaking of removing thitherward; among them was his son-in-law, John Johnstone, who, on or before sailing, had married Scot's daughter Euphemia. The "LAIRD" was also authorized by the Crown to take with him to America one hundred and five prisoners, then in the tolbooth at Leith. Many of these latter protested in writing against being banished for conscience sake, in that they had refused allegiance to a king whom they felt bound to withstand and disown, considering him an enemy to religion and an avowed papist. As all of these protestants were prisoners, some of whom are said to have suffered for their beliefs to the extent of the loss of a left ear, and many of whom were in danger of death, it seems strange that they should not have welcomed the opportunity for transportation to a country where safety, at least, awaited them, and probably prosperity.

The "Henry and Francis" sailed from Leith on the fifth of September, 1685. Hardly had she reached Lands End when a malignant fever broke out among the passengers; among its first victims were George Scot and his wife. The care of the people then devolved on John Johnstone. For many weeks the ship's company battled against disease and the fierce waves of the Atlantic, until finally, in December, when the vessel dropped anchor in the harbor of Perth Amboy, at least seventy of her passengers had found graves at the bottom of the sea. Notwithstanding so inauspicious an advent into the colony, Doctor Johnstone's character and attainments soon won for him the consideration of the citizens, whereby he was forced to accept many honorable and important positions in the community. He represented the people for thirteen years in the general assembly,

and for ten years was speaker of that body. He also served as judge of the supreme court of Monmouth county, was one of the king's council under the Burnet administration, and held many other important offices. He seems for a time to have been a resident of New York, as he was mayor of that city from 1714 to 1718. Doctor Johnstone's Amboy residence, a substantial brick mansion, was preserved until after the Revolution; he also spent much time in Monmouth county on a plantation called "Scotschesterburg," granted him and his wife by the proprietors as a reimbursement for his and his father-in-law's outlay in importing the Scotch refugees. He became an extensive land owner in several counties, being entitled to grants of headlands, and to grants because of propriety interests, he having purchased one-eighth of Thomas Rudyard's original share, one-sixteenth of John Heywood's and two-fifth parts of nineteenth-twentieths of Robert Barclay's.





## CHAPTER X.

### *Early New Jersey History Continued—The Story of the Title Completed—Somerset Land Grants.*

I wonder do my readers grow weary of these legal chapters? If so, they must turn over the leaves until they reach some they may consider more interesting. It is a mistake to think that an author desires all his pages read. Naturally you may ask, why then were they written? Miss Woolson, in one of her clever sketches, suggests, "perhaps for the writer's own amusement." I think she is right, for though these legal chapters may be dull reading, their writing has proved a most agreeable task. There is a peculiar charm in poring over the dry records of a title, and, while tracing the history of a familiar piece of land, in forcing it to divulge the various changes of owners and conditions it has sustained since those early days when it formed an undesignated part of the vast, undefined area of primitive wilderness. So it is, that while I have been occupied in ascertaining all that could be learned regarding the "Old Farm," from the days when it was a portion of the domain of the "Merry King Charles" down to the time it vested in that sturdy yeoman Johannes Moelich, my time has not seemed uselessly employed. It is also pleasant to catch occasional glimpses through the dim perspective of the past of those persons who have directly or indirectly been connected with these ancestral acres. Biography is said to be the home aspect of history; so, as research brings to light the names of persons who have been even remotely associated with these homestead lands, I cannot refrain from endeavoring to learn of them all that can be discovered. My readers must be patient if, at times, in giving the results of such research, unimportant personages are apparently allowed undue space and prominence.



In reaching the Peapack patent it will soon be seen that we have rescued the "Old Farm" from the indefinite area of the wild lands of New Jersey, and located it within the definite bounds of a personal possession. The limits of this grant cannot to-day be readily defined by its description, which is as follows :

Begins on Rackawack river, at the upper corner of a thousand acres of land, belonging to the said George Willocks, thence up the said Rackawack, including the same to the falls thereof, between two steep hills. Thence to the head of the easternmost crooks that unites with said Rackawack, in said Willock's land, and makes the North Branch of Raritan river. From thence east and by north to the top of that ridge of mountains that points southerly toward the Raritan river, thence running along the top of the said mountain southerly, as far as the northeast corner of a tract of land formerly Ann West's, now Michael Hawdon's, thence due west to said Hawdon's land, thus following the lines of said Hawdon's and of said Willock's land, to where it began.

I have searched in vain at Trenton, at Amboy, and among the archives of the New Jersey Historical Society, at Newark, for a survey of the land included in this grant. If any exists it must be in private hands. The conveyance calls for thirty-one hundred and fifty acres, but its description embraces a territory aggregating nearly eleven thousand acres. At first thought this description is hardly intelligible, but a little study of early titles and some knowledge of subsequent transfers made of portions of the grant enables us to define with considerable accuracy the boundaries of the premises intended to be conveyed.

The description commences at a point in one thousand acres of land vested in George Willocks by right of his wife, Margaret Winder, who had died in 1722, which land lay at the conflux of the north branch of the Raritan and Lamington rivers, formerly known respectively as the Peapack and Allametunk. This tract is designated as number 51, on the map accompanying schedule number III., in the "Elizabethtown Bill in Chancery." It was conveyed by George Willocks to Daniel Axtell on the twenty-fourth of June, 1726, and soon after that time that portion of the land lying east of the north branch of the Raritan came into the possession of George Teeple, the founder of the Teeple family at Pluckamin. The first real estate transfer within the limits of the present Bedminster township, was the purchase of this tract by Mrs. Willocks—when the widow of Samuel Winder—on the twentieth of May, 1690. The description in the patent continues, "thence up the said Rackawack." This is

evidently an error, and one probably made in copying the grant on the book of records, although, possibly, the mistake may have occurred in the original, as the scriveners of that time had but slight knowledge of the names of the water-courses of the New Jersey wildernesses. Rackawack, in early deeds, stood for Rockaway. The line of the Peapack patent did not touch that stream, but ascended the Lamington to its falls, near the Morris county line; thence it continued easterly to the head waters of the north branch of the Raritan; thence, southerly, following that stream to a point where it veers westerly, below the mouth of Mine brook; thence to the top of the first mountain south of Pluckamin; thence following the crest of that mountain southeasterly, to the northeast corner of a thousand acre tract of land conveyed to Ann West on the fourteenth of August, 1693, and which is designated as number 58 on the map before referred to in the "Elizabethtown Bill in Chancery," thence, westerly, along the north line of this land, to the east line of George Willock's thousand acres; thence along his east and north line to the place of beginning.

Ann West was the daughter of Deputy-Governor Thomas Rudyard, and a sister of Mrs. Willocks. Her husband John West, a merchant, dying early, she married Robert Wharton, and later became the wife of Governor Andrew Hamilton. The upper portion of her land adjoined on the east the lower portion of her sister's tract, and, lying on both sides of Chamber's brook, is in both Bedminster and Bridgewater townships. The title to this lot passed to Catherine, Duchess of Gordon, of Gordon Castle, Scotland, who was the daughter of William, the second Earl of Aberdeen, and the locality is still known as "The Duchess." The tract is at present bisected by the road leading from the village of North Branch to Pluckamin, and is now subdivided, or was within a few years, into the farm homesteads of J. T. Van der Veer, Jerome Van Nest, Philip Van der Veer, Jacob Powelson and others, they deriving their title from the descendants of Abram Quick and John Van der Veer, who purchased the land in 1801 from Gouverneur Morris, as agent of the Duchess of Gordon. This Scotch noble-woman made the acquaintance of American investments through having married Staats L. Morris, a brother of Gouverneur

Morris, who early in life entered the English army, and ultimately attained the rank of general. The Duchess visited New York with her husband, and is said to have been long remembered by metropolitan society for her good heart, blunt manners, frank conversation and masculine habits.

In studying the old records of Somerset one cannot fail to notice with interest how many prominent and leading men of the last century have been directly or indirectly connected with the freeholds of the county. Gouverneur Morris may surely be classed among this number, for, in reading the story of his life, discovery is soon made that he was a much greater man than the majority of his contemporaries. Had he been possessed of personal ambition his memory would occupy a more exalted place in history, as his present fame is far less than his abilities would have insured had he consented to place himself in the front of the many prominent movements with which he was connected. His eloquence in conversation was phenomenal; it is claimed that not only would intelligent listeners hang on his words in rapt admiration, but that servants, arrested by his table-talk, stood open-mouthed, dishes in hand, to catch his glowing sentences. Put Morris where you would, he was always at home and always made an impression. So great was his equipoise, it was impossible to disturb the tranquility of his mind and presence. When in France, as United States Minister, his marked individuality, eccentric and original manners, together with his undoubted intellect, made a strong impression on society in the French capital. Madame de Staël credited him with having "*l'air tres imposant*," and the king found in his features an extraordinary resemblance to those of the royal family. On one occasion, while attending an audience, the American statesman was approached by the monarch, who, after looking at him fixedly for a moment, exclaimed "The likeness is, indeed, too wonderful to be accidental! Pray, Mr. Morris, was your mother ever in France?" Morris with a respectful bow, quickly replied, "No, your Majesty, but my father was!"

It is evident this Peapack patent embraced within its boundaries nearly the entire township of Bedminster, and extended from below Pluckamin to somewhere near the Morris county



line, and from the north branch of the Raritan on the east to the Lamington river on the west. It included surveys numbered 59, 62, 88, 120, 122, and those marked Daniel Axtell, and Doctor Johnstone Lewis and Mary Johnstone, as laid down on the map accompanying schedule III, "Elizabethtown Bill in Chancery."

In May, 1660, when King Charles II. landed at Dover and made his royal progress to London, he found the people mad with loyal excitement. Drunk with the joy of his restoration. Cromwell, who had made England the leading power of Europe, was apparently forgotten. There no longer seemed to be any Roundheads, Puritans, Covenanters, or Papists; only a bell-ringing, bonfire-blazing nation, hysterical with delight at the return of a king. No one was more surprised at this rapture of the people than was Charles himself, who remarked to one of his suite that for the life of him he could not see why he had staid away so long when every one seemed so glad to have him back again. In his pleasure at the enthusiasm his presence everywhere engendered, he was quite ready with all manner of promises as to forgiveness for past offences. Hardly, however, had he grown warm to his seat in the saddle of government, before he became convinced that justice to his father's memory demanded vengeance on those, at least, who had been immediately instrumental in the sufferings of the late king. Among the unhappy persons who were consequently dragged on hurdles to their deaths was Daniel Axtell. He had been prominent in the Cromwellian army, and commanded the guard preserving order in Westminster Hall, at the court in which Charles I. was convicted of treason and sentenced to be beheaded. After the execution of Axtell, his son, also named Daniel, fled to Jamaica, in the West Indies, where engaging in trade he acquired a fortune. On visiting the American colonies in search of investments, he purchased a large slice of the Peapack patent, paying therefor: "The sum of one thousand two hundred and fourteen pounds, money of New York." The deed to him from Johnstone and Willocks, under date of the twentieth of June, 1726, conveyed as follows:

All that tract of land situate, lying and being within the bounds of a certain tract of land granted by patent unto the said John Johnstone and George Willocks, bearing date the seventh day of June, Anno Domini one thousand seven hundred and one, for their rights to several parcels of land, shares and parts of proprieties, in the eastern division of New Jersey, as

aforesaid: Beginning upon the north side of Peapack River, where the east line of a tract of land (granted by the said George Willocks unto Daniel Axtell aforesaid) toucheth the said river; and from thence up the said river, as it runs, until it comes about ten chains above the forks thereof; from thence south, seventy-three degrees, west three hundred and seventy-two chains, unto Allametunck river, be it more or less; from thence down the stream thereof, as it runs, to where the west line of the land sold by George Willocks aforesaid unto the said Daniel Axtell toucheth the said River, thence along the said line north ninety-four chains, thence east eighty chains, thence south to Peapack River to where it is said to begin. \* \* \* Containing four thousand and sixty-five acres, excepting one thousand two hundred and fourteen acres, belonging to John Hamilton, also four hundred and eighteen acres claimed by Charles Dunster by virtue of a survey made to Lord Neil Campbell and Robert Blackwood, and entered in the second book of surveys, folio 132.

As at that time a New York pound had a present United States coin value of three dollars and fourteen and one-quarter cents, we find that in the year 1726 the best of Bedminster lands were considered worth about one dollar and fifty-six cents per acre. With the exception of the exemptions, and of the Winder tract which Willocks also sold to Axtell, the above conveyance covered all the country bounded by the Lamington river, the north branch of the Raritan river, and the road leading from Bernardsville to Lamington village. John Hamilton was the son of Governor Andrew Hamilton; his reservation I am unable to locate. The four hundred and eighteen acres "claimed by Charles Dunster" was situated near where the two streams merge, and is designated as survey number 59, in schedule III., "Elizabethtown Blil in Chancery." The recital of the area of premises conveyed by the Peapack patent, and by this deed from Johnstone and Willocks to Daniel Axtell, enables us to correct the following erroneous statement to be found on page 29 of Messler's "Centennial History of Somerset County":

Between Lamington River and North Branch, Major Axtell owned a large and valuable tract of land, out of which Campbell and Blackwood purchased 3900 acres, in 1693; Margaret Winder 1000, on May 20, 1690; Johnson and Willocks 3150, June 6, 1701. This last survey included all the lands in Peapack valley; and finally Andrew Hamilton obtained a deed for 875 acres on Lamitunk, Feb. 25, 1740. This brings us to the Morris county line.

Like errors as to the early history of Bedminster land titles will be found on pages 700, 704 and 705 of Snell's recent "History of Hunterdon and Somerset Counties."

Just here permit me to say that the people of Somerset are

greatly indebted to Doctor Messler for publishing the results of his painstaking researches as to the early history of the county. His labors have been valuable, not only in bringing to light facts of which, otherwise, we should have remained in ignorance, but because of exciting in the community an interest in local history, and by inciting in others the desire to still further pierce the dim mists that enshroud the days of long ago. Much the same may be said of the work of Mr. Snell in his compilation of facts, traditions and biography. But while man remains finite, so long will the best of histories be replete with errors. It is not belittling the efforts of these local historians to point out where their statements are erroneous. On the contrary, it is giving an added value to those historical nuggets they have unearthed, that contain only the pure metal of truth. As to the value of the materials they have collected there can be no dispute, and, with Macaulay, we may acknowledge an indebtedness to an historian's accurate researches for the means of refuting in his work what we cannot fail to discover as errors.

After the death of Daniel Axtell, (second), his son, William, who was born in Jamaica, came in 1746 to New Jersey in order to dispose of this estate. The result of his efforts within a few years was the planting, in this portion of the township, of the Van Doren, Van der Veer, McDowell, Teeple, Streit, Sloan and other families. Ultimately, while visiting New York, he ran away with and married the beautiful daughter of Abraham De Peyster, the treasurer of that province. Axtell built a substantial two storey, semi-detached brick dwelling in New York city, where he lived in a lavish manner as long as his money lasted. It stood on the present site of the Astor House, then in the outskirts of the city; the other half of the structure was the residence of Walter Rutherford, whose wife was the sister of Lord Stirling. In Mrs. Lamb's "History of the City of New York," there is a picture of this dwelling showing it to have had a steep dormered roof, two small square windows on the main floor protected by heavy wooden shutters, and a front door which, opening abruptly on the side walk without step or break, was approached through a wooden porch. In 1754 Axtell removed to England, stopping on his way at Jamaica where he settled his father's estate. Some years later, returning to



America he built a large mansion at Flatbush, Long Island, where he permanently settled. At the breaking out of the Revolution he attached himself to the patriot cause, and was active in arousing the people of his county to the support of the American arms. After the disasters on Long Island and in Westchester his convictions underwent a change, and, swearing allegiance to the Crown, he became a violent partisan of the British. He was commissioned a colonel of a regiment of foot in his Majesty's service, and was also given many offices of a sinecure nature, which brought him a fortune. By marrying his adopted daughter to a Major Miles of the Continental army he had hoped to secure his estates, but, by an act of attainder passed by the New York legislature on the twenty-second of October, 1779, all of his property, real and personal, was confiscated, and he, and others who were members with him of the king's council, were proscribed. The act declared that "each and every of them, who shall, at any time hereafter, be found in any part of this state, shall be and are hereby adjudged and declared guilty of felony, and shall suffer death as in cases of felony without benefit of clergy." On the evacuation of New York he removed to England, where he received a pension and a colonel's half-pay for life.

There are descendants of a collateral branch of the Axtell family now resident in New Jersey. Thomas, a brother of Daniel Axtell the regicide, came to this country in about the year 1642 and settled at Sudbury, Massachusetts, where he died four years later. His great-grandson, Henry, removed in 1740 to New Jersey, establishing himself at Mendham in Morris county. This Henry was the great-grandfather of the Honorable Charles F. Axtell, of Morristown, and of the Honorable Samuel B. Axtell, late chief justice of New Mexico.

George Willocks died in 1729. His executors, the Reverends Edward Vaughan and William Skinner, offered his will for probate before Michael Kearney, surrogate, on the thirteenth of February of that year. I have in my possession a copy of that voluminous document. It goes to show the testator to have been a man of piety and good works, as it contains numerous generous bequests for religious and charitable purposes, and the following solemn invocation and profession of faith :

In the name of God, Amen. I, George Willocks, of Perth Amboy in the Province of New Jersey, being under a languishing distemper, but by God's goodness, master of my reason and memory, do think fit to make this my last will and testament. I acknowledge myself a great sinner, and have nothing to rely upon for the forgiveness of my transgressions, but the merits and mediation of my blessed Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, for whose sake, merciful God forgive me, and receive me into the arms of thy mercy, and grant at the last day I may be raised among the elect, to praise Thee forever and ever.

This last testament provided for the payment of debts, and the building of a tomb to cost seventy pounds; this vault, though in ruins, is still to be seen in St. Peter's churchyard at Perth Amboy. It bequeathed to two negro slaves some cows and household furniture. The executors were directed to build a house and lay out a garden spot adjoining, for the slaves; and a negro lad was to be bound to a cooper, who was to be paid for instructing him in his craft. The franchise and buildings of the "Long Ferry" to South Amboy were devised to trustees, who were empowered to let or run the same, and apply the income, as the will recites:—

To support the incumbent serving the Cure of St. Peter's Church in Perth Amboy, and his successors provided always that such Incumbents have received ordination of Deacon and Priest from the hands of a Bishop of the Church of England, and do continue members of the said Church according to the doctrines and discipline of the said Church.

Divers tracts of lands in divers counties were ordered to be sold, and the proceeds divided in specified sums between relatives, friends, churches and the poor, in America and Scotland. The bulk of his landed estate, which was very great, was devised to George Leslie and Ann Richie, his nephew and niece, the latter receiving his house and lot on Smith street in Amboy. The will disposes of the Peapack patent as follows:

And whereas there is a tract of land remaining in partnership, besides what has been sold to Daniel Axtell, and two thousand acres given by me to Euphemia Johnstone deceased and Margaret Smith, two daughters of John Johnstone, the remaining part of the said tract is still vested in the said John Johnstone and in me the said George Willocks, (only 418 acres released by the said John Johnstone to me the said George Willocks). I, therefore, pray my executors to get the lands surveyed and a partition made between the said John Johnstone and me, after such partition be made, I give and grant to my executors full power and authority to sell and dispose of the same, and the money arising from such sale, after the payment of debts and legacies, the remaining part, I desire, may be put out upon good security and applied for the support of the children of the said George Leslie and Ann Richie, lawfully begotten.

Ann Richie and George Leslie were children of George Willocks' sister, the former being the wife of John Richie, a merchant of Aberdeen, Scotland. Leslie had joined his uncle in America several years before the latter's death, and after that event resided at Perth and South Amboy—at that time within one corporation—until his own death in 1751. His homestead property embraced some twelve hundred acres of land adjoining the ferry at South Amboy. He also was an active member of St. Peter's church, being a vestryman from the year 1722 to 1729, and again in 1750. He occupied pew No. 11 for which he paid six pounds and seventeen shillings per annum.

Neither in the Department of State at Trenton, nor on the records of the Board of Proprietors of East New Jersey at Amboy, nor among the Willocks papers in the custody of the State Historical Society, have I been able to find a copy of the survey directed by the will to be made; nor any trace of the proceedings in partition. That a division, survey and map were made, is proven by frequent references in subsequent deeds to numbered lots in the Peapack patent. I have also searched in vain for the record of any conveyances of Somerset lands by the executors of George Willocks. At a meeting of the Board of Proprietors of East New Jersey, held the thirty-first of March, 1743, the surveyor-general was directed to survey two thousand acres of land out of the patent for George Leslie. The order reads as follows:

By virtue of an order of the Council of Proprietors this day made you are hereby authorized and required to lay out and survey for Mr. George Leslie or his assigns within that tract called Peapack Two thousand acres of land and for so doing this shall be your sufficient warrant.

Given under my hand and seal at Perth Amboy the thirty-first day of March, 1743.

On such survey being made, the proprietors, on the twenty-third of June, 1744, conveyed to George Leslie two tracts of land. The description of the one in which we are especially interested reads as follows:

Beginning at the northeast corner of the land of Daniel Axtell deceased, where it touches Peapack river; thence along said Axtell's line south, seventy-three Degrees, west one hundred and eighteen chains, to a corner of land late of Doctor John Johnstone deceased; then along said Johnstone's line, north and by east thirty-five chains to his northeast corner; then along another line of said



Johnstone's land, south seventy-six degrees, west one hundred and twenty-three chains to a stake to the northward of a white oak tree marked on four sides, distant therefrom forty links, which stake is upon the rising of a hill near to Julius Johnstone's, and is another corner of said Johnstone's land; thence north and by east to the southwest corner of another tract of land belonging to the said John Johnstone deceased, called by the name of lot No. 4, forty chains; thence north seventy-six degrees, east to the southeast corner of said lot No. 4; thence north and by east forty chains; thence north seventy-six degrees, east twenty-eight chains to a brook commonly called Lawrence's Brook. Thence down the stream of said brook to where it empties itself into said Peapack river; thence along said Peapack river to the beginning. Containing twelve hundred and ninety-one acres strict measure.

The other tract conveyed by this warrant contained "four hundred and ninety-eight acres and thirty-two hundredths," lying on the east side of the Lamington river, just below its falls, and adjoining lot No. 13, belonging to John Johnstone's estate.

It would thus appear that if the executors sold the portion of the Peapack patent set off to Willocks, the proprietors became the purchasers. If not, in some other manner they must have acquired legal title. It is well known that the great difference in acreage, between what the original patent called for and what it eventually surveyed, gave rise to complications and disputes between the proprietors and the beneficiaries under the Willocks will, which greatly retarded the settlement of the estate. It is not impossible, therefore, that these complexities resulted in a compromise whereby a portion of the patent again became vested in the proprietors. This last view of the case is made the more probable on the discovery of the following clause in the will of John Johnstone, which was proven on the seventeenth of November, 1732:

And whereas in the tract of land at Peapack formerly Patented to George Willocks and to me the quantity of my share thereof does exceed the quantity of Proprietary Rights that I may have been entitled to. Now I doe hereby appoint and Empower my Executors or the Major part of them or the Survivors or Majority of the Survivors of them to compromise and agree that matter with the Proprietors and for such quantity of acres, as it will be found that I have at Peapack beyond my proprietary Right. I Impower my Executors to release and convey in fee or otherwise assume to the proprietors an Equivalent out of That Tract of Land Esteemed in the County of Bergen, containing about five thousand eight hundred acres which I am entitled to by a return of survey in the Western Division of New Jersey.

We may conclude, therefore, that Doctor Johnstone's instructions being carried out, all differences as affecting his estate were healed by the conveyance of other lands to the proprietors. His

executors and heirs apparently came into peaceful possession of all that portion of the Peapack patent lying between the two rivers, the Morris county line, and the north line of the grant to Leslie which crossed the township at the mouth of Peapack brook (Schomp's Mills). His estate also owned numerous surveyed lots of extensive area lying east of Lamington and west of the Leslie tract—also the southeast corner of the patent, at and below where Pluckamin was later established; the first sale made by Doctor Lewis and Mary Johnstone being five hundred acres to Jacob Eoff, which included the site of that village.

By referring to the description in the grant to Leslie, it will be seen that it commenced at Axtell's northeast corner. This point was where "Demund's bridge" now spans the north branch of the Raritan, and is the same corner at which the description contained in the deed from Leslie to Jolyannes Moelich began. The line of the grant extended westerly for nearly one and one-half miles along Axtell's boundary, which lay in the centre of the road running from Bernardsville to Lamington; here it reached the southeast corner of a plot that had been allotted to John Johnstone, that fronted on this road for two miles, and extended back, northerly, three thousand and eighty feet. Leslie's line continued along the east and north boundaries of this Johnstone plot westerly to its west corner, a distance of over two miles. From there it extended in a northeasterly direction, following the lines of several plots that had been set off to Johnstone, to Lawrence's—then so called—now Peapack brook. From there it continued along the brook to its mouth, and so on down the north branch of the Raritan to the place of beginning. The greatest breadth of this tract, from east to west, was about three and one-half miles, and its greatest depth, from north to south, one mile. With the exception of the natural meadows bordering the river, it was entirely covered with timber. Leslie's right to this land does not seem to have rested on the fact of his having been the heir of George Willocks. It was probably granted to him by the proprietors in consideration of proprietary interests, he having become the owner of one-sixteenth part, and seven sixty-fourths part of John Heywood's original twenty-fourth; one-half of Thomas Barker's, one-eighth of Thomas Rudyard's, one-fortieth of Thomas Cooper's and one-fifth of nineteen-twentieths of Robert Barclay's.

George Leslie made no disposition of any portion of this property until the year 1751. And so, after a long story with many digressions, we now find ourselves where we started in this legal talk—at the conveyance, on the first of November, 1751, of the three hundred and sixty-seven acres to Johannes Moelich. In returning to this deed it is interesting to notice that in phraseology and general form it does not materially differ from such instruments now in use. It was signed by George Leslie and his wife Elizabeth, witnessed by Griffen Disbrow and Jonathan Nisbitt, and recorded by Thomas Bartow, secretary of the province. Instead of the grantors having made acknowledgments as to their signatures, Samuel Nevill, one of the justices of the supreme court, certifies that the witnesses to the conveyance having been duly sworn made oath that they “saw the grantors seal, and, as their act and deed, deliver the same, etc.” Of these attesting witnesses I know but little. Griffen Disbrow probably lived at or near Perth Amboy, as he was one of St. Peter’s congregation, the minutes of that church showing that, in 1751, when pew No. 18 was forfeited for non-payment of dues, it was secured by him at an annual rental of £5.2.0. Thomas Bartow, the secretary of state, was the son of the Reverend John Bartow, the first rector of St. Peter’s church, Westchester, New York, and the grandson of the Huguenot General Bertaut, who fled from France in 1685. Bartow was frequently in the service of the province, and was clerk in chancery when the famous Elizabethtown bill, at the suit of “John, Earl of Stair, and others, Proprietors of the Eastern Division of New Jersey against Benjamin Bond, and others,” was filed on the thirteenth of April, 1745. By and by, when we shall have occasion to visit Perth Amboy with Johannes, we will look up this worthy secretary and learn something of his home and surroundings.

Judge Samuel Nevill ranked among the most important men of the province. He was a native of Stafford, England, and bred a lawyer in London, where for a time he edited a newspaper. The occasion of his coming to America was in this wise. One of the original proprietors was Arent Sonmans, a Hollander, who lived in Scotland. In addition to his own twenty-fourth part, he owned portions of the several shares that had been vested in Gawen Lawrie, David Barclay and Hugh Hartshorne,

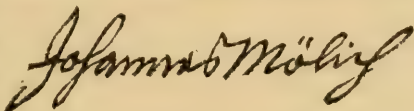


which, together with sundry other portions that he had purchased, aggregated five and one-quarter proprietries. Sonmans, while preparing to visit East Jersey and while journeying between Scotland and London, was set upon by some highwaymen and fatally wounded. His son, Peter, inherited his American interests and, coming to America in 1688, died in 1734, and lies buried in St. John's churchyard at Elizabéth. He devised his estates to his wife, Sarah. At her death, which occurred soon after, Samuel Nevill, as her eldest brother and heir-at-law, came into possession of the five and one-quarter proprietries, excepting a small portion that had been sold by Peter Sonmans to John Vail.

By this time these shares had grown to be of considerable value. Mr. Nevill, on finding himself possessed of such important American interests, decided to cross the ocean, which he did in 1736, settling permanently at Perth Amboy. His varied talents at once attracted attention, and he soon rose to eminence. The then great dignity of being the mayor of this ancient capital was forced upon him; he became a member of the provincial assembly, judge of the court of common pleas, second judge of the supreme court, and in many other important ways served with honor the people and his king. Under the auspices of the assembly, between the years 1732 and 1761, he published in two volumes an edition of the laws of the province. In 1758, he established and edited the first of New Jersey's periodicals and the second one on the continent. It was called the "New American Magazine," to distinguish it from its predecessor at Philadelphia, which relinquished publication upon the appearance of this competitor. Nevill's magazine contained about forty octavo pages, and, judging from the copy to be seen in the library of the New York Historical Society, it compared favorably with many modern publications of the same character. It was printed at Woodbridge by James Parker, who, having served his time with the famous New York printer, William Bradford, had set up, in 1751, the first printing press in New Jersey. Besides the magazine he printed "Nevill's Laws," and Smith's "History of New Jersey" which appeared in 1765; from time to time he published legislative and other official documents and did generally the work of the colony.

Samuel Nevill died on the twenty-seventh day of October, 1764, at the age of sixty-seven. He and his wife lie side by side under the shadows of the walls of St. Peter's, of which church he was a warden for twenty years.

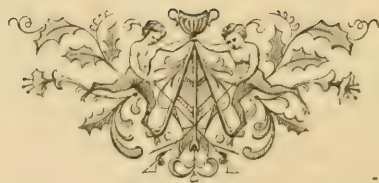
As before recited, the consideration for the purchase of the three hundred and sixty-seven acres was seven hundred and fifty-four pounds. Of this amount Johannes paid three hundred and twenty-four pounds in cash; the balance by the execution and delivery of two bonds, payable in six months, for two hundred and two, and two hundred and twenty-eight pounds. These obligations were discharged on maturity, and, as Leslie had died soon after the sale was consummated, they bear the satisfaction receipt of his two children, George and Elizabeth. Among my old papers relating to this property are these two satisfied bonds. They are especially valued as preserving excellent specimens of Johannes' writing; on one of them the signature is as plain and distinct as if penned within a few years. Here is a fac-simile:



*Johannes Möllig*

To the manuscript lover, much pleasure is derived from handling an old document that, having played its part in the work of the world, has in some mysterious way escaped the fate of like papers and is preserved to testify of circumstances and events of an age long past. How the world moves! Consider the changes that have come to people and countries since these old bonds were new. When these instruments—now in the sere and yellow, and valueless save as relics—were vested with the potentiality of enforcing the payment of a no inconsiderable sum, the land for which they had been given in part consideration was in truth as much of a howling wilderness as it had been for a thousand previous years. Lafayette, whose name was to be as familiar as household words in this hill country of New Jersey, was yet unborn. Washington, still unknown to fame, was a lad in his teens; and seventeen years must come and go before the Corsican babe would open his eyes on that Europe he was almost to master. Travellers still crossed the stormy Atlantic in frail pinks, ketches, snows and bilenders. France was being pompadoured into a condition to make possible the fourteenth of July, 1789. And what of England, then as now, considered in

the van of civilization ? Its crown was worn by a Hanoverian dullard who hated "busic and boetry." In all the island there was not a macadamized road, and the royal mail was carried on "flying machines," protected from highway robbers, even in the suburbs of London, by guards armed with loaded blunderbusses. Parliament was a den of corruption, borough seats in the house of commons being publicly advertised and openly sold. The British people knew but little of their law makers, as to publish the proceedings of their legislature was a misdemeanor carrying a heavy punishment. There were laws enough, however, and they were severe enough, for nearly two hundred crimes knew capital punishment as their penalty, and children of tender years were sentenced to death for petty pilfering. And yet we are constantly told that the world grows no better, that the movement and direction of mankind is not onward and upward.







## CHAPTER XI.

### *The Building of the "Old Stone House"—Redemptioners— White Slavery in the Colonies.*

Behold Johannes—the proud possessor of three hundred and sixty-seven fertile Bedminster acres! land that has lain dormant for centuries, unconscious of its destiny, but ever ready and eager to smile into fruitfulness upon the first advances of the husbandman. In fancy we can see our German ancestor and his two stalwart sons betaking themselves to the hillside. Soon, crash after crash denote the falling oaks that the sturdy strokes and keen axes of the Moelichs have marked as the most fitting contributors to the sills, walls and gables of a new log house; for temporary shelter is necessary while the more permanent stone dwelling shall be rearing its massive walls.

Days are spent in the timber; tree after tree is attacked; they fall on every side! The undergrowth is cut down and heaped, and, by and by, the warm sunlight, for the first time perhaps in ages, breaks in upon a clearing of two acres, which from that time has been consecrated by the sorrows and gladnesses, rejoicings and repinings, and all the sympathetic experiences that rally around an enduring family homestead. The location is well chosen. Now that the trees are prostrate, it shows an open cheery slope, upon which the sun looks kindly down. The ascending uplands bar the chill north winds, and to the south and east the ground falls away gently to the meadows bordering the brook and river, which just here, with pleasant splash and babble, merge into one stream. Teams draw the big logs to the spot selected for placing the temporary dwelling. It was across the present road leading to the farm buildings, opposite and facing the door-yard of

the stone house. The ends of the logs are squared, and so cut as to be let in or dove-tailed together. And now comes the memorable day of the "raising." Old neighbors from Hunterdon are invited, and come in goodly numbers. They bring with them willing hearts and stout arms, and plenty of provisions, for, as there are no dwellings near, the raising dinner must partake somewhat of the character of a picnic. Songs and merry stories go round, as the walls and gables slowly rise from the ground. How easy to imagine the happiness of Johannes, as he now aids in the work, and now directs his friends and co-laborers! Mariah Katrina, too, is there, lending in the German fashion a strong and ready hand; and the boys occupy themselves in keeping up brisk fires with fragrant chips, and crackling boughs and branches. Cannot you see the smiling, hear the laughing, and enjoy the joking, while they dine from off the logs and stumps, and drink to the future happiness of the new residents? The walls go up apace; by afternoon, skids are necessary upon which to roll the heavy logs to their places; and when the western sky beyond the crest of the long hill is aflame with the rich colors of the after-glow, the rude house is raised, though still without roof, doors or floor. When entirely completed it was nothing more than a square enclosure, with but one storey, and a cock-loft above, and a roof thatched with leaves or straw—a primitive cabin, much like many others scattered along the narrow tracks and trails of this newly-opened country.

As it was now late in the autumn, or early in the winter, nothing could be done in the actual erection of the stone house; but during the cold weather much was accomplished in the way of preparation. He who in building a house calls in the aid of architect and artisan, and himself supplies only the money wherewith to pay for design and work, knows but little of the true sweetness of creating a homestead. Our ancestor must have felt to the full this supreme happiness, as with his boys he labored day after day in furthering the preparations for the building. Stones were hauled and dressed—a quarry having been opened in the extreme northwest corner of the property; materials were brought upon the ground, and round, straight trees selected and rough-hewed to the line, converting them into the

stanch, square floor timbers, that to-day, exposed in the ceiling of the living room, show no signs of decay—are sound to the core. With what interest must Johannes' wife and children have viewed the work, and how his heart must have leaped within him as they watched with delight the slow creating of the family nest. With the disappearance of frost the cellar under the western gable was excavated, and early in the spring the foundations were laid and the building was fairly under way.

To assist in the construction, the services were secured—so runs the story—of Caspar Berger, a German stone-mason and a redemptioner. He had reached New York in 1744, and, being sold by the captain of his ship to repay the costs of passage, was purchased for a term of years by Cornelius Van Horne, of White House, in Hunterdon county. John G. Van Houten of that place, whose wife was a granddaughter of Van Horne, informed me, when eighty-four years of age, that he had often heard his wife's father say that after Caspar Berger had served three years of his time he obtained his freedom by building three stone houses. One of them was for Cornelius Van Horne at White House, now owned by Abraham Pickel; and one for Abraham Pickel in the same neighborhood, now owned by William Pickel, a descendant. The third house, near-by, he believed, was "for a Melick," but could not remember the first name. As there is every probability that at this time Johannes was living between North Branch and White House villages, on the property afterward owned by Jacob Kline, it is reasonable to suppose that it was for him that this third house was built; if so, no trace of the structure remains, although, as mentioned in a previous chapter, the descendants of Jacob Kline are still able to locate the spot where stood the Moelich homestead. Mr. Van Houten was confident in his statement that Berger also built a stone house in Bedminster township, Somerset county. Without doubt this last was the dwelling of Johannes Moelich; as such a story is in full accord with the accepted beliefs of past generations connected with the "Old Stone House."

The descendants of Caspar Berger claim that his emigration from the old country was involuntary; he with others having been enticed on board a ship by its captain, who then set sail for America. This is not improbable, as the masters of vessels were



often guilty of cruel and unjust acts in this business of the importation of redemptioners. Isaac Weld, Jr., in his book of travels in America, published in the last century, asserts that it was the custom of ship-masters at Rotterdam and the Hanse towns to inveigle the people into their vessels under promise of free passage to America. On reaching the colonies, announcement of the arrival of mechanics and laborers would be made, and persons in want of such would flock to the ships, and the poor Germans would be sold to the highest bidders, the captains pocketing the proceeds. Caspar Berger, after obtaining his freedom, by his frugality and industry prospered in the new country and soon waxed well-to-do. During the Revolution he kept the Readington tavern, and later owned a large tract of land north of Holland brook; the mill of William Fitch, on that stream, was also his property. At his death in 1817 he divided his homestead farm of four hundred acres at Readington between his three sons, Aaron, Peter and Jasper. Aaron's son, John S., now an old man, still owns and occupies a portion of this home farm.

Redemptioners, or term slaves, as they were sometimes called, constituted in the early part of the eighteenth century a peculiar feature of colonial society. They were recruited from among all manner of people in the old world, and through this channel Europe emptied upon America, not only the virtuous poor and oppressed of her population, but the vagrants, felons, and the dregs of her communities. There was thus established among the first settlers, a society that, in many places, was almost imbued with a moral pestilence. In Section 10, page 275, "S. P. O. Colonial Entry Book," number 92, we find the following recital:

That all sturdy beggars as gipsies and other incorrigible roudges and wanderers may be taken upp by constables and imprisoned until at the next Assizes or sessions they shall either be acquitted and assigned to some settled aboade and course of life here, or be appointed to be sent to the plantations for five years under the conditions of servants.

Among the redemptioners, however, were a fair proportion of sturdy souls, strong in purpose and endeavor, who appreciated the great opportunity created for them by this complete change of life and country. At the expiration of term of service, many

by thrift and industry elevated themselves to a respectable position, and were absorbed in the middle class. Of necessity there were improvident and shiftless ones, who contributed to the vicious and ignorant element of the population.

There were two kinds of redemptioners: "indented servants," who had bound themselves to their masters for a term of years previous to their leaving the old country; and "free-willers," who, being without money and desirous of emigrating, agreed with the captains of ships to allow themselves and their families to be sold on arrival, for the captain's advantage, and thus repay costs of passage and other expenses. The former—indented servants—were often trapped into their engagements by corrupt agents at home, who persuaded them to emigrate, under false promises of tender and humane treatment, and under assurances of remunerative employment at expiration of service. Section five of the "Colonial Entry Book," before referred to, testifies as follows in corroboration of the above statement:

The waies of obtayning these servants have beene usually by employing a sorte of men and women who make it theire profession to tempt or gaine poore or idle persons to goe to the Plantations and having persuaded or deceived them on Shipp board they receive a reward from the person who employed them.

The immigrants often discovered, on arrival, that the advantages represented to be obtained in America had been painted by the agents in much too alluring colors; frequently their masters forced them to most rigid labor, and exercised an unnecessary severity. Edward Eddis, a surveyor of customs in the province of Maryland, in his "Letters from America," asserts that this class of servants often groaned beneath a worse than Egyptian bondage, as their masters, knowing that their servitude could last but for a few years, treated them with a rigor more severe than they extended to their negro slaves, to whom, being actual property, they were more lenient.

The free-willers suffered even worse treatment at the hands of ship-masters and agents, who had inveigled them into emigration by false and specious promises. They were led to believe that on arrival in America their services would be eagerly solicited by parties who would gladly pay the cost of their passages; which, being only nine pounds, the emigrants

would soon be able to repay, and thus secure their liberty, and all the enjoyments and prosperity that the new country offered to adventurers. Agreements were entered into whereby these deluded ones bound themselves, that if on arrival they did not succeed within a certain number of days in securing employment on their own conditions, they could be sold for a term of years to defray the charges for their passages. Alas! the "free-willers," with rare exceptions, had a rude awakening on reaching the colonies. Under their agreements, the captains had a legal lien on the persons of the immigrants until the ship charges were paid; consequently they were not allowed to go on shore, but were exposed to view on deck to the people who came on board in search of servants. Except in cases of extraordinary qualifications, very few of them were happy enough to make their own stipulations. The sanguine expectations of the redemptioners were doomed to disappointment, and they found themselves sold for several years of tedious labor and servitude.

Professor Kalm, the Swedish botanist, reached Philadelphia on the seventh of September, 1748, by the ship "Mary," which had on board twenty-three Germans and their families. He narrates that when about going on shore with his captain, the latter turned to the second mate and strictly charged him "to let no one of the German refugees out of the ship unless he paid for his passage, or somebody else paid for him, or bought him." Masters of vessels often acted with needless cruelty toward their bond-passengers. Published accounts of travels in America during the last century frequently tell sad stories of the enforced separation of husbands from wives, and parents from children. Doctor Ernest Otto Hopp, in a book on German slavery in North America, recently published in Berlin, tells of a ship captain by the name of Heerbrand who acquired a great reputation as a kidnapper of poor Germans for the American market. He had in his pay a number of men whose business it was to regularly steal beggars, vagabonds and other people without connections, he paying the captors two florins a head for each victim delivered at his vessel. It is said that this man brought over six hundred such persons to America.

The terms and conditions of service differed in the different colonies. Among the archives of the Pennsylvania Historical



Society, are some original bonds, or agreements, between ship captains and redemptioners. From them we learn that the usual price paid in that colony, for three years' service, was twenty-one pounds, one shilling and six pence. When his time had expired a man was entitled to receive two suits of clothes, a grubbing hoe, a weeding hoe and a new axe. Children sold for from eight to ten pounds, and their masters were required to see that they were taught to read and write, and had, at least, one quarter's schooling. In New Jersey—according to "Leaming and Spicer"—no white servant, if sold or bound after seventeen years of age, could serve above four years. If under that age, they were to be free on reaching their majority. At the expiration of service their masters were obliged to supply them with two good suits of clothing, suitable for a servant, one good falling axe, one good hoe, and seven bushels of Indian corn. A servant was to be immediately freed in case of being so abused by master or mistress as to result in the loss of an eye or a tooth. The laws against aiding redemptioners to escape were very severe. A fine of five pounds was imposed for offering assistance in such cases, and the aider and abettor were obliged to make full satisfaction to master or mistress for all loss or damage sustained by the absence of, or search for, the runaway. Any one who concealed or entertained an absconding redemptioner, could be fined at the discretion of the court, and be made to pay ten shillings to the owner for each day that they had harbored the servant.

It was not uncommon for thrifty Germans, who were possessed of enough money to pay their passages and defray the first cost of settling, to allow themselves to be advantageously, and on favorable terms, sold. This was in order that during their servitude they might have an opportunity of learning the language and of growing familiar with the manners, customs and institutions of the country. Advertisements announcing redemptioners for sale are frequently to be found in newspapers of the last century. One in the "Pennsylvania Messenger" of the fourth of April, 1776, offers for sale :

A young girl and maid-servant, strong and healthy; no fault. She is not qualified for the service now demanded. Five years to serve.

The same paper, on the eighteenth of January, 1774, contains the following notice:

Germans—we are now offering fifty Germans just arrived—to be seen at the Golden Swan, kept by the widow Kreider. The lot includes schoolmasters, artisans, peasants, boys and girls of various ages, all to serve for payment of passage.

It seems rather odd that schoolmasters should be offered for sale in the market. You would think that they would have been eagerly sought for, but, on the contrary, they appear to have been a drug, as is shown by D. von Bülow in a book published in Berlin, in 1797. He says:

It is easy to sell the farmers, but there are often men whom it is not so easy to dispose of, *e. g.*, officers and scholars. I have seen a Russian captain offered for sale eight days, and not a bid made. He had absolutely no market value. It was of no use for his owner to put him up again and again, to offer to make fifty per cent. discount. "He is good for nothing," was all the answer to the offer. The captain of the ship then had him walked about the town to show, but in vain. After waiting several weeks, he was finally sold at a ridiculously low price as a village schoolmaster.

On this subject Doctor Hopp recites that Pastor Kunz of Philadelphia, related that in 1773 he was beginning to economize in order to get together twenty pounds, as he wanted to buy a German student for a teacher.

As late as September, 1786, the following advertisement appeared in the "Pittsburgh Gazette":

To be sold. (For ready money only.) A German woman servant. She has near three years to serve, and is well qualified for all household work: would recommend her to her own country people, particularly, as her present master has found great inconvenience from his not being acquainted with their manners, customs and language. For further particulars enquire at Mr. Ormsby's in Pittsburgh.

In looking back on the many peculiarities, changes and gradations of society in New Jersey's colonial days, it is curious to note how the well-to-do immigrants, who brought with them, or purchased after arrival, redemption servants, often lost the prestige of their affluence; being unable in the new country to maintain their rank and influence. Their humble servitors, however, inured by hardship and labor to the stern necessities of colonial existence, prospered and thrived. The bonds-people, after serving their time, acquired by diligence and saving lands and homes; it was not uncommon in the second generation to find them taking, in every way, precedence to the children of the master who had owned their time during their first years in

the country. The affluent immigrant, having been accustomed to ease, proved unequal to the struggle; and his children, through faulty and ignorant education, rapidly deteriorated.—Enough of redemptioners!

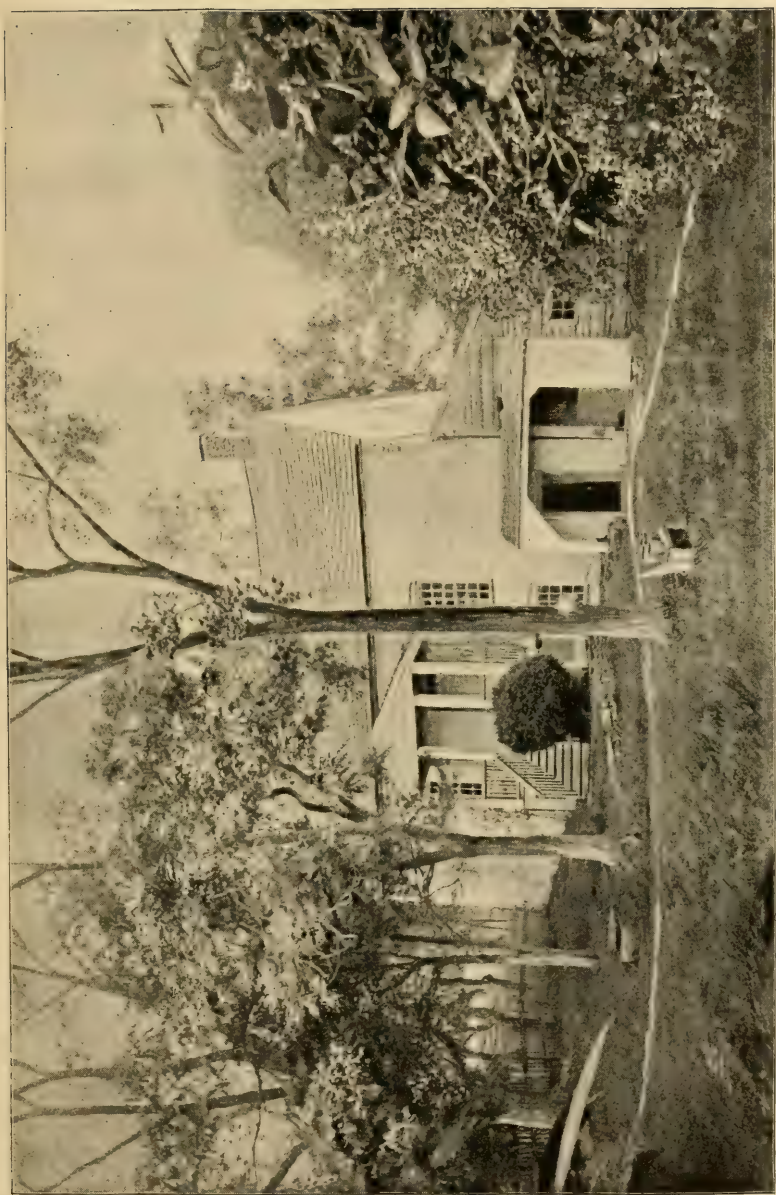
Among the many odd tales of early days at the “Old Stone House,” which have enlivened winter evenings around the great fire-place in the living room, is the legend that at its building, Johannes’ wife, Mariah Katrina, carried mortar, balanced on her head, to the masons at work on the walls. A very exalted position, you may ironically say, in which to place one’s great-great-grandmother; but these chapters are supposed to preserve traditions as well as facts, and the writer must put to one side any predilections he may have, as to the matter to be presented. Members of the family, whose pride may rebel against belief in this story, are at liberty to consider it fable; but the mortar, at least, must be accepted, for to this day it is as solid and imperious as the stones between which it lies. Builders of the present aver that its manufacture is a lost art, and that all of its component parts are not known. Visitors to this ancestral dwelling, who, after passing under the wide circumference of the old maple’s shade, climb the hill, until they stand in the presence of the structure’s kindly and venerable front, can attribute to this mortar the fact that it exists to-day. It has been the agent which has enabled these massive walls to withstand for nearly a century and a half of winters, the wear and tear of time; and it still binds their stones together in one compact mass of masonry, which, without doubt, will continue to bear up bravely against the assaults of many years to come. Great-great-grandmother Moelich figures, traditionally, again, at the building of the house. She is said to have vigorously protested against the introduction of so many windows—they are ridiculously few and small. The good woman had probably not forgotten the window-tax of the old country, and had in mind, perhaps, the possibility of such an impost being levied in New Jersey.

By early in the summer the house must have been completed. Very plain, both as to exterior and interior, with no fan-lighted door-heads, or ambitious columns, pilasters and carvings. Yet, as we view it to-day, its solid simplicity is truly architectural, for it bears on its every feature a dignified expression of truth—



of being only what it claims to be, an humble farmhouse of simple utilitarian proportions and fashion, the general effect of whose eaves, roof-tree, double Dutch doors, hall and chambers, but express the purposes of its construction. It is not altogether without picturesqueness. Bedded in the green of its surrounding elms, its wooden-seated porch, sloping roof and rough stone gables coated with lime and pebbles, present a homely picture of comfort and domesticity, in full accord with its setting of turfy hillsides and verdure-clad meadows. To one who appreciates in a structure the beauty of simplicity and appropriateness, the "Old Stone House" must ever be a delightful object. To those of us who claim kinship with its early builder, this ancestral home will always be a place of jealous regard; a spot where will linger reminiscences of former days, and traditions of by-gone generations; of men and women whose names have been associated with the sturdy walls and hospitable atmosphere of this brave old dwelling.

The huge German locks, with their exposed and complicated mechanism, were fastened to the doors; heavy pieces of furniture were placed in the rooms, one, at least, the stupendous Dutch cupboard, occupying to-day its original position; clean white sand from the brook was spread on the floors, and the great crane was hung in the deep-chested fire-place. Mariah Katrina, as priestess of the household, has put the first torch to the hickory boughs on the hearthstone; the crackling flames leap up the broad chimney, while wreaths of curling smoke soar heavenward, seemingly bearing in their pungent odors an incense of thanksgiving. The tea-kettle, suspended over the fire, sings its cheery note—the bubbling pot with savory breath joins in the chorus—the procession of generations of good-cheer has commenced. Let us conceive the table spread in the living-room, and the members of the family gathered about the board for their first meal in the "Stone House." While regaling themselves with creature-comforts from the good wife's newly-stocked larder, if ever faces could be said to reflect content, so must have theirs, as they congratulated each other on the comfort of their surroundings. And in the evening—believing, as we do, in the deep religious feeling that controlled all the thoughts and actions of the sire, we need not doubt the erection of a family



THE OLD STONE HOUSE





altar; nor, that at the close of this all-important day, with a heart overflowing with thankfulness, and a voice choked with emotion, Johannes' devout prayers of praise and dedication, borne on the wings of faith, ascended to the Most High; to that kind Providence who had guarded and guided him and his, through the vicissitudes of all the year since leaving Germany, bringing them at last in safety to the repose of a happy home on this peaceful Bedminster hillside.





## CHAPTER XII.

### *Johannes Goes to the Post Office — Bedminster and the Adjacent Townships in 1752.*

Just here it may be well to survey the appearance presented by Somerset county and East New Jersey at the time the Moelichs took possession of the "Old Farm." In no better way can we do this than by—in fancy—accompanying Johannes to Perth Amboy, thirty miles away. He is going to see if John Fox, the postmaster, has a letter for him from the old country; for be it known that in the year of grace, 1752, the province boasts of but three post offices—one at Amboy, one at Trenton, and one at Burlington. Letters were left at those places by the Philadelphia mail carrier, weekly in summer and once in two weeks during the winter; rather meagre facilities for the people, but they had to be contented until 1754, when the service was considerably increased. In December, 1733, the following notice appeared in the Philadelphia "Weekly Mercury": "There are a number of letters in the post office at Perth Amboy for persons living in Somerset, Monmouth and Essex counties."

To us of the present day, Johannes would have presented a striking appearance, as, mounted on a stout cōb, he clattered down the incline upon which he had built the new stone house, and turned west up the long hill. He is now over fifty years of age, with a figure not tall, but robust, having a high color, blue eyes, and, had the fashion of the day allowed, the whole would have been supplemented by an abundant reddish brown beard. His German origin is still readily recognized, though many of his foreign characteristics have been lost. He speaks English, but not with the facility of the mother tongue, and his dress is that of a well-to-do colonial yeoman. A coarse grey coat with

generous skirts cut square, buttons across his brawny chest, not hiding an ample leather waistcoat. His breeches, also of leather, meet at the knee stout blue yarn stockings, drawn over a pair of sturdy calves, which are further protected by deer-skin leg-gings extending over his buckled shoes. A short grey wig and a three-cornered hat complete his decently picturesque appearance, while his further belongings comprise a fresh cut whip of sapling, and a pair of saddle-bags suspended on either side of the horse.

As he climbs the hill and overlooks his broad acres, he turns in the saddle for a good-bye glance at the new house resting so cosily against its sunny bank. What wonder, that as he rides through the fresh dewy morning air his face glows with satisfaction! We can well imagine it because of his thoughts dwelling on the pleasant surroundings of his newly established home, and on the peaceful promise it seems to give for the future, as compared with the unhappy uncertainties of the German life he had known on the banks of the far distant Rhine. Johannes' first thirteen years in America have been preparatory, and to an extent, migratory; but now he feels about him the atmosphere of an abiding home. He recognizes and appreciates that he is no longer a pioneer, but a permanent member of a community, where each individual has an interest in the common wealth, and in the continued growth and improvement of the neighborhood. Here he expects to end his days—here be buried; and here he hopes his children will live, and their generations prosper.

The road Johannes traveled was but little more than a broad path cut through the woods; the trees pressed close on either side of the ruts and wheel tracks, often the bark of the flanking oaks and hickories showing the marks made by the hubs of passing vehicles. It must have been pleasant riding along for miles under the arching branches, the air surcharged with the balsam of the aromatic breath of thousands of acres of giant trees: monarchs of the forest that for centuries had towered over the hills and dales, enriching the ground with their yearly falling leaves, till the soil, rank with vitality, only needed the warm sun and man's command, to blossom into fields of abundance. Occasionally, on the roads emerging from its long green



arcade, our traveller came upon isolated dwellings, seated amid little clearings, from which, in many instances, the stumps had not yet disappeared. The smoke that gently curled heavenward from the chimneys of these dwellings perfumed the morning air with the odors of burning fresh-cut wood—such smoke as can only come from fires fed by glowing oaken back-logs and crackling hickory boughs, over which the good-wife has swung the great black kettle. These rude homes of new settlers were few, however; population had been very slow in penetrating this portion of Somerset. The country lay in a broad and almost unbroken extent of fertile waste, with but infrequent traces of human habitation discernible. As the grass covers a rolling meadow, mantling it in continuous green, so the forest buried the Bedminster and Bridgewater hills and valleys in vast undulations of leafy verdure. From the Morris county line on the north to the Raritan river at Bound Brook on the south; from Bernards on the east to Hunterdon on the west, the whole area was a broad expanse of woodland wilderness, the continuity of green being interrupted here and there by a few houses clustering as an embryo village, while an occasional interval, open to the sun, marked the germ of a future farm.

At Pluckamin the nucleus of a society was forming; and at Lamington—a corruption of the more majestic Indian name, *Allametunk*—the Presbyterians had erected a church edifice in 1740, though services had been held in a barn for several preceding years. Among the earlier members of the congregation were William Hoagland, Jacobus Van der Veer, Henry Sloane, Ephraim McDowell, John Craig, William Logan, Richard Porter, Peter Demun, Thomas Van Horn, Mathias Lane and Guisbert Sutphen. At this time the church building had just been enlarged, and the pastor of the congregation was the Reverend James McCrea, he having in 1740, accepted a call from the congregation known as that of “Lametunk, Lebanon, Peapack, Readington and Bethlehem.” He was the father of that Jennie McCrea, whose tragic death on the upper Hudson in the year 1777 by the tomahawks of Burgoyne’s treacherous Indian allies, was to send a thrill of horror throughout the entire country. Though much of Bedminster remained in a state of nature, beyond its borders, in adjacent townships, communities had been

planted and many acres of farming lands were cleared. On the north the settlement of Morristown by people from Newark and New England dated from early in the century, and its Presbyterian church had been established since 1738, the year of the organization of the county. Until about that time the neighborhood had been known as West Hanover, the first record of the new name, Morristown, being found in an order of the court of general sessions of the peace dated the twenty-fifth of March, 1740.

By the year 1713 squatters' cabins existed at Roxiticus, now Mendham—the original settlers being Byrams, Drakes, Cooks, Careys, Thompsons and others. Its first tavern, afterwards the famous "Black Horse," was kept by a Byram, and the oldest stone in the graveyard perpetuates the name of Stephen Cook, who died in 1749. Its Presbyterian congregation is first mentioned in 1738, in connection with New Brunswick. In this year, 1752, the congregation, under the pastorate of Eliab Byram, possessed a small frame church building which must have been erected previous to 1745, as in that year it, together with its site, was conveyed by deed of Edward Burnet. He may have been a good man, but he surely was an evil speller. He describes himself in the conveyance, "Edmon Burnnant of Rocksiticus in yere County of Summerset in east nu Jareses in Amaracah." The description of the premises conveyed begins, "Scairteen pees of parsel of land on which the meeting hows Now Standeth."

Basking Ridge, in Bernards township, already possessed a flourishing community with a well-established Presbyterian church under the charge of a Scotch worthy, the Reverend Samuel Kennedy. His education had been gained at Edinburgh University, and coming to America, he was in 1751 ordained pastor of this congregation, which he faithfully served for thirty-six years at a salary of one hundred and ten pounds. In addition to his ministerial duties he practiced medicine, and established and took charge of a classical school which attained to great celebrity. Authorities differ as to the time that Basking Ridge and Bernards township were first settled. By some it is claimed that a Scotch congregation and a log church were in existence in the year 1700. Doctor John C. Rankin, in his

published "Historical Discourse," very properly asserts that there could have been no church before there were inhabitants. He goes on to show that it was not until the year 1717 that John Harrison, acting as agent for the proprietors of East New Jersey, purchased Indian rights to about three thousand acres, embracing the site of the village, and much of the territory occupied by the present congregation. John Harrison will be remembered as one of the benefactors of St. Peter's church at Perth Amboy, his name appearing with those of George Willocks and Thomas Gordon on a tablet affixed to its walls. This tract, purchased from the natives, was subsequently sold to and divided between four purchasers, one of whom was James Alexander, the surveyor-general of New Jersey and the father of Lord Stirling. Alexander's portion embraced between six and eight hundred acres of land of great beauty and fertility. This was the property that his son William, in 1761, on his return from England, after his futile efforts to secure an earldom, improved until it blossomed into his great estate, with a fine mansion, rich gardens and a park stocked with deer.

The first actual settlers of Basking Ridge seem to have come about the time of Harrison's purchase. By 1720 the recorded names appear of James Pitney, Henry Rolfe, and John Ayres. The latter came from Woodbridge, New Jersey, though born at Newbury, Massachusetts, from which place he migrated, as a child, with his father, Obadiah. He died in 1732, and left seven sons, who all lived in the neighborhood, and became active members of the church and community. In 1731, John Ayres conveyed to James Pitney, Mordecai McKenne, George Pack, Samuel Rolfe, Daniel Morris, Thomas Riggs and Obadiah Ayres, trustees, one and one-half acres of land, in the centre of which, surrounded by a grove of trees, stood a log meeting-house. This primitive structure was superseded, in 1747, by a frame edifice that remained standing for ninety years. The oldest gravestone in the churchyard records the death of Henry Haines, on the ninth of June, 1736. There was at this time living in Bernards township one Abraham Southard, who in the previous year had migrated with eight children from Hempstead, Long Island. His coming had insured to Somerset, in the future a citizen who was to prove a great honor to the state. His son Henry, who was



born in 1747, lived at Basking Ridge until he died at the age of ninety-five, having had thirteen children. One of them, Samuel L. Southard, lived to have a national reputation as one of America's greatest statesmen. Henry Southard, the father, also served faithfully and well his state and country. For eight years he was a member of the legislature, and for twenty-one a representative in congress. Before he retired from that body he saw his distinguished son a United States senator, and met him at a meeting of the joint committees of the two houses. The father and son were chairmen of their respective committees—a circumstance, as it has been said, without parallel in the political history of our country.

We have already learned how New Germantown was thriving in the west, and toward the south in the direction of White House were comfortable homesteads and cultivated lands. But as Johannes rode toward the Raritan he traversed almost a wooded solitude. As yet there were no signs of the hamlet of the Lesser Cross Roads, the only houses in that vicinity being the one of logs of John Burd, near where "Demund's bridge" now spans the north branch of the Raritan, and a similar structure, occupied by William Hoagland, standing on George Leslie's land west of the line of the "Old Farm." The road from Bernardsville to Lamington had been marked out since 1741, but was a mere trail, and but little travelled. South of this road the forest continued with hardly a break to Pluckamin. In the territory lying between the two rivers—the Axtell tract—there was thus far but meagre settlement. Without much doubt a log house was standing where now lives Henry Ludlow (below Bedminster church). It is known that about the year 1760, Jacobus Van der Veer built the house now occupied by Mr. Ludlow. He had purchased the land of William Axtell—two hundred and sixty acres fronting on the north branch of the Raritan—some time between 1746 and 1752; the records do not show the exact date, but it must have been before the time of which we write, as he was a resident in 1751. In that year he was appointed a commissioner of the highways—an office that could not have been attended with very laborious duties. He was a great-grandson of Cornelius Jansse Van der Veer, who, emigrating from Alckmarr in the province of North Holland, a forti-

fied city of about ten thousand people, landed from the ship "Otter" in February, 1659, and settled at Flatbush, Long Island. This emigrant's son Dominicus migrated to some point in the Raritan valley, and one of his sons, Jacobus, who married Femmetje Stryker, was the father of the Bedminster Jacobus Van der Veer, and also of that Elias, who some years later improved the water-power north of Pluckamin, thus establishing what has ever since been a county landmark—Van der Veer's mills.

Some distance west of the Van der Veer land, still on the Axtell tract, was another clearing, in which stood a newly erected log house. It was the home of Ephraim McDowell, who on the first of May, 1750, purchased of William Axtell two hundred and thirty acres of land, a portion of which is still owned and occupied by his descendants. A few years later a frame dwelling with shingled sides succeeded the original log cabin; it stood for seventy-five years, one of its rooms being the birth place of three successive generations. Five generations have been welcomed to this ancestral home. Ephraim McDowell died, and was buried in Lamington churchyard, in 1762. The posterity of this sturdy Scotch-Irish Presbyterian have left indelible marks of their individuality and strength of character on the society of this and other states. None more so than his grandsons, John and William, who as the pastors of the Presbyterian churches of Morristown and Elizabeth were, we are told, the means of the conversion of three thousand souls.

At this time there was no bridge where the Pluckamin road crosses the north branch of the Raritan. The river was often too high to be forded, as in those early days when the country was invested as a garment with heavy timber, all of the streams flowed much greater volumes of water. At such times travellers southward were obliged to cross the river near Mine brook, or often as far north as Peapack brook, and thus make their way through Bernards township. On reaching Pluckamin Johannes found there about a dozen small houses and a tavern. This inn was the first place of entertainment established in the township; it was built in 1750 by Jacob Eoff, who was one of the pioneers of the village. He was a native of Holland, and early in the last century purchased five hundred acres of land of the heirs of

John Johnstone, which included the present site of Pluckamin. His tavern remained standing for sixty-four years, its location being the corner now occupied by the house of Joseph D. Nevius. During the Revolution it was the meeting place for the committee of safety, and when Washington's army was quartered in this and adjoining counties its boniface dispensed hospitality to many of the leading men of the country. After Jacob's death the tavern was kept by his maiden sister Sarah, who, in turn, was succeeded by Jacob's son Christian; he abandoned the old structure to his brother Cornelius, who occupied it as a residence. Christian built on the opposite corner—the present tavern site—a long, low building called the “Barracks.” Here he waxed famous as a popular host. With the best society of New York and Philadelphia, this landlord's name became synonymous with good living; and summer visitors to Schooley's mountain—a watering-place then in its glory—always arranged that the night necessarily spent on the journey should be passed at Christian Eoff's tavern. Aristocratic coaches with the family arms emblazoned on their panels, and drawn by four and six horses were not uncommon in those good old days in this quaint village of Pluckamin. In the foundation wall of the public house, destroyed within a few years by fire and which took the place of the “Barracks,” is a stone bearing the date 1750, which was taken from the walls of the original tavern built by Jacob Eoff.

Of the twelve houses standing at the time of our ancestor's riding through the village, four are believed to be still extant. The one recently known as the Parker house was occupied by John Boylan—afterwards Pluckamin's first store-keeper, who was called “Captain Bullion.” He was a contemporary of Jacob Eoff, whose daughter at the age of fifteen became his wife. Mrs. Boylan lived to the good old age of ninety-five, surviving her husband fifty years; Mrs. Sarah Parker, the late owner of the house, was her daughter. Another of the original dwellings still preserved to us is the one known as the Harmer house, and owned by John Fenner, Jr. In Johannes' day it was the residence of Matthew Lane, whose family settled about 1748 on the north branch of the Raritan, east of Van Vleits' mills. The old Losey dwelling, in which Jacob Losey kept the post office from 1830 to 1860, is also said to have been built as early as 1752.



A few years later settlers began to multiply in the vicinity of Pluckamin, but at this time the inhabitants of the neighborhood were not many. Colonel William McDaniels, as early as 1744, owned a large tract of land and a saw-mill, on the north branch of the Raritan, where are now Kline's mills. South of this property resided in the same year George and Jerry Reemer; the name of the former appears among the contributors to the fund for building St. Paul's church, in 1756. On the east side of the river, on part of the tract (Winder) that George Willocks sold to Daniel Axtell, lived George Teeple and his sons, John and Christopher. He emigrated from Germany as early as 1700, and his grandson William was living recently in Pluckamin at an advanced age. The records show George Teeple to have been living in the township in 1745, and his name and that of his son John also appear, in 1756, as subscribers to the building of St. Paul's Lutheran church. From a gravestone in the churchyard we learn that John married Margaret Castner on the tenth of January, 1756, and after living together for fifty-seven years they died within three hours of each other on the seventeenth of March, 1813, and were buried in the same grave. John Wortman, a native of Holland, in 1750 bought five hundred acres of land located west of Pluckamin on the road leading to Burnt mills, upon which he erected a long, one and a half storey, Dutch structure. The present Schoonmaker dwelling, recently remodelled, embraces a part of the original Wortman homestead, and is consequently one of the oldest houses in the township.

It is fair to presume that Johannes dismounted at Eoff's tavern to wish Jacob "*guten morgen*," and discuss with him the quality of some of his best Jamaica. It will be seen, as we proceed with the telling of our story, that the Moelichs, both father and son, were intimately associated with the early citizens of this vicinity. Among their old documents and miscellaneous papers in the hands of the writer are many on which appear the signatures of the Eoffs, Teeples, Wortmans, McDonalds, Van der Veers and other Pluckamin worthies. It is to be regretted that Johannes, in this and other visits to the village, did not ascertain and transmit to his posterity the origin of its name. It has long been a vexed question, and has served as a subject for many

arguments and communications. A popular belief among the villagers is that this strange cognomen was occasioned by the assiduously-acquisitive habits of an early innkeeper, who, in his eagerness to secure customers, would "Pluck-'em-in." This ancient tavern-porch tale is an antiquated joke, and, without doubt, dates back to the founding of the village. The same mythical tavern-keeper has been found at Mendham, (I'll-Mend-em), New Jersey, and in Tarrytown, New York. No one, however, has ever known his name, or in what year he flourished.

By many, "*Plaquemine*" has been considered the proper spelling of the word, there being such a town in France, and one in the French portion of the Louisiana low-lands. I have long been persuaded that the name, in its present form, is the result of the linguistic efforts of our Dutch, German and English forefathers to spell and pronounce an Indian word. It is repeatedly written *Blockhemen* in the old German archives of Zion church. In the year 1885, when Edward Eggleston was engaged in researches among the manuscripts of the British museum in London, I wrote him, asking if he would endeavor to discover some trace of the word Pluckamin. I had thought it possible the name might appear among the minor hamlets of Somersetshire, from which we have received the names of Bridgewater and Bedminster. His reply, under date of September sixteenth of that year, was as follows:

I have tried in vain in the best English gazeteers to find Pluckamin. I think it may be a corruption of *Puckamin*, which, I believe, though I cannot be sure, was a dialect form of the Algonquin, *Putchamin*, corrupted by our ancestors to persimmon, the fruit of that name. This seems like a wild conjecture, but I think it is the solution. At any rate, the name is Indian, I doubt not.

As the present county-seat did not come into existence until nearly half a century later, there was at this time no road leading from Pluckamin in the direction of Somerville. The county of Somerset was first erected and set off from Middlesex in 1688, but for twenty-five years after, it had no courts of its own, relying upon Middlesex for the administration of justice. The first court-house and jail was erected some time between the years 1714 and 1717, at Six Mile Run, the buildings standing about three hundred feet east of the present church in that village, where its foundation stones can still be discovered. This struc-

ture being destroyed by fire in 1737, the county-seat was removed to Hillsborough (Millstone), where a new court-house and jail were erected. This last building was destroyed by the British in 1779, the remains of its foundation being still in existence. In 1783 the county erected a temporary court-house and a log jail at Tunison's tavern, or Raritan. The former stood just east of the present court-house grounds, where in 1798 permanent county buildings were erected. This gave a great impetus to settlement in the neighborhood, which three years later assumed the name of Somerville. The road upon which our rider pursued his way followed a more easterly course, and ran along the edge of the mountains to Middlebrook, or Bound Brook. Below Pluckamin was a tract of four hundred and seventy acres belonging to William McDonald, who had recently built on the ravine of Chambers brook a mill that ground the grists of Bedminster people until after the Revolution. Upon crossing this tract the road plunged directly into the forest, and from there on was but little more than a bare wagon track.

Let us imagine Johannes traversing this shady way. As he puffs his pipe and rides musingly along, he gives rein to his steed, and abandons himself to agreeable reflection. While his mind dwells on the future grain fields, barns, mills and improvements in contemplation for the Bedminster hillside, he turns his horse on the soft green moss that carpets either side of the trail, and, as he slowly moves on between the stately trees, breathes with delight the cool sweet breath of grass and leaves and forest. Now he threads a little bridle path or cut-off, which leaving the highway runs under a mass of foliage, through which wild honeysuckles and blossoming grape-vines clamber from bush to tree, filling the air with their fragrance. On every side the shadowy dells and bosky bowers are vocal with the sweetest of nature's music, the chirping, twittering and singing of early summer birds. On the branches overhead saucy grey squirrels, with a whisk of their spasmodic tails, scurry up the tree trunks to safer altitudes, from where they peer down on the horseman below through a curtain of trembling leaves. Perhaps a bear, with its awkward cubs, shuffles across the trail before him, or a startled red deer bounds away through the glades of the



forest, disappearing in its sombre distances. There were other beasts and game at this time frequenting the quietudes of these Pluckamin hills, for we know that in 1730 a law was passed in the province offering a bounty of twenty shillings for full grown wolves, five shillings for whelps not able to prey, and fifteen shillings for panthers. Notwithstanding this inducement for the extirpation of wolves, they seem to have grown more numerous, as, in 1751, an act was passed increasing the bounty to sixty shillings, and to ten shillings for whelps.

And now the thicket and undergrowth recede ; the ground falls away, and the trail descending to the broad level of the Raritan loses itself in the "Great Raritan Road," which had been the thoroughfare of early colonial travel since the year 1700. It commenced at a point on the north bank of the river, opposite New Brunswick, and following the stream to its branches extended west to the Delaware. Here Johannes finds the already old village of Bound Brook (Middlebrook), its location then, as now, being one of much natural beauty. Seated on the grassy banks of the Raritan, it overlooks that stream just where with a graceful bend it sweeps to the south, and so makes its deepening way through a fertile valley to the sea.





### CHAPTER XIII.

#### *Bound Brook in the Olden Time — The Raritan Valley in 1752.*

Bound Brook has of late years grown familiar to the traveling public, owing to the name being used to designate one of the prominent railway routes to Philadelphia. Trains by this line, while taking their hurried flight across the state, pause for a few moments at the entrance door to this old village. Their passengers look from the car windows with curious eyes upon the ancient settlement sequestered amid its venerable trees; but few of them appreciate that their glances rest on a place that has been the theatre of colonial and Revolutionary scenes of much historic interest; and on a locality whose name dates away back to the year 1666.

To one fond of the beautiful in nature this valley of the Raritan abounds in rural loveliness. It is but its superficial charm. He who has an appetite for the quaint and old, and is eager to discover localities around which memories of the past cluster thickly, finds much along this river upon which to feed his antiquarian tastes. Its associations are among the oldest in New Jersey—none more so, save those of the Hudson and the Delaware. After the establishment of the capital of the province at Perth Amboy in 1682, the Scotch and English soon made their way northerly as far as the forks of the Raritan. Long before this time the Dutch had been quick to discover the agricultural promises of this favored region. These pioneers, toiling in the vanguard of settlement, while making their way through the thick gloom of the woods bordering the river were attracted by the intervals of broad meadow-spaces, horizoned by zones of forest and rich in abundant grasses. Under the

shadow of their bordering trees often stood Indian cabins, for the red men had used these savannas for raising corn, beans, and pumpkins. The Hollanders had good cause for rejoicing at finding in the dense woods lands destitute of trees and ready at once for the plow. The secretary of the New Netherlands, Cornelius Van Tienhoven, writes in 1650 that

The district inhabited by a nation called Raritangs is situated on a fresh water river that flows through the centre of a lowland which the Indians cultivated. This vacant territory lies between two high mountains, far distant the one from the other. This is the handsomest and pleasantest country that man can behold. It furnished the Indians with abundance of maize, beans, pumpkins, and other fruits. \* \* \* Through this valley pass large numbers of all sorts of tribes on their way north or east. This land is, therefore, not only adapted for raising grain and rearing all descriptions of cattle, but also very convenient for trade with the Indians.—DOC. HISTORY, N. Y.

It is generally believed that the name, Bound Brook, is derived from the fact that the boundaries of the present town are the brooks that empty into the Raritan; this is a natural mistake, the name having a much greater and more significant meaning. In the year 1666, after certain portions of the Elizabethtown patent had been set off to the Woodbridge, Piscataway and Newark settlers, it became necessary to define the limit of what was left of this grant; consequently it was declared to extend from the mouth of the Raritan on the west to the mouth of the Passaic on the east, and from the Rahway river on the south to the brook emptying into the Raritan on the north, which was from thenceforth known as Bound brook. This is the stream that is crossed by the Central Railroad just below the station, and in after years it gave its name to the hamlet that grew upon its banks. Bound Brook has the honor of being Somerset's oldest settlement, the land on which the village stands having been purchased, in the year 1681, by Governor Philip Carteret, and others, from two Raritan Indians named KONACKAMA and QUEROMAK. Doctor Messler considers this to be the first land purchased in this county. It was described as embracing territory lying within the boundaries of the Raritan river on the south; Bound brook, or *Sacunk*, (Indian for slow, sluggish stream), on the east; Middle brook, or *Rha-weigh-weiros* (Indian word meaning running from a deep hole), on the west; and of a certain stony hill and METAPES' wigwam at the mouth of



Cedar brook on the north. The whole area being known as *Raca-hova-wallaby*, or "A round plain by the deep crooked water."

Only two of these eight purchasers seem to have appeared in the county—Thomas Codrington and John Royce. The former had apportioned to him eight hundred and seventy-seven acres on the westerly side of the grant, fronting on Middle brook. Soon after 1683, he built upon it a large mansion, giving his homestead the name of *Racawackhana*, an Indian word meaning a meadow or flat by a rapid brook. This is the same property now owned and occupied by George La Monte. Codrington was a man of considerable influence; before removing to Bound Brook he had been sheriff of the city of New York, and after becoming a citizen of the province of New Jersey he was appointed a member of the governor's council, which position he seems to have been still holding in 1698. The name of John Royce is preserved in that of Roycefield, southwest of Somerville, where he owned twenty thousand acres of land.

That portion of this Indian grant, which is the immediate site of Bound Brook, became the property of Thomas Rudyard, one of the original twenty-four proprietors of East New Jersey and its first deputy-governor. It was his daughter who, while the widow of Samuel Winder, became the wife of George Willocks. About the year 1700 George Cussart, Samuel Thompson and Jacob De Groot purchased Rudyard's land, together with eight hundred and seventy-seven acres adjoining, belonging to John Royce. George Cussart built his residence where now stands the village hotel; and Thompson's house stood where the Central Railroad line crosses the highway, and was extant until the construction of the railway.

The most important Raritan resident in social and political consequence in the seventeenth century was Lord Neil Campbell. He lived in considerable state on a plantation of sixteen hundred and fifty acres situated near where the north and south branches of the Raritan join. He was a brother of the Duke of Argyle, and was connected with that nobleman's disastrous effort to aid the handsome "Pretender's" attempt to seize the crown of England. More fortunate than many of his co-conspirators, Lord Neil Campbell saved his head; and in October,

1685, he reached East New Jersey, bearing the commission of its proprietors as deputy-governor. A retinue of sixty-five servants, that had preceded him, awaited his arrival at his plantation. His two sons, John and Charles, were here before their father, they also being under the ban of the home government for political offenses. John, with his wife, three children and eleven servants it is thought lived on an estate of eighteen hundred and seventy acres that he owned on the west side of the south branch of the Raritan near Corle's mills. Archibald Campbell, a nephew of Lord Neil, and also a refugee, is said about this time to have lived in baronial style on Herbert's island, his residence being known as Kells' Hall. He had many house and field servants, and hanging in the belfry of the Bound Brook academy is an old bell with which, it is said, he used to call his slaves from their labors. Within fifty years descendants of the Campbells were living in this village; there are none now, though in the adjoining county they are said to be numerous.

The Scotch and English multiplied in this vicinity, and by the year 1700 they were in sufficient numbers to warrant forming the "Presbyterian Congregation of Bound Brook," which before long became one of the most flourishing and important religious organizations in the colony. We have no record of where the first services were held—probably in one of the log dwellings that were distributed along the willow-fringed banks of the river. It was not until 1725 that the congregation erected its first edifice, a low one-storey house which stood within the present church grounds, and was preserved until far in this century, the uses of its later years being that of a school-house. Itinerant preachers served the needs of the people until 1741, when the Reverend James McCrea was appointed by the Presbytery as a supply, which service he continued till 1749. A second and more pretentious building was completed about the year 1760, the funds having been obtained from the proceeds of a public lottery.

Affixed to the walls of the present church edifice is a tablet showing the first settled minister of the congregation to have been the Reverend Israel Read. He was called to the pastorate in 1750, "in which he was faithful to his Divine Master to the

death." In November, 1793, he was thrown from his carriage while riding near New Brunswick, receiving injuries of which three days later he died. Judging from the congregational records it would seem that members of the Field family have, from the founding of this religious society, been among its most active supporters and benefactors. A portion of the church grounds was conveyed by Benjamin and Jeremiah Field in the year 1749, and the large church Bible which bears a London imprint of 1772, has on its leaf, in the hand writing of the Reverend Mr. Read, the following: "Mr. Michael Field's Book 1784 he Presents to the Reverend Mr. Read being the Second Small Legacy made by him to the Church at Bound Brook. Pris-1-8-0." Michael Field died on the thirteenth of January, 1792; a copy of his will, in my possession, shows that he bequeathed one thousand pounds to the trustees of the congregation, the interest of which was to be applied "towards supporting the gospel in the Presbyterian Church at Bound Brook." He also left the sum of five hundred pounds for the support of a free school within the congregation. This was not the first one of the village. The Scotch Presbyterians held the school almost in equal estimation with the church; schoolmasters were brought from the old country and early established in the East Jersey settlements. In 1752, when Johannes visited Bound Brook, John Wacker taught the village children in a low one-storey building within the present church grounds. Doubtless the colonial lads found that pedagogue's name to be appropriate to his calling, for schoolmasters of the olden time considered that mental perceptions were precipitated by knuckles and palms being well ridged by hard rulers. One of the first teachers in the free academy established by the bequest of Michael Field was Isaac Toucey, who afterwards was secretary of war under Buchanan's administration.

When in 1752 our wayfarer rode down this ancient highway—the Great Raritan Road—through Bound Brook, he found a village of about twenty houses, all of one storey, guarded at either end by a spiritual and material sentinel, for at the extreme south stood the church, while equally far north was William Harris's tavern. This "public" continued in the same family until 1815, when Isaac Harris combined the duties of



being its landlord with those of the sheriff of the county. A portion of the original structure continues to represent the hospitalities of this neighborhood in the present Middlebrook hotel. It has been said that it was not until near the end of the century that Peter Van Norden erected the first two-storey house, and painted it a bright green. So much was this architectural extravagance condemned by the villagers, that it became known as "Van Norden's Folly." It was destroyed by fire in 1882, and until then was occupied by descendants in the fourth generation of its ambitious builder. Besides the tavern there is still another building standing in that vicinity, which was in existence at the time of Johannes' visit. It is the old Shepherd house on the heights back of the village, which was built before the year 1730.

Among the citizens of this ancient burgh in the year 1752, besides those already mentioned, was Peter Williamson, who lived in a house on the bank of the river, just south of where now is the railroad station, built in 1684 by John, son of Lord Neil Campbell; John de Groot, whose house, built by his father in 1700, stood just north of the main street,—his son Jacob, who lived to be ninety-four years of age, died in this dwelling, which was preserved until the year 1839 when it was destroyed by fire; John Anderson, the remains of whose house are still to be seen on the property of Isaac J. Fisher; William Moore, a hatter; John Castner, a shoemaker; and Tobias Van Norden, who built a store in 1849, upon the site of the one now or lately owned by John D. Voorhees. It was a long building of but one storey, with two dormer windows in its sloping gambrel roof. Van Norden continued as Bound Brook's storekeeper until after the Revolution, and we can imagine Johannes dismounting, either going or coming, in order to fill some little commissions from home, as at this time it was the nearest shop to the "Old Farm." A grandson of Van Norden says that for some twenty-five years previous to 1765 his grandfather was extensively engaged in baking ship bread, which he exported direct to the West Indies, carting it in wagons to New Brunswick where it was transferred to vessels.

Speaking of a lottery as a means of raising money for completing the Bound Brook church, brings to mind their prevalence in

colonial times. It was the financial fashion of the age, and considered quite as legitimate as is to-day the placing on the market of authorized railway securities. The following curious extract from the diary of the Reverend Samuel Seabury, father of Bishop Seabury, shows the peculiar views prevailing in the last century as to the propriety and morality of lotteries and gambling:

The ticket No. 5,886, in the Light-house and Public Lottery of New York, drew in my favor, by the blessing of Almighty God, 500 pounds sterling, of which I received 425 pounds, there being a deduction of fifteen per cent; for which I now record to my posterity my thanks to Almighty God, the giver of all good gifts.

These enterprises were under the patronage of the best people in the land. Among the autographic treasures of John F. McCoy, of Brooklyn, is the following:

1768. This Ticket (No. 176) shall entitle the Possessor to whatever Prize may happen to be drawn against its number in the Mountain Road Lottery.

(Signed)

Go. WASHINGTON.

Judging from the advertisements appearing in the middle of the last century in the New York papers, there was hardly a settlement in the province that had not on foot some plan for a lottery. The beneficiaries of those extraordinary monetary schemes were most varied in character, and they were often for the aid of private as well as public enterprises. One set up in New Brunswick was for the relief of an insolvent debtor. Peter Bodine advertised another having one hundred and ninety-five prizes, "many of them being lots in the heart of that growing place, Raritan Landing, which is a market for the most plentiful wheat country of its bigness in America." It would seem that speculative real estate bubbles were early afloat in the New Jersey air. The Landing must have stopped growing very suddenly, and one would need to search diligently now to find that number of lots in this then called market. Within a few years of that time the Presbyterian "meeting-houses" at Amwell and at Bound Brook, the English church at New Brunswick, St. John's church at Elizabethtown, and Trinity church at Newark, were all completed with the assistance afforded by lotteries. In Philadelphia, in 1749, one was established to raise fifteen hundred pounds for the benefit of Nassau, now the College of New Jer-

sey at Princeton ; and in May, 1754, a Pennsylvania newspaper advertised that tickets in a Connecticut lottery for the benefit of this same college, "will be had of Mr. Cowell, at Trenton." In 1773 that institution, in conjunction with the Presbyterian church at Princeton, secured by the same means fifty-six hundred and twenty-six pounds. Toward the end of the century lotteries had grown in bad repute and were generally prohibited ; but immediately after the Revolution the legislature of New Jersey granted the borough of Elizabethtown the privilege of holding one "to raise a sum of money for building a court-house and jail, and finishing the academy, which during the late war was burned by the enemy."

As Johannes left Bound Brook and rode southerly down the valley of the Raritan, the country quite lost that impress of solitude it had borne during the earlier stages of his journey. The heavy timber was now left behind, the trees grew more sparsely, for he had reached a region where settlers under the first proprietors earliest penetrated, and established their plantations. He was now in Middlesex county, and the township he traversed had for fifty years been occupied by the husbandman. Generous orchards and abundant fields had long before taken the place of tangled maizes and impenetrable thickets, and much of the bottom and bench lands had been wrested by the hand of cultivation from the grasp of primeval nature. No longer were the rude structures of logs that had housed the families of pioneers the sole architectural features of the landscape ; in many instances they had made way for the more pretentious farm-house, the homes of permanent, well-established residents ; and ample barns bore testimony to the fertility and productiveness of the surrounding acres. The board houses were of one storey, with long sloping roofs extending over a porch in front and descending nearly to the ground in the rear. Here the overhanging eaves sheltered the big Dutch oven, and a broad space where russet-gowned maids sang at their spinning wheels, and where busy house-wives did the family weaving at their clumsy looms. These frame houses were generally unpainted and rapidly grew venerably dark in color. Their interiors were divided into but few rooms ; one or two sufficed for the needs of the family, while the others harbored pumpkins, carrots and potatoes, with dried



apples and peaches hanging in festoons from the ceiling. The humble log hut, which had originally done residential duty, stood like a poor relation at a respectful distance, often degraded to the menial service of sheltering pigs and kine. Sometimes it was converted into a rude brew-house, for the Raritan settlers manufactured and drank great quantities of malt liquors.

Mention has been made before of the fact that Hollanders from Long Island had early learned of the fertility and desirability of land in the rich valley of the Raritan. By the year 1703, they were thoroughly established on both sides of the river. Judging from a report made by Governor Dongan, of New York, to the English Board of Trade in 1687, it would seem that even by that time the Dutch had emigrated from Long Island to New Jersey. English emigrants, in 1685, had divided into about six hundred-acre tracts nearly all the land between New Brunswick and Bound Brook, extending for two miles back from the south bank of the river; by the year 1717 the greater part of these lands was out of the hands of their original owners and occupied by the Dutch. Interspersed among the Hollanders that located on the north, or east, bank of the river, were many permanent English and Scotch settlers, as the names of Field, Boice, Smith, Ross, Low and others bear witness.

Primogeniture being now unknown in this country, instances are not frequent where land descends from father to son for successive generations. In addition to the usual necessity of dividing estates, too often the heir to homestead lands is quite wanting in that love and reverence for ancestral acres that distinguishes people of an older country. It is pleasant to be able to record and make honorable mention of so rare a preservation of a family property as that of Benjamin M., Benjamin B., John K., and John B. Field, who now own and occupy five hundred acres of land fronting on the river, a short distance below Bound Brook. Theirs is one of the few instances in New Jersey of persons being able, in walking over their lands, to feel the proud consciousness of overlooking a broad territory that has been theirs and their ancestors for nearly two hundred years. The New Jersey forefather was John Field, who, on the fourteenth of December, 1695, pur-

chased ten hundred and fifty-five acres of land, fronting the Raritan for two miles and a half, extending about three quarters of a mile inland and commencing about one mile below Bound Brook. He came from Long Island, where he was born in 1659, being the grandson of Robert Field, born in 1610, who it is supposed came to Rhode Island with Roger Williams. Robert with fifteen associates obtained in 1645 from Governor William Kieft, of New Netherland, a patent for a large area of land on Long Island, embodying the present location of Flushing. The New Jersey ancestor was fifth in descent—in the direct line—from the famous astronomer, John Field, born A. D. 1525, who introduced the Copernican system in England. While living in London in 1556 he published the first English astronomical tables on the basis of the new discoveries. In recognition of this service he received from the Crown a patent authorizing him to bear a crest on his family arms. His son Richard became chaplain to Queen Elizabeth, and was the author of several religious works. The Fields trace their descent from Hubertus de la Feld, who held lands in the county of Lancaster, England, in the third year of the reign of William the Conqueror. The name, in the old English, was written, "Feld;" and is merely the past participle of the verb to fell. Field-land is opposed to wood-land, and means land where the trees have been felled. When such land is spoken of by such old authors as Gower, Chaucer and others, it is always written "feld:" "In Woode, in Feld or Cittee, Shall no man steale in nowise."

John Field purchased his Raritan lands in 1695 from Benjamin Clarke, who inherited the property from his father—also named Benjamin. The senior Clarke, who died in 1689, arrived in Perth Amboy in 1683, securing headlands for himself, his son, and eight others. He is said to have built a house near the junction of Market and Water streets, where he established New Jersey's first stationery and book store. In a letter to Scotland in March, 1685, Charles Gordon writes: "Neither are we altogether destitute of Books and Clergy, for George Keith, who arrived three weeks since, with others—(they were all winter in Barbadoes)—have brought mathematics, and Benjamin Clarke a *Library of Books to sell*; so you may see New Perth begins to be founded upon Clergy." Clarke was a Quaker, and we may judge

him a stiff-necked one after reading the following extract from the old book of records of the Society of Friends :

At the monthly meeting held in Amboy the thirteenth of the fifth month, 1687, the friends appoynted to speak to Benjamin Clerk brought his answer, which was, that he would not come to meeting because Governor Lawry called him a divil (as he sayes) wherewith friends not being satisfied desires George Keith and John Barclay to speak to him again.

Many of these ancestral acres have been the homestead lands of Fields from that day to this. At the time Johannes rode through this domain the original estate was owned and occupied by the grandsons of John Field—as follows: Jeremiah, born in 1713, who lived on the farm lately owned by Stephen Voorhees, and whose stone dwelling is still extant; John, born in 1714, who lived on what was lately known as the Oliver farm, in a stone house still standing which has inscribed on the west wall the date 1743 and the initials J. F.; Michael, born in 1723, who lived on the mill property lately owned by Louis Clark; Benjamin, born in 1735, who lived on the farm now owned by Benjamin M. Field, in a frame house still standing, the newer portion of which is inscribed with the date 1761 and the initials B. F.; and Richard, born 1726, who lived on the farm lately owned by John D. Field. His house is still standing, its corner-stone being marked with the date 1710 and the initial F.; it is thought, however, that this stone was taken from the original house of the first purchaser, John Field, which stood a few hundred yards away, its foundations and cellars being still plainly visible.

You may wonder at so prolonged a narrative of the Fields and their property. It should have an interest to the descendants of Johannes from the fact that the two families are in this wise connected: Jeremiah Field, born in 1753, married Jane, daughter of Captain Jacob Ten Eyck of Revolutionary fame. He settled in Bedminster township, purchasing on the sixth of February, 1790, from Daniel Heath a farm of one hundred and three acres, fronting on the Lamington river. Here Richard J. Field was born in 1785, who on the twenty-second of December, 1808, married Mary Kline, born on the seventeenth of April, 1791, she being the granddaughter of Jacob Kline, and his



wife Veronica Gerdrutta, the eldest daughter of Johannes Moelich.

On reaching Raritan Landing, two miles above New Brunswick, Johannes found it, for those days, a place of considerable prominence; its marked growth of a few previous years having given rise to expectations of ultimate commercial greatness that the future was not to realize. Its prosperity was gained mainly from the fertile valley bordering the Raritan, and the rich fields of wheat and corn that were rapidly multiplying between that river and the Delaware. This, together with the fact that the Landing was on tide-water and at the head of sloop navigation, gave it an importance second only to that of New Brunswick, and by many it was thought to be a serious business rival to that city. In addition to its shipping interests this point had active manufacturing industries. The Raritan was here dammed, and mills were in successful operation, both for grinding the grain of the back country and for manufacturing flour and meal for shipment to New York and more eastern ports. Among the manuscript papers of the late Ralph Voorhees is the Franklin township tax list for the year 1735. This old paper testifies directly as to the early prosperity of this portion of Somerset, by showing that at that date there were already established in the township six grist mills: one at the Landing, owned by Coert Van Voorhees; another, a mile up the river, on the Rapelye brook; the third, owned and operated by John Folkers, on the brook emptying into the Raritan, east of the house now or lately occupied by Abram Sebring; there was also the Wyckoff mill at Six Mile Run; the Moere mill at Rocky Hill; and another on the Millstone river, owned by Benjamin Griggs who is supposed to have been the founder of Griggstown. This last mill in the year 1752 was owned and operated by Nicholas Veghten. At this time there was also a mill, which had been erected in 1747 by Hendrick Schenck, located on the west side of the Millstone river, since known as Blackwells; and in 1749 Abram Berean erected on the same river the Weston mill, lately known as Robeson's.

Much testimony could be produced going to show the populousness and growth of this part of New Jersey at that time as compared with other portions of the province. A correspondent of

ex-Governor Robert Hunter, in a letter to him in England, about the year 1730, writes that "New Brunswick had grown very rapidly for the reason that the country back of this town had improved quite fast. The farmers principally raised wheat, and the large mills in the vicinity rendered this an important flouring mart." Ralph Voorhees, in one of his sketches of the early settlers, tells us that the water-power at the Landing was destroyed about the time of the Revolution by the people along the upper Raritan, who were exasperated because it prevented shad from ascending the stream.

When Johannes reached the Landing he was much interested in viewing what was then considered, and properly so, a very grand mansion. It was surpassed by few, if any, residences in the province. Nearly fifty feet square, it elevated a dormer-windowed hipped roof above two stone storeys, presenting a strong contrast to the ordinary wooden buildings of the surrounding country. Embowered in a luxuriant growth of ivy, it is still to be seen on the hillside opposite the road leading to the covered bridge, being owned and occupied by George W. Metlar. This important dwelling was built by Cornelius Low, Jr., who was born on the thirty-first of March, 1700, and settled in East Jersey about 1730, through the influence of the Gouverneur family, he having married Johanna Gouverneur in 1729. He was a surveyor, and did much valuable work in the province in defining the boundaries of important estates. Schuyler's "Colonial New York" contains the record from Low's family Bible, which recites that he built his new house at "Raritan Landing, on the mountain," in 1741. The record repeatedly mentions the burial of members of his family in Jacob De Groot's vault. This tomb was probably in the Presbyterian churchyard at Bound Brook, as this was the same De Groot who in the year 1700, in company with Cussart and Thompson, purchased the site of that village from Deputy-Governor Rudyard. Cornelius Low, Jr., does not appear to have been of the Presbyterian persuasion, as we find on the minutes of the Dutch Reformed church, "*op de Millstone*," his name entered as a communicant. This congregation was organized in 1727, by the Reverend Henricus Coens of Acquackanonk (Passaic). In this year, 1752, a new edifice had

been erected on the site of the present Harlingen church. It was an antiquated Dutch structure, having lofty gables and a long steep roof. The interior was divided by one aisle, faced with short pews in which sat the men, while the body of the church was occupied by square pews filled with chairs for the use of the women and children. I do not find that the name of Low has been perpetuated in either Somerset or Middlesex. A descendant married the late Charles King, president of Columbia college, New York, and died in Paris a few years since; her only son, C. L. King, lives in Bellows Falls, Vermont, and a daughter is the wife of Mr. Waddington, the present French minister at the English court.

Johannes crossed the river on the riffle below the dam, and making his way down the opposite shore he was soon in New Brunswick, where he dismounted in front of a tavern on Water street, the city's main thoroughfare. After his long ride we can imagine him quite ready for what some one has called the hope of the hungry, the rest of the weary, the consolation of the miserable—dinner.







## CHAPTER XIV.

### *From an Indian Path to the King's Highway—New Brunswick and Historic Piscataway.*

The antiquated college town of New Brunswick, which the traveller Philadelphia-ward finds perched on the high rolling banks of the Raritan, is located on the most ancient highway in New Jersey ; a road that, before the foot of the first white man had trod the American continent, was centuries older than were its flanking oaks, chestnuts and hickories.

In those remote days — before the advent of Europeans — a faint path could be traced on nature's carpet of fallen leaves and twigs, running east and west through the thickets and undergrowth of the vast and sombre forest. It was the soft impress of the moccasined feet of the *Lenni-Lenape*, made while on their frequent way to the *Lenni-Wihittuck*, or Delaware river. This Indian path started at what is now Elizabethport and plunging into the solitudes of the wilderness extended almost in a direct line to a point on the Raritan opposite where Albany street, in New Brunswick, now terminates. Here the red-men at low water forded the river, or at higher tides paddled across in their birch canoes. Passing up the present line of Albany street, the foot-path traversed the hoary woods with but little deviation till it reached the Delaware, just above where now is the capital of the state. This was the Indian's thoroughfare—their main artery of travel. It was intersected by others, the most important being the one by which the Monseys and more northern tribes found their way to the sea. Commencing on the Delaware in what is now Sussex county, near where three states converge, this trail, known as the Minisink path, ran southeasterly to within five miles of where Carteret founded his capital, Elizabethtown. Turning to

the right, it stretched across the country to the Raritan, three miles above its mouth. Following the south bank of the river and the shore of the Lower bay, the footpath continued along where now is the village of Middletown, and so onward over the pleasant rises and gentle declivities of Monmouth, till it penetrated the hemlock heights of the Highlands, and descending on their ocean side reached the river which the red-man had named *Nauvessing*,\* “the place of good fishing.” Another Indian trail branched from the first one at the Raritan ford, and following the river bank extended north and west, by way of the site of Bound Brook, to the forks of the stream, where it divided. It was over this trail that settlers first made their way up into Bedminster.

Early in the seventeenth century other than Indian forms were to be seen passing along our ancient highway. Over this path, which had never been pressed by human feet save by those of the soft-stepping, stealthy savage, strode burly Dutchmen wearing hats of generous brim, broad belts and stout leather jerkins; the smoke from their pipes, fragrant with the odors of the best Virginia, mingling with the breath of the woods and exuberant herbage. The Hollanders had settled New Amsterdam; sailing in their high-pooed shallops through the *Kill von Koll*—the creek of the bay—they landed on the west shores of the *Achter Koll*—the back bay—and found this Indian trail a most convenient route to their settlement on the Delaware. Later on, when the English had captured New Amsterdam, they, too, discovered that the natives had marked out an excellent line for a road across the Jerseys—and a road it has been from that day to this.

A mutual good will soon existed between the Dutch and English and the dusky occupants of the little wigwam villages that were planted in cool and shady glens or by the side of sparkling

---

\* When the Dutch first landed on the shores of this part of Monmouth, they wrote down the Indian name for the place as it sounded to them, thus “*Nauvessing*.” The English converted the word into Nave-sink, from which Neversink is, perhaps, a natural result. The generally-accepted significance of the name—“the place of good fishing”—is not endorsed by all authorities. By some the original word is interpreted as meaning, “high lands between the waters,” while others claim its significance to be “pleasant fields,” referring to all the country lying between the Highlands and *Chingarora*, as the vicinity of Keyport was called.

rills. The white man had not long used this forest trail before signs of human thrift began to break in upon the wildness of nature. He travelled not only with matchlock and hanger, but with mattock and axe as well. The wild grape-vines and stunted bushes that encumbered the path were cleared away; the decaying tree-trunks, giants that had fallen from mere weight of years, no longer impeded the passer-by. Foot-logs crossed the little streams, and soon the glittering axe hewed out a clearing here and there on the side of the path, from which rose little log cabins, premonitory symptoms and prophecies of populous hamlets and villages soon to follow. In 1665, when Philip Carteret reached the place he called Elizabethtown, it was already a settlement of four log huts. Some of the immigrants who had accompanied him from England made their way along this trail, till reaching a convenient point their brawny arms forced back the forest on either side, and planted the germ of a town which later migrators from New England named Woodbridge. In the following year other pioneers, striding sturdily westward, felled the trees and let the warm sunlight in on a new settlement, soon baptized as Piscataway.

A few years later New Brunswick received its first inhabitant. Tradition gives his name as Daniel Cooper. Early in 1681 John Inians and some associate purchased ten thousand acres of land at *Ahanderhamock*, as this vicinity had been named by the Indians. In November of the same year Inians located for himself on the west bank of the river twelve hundred acres, embracing the present site of New Brunswick. By 1684 a number of Holland people had settled on his land, among whom were the ancestors of such old Jersey families as the Vrooms, Andersons, Probascos, Van Duyns and others. A charter for a ferry was granted in 1697 to John Inians for the term of his or his wife's life, at the yearly rental of five shillings. Soon quite a settlement grew up about Inian's ferry, and travellers by the old Indian path began to be frequent. It lost its early appellation and became known as the Dutch trail; indeed, for many years later it was little better than a trail through the woods, and was used only by pedestrians and horsemen. In 1716, nearly twenty years after the establishment of the ferry, the tariff named only "horse and man" and "single person." Within a few years this old Dutch



trail began to present some of the characteristics of a road, and we find imposed upon the innkeepers of Elizabethtown, Woodbridge and Piscataway a total annual tax of ten pounds for keeping the highway free from fallen timber. This impost, was laid for the preservation of the "lower road," which, following a branch Indian path, diverged from the main trail a few miles beyond the Raritan, its trend being southwesterly, by way of Cranbury, to Burlington. The necessity for this tax, as the act declares, was because of the unsettled condition of the country the road traversed, whereby it was in danger of falling into "decay to the great inconvenience of travelers who may pass and repass that way unless care be taken to maintain the same until such time as it may be maintained by those who inherit it."

The town grew apace, and before 1717 there were people enough to necessitate the building of a church. A frame structure fifty feet front, containing fifty pews, was erected under the superintendence of Elder Roelef Sebring and Deacons Hendrik Bries and Roelef Lucas. It faced the river on the corner of what is now Burnet and Schureman streets, and for more than fifty years housed the congregation of the First Dutch Reformed church of the town. This was not the earliest house of worship in this vicinity. One had been erected some years before, about one and one-half miles beyond the present New Brunswick city limits, and it is believed it was the first sanctuary built in the county of Somerset. Tradition characterizes it as a rude structure, never entirely completed; the settlement about Inian's ferry growing rapidly, the congregation preferred to transfer itself to a new church in "the town by the river" rather than complete the old one at a point where evidently population would not centre.

From this time the tide of settlers rose, and rolled steadily on toward and beyond the Raritan. In 1730 the population of New Brunswick was augmented by the arrival of a number of Dutch families from the upper Hudson, who planted themselves on either side of the road leading up from the ferry, giving it the name of Albany street. Before then it had been known as French street, deriving its appellation from Philip French, the person from whom these new-comers had acquired their lands. He was a large owner in Middlesex county, and was the son of

Philip French who had been mayor of the city of New York and speaker of the assembly of that province. In addition to their native thrift the migrators introduced into East Jersey the good old Holland names of Van Dyke, Van Alen, Van Veghten, Van Deursen, Schuyler, Ten Broek, and others. Not only the town by the river benefited by this influx of new-comers; the back country of Middlesex, which had been a county since 1682, lost its aspect of a solitude. The old Dutch trail was rapidly being transformed into the King's highway; clearings multiplied, and what had been clearings were now converted into arable fields and well-tilled farms. Immigrants from Germany landing in New York traversed this road, seeking that Mecca of all pilgrims from the Rhine, the province of Pennsylvania. Finding their route bordered by goodly lands, many of them abandoned their proposed goal, and turning aside made their homes among the Dutch and English settlers.

The country in the vicinity of this highway, when much of New Jersey was still a wilderness, had the appearance of being comparatively well cultivated and long occupied. James Alexander, the father of Lord Stirling, in a letter written in 1730, says that "In the year 1715 there were but four or five houses between Inian's ferry and the Delaware river, but that now—1730—the country is settled very thick; as they go chiefly on raising of wheat and the making of flour, and as New Brunswick is the nearest landing, it necessarily makes that the storehouse for all the produce that they send to market; which has drawn a considerable number of people to settle there, insomuch that a lot of ground in New Brunswick is grown to be near so great a price as so much ground in the heart of New York."

Prof. Kahn, the Swedish botanist and traveller, when journeying in 1748 from Philadelphia to New York, expressed the greatest surprise at finding so cultivated a region, and declared that in all his travels in America he saw no part of the open country so well peopled. At Trentown, which he reached by sloop, his landlord told him that twenty-two years before, when he first settled there, there were hardly any houses, but the increase since that time had been so great that there were now nearly one hundred. Along the road to the Raritan there were great distances of forests, but yet on much of the way he found

extensive fields of grain, and almost every farm had abundant orchards. He especially noticed the great Jersey barns, which in many instances he thought to be as big as small churches, so large, in fact, that, which to the foreigner seemed most extraordinary, they housed horses, cattle, grain, mows, and threshing floors. Their great double doors enabled farmers to drive loaded teams "in one side and out the other." The Professor attributed this generous farm architecture to the Germans and Dutch, whom he reports as occupying most of the country.

On the thirtieth day of December, 1730, two weeks before New York was incorporated as a city, King George II. bestowed on New Brunswick, under the great seal of the Crown, its first city charter.\* The inhabitants agreed in consideration of the privileges granted by this precious document to pay annually to the kingdom of Great Britain one sheaf of wheat. The opening language of this charter was as follows:

Whereas, our Loving Subjects Thomas flarmer, Jacob Okey, James Hude Dolin Hagerman, Lawrence Williamson, Duncan Hutchinson, Derrick Schuyler, William Okey, Paul Miller, William Williamson, Abraham Bennett, Cort Voorhees, James Nelson, John Balding, and many Others have petitioned for a city charter, it has been granted. Also for the reason that the said Towne of New Brunswick, standing near the head of a fine Navigable River, and being the Most Convenient place for shipping off the produce of a large and plentiful Country Lying on the back thereof is a place of very Considerable trade & Commerce.

The citizens of New Jersey in the olden-time had great confidence in the future prosperity of the province. In laying out their towns and cities they established corporate limits great enough for that extensive population, the coming of which they so surely anticipated. Thus Perth Amboy—already for twelve years a chartered city—included a thousand acres east of the Raritan, while on the opposite side of the river its northerly line, extended from the mouth of South river westerly nearly to Hightstown, and its southerly parallel line ran fully as far into Monmouth county from the mouth of Cheesequake creek. New Brunswick, equally ambitious, extended its southerly boundary

---

\* New York City was first chartered by Governor Dongan in 1676, but its fathers, fearing that this governor's corporation might not, under pressure, stand a legal test, asked of the King, and received on the fifteenth of January, 1730-1731, the royal charter by which the city was governed for a century.



to the Amboy line, while its northerly limits stretched west-  
erly almost to Princeton. And so the two great cities of Middle-  
sex adjoined each other. The following is a list of New  
Brunswick's officers for the first year :

Mayor, Thomas Farmar; Recorder, James Hude; Aldermen, Wm. Cox,  
Jacob Oakey, Dally Hagaman, William Cheasman, Josiah Davison and Lawrence  
Williamson, Esqrs.; Sheriff and Water-bailiff, Evan Drummond; Common Coun-  
cilmen or Assistants, John Thomson, Cort Voorhees, Minne Voorhees, Henry  
Longfield, William Williamson and John Van Dyck; Chamberlain or Treasurer,  
Alexander Moore; Coroner, Thomas Marshall; Marshall or Serjeant at Mace,  
John Dally; Overseers of the Poor, John Van Nuys and Daniel Fitch; Con-  
stables, John Stevens, David Lee and Michael Moore.

It would be pleasant to know what manner of men were all  
of these political pioneers—New Brunswick's first city-fathers.  
Of some of them a measure of information as to their personality  
gleams upon us through the mists of time. Professor Austin  
Scott, of Rutgers' college, in a paper entitled, "Beginnings of City  
Life in New Jersey," read before the "New Brunswick Historical  
Club" on the twenty-ninth of October, 1886, paid a high tribute  
to the character and attainments of Thomas Farmar, the city's first  
mayor. He is said to have lived on Staten Island and at Perth  
Amboy before removing to New Brunswick: as early as 1709  
John Harrison, who was with the provincial army on the north-  
ern frontier, addressed a letter to him at Amboy. In October,  
1711, he was appointed second judge of the provincial supreme  
court, and was its presiding judge from March, 1728, to Novem-  
ber, 1729. He ably represented his county in the assembly  
during the Morris administration, being a staunch supporter of  
that governor in his spirited fight against the aggressive tyranny  
of Lord Cornbury. Mr. Farmar had several children: one of  
of them—Christopher—assumed the name of Billop, inheriting  
with it from his wife's family a large estate on Staten Island, to  
which he removed. His residence—still standing—is a promi-  
nent land-mark at Billops'-point, at the extreme southerly end of  
the Island. This antiquated dwelling is well worthy of a visit,  
not only because of its quaint appearance and old-time charac-  
teristics, but from its having been the place where Franklin,  
Adams and Rutledge, conferred with Lord Howe in 1776 in the  
futile endeavor to establish some basis for an honorable peace.  
Two of the mayor's daughters married Peter Goelet, and his young-

est and most beautiful daughter, Sarah, became the wife of Doctor Alexander Ross, of New Brunswick, who was born in Ireland in 1723, and died in 1775, as his monument in Christ's churchyard attests. He it was who in the middle of the last century erected on the river bank, opposite and above the city, that substantial residence which is still known as Ross Hall—a most interesting specimen of colonial architecture. At the death of Doctor Ross, his student, Doctor Charles A. Howard, succeeded not only to his preceptor's practice but to his wife and house as well.

Recorder Hude was a Scotch Presbyterian and a prominent merchant of New Brunswick. His father, Adam Hude, came to America with John Johnstone on the ill-fated fever ship "Henry and Francis." He settled in Woodbridge township, building a house which was recently standing on the Rahway road one mile north of the village. His son, the recorder, the Honorable Colonel James Hude as he was termed, during a long and useful life, occupied almost every important office within the gift of the government and people. At his death in 1762 he was a member of the king's council and mayor of the corporation of New Brunswick. The "New York Mercury" of the eighth of November of that year, in noticing his death, "after a long and tedious indisposition," mentions him as "a gentleman who, for his great probity, justice, affability, moral and political virtues, was universally esteemed and beloved by those who knew him."

Derrick, or Dirck, Schuyler, one of the petitioners for the charter, was a Dutch migrator from the upper Hudson. He was born on the twenty-fifth of July, 1700, being the son of Abraham, and the grandson of David, the first notice of the latter being obtained from his marriage on the thirteenth of October, 1657, to Catalyna, daughter of Abraham Isaacse Verplanck. He is believed to have been a younger brother of the Philip Peterse who is known in Schuyler annals as "the immigrant." There was also living in New Brunswick at this time Abraham Schuyler, a four years younger brother of Derrick, whose wife was Katrina, daughter of Barent Staats.

Abraham Bennet, another of the petitioners, lived near the old Dutch church at Three Mile Run. He was the son of Adrian and Angenietje Bennet and the grandson of William Bennet

who emigrated from Holland to Gowanus on Long Island early in the seventeenth century. He, Aldermen Lawrence Williamson (*Laurens Williamse*), Dolis, or Dallius, Hagaman and Constable Michael Moore were in Middlesex county at the dawn of the eighteenth century; their names are to be found on a subscription list, dated 1703, by which £10,16s.,6d. was obtained from thirty subscribers to aid in procuring a minister from Holland. Bennet, his parents and wife Jannetie; Aldermen Williamson, Hagaman and Jacob Oakey (*Jacobus Oukee*); and Councilman Minne Voorhees; were all members in 1717 of the Dutch Reformed church of New Brunswick, as the minutes of the congregation for that year show. Minne Voorhees was a sort of a lay-domine, an *opsinderin*, or helper of the minister. He catechised the children and in the absence of the pastor conducted the church services, which he did exceptionally well, being blessed with an extraordinary memory that enabled him to repeat a lecture and all the exercises without the aid of notes. He was the son of Lucas Stephens, and grandson of Stephen Courten who settled at Flatlands, Long Island, in 1660, having reached America in April of that year from the province of Drenthe, Holland, in the ship *Bontekoe* (Spotted Cow.) The name Voorhees is derived from the Holland village of Hesse, where the family originated; and with the prefix Van means "from before Hesse." Minne Voorhees owned a mill and a large tract of land on Lawrence's brook just south of the city, and in 1723 is said to have been living on what is now, or was recently, known as the "college farm." Councilman Cort Voorhees, a descendant of the same immigrant-ancestor, was also a grinder of grists; his mill stood at the mouth of the Mile Run at the Landing, about opposite the residence of the late Lewis Carman. As is shown by the Franklin tax list of 1735 he owned one hundred and sixty acres of land and nine head of cattle, on which he paid a tax of £1,7s.,1d. Another Long Island migrator among the city fathers was Alderman Hagaman. He was the son of Denyse and Liurstia Hagaman, of Flatbush, and grandson of Adrian who emigrated from Holland in 1651. Lawrence Williamson, like many modern aldermen, seems to have been a publican of substance. Professor Scott has an original deed by which in 1742 Williamson conveyed to the city as a gift a lot



"near his old pot-house" on Burnet and Peace streets—now Commerce square. Like most of the Raritan Dutch, he came from Long Island; he returned there in 1711, in search of a wife, being married at Flatlands on the twenty-ninth of March of that year to Sarah Stoothoff.

Jacob Oakey, in his cognomen, is an excellent example of that peculiar fashion among the New Netherland Dutch of evolving a patronymic from a Christian name. Tracing genealogies from Holland descents is vexatious, because so few of the emigrant families possessed surnames; in very many instances the Christian name of the father served as a surname for children. Thus Peter's son Michael would be called Michael *Pietersen*, *Pieterse*, or *Pieters*, and should Michael have a son Jacob, he in his turn would be Jacob *Michaelsen*, *Michaelse*, or *Michaels*. It was not until the English immigration had become general that the Dutch felt the necessity of adopting surnames. These were variously chosen—from the Christian name of the father, from their occupations, their homes in the old country, or often some peculiar feature of the locality from which they had emigrated. Accordingly, in this manner were developed such names as Hendricks, Hendrickson, Anderson, Williams, Williamson and Johnson. The Van Winkles derived their names from *winkel*, "a shop," the Van Horns from *Hoorn*, a port on the Zuyder Zee; the Van Ripens and Van Rippers from *Ripen*, a diocese in North Jutland; the Rosendales from *Rosendaalen* ("valley of roses"), a town on the Belgian frontier; Van Dyck means "from the dike"; Van Zant, "from the sand" (coast); Van Boskerck, "from the church in the woods," and so on, *ad infinitum*.

*Jacobus Ouke*, as he spelled his name, was the son of *Jacobus Auckersz*, of Flatlands, and the grandson of *Auke Janse*, a Long Island carpenter who emigrated from Amsterdam in 1651. The records of New Amsterdam show that on the tenth of March, 1653, a suit was instituted before the burgomasters and schepens by Hendrick Egbertsen, to recover from Hendrick Gerritsen thirty-five guilders and sixteen stivers for building a house. The contestants were referred to carpenters *Auke Janse* and Christian Barentsen as arbitrators. Alderman Oakey's carpenter-ancestor waxed so important in the new country as to feel the

need of a surname, so he assumed the name of Van Nuys, which is the surname of most of his descendants. The posterity of our alderman, however, all became Oakeys; thus we find two distinct families of different names emanating from a common ancestor. This is not uncommon in Dutch genealogies; the Lane and Van Pelt families, of Somerset and Hudson counties, originated in *Matthys Jansz Van Pelt Lanen*, a Walloon, who emigrated from Liege in 1663, and settled at New Utrecht. So with the New Jersey families of Garretson and Van Waggenen; their ancestor was Gerritt Gerritsen, who reached New Amsterdam in 1660 from *Wageningen*, a Rhenish town in Gelderland; some of the second generation assumed his name as a surname (now Garretson and Garrison) others took the name of Van Waggenen. The two old New York families of Rutger and Van Wart derive their names from two brothers, Rutger and Teunis, sons of *Jacobus Van Schoenderwoert* who came to Beaverwyck in about the year 1640. The descendants of the former, on removing to New York, assumed the name of Rutgers, while those of the latter abbreviated their ancestor's surname, and have since been known as Van Wart. Many instances of divided ancestral streams are to be found among New Jersey's families of Dutch and Scandinavian extraction.

It is quite time that we return to Johannes; we may reasonably suppose that he has finished his dinner, and before again taking to the saddle is looking about New Brunswick, which he is visiting for the first time. He finds it rather an attractive little town, lying mostly under the hill, on the river bank. At that time it had but two prominent streets, and the houses were generally constructed of plank, though the Dutch of Albany street occupied two-storey brick dwellings, they having brought bricks and building materials with them when they migrated. These latter houses presented their peaked gables to the street, and were approached through little wooden-seated porches on which the stout burghers and their families would gather in the cool of the summer evenings. Kalm writes that the Dutch of the city were an exclusive set, keeping much within themselves and quite looking down on their poorer neighbors. We can accept this statement *cum grano salis*, as in more than one place in his book of travels we find the Swede especially severe on America's Holland citizens.

Besides the Dutch church on Burnet and Schureman streets, of which at that time the Reverend John Leydt was pastor, there were two other houses of worship. The Presbyterian church stood on Burnet street below Lyell's brook, it having been built during the ministry of the Reverend Gilbert Tennent, which continued from 1726 to 1740. At this time the pulpit was occupied by the Reverend Thomas Arthur. Christ church, of the Episcopal congregation, had been partially erected since 1743, though it was thirty years before the building of a steeple finally completed the structure. Its first permanent rector was the Reverend Mr. Wood, who was installed in 1747. New Brunswick, in addition to its milling and shipping interests, rejoiced in a copper mine that at this time gave promise of developing into an important industry. In the year 1748 virgin ore was ploughed up in a field belonging to Philip French, about three hundred yards back from the river, and just north of the houses of the town. Elias Boudinot having leased the land, a company was formed, and in 1751 a shaft was sunk sixty feet and a large body of ore found. For a number of years many tons of pure copper were annually shipped to England, and the stockholders anticipated much prosperity for their enterprise. But eventually, the ore vein being exhausted, New Brunswick awoke from its dream of becoming a great mining town, and settled back to the prosaic glories of its mills, and the much vaunted honor of being at the head of sloop navigation.

We have loitered long enough in this Middlesex city. So has Johannes. And now we find him mounting his waiting horse ready to proceed on his journey: on crossing by the ferry scow, his route lies in a southeasterly direction along the "King's highway;" a ride of less than two miles brings our traveller on the main street of the old village of Piscataway, flanked by lofty trees. Those of us who are familiar with the time-stained houses, old-fashioned gardens and aged churchyards of this early settlement know it to be now a far less important place than when in the heyday of youth, a half century and more before the date of Johannes' visit. In those good old colony times its men still loved the king, and met at Hull's tavern to drink his health in long draughts of fiery Madeira, or in modicums of more potent West India rum. His most gracious maj-



esty's governor, council, and burgesses have more than once met in this ancient burgh. On such occasions these roadways, which now seem sunk in the torpor of ages of sleep, were enlivened by very important gentlemen wearing gold-laced cocked hats and full-bottomed wigs, and arrayed in broad-skirted scarlet coats, satin short-clothes, silk hose and burnished knee and shoe buckles; who, while exchanging greetings and pinches of snuff, discussed the best interests of the colony. There were then social aspects and picturesque environments to the society of this old neighborhood that exist now but in musty traditions, and in occasional notes to be found in the town records—historical fragments of antiquity that, by chance, have floated to the shore from the swift current of the river of time.

It will be remembered that in a previous chapter an account was given of how John Martin, Charles Gilman, Hugh Dun, and Hopewell Hull, had removed to New Jersey from Piscataqua, New England, in response to the "Concessions and Agreements" published in the East by the lords-proprietors, Berkeley and Carteret. They received a grant on the eighteenth of December, 1666, for the large area of territory which now embraces the township of Piscataway. Within twenty years settlers from New England and the old country had augmented the nucleus of population formed by the Piscataway families to about four hundred. Among the persons to whom land was allotted previous to 1690 are to be found the following names: Nicholas Bonham, 122 acres; Benjamin Clarke, 275 acres; George Drake, 424 acres; Hugh Dun, 138 acres; Benajah Dunham, 103½ acres; Edmund Dunham, 100 acres; John Fitz-Randolph, 225 acres; Rehoboth Gannett, 224 acres; Charles Gilman, 340 acres; Hopewell Hull, 284 acres; Benjamin Hull, innkeeper, 498 acres; John Langstaff, 300 acres; John Martin, 334 acres; Jeffery Maning, 195 acres; John Mollison, 100 acres; Nicholas Mundaye, 101½ acres; Vincent Rongnion, 154½ acres; John Smalley, 118½ acres; Edward Slater, 464 acres.

The historian of East Jersey, the late W. A. Whitehead, avers that Benjamin Hull was an inn-keeper in Piscataway in 1677, and that the name and business have continued connected up to the present day. Be this as it may, it is an extraordinary fact, and one well worthy of record that, with hardly an excep-

tion, each one of those early landowners has at the present time descendants living in the township. Those of Vincent Rongnion seem to have been well contented with the location chosen by their Huguenot forefather; they have owned land in the vicinity of the village from that day to this, and at present persons of that name—since converted into Runyon—are in possession of over eight hundred acres, as follows: Mefford Runyon, 240; David D., 185; Peter A., 160; Noah D., 144; Isaac, 100. Vincent Rongnion was the ancestor of the Honorable Theodore Runyon, New Jersey's recent chancellor. He came from Poitiers, France, and must have settled in New Jersey before 1668, as his marriage license, signed by Governor Philip Carteret, is dated in that year. His wife was Anna, daughter of John Boucher, of Hartford, in England.

John Molleson, one of the original landowners, was considered a man of sufficient education to be town-clerk and recorder of the minutes of town meetings. He may have written a "clarkly hand," but oh! what spelling! Here is his first entry:

Piscataway 13 of Suptumber, 1711. At the town meting then choes William olding and James maning overseers for the puer and Isac Small and John Drak Seneor for the inshueing year asesers: which ofesses they agried execut grates. The Raiets is to be used by Discretion of the asesers.

JOHN MOLLESON, Clark.

At the forsaid meting it is agried that the biring place shall be fensed sufficient.

These town records offer some curious and interesting contributions to our knowledge of the beginning of things at Piscataway. From them we learn that Benjamin Hull, the first inn-keeper, figured in the two very different roles of judge and transgressor. Notwithstanding his occupation, in December, 1692, as foreman of the grand jury he indicted several persons for drunkenness and breach of Sabbath; while in June, 1694, he, himself, was "presented by y<sup>e</sup> grand jury for keeping and allowing gaming at Cards, and Bowle and pins at his house." Edward Slater, another old settler, seems early to have "come to grief;" we learn from the town records that he was imprisoned in 1681 for having "uttered very pnishouse and Squerillouse words Rendering the Government of the province, the Governor and Counsell Odyous in the Eyes and hearts of the people." Judging from the above entry odd rules as to the use

of capital letters must have prevailed. Why should eyes have been honored with a capital, while that more important organ, the heart, was forced to beat with a small letter? Slater did not, apparently, remain in durance very long, as in 1683 he was again apprehended on the suspicion of being an escaped criminal from England, and in the same year was presented by the grand jury in an indictment of nine counts, "as a common nuisance and offence."

Notwithstanding the tribulations of Edward Slater, by 1685 he seems to have been entirely restored to public favor. In that year he, with Hopewell Hull, John Fitz-Randolph, and others, was appointed one of a committee to superintend the building of a church edifice, the selectmen having on the eighteenth of January, 1685-6, passed the following resolution:

At the Towne Meetinge then agreed yt there should be a meetinge house built forthwith, the dimentions as followeth: Twenty foot wide, thirty foot Longe, and Ten foot between joyn ts.

The Piscataway fathers appear to have been lax in prosecuting the work of erecting their first public building, for five years later the town-book recites that Edward Slater, George Drake, and Isaac Smalley, were chosen "to discourse hopewell hull about the finishen of the towne house, and if hopewell hull refuse to finish it, that the above mentioned men have power to hire workmen to finish the saide house." This "meetinge-house" was for the Baptists, as that denomination seems to have established the first religious services in the township. The Duns, Drakes, Dunhams, Bonhams, Fitz-Randolphs and Smalleys, of the original settlers, were of that persuasion, and some Irish Baptists from Tipperary joined them in 1683. The first minister was John Drake, who, dying in 1739, was succeeded by Benjamin Stelle, of French extraction. Descendants of this last "divine" are numerous hereabouts, and the name of the first railway station east of New Brunswick—Stelton—was derived from this family. We can gain some idea of the character of this first "meeting-house" from a letter written by a missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts in 1711:

Piscataqua makes a much greater congregation (than Amboy), and there are some pious and well-disposed people among them; some come from good dis-



tances to this meeting, but there is nothing among us like the face of a Church of England: no surplice, no Bible, no Communion Table, an old broken house in sufficient to keep us from injuries of the weather, and where likewise the Anabaptists which swarm in this place do sometimes preach, and we cannot hinder the house belonging to the Town.

The first congregation of Seventh-Day Baptists in New Jersey had its origin in this township, in the following manner: In the year 1700, Edmund Dunham, a Baptist exhorter and the owner of one hundred and ten acres of the town lands, felt called upon to admonish Hezekiah Bonham for working on Sunday; whereupon Bonham defied him to prove divine authority for keeping holy the first day of the week. Dunham, after investigation, failed to do so to his own satisfaction, consequently he himself renounced the observance of the first day. In the year 1705 he formed a congregation of Seventh-Day Baptists, and was appointed its pastor. This was the second church of that denomination in America, the first having been established in 1665 at Newport, Rhode Island. The Piscataway Saturday worshippers sent their new minister to that colony for ordination, which he received on the eighth of September, 1705, at the hands of Elder William Gibson, who was holding a church meeting at Westerly.

Edmund Dunham apparently gathered within his fold most, if not all, of the Dunns and Dunhams in the township, as on the early church books appear the names of Edmund J., Jonathan, Ephraim, Benejah, John, Azerial, Mary, Dorothy, Phebe, Dinah and Jane Dunham; Hugh, Joseph. Hugh Jr., Micajah, Samuel Jr., Jonathan, Elizabeth, Hester, Rebecca and Esther Dunn. The ministrations of this first pastor continued until 1734, when he died at seventy-three years of age, being succeeded by his son Jonathan, who preached until his death from small-pox at the age of eighty-six years in 1777. During the lifetime of the father services were held in private houses. In 1736 a church was erected on the road leading to Quibbletown—now New Market—and two miles south of that village. This building remained a sanctuary until 1802 when it was converted into a barn, for which purpose it is still used, the timbers being as sound as when taken from the forest. The second church building occupied the same site, but it gave way in 1835 to the congregation's present structure which is located in the

village of New Market. This church, in an existence of nearly two hundred years, has had but eleven ministers, and at present is in a flourishing condition.

The first services, according to the rites of the church of England, were held in Piscataway in 1704, Queen Anne granting a charter to the wardens and congregation as "St. James' Episcopal Church." Services were irregular until 1724, when a church edifice was completed. The pioneer clergyman of this parish was a hard-working missionary named Brook, who rode a circuit of fifty miles preaching at Elizabethtown, Perth Amboy, Cheesequakes, Freehold, Rocky Hill and Piscataway. He entered the province in 1702 under the auspices of the "London Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts," at a yearly salary of sixty pounds. "Besides preaching," as Humphries, the society's historian, says, "he used to catechise and expound fourteen times a month, which obliged him to be on horseback every day, which was expensive as well as toilsome. However, this diligence raised a very zealous spirit in many of the people." Mr. Brooks died while returning to England in 1707. His widow, who was the sister of Christopher Billop of Staten Island, seems to have been well content with the lot of a helpmate to a colonial pastor, as she afterward married the Reverend William Skinner.

For several years after Mr. Brooks' death St. James received the occasional services of the Reverends Messrs. Vaughan and Halliday. Upon the completion of the church in 1724 Mr. Skinner became pastor, in which office, in connection with his home duties at Perth Amboy, he continued for thirty years, officiating on every third Sunday, on which occasions, it is said, he was appreciated by large assemblages. St. James' first church building sheltered the devotions of the parish for one hundred and ten years, when it was destroyed by the great tornado of 1835. The present structure was built and presented to the congregation by Joseph Foulke, of New York. It stands in one of the most ancient and interesting graveyards in the state. Two centuries of winds have sighed requiems through the waving branches of the venerable trees that brood over the seclusion of this little "God's acre." For we learn from the town records that, as far back as the year 1690 ten shillings were set apart for "minding the burrial

place, and to set it up with good white oacke or chestnut stakes, and bound with good withes."

My readers, I can fancy, are crying out—"Enough of Piscataway! You are making too long a story of this township!" Permit me to offer the very personal excuse that it was the home of my ancestors. The Dunns and Dunhams are all in the writer's maternal ancestral line, of whom at least five generations lie buried under the sods of the churchyard of the ancient parish of Saint James. Well! your warning is heeded; at last this interesting settlement is left behind, and our cavalier rides on over the high levels of Middlesex. Soon another old village is in his path, the little hamlet of Bonhamtown, the point where Nicholas Bonham located his one hundred and twenty acres. This place would have remained unknown to fame beyond the circle of its immediate vicinity, had it not found itself—twenty-five years later—in the track of contending armies; its name thus becoming historically embalmed in the reports of commanders of the opposing forces. The trend of our "solitary horseman" is now more easterly, and facing the salt water, he canters over a pleasant country of low hills, gently subsiding into shallow valleys, diversified with woods and patches of cultivated lands, ornamented with homesteads. It was yet early in the afternoon when he came in sight of Perth Amboy—its unrivalled location presenting, then as now, a charming shore panorama of grove-crowned knolls, meadows of waving grass, bay, rivers and varied beaches.







## CHAPTER XV.

### *Perth Amboy as a Provincial Capital—The Appearance the City Presented in 1752.*

To one possessed of antiquarian tastes there is a singular pleasure in looking back through the long vista of years and picturing in the mind the appearance that a familiar place must have presented in those remote, and seemingly almost poetic days, known as colonial times. A professor of comparative anatomy is enabled by securing a few fossil remains to reconstruct a species of animal long since extinct. So the delver in days of yore, by the proper placing of his few historical facts, illumined by a well controlled imagination, and a fancy verging perhaps on the romantic and picturesque, essays to again bring to life a past social condition, and create appearances and fashions long out of date.

Thus would we fain endeavor to rehabilitate in its antique dress this city of Perth Amboy that has dozed for two centuries amid its groves of sycamores and oaks, to bring out by description certain aspects that will delineate society and types illustrative of pre-Revolutionary days in this portion of New Jersey. When in the full tide of its lusty youth this town had virile ambitions and aspired to be the metropolis of a new world. But those days, now long past, are almost forgotten, and for many decades—until the comparatively recent advent of new railways—this borough quietly slept on its pleasant banks by the wide-spreading waters, apparently well content to sit apart from the cares and vanities of its more successful rivals in trade and population. By drawing on Mr. Whitehead's chronicles of East Jersey, and by filling up the outlines of the little knowledge we

may have of the place and people in those olden times, we shall hope to present to the reader a fairly life-like picture. An endeavor will be made to unfold such a scene as met Johannes' eyes, when in this spring of 1752 he rode over the high rolling lands bordering the Raritan and entered ancient Amboy—for it is ancient, having enjoyed the proud distinction of a city charter, and all the honors of a mayor and corporation, since the twenty-fourth of August, 1718.

The dignity and importance of the borough at that time were by no means confined to the fact of its possessing municipal rights. From its natal day it had been the seat of government, and since the proprietors surrendered to Queen Anne their rights as rulers, royal governors had frequently made it their place of residence. The first chief magistrate under the Crown was Lord Cornbury, who also ruled New York, as did several succeeding governors. He was a cousin of the queen; there his nobility ended, for in personal habits and character he was of a low order. He persecuted Presbyterians and other dissenters, and violated the agreement entered into between the English and Dutch at the time of the capture of New Netherlands, whereby the latter were guaranteed religious liberty. Lewis Morris, in a severe letter to the secretary of state, charged him with all manner of malfeasance in his high office, and closed his communication in the following words: "He dresses publicly in women's clothes every day, and puts a stop to all public business while he is pleasing himself with that peculiar but detestable magot." On attaining to the earldom of Clarendon in 1708, this noble Englishman fairly fled from the colonies to avoid paying his creditors, many of whom were poor tradesmen.

Lord Lovelace, his successor, arrived out in December of the same year, but his government had but well commenced when he died on the sixth of May, 1709. Then came Robert Hunter, of whom we have spoken at length in a previous chapter. This popular governor resigned in 1720 in favor of William Burnet, the son of the famous bishop, and god-son of the king of England,—William of Orange having stood as his sponsor and given him his name. He ruled till 1727, when he was removed to Massachusetts, and was succeeded by John Montgomerie. Both Governors Hunter and Burnet passed much time in their comfort-

able Amboy homes on the banks of the Raritan, and added greatly to the importance and pleasure of the society of East Jersey. The latter governor is described as having been a man of gay and condescending disposition, the delight of men of sense and learning, and the admired friend of the ladies to whom he was much devoted. He visited every family of reputation in the province, and letters to his predecessor, Hunter, say that their writers do not know how the fathers and husbands may like the new ruler but they were sure the wives and daughters did so sufficiently. John Montgomerie was a well known courtier who had been a colonel in the household troops and groom of the bedchamber of the Prince of Wales, afterwards George II. There has been preserved some account of the personal effects and equipage of this royal governor; we are thus enabled to gain an inkling of the state in which a colonial magnate lived. His many articles of furniture included an eight-day clock valued at forty dollars in our money, and a "fine yellow camlet bed" estimated at seventy-five dollars. There was silver-ware in profusion, and the wines and liquors were set down at twenty-five hundred dollars. A barge with its acoutrements, one hundred and twenty-five dollars; books, one thousand dollars; and eight slaves, one of them a negro musician being valued at over one thousand dollars. In his stables were one saddle horse, eight coach horses, two common horses, two breeding mares, two colts, and a natural pacing mare; a coach and a four-wheeled chaise; a fine suit of embroidered horse furniture, a servant's saddle, and two sets of coach harness, brass mounted; a postillion's coat and cape, together with saddles, holsters and housings.

Montgomerie continued in office till his death in 1731, when the government was undertaken by William Cosby, who died in 1736. For the third time within five years death entered the gubernatorial mansion, smiting, this time, John Anderson, two weeks after he had commenced ruling as president of the council. For the next two years the government devolved upon senior councillor John Hamilton, who was an old resident of Perth Amboy, and the son of Andrew Hamilton, governor under the proprietors. He was relieved from the duties and honors of the office in 1738 by the arrival of a commission appointing Lewis



Morris as the first governor of the province separate from that of New York. He lived near Trenton, and was the son of that Captain Richard Morris, who in 1670 settled Morrisania on the Harlem river. His father died in 1672, leaving him a babe not yet a year old, of whom Mathias Nicholl, secretary of New York, wrote of as a "poor blossom of whom yet there may be great hope." The secretary's prophecy proved true; this "poor blossom" grew to be a man of great force of character, with virtues and attainments which elevated him to important trusts and positions; the influence he exerted among the people of the provinces of New York and New Jersey equalled that of any man of his time. Lewis Morris in 1691, when but nineteen years old, married a "*Graham of the Isles*" of the family of the Earl of Montrose, and the daughter of James Graham, Attorney-General of New York.

Morris died in 1746, and President Hamilton again came to the front, but, dying almost immediately, was succeeded by the next eldest councillor, John Reading, who continued in office one year. The name of this chief magistrate has been perpetuated in that of the township of Readington in Hunterdon, he having owned large tracts of land in that county. He lived in Amwell, now Raritan, township, about two miles north of Flemington, near where is now Stover's mills; a portion of his plantation is at present owned and occupied by Philip Brown. Doctor Mott, Hunterdon's historian, tell us that he was a true Jerseyman, being identified with the interests of his province and county from boyhood. He lies buried in Amwell churchyard on that ancient thoroughfare, the York road. Acting-Governor Reading's family has further associations with New Jersey nomenclature from the fact that his daughter married John Hackett, an Irishman of ability and prominence, who gave his name to Hackettstown in Warren county.

The governor in office at the time of the visit of Johannes to Amboy was Jonathan Belcher. On the eighth of August, 1747, while the early morning mists still lightly hung over the broad expanse of the Lower bay, all the people of the town had assembled on its banks to welcome that dignitary, who disembarked from a barge of the man-of-war Scarborough, on which he had crossed the Atlantic. He was escorted to the town hall amid the accla-

mations of the multitude, where he presented his commission—a portentous document of parchment of three sheets about two feet square, plentifully besprinkled with Latin, and weighted by a heavy pendent disk of stiff brown wax, bearing the royal arms of England. In a gracious reply to the loyal addresses of the council and citizens, he congratulated the people on the beautiful location and thriving appearance of their town. Notwithstanding his fair words, the governor, after making the customary tour of the province, established his home in Elizabethtown, where he died in 1757. Senior-councillor John Reading again exercised the office *ad interim*. In the following year Amboy had restored to her the glories of being the home of the king's representative. The new governor, Francis Bernard, landed on the fourteenth of June from H. M. S. *Terrible*, and established himself in the old Johnstone house on the bluff between the Long ferry and Sandy point. He soon became a favorite with the people, and it was to their great regret that he received orders from the home government to retire from the province and assume command of that of Massachusetts, where, unfortunately, he did not attain to an equal popularity. His successor, Thomas Boone, reached Amboy by land on the third of June, 1760, escorted to the Middlesex line by Captain Terrill's troop of horse from Elizabethtown, where he was met by Captain Parker's troop of Woodbridge. The "New York Mercury" of this month has a long account of the fêtes, entertainments, and illuminations, incidental to his first visit to the different prominent towns of New Jersey.

The British ministers evidently believed in the rotation in office of their representatives. Before the close of the following year Governor Boone was appointed to the chief magistracy of South Carolina. The "New York Gazette" of the twenty-second of October, 1761, announces the arrival of "H. M. S. *Alcide*, 64 Guns," having aboard Josiah Hardy, New Jersey's new governor. The same paper, in its issue of the fifth of November, gives an account of his landing at Elizabethtown-point, where he was received by prominent citizens and the military. Captains Terrill and Parker's troops escorted him to Amboy, where they were met by the public dignitaries and Captain Johnstone's militia. He relinquished the government in

February, 1763, the authorities "expressing their estimation of the just regard he had displayed for the interests of New Jersey." We now reach the last colonial governor, William, the son of Benjamin Franklin, who, without solicitation on the part of his father and when only thirty years of age, received the appointment. He reached Amboy on the twenty-fifth of February, 1763,—an intensely cold day—escorted by the Middlesex troop of horse and numbers of the gentry in sleighs. The "New York Gazette" chronicles that he took possession of the government in the usual form, the ceremonies being conducted "with as much decency and good decorum as the severity of the season could possibly admit of." The young governor is said to have hired one of the best houses in the town at an annual rental of sixty pounds—equalling one hundred and forty-four dollars. His salary was twelve hundred pounds—proclamation—or about three thousand dollars. In 1774, he took possession of the mansion erected by the proprietors, of late well known as the Brighton house, and recently converted into a home for Presbyterian clergymen. The history of Franklin's administration is but a narration of the events preceding and the breaking out of the Revolution. In good time we shall have more to say of this royal governor. Meanwhile, we must return to Johannes, whom we left entering the city.

Some portions of Perth Amboy are to this day peculiarly attractive because of the splendid growth of large trees. In early times the place is represented as having been most beautiful in this respect. The proprietors, in their published description, asserted that "Amboy Point is a sweet, wholesome and delightful place;" and it was further described as being "covered with grass growing luxuriantly, the forest trees, as distributed in groups, diversifying the landscape with light and shade, and all nature wearing the fresh aspect of a new creation." These characteristics at the time of our visitor's arrival had not disappeared. Great trees that cast a vast area of shade were still a distinguishing feature of the ancient capital, and its most popular pleasure-ground was a fine bit of locust timber on the banks of the Raritan, just west of High street. It rejoiced in the suggestively tender appellation of "Love grove." Under its cool shadows the towns-people gathered on summer afternoons



to enjoy the ocean breezes that came freighted with the balsamic odors of forest-clad Monmouth. Here in the long twilights colonial youths and maidens met to enjoy the agreeable prospect and each other's society; and, in this sylvan retreat many a youthful troth was plighted to the pleasant musical accompaniments of the river's murmuring waves.

Another favorite resort of the citizens was the elevation overlooking the Raritan near Sandy point, devoted to the fairs and races. All ancient chronicles of the colony revert to this old English custom of "Fair days." The proprietors as early as 1683 instructed their representatives that "it is not to be forgotten that, as soon as can be, weekly Markets, and Faires at fitt seasons, be appointed at Perth Towne." Three years later semi-annual fairs were authorized by the assembly, to continue three days in May and October. This custom prevailed till the time of the Revolution. These were days of great revelry and mirth. Horse racing and all manner of games were permitted—any description of goods and merchandise could be sold without license, and on this breezy pleasure-ground at such times were to be seen all the peddling, hawking, thimble-rigging, cudgel-playing, bustle and prevailing confusion that characterized such festivals in the old country. It was a time of general license, and, under the law, no one could be arrested during the continuance of the fair except for offences against the Crown and for crimes committed on fair day.

To the east of "Love grove", at the foot of High street, was the "Long ferry" that George Willocks had devised to trustees for the benefit of St. Peter's church. The franchise and trust still continue, though it is nearly one hundred years since the last team was ferried over in the "*scauw*" to the Philadelphia road on the farther shore. Here, too, was the famous Long ferry tavern, a quaint structure of stone, with an odd sloping roof, dormer windows and high Dutch stoop. Built in 1684, it has but recently disappeared, and was considered the oldest house in Amboy. In early times it not only offered rest and refreshment for waiting passengers, but served as a rallying point for the gossip-loving citizens. In warm weather it must have been an inviting inn in which to take one's ease; in the winter we can well imagine that "mine host" Carnes—a giant

in stature—kept thrust in the open fire, a logger head, (a red hot poker,) ready on the arrival of guests to be plunged into cups of flip—a mixture of rum, pumpkin beer and brown sugar. It was a favorite hot drink in the colonies and it is said was far from being an unpleasant cold weather tippie.

When our traveller rode into the rural city its plan was much the same as that of to-day. Smith street, then as now, was the centre of the retail trade, though occupied also by dwellings. At least one of its stanch stone houses, then standing, has endured the encroachments of time, though it has been removed from its original site on the west side of the street to a lot on Broad street. It was the home of the Farmar family, who settled in Amboy early in the last century. While at the time of which we write the location of the streets was much as now, the aspect they presented differed materially from the appearance of the thoroughfares of the prosaic Amboy of to-day. From a tall pole in the centre of the town-green, which interrupts High and Market streets, floated the royal cross of St. George; while in one corner of the square stood what would now happily be unfamiliar objects, the stocks, pillory and whipping post—dread menaces to the evil-doers of that rude and turbulent period.

Why is it that the founders of the towns and villages of this country so rarely established public greens? Those sunny opens that are such pleasant features of English boroughs and hamlets, and which must of necessity strengthen the local attachments of a neighborhood. The play-ground of childhood—the rendezvous of youth—the verdant mead on which maturity and age assemble. There is something in the beauty and appropriateness of such a common bit of ground, in which all have equal rights, that reaches much beyond the gratification of the eye. It suggests a community of interests, where man is bound to man by affections that have been engendered by this little bit of sward—a sentiment that seems quite opposed to the selfishness that necessarily attaches to individual holdings. The instinctive fondness for such a spot by its joint owners must grow into an enlarged feeling, and expand into that expression of patriotism which can only be known by men when united in numbers and interests. It is a nursery of virtue and unselfishness. With rare judgment the successors and descendants of the

early proprietors have preserved their town-green—this attractive relic of a by-gone age and of the wisdom of their predecessors. For over two hundred years it may be said to have been the theatre of all the events connected with the life of this community, and to learn all that has transpired upon its emerald floor would be to turn over every page of Amboy's history. For two hundred years it has defied the demon of improvement—may it so do for all time.

The county court-house and jail, occupying one building, our traveller found a prominent feature of this public square. It stood on the northeast corner of High street, and from 1718, to 1765 when it was destroyed by fire, it continued to be the focus of all the important events of the colony, and much of its pomp, parade and ceremony. Here not only the courts were held, but the be-wigged and be-ruffled members of the general assembly sat in solemn conclave, and enacted those severe laws that were then considered necessary to preserve the peace of the province and the honor of the king. Permit me to quote one deemed meet for the times by those ancient legislators :

That all women of whatever age, rank, profession, or degree, whether virgins, maids, or widows, who shall after this act impose upon, seduce, and betray into matrimony any of his Majesty's subjects by virtue of scents, cosmetics, washes, paints, artificial teeth, false hair, or high-heeled shoes, shall incur the penalty of the law now in force against witchcraft and like misdemeanors.

To this Jersey "*Hotel de Ville*," and the one that succeeded it, came with successive processions and cavalcades all the representatives of the English ministry from the days of the virtuous Queen Anne to those of the third Hanoverian king; each telling the same story of the love borne by the Crown for its faithful American subjects. Such stories were always received with loud shouts of fealty from the loyal throats of the populace massed on the square. The time arrived, however, when different messages came from the monarch beyond the sea, and public tranquillity was disturbed by the growls and threats of the British lion. Even then, though the spirit of liberty hovered around the ancient capital, and the Jersey people in general were electric with patriotic impulse and endeavor, many of Amboy's citizens refused to abandon their allegiance. A large element of its population, especially among the richer class, were



dominated in their sympathies by the many years' influence of royal power. At the close of the war but a very small proportion of those who had formed the colonial aristocracy remained residents of Amboy.

The structure that in 1767 took the place of the court-house can be seen now, though no longer a public building. Its precise façade, lofty roof and antiquated belfry testify of by-gone days. Let us hope that no vandal hand shall be permitted to destroy this temple of the past. May present and future generations guard this venerable structure that, honored by time, has been the silent witness of many scenes connected with that great struggle for justice and humanity, which terminated in 1783 so happily for the American people.

On the southwest corner of Market street and the square, in 1752, lived Thomas Bartow, who it will be remembered, as secretary of the province, recorded the deed that George Leslie gave to Johannes. The house stood in the midst of an attractive garden filled with the choicest fruit of that time, and Dunlap, the art historian, who while still a very small boy was Bartow's friend and daily companion, describes his person, dwelling and garden as being equally neat. He mentions him as being, some years later, a small, thin old man with straight gray hair, pale face, plain dark-colored clothes and stockings to suit. His well polished square-toed shoes were ornamented with little silver buckles, and his white cambric stock, neatly plaited, was fastened behind with a silver clasp.

It is interesting to picture in one's mind the houses of this provincial capital, and the worthies who occupied them when Johannes for the first time rode over its highways. On High street, in the rear of where is now the Merrit mansion, was "Edinburgh Castle," the home of Andrew Johnstone, a son of that Doctor John Johnstone who had been joint owner of the Peapack patent with George Willocks. He was an important man in the colony, holding during his life various offices, and dying in 1762 as treasurer of the eastern division of the province, and one of his majesty's council. His obituary notice in the "New York Mercury" of the fifth of July, 1762, reads that he was "A gentlemen of so fair and worthy a character, that truly to attempt to draw it would be throwing away words."

The homestead of his father, Doctor Johnstone, was on the banks of the Raritan, and later, in Governor Boone's time, was converted into the gubernatorial residence; it was a spacious brick dwelling with extensive gardens and a fine orchard. A near-by residence on the river-side was that of John Watson, the first painter mentioned in American annals of art. He came from Scotland in 1715, and made Amboy his home until his death at the age eighty-three, in the year 1768. Mr. Dunlap, in his "History of the Art of Design," gives an extended notice of this early limner. He writes:

After the painter's first visit to America he returned to Europe, and brought thence to his adopted country many pictures which, with those of his own composition, formed no inconsiderable collection in point of numbers, but of their value we are ignorant. It is, however, a fact that the first painter and the first collection of paintings of which we have any knowledge were planted at Perth Amboy.

Mr. Whitehead, in speaking of this artist's dwelling, says:

There were two houses, standing near each other, both belonging to Mr. Watson, one of them being appropriated to these paintings, which it is said covered the walls; but before the Revolution this house had decayed and been demolished. The other, occupied by the painter himself, and which disappeared during the struggle, was of wood, having its window shutters covered with heads of heroes, and of kings 'with awe-inspiring crowns'—owing their existence to the taste and talents of the painter.

His portrait represents him as being a man of full face and prominent features, wearing a huge curled wig which hung to his shoulders.

The houses of the colonial gentry were generally sprinkled along the bluff, where the most favored locations were early sought and secured. In most instances they were simple in construction and unambitious in character, but here and there was one of architectural merit, showing on the part of its builder an appreciation of a design where outline and surroundings should bear some relation to each other. A pleasing example of this latter class has been preserved in a substantial stone homestead, which can be seen resting on the sloping bank of the sound, east of Water, and near Market, street. Its low eaves, solid simplicity and old-fashioned presence speak of a previous century, but its happy expressions of rural dignity do not seem at all out of place in this age of flimsy construction, and grotesque strivings after the extraordinary in domestic architec-

ture. It is believed to have been the dwelling of Samuel Nevill, before whom, as judge of the supreme court, George Leslie acknowledged his signature to the deed for the "Old Farm." It was in this year—1752—that Judge Nevill published, under the auspices of the colonial assembly, the first volume of his edition of the laws of the province, and it is believed the book was written in this house.

Not far off on the same street is a residential monument to family cohesiveness, the well-known Parker homestead. Seven generations of this family have lived within the hoary walls of this colonial mansion. One must be callous, indeed, to the charm of early associations who fails to appreciate the peculiar satisfaction which comes to those who feel that their home atmosphere has been consecrated by the lives and experiences of a continuous line of ancestry for so many years; an ancestry whose influence has been transmitted through successive generations, bearing to their posterity the testimony of virtuous, useful and honorable lives. The more modern frame portion of this building was erected just previous to the Revolution, but the stone structure standing in the rear dates away back to the year 1720. At the time of Johannes' visit it was inhabited by James Parker, his wife being the only daughter of the Reverend William Skinner of St. Peter's church. Mr. Whitehead describes him as a man of tall stature and large frame, possessing a mind of more than ordinary strength and vigor. He was a member of the king's council, and filled many local offices of the community, including that of mayor, which in those picturesque days was a position of much more honor and importance than it is in this practical age.

The old parsonage, that had been devised by George Willocks to the congregation of St. Peter's, occupied a portion of the block bounded by Market, Water and Gully (Gordon) streets. Its first storey was of stone, with a wooden two-storey superstructure, and a roof converging to a square centre. The latter was probably its most attractive feature, as usually the quaint roofs of colonial houses, with their simple but effective outlines, added much to the agreeableness and dignity of their proportions. The date of the erection of this house is unknown, but it must have been some time previous to 1729, the year of



Willocks' death. It was taken down in 1844, but long before had lost its upper storey. But if I keep on speaking of the more important buildings of this provincial metropolis, you will think that in 1752 it was a place of fine residences. Not so ! these dwellings of the quality-folk were Amboy's architectural exceptions—not typical examples. Its houses, of which at that time there were about one hundred and fifty, were, as a rule, poor enough ; a visitor of a few years later, while recognizing the beauty of the location, writes, that “notwithstanding being the capital of the province, Perth Amboy has only the appearance of a mean village.”

So with our traveller ; as he made his way through the streets, he found many of their flanking buildings slovenly in appearance, showing them to have been hastily put together. Their rough-hewn flat-boarded frames lacked the dignity of the log dwellings seen in the clearings during the morning journey ; these latter, with their feet buried in herbage, seemed less incongruous, and more in harmony with surrounding nature. Many of these Amboy houses were unpainted and already showed signs of the rustiness of age, but, bleached and patched by sun and shower, their crazy, weather-stained sides were less crude and staring than were the variegated colors of some of the newer houses, whose fronting gables and thick board shutters were painted white, while their remaining sides were covered with dingy red. Architectural taste was, of course, entirely wanting, and in most instances a single storey sufficed for the needs of the occupants.

Of churches there were two. In a previous chapter we have referred at length to the ancient altars and interesting memories of St. Peter's, whose spire rises near where the broad river rushes into the bay. Amboy's second denomination, owing to its large Scotch and English immigration, was, naturally, Presbyterian. Of the erection of its first church-building no record has been preserved, though the minutes of the Board of Proprietors show that in 1731 permission was given the congregation to “build a meeting-house on the southeast corner of the Burial-Place on Back (State) street.” “Before the Revolution this church had disappeared ; in the present edifice, that fronts the square, services were first held in 1803. The Reverend John Cross

of Basking Ridge is said to have first supplied the Presbyterian pulpit, and among that denomination's historical flotsam rescued from the ocean of time is the fact that in 1735 Gilbert Tennent preached at Amboy on the comforting and encouraging topic of the "Necessity of Religious Violence to Durable Happiness."

A text of severe sentiment, you will say!—but at this time the spiritual shepherds were wont to feed their flocks with food abounding in strength rather than sweetness. The angel of mercy hovered aloft, while the avenging one stood in the dwelling, at the road side, in the pew, ever ready under the tutelage of the pastors to wield the flaming sword of justice. The stern Calvinistic tenet that election and perdition were predestined by the divine plan irrespective of human merit was taught and believed, and the believing lacerated many a tender heart.

The religious atmosphere of the middle of the last century was dark with the heavy clouds of doctrine and theology. Polemical controversy was rife in the churches. Foreordination, predestination, election, and eternal damnation went hand in hand with free agency; the effort to reconcile these conflicting and apparently opposing dogmas, provoked labored sermons from the pulpit, and prolonged arguments and discussions in farm-house, field and shop. Ministers waxed severely eloquent in their terrible warnings to the unregenerate; while with equally solemn earnestness from such texts as "I could wish myself accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen," they preached to the pious and devoted ones of their congregations, "the doctrine of disinterested benevolence;" a doctrine that proclaimed the necessity of entire self-abnegation, and a willingness to accept for one's self eternal condemnation, if such could redound to the greatest good of the greatest number, and God's ends be better accomplished.

The interpreters of the Scriptures held before their people as tests of abiding faith the necessity of eliminating from their religion every element of selfishness, in order that they might have minds and affections so disposed as to be able to accept with complacency the possibility that it might be God's sovereign pleasure to damn them eternally. Such views of life and the future-state evolved a gloomy piety. Agonies of doubt beset the most faithful, when intent on severe internal examination in the

endeavor to discover evidences that they were not under the ban of God's wrath. Such earnest souls, after lives of the most conscientious well-doing, often died still uncertain of the attainment of eternal happiness. Jonathan Edwards, who died in Princeton in 1758, was capable in his sermons of producing so great pain to the quick sensibilities of his hearers that during his discourses the house would be filled with weeping and wailing auditors ; on one occasion another minister present is said to have cried out in his agony, "Oh ! Mr. Edwards ! is God not a God of mercy ?" This celebrated preacher succeeded the elder Burr, who died in September, 1757, in the presidency of Princeton college, but he did not take his seat until in February of the following year. Mr. Edwards held the position scarcely a month, dying while undergoing inoculation for the smallpox. He has been called the turning point in the spiritual existence of the congregations of the last century. It is asserted that New England and New Jersey in the age following him, under the guidance of such disciples as his son, Dwight, Bellamy, Hopkins, Brainerd and Tennent, gave more thought to religious philosophy and systematic theology than the same amount of population in any other part of the world.







## CHAPTER XVI.

### *Social Aspects of Perth Amboy in 1752—The Gentry—Slavery—Travelling.*

There was much of interest to Johannes in this provincial capital besides the churches, and the public and private buildings. The bustle, animation, and variety of its thoroughfares presented an appearance quite foreign to their present aspect; for there was a picturesqueness in colonial times that must have added much to the light and shade and general effect of ordinary scenes. In those early days population occupied only the fringe or border of the great wastes and solitudes; we have seen that New Jersey's cultivated lands were largely confined to a narrow strip extending from the Hudson to the Delaware. Belts of wilderness stretched across New York and into New England; indeed, the whole country east of the Mississippi was covered with vast forests, with but occasional signs of civilization and cultivation along the borders of the sea, and in the valleys of the larger rivers. At the centres of population—one of which Amboy at that time fairly could claim to be—the people, congregating as they did from many quarters of the globe, formed to each other strong contrasts, and the local color of civilization must to the chance visitor have made an interesting picture.

The Indians were still in goodly numbers about New Jersey towns, and they appeared much more like the children of the forest of our imagination than do those now to be seen on the reservations of the far west, whose distinguishing badge of semi-civilization is often a government blanket, and a battered silk hat adorned with bedraggled feathers. These old-time red-men were much less imbued with or affected by the habits of Europeans. They came into the towns with skins, and also sup-

plied the people with baskets and wooden dishes and spoons. The redemptioners—men, women and children who for a time owed personal servitude to individual masters—must have heightened the general effect; and the trappers and hunters, fresh from the woods, with their rifles, powder horns, moccasins, and linsey shirts fringed with deer skin, contributed their bit of color and form to the kaleidoscopic appearance of the streets. Among the expatriated Irish, Dutch, Germans and English inhabiting the vicinity, there must have been many curious and picturesque specimens of the *genus homo*. Necessarily many of these later were worthless characters, and the pillory, stocks and whipping post on the public square doubtless had a marked influence in preserving the peace and proprieties of this rough age. Opposed to this latter type was the less conspicuous but more useful element of society, the sturdy yeomanry—the stout-hearted middle class; men who themselves, or whose fathers before them, often had left the old country for political and religious motives rather than a mere desire for adventure and trade. “God sifted a whole nation,” said stern, old Governor Stoughton of New England, “that he might send choice grain over in this wilderness.”

Those of my readers whose ancestral trees root in Rhenish soil, will be pleased to know that the published account of travels in America in the last century all corroborate each others’ assertions in speaking of the Teuton portion of this latter class—the bone and sinew of the provinces. They bear universal testimony that population in the middle colonies was powerfully promoted by its German element; a people who in their own country had been disciplined in habits of industry, sobriety, frugality, and patience, and were consequently peculiarly fitted for the many laborious occupations of a new land. Among the yeomen, husbandmen, and mechanics they were regarded as the most economical as well as the most industrious of the population, and the least attached to the use of rum and malt liquor. They were slow in contracting debts and were always endeavoring to augment their means of subsistence.

But it was the gentry, richly dressed in all the magnificence of the times, that presented in customs, manners, and apparel, the strongest contrast to the other actors on this stage of “*auld*

*lang syne.*" In colonial times there were in the provinces society distinctions now unknown. Both in town and country the gentry were as distinctive from the people at large as were the upper classes in England. Extensive land-owners, persons with important connections abroad, members of the king's council and the house of burgesses, and those near the government, were held in high consideration and ranked as the great men of their respective counties. Their personal dignity was sustained by their dress, manners, modes of life, and the civil and military offices distributed among them. Amboy, being at this time the capital, was eminently aristocratic, and presented social aspects and phases that would now be considered both brilliant and picturesque.

New England is peculiarly rich in descriptive colonial literature; perhaps it would be difficult to add to its fund of information on this subject. Our poverty in this regard offers a field full of local color for the historian of old New Jersey society. Early church and county records, the archives of the historical societies and of the Board of Proprietors of East New Jersey, and the family manuscripts distributed throughout the state, are mines from which many rich historic social nuggets could be unearthed by the patient delver; and a most interesting work compiled. In the absence of such a volume, that we may learn something more of the Amboy of the middle of the last century, let us summon a member of his majesty's council from his bed of mould in St. Peter's churchyard. Perhaps he may be able to tell us of social events and observances in old colony days.

Here he comes! making his stately old-fashioned way along Smith street. He cuts a strange figure, in this work-a-day world of ours, with his broad-skirted scarlet coat—white silk waistcoat embroidered with flowers—black satin breeches, and paste knee and shoe buckles. As he tickles his nose with snuff from a gold box, his be-wigged head shakes despondingly under its odd three-cornered covering. He looks disappointed—he *is* disappointed! When this king's councillor stepped out of his grave into the busy nineteenth century, with its wonderful achievements in science and progress, he expected to find Perth Amboy a great city. To him and his fellows of the olden time it had seemed designed by nature for an important commercial metrop-



olis. Hopes had been entertained that, owing to its nearness to the sea and its unrivalled harbor, commerce would centre here, and that for all time New Jersey's capital would be of great political and commercial consequence. Alas, vain hopes!—he finds it a city but in name.

The councillor in all his magnificence seems oddly out of place among the ugly, modern, brick shops of this business street. We will seat him in a high-backed chair in a broad hallway of one of the old houses of his own time—now he appears in a more appropriate setting. You need not offer him a glass of whiskey! he is not acquainted with the beverage. Rum punch? yes! he will take that;—I doubt not but that he and his co-councillors have swallowed many a jorum of such toddy while wrestling with knotty questions affecting the good of the province. Now that our colonial friend has washed the dust of nearly a century and a half from his ancient throat, let us hear what he has to say. Evidently, when in the pristine glory of existence, he was a gallant man for his first topic is the ladies; how they appeared—like birds of paradise, if he is to be believed; with stuffed satin petticoats, taffetas and brocades, tall hats, lofty coiffures, long feathers, powder and patches. Their gowns were buoyed out one or two feet on either side of the hips, but not in front or behind, consequently—as he tells us with a chuckle—a lady of fashion when in full dress, in order to gain admittance to her own door, was forced to present her flanks first, and thus sidle in like a crab.

Our “resurrected one” describes the flutter in Amboy society caused by the arrival of the first theatre company to the colonies and its presenting plays in the town-hall on the public green; he says that the ladies in order to secure seats were obliged to send their black servants early in the afternoon to occupy them until the time of the performance. This theatrical company was under the management of the Hallams, who first opened with it in America in 1752. Dunlap, who was born in Amboy, asserts that he has heard old ladies speak in raptures of the beauty and grace of Mrs. Douglas—the leading lady of the company—and the pathos of her personation of the character of Jane Shore. Our New Jersey ancestors took more kindly to the stage than did their brethren of Massachusetts. The assembly of that

province in 1750 prohibited theatrical representations because—as the bill recited—“they tend greatly to increase immorality, impiety, and a contempt of religion.” This action of the legislature was occasioned by a tragedy having been acted at the British Coffee-house in Boston by two English officers, assisted by some young men of the town.

A graphic portrayal is given by the councillor of the appearance of the gentlemen and ladies on Sunday mornings, as they assembled on the bluff to worship at St. Peter's: the dignified walk of the men, with crimson and gilt garments, silk stockings, cocked hats and tall gold-headed canes; and the young lads—in dress, brilliant but ludicrous reproductions of their elders. The “*grand dames*” with high heels and stiff stays came ballooning along, their voluminous skirts swaying and fluttering in the fresh sea breeze. With what ceremony did they greet each other! As the men raised high in air their gold-laced hats, and bowed low their curled heads, the ladies, stopping short in their promenade, placed one foot twelve inches behind the other and dropped a formal, stately and prolonged curtsy.

It is very agreeable listening to his tales of the ostentation and parade at New Jersey's capital in the hey-day of its youth: how one “Moneybaird,” conveyed to Lord Neil Campbell's son John, all his Amboy interests, in consideration of Campbell's sending a footman to hold his stirrup and wait on him during the meetings of the assembly; how the mayor, while acting officially, had a mace-bearer who carried before him this ancient insignia of corporation rank; how the judges, while sitting on the bench, wore judicial wigs and resplendant robes of office, and how it was obligatory for counsellors-at-law, when pleading before the bar of the supreme court, to be arrayed in gowns and bands as worn by barristers in England.\* He has much to say

---

\* On the eleventh of May, 1791, the leading lawyers of the State, among them Joseph Bloomfield, Richard Howell, Elisha Boudinot, James Linn, Richard Stockton, Frederick Frelinghuysen and Andrew Kirkpatrick, petitioned the justices of the supreme court showing: “That the wearing of Bands and Bar-gowns is found to be very troublesome and inconvenient, and is also deemed by your petitioners altogether useless. Your petitioners therefore pray that the rule of this court made for that purpose may be vacated.”

“Whereupon the Court taking the said petition into consideration, are pleased to grant the prayer of the petitioners, and do order that the Rule of the Court, which requires the wearing of Bands and Bar-gowns be vacated.”

of the flourish and ceremonies attendant upon court days; of the judges on circuit being met outside of the town by the sheriff, justices of the peace, and other gentlemen, on horse-back, who escorted them in honor to their lodgings. At the opening and closing of court, in going to and from the court-house, the judges were preceded by the sheriff and the constables carrying their staves of office, and all evil-doers trembled in the presence of the august procession.

And now he entertains us with descriptions of the grand balls given at the town-hall in honor of royal governors; where the dancing was not confined to the youthful belles and beaux, but all ages of the gentle-folk participated; stepping the decorous minuet or going down the middle in the but little less dignified contre-dance. Altogether, in the last century this home of our narrator must often have been a gala Amboy. He could give us more interesting information, if he would, as to its historic charms and associations, and the manners and customs of its people. But the old gentleman is running down; his voice is beginning to cackle. We will relegate him to that mysterious shade from whence he came. Exit, the king's councillor!

There was the dark side to this old-time picture—the negroes. The evil of slavery took deep root in colonial New Jersey. The reason is readily understood when we remember that in the early days of the province the slave trade was encouraged by the English people, fostered by the home government and enforced by the action of the British ministry. In 1702 Queen Anne instructed the governor of New York and New Jersey “to give due encouragement to merchants, and in particular to the Royal African Company.” Up to the time of the Revolution Great Britain directed her colonial governors to combat the attempts made by the colonists to limit the slave trade; and under pain of removal to decline assent to any restrictive laws. Only one year before the American congress—in 1776—prohibited the slave trade, the Earl of Dartmouth addressed the following words to a colonial agent:

We cannot allow the colonies to check or discourage, in any degree, a traffic so beneficial to the nation.

During a debate in the house of commons on the question of the suppression of this trade, a wise legislator produced



a labored argument against its abolition, on the ground of injuries that would result to the market for the refuse-fish of the English fisheries, which were purchased in large quantities by West India planters for their slaves. This astute debater was Brook Watson, who was called an American adventurer, and who not only became a member of parliament but afterwards lord-mayor of London. We are able to relate one incident in the life of Watson, where he was of advantage to the world at large. It was to all our good fortunes that when a small boy he fell overboard in the harbor of Havana and just escaped being devoured by a shark. This gave to the brush of the great American artist, Copley, the subject for his well-known painting, "The Rescue of a Boy from the Jaws of a Shark."

The extent of the importation of slaves in the province of New Jersey is unknown, but it is estimated that before the Revolution between three and four hundred thousand negroes were introduced into the American colonies. Tha Abbé Raynal supposes that the number of blacks taken from Africa by Europeans before 1776 to have equalled nine millions. Hüne, the German historian of the slave trade, considers these figures too small; Mr. Bancroft affirms that the English importations in all the continental colonies and in the Spanish, French and English West Indies to have been nearly three million souls, to say nothing of two hundred and fifty thousand thrown into the sea. He estimates that the profits of English merchants in this traffic, previous to 1776, were not far from four hundred million dollars.

This historian draws in strong outline a sad picture of the miseries endured by the blacks while on the voyage from Africa. Small ships that could penetrate the shallow rivers and bayous of the coast were used, and often five hundred negroes were stowed in vessels of not over two hundred tons burden. They were generally chained in pairs by the ankles; and below decks, when sleeping, each was allowed a space of but six feet by sixteen inches. For exercise they were made to dance and caper on deck to the tune of a whip. The Africans were chiefly gathered from various points in the far interior of the dark continent, in order that the freight of a single ship might be composed people of different languages and nations. When they reached the sea-coast at unfavorable seasons of the year, diseases were

engendered which culminated on the voyage; this, together with the narrow space afforded their manacled bodies, the bad air, foul stench and limited food and water, caused a death rate often equalling fifty and never falling below twelve per cent of the shipment. Sailing-masters on approaching a slaver at sea made it the rule, when possible, to keep to the windward in order to avoid the horrible odors that belched from the open ports and hatches of ships laden with human cargoes. The ingenuity of man, eager to torture his fellow-beings, could hardly have planned a more complete hell than a crowded slave ship on a protracted voyage. The horrors of such a journey are best exemplified by the fact that no journal of a trip from Africa to the United States is extant, though it is well known, that slave ships repeatedly entered every port south of Rhode Island.

Strange as it may seem, the men who sailed these ships appeared to be ignorant of the fact that they were doing the devil's work. Neither the captains of slavers, nor the persons comprising the companies who employed them, seemed to have considered that they were practising on their fellow-men revolting cruelty, and hideous wrong. This was so, at least, in the earlier days of the traffic. Sir John Hawkins commanded the first English expedition to Africa for slaves. His squadron comprised four vessels, and to their captains he issued the following sailing orders: "Serve God daily; love one another; preserve your victuals; beware of fire; and keep good company." So successful was he in this and subsequent voyages that Queen Elizabeth rewarded him by granting him permission to wear on his crest "a demi Moor, bound and captive." Doctor Hale, in the third volume of that treasury of historical writing, the "Narrative and Critical History of America"—edited by Justin Winsor—says that "Hawkins sailed on the ship *Jesus* with faith as serene as if he had sailed on a crusade." At one time, while on the first voyage, this navigator's ships were so long be-calmed as to nearly cause starvation. But, as this pious slaver recounts: "Almighty God, who never suffereth his elect to perish, sent us the ordinary breeze." While Hawkins' party was gathering together human cargoes on the Guinea coast, the crews were set upon by the natives with murderous intent. But again, as he narrates, "God, who worketh all things for the best, would not have it so, and by Him we escaped without danger."

In contemplating the slave trade as connected with our own country we must not fall into the error of thinking that the infamy of the traffic attached only to the people of the south, where the greater number of slaves were marketed. It was the well-to-do deacons and church members of New England who controlled the business: men who deemed it a sin to pick flowers on the Sabbath; who thought it wrong to stroll along the banks of a stream, or wander in the woods on that day; men who would dispatch the tithing man to arrest the stranger who was hurrying through their town on Sunday on an errand of mercy. The history of that time reveals Peter Faneuil, on the one hand piling up profits from his immense slave trade, while, on the other occupied in private and public charities, and in the erection of the cradle of liberty in Boston. In the last century the coasts of Mozambique and Guinea were white with the sails of Massachusetts and Rhode Island slavers. These vessels on the outward voyage were loaded with New England rum, which was traded to African chiefs for prisoners taken in their tribal wars. These blacks, together with such others as the ship-captains had been able to steal, were then carried to one of the West India islands, or to a southern American port, and there exchanged for molasses. This cargo was brought to New England and converted into rum for a further shipment to Africa; thus a three-fold profit was secured on each voyage. In the year 1750 Newport carried on a most extensive business of this character; three hundred distilleries were in operation, and the tonnage of the vessels lying at the town's wharves exceeded that of the city of New York. Mrs. Stowe in her tale, "A Minister's Wooing," has portrayed in the most interesting manner the awakening of the New England conscience as to the sinfulness of buying and selling human souls.

As at the time of Johannes' visit Perth Amboy was New Jersey's chief port of entry, the blacks were to be seen there in goodly numbers: many of them were freshly imported, bearing their tribal marks, and exhibiting their native characteristics, as if still inhabiting the wilds of Guinea. It was thought desirable, when possible, to have the slaves brought into the colonies from the West Indies rather than direct from Africa, as after remaining for a time at Barbadoes or one of the other islands they were much



better able to endure the severities of the American climate. In 1757 the British West Indies contained a total population of a little less than three hundred and thirty thousand souls, of which two hundred and thirty thousand were slaves. Mr. Whitehead says that barracks stood on the corner of Smith and Water streets, in Amboy, from where the negroes, on landing, were distributed in the province. They were eagerly sought for by the settlers and were in the service of all families able to pay from forty to one hundred pounds for a man or woman, according to age. A child of two or three years sold for from eight to fourteen pounds. As showing the value of slaves in the last century, Mr. Snell, in his Somerset historical compilations, publishes an inventory of the personal effects of Theunis Post, one of the "helpers" of the North Branch Reformed church, who died in 1764 in Branchburgh township, near the mouth of the Lamington river. The following chattels are mentioned: "One negro named Ham, valued at £70; one negro named Isaac, valued at £30; one negro named Sam, valued at £70; one negro girl named Betty, valued at £10; one negro named Jane, valued at £60; one negro wench named Sawr, valued at £30." The last name is short for *Saertje*, the Dutch diminutive for Sarah.

As the character of these imported, or more properly speaking, stolen negroes, were necessarily savage, and but little understood by the Jersey people, they were naturally much feared, and the most severe laws were enacted by the colony to insure their control and subjection. One of the official acts that constables were the most often called upon to perform was that of whipping slaves for minor offences. Any negro found five miles from home it was the duty of these officers to arrest, and to flog with a whip, into the thongs of which fine wire was plaited that the severity of the punishment might be increased. For this service the owners of the derelict blacks were obliged to pay the constables five shillings, which materially augmented the income of those officials, and added largely to the value and importance of the position.

The blacks, on arrival, were physically powerful and good workers, but without much power of reasoning or of controlling their undisciplined imaginations. Though barbarians, their affections were strong, and the marked progress made by negroes

in America may be said to be largely due to that fact. They soon outgrew their savagery, and, affiliating in their sympathies with their work and the lives of their masters, in a very few years became an attached portion of the domestic life of the Jersey people. In Somerset county, especially, the slaves soon fell under the sway of kindly influences, and became almost portions of their owners' families. They were comfortably clad; when sick, well cared for; and even to this day old residents tell pleasant tales of the affection existing between our forefathers and the old-time family and farm servants.

But before the whites had in part advanced and civilized the blacks, and learned from experience the weakness and strength of their bondsmen's characters, much cruelty was inflicted through fears of risings and rebellions. The "New York Gazette" of the twenty-fifth of March, 1734, gives an account of a threatened rising early in that year in the vicinity of where is now Somerville, in consequence of which several negroes, two at least, were hung. Punishments were extremely severe; murder and assault often insured the culprits being burned alive, and for even petty thefts and misdemeanors they were hung with short shrift. On the twenty-third of September, 1694, John Johnstone—he of the Peapack patent—while sitting as presiding justice of the Monmouth court of sessions, sentenced a negro convicted of murder in the following language:

Cæsar, thou art found guilty by thy country of those horrid crimes that are laid to thy charge; therefore, the court doth judge that thou, the said Cæsar, shall return to the place from whence thou camest, and from thence to the place of execution, when thy right hand shall be cut off and burned before thine eyes. Then thou shalt be hanged up by the neck till thou art dead, dead, dead; then thy body shall be cut down and burned to ashes in a fire, and so the Lord have mercy on thy soul, Cæsar.

In those days of severe punishments the penalty followed closely after conviction. On the tenth of January, 1729, a slave named Prince was tried at Perth Amboy for murdering one William Cook, and being found guilty was sentenced to be burned alive "on ye twelfth of this Inst." He was executed on the day appointed. In the year 1738 a negro belonging to Robert Hooper was burned at the stake at Rocky Hill for having killed a child of his overseer. On the fifth of July, 1750, in a ravine just north of Perth Amboy, two negroes were burned at

the stake ; one for murdering his mistress, Mrs. Obadiah Ayers, who had mildly censured him for misconduct ; and the other for being an accessory to the fact. Mrs. Ayres was seated at her own window when she was shot by the first negro, with a gun procured for him by the second. In these more lenient days the accessory would have escaped with a lighter punishment ; he was a mere lad, and, as was shown at the trial, had been coerced by fear into aiding the elder and more vicious negro. At the execution all the slaves of the neighborhood were obliged to be present, that the scene might serve as an exemplary warning and a terrible example.

Numerous instances might be given of the severity with which black offenders were punished. There is on record a chronicle of the hanging of a negro in 1750 for theft, the execution taking place at the junction of the Woodbridge and New Brunswick roads, a little way out of Amboy. We have another account of an *auto-de-fé*, in which Sheriff Abraham Van Doren is pictured on his horse, riding with drawn sword between the spectators and a fire, in which was burning a negro murderer. This was at Hillsborough (Millstone) in 1752, the sufferer having been convicted there of killing his master, Jacob Van Nest, who lived near Milltown, in Branchburgh township. This black wretch was large and athletic, and for a long time had been considered dangerous. In a fit of passion he struck his master a murderous blow with an axe as he dismounted from his horse at his stable door ; the negro's anger was occasioned by the discovery that his master had helped himself to some tobacco from the slave's box. This distressing occurrence does not seem to have prejudiced the family against the owning of slaves, as it will be seen by the following copy of a bill of sale that the murdered man's son Peter purchased two, a few years later : "July 10, 1768, John Van Nest, of Bridgewater [now Branchburgh] sold to Peter Van Nest, A certain Neger Winch named Mary and a neger boy named Jack for the sum of £66, York currency."

In 1791, burning seems to have been abandoned as a punishment for negroes, one being hanged for murder in that year in front of the old court-house at Newark. As was the custom the condemned was taken to the First Presbyterian church, where his funeral sermon was preached by Doctor Uzal Ogden. Mr.



Whitehead narrates that the church was crowded, and that the good domine, in alluding to the repentance of the negro, thoughtlessly finished his discourse by impressively expressing a hope that the latter end of his numerous hearers might be like the criminal's.

In the province of New Jersey slavery especially flourished because of its large Dutch and German population; and the greatest number of slaves were to be found in the counties where those races predominated. New Jersey's inhabitants, all told, in 1726 numbered 32,442, the negroes counting 2,581. The same year Somerset possessed 2,271 souls, white and black, the latter numbering 379. This county was in that year exceeded in negro population only by Monmouth and Bergen. In the year 1738, out of a total population of 47,369, the province possessed 3,981 slaves. Somerset county in the previous year had a population of about 4,500, of whom 732 were slaves. The census for the year 1790 places the entire New Jersey population at 169,954, of whom 11,423 were slaves. Ten years later—1800—the total population had increased to 211,149, the slaves numbering 12,422. This was a greater number of bonds-people than was possessed by any other state north of Maryland excepting New York, which had 20,613. Delaware had but 6,153, Pennsylvania 1,706, Connecticut 951, New Hampshire 8, and Maine, Massachusetts and Vermont none at all. In this year, 1800, the slaves of Somerset numbered 1,863, out of a total population of 12,813; this was more than that possessed by any other county in the state excepting Bergen. Morris, the adjoining county to Somerset, at that time having a population of nearly 18,000, owned but 775 slaves. In 1810 slavery had entirely disappeared in Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont and Massachusetts. Rhode Island's holdings were 108, Connecticut's, 300, Pennsylvania's, 795, Delaware's, 4,177, New Jersey's, 10,851, New York's, 15,017. In this year—1810—Somerset's slave population was 1,968, still far in advance of all other counties excepting Bergen, and only two hundred behind that Dutch community. Between the years 1804 and 1820 a series of laws were enacted tending toward a gradual abolition. They provided that every child born of a slave within the state of New Jersey after the fourth of July, in the year 1804, should be nominally free, but should remain the ser-

vant of the owner of the mother until the age of twenty-five if a male, and twenty-one if a female. So beneficial were the results of the operation of these laws that we find by the census of the year 1830 Somerset's full slaves were reduced to seventy-eight in number.

At Amboy Johannes had the choice of two leading taverns; one of them kept by John Gluck, the other by Obadiah Ayres. There was no choice as to expense, as the justices of the peace, at the October quarter sessions of 1748, had established the following uniform and moderate rate of charges for all the taverns of the county: "Hot meal of meat, etc., 10<sup>d</sup>; Cold meal do, 7<sup>d</sup>; Lodging per night 4<sup>d</sup>; Rum by the quartern 4<sup>d</sup>; Brandy do, 6<sup>d</sup>; Wine by the quartern 2<sup>s</sup>, 8<sup>d</sup>; Strong beer do, 5<sup>d</sup>; Cyder do, 4<sup>d</sup>; Metheglin do, 1<sup>s</sup>, 6<sup>d</sup>; Lunch do, 1<sup>s</sup>, 2<sup>d</sup>. Provision for Horses: Oats by the quart 1½<sup>d</sup>; English hay per night 1<sup>s</sup>, 0<sup>d</sup>; ditto for 24 hours 1<sup>s</sup>, 6<sup>d</sup>; Salt or fresh hay per night 8<sup>d</sup>; ditto for 24 hours 1<sup>s</sup>, 0<sup>d</sup>." These inns were rival hostelries, each being the headquarters of opposition lines of boats and stages to New York and Philadelphia. Daniel O'Brien, in October, 1750, had established the first line by this route. His sloop left New York every Wednesday; the passengers were supposed to spend Thursday night at John Gluck's in Amboy, a stage-wagon leaving on Friday morning for Bordentown, where another sloop proceeded to Philadelphia. His advertisement promised to carry passengers through in forty-eight hours less time than did the stage which travelled the old road from New Brunswick to Trenton. The time actually consumed was from five to eight days. O'Brien could be "spoke with at the house of Scotch Johnny in New York on Mondays." The success of the above line was so great as to induce some Philadelphians in 1751 to establish an opposition. Their sloop started from the Quaker City at the "Crooked Billet Wharf" every week for Burlington, "from where"—as their advertisement read—"at the sign of the Blue Anchor, a stage-wagon with a good awning will run to the house of Obadiah Ayres at Perth Amboy, where good entertainment is to be had for man and beast." The advertisement goes on to lay much stress on the fact that the sloop of this line, sailing between Amboy and New York, had a fine cabin fitted up with a tea table.

The stage route referred to as passing over the old road, had been established in 1742 by William Atlee and Joseph Yeats. They sold out in 1744 to one Wilson, who ran his stage-wagon twice weekly, leaving the Delaware at Trenton on Monday and Thursday, and New Brunswick on Tuesday and Friday. Professor Kalm, before quoted, when on his way to New York from Pennsylvania in 1748, attributed the great prosperity of Trenton to the number of travellers that journeyed that way from Philadelphia. He remarked on the many stage and freight wagons starting from Trenton; and writes that its inhabitants largely subsist by the carriage of people and all sorts of goods across to New Brunswick.

Wilson's charge for carrying a single passenger in his stage-wagon from the Delaware to the Raritan was two shillings and six pence, with an extra payment for luggage. The fare by sloop from Philadelphia to Trenton was one shilling and six pence, in addition each passenger being obliged to pay extra for luggage, and provide for himself food and drink. This last was important, as, though the distance was not great, adverse winds often prolonged the voyage into many tedious hours. From New Brunswick, passengers had a choice of three routes to New York: by sloop; by way of stage-wagon to Elizabethtown-point, thence by sloop; and by way of stage-wagon to Amboy, crossing by Willocks ferry to Staten Island, crossing to Long Island at the Narrows, and thence to Flatbush and the Brooklyn ferry. The inhabitants of the Raritan valley and of the vicinity of Flatbush were at this time in close alliance. Late in the seventeenth and early in the eighteenth centuries the Dutch had taken up all of the agricultural lands on the west end of Long Island; consequently many of the second generation of this Holland stock were forced to seek tillable acres in East Jersey. Thus the ancestry of such well known Somerset and Middlesex families as the Van der Veers, Van Nostrands, Van Dykes, Hagamans, Cornells, Beekmans, Polhemuses, Sutphens, Suydams, and others, were all migrators from the Flatbush neighborhood.

At this time there was no well-established cross-country road between Trenton and Amboy, though John Dalley had in 1745 surveyed the line of a highway, and set up marks every two



miles as a guide through the woods. In 1756 another stage route was established between the Quaker City and New York. It was called the "Swift, Sure Coach Line," and travelled the old York road, crossing the Delaware river at Lambertville; thence to Flemington, Somerville, Bound Brook, Plainfield, and along the base of the mountain through Springfield to Elizabethtown-point, where a packet sloop completed the journey. It was along this route that, about 1846, the first telegraph line between New York and Philadelphia was built. This round-about way was chosen because of the refusal of the New Jersey Railroad officials to allow the telegraph company to set up its poles along their line of railway. The short-sighted and witless reason was given that "the telegraph would interfere with travel, through enabling persons to transact business by its means, instead of using the railroad." In no better way, perhaps, could be shown the great growth of the telegraph, railway and express interests of this country, than to narrate the fact that the first telegram from Philadelphia to New York was delivered at Somerville, the line being completed only that distance. The message was then carried to the metropolis by the Elizabethtown and Somerville Railroad in a carpet-bag; which carpet-bag, or rather its contents, represented the entire daily business of the Hope Express company, which afterward grew into an important corporation and was eventually consolidated with the Adams company.

Picture to yourself a traveller of 1752 occupying six days—one hundred and forty-four hours—in traversing the distance between New York and Philadelphia. Imagine for a moment the discomforts and actual pains of such a journey during the winter months. Huddled on a crowded sloop for from twelve to forty-eight hours, fighting icy head tides, beating against winds, chill, drear and contrary, eating cold snacks supplied by yourself—even "a fine cabin fitted up with a tea table" could hardly have palliated the miseries of such a voyage. In October, 1723, Benjamin Franklin, when making his first visit to Philadelphia, was thirty hours on his passage from New York to Amboy. His sloop was nearly lost in a squall, and one of the passengers falling overboard narrowly escaped being drowned. Over fifty years later a traveller tells of being twenty hours in sailing six-

teen miles on the Delaware in a sloop, while on a journey from New York to Philadelphia. The same traveller was nearly shipwrecked in New York bay, and lost some of his baggage at Amboy. On reaching Amboy passengers were lodged in uncomfortable taverns; they slept on straw-filled ticks, usually with two or three bed-fellows, and with but little choice as to company. The passage overland to the Delaware was none the less disagreeable. The stages were ordinary Jersey wagons without springs, with white canvass covers stretched over hoops, those at the front and rear being very high, which gave somewhat of a picturesque appearance to the rude vehicle. The wheels revolved on primitive boxes, kept greased by a frequent application of tar that was carried in a bucket suspended under the wagon body. Clumsy linchpins were supposed to secure the wheels, but they had a fashion, with but slight provocation, of hopping out, and letting the axle down with a thud in the mud, sending the passengers sprawling on the straw-covered floor of the stage.

The roads were in a wretched condition with alternating stumps and holes. The rivers and streams had to be forded, and after heavy rains long delays were incurred while awaiting the subsiding of the waters. The men travellers were expected to partly work their passages by walking up the steep rises, and by putting their shoulders to the wheel when the steaming horses were stalled in a slough. But this outside work was not much worse than being jolted on the hard seats within, while the lumbering vehicle lurched and strained over the uneven roads, or staggered across corduroyed swamps, giving the passengers very much the feeling of having had their backbones driven up into their skulls. It was many years before there were any decent roads in New Jersey. Between 1765 and 1768 numerous unsuccessful efforts were made to float a lottery for raising money to improve the highways across the province. Governor Franklin, in an address to the assembly in 1768, thus refers to their condition: "Even those which lie between the two principal trading cities in North America are seldom passable without danger or difficulty."

When one remembers that the railroad now accomplishes in one day the work of several weeks of the last century, no better

illustration can be given of the advance made by science in all that adds to the comfort and enjoyment of mankind, and to the diffusion of general intelligence. Beyond almost all the other improvements of this great age stands its progress made in locomotion. As Johannes smoked his pipe in the taproom of Ayres' tavern on the evening of his arrival at Amboy, and listened to the traveller's tales of hardships by land and water, how incredulous he would have been had he been told that his posterity would fly between New York and Philadelphia in a less number of minutes than it took hours for Ayres' customers to traverse that distance; that in 1889 America would be bound and interlaced with over one hundred and fifty thousand miles of iron and steel roads constructed at an average cost of over sixty thousand dollars per mile, and on which carriages would roll without visible means of locomotion, attaining a velocity at times of a mile in forty-five seconds. Still more absurd would he have considered the statement that in A. D. 1889, no more time would be consumed in crossing the then unexplored continent, from the Atlantic to the Pacific—3,322 miles—than was in his day occupied in passing over the comparatively short distance lying between the Hudson and the Delaware; that in the place of clumsy sloops and springless wagons, there would be luxurious coaches and mammoth steamboats; that passengers, instead of suffering extraordinary fatigues, would stroll about elegantly appointed saloons, recline on softly cushioned chairs, or sleep on comfortable couches, while being whirled at from twenty-five to sixty miles an hour over thousands of miles of thickly populated country.

We will leave Johannes to make his way back alone to Bedminster. In the next chapter he will claim our attention while in conflict with rugged nature; while combating and subduing his timbered hillsides, and reducing them to productive acres.







## CHAPTER XVII.

### *Clearing the Bedminster Land—Life on the “Old Farm” from 1752 to 1763.*

Intelligent industry will overcome many difficulties. This faculty stood our ancestor in good part when he set about clearing the Bedminster farm, and to a great extent its possession can be ascribed to his nationality. The Germans in the province, generally, being a quiet industrious folk made themselves most valuable citizens. They were plodding, intent on their own business, attentive to the duties of religion, but were interested, perhaps, too little in politics. McMaster writes that wherever a German farmer lived were to be found industry, order and thrift. Their buildings, fences, thoroughly-tilled fields and nurtured orchards were in marked contrast to the lands and improvements of their more careless English and Scotch neighbors. Other writers on the condition of the American colonies in the last century speak of the simple and primitive manners and frugal, industrious habits of the Germans, which, together with their contented spirits and honest dealings, made them valued acquisitions to the communities and most suitable influences among the inhabitants of the provinces.

Well! Johannes and his sons are now fairly at work on the “Old Farm,” and we must proceed with the telling of its story. He, like other early settlers, is occupied in making history; not in the sense of the brilliant achievements of heroes; his a more humble mission—to subdue a wilderness and civilize a community, to make smooth the way of future generations, and to secure for his posterity a comfortable and complete homestead. It took time to transform his heavily-wooded lands into arable fields; meanwhile many privations had to be endured, and that labor which conquers all things vigorously and assiduously prosecuted.

In clearing New Jersey lands in colonial times the settler began by felling the smaller trees and cutting off the stronger branches of the greater ones. Next, the oaks, hickories and other large trees were attacked. Well girdled by the axe, these were left to stand until the following year, by which time, having been robbed of their sap, they were dead and ready for the burning. Encircling fires at the base of their trunks were ignited; the trees fell, and by midsummer the sun began to operate on land that, being formed almost entirely of rotten vegetation, was rank with productiveness. Instead of rooting up the trees, many of the farmers after burning the stumps let them stand and decay. It gave the newly-cleared land a very ugly appearance, but in four or five years the stumps would have so rotted that they could be beaten to pieces and ploughed under. By July of the second year the ground was ready for a crop, which was generally buckwheat. When harvested in the autumn the land was ploughed, and sown with rye. Often, owing to the richness of the soil from the long drinking of the juices of decaying vegetation, the first year's crop all grew to straw, and it was not uncommon for several seasons to go by before the ground had been sufficiently toned by cultivation to produce good yields of wheat.

Agriculture was but imperfectly understood by the new settlers, and no knowledge seems to have been had of the value of the rotation of crops. Instances are given where new lands produced rye for ten years, and then for ten successive harvests yielded wheat. The virgin soil, having been fertilized by nature for centuries, was for several decades prolific, but in time became exhausted, and the crops correspondingly poor. Farmers who had wasted the early strength of their fields were slow in appreciating the value of a plentiful use of lime and manure, and it was not until after the Revolution that impoverished lands began to be properly nourished and crops again to be abundant. It is said that the first Somerset farmer, who gave heart to exhausted land by the use of lime as a fertilizer, was Doctor John Reeve, who sent all the way to a quarry on the Delaware for the stone. In addition to profitably working a large farm near Rocky Hill, he was a physician in good practice. Old residents of the county remember him as a tall man of a majestic presence, and as a

graceful and fearless rider. His professional journeys were always made in the saddle, and as nearly as possible in an air line; scorning such ordinary means of communication as highways and byways he rode bravely across the country, taking the fences as if following a pack of hounds at full cry. Although Bedminster township had abundant limestone within its borders, none was burned till 1794, and it was 1830 before Peapack lime came into general use. In the last century natural meadows supplied all the grass and grain for live-stock; it was in the year 1800 that Jacques Voorhees introduced clover-seed into Somerset county; the growing of grass on uplands inaugurated a new era in farming and great benefits resulted to husbandmen and the country.

To one accustomed to the improved appliances that aid and abet the agriculturist of this age, the tools and implements that Johannes had at his command would seem illy contrived for tilling the soil. The ploughs throughout the country at this time were rude and ineffective and mostly home-made. They were clumsily constructed of wood, the mould-board being fashioned from a block which had a winding grain approximating to the curve required. Thomas Jefferson is said to have first suggested the proper shape and proportion of this part of a plough. It was 1776 before a wrought-iron ploughshare, some bolts, and a clevis were introduced, and the mould-boards after that time were often plated with strips of iron made from hammered horseshoes. Our state has the honor of being the first to have used cast-iron ploughs, they being the invention of a New Jersey farmer named Newbold. Their introduction was not general until the year 1797, the people being prejudiced against their use, and it is said that they claimed cast-iron poisoned the soil and ruined the crop. Our forefather sowed his seed by hand, and when harvest time came, no cradler with glittering knife swung his graceful way through the golden grain, marking the field with lines of even swath. Rye, wheat and buckwheat were cut with a sickle, but oats, like grass, fell under the scythe. The sickles used were long and narrow, their sharp edges having close teeth on the inner side. This manner of harvesting continued until after the Revolution, when farmers were delighted by the appearance of the cradle, which improvement created as



much interest as has, in modern times, the introduction of the reaper.

During the first years of life on the farm there was much to do besides clearing and tillage. Gun and worm fences were built—the great barns and mows were erected, and their long, sloping roofs thatched with the big rye straw grown on the strong, new ground; orchards were set out, and below the hill the water power was improved, and the meadow facing Peapack brook pierced with tan vats. A little above, the mill was planted; on its oaken floor a huge wooden-cogged wheel slowly revolved, crushing the black and red oak bark. An early undertaking was that of making the old garden to the east of the house—a combined kitchen and flower garden, as was the fashion of the time; in it was planted the still blooming bed of German lilies. Horticulture was then in its infancy, or more properly speaking, as the word is now used, unknown. Old-fashioned gardens contained in the way of flowers but little else than hollyhocks, snow-balls, roses, lilacs, pinks, tulips, sun-flowers, morning-glories and a few other primitive blossoms. As for fruit, no grapes were to be had excepting the poor native fox variety; and the improved kinds of peaches, pears, plums and melons, had not yet been introduced. Of pears as well as of apples there were plenty, but no knowledge being had of nursing and grafting, they did not attain anything approaching their present perfection and deliciousness. So with the small berries, they were in great abundance, though uncultivated, growing wild in the fields and woods.

The vegetables of that period were few in variety and poor in quality. Potatoes were a staple, as were in their season cabbages, beans and Indian corn; but tomatoes, cauliflower, Mercer potatoes, okra, lettuce, sweet corn, egg-plant and rhubarb had not yet been heard of. It will thus be seen that “living” at the “Old Stone House” in the olden days was much simpler than those of us found it who were so fortunate as to gather about its well-spread board in the generation just passed. Johannes’ table was well supplied with ham, bacon and smoked meats. Traditions smack their lips over the deliciousness of the tender juicy hams, that hung in rows from the ceiling timbers in the cool cellar. Their rich and nutty flavor was gained from being cured

in the fragrant smoke of burning hickory and oak, together with the fact of their having been carved from young pigs that had roamed the forest, fattening on acorns, hickory nuts and aromatic herbage. Occasionally fresh meat was had, as it was the custom of farmers when they slaughtered a "critter" to distribute joints and pieces among their neighbors for miles around, relying for pay upon a return courtesy. The family had not yet outgrown its love for sauerkraut, as is shown by the writer's having the antique mortar—cut out of a solid block of wood—and pestle, which were used in the preparation of this compound, so dear to the German palate. A dish that garnished every meal was "kohl-salat," or cabbage salad. The Dutch called it "kohl-slaa," and from these two old country terms have come the degenerate word "coldslaw." Our yeoman's table, while ignorant of modern prepared dishes disguised with strange sauces, was abundantly beset with solid substantial food: poultry, eggs, cheese and such farm diet there was, of course; hot breads were in vogue; short cakes, made with buttermilk and baked on a griddle, were in daily demand, and pies, doughnuts and olekokes, were features even of the morning meal. Soupaan—well salted Indian mush, eaten with milk and molasses—was the standard Sunday supper, though occasionally a raised biscuit, called *zweibak*, or twice baked, took the place of mush; this biscuit was made in large quantities, bushels at a time, and then dried in the oven until as hard as a rock; in a bowl of rich milk it made a toothsome dish,—to the truth of which more than one of Mariah Katrina's descendants can bear witness.

As for beverages, a great favorite at that time was madeira, though except on festive occasions it was rarely found save on the tables of the rich. Farmers were content with hard cider, beer and Jamaica rum. The latter was almost the entire tippie of the poor throughout the colonies, except in the East, where immense quantities of molasses were annually converted into New England rum. A hot drink common at that time was soured beer simmered over the fire with crusts of brown bread, and sweetened with molasses. Another decoction, or concoction, of which the Germans of New Jersey were fond, was the extraordinary combination of chocolate and links of sausages, boiled in a kettle, served in a bowl, and eaten together with a spoon; a

feast of which I am sure but few of my readers would care to partake. It is said that when tea was first introduced in New Jersey its manner of use was for some time unknown. The people in their ignorance boiled it well, throwing away the liquor; the herb was then dished, buttered, and eaten as greens.

For sweetening purposes molasses and maple sugar were commonly used, as at that time brown or "store sugar" was yet considered a luxury. The story is current that the introduction of white sugar in the Moelich family was by Johannes' daughter, Veronica Gerdrutta, some years later, on the occasion of a social tea-drinking. It was then both a curiosity and a treat among farmers, and especially to the Germans, who were a very economical folk. Fanny's husband, old Jacob Kline, not having been informed of the surprise in store for the guests, on sitting down at the table used the sugar as salt, supposing it to be such. This so annoyed his wife that she cried out somewhat angrily in German, "O you dumb Irishman, you never will know anything!" In calling her husband an Irishman, the good wife poured upon his head the full vials of her contemptuous vocabulary. Among the colonists of Pennsylvania and New Jersey there were representatives of many nationalities, with widely dissimilar natures, but fortunately the unifying conditions were sufficient to ultimately blend their discordant elements. Yet, for a number of years the Irish and Germans were mutually repugnant, and each held the other in very low estimation; consequently "Irish" and "Dutch" were bandied between the thrifty Germans and the sons of the Emerald Isle as epithets of contempt. In a letter from the elder Muhlenberg to the fathers of Zion church in 1772, the Patriarch complains that his conduct in a certain financial transaction had been misconstrued, and goes on to say: "You must have peculiar thoughts of me, as if I tried to cheat you out of something or desired to play Irish tricks on you."

Building barns, making gardens, and raising crops, are fair-weather work. There was much that could be done on the "Old Farm" in tempest as well as in sunshine. On stormy days and during the long winter evenings, Johannes and his sons were occupied with labor that would now be done at wheelwright shops, factories and forges; but shops of all kinds were then few, and at



remote distances. Our forefathers cobbled their own shoes, repaired their own harness, and at extemporized carpenter and blacksmith shops made much of the household furniture and many of the farm and kitchen utensils. The Baroness Riedesel, the companion in misfortune of her husband, the Hessian General who was captured with Burgoyne, made and published many notes on the American army; among them, one as follows: "Their generals who accompanied us were some of them shoemakers, and on the days we halted made boots for our officers or even mended the shoes of our men." The Baroness was in error: they were not shoemakers, but the custom of colonial times was for the men to know all about the working of leather, they being able to make their own harness, saddles and shoes, just as it was for the women to spin and weave; doubtless these American officers in sore need of money were glad to exchange this knowledge and service for German and English coin.

There were few or no luxuries in the olden time that would be recognized as such now; the industries of the families were of the most complete character, as within each homestead was produced, to a large extent, the necessities of its members. In farming communities, upon the women of the household devolved not only the duties of cooking, washing, milking, and dairy work, as at present; in addition, they made their own garments and many of those of the men; they spun their own yarn, wove the family linen and woollen goods, smoked and cured meats, dipped tallow candles, brewed beer, and made soap. Their pleasures were limited, being confined principally to quilting frolics, apple paring bees, and husking and killing frolics. The latter were when the men met at each other's houses to do the autumn hog-killing, the women coming in the late afternoon to join them at supper, and have a dance in the evening. The "wood frolic" was also an institution which brought together most of the people of the congregations annually at the parsonages. While the men occupied themselves during the day hauling the minister's yearly supply of wood, the wives and daughters came in the late afternoon and prepared a bountiful supper, to which the tired wood-haulers doubtless brought excellent appetites. The spinning-visit and the donation-visit were both made occasions for festivities. At the former it was the women who spent the

the day in work, the men coming at supper-time to contribute to the pleasures of the evening.

Fielding writes that "bare walls make gadding housewives." Could he have visited the "living-room" of the "Old Stone House" he would not have expressed this sentiment without noting an exception. It had bare walls, it is true, but Mariah Katrina was no gadding housewife:

She was a woman of a stirring life,  
Whose heart was in her house; two wheels she had,  
Of antique form;—this large for spinning wool,—  
That small for flax; and if one wheel had rest,  
It was because the other was at work.

In many of the customs and courtesies of life she was doubtless rude and unpolished. A helpmate to her husband, she did not disdain to aid him in the field. While occupied with household duties her dress, and that of her daughters, was coarse homespun; and often in the summer, to make her many busy steps in the farm-kitchen the lighter, she discarded shoes. But for all that, her posterity have no cause for being ashamed of this industrious German matron; she was the mother of vigorous children, who developed into men and women useful and beloved. They, in their turn, transmitted to their descendants capacities for leading worthy and profitable lives.

The "living-room," or farm-kitchen, was Mariah Katrina's kingdom, as it has been for all the housewives of the "Old Stone House" from that time down. It served for many purposes, and it was there that all the home life centred. With the exception of what was baked in the Dutch oven in the outer-kitchen, the cooking was done before or in the cavernous fireplace, around which were hung warming-pans, flat-irons, skillets, teapots and other necessities, while from the "chimbley's" capacious throat depended cranes, hooks, pots, trammels and smokejacks. This was even before the time, in farmers' families, of tin roasting-jacks; turkeys used to be suspended by twine before the fire, and kept revolving, while the basting gravy dripped to a pan below. The domestic conveniences of that age did not include closets; household articles were distributed about the walls of this farm-kitchen, hung on cop-stocks—wooden pegs, driven into the beams of the low-studded ceiling. On the

dresser were rows of polished pewter platters and vessels, standing cheek by jowl with well-scoured wooden trenchers, while laid away on the shelves of the great walnut press were piles of the family's coarse linen. In the corner stood two small wooden mortars, in which were pounded and powdered the mustard and coffee; and on a convenient shelf were placed the lights for this world and the next,—a round iron tinder-box with its attendant flint and steel, and the huge family Bible, its pages black with quaint German characters. Pewter and copper were the materials from which many of the drinking vessels and utensils were made, china and glass being in but little use. The precious metals were not common, except among the very rich, although all well-to-do farmers carried a silver watch and snuff-box, the latter being in frequent requisition. Tobacco was smoked in pipes, of which Johannes had brought a good supply from the old country; segars were unknown in the "Old Stone House," indeed, throughout the colony in that century they were rarely seen outside of the large cities.

Much of the space of the chambers in this Bedminster dwelling was occupied by mammoth "four-posters," stuffed with thick feather-beds that were covered by many-colored quilts and counterpanes of calico, durant and calamanco—whatever the last two may have been. Testers of cloth and curtains of chintz hung from above, while vallances of dimity reached to the floor. Much of the bedroom furniture was heavy, cumbersome and home-made, red cedar being the favorite wood, as it was considered vermin proof and indestructible. The upper rooms, like the one below, then as now, were destitute of closets. People are not apt to feel the need of what they have never possessed; otherwise we might suppose that Mariah Katrina and her daughters were much inconvenienced for the want of closet room. If you are curious to know in what kind of garments they were accustomed to array themselves, we may, in fancy, mount the oaken staircase to the garret, and there behold the treasures of clothing, of which women in the olden time had a great profusion. Hanging on pegs driven in the wall, and depending from lines stretched from the eaves, were shortgowns, overgowns, outer garments and petticoats. The number of the last would now seem excessive, but colonial women thought at



least fifteen necessary, while the Germans and Dutch often had twice that number. They were generally of tow, flannel and linsey-woolsey, and the young women of a household spent much of their girlhood in laying in a stock of petticoats for matronly uses. The shortgowns were of kersey, calamanco and homespun, but the frocks and outer garments were made of gay fabrics, the names of some of which are now obsolete; beside satins, silks and velvets, there were in use taffety, beaver, French tabby, milinet, moreen, groset, Holland linen, bombazine, and "boughten calico."

The men of that time, even in farming communities, were not insensible to the picturesqueness of variety and color in their garb. For daily wear, buckskin, leather, homespun and worsted fabrics were common, but on Sundays and on gala occasions prosperous yeomen were often clad in white, blue and crimson broadcloth coats, with short-clothes of plush, stockinet, yellow nankin, and even velvet.

In the living-room, or farm-kitchen, the meals were eaten, friends were entertained, and the spinning done; while just beyond the door, in the cellar on the same level, stood the clumsy loom, upon which the women banged away at odd times in making linen cloths and woollen goods for the family clothing. Flax was to Johannes a most important crop; its treatment was largely within the province of the women of his household, from the pulling in the fields to the making, dressing, hatcheling, and spinning. This was before the days of cotton, and flax had many uses; in addition to being prepared for the loom, mats and cushions were made from the coarse "hock-tow," and the rope, or finer tow, was twisted by the hands into long strands of yarn, from which were manufactured the farm cords and ropes. Delicate girls would seem to have had no place in the social economy of colonial farm families. They must needs have had strong arms and stout hips to have been able to lug the big iron kettles, or to have hung them on the great swinging crane of the yawning fireplace. Strength was also necessary to handle the large sticks of hickory that kept the pot a-boiling, or the vast oven heated to just the point necessary for properly browning the batches of rye and wheaten loaves, the big pans of beans, and the cakes, puddings, and thick pies. Washing-day must have

been a sore affliction to the women-folk of the "Old Farm." When Monday came a roaring fire was built alongside the wash-house—on the bank of the brook—over which was suspended an iron pot in which the clothes were boiled. Washing machines and wringers were not—and even their predecessors, the corrugated washboard and washtub, were unknown. The stream furnished a generous tub, and stout arms did the wringing. When the dirt and grime had been loosened by boiling the coarse clothing was put in the pounding barrel, and well thumped with a wooden pounder until the dirt was supposed to be eliminated. A rude washing machine—but it is said to have done effective service, though the fine fabrics of our day would find such rough handling rather severe; not only the dirt, but the texture would be eliminated.

The years roll on! All this time the three hundred and sixty-seven acres of wild lands are gradually developing into a fine farm. Changes, too, are taking place in the family in which we are so much interested. Aaron, the first born, has brought home a wife—Charlotte Miller. Who were her parents our investigations do not show, nor are we any the wiser as to the date of the marriage; it was probably about the year 1757, as their first child, John—the future Revolutionary soldier—was born on the thirty-first of July, 1758. If our surmise is correct, this would make the mother twenty-three years old at the time of her marriage, as she was born on the fourteenth of May, 1734. To man Heaven gives its best gift in a good wife; and so was Aaron blessed in Charlotte. Though we are ignorant of her parentage, she was evidently the daughter of a good mother, for of such are the best wives made. For over forty years she added to the comfort and happiness of her husband and children, and lived in the "Old Stone House" the life of Solomon's virtuous woman, for "the heart of her husband safely trusted in her, and she did him good, and not evil, all her days."

There has not been preserved to us an account of Aaron's marriage. It is to be regretted;—as in the olden time there were many quaint customs and observances attendant upon weddings. They were not confined to the ceremony; the occasion of bringing the wife home—called the infare—was one of great festivity, often prolonged for several days, the kinsfolk and

neighbors being bidden from far and near. The laws regarding marriages were then exceedingly strict. It was necessary for the contracting parties to have the bans published three times, or else procure from the governor of the province a license, which would not be granted unless the bridegroom appeared in person before the chief magistrate, accompanied by two prominent citizens. These latter were obliged to testify that they knew of no lawful obstacles to the marriage; and to give a bond that they would be answerable for any damages that might arise because of any previous promise of marriage having been made, or for any complaints against the contracting parties by their relatives, guardians, or masters. All of the above preliminaries having been complied with, the governor delivered the license upon the receipt of twenty-five shillings currency, which fees materially added to the amount of his annual income.

There were other peculiar marriage laws in the province. One relating to widows was particularly diverting. This was before the day of acts protecting the rights of a married woman. She could hold no property individually, and on the death of her husband had not legal ownership of her own wearing-apparel unless bequeathed to her; otherwise the clothes on her back belonged to the estate of her husband. If that estate proved insolvent, and the widow remarried, care had to be taken that the perplexities of her first husband's affairs did not attach to those of the second. To do this it was necessary for her to be married in nothing but her shift, the giving up of her clothes to the creditors of her deceased husband releasing her from further claims. After the ceremony she was at once arrayed in clothing presented by the new husband. Professor Kahn, the Swedish traveller, quotes the following account as having been read in 1749 in the "Pennsylvania Gazette;" the circumstances having occurred in New Jersey:

A woman went with no other dress than her shift out of the house of her deceased husband to that of her bridegroom, who met her half way with fine new clothes, and said before all who were present that he lent them to his bride; and put them on with his own hands. It seems he said that he lent the clothes lest if he said he gave them the creditors of the first husband should come and take them from her, pretending that she was looked upon as the relict of her first husband, before she was married to the second.

Yes! the procession of the generations has commenced. The



"Old Stone House" is now a home in the truest sense, for its rooms have echoed to the cry of a baby; within its walls for the first time a mother has looked with eyes of love into those of her infant—the sweetest, tenderest, happiest look that can come from a woman. Johannes and Mariah now mount to a higher plane in the family circle. Clothed in the honor and dignity of their advancing years, they sit on either side of the fireplace with grandchildren at their knees. For the first little one did not remain king; others followed to claim their share of the household affections—Catharine, born the fifteenth of July, 1761, and Daniel, the writer's grandfather, born on the twenty-eighth of October, 1763. The house can now be said to be furnished; for it is Southey, I think, who declares that none can be called completely so until there is a kitten on the hearth, and a child of at least three years playing about its chambers.

It is now many years since Johannes, his wife, and their little flock passed through the *Bach-gate* of the ancient city of Bendorf, and turned their steps westward. He was still a young man then, but now his hair and that of his dame is thin and rapidly frosting. As he looks back there can be no call for regret at his having come to America. Surveying his comfortable homestead and contented household, he must appreciate how signally he has been prospered. Successful in his avocations, honored by his brethren of the church, and loved by his children, for what more could he have asked? Death has not crossed his threshold; his family is intact though not all together. Aaron, his prop and stay, is to succeed him on the farm and in the tannery; Fanny, married to prosperous Jacob Kline, is already the happy mother of several children. Another of the brood being old enough to fly, has taken wing and left the family nest; for Andrew, the second son, having found a wife, has made his way into Sussex county. The two other boys and the daughter Maria, though men and women grown, are still at home, contributing their share to the family toil and joy.

The weather-vane faces the direction of the wind!—so the faithful German heart ever veers toward fatherland. As our immigrant-ancestor, with his gray-haired wife, slowly floats down the river of life toward the open sea of eternity, his barque freighted with pious hopes, he still remembers the village of

gray antiquity on the banks of the far-distant Rhine. Though he has sworn honest fealty to another government, after having been forced into expatriation by the unjust laws of his own, he has not forgotten that east of the Atlantic ocean there lies a fair country, to which the invisible links of affection still chain his memory. Through all the years of his American life he has continued in correspondence with relatives and friends in Germany. Among the letters preserved is one from his wife's brother, the burgomaster of Hochstenbach, written in 1760, with which I will close this chapter. It tells the same story, as have the others, of the miseries of continental warfare. It seems a stately, formal letter to have been written to a sister who was over three thousand miles away, and from whom the writer had been separated for a quarter of a century.

HOCHSTENBACH, 20 April, 1760.

MUCH BELOVED BROTHER-IN-LAW AND DEAR SISTER: Your honored letter of September 28th, 1759, we have duly received on the 9th of January, 1760, and noticed to our great joy that you and your good children are in good health, on behalf of which we heartily congratulate you.

As regards ourselves we have, so far, Thanks to our Lord, also been enjoying good health. Our country has been marched over for several years by French Troops, exacting from us, even last year yet, strong forages to be delivered in Bendorf and Glabach, and in the winter and last spring in Limburg, so that the poorer class of subjects keep scarcely enough for his own use; May the Almighty soon give us peace again.

From Bendorf I have to report that cousin Joh. Geo. Kirberger died a few years ago, leaving six children behind. Cousin Hager and his lady and their children are well. In the mean time we wish you our Lord's Mercy, and that he may bless you all. With our best salutations, I remain

Your sincere brother and brother-in-law,

H. KIRBERGER.





## CHAPTER XVIII.

*The Death of Johannes and Mariah in 1763—Changes in the Township—The Dutch Congregations of the Raritan Valley—The Building of Bedminster Church.*

And now Johannes' days are on the wane. Their meridian has long since passed, and the short afternoon having merged into the sober evening of life, he is reaping the comforts and consolations resulting from the active and useful employments of youth and middle age. Like a traveller who at the close of day has reached a high hill whose summit is bathed in the hues of the setting sun, he is able to look back with satisfaction over the pleasant country that has been traversed. Our pilgrim has attained that quiet dreamy hour of life, "between the lights," when his ripened years bring the tranquil enjoyments of repose and retrospection. Relieved from labor by the children who have learned habits of industry by his example, they now repay him for many days of anxious and devoted care.

Sooner or later all things must pass away. The undaunted one—the messenger of death—inevitably draws near. Johannes must leave his lands, his well-built house, his orchards and his woods, and take up his abode beyond that mysterious shade—that dim spectral mist which curtains time from eternity. There came a day, when the year 1763 was hastening to its close, on which Johannes' hour was come. The mellow October weeks had gone—the Indian summer passed—the golden-rod still stood thickly along the fences, but the many-colored asters which alone remained in the old garden were sprinkling their petals over its lonely beds. It was on the sixteenth day of that gloomiest month of all the year, when the chill November rains were robbing the earth of its fruits and verdure and beating from the



branches of the trees their russet leaves, that our German ancestor folded his hands, and was at rest. Calm was his exit, for his end was peace. He was mourned in the "Old Stone House," but he found a companion awaiting him beyond the pearly gates, for his faithful old wife Mariah had died on the seventeenth day of October—old no longer, for we may believe with Mohamet that old women never reach heaven—they all grow young on the journey.

Let us preserve the memory of these honest German people. In their dreamless sleep for over a century, they have lain side by side under the long grass of the Lutheran burying-ground at Pluckamin. Generations that followed in their footsteps have like them disappeared from the earth. But we, who yet linger amid scenes that were familiar to their eyes, may consider with gratitude and affection of our indebtedness to these simple Rhine folk and their fellow-pioneers. Their hands grew hard in making smooth rugged paths on which we now walk with ease. Let their names be revered by their kindred and their honest hard-working lives noted and recorded. "They rest from their labors, and their works do follow them." These simple-minded men and women—the forefathers and foremothers of Bedminster—found this township a wilderness. By their virtue and their intelligent industry they left it planted with churches, schools and homesteads, and guarded by laws, social and legal, in which were laid the foundations of the happiness of future generations.

Johannes is dead, and his first-born reigns in his stead. The father left behind him the name of a good man. He also left to succeed him a good son, well able to take up the work where it had been laid down, and quite equal to perform all the duties of life with the same honesty of purpose and simple earnestness of endeavor as had characterized the daily walk of the parent. With the progression of the story of the "Old Farm" there will be much to tell of the busy and useful life passed by Aaron on these ancestral acres and in the community, before he ceased to labor, and at the rounded age of eighty-one, made way in his turn for the worthy son who succeeded him. As we shall have occasion to show, he was in every respect a man of affairs, and from the mass of his papers in my possession it is evident that for the forty-five years he survived Johannes in the "Old Stone House"

he played a no unimportant part in the drama of Bedminster life.

Seed-time and harvest come and go! Springtime and autumn slip by! meanwhile the country roundabout has undergone great changes. Latent forces that have been lying buried for æons of time in these Bedminster hills and valleys, ready to respond to man's endeavor and desire, are now in active operation. The warm, palpitating sunlight heretofore arrested one hundred feet from the ground by the foliage of the rounded tree-tops, now bathes with its genial heat broad open spaces, here and there throughout the township, where children play in gardens and orchards, and the lusty corn tosses its yellow tresses over well-tilled fields. The rude dwellings of the early inhabitants have undergone prosperous transformations, and during the eleven years that the "Old Stone House" has been standing, many industries have sprung into active existence. Across the brook a grist and saw mill are in operation, and homesteads begin to mosaic the hills that roll away toward Peapack. In the direction of Lamington, farms are multiplying; and on the Axtell tract, below where are now the Lesser and Larger Cross Roads, human thrift has been busy, until patches of open and woodland alternate, and sunlight and shadow checker all that portion of the township.

Immediately adjoining the "Old Farm" on the south, Jacobus Van Doren purchased of William Axtell, about the year 1760, two hundred and eighty-three acres of land, and erected a house where is now the residence of Cornelius M. Wyckoff. This land he sold in 1815 to Captain Joseph Nevius, who, some years later, conveyed that portion lying east of the Peapack road to Cornelius M. Wyckoff, whose son—of the same name—is now in possession. The original house was taken down in 1820 to make room for the present Wyckoff dwelling. Jacobus Van Doren was the grandson of Jacobus Van Doorn, who migrated from Long Island to Monmouth county about the year 1698. He was also the nephew of that Abraham Van Doren, who it is said was sheriff of Somerset county for twenty years, and whom we found in 1752 superintending the burning at Millstone of the negro slave murderer of Jacob Van Neste. Jacobus was the eldest of the seventeen children of Christian

Van Doren and Alche Schenck, who settled on the Amwell road in Middlebush about 1723. In Domine Leydt's time Christian was an elder in the First Reformed Dutch church at New Brunswick, and Ralph Voorhees tells us in "Our Home" that it was his custom on Sunday mornings to ride to church, accompanied by his wife and ten children, all well mounted on separate horses. Methinks this cavalcade would serve a painter as an excellent subject for a colonial picture; and that this peaceful Sabbath-day march of good-man Van Doren, with his household troop drawing rein in front of the old Dutch church, would present a scene quite equalling in interest those of the cavalry that often seem just ready to step out of a canvas of De Taille, or De Neuville.

The memory of Mrs. Christian (Alche) Van Doren is revered as that of one of Somerset's mothers in Israel. She was the life-long friend of *Jufvrouw* Hardenbergh—of whom much more hereafter—and, though living six miles distant, was a constant attendant at church until her ninety-fifth year. When this remarkable old lady died she left three hundred and fifty-two living descendants, among whom were two hundred great-grandchildren and six great-great-grandchildren. The size of families in those early days would seem to have been commensurate with the needs of population. Of her children, all but one lived to an old age, and raised families; and one of her grandchildren, following his grandparent's example, had seventeen children. The most of her twelve boys were called after the patriarchs, prophets and apostles, nor would she ever permit their names to be shortened; there were no Jakes, Abes, Ikes, Petes or Jacks in her household. Mrs. Van Doren had the happiness of seeing all of her sons prominent in the Dutch church. Jacobus was active in sustaining the Bedminster church; in an old salary subscription list, in my hands, his name frequently appears as well as that of his cousin Aaron who, together with the latter's brother John, settled about this time in Peapack, establishing an industry, known to this day as Van Doren's mills. Lewis A. Van Doren, their present owner, is the grandson of John. His father, William A. Van Doren, in about 1832 introduced and operated the first threshing machine in Bedminster. It was a primitive affair requiring eight horses attached to a lever-power to do the



work accomplished now by two. Notwithstanding its clumsiness it was considered a great improvement over former methods, as by it in one week as much grain was threshed as until then four men had been able to hammer and tread in two months with swingle-clubs and six horses.

Joseph Nevius, to whom Jacobus Van Doren sold his land in 1815, was a descendant of Johannes Nevius, who came to New Amsterdam from Solen in Westphalia early in the seventeenth century. His grandson Petrus was living at Flatbush in 1738, and later removed to Somerset county, and through him are the Raritan valley Neviiuses descended. Joseph, before settling in Bedminster, had been the popular host of the Blackhorse tavern at Mendham in Morris county. His eldest daughter, Ann, married John Melick, grandson of Aaron, and lived for many years in the "Old Stone House," dying at the age of seventy-six on the seventh of October, 1876. She was a woman of strong character and many virtues; throughout her life she held a position in the community of more than usual influence, and enjoyed the respect and affection of all with whom she came in contact. Often called upon in time of need for counsel or help, her noble nature was ever as ready to condemn the wrong as to uphold the good and the true, and the memory of "Aunt Ann" is cherished, not only by her kindred, but by all with whom she was intimate, and especially by the poor, who were always her care.

Previous to the year 1763, without doubt, the most important addition to this Bedminster neighborhood was the organization of the congregation of the Reformed Dutch church and the erection of its first church building. If not a majority, certainly a great number of the settlers of the township were of this religious persuasion, and were connected with one of the Dutch congregations of the Raritan valley. When the Presbyterians had erected their house of worship at Lamington, and the Lutherans had organized Zion and St. Paul's churches at New Germantown and Pluckamin, many as a matter of convenience joined those congregations, but most of the people still made their way southward each Sunday. The nearest houses of worship were the "Raritan Church" at Van Veghten's bridge and the "Church of North Branch" at the village of Readington. The first edifice

of the latter congregation was a log structure with a frame addition, erected about 1717, that stood near the forks of the river, on the brow of the hill just east of the junction of the Readington and North Branch village highways. In 1738 a new building was erected near the site of the present edifice at Readington. The Raritan church—now the “First Reformed Church at Somerville”—was erected, probably in 1721, on land donated by Michael Van Veghten, on the bluff facing the Raritan river about one quarter of a mile below the present bridge near Finderne railway station. Doctor Messler records that this congregation was in existence long before it had a church building, its meetings probably being held in some private house or barn. The first consistory entry is of the year 1699 when John Tuyneson was installed elder and Pieter Van Neste, deacon by the Reverend Guillaume Bertholf.

The name of this minister often appears among the early records of the Dutch churches of Somerset, and he seems to have been an itinerant domine, having on his conscience the spiritual welfare of all the people of Holland descent in a wide area of country. He was sent to the Netherlands in 1693 by the congregations of Hackensack and Aquackanonck that he might be ordained by the classis of Amsterdam. Mr. Bertholf returned in the following year, the first qualified minister of the Dutch Reformed persuasion in the province, and for fifteen years was the only pastor for all the country lying between Tappan in New York and the upper Raritan in New Jersey, including Tarrytown, Staten Island, Pompton, and Second River or Belleville. Until his death in 1724 he labored unremittingly to spread the field of usefulness of the Dutch church, and it is said that his mild and placid eloquence and gentle but deeply-religious nature diffused a holy savor of piety throughout all the communities that were so happy as to fall under his kindly influences. The two churches of Raritan and “North Branch” in the beginning of the last century were “collegiate” with the one at Three Mile Run; which before 1717 divided and erected churches at Six Mile Run and at New Brunswick.

Church buildings were primitive affairs in those days. The one at Six Mile Run was but a mere shell, with the

earth for a floor. Its worshippers were ignorant of pews and aisles, the only seats being those brought with them each Sunday from home. These four congregations were without regular preaching; occasionally they would be visited by Mr. Bertholf, or by some missionary deputed by him, when communion, baptism and other religious rites would be administered. It is fair to presume that services of some kind alternated in the different churches conducted by the congregation's lay preachers or "fore readers." The title of the official, who served the Dutch congregations in this capacity, was *voorleeser*. His duty it was in the absence of the minister to read prayers and sermons, catechise the children, and to generally maintain public worship and nourish the seeds of piety.

The four congregations, about the year 1717, joined in applying to the home church in Holland, for a permanent pastor. Two years later Theodorus Jacobus Frelinghuysen was sent out to them by the ship *King George*, Captain Goelet. He preached his first sermon in Somerset county on the thirty-first of January, 1720. We learn from Sprague's "Annals of the American Pulpit" that he was the son of Johannes Henricus Frelinghuysen, pastor of the Dutch church at Lingen in East Friesland, now a portion of the kingdom of Hanover, where he was born about the year 1691. He married Eva, the daughter of Albert Terhune, a wealthy farmer of Flatbush, Long Island, and had seven children. His five sons all entered the ministry of the Reformed Dutch church, and his two daughters married ministers in the same communion. Singular to relate not one of the domine's sons was living ten years after their father's death. Mr. Frelinghuysen did a great work in thoroughly establishing the Dutch church in Somerset. He is said to have been a ripe scholar in Latin, Greek and his own language, and Doctor Messler ranks him among the Blairs, Tennents, Mathers and other eminent clergymen of his age. Whitefield, Jonathan Edwards and Gilbert Tennent have left on record their appreciation of the labors and unceasing diligence of this Dutch Calvinistic minister, whereby the "wilderness was converted into the garden of the Lord." Domine Frelinghuysen lived at Three Mile Run, just west of New Brunswick, on a farm of two hundred acres, lately owned by E. Vantine Bronson.



Here he died about the year 1747, and was buried in the old Six Mile Run graveyard, now Elm Ridge cemetery. Before his death his duties, which extended over three hundred square miles of territory, had been increased by the organization in 1727 of the congregation "*op de Millstone*," now known as Harlingen church. After Mr. Frelinghuysen's death, the congregations of New Brunswick and Six Mile Run withdrew from the others of the Raritan valley, and extended a call to the Reverend John Leydt. The remaining churches invited Theodorus Jacobus Frelinghuysen's second son, John, to become their pastor. He was born in 1727, and preached his first sermon in the Raritan church in the summer of 1750 from the text, "Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children." He had just returned from Holland, where he had been to obtain from the classis of Amsterdam license to preach. He brought with him from the old country a wife—Dinah Van Bergh—a woman of such virtue and piety that during her long life of fifty-six years in Somerset, it is said few ministers exercised more influence for good in that community than did—as she was afterwards known—the "*Jufvrouw Hardenbergh*." A copy of John Frelinghuysen's call from the three consistories is preserved among the archives of the Somerville church; after stipulating that he should preach the word of God in the Dutch language, faithfully exercise discipline upon offending church members, and generally perform the duties of a servant of Christ, "after the manner of our Reformed Low Dutch church, established at the Synod of Dordrecht, 1618, 1619," it goes on to say:

Now in order to be a little more definite, your Reverence will be required to preach, alternating, in each of the afore-mentioned churches, and, when in health, twice on each Lord's Day, except in winter, and then only once, as the custom here is, and also upon the so-called Feast Days, as is customary in the Reformed Low Dutch churches. Also, your Reverence will be required to take charge of the catechizing of the youth, of the visitation of families and of the sick, as time and opportunity permit.

To assure your Reverence that this is our sincere desire, we promise you, in the name of our churches, besides all love and esteem which belongs to a faithful servant of Christ, to provide, first, for a yearly salary of one hundred and twenty-five pounds, current money at eight shillings an ounce; the half of which, collected by the elders and deacons, shall be paid each half year; and a suitable dwelling, with thirty acres of land.

The house referred to in the call was erected in 1751, and can

still be seen as a portion of the residence of the late Joshua Doughty, on Somerset street in Somerville. It is constructed of bricks that the domine brought with him from Holland in the same vessel with his wife. John Frelinghuysen's pastorate lasted but three years. While visiting relatives on Long Island he was taken alarmingly ill, and there died in September, 1854. Mrs. Frelinghuysen, who had accompanied him, returned home with the body of her husband in a boat so contracted and inconvenient that, as her biographer recounts, she was compelled, with a very great shock to her sensibilities, to step upon the coffin in passing to the shore. The children of this marriage were a son and a daughter. The former—Frederick—grew up to be eloquent at the bar, wise in the councils of the nation, and valiant in Revolutionary fields. Of all the five sons of Theodorus Jacobus, John was the only one who left descendants, and now for over one hundred and thirty years each successive generation of Frelinghuysens has presented one or more illustrious sons to the state and country.

At the time of this minister's death he had with him in his house of Holland bricks three young men as students. Among them was Jacob Rutsen Hardenbergh, then but sixteen years old, who was preparing for the ministry. He was born at Rosendale, New York, being the great-grandson of Johannes Hardenbergh, who emigrated from Germany soon after 1650. His son, in connection with Robert Livingston, received a patent for all of Sullivan and a portion of Delaware county in New York. On this "Hardenbergh patent," this young divinity student was born, his father, Colonel Johannes, having inherited a great portion of the estate. Young Hardenbergh must early have evinced much talent and ability, as we find that John Frelinghuysen's congregations decided that as soon as ordained he should be their new minister. In the meantime Mr. Frelinghuysen's widow had determined, after her short residence in America, to return with her two children to her parents in Holland. Within a few months preparations for the journey were completed, and the day fixed for leaving for New York, where she was to embark. But, meanwhile, propinquity, that god-father of so many marriages, had been doing its work on the susceptible heart of the young divinity student. Alarmed at the

prospect of the near departure of the object of his affections, he suddenly surprised the widow of less than a year with an offer of marriage. In her astonishment she is said to have cried out: "My child, what are you thinking about!" Although not immediately, the young lover ultimately had no difficulty in convincing her of just what he was thinking. Her sex asserted itself. The good Dutch lady could not withstand the temptation of a young and ardent husband, so her effects were unpacked and the voyage to the old country abandoned. They were married, and she retired to the manorial homestead of her new husband's father, near Kingston, New York, where she awaited his majority and the completion of his studies. Hardenbergh was at this time not yet seventeen, while his wife was approaching thirty.

In May, 1758, Mr. and Mrs. Hardenbergh were again occupying John Frelinghuysen's brick house in Somerville, or as that whole section was then known, Raritan, and the young man of barely twenty-one installed as the pastor of the four united congregations of Raritan, North Branch, Millstone, and Neshanic. The last named, had been organized in 1752, and set off from the North Branch congregation, which had long before this abandoned its primitive house of worship, and built a new church three miles away at Readington. The ecclesiastical history of Somerset county will never be completely written without devoting many pages to the character and attainments of this virtuous woman—"Jufvrouw Hardenbergh." For the fifty years that she bore this honored name her deeply religious nature was alike a prop and stay to the faith of timid believers, and a comfort and encouragement to profound theologians and the ablest occupants of the Reformed Dutch pulpits. Doctor Messler, in a tribute to the ministry of Mr. Hardenbergh, avers that a large share of the usefulness and success of this divine can be attributed to the influence of his wife. Her father was an Amsterdam merchant, and a man of wealth and fashion. She was educated in a superior manner, and her tastes cultivated to a high degree; but to her parents' great disappointment, at the early age of fourteen her religious impressions became so fixed as to cause her to find no pleasure in the allurements and amusements of the society of the metropolis. It is said that on one



occasion, when forced by her father to attend a dancing school, she to his great anger hid behind the seats, and resolutely refused to participate in what she considered frivolous amusements. At another time—while she was yet a child—her parents were entertaining some friends, and the guests, as was not unusual at that period, were amusing themselves by playing cards for money. She did not hesitate to walk into the drawing-room and in severe tones solemnly warn her father and his friends against the danger of so vain and sinful a pleasure.

Every incident in the daily life of this remarkable woman produced a religious influence, and it would seem that no experience could be hers without resulting in an individual blessing. Throughout her life she had implicit confidence in special providences, and many instances are related in which she claimed to have experienced undoubted proofs of direct answer to prayer. It was her constant habit to make affairs of either great or minor importance a matter of personal appeal to the Almighty. This religious habit was not the out-growth of years, or of ministerial associations, but a custom from her youth up. In the Sage library at New Brunswick is preserved a voluminous journal closely written in Dutch in a fine feminine hand, which, with much redundancy of expression and considerable repetition, narrates the operation of her mind under the "Divine guidance" for nine months during the year 1747. This, of course, was when she was living in Amsterdam and still a maiden. I cannot refrain from drawing a little upon this interesting diary to further illustrate the character of Dinah Van Bergh. It was written at the time when Louis XV. and Frederick the Great were pursuing their designs against Maria Theresa in the Netherlands, and when the French king, continuing his career of success after Fontenoy, had mastered nearly all of Flanders. The "barbarous and vile treatment" of the Hollanders by the French greatly disturbed this young Dutch girl's repose of mind. She writes in her journal:—

It stirs me up the more to protest against them at the Throne, to imprecate righteous vengeance on that Assyrian and oppressor.

Although she faithfully plead that the Netherlands might be delivered from the French, she acknowledges:—

I could inwardly approve of it and justify God should He give us over to destruction, and bring in upon our land that boar of the wood—I mean France, that enemy of the heritage of God.

During one week that this journal was in hand Zealand was threatened with an invasion by the French army, owing to the intense cold having converted the bays and rivers into ice bridges strong enough to permit the passage in safety of horses and artillery. On Sunday Dinah came to the rescue of her imperilled country. All day she prayed that the threatened affliction might be averted. Her diary records :—

On Monday I was enabled to continue in filial supplications to God in Christ that if it might so be a change might occur in the weather ; and, oh, adorable Goodness ! there was on Tuesday as powerful and delightful a thaw as was ever seen. Oh, how humble was I thus rendered before my compassionate God, and what a lesson of confidence was I thereby taught ! Our enemies had boasted that they would do something with which the whole of Europe would resound, now I was led to say, “ Oh, Enemy, the daughter of Zion hath laughed thee to scorn, and shaken her head at thee ; for the Lord has strengthened the bars of our gates.”

On another occasion Zealand was threatened with a dreadful inundation owing to very high northerly winds having prevailed for several days. But Dinah dammed the flood with her prayers, which induced the Lord, as she recounts :—

To moderate the calamity by giving us an east wind, and that for days in succession, connected with weather of a most delightful character.

One day, being stricken with a fever in a friend's house, her life was despaired of. But on praying for recovery she informs us that an intimation was given that on a certain date—the sixteenth of September—convalescence would begin. She told her friend, and awaited with confidence the day. It came, and, though previously helpless, she arose and walked several times across the floor, and recovery was assured from that hour. The attendant physician, who was an unbeliever, had considered her death imminent ; he was so affected by this sudden restoration to health that it resulted in his conversion. The good woman always insisted that this visit to her friend was heaven-directed, in order that her miraculous healing might be the means of awakening the soul of this sceptical doctor.

Her coming to America and both of her marriages were due, as she believed, to a special providence. When young John Frelinghuysen was in Holland seeking ordination, he pleaded in

vain for Dinah Van Bergh to return with him as his wife. Soon after setting out on the home voyage, his vessel was disabled in a violent storm and forced to return to port. The young minister renewed his suit, urging that the Ruler of storms clearly indicated by the disaster, and his consequent return, that the Divine pleasure was for her to yield to his desires. This time Dinah received intimations, and overcoming her scruples against leaving kindred and native land, she braved the opposition of her parents and embarked for a wilderness beyond the seas as Mrs. Frelinghuysen.

The story is told that during the passage the ship sprung a leak. After days of arduous labor at the pumps the captain abandoned all hope of saving the vessel, and so informed passengers and crew. Dinah apparently had no fears of a watery grave. She retired to her cabin and submitted the case to her Heavenly Father. Having full confidence in the efficacy of her prayers, she then sat down and awaited with composure the result. Nor did she wait long—for almost immediately the waters ceased rushing into the hold—the pumps again did their work—the ship was saved. Upon an examination being made, it was found that a swordfish had miraculously become wedged in the open seam of the bottom of the vessel, and thus effectually closed the leak.

The Reverend William Demarest, in a manuscript sketch of the life of Dinah Van Bergh, recites that her second marriage was also clearly the result of an intimation from on High. It appears that the first occasion of Mr. Hardenbergh's expressing his love for Mrs. Frelinghuysen was just before the day set for the departure for Holland. With her two children she was visiting for the last time a favorite place on the meadows between the house and the river, where she had been accustomed often to resort with her husband. While standing there, overwhelmed by her emotions, and "after," as her biographer writes, "having, it may be, just engaged in prayer," her attention was drawn to the approaching figure of young Hardenbergh. She received him with surprise and expressed displeasure at his thus intruding upon her solitude. He excused himself by broaching the subject of his deep affection, to all of which she listened with indifference and distaste. We may suppose that this first attack



on the fortress of the widow's heart was several times repeated by the undaunted youth before the time appointed for her leaving Raritan. Nevertheless she did not abate her intentions nor delay preparations for the long journey. At last the day of departure arrived, and she was just ready to leave the house for the sloop that was to convey her to the seaboard when a violent storm arose, so wild in its character as to oblige her abandoning, for that day at least, all thoughts of leaving home. The detention resulted in the vessel on which her passage had been engaged sailing without her. The considerable time that elapsed before another ship was in readiness for the voyage offered to the young student abundant opportunities for pressing his suit, and the good woman soon felt that the God of storms for the second time plainly indicated the intention of directing her marital affairs. To again quote her biographer:—

The vista down which she directed her view became altogether changed. Her bewilderment respecting the divine dealing with her gave way to the delightful apprehension of a purpose on the part of her Heavenly Father \* \* \* and the consummation of the conjugal union lay as a definite thing in the future.

So it was in all the affairs of her life, the most ordinary occurrences were subjects of prayer; her daily walk and conversation abounded in evidences that to her the interests of religion were paramount to every duty, pleasure and experience. It is said that so great was her confidence in the Almighty, and in herself, that she was resorted to by both weak and strong for pious counsel. The marked characteristic of her nature was the rounded harmony existing between its religious and worldly parts; the spiritual and material blended, and all temporal relations were in perfect adjustment with eternal conditions. Hers was a nature that always and under every circumstance was in complete correspondence with its spiritual environment, and while others of the brightest faith were often attacked by misgivings, her belief was ever as steadfast as the everlasting hills, enabling her at all times to say with the Psalmist: "For Thou art my hope, O Lord God; Thou art my trust from my youth." Even ministers when approaching the pulpit would pause at her pew for words of encouragement, which she always had in readiness. To quote from Ralph Voorhees' Raritan reminiscences:—

The Reverend Doctor Ira Condit of New Brunswick, afterwards her minister,

requently applied for consolation and advice in seasons of great despondency. At one of these times he went to her, and said he "could not and *would* not preach." "Domine," said she "*go and preach !* you don't know what you can do until you try." He had to obey.

The closing years of Mr. Hardenbergh's life were passed in the pastorate of the Dutch church at New Brunswick, and in the presidency of Queen's, now Rutgers, college. At his death it was greatly desired that he should be succeeded by Doctor John H. Livingston of New York, who, however, declined at that time to change his field of labor. There has been preserved a letter written to him by Jufvrouw Hardenbergh, as she was then called, urging that he alter his decision and remove to New Jersey. This communication is a curious and interesting exhibit of the freedom and authority with which she addressed the eminent clergyman, for although she used the most elevated and respectful language, no bishop in admonishing and warning a recalcitrant priest could have been more authoritative in counsel and advice. The letter begins in this wise :—

Most Reverend Sir

And worthy Brother in our blessed and  
all-worthy Lord Jesus, Zion's King :

Constrained by a sense of duty and by love to our Dutch Zion I take the liberty to send your Reverence a few lines and once more to commend to you our college and church ?

Mrs. Hardenbergh evidently felt that it was Doctor Livingston's duty to leave New York for New Brunswick, and she did not hesitate to write :—

I fear that you perhaps are not obedient to the voice of the Lord as sounding forth in the voice of the people.

She furnished him with abundant scriptural texts whereby his views might be strengthened as to its being his duty to do the Lord's work in New Jersey, and said :—

I have heard your Reverence say to my now departed husband that you regarded the college as the fountain of our church : why then be engaged by the streams and let the fountain dry up ? The Holy Ghost has made you overseer of that part of His House. Oh that like another Zerubbabel you might be encouraged.

In another part of her letter she volunteers the information :—

Large cities are often very dangerous \* \* \* to labor for God is certainly

your delight and your happiness. The Lord enable you to discover what is His Holy will.

Farther on she writes :—

Now worthy Sir I have a single request to make to you ; will your Reverence speedily let me know whether you have perfect peace in your mind in relation to your residing in New York ?

She closes the long epistle by expressing her hearty love for Mrs. Livingston, and the hope that the Lord would “sustain her ladyship in her infirmities.” And then with ceremonious salutations she subscribed herself

Most Reverend Sir, Your Reverence's handmaid and loving friend in our Lord Jesus Christ.

DINAH HARDENBERGH,  
by birth VAN BERGH.

Being a woman there must needs be a postscript, which was to inform the doctor :

No one knows of this letter excepting one female friend. It is between the Lord and us.

Mrs. Hardenbergh expressed great fear in this letter that the college and church would fall under the sway of a Presbyterian, and her apprehensions proved to be well grounded. Her husband's successor in the pulpit was Doctor Ira Condit, a disciple of John Knox, who, however, conformed to all the requirements of the Dutch church. She spoke of him afterward as the “beloved Condit,” so we may believe she accepted Doctor Livingston's refusal at that time with equanimity. Another instance is given of her offering advice and admonition to a minister. On one occasion a clergyman called to manifest his respect, and to profit by her counsel. Before separating it was proposed that they should unite in prayer, whereupon the domine addressed the Throne of Grace in such loud and boisterous tones as to much grieve and annoy the good woman. Upon rising from her knees she said to the vociferous supplicant : “Your God, Sir, must be different from mine, for mine can hear even though no words be uttered, but yours it seems cannot unless addressed in the loudest of tones.”

This excellent woman survived her second husband seventeen years, dying in 1807 at the ripe age of eighty-one. It is eminently proper that we should dwell thus long upon her virtues and



peculiarities when it is remembered that she was the first to occupy in the Reformed Dutch congregation of Bedminster the important position of minister's wife. About the time that young Domine Hardenbergh assumed charge of the united congregations, many of his flock who lived north of Pluckamin, feeling in need of a church nearer home, urged the organization of a new congregation. The most prominent families in this movement were those of Jacobus Van der Veer and Guisbert Sutphen. Of the former we have already learned something as to his settling on the Axtell tract, near where the Peapack road crosses the north branch of the Raritan. He was zealous in religious matters; his name is to be found on the books of the Lamington Presbyterian church, and in 1756 he subscribed five pounds toward the erection of St. Paul's Lutheran church at Pluckamin. Guisbert Sutphen lived on a farm lying half a mile north of the Larger Cross Roads, which is now owned and occupied by his great-grandson, Amos Sutphen. With his wife, Arintje Van Pelt, he had entered the township in 1743, traveling with their children and household goods in an ox-cart from Monmouth county, where his father, also named Guisbert, had settled early in the century.

When it was decided to build Bedminster church, differences of opinion arose as to the location. Both Sutphen and Van der Veer offered liberal inducements to have the building placed at points of their selection. Mr. Sutphen's choice was for the vicinity of the Larger Cross Roads, but eventually Mr. Van der Veer's views prevailed, and the new structure was erected on the site of the present edifice below the village of the Lesser Cross Roads, or Bedminster. The first minute of the new congregation was made by Mr. Hardenbergh in the Raritan church books on Christmas, 1758. It records a meeting at the parsonage of the consistories of North Branch, Neshanic, *op de Millstone*, Raritan and Bedminster; when for the last congregation elders Jacobus Van der Veer and Jacob Banta, and deacons Rynier Van Neste and Cornelius Lane were appointed "*opsin-derens*," or overseers. It is probable that the church was erected in that or the following year. Two acres of land were donated by Jacobus Van der Veer, who also furnished fifty pounds sterling and one-third of all the oak timber. The same amount

of money, together with one-half of the oak necessary for the frame, was the gift of Guisbert Sutphen. Not then, as would be now, were architects, contractors, carpenters and masons called together to contribute their brains and labor toward the erection of the edifice. The members of the congregation assembled with ox-teams, axes and stout arms. By them were the oaks felled, the timbers squared and drawn to the spot selected; perhaps the services of Caspar Berger, or some other good mason, were secured for laying the foundations, but without doubt much of the work was contributed by those most interested.

And we can well imagine with what interest these simple country folk watched the growth and assisted in the completion of their new house of worship. The church meant much more to the early settlers than now—in those days religion was not a matter for Sunday's consideration alone—it stood first in every one's estimation, taking precedence of all matters secular. Philosophy had not yet opened the eyes or befogged the minds of these honest Jersey people, and for one of their number to have been a doubter, or in any way unorthodox, would have insured not only the passive but the active condemnation of every able-bodied man in the neighborhood. Nor was there at that time the carelessness and callousness as to spiritual things which the distresses and demoralization of Revolutionary years subsequently engendered. To a community, therefore, whose chief interests and hopes of life all circulated about the church, we can readily appreciate that to have been without a house of God would seemingly have endangered not only its peace in the next world, but the possibility of success in this. So it is easy to picture the rejoicing and prayers of thanksgiving that ascended to Heaven, when the last nail was driven and the finishing touches given to the new building.

When completed, a more bare or a more unimaginative structure could hardly have been conceived. Prosaic to a degree, and entirely wanting in decorative details, it was wholly without architectural results save that it enclosed space and shut off the weather; in other words, it was a meeting-house, nothing more. It was nearly square, being a little greater in breadth than in length. A peaked roof, without cupola or belfry, capped low walls, the side ones being each pierced with two square

windows. The roof and exterior walls were similar in appearance, both being covered with shingles rounded at the ends, that had been riven and shaved by members of the congregation. In fact all of this prim and precise building was "home-made," excepting the window glass and nails. The latter were probably wrought at Mendham. The Dodds and Axtells of that place used to manufacture iron in a primitive fashion from ore that was packed over from Dover in sacks on the backs of horses. In the broad front gable of the new church was the entrance, the door of which opened directly on the ground without any porch or protecting portico. A single aisle extended to the steep staircase which led up into a lofty, round, box-like pulpit, perched on a tall pillar or column. The interior was not plastered, the walls and ceiling being lined with cedar, and a short gallery stretched across the south end of the auditorium. There were no stoves or any means of warming the building; old ladies during the winter months, in order to keep their feet warm, brought "to-meetin," perforated wooden boxes containing an inner casing of iron, filled with live coals. It was not until after the erection of the second church in 1818 that, in the face of much opposition, wood-burning stoves were introduced. Many of the good people thought that as God's grace had warmed both souls and bodies from the beginning it should do so till the end.

To the worshippers, this plain, gaunt structure, destitute of paint, outside or in, and without comeliness or symmetry, appeared as a commodious temple. It is to be regretted that no record has been preserved of the first services held in this primitive church. We can without difficulty, however, see in imagination the rude and naked interior peopled by a homely but happy congregation. We know that high up in the tall, undraped pulpit under a broad sounding board stood the young minister, while below him was the precentor, or lining-deacon, who lined out the good old Psalm tunes to the members of the flock, who were seated in great square pews; the middle-aged and old people with their faces toward the domine, the children opposite; while to the right and left sat the stalwart youths and modest maidens, who lent their ears to the sermon, but like the lads and lasses of to-day's congregations, I doubt not, gave their glances to "eyes which spake again."





## CHAPTER XIX.

### *More Changes in Bedminster—The Mills on Peapack Brook —Boyish Reminiscences—Marriages and Deaths.*

The procession of the seasons continues, and life on the "Old Farm" goes bravely on. No sooner has the ermine mantle of winter disappeared under the kindly influences of the soft south winds of spring, before the crocuses cleave the still half frozen earth. The pond and river, swelling in volume, burst their icy bounds, and the drear days brought by overcast heavens give place to sunnier skies and longer hours. The woods that have so long exposed their anatomy to the keen wintry blasts again shows signs of awakening life; green can be discovered among the sassafras branches, and yellow among the willows, while the maple buds redden sufficiently to give a warm hue to the entire tree. Leaf and blossom again take possession of the earth, clothing it with glory.

Soon the hillsides are marked by plough and harrow, and the seed falls in generous showers. The crocuses have long since had their day, and June roses illumine the newly planted doorway. And now the haymakers have come and gone in the meadows, reapers are on the upland fields, and pyramids of golden sheaves adorn the landscape. Bees hum in the clover, the breath of all nature is sweet and redolent with wild thyme, mint and fragrant aromatic herbage, while harvest apples in heaps of red and yellow lie under the trees in the orchard. Summer drifts into autumn. Pumpkins show their golden sides under the corn shocks, and the noise of the flail is abroad in the land. The world begins to glow in color as the October sun paints in deepening crimson and ochre, leaf, and herb, and lichen. The distant hill-tops now blend with the heavens, and a

golden shade diffuses itself over the face of the country. In the mornings amber-colored mists hang lightly over the lowland pastures, and the landscape is veiled in the vague, yellow indistinctness of Indian summer days. The brown acorns drop from their browner cups; the walnuts and chestnuts rattle through the branches upon the heads of expectant urchins who welcome, below, the toothsome hail. Again the paths through the woods are deep in the dry mummies of summer's luxuriance; the gusty winds blow over fields that, having lost their bloom, lie brown and dusky on the long hill that stretches westward toward the gray horizon. Once more the feathery flakes descend, covering the ground with whiteness and silence;—the procession of the seasons continues, and life on the "Old Farm" goes bravely on.

Not only were the lands improved, the outbuildings increased in number, and fences made more substantial, but under Aaron's care the tannery below the hill developed into one of the most important industries of that character in the province. A large frame structure was erected adjoining the house, in which the leather was curried, both negroes and whites aiding in the work and in that of grinding the bark. The number of vats below the dam was increased to eighteen, and the water-power much improved. This latter was done in connection with the joint owners of the water-rights on the opposite side of Peapack brook, who, then, as now, utilized their portion in grinding grist and sawing lumber. The exact date of establishing a flouring-mill at this point has not been ascertained, but it is well known to have been the first mill erected in the township. Among the papers of the New Jersey Historical Society is a map of George Leslie's grant made by Samuel Willmot in 1751. It calls for eleven hundred and eighty-seven and one-quarter acres, and shows that at that early date a grist and saw mill were already standing on the west side of Peapack brook.

There is little doubt that these mills were erected by William Allen. On the twenty-first of January, 1750, the "major part of the executors of the last will and testament of Doctor John Johnstone, dec'd," conveyed to Thomas Clandenin in consideration of twenty-eight pounds and eight shillings, eighteen acres of land, lying in the forks of the brook and of the north branch of the Raritan river. On the same day, and on the back

of this instrument, Clandenin sends greeting, and gives notice "To All Christian People" that he has sold to "William Allen, his heirs and assigns forever, this present indenture and all messuages, lands, tenements, and hereditaments to the same belonging." The consideration was "the sum of two hundred and twenty pounds, ten shillings, current money of New Jersey at eight shillings to the ounce." The wording of this transfer, together with the amount of consideration mentioned, would lead one to suppose that buildings of some kind—perhaps a saw and grist mill—had already been erected; yet all traditions concur in naming William Allen as the person who first established mills in Bedminster township. He died in 1761, his will being dated on the twenty-third of May, and proved on the sixth of July of the same year. In it these eighteen acres are devised as follows:

I give, bequeath and devise unto my two sons, Robert and Joseph, the house I now live in, and the mill and lands whereon they stand, and all my other rights or improvements of the ninety-two acres of land adjoining to said mill lot, with all the farming utensils and the utensils for the mill now on the same, and all other my movable estate, to them and their heirs or assigns forever equally between them their heirs or assigns forever.

The new owners had not been milling many years before they discovered that Peapack brook did not at all times contain sufficient water to supply the races that turned three mill wheels. They consequently conceived the idea of increasing the volume by diverting water from the north branch of the Raritan. For the benefit of those unfamiliar with the locality, it would be well to explain that Peapack brook, about a quarter of a mile above its mouth, runs for a considerable way parallel with and some three hundred feet distant from the branch. These streams are separated by a long narrow hill known as the "Hogback," and until within twenty years the highway climbed this ridge and ran along its spine, instead of following the bank of the larger stream as at present. At this point a dam was built which, checking the flow of the branch, created a reservoir. The hill was then tunnelled, forming an aqueduct six feet high and three feet broad; it being constructed on an incline, a considerable quantity of additional water was, through it, led into the smaller stream, thus greatly augmenting the powers of the latter in serving the mills near its mouth. With the strange fatality that often attaches to local nomenclature in rural communities



this undertaking has always been known as the "Folly." It may have been because the results secured were not considered commensurate with the outlay. There is no doubt that before the completion of the work, the Allens became financially embarrassed and were forced on the twenty-fifth of December, 1766, to convey the eighteen acres, together with the mills and buildings, to Stephen Hunt.

This watery basin and its mysterious outlet have always possessed peculiar fascinations for Bedminster boys. It was their rendezvous in my early days for miles around. In January its flanking hill shut off the north winds, securing a sheltered skating pond of smooth firm ice. Travellers by the old highway over the "Hogback," on winter Saturdays, were sure to hear the ring of the skaters' steel, and to be greeted by their joyous shouts as they "ground the bar," cut the intricate "pigeon wing" or mastered the "outside edge"—feats of no little difficulty on the old-fashioned, clumsy, gutter-runnered skates. In August the same hill guarded a cool, shady pool, which fairly invited a plunge into its pellucid depths. At no place along the branch did catfish, dace or shiners congregate in greater numbers, or appear more willing to be enticed to the surface by the rude tackle of the country lads. And then there was the "Folly"! Was there ever a more weird or forbidden spot upon which the imagination of a stripling could feed? What horrors might not lurk within its grim and silent portals. To explore its interior and brave its ambushed uncertainties was the one supreme test of youthful valor.

Where is the small boy that could ever withstand being "double-dared"? Not the writer, at least, in his callow years. It was this goad that incited him one summer's day of long ago to penetrate the "Hogback" through the dread "Folly." Certain it is that Dante could not have felt more dismayed on reading "All hope abandon, ye who enter in," than did he when girt for the journey. With him there was no encouraging Virgil, as pushing aside the vines that partially hid the low entrance to the tunnel, he boldly groped his way into the very bowels of the earth. Altogether it was a solemn sort of place for a small boy to find himself in. The walls were moist and slimy, and as the waters flowed in a swift current about his naked ankles, imagin-

ation peopled them with eels, snakes and all manner of creeping things; with every step on the rocky bed squirming creatures seemed to escape from beneath his halting feet. On nearing the centre of the dark and gloomy conduit daylight gradually disappeared, and courage began to ooze away. Suddenly a jagged dripping wall opposed further advance. Thinking that the aqueduct had come to a sudden end, for a moment terror paralyzed all efforts at progress, but discovery was soon made that it turned sharply to the left. Its construction had been simultaneously undertaken from both sides of the hill; through miscalculation the workmen had failed to meet in the centre, rendering a double elbow in the tunnel necessary. Feeling his way around these corners, the glimmer of sunlight could be discerned from the farther end, lightening the urchin's heart as well as lighting the ghostly recesses of the archway. Pressing on with increasing confidence and more hurried steps, egress was soon made into daylight on the Peapack brook side of the hill, where his companions received him with open arms and great honor. For many days thereafter your narrator was the hero of the small boy society of that neighborhood.

But let us return to the mills; a direction in which your scribe's steps have always turned with eager anticipation. Even now, when the half-way house of the ordinary span of life has been passed, he never approaches this sequestered vale, and feels the warm breath of summer, cooled by the balm that rises from its rapid streams, without his heart bounding with delight. Descartes writes that a person should not seek to gratify his desires so much as to endeavor to restrain them; notwithstanding such excellent advice, and though remembering that what may give pleasure in the writing, may not prove equally agreeable in the reading, I cannot refrain from further youthful reminiscence. I must tell of these mills and of their attractive surroundings.

Is there any picture more completely to a boy's fancy than an old mill, with its alluring adjuncts of pond and dam and rock-paved stream? or, for that matter, to a man's fancy, if, as I suspect is the case with many of us, a good boy has been spoiled in the man's making? Just such a picture can be seen in the *entourage* of what is now known as Schomp's mills, which are seated in the deep valley where end the descending acres of the

“Old Farm.” In attempting the description of simple scenes made beautiful by early associations, one finds it difficult to convey impressions, the birth of which is largely due to the deep sympathies of well-remembered youthful pleasures. Were my pen unchecked it would run riot with adjective and exclamation; while this might be sufficient for the needs of my expression, it would not go far toward conveying to others an idea of this old water-power and its pleasant surroundings. Let us suppose, then, that all effort at description is abandoned, and leaving the old homestead, together we will visit the mill below the hill. You can see for yourself what it is like—but remember! I shall look at it with boyish eyes—be sure that you do the same.

Passing through a decrepit wicket at the lower end of the garden, a little path, worn smooth by over a century of foot-falls, winding down the side of the hill leads to the brook below the pond. Time was when its bordering strip of meadow was pierced with vats. Memories shoulder each other just here, and the ground seems to exhale ancient odors, which, borne over the years of time, fashion in the mind a picture that includes an antique bark mill with its complaining wheel, great heaps of tan, long lines of drying hides, and piles of sacks of freshly ground oak-bark. Recollection paints, too, a scene in which your guide figures in the foreground as a truant toddler, staggering with the delight of forbidden joys among the tan vats; while in the middle distance is the view of a nursery maid, with fluttering skirts and a nimbus of dishevelled hair, flying down the hill with warning cries to rescue the youngster from a possible immersion in the acid baths. But enough of youthful remembrances. Here, facing us, is Peapack brook. Is it not an inviting waterway? Interspersed with grassy islands, and arched by venerable trees, it is fed by the curving waters falling in rhythmic melody from the dam, and on the hottest of summer days the air is fresh and cool with the fragrant breath of the descending flood. Crossing the stream by springing from mossy stone to slippery boulder—you must not mind wetting your feet—we are soon in front of the mill. It is much like many others planted along the numerous water-courses that swell the flood of the Raritan river. A succession of lofty doors rise one above the other to the apex of the gable, in one of which gener-



ally stands the dusty miller, drawing in fat bags of grist from the overhanging tackle, or guiding descending sacks of flour to the farmers' teams below. The great water-soaked, overshot wheel, which in my boyish days creaked and groaned in its ponderous, dripping revolutions, is no longer here. Its work is now less picturesquely but more powerfully and silently done by two insignificant turbines, sunk deep in the rapid current of the race.

On entering, our nostrils are tickled by the floating particles of the floury atmosphere, and the building trembles with the rumbling of turning shafts and swiftly moving gear. Passing between bins of grain, and barrels tiered ceiling high, we ascend to the grinding floor, which is almost on a level with the pond. The interior of the building is yellow with the deposits of years of gently descending mealy showers, that have long since hidden the original color of its beams and joists; while the burring sound of the grinding stones falls upon the ear as one of the pleasantest of all the busy hums of human industry. The western gable—resting on piles—rises directly from the pond; its image reflected in the tranquil water has much of the completeness of the mill itself. Often on a summer's afternoon have I from its rear door cast the baited hook, and, if not rewarded by a nibble, have been more than content in idly watching the sleepy bosom of the pond mirror the fleecy clouds floating in the blue expanse above. On such occasions the rural sights and sounds seen and heard on every side were always a source of delight to my nature-loving heart. Stretched on a soft pile of bags, dreaming away a few summer hours in lazily watching the floating cork swirl in the eddies, and in drinking in the moisture-laden atmosphere of the watery landscape, seemed ever a happy occupation and never a loss of time.

On the right are rich fields of grass and grain, and between them and the water on the gently ascending incline of the bank rests a group of farm buildings. They almost surround an ample barn-yard, from which come the pleasant country sounds of lowing cattle and bleating sheep, while awkward ducklings noisily quack as they waddle down to their convenient element. To the left is a little saw-mill—not much more than a timbered skeleton—through whose ribs you see flashing the upright saw, jagging with hoarse cry its hungry teeth into the

slowly approaching logs. Beyond is the great floodgate, with little gurgling rills percolating through its seams and fissures; it is framed with massive, slimy beams, from which the frequent small boy of the neighborhood spends many a happy hour in endeavoring to beguile the wary catfish from the cool depths. The stone dam, with its liquid curtain, extends from the gate to the farther shore which, with a graceful curve, lies in the deep shadows of a steep bank of bordering trees, whose drooping branches pressing outward overhang the peaceful pool,—Narcissus-like, in rapt admiration of their own mirrored beauty. At the head of the pond the waters shallow, and from their meagre depths rise bullrushes and reedy weeds, which finally overgrow the surface and harden into low banks of bog and sedge, through which the supplying brook slowly makes its way.

Thinking over long ago, arresting memory brings to mind many interesting spots in the vicinity of this old mill that are associated with youthful experiences. I have one now in my thoughts—a famous swimming place, called the “Jinny Hole.” It is not far from the head of the pond; the brook suddenly deepens, and its almost perpendicular sides admit of one’s diving in safety from the sedgy banks. It must be confessed that ambitious plungers, who in the hey-day of my remembrance sank too deep beneath the wave, found plenty of soft mud lying in wait at the bottom; and clambering out on the low banks was always a miry business. But there were compensations, not the least being the interest that attached to the tales that were apt to be told, while dressing, of the individual from whom the hole derived its name—Miss Jane Bailey, a simple maiden of complex attainments, who, like Betty Flannigan, could recollect her “frinds for a month” and her “inimies for a year.” Jinny has long since gone over to the “silent majority,” which has also absorbed most of her “frinds” and “inimies,” but fifty years ago she was a noted character along Peapack brook.

James Bailey and his wife Peggy were Irish Presbyterians, who came to this country about 1790, and settled on forty acres of land adjoining the “Old Farm,” at the head of the mill-pond. They both died before 1810, leaving two daughters, Jinny and Peggy, who continued living on the same property. Jinny did all the farm work, ploughing, planting, sowing and reaping,

without calling in the aid of any of the neighbors. Peggy died in 1831, after which Jinny lived alone until her death in 1836. She is remembered as a short spare woman, bent nearly double with rheumatism; her face, the color of parchment, was furrowed and wrinkled by age, while coarse, white, uncombed hair covered her head and hung down to her shoulders. Her dress was always the same, a blue, linsey, home-woven short-gown and petticoat, with a tow string tied around her waist, and a man's large straw hat on her head; she always walked with a cane much taller than herself.

Jinny's appearance was in accord with her character; she believed in witches, ghosts, dreams, signs and sounds, and among the ignorant people of the vicinity had a most uncanny reputation. She was Irish to her crooked back-bone, but, though superstitious, was always ready to fight the church of Rome from the lowest-down Catholic up to the pope. As a red rag is to an infuriated bull, so was the mention of the "Scarlet Woman" within Jinny's hearing. It was only necessary for predatory bands of boy-tormentors to hint that all Irish men and women were papists, to cause her tawny face to flame with passion, and to call out her richest vocabulary of vituperation. At such times she looked a veritable Witch of Endor. Waving her shrivelled arms and shaking her hoary locks in anger, she shrieked contumely upon the heads of her tormentors and upon those of every Catholic that ever lived, while her haggard eyes flashed with all the rage and hate of a Meg Merrilles when cursing the enemies of the heir of Ellangowan. I am afraid that these pages are Jinny's only monumental stone; there is none to mark the grave in Lamington churchyard where she lies buried. With the passing away of the present generation she would probably have been forgotten, so we may consider that we have added a little to local Bedminster history by preserving her memory from oblivion. Her only relics are among my papers. One is the inventory made after her death of her personal effects, which consisted mainly of spinning-wheels, thatching-forks, a hatchel, a flax breaker, a calabash and a few farming implements. Another is Jinny's note of hand given in 1812 to Daniel Melick for two dollars, which, notwithstanding her anti-Catholicism, she signed with a cross large enough to suggest the possibility of its having been made with the end of her long staff.



There is another spot about this old mill that has an especial charm of its own. It is reached by following the stream a short distance to where the highway crosses by a dusty wooden bridge, the centre abutments of which rest upon an elongated island that splits the rapid current of the brook. Dropping from the bridge you may make your way down this green island to where the divided waters join. Seat yourself, now, on this mossy bank under the shadowy concealments of these low-spreading branches; you will find that you have penetrated deep into the heart of rural loveliness. Do you not think it a cosy nook? Although the clear waters of the rapidly flowing stream babble at your feet, the green canopy above is astir with twittering birds, and the soft wind comes laden with the faint cadences of the splash of the dam's cascade, yet, such an air of repose broods over the spot, that you feel the environment of an atmosphere of intense quiet, until you imagine yourself secluded from the world, as if you had found your way to a place of rare beauty hitherto undiscovered. What a bower in which to drowse away an afternoon with Thoreau or John Burroughs! or, should you have no book, just to lie supinely in the long grass, inhaling the woodsy-watery odors—the subtle emanations of earth, trees and stream—till your entire being seems permeated with the very essence of the hidden secrets of nature.

After all, the picture we have attempted to draw is not wholly true. It is of the aspect of the brook in the past rather than of the present. What a disappointment on revisiting familiar boyish scenes to find that they differ from the picture one's memory has carried through all the years! That hills grow smaller may be charged to the lengthened leverage of adult legs, but the decrease in the volume of the water-ways can be more directly explained. As we meet the streams of our boyhood, ranging through wood and meadow, they bear an altered face. Like us they have changed with the years. While it is to be hoped that we with advancing age have grown deeper and broader—not so with the rivers. The vandal hands that robbed the timbered hillsides that guarded their sources were at the same time shallowing their pools and bringing the impeding stones of their beds much nearer the surface. Now, in foamy agitation, they protest with loud voice against the loss of their former torrents.

The procession of the seasons continues, and life on the "Old Farm" goes bravely on! As the years have rolled away many changes are to be noted among the occupants of the "Stone House." Three more children have come to Aaron and his wife: Elizabeth, born on the eighth of November, 1765; Margaret, on the twenty-second of December, 1767; and Maria, on the twenty-fourth of March, 1771. Not only have new lives entered into the family, a little grave is to be seen by the side of those of the grandparents in the Lutheran burying-ground at Pluckamin, for death for the third time has knocked at the door and claimed his own. Elizabeth, one unhappy May morning before she was three years old, while playing about the bark mill, fell under its great revolving wheel and was so crushed that within eight days, on the fourteenth of May, 1768, she died.

Aaron and his family, together with his dependents, are now—1775—the sole occupants of the "Old Stone House"; his brothers and sisters having married and made their homes elsewhere. Philip and Peter married, respectively, Maria and Mary Magdalena King. The wives were probably sisters, and they are presumed to have been the daughters of Marcus King, who was a Bedminster resident at that time and active in church and county measures. Among my documents is a yellow, time-stained bond for two hundred pounds, dated the twenty-ninth of May, 1765, and given by Aaron, Marcus King and Jacobus Van der Veer, to John Van der Veer of Flatbush, Long Island. There is good reason for believing that this bond was to secure money borrowed for the benefit of the Bedminster church. This opinion is confirmed by the fact of the interest—as is shown by the endorsements on its back—having repeatedly been paid by Guisbert Sutphen, who was for a number of years treasurer of that congregation. Some of these interest receipts are written in Dutch; those in English employ the following singular reiterative phraseology: "May the first 17— then Received the full Interest Upon Bond I say Received by me." It is also interesting to notice that the payee signed his name in the five following various ways: Van der veer, V. D. Veer, Van Derveer, Vander Veer and Van Der Veer. It would seem that over a century ago members of this Dutch family were as undecided as to the correct spelling of their surnames as are those of to-day. In

the body of this bond Aaron's name appears as Melogh, but in signing he wrote it Malick.

Johannes' second daughter and fourth child married, sometime previous to 1768, Simon Ludewig Himroth, or, as the name is now spelled, Himrod. They remained in Bedminster until 1772, when they removed to Northumberland county, Pennsylvania, where their descendants are now numerous. Himroth was a compatriot of Aaron's, being a Bendorf boy; this is shown by the following interesting letter written by our old friend of twenty years ago — Joh. Georg Hager. To my mind there is a wholesome flavor about the *Herr Præceptor's* letters that makes pleasant reading. His words have an honest ring, and seemingly flow from the pen of one whose heart beats with sympathy for his fellows. I can fancy him seated in his deep leathern chair in a quaint German parlor, its low ceilings and blackened beams but half lighted by small round panes set in lead. He wears ratteen breeches, and a well-worn velvet coat with brass buttons. On the table by his side is his cotton cap with its pendant tassel; within easy reach is a great mug of blue ware filled with foaming beer, while from his mouth hangs a drooping pipe with a brass stopper and chain. On looking up from his letter, he can see through the open kitchen door the *frau* Magdalena, with gay bodice and blue woollen petticoat, pattering from fireplace to dresser, giving the finishing touches to *noudels* and *knoepe*, or stirring the rich flour soup whose savory odors mingle with those exhaled from a pot of *schokolade*, simmering on the hearth.

Cannot you see the schoolmaster as he gossips over the home news, and fashions his courteous sentences of friendship and good wishes? A little too red in the face perhaps, and a trifle too ample in girth, but his short, upright gray hair surmounts a broad, smooth forehead stamped with intelligence and sentiment. His small blue eyes twinkle with good nature, a comically fierce moustache hides his mouth, and under his full chin there always lurks a chuckle. You may depend upon it he was a good man, and won the hearts of those with whom he came in contact. His letters show him to have been both cheerful and wise; his merry nature and sound understanding must have diffused genial influences, and we can imagine the villagers



always giving him hearty greeting, and ever being eager for a chat on meeting him in the street, or on spying him smoking a post-prandial pipe in his garden.

Now for news from the old country :—

BENDORF February 15th, 1769.

My beloved friends from all parts !

Your letter of November 15th, 1768, as also that one of 1764, came duly to hand, the latter of which I answered immediately, but, as I learn from the former, my answer did not arrive. I received this letter of November 15 by the friend S. Bastian through a messenger sent for this purpose. Since I cannot speak to the above named friend myself, and hearing that he passes the night in Coblenz I set pen to paper instantly, so that no opportunity is lost, and you have news how we get on. So far no special change has arrived, but that cousin Anton Kirberger has died ; his children are partly happy, partly unhappy, in their matrimony, and in that house many things have changed.

Concerning myself, my wife and my children, I can state that we are—thank God—all well. My eldest son is since three years in the employ of a wine-coöper in Amsterdam, and may-be, that if he can not make his fortune there, he will visit America. The second one works with an assessor in Wetzlar, both do quite well. My youngest son and three little daughters are with me. My brother-in-law William is safe and well with your family and will soon celebrate Christening with his second wife. All of them send their best regards to you. My wife and myself, who have not yet visited cousin judge in Höchstebach as long as we are married, made a call on him last fall ; he and she are perfectly well ; I told them all about what you had written to me. He wishes you well. As I write you directly without losing any time and cannot therefore send him the letter yet so I shall ask him to write to you a letter ; as soon as I find an opportunity I shall try my best to send it to you.

I was especially pleased by the news that cousin Simon Himroth has become your brother-in-law, a scholar whom I have taught, and one who has kept himself well all the time ; he will do that also henceforth. I and my wife send him our most cordial regards ; he understands well how to write, why does he not write me ?

In our country a poor time prevails at present, because of the wine-man having since nearly six years not brought a good wine-year ; therefore little food for the poor people. My wife sends her especial regards and kisses to her cousin Veronica. May the Lord redeem her the loss of her dear parents and give welfare to the whole family and have her grow and nourish in luck and well-doing. If you get a chance give my compliments to Herr faesch, who is doing well I suppose since one does not hear much of him ; perhaps he has married there a nice American lady. As I do not know any other news to report I finish with the desire that the grace of God Almighty shall be with you as well as with ourselves, so that we may always have to report good respective news. Give my regards to the cousins all by their names. There may come a time yet, if we should live longer, when we shall see each other personally and entertain ourselves by word of mouth.

Wherewith I remain my highly esteemed cousin's obedient servant and amiably devoted

JOH. GEORG HAGER.

The preceptor was right. Himrod certainly could have written to his old teacher. His first letter from Pennsylvania—with which I will close this chapter—in penmanship reflects much credit upon the tuition of the Bendorf schoolmaster.

NORTHUMBERLAND COUNTY, July 27, 1772.

MY DEAREST BROTHER-IN-LAW: Your letter of the 16th has duly come to hand, from which I learn that you are all in good health, which I am glad to hear; as regards ourselves we are also in good health, although I went through a dangerous illness, still our good Lord has had mercy with me and assisted me in recovering, wherefore I cannot be thankful enough to Him, for I had a most serious pain on the right side of my breast together with a severe hot fever which produced such a fearful collapse within a few days that everybody who saw me never expected to see me up again, but our Lord be blessed for the remedies I took which enabled me within a fortnight to recover, so that I am now commencing to work again. I will have to postpone my returning until September first, because I propose to clear yet three acres of land and to raise wheat on it in order to have some pastry on our return from Jersey. In regard to our things I think it best, if you will have them sold by the time I am coming so that we may get ready to start so much the sooner. You must sell all the household goods excepting all the iron works and any thing made of iron, all the rest we have already ordered to be made here; and then we must have a strong box to put things in. About Mr. Barker we will see and arrange when I come. My salutation to all our friends in Jersey, also from Sturm and his wife; the Lord bless you all, meanwhile I remain yours very truly,

SIMON HIMROTH.

*See grand Ansturm und Sturm, der in dem  
 .den Jahr des Allen Liffen und der  
 Ansturm  
 Simon Himrod*



## CHAPTER XX.

*The Muttering that Preceded the Storm of the Revolution—  
Stamp Acts, Revenue Bills and Other Unjust Imposts  
Weaken the Loyalty of the New Jersey People—Arming for  
the Fray.*

It requires no special sagacity to discover that the embarrassments peculiar to a work of this character are many. The writer often finds himself encompassed by a mass of material from which to choose subjects for his pages, ranging from the merest social and personal trifles up to those important political events that now begin to crowd the stage upon which his actors are distributed. The difficulties of selection are great, and he is forced to contend against the temptation of choosing those pleasing trifles that will embellish the page, rather than to dwell on more momentous affairs which would give added weight and value to the narration. Yet, who shall say what is important—which of the trifles or traditions have value, or should be preserved. The warp and woof of local history are often made up of little motes that the sunbeams of research discover floating in the dusty and indistinct atmosphere of antiquity. Placed on the loom by the weaver of history, they soon fashion themselves into an interesting web, and in conjunction with other facts and theories gradually form a fabric that bears on its texture in the vivid colors of the present a picture of circumstances and events that fitly and beautifully illustrate a past age.

But just here there is no need of hesitating as to the choice of trifles. Important events elbow themselves forward and assert recognition. With the telling of the story of the "Old Farm," it is also necessary to give a current picture of the times;



we are now reaching an heroic period of New Jersey's history, and scenes must be portrayed in which the men of Somerset are to play a no unimportant part. Even before the time of the death of Johannes, the people of the American provinces began to be apprehensive that living the life of colonial dependence on the British crown was not to be altogether one of unmixed peace and prosperity. Most irritating measures, subversive to the rights of Americans, were constantly being introduced in parliament by the Tory element of that body, and taxation without representation seemed to be the policy of the British rulers. From the granite-ribbed hills of Massachusetts to the sandy levels of Georgia the sentiment of the people was pronounced and unanimous against so unjust a treatment, and the tocsin of liberty began to be sounded throughout the length and breadth of the land. By 1763 Benjamin Franklin had already declared that he would cheerfully be willing to spend nineteen shillings on the pound to test the king's right to take the other shilling in unlawful taxes;—a sentiment that received endorsement from the entire country. But, in spite of the earnest remonstrances of the colonies, two years later parliament passed the obnoxious stamp act.

At once from Boston to Savannah could be heard the tumultuous indignation of the populace, which voiced a unanimity of feeling. Spirited resolutions, similar in their character, were passed by both the Virginia and Massachusetts assemblies, the latter calling for a congress of the colonies. On every side were to be heard the mutterings that preceded the storm of the Revolution. In New York city, by the autumn of 1765, vast processions, under the leadership of the popular Isaac Sears, were marching and counter-marching, proclaiming by shout, image and caricature the opposition of the citizens to the stamp act. The coach-house of the royal governor was forcibly entered, and his state carriage was forced to the service of carrying through the town images intended to represent devils, after which, with his other carriages and sleighs, it was burned in the presence of the British garrison. Just at that time it would seem that public opinion condemned the display of fine equipage; previous to the Revolution there were probably not over ten coaches in the city. One was owned by Robert

Murray, a Quaker merchant, whose country-place was between Thirty-sixth and Fortieth streets and Fourth and Fifth avenues ; so great was the prejudice against these aristocratic vehicles that he called his a "leathern conveniency."

New Jersey was not behind the other provinces in an attitude of hostility to Great Britain's encroachments on the constitutional rights of her citizens. To her belongs the distinction of issuing the first Revolutionary newspaper—the "Constitutional Courant." It was published by Andrew Marvel on the twenty-first of September, 1765, at Burlington at the sign of the "Bribe Refused on Constitution Hill, North America." The streets of New York were soon flooded with copies, whereby the agitations of the hour were much increased, but as it was outspoken in denouncing the arbitrary measures of parliament the government quickly interfered, suppressing its sale, and no more numbers were issued. William Coxe, who had been appointed by the Crown stamp officer for New Jersey, was threatened with violence, resulting in his resignation in September ; indeed, by the first of November, when the odious act was to go into operation, it was found that the stamp agents in all the colonies had retired from their positions, and no one was left with authority to execute the law. A congress of delegates from the provinces having met in New York in October, a declaration of rights, a memorial to parliament and a petition to the king were dispatched to England. This action, together with the assiduity of Benjamin Franklin—who was then representing Pennsylvania in London—and the advocacy of liberty-loving members of the house of commons, resulted on the eighteenth of March in the repeal of the stamp act. The feeling of relief throughout the country was intense. As was said by Colonel Lambert Cadwalader, a native of Trenton and a distinguished patriot : "The joyful news almost calls back youth to the aged, gives health and vigor to the sick and infirm."

America was again thought to be free ; the people settled down to their ordinary avocations with the hope that they no longer need fear the invasion of their liberties. A fancied security. It was not long before the citizens found they had new cause for grievance against the home government. The feeling of uneasiness gradually increased, as the march of events

showed conclusively that the policy of Great Britain was to be one of forcing the collection from the colonists of a revenue, without giving them representation or the right of directing their own affairs. The flame ignited by the stamp act had never been entirely subdued, but still slumbered and smouldered beneath the surface, fed by continued aggressions. The passage of the Boston port bill in March, 1774, gave it new life; and indignation and protest were again ablaze from Maine to Georgia. In the light of subsequent history it appears most extraordinary that parliament should persistently have continued to pursue a policy which the most ordinary statesmanship, it would seem, should have divined must inevitably result in the loss of England's most precious colonial possessions. Ill-advised politicians, notwithstanding the warning oratory of Chatham and other far-seeing legislators, continued to pile up the fuel of revenue bills, tea duties and other unjust acts, until at last, in their madness, they applied the torch of coercion, starting a conflagration which was only quenched by a deluge of blood, which cut off from Great Britain three million of subjects, and increased the public debt by one hundred and twenty millions.

We have now reached a time when the mutterings of the coming storm could plainly be heard as an angry hum of distrust and resentment. The colonists were rapidly losing their loyalty to, and affection for, the mother country. The people of the different provinces seemed of one mind; without concerted action, and almost without correspondence, they held informal meetings, and formed self-constituted committees for the purpose of obtaining intelligence, and of advising with the inhabitants of other colonies as to what means should be employed to prevent further encroachments on the vested rights and liberties of the king's subjects in America. In New Jersey a general committee of correspondence had been appointed by the provincial assembly in February, 1774, composed of nine members. Their duties at first seem to have been confined to corresponding and consulting with prominent citizens of the different counties in order to insure a unanimity of sentiment and action when the time should come for the people to assert their individual and collective rights. The committee met on the first of June in New Brunswick, when by letter to the people in Massachusetts



they pledged the citizens of New Jersey to act in concert with the other colonies in whatever steps should be generally agreed upon. They also called upon Governor William Franklin to convene the provincial assembly before the first of August. This the executive declined to do, giving as a reason, "there is no public business of the province which can make such a meeting necessary."

During the months of June and July, a series of meetings were held in the several counties of New Jersey for the purpose of organizing for defence, and for choosing deputies to represent the province in a continental congress, which had been called to meet in the following September. The resolutions passed at the different meetings were much of the same character. They bound the citizens to act in conjunction with those of other counties in any measures that might be decided upon insuring the happiness and safety of the people. They were unanimous in expressing the sentiment that the sufferings and injustice visited upon the people of Boston by Great Britain should be a common cause of grievance for the inhabitants of the entire continent; and that the rights and privileges of America should be protected, even though necessitating the adoption of the most severe and extreme measures.

Permanent committees of correspondence were appointed, and directed to meet in a state convention for the purpose of appointing delegates to the proposed congress. The committees convened on the twenty-first of July, 1774, in New Brunswick, holding a three days session. The seventy-two members present, by their resolution, recognized and acknowledged King George III. to be their rightful and lawful sovereign to whom they owed and promised faithful allegiance. They declined, however, to recognize the right of the British parliament, in which they had no representation, to make laws for, or impose taxes on, the king's American subjects. They bound themselves to oppose with all the legal and rightful means in their power all unconstitutional and oppressive measures of that body, which might be considered dangerous and destructive to the colonies. They advised the appointment of a general congress of committees of the respective colonies, who should have power to pledge the public honor and faith in all

efforts that should be made to redress the wrongs of the people.

The meeting of this first continental congress at Philadelphia in September, 1774, is a matter of history. It was a fairly representative body, the delegates having been chosen from among all classes of the people. The proceedings were opened by its president, Peyton Randolph, of Virginia. He was followed by a man of the people—Patrick Henry—who spoke as “Homer wrote.” Moved by the fire of genius his tall, awkward figure grew majestic as he exclaimed: “I am not a Virginian, but an American!” When he took his seat it is said that there was no longer any doubt that he was the greatest of American orators, and ranked among the ablest champions of constitutional liberty in America. He and George Washington, mounted on thoroughbreds, had travelled together to Philadelphia from the “Old Dominion.” A historic journey! Picture to yourself these illustrious men riding side by side; the opulent planter with a mature mind of almost unequalled sagacity and comprehensiveness, and the plain county lawyer with already a national reputation as a political thinker; picture them slowly traversing the Virginia woods, cantering over the swells and swales of Maryland, fording the rapidly running streams, and climbing Pennsylvania’s rugged ridges. As they reasoned together of the dangers threatening the country, could their saddle-talk have been preserved, what a contribution it would now be to our knowledge of the springs that fed the patriotic currents of thought animating the hearts and actions of these heroic Virginians.

It is hardly necessary to refer to the debates and resolutions of the members of this first continental congress; neither need we enlarge upon the elaborate exposition that was drawn of the rights of the king’s subjects in America, or upon the favorable statements of the wrongs for which the colonists demanded redress from Great Britain. Suffice it to say that it was recommended that during the winter throughout the colonies township meetings should be held, when a more direct appeal to the people could be made, and a more general expression of their sentiments obtained. Following this suggestion of congress, meetings in the several townships in New Jersey were held, at which committees

of observation and inspection were appointed. The members of these township committees then met in each county, and by a majority vote chose a county committee of correspondence. In my possession is a saffron-colored, time-disfigured, original paper containing what appears to be a concise digest of the minutes of the first four meetings of the Bedminster committee of observation and inspection, together with the expenses incurred thereat. The person who penned this document may have been a patriot, but his spelling was woful. The paper, however, is interesting and valuable as showing the members of the committee to have been Stephen Hunt, Aaron Malick, Guisbert Sutphen, John Wortman, John Voorhees, — Gaston and — Lane (probably Matthew).

We have already learned something of some of the men forming this committee—of Hunt, as owner of the mill on Peapack brook; of Sutphen, as active in the congregation of the Bedminster church; of Wortman, as one of the earliest settlers at Pluckamin. This last member was also a justice of the peace and the first blacksmith in the village. It was not long before his activity in the popular cause brought upon him the distinction of having a price set upon his rebel head by the enemy. The squire, as he was called, told in after years with much pride that he had not only entertained Washington at his own table, but had shod his horses with his own hands. Matthew Lane, it is believed at this time lived in the old dwelling known as the Fenner house, and lately occupied by Mrs. Sarah Harmer. He was a merchant, and in 1787 Pluckamin's leading storekeeper; his store adjoined his residence, which continues to this day to bear many of its original Revolutionary characteristics. He was the nephew of Guisbert Sutphen, and the son of Matthias Lane, who came from Monmouth county in 1745, and purchased three hundred acres of land east of Van Vleet's mills, a portion of which is still in the possession of his descendants. John Voorhees was an associate of Aaron Malick, and was a well-to-do farmer living on the road running from the Larger Cross Roads to Peapack. At his death in 1807 Aaron was one of the administrators of his estate. He was a deacon of the Bedminster Reformed Dutch church.

At two o'clock on the morning of the twenty-fourth of April,



1775, the Middlesex committee of correspondence received at New Brunswick a despatch from the New York committee announcing that the battle of Lexington had occurred on the nineteenth instant. The committee endorsed this message, and the express-rider flew on to Princeton, thence to Trenton, and on to Philadelphia, reaching there at nine A. M. on the twenty-fifth, having been one hour less than six days in coming from Watertown, Massachusetts, including stops at all the principal places on the way. The country was, of course, in a blaze of excitement. No truer prophecy was ever uttered than that ejaculated in broken tones by pastor Jonas Clark of Lexington, over the lifeless forms of his seven parishioners that the British volley had stretched at his church door on the village green: "From this day will be dated the liberty of the world." It was now no longer the mutterings but the storm itself that the people of New Jersey were forced to face. For months the black clouds of strife and dissension had been slowly and surely rolling on, enshrouding the land in gloom and apprehension; now the citizens awoke to the realization that civil war with its attendant horrors was to be the heritage of their generation.

The general committee of correspondence, which had been appointed by the convention of the preceding July, was at once convened, meeting at New Brunswick on the second day of May, 1775. It directed the chairman to call a provincial congress for the twenty-third instant, and it desired the several counties to speedily appoint their respective deputies. This second convention or provincial congress met at Trenton on the twenty-third of May, remaining in session for eleven days. Its president, Hendrick Fisher; its secretary, Jonathan D. Sergeant, and its assistant secretaries, William Patterson and Frederick Frelinghuysen, were chosen from among the Somerset delegates. President Fisher was ripe in years and experience, having been born in Germany in 1697. Though by reason of strength he had long since passed the allotted span of life, he was as ardent in the cause of the colonies as was the most devoted of the younger New Jersey patriots. When the parliamentary aggressions forced the province into an attitude of opposition to the British government, he was a member of the colonial assembly and at once became conspicuous among

his fellows as a champion of liberty. From that time until his death in 1779, he was active in his duties of serving the people. Mr. Fisher was a forcible debater and exerted an important influence in the deliberations of the provincial assemblies, and in those of the many executive committees of which he was a member. In Domine John Frelinghuysen's time he was a helper and lay-preacher in the Raritan church, and some of his sermons are reported to have been rich in doctrine, and in their illustrations of spiritual christianity. His home was on the south side of the Raritan river, a little below Bound Brook, on a property lately owned by Abraham I. Brokaw, and there he is buried in a little family graveyard overgrown with a thicket of thorns and small bushes.

In this congress youth and old age joined hands in presenting an undaunted front to those who proposed warring against the rights of the colonies. Assistant-secretary Frelinghuysen, who has already been referred to as the son of Domine John Frelinghuysen, was barely twenty-two years old. During this same year he represented the province in the continental congress, and his name often appears in Somerset annals among its soldiers and statesmen. We shall find him doing excellent service at the battles of Trenton, Princeton and Monmouth, and he was appointed major-general and commander-in-chief of New Jersey and Pennsylvania troops for the western expedition, during Washington's presidency. At the bar of the state he stood among the first, and when he died in 1804, lamented by his country, he left to his posterity the legacy of an illustrious career and an unsullied record. Those familiar with the name of Frelinghuysen—and who in New Jersey are not?—know that many of his talents and virtues were transmitted to his children and grandchildren. Jonathan D. Sergeant was another son of Somerset of whom any county might with good reason be proud. He was a resident of Princeton, having been born there in 1746, his mother being the daughter of the Reverend Jonathan Dickinson, of Elizabethtown. He studied for the bar with Richard Stockton the elder, and became distinguished as a lawyer, and eminent in public affairs. In 1778 he removed to Philadelphia, and was soon chosen attorney-general of Pennsylvania. In 1793,

he died of yellow fever, falling in the cause of humanity. When most of the population of Philadelphia fled in terror from that disease-stricken city, he with a few other equally noble souls faced the danger, and remained to assist and relieve the sick and destitute.

This congress, recognizing the impending conflict, proceeded to put the colony on a war footing by passing a militia bill, which boldly declared it to be "highly necessary that the inhabitants of the Province be forthwith properly armed and disciplined for defending the cause of American Freedom." An ordinance was also passed laying a war tax of ten thousand pounds, proclamation money, of which Somerset's proportion was about nine hundred pounds. Other provinces, and the second continental congress then in session, were notified of the steps taken by New Jersey; and before adjourning a new committee of correspondence was appointed, which included Fisher and Frelinghuysen. This committee was directed to instruct the sub-county committees to secure the signatures of the inhabitants to articles of association of a form adopted by the provincial congress. These articles pledged every person to support and carry into execution whatever measures might be recommended by the continental and provincial congresses.

With the session of this first provincial congress then sitting at Trenton it would appear that the Bedminster committee of observation and inspection had business, as in its minutes before referred to is the following entry:—

May 25, 1775, John Wortman and gisbert Sutphen when sent to the Congress at trintown, out two Days & Expençe of going 5s. 3d. & at trentown 9s. 7d. Returning 5s. 3d. in all Sutphen payd on the above 17s. 5d. John wortman 2s. 8d.— John wortmans to the Ride of his horse to trintown 3s. 9d. Gisbert Sutphen for his horse 3s. 9d. Included in the above.

At the same meeting the following minute was made:—

Mr. Hunt has payd to the man that Came from Brunswick to train the men £0. 4s. 8d.

While the people in all parts of New Jersey were quick to respond to the recommendations of congress that they should arm and discipline themselves for defense, it would seem that Somerset county took the lead in putting muskets in the hands of its citizens. The "Pennsylvania Packet" of the twelfth of June states that:—



The martial spirit which prevails among the inhabitants of Somerset county, in New Jersey, truly merits the attention of the public. We have certain intelligence that they are forming themselves into companies, and daily exercising, to become complete masters of the military discipline; and particularly, that the township of Bridgewater, in said county, met at Raritan, the sixth instant, and chose Mr. Abraham Ten Eyck, captain, under whose command eighty-five volunteers immediately enlisted, to be in readiness at an hour's warning, to march for the assistance of any neighboring colony, on any emergency. Their pay and other necessities are provided by said township. The other counties and townships, it is hoped, will follow their example, as it may be necessary to repel force by force, in order to secure our national rights and privileges.

Bedminster did not need the example of Bridgewater to fan the flame of patriotism; for its men had already taken the initiative, and were arming for the fray. They had even anticipated the action of the provincial congress of the twenty-third of May, as is shown by the following minute made at a meeting of its committee of observation and inspection held on the eighteenth of May, at the house of Anthony J. Jacobs:—

Borrowed from John Wortman in cash £2. 0s. 0d. to Gow to new york to Buy arms [three words blurred] Stephen Hunt chosen to go to new york to Buy the arms.

At another meeting, "when the Company met to Rase men," the minutes show that it was agreed "that the Captain shall have one Dollar per Day to treat his men when he trains his men that once a wick." This meeting was held on the twentieth of May "at the house of John phoenix"—probably at the tavern at the Lager Cross Roads, kept during the Revolution by John Sutphen, who married John Phoenix's daughter, Sarah. It stood on the site where is now the dwelling of David Dunham, and Washington and his generals, in passing westward through the township, always made it their stopping place. Sarah Phoenix used to tell her grandchildren that when the army marched through the Larger Cross Roads, open house was kept for the continental officers, and that she distinctly remembered General Washington's reserved and absent demeanor one day at dinner, while Generals Knox, Wayne, and others were inclined to be merry over their wines and desserts.

Among the many duties of the committee of observation and inspection, not the least arduous one was that of securing guns, powder and ball. As early as in October, 1774, the British ministry instructed all the royal governors to seize whatever

arms and ammunition might be imported into their provinces. Munitions of war were consequently scarce; after the supplies of the cities of New York and Philadelphia were exhausted it became necessary for the members of the committee to ransack the country, and purchase of farmers, mechanics, and others, old muskets, shotguns and firelocks of every description. Those out of order were sent to be made serviceable to the gunsmiths, Henry Watkey and Joseph Robinson at New Brunswick, and to Lebbeus Dodd at Mendham who before and during the Revolution repaired all the guns and made all the clocks for that part of the country. The raw material for bullets was more easily obtained, although the people were forced to make many personal sacrifices in order to comply with the requirements of the hour. The provincial congress had directed the township committees "to collect all the leaden weights from windows and clocks, all leaden weights of shops, stores, and mills, of one pound weight and upwards; also all the lead in and about houses and other places." Commissioners were appointed to receive the same from the committees, paying therefor sixpence per pound, proclamation money, together with expenses. Bedminster was soon denuded of what had suddenly grown to be considered a precious metal, many of the families even cheerfully sacrificing their pewter dishes and platters, which were much valued by colonial housewives.

The next session of the provincial congress convened on the fifth of August, continuing until the seventeenth instant. Since the adjournment important events had rapidly followed each other. The British force in Boston had been augmented; the battle of Bunker Hill had been fought on the seventeenth of June; Washington, having been appointed commander-in-chief, had already drawn his sword under the great elm on Cambridge common, his army being composed of fourteen thousand five hundred militia, without uniformity in discipline, subordination, arms, dress or organization. On the twenty-eighth of June Sir Henry Clinton's land force of three thousand men and Sir Peter Parker's fleet of ten frigates and gun-ships, after fighting two hours and throwing fifty tons of shot, had been repulsed at Charleston with the loss of a frigate and one hundred and seventy men. All this had brought the colonists to a full realiza-

tion that they were involved in the miseries of civil strife, with little or no probability of an accommodation with what had always been considered the home government, until the questions at issue had been arbitrated by many bloody conflicts. The deputies proceeded to deliberate upon the condition of the country, and to pass such ordinances as the gravity of the situation demanded: one to increase the effectiveness of the militia; one for the more thorough establishment of the civil government; one to insure the more prompt collection of the war tax; and others of equal importance. A "committee of safety" was appointed, which during the recess of congress was to possess much of the powers of that body. Among its members were Frederick Frelinghuysen, Hendrick Fisher, Jonathan D. Sergeant, Peter Schenck and Enos Kelsey, all of Somerset. The authority of this committee was almost dictatorial, its members were appointed by successive provincial congresses, and in a majority of their votes were vested general powers for the security and defence of the colony. It continued in existence until October, 1776, which was the date of the first meeting of the legislature under the state constitution. After that time the governor and a "council of safety" (composed of twenty members) were invested with requisite authority to act during the intervals between meetings of the legislature.







## CHAPTER XXI.

### *The Declaration of Independence and the Overthrow of the Provincial Government—The Arrest of the Royal Governor, William Franklin.*

The most important of New Jersey's provincial congresses, and the final one for the year 1775, opened on the third of October and continued for twenty-two days. Its members had been elected by the people, the previous bodies having been provisional in character, the delegates emanating from the choice of informal county meetings or conventions. The amount of business transacted at this session was very great. The whole colony was in a state of intense agitation, and excitements ruled the hour. It was a time of civil discord, when neighbor feared neighbor and friend suspected friend. Disputes and difficulties between the people were rife, culminating in all manner of charges and complaints, which were poured in upon congress in the shape of accusations, petitions and appeals. Communications from township and county committees had to be received and deliberated upon, charges against loyalists investigated, and many complaints of personal grievances considered.

Ordinances were passed for the raising of regiments, the strengthening of the militia, the purchase of munitions of war, and, to meet the many pecuniary necessities of the hour, arrangements were effected for the issue of bills of credit to the amount of thirty thousand pounds, proclamation money. But we will not speak in detail of all the important matters that were patiently and ably considered by this patriotic congress, among whose officers were Samuel Tucker of Hunterdon, as president, and John Mehlem of Hunterdon and Hendrick Fisher of Somerset, as vice-presidents. It is enough for us to know that at a

period when legislative difficulties of the most involved character had to be encountered, these deputies conducted their deliberations with wisdom and prudence, and by their intelligent and far-seeing devotion to the best interests of the colony laid a firm foundation upon which was afterward raised the superstructure of a great state. This important session adjourned to meet at New Brunswick on the first Tuesday in April, 1776. One of its final acts was to appoint a committee of safety to govern the province *ad interim*, among whom were Samuel Tucker, John Hart and John Mehelm of Hunterdon, Hendrick Fisher and Ruloff Van Dyke of Somerset.

All this time the second continental congress, which had convened on the tenth of May, was in session, and in constant communication with the congresses and committees of the several provinces. It is unnecessary to speak in detail of the many important measures that were ably considered by this celebrated legislature, or of the ardor of its patriotic members whose soul-stirring debates in the historic State House at Philadelphia still arouse the enthusiasm of mankind, the wide world over. Wherever the name of liberty is known and loved, the broad comprehensive views and deep political knowledge exhibited by the many distinguished men composing this congress, have been recognized and extolled. Since the formation of society the record of no other representative body contributes pages of such value and brilliancy to the history of the cause of human progress. We should be false, however, to the continuity of the story of the times did we fail to note that by early June in 1776 Richard Henry Lee of Virginia had submitted a motion, declaring the colonies to be "absolved from all allegiance to the British crown, and that all connection between them and Great Britain is, and ought to be, dissolved." This was but anticipatory of the culminating act of the memorable second day of July which saw the final adoption, without a dissenting voice, of that resolution for independence which was to insure a name and a national existence to the United States of America.

The second of July was, therefore, the momentous day on which was broken the last political link binding the colonies and the mother country. A committee was at once appointed to draft a declaration of reasons justifying this all-important step

taken by the delegates. Two days later, on the morning of the fourth, Thomas Jefferson as chairman of that committee presented to the continental congress the immortal Declaration of Independence. Among the illustrious men who listened to the reading of this document there is one figure that stands sharply defined on the canvas which portrays the scene of the crowning act of this historic body. It is that of John Witherspoon, a distinguished representative from New Jersey, whose patriotism and foresight at a crucial moment is believed to have powerfully promoted the prompt acceptance of the Declaration of Independence. After Jefferson had finished the reading of this paper, the members of congress were appalled by the solemnity of the occasion, and by the apparent realization for the first time of the portent of the document. The knowledge seemed suddenly forced upon them of what its adoption must entail upon the country. It meant a continuation of the war, and all the miseries that would necessarily follow a prolonged civil conflict. Should the American arms not prevail, complete subjection of the entire people must follow, and for the signers and promulgators of this incendiary and rebellious instrument naught could be expected but an ignominious death. Through the halls of congress an intense silence prevailed. It was a critical moment. When the painful hush should be broken the temper of the first speaker might decide the weal or woe of the people. As has been said by a witness: "The very destiny of the country seemed to be suspended upon the action of a moment."

Suddenly a stalwart form arose—that of a man full of years; his hair whitened by the snows of many winters. With a countenance resolute and determined, and a voice trembling with the intensity of his emotions, he broke the deep silence of the chamber: "There is," said he, "a tide in the affairs of man, a nick of time; we perceive it now before us. The noble instrument upon your table, which insures immortality to its author, should be subscribed this very morning by every pen in the house. He who will not respond to its accents, and strain every nerve to carry into effect its provisions, is unworthy the name of a free-man. Although these gray hairs must descend into the sepulchre, I would infinitely rather they should descend thither by the hand of the public executioner than desert, at this time, the



sacred cause of my country." The speaker sat down, and a great sigh of relief and murmur of approval went up from his listeners—the tension was over, the crisis safely passed. In the debates which followed, the speeches of the members displayed much of the spirit of patriotic firmness that had characterized the timely appeal of this excellent man, resulting finally in the adoption of that portentous document \* which secured the independence of the thirteen states.

John Witherspoon was a Scotch divine who in 1768 had been called to the presidency of the College of New Jersey, and to the pastorate of the Presbyterian church in Princeton. This was not his first appearance in the arena of rebellion. When the Highlanders flocked to the royal standard unfurled by the young pretender in the north of Scotland, Witherspoon, though the pastor of a parish, raised a corps of militia and marched to his support. The young parson-soldier's enthusiasm carried him into the battle of Falkirk, where he was taken prisoner; he lay captive in the castle of Donne until after Culloden. In America he proved a patriot of great influence in the councils of the nation, and served the state in congress with honor and ability for six years, and in 1776 was also a member of the provincial congress, afterwards the "Convention of the State of New Jersey." As a Princeton resident, we may fairly claim Doctor Witherspoon to have been a Somerset man; it was many years after that time before the county was shorn of its southern border which then included that seat of learning, in order to contribute to the new county of Mercer.

It must be remembered that until early in 1776 the semblance of royal government continued to exist in New Jersey. Up to

---

\* The declaration signed that day is not the venerable parchment now so carefully preserved in the state department at Washington. This latter document was subsequently engrossed, and it was not for many months afterward that all of its appended signatures were thereon inscribed. Indeed a number of its signers, among them Charles Carroll and Dr. Benjamin Rush, were not even members of congress on the fourth of July, 1776, but were elected delegates some weeks later. The original declaration has not been preserved and may possibly have been destroyed by order of congress. Much interesting, and what to many would be considered new, information regarding the adoption of the Declaration of Independence, is to be found in a paper by William L. Stone in Harper's Magazine, Vol. LXVII., p. 208. The Witherspoon incident is given in Alexander Graydon's "Memoirs of His Own Times."

the fourth of July all official documents and proclamations ended with the phrase, "God save the King." At this time, with the exception of that grand old "Rebel Governor," Jonathan Trumbull of Connecticut, there was not in all the thirteen colonies a chief magistrate but that was strongly prejudiced in favor of British interests, and zealous to check the uprising of the people. Governor William Franklin occupied the proprietor's house at Perth Amboy—yet extant, and used as a home for aged Presbyterian ministers. His duties mainly consisted in keeping his government advised as to the treasonable acts of the citizens. The colonial assembly still had a legal existence, though the house had been prorogued by the governor on the sixth of December, 1775, until the third of January, 1776; it never reassembled; and thus terminated the colonial legislature of New Jersey.

The provincial congress of 1776 met on the first of February at New Brunswick; owing to the exigency of the times it was convened by the council of safety before the date to which the previous congress had adjourned. The business before this session was largely composed of following the suggestions made by continental congress as to the raising and equipping of regular battalions, and for supplying the province's portion of the munitions of war. Among the many ordinances passed was one making radical changes in the franchise laws, whereby all persons who had lived one year in the county, were worth fifty pounds in personal estate, and had signed the articles of association prepared by the township committees of observation and inspection, were entitled to vote for deputies. The first election under this ordinance took place in May, 1776, and the deputies chosen from Somerset were Frederick Frelinghuysen, William Paterson, John Witherspoon (also member of continental congress), Jacob R. Hardenbergh (pastor of the Raritan Reformed Dutch churches), and James Linn. Judge James Linn was one of Somerset's aristocrats and a citizen highly esteemed throughout the country. He lived on a well improved plantation of six hundred acres, lying in the Mine brook valley in Bernards township, about one mile east of the village of Bedminster. He had quite a retinue of servants and twenty slaves. His estate had

been inherited from his father; on it he continued to live as one of the first gentlemen of the county until 1810.

On Monday, the tenth of June, this most important of all of New Jersey's provincial congresses met at Burlington. Its sessions continued until the twenty-first of August, though twice adjourned, the first time to Trenton and the second to New Brunswick. This congress enacted all laws for a time in the name of the colony, but, having on the second of July adopted a state constitution, on the eighteenth of the same month it assumed the title of the "Convention of the State of New Jersey," thus giving birth to a free and independent commonwealth. Another act of this body distinguishing it above all preceding congresses was the deposition of the royal governor. As has been said before, the semblance of kingly power still continued in New Jersey. In addition to the representative of the crown, the king's council still had an existence, though shorn of some of its members by their disaffection. Among these was Lord Stirling of Somerset, who had been suspended by the governor in September, 1775, because of having accepted a military commission from the provincial congress.

There is no doubt that the greater part of Governor Franklin's administration was much to the advantage of the colony, as he fostered and encouraged many enterprises that promoted its prosperity. Could the people of New Jersey forget his subsequent conduct as a vindictive loyalist, they would be better able to look back upon his government with respect, and appreciate that during his long administration, for much of the time he displayed a commendable desire for the welfare of the province. Such without doubt is his record, and we may even accord to him sincerity of opinion and purpose in identifying himself with those who were endeavoring to sacrifice the liberties of the country. But with the dissensions that arose between the executive and the citizens, he is said to have become petulant and unwise. As the people grew to be alert in regard to every question touching their rights, his arrogance increased, and he rapidly became destitute of prudence and self-control. In the provincial assembly he made great endeavors to defeat the ratification of the actions of the first continental congress, and from that time up to his deposition was but little more than a spy for the public enemy.



As has been said on a former page, the governor was a son of Benjamin Franklin,—the natural son, for who was his mother is not known. The date of his birth—1730—was one year previous to that of his father's marriage. He was taken home by Benjamin Franklin and reared and educated as though born in wedlock. The New Jersey people, who well knew of this bar sinister on the Franklin escutcheon, were much chagrined on learning in 1762 who was to be their new governor. John Penn, one of the proprietors of Pennsylvania and the son of its founder, wrote to Lord Stirling from England in September of that year that he thought it a dishonor and a disgrace to have such a man at the head of the government; and that he hoped that some effort would be made before his Jersey friends would put up with such an insult. This letter was written from Stoke-Park. The manor adjoins that little ivy-clad church which since Gray wrote his imperishable elegy has been an international shrine. But few of its many American pilgrims, as they leave the highway and follow the little footpath leading across Stoke-Park to Stoke-Pogis churchyard, know that the fortune that established this handsome English seat had its origin on the banks of the Delaware.

William Franklin, just after being appointed governor of New Jersey, was married in St. George's church, Hanover square, London, to Miss Elizabeth Downe. Strange as the coincidence may be, he, too, had an illegitimate son, born two years before. As had done his father, so did he; naming the child William Temple Franklin he took him home to his bride, and the boy was reared with as much solicitude as if the offspring of marriage. Benjamin Franklin grieved much over the failure of his son to espouse the cause of the colonists. He wrote "that nothing had ever affected him with such keen sensitiveness as to find himself deserted in his old age by his only son; and not only deserted, but to find him taking up arms against him in a cause wherein his good fame, fortune and life were at stake." The grandson was a warm adherent of the Americans, and, deserting his father, allied his fortunes to those of his grandfather, with whom he remained associated until his death. He subsequently wrote a biography of Doctor Franklin, and died in France in 1823.

The prestige and patriotism of the governor's father caused the people to judge leniently of the attitude the son assumed toward the cause so dear to the popular heart; this, too, at a time when loyalists were looked upon with extreme disfavor. But, as the months rolled on, his pronounced acts in support of the British ministry were too great for the forbearance of the people in their newly-born sovereign capacity. An intercepted despatch in January, 1776, had led to Lord Stirling's placing him under arrest, and on parole. For some months he continued to occupy the gubernatorial residence at Perth Amboy, and to nominally direct the affairs of the province, but having called upon the old assembly to meet on the twentieth of June, the provincial congress declared this to be in direct contempt of the orders of the continental congress. On the fifteenth of June William Livingston, John Witherspoon, William Paterson and John Mehelm were appointed a committee to cause the arrest of the governor, and to depose him from office. Colonel Nathaniel Heard, commanding the 1st Middlesex battalion, under the direction of this committee made the arrest, and the governor was brought before provincial congress under guard. He treated that body with great indignity; did not hesitate to charge its members with being low-bred men who deserved to be hung as rebels, and declared them to be without sufficient education for devising or carrying out plans for the public weal. When he had finished his violent tirade, Doctor Witherspoon sprang to his feet and fixing his keen eyes upon the king's representative poured on him a copious stream of irony, delivering a "rebuke so withering as to cause the boldest to hold his breath with astonishment." In concluding, after referring to Franklin's ill-gitimacy, he said:—

On the whole, Mr. President, I think that the governor has made us a speech every way worthy of his exalted birth and refined education.

Acting under the advice of Washington it was decided by congress to transfer the deposed executive to the keeping of Governor Trumbull of Connecticut, whereupon Franklin was confined in a house in East Windsor. Here he remained a prisoner for two years; upon being exchanged, he established himself in New York which continued to be his home until 1782, when he returned to England. To cover his losses the British

government allowed him the sum of eighteen hundred pounds and an annual pension of eight hundred pounds. William Livingston was appointed governor in his stead, a position which he ably filled, owing to repeated re-elections, until the year 1782. \*

It will be noticed that deputies of the provincial congress were always inclined to call upon men of Somerset to occupy leading positions in their body, or to carry out their most important measures. When the time came to depose this royal governor, two of the committee chosen to undertake this delicate and disagreeable office were from our county, while a third, John Mehelm, afterwards became a resident, and filled for many years to the great satisfaction of the people the position of surrogate. At this time he was living in Hunterdon county, at a place since known as Hall's mills, where he owned one hundred acres of land and a flouring mill. He was a staunch Jerseyman whose patriotism stood many severe tests; from the first murmuring of the colonists against the home government he was an advocate for independence, and throughout the war was an associate of, and a counsellor with, the ablest and purest men of the country. He served as a member of the provincial congress, the convention, and the committee of correspondence and safety.

William Paterson, who was New Jersey's second governor, has always been considered one of the great men of that time. He, too, displayed the most intelligent devotion to many public trusts in state and country; represented New Jersey in the senate of the nation, and died in 1806 as judge of the supreme court of the United States. His residence was an antiquated stone mansion, no longer in existence, on a plantation known as the "Paterson Farm," lying two miles south of Somerville on the Raritan river. Here, as the guest of Judge Paterson, Aaron Burr spent much of his time while an undergraduate at Princeton, and here he prepared for admission to the bar. Of Witherspoon we have already learned much, and as to the

---

\* His salary was fixed at £550, equal to 1466½ Spanish dollars. Marriage licenses, letters of administration and other perquisites increased the annual stipend about £350. The salary of the chief-justice was £350 and of the other two judges £300; treasurer £150, attorney-general £30. Delegates to congress \$4 a day while present, and members of assembly \$2 a day. During Franklin's administration the salary of the colonial governor had been gradually raised to £3,200, with perquisites amounting to about \$1,000.



third member of this historic committee, William Livingston, all who know the a, b, c, of Revolutionary history are familiar with the valuable record of this distinguished war-governor. His sound judgment in counsel, and his coolness and courage in action and execution, brought inestimable benefits upon the country, and his services in the cause of freedom take rank with those of Washington, Hancock and Adams. His residence was in Elizabethtown—an ample brick mansion known as “Liberty Hall,” which is still standing, owned and occupied by John Kean, the great-grandnephew of the governor. It has had a top storey added; otherwise with the exception of modernized windows and fireplaces it is much the same as it was during the Revolution. A large tree which faces the front door was planted in 1772 by Livingston’s oldest daughter Susan, who afterwards married John Cleves Symmes.

We have now sketched in a hurried manner the successive steps taken by the people of New Jersey in their progress from a condition of being the mere dependent subjects of a foreign government to that of free citizens of a free republic, able almost at once to assume the rights of membership in the family of nations. Well-informed readers may deplore the time lost in telling over again the well-known story of the outbreak of the Revolution; but without a proper stage-setting our Somerset actors in the approaching drama could not well play their parts.

As a background to the scene in which they are to figure, it is also necessary to consider the condition of the country in the spring of 1776. At that time it was truly but the beginning of things for the United States of America. Where is now the centre of population buffaloes browsed in herds, and wild deer had naught to fear from the crack of the woodsman’s rifle. Even the valleys through which flow the Mohawk and the Genesee were almost destitute of white population, and those regions were still the hunting and fighting grounds of the painted warriors of the dreaded Six Nations of the North. Great cities, the pulsations of whose markets are to-day noted in the moneyed centres of all Europe, were not yet conceived, and their sites were solitudes of wildernesses.

Eastern and Middle Pennsylvania lay quiet in the shade of a vast and sombre forest; Pittsburgh, a mere collection of log

cabins, was just becoming known as a point where emigrants built their keel-boats, and launched themselves and their fortunes on the waters of the Ohio. New York city in population was but little larger than is Plainfield of to-day, and smaller, by many thousands, than is Elizabeth; those two populous places were then, respectively, but a hamlet and a small village; while Somerville was not to have an existence for yet a quarter of a century. Newark in 1777 contained but one hundred and forty-one houses, and at no time during the war did it exceed one thousand in population. New Brunswick claimed about the same number. A round cupola capping a square wooden church-tower rising above a few clustering houses, was all that marked where now centres over half a million of people as the city of Brooklyn. Powles' Hook was represented by a ferry-tavern and a few scattering dwellings; it was not till 1820 that it was rebaptized as Jersey City, and even then had but three hundred residents. Only about one-quarter of the lands of East Jersey had been located, and the inhabitants of the entire state numbered less than one hundred and fifty thousand. In the entire country there were but twenty-eight postoffices; as late as 1791 New Jersey possessed but six, and at that time Somerset county appears to have had none.





## CHAPTER XXII.

*The Turbulent Sea of the Revolution—The Soldiers of Somerset  
—William Alexander, Lord Stirling; Captain Andrew  
Malick, and Private John Malick.*

And now we find the men of Somerset prepared to do their part toward manning the new ship of state, which is at last fairly launched on the turbulent sea of the Revolution. But notwithstanding the ominous notes of war, the daily routine of Bedminster life continued. Sun-browned men went to and from the fields, peddlers wandered from village to farm, and women gossiped as they spun or stepped in their short kirtles to the music of their swiftly whirling yarn-wheels.

There was little or no break in the industries that centred about the "Old Stone House." The bills, bonds and correspondence preserved from that time show that work continued at the tannery and on the farm, their products finding a ready market. By this time the land had been considerably curtailed of its original area. At the death of Johannes a division of his estate was made by will among his children. All the provisions of this last testament are not known, no copy having been found, but references in subsequent deeds show that the tannery, homestead, and two hundred acres fell to Aaron. The southern portion of the farm, embracing one hundred and sixty-seven acres, being all the land fronting on the Barnardsville and Lamington road, was devised to Aaron's youngest brother, Peter. Upon this land, sometime before the Revolution, he erected a house and farm-buildings. They were located on the site of the present residence of Alfred Johnson in the village of Bedminster. Here on the breaking out of the war Peter was living with his wife and three children, David, John, and Catharine.



Andrew's share of his father's estate was probably what remained of the four hundred and nine acres of land in Greenwich township, Sussex, now Warren county, which Johannes had purchased of John F. Garrits in 1747. It will be remembered that in 1758 one hundred and eighty-one acres of this purchase were conveyed to Gottfried Moelich. At any rate, this is where Andrew settled on leaving the homestead, and he continued to be a resident of that township until his death in 1820. On the fourth of July, 1776, he received a commission as captain in the 1st Regiment, Sussex militia, commanded by Colonel, afterwards General, William Maxwell, and throughout the war was active in the service of his country.

In the year 1769 Andrew was prominently connected with forming the congregation of St. James Lutheran church. Its first edifice was erected at the close of that year about three miles from Philipsburg, on the road leading to Springtown. It was built of logs, with a breadth of thirty by a length of forty feet, having a straw thatched roof, from which comes its present name, "Straw Church." This primitive structure made way in 1790 for a larger stone edifice, which was followed in 1824 by the brick building now in use. The old records of this congregation, which begin with the year 1770, name as pastors, Christian Streit and Peter Muhlenberg. The latter was at that time the resident clergyman of Zion Lutheran church at New Germantown, Hunterdon county, and for the congregation of this "Straw Church," probably acted as supervising rector. This was the same Peter Muhlenberg who afterwards became famous as the Revolutionary general. Christian Streit was also the pastor of a Lutheran church at Easton. The records of St. James' show Andrew to have been continuously a communicant, and for many years an elder and warden. Upon the pages of its old church book are also recorded the baptism of four of his children, the first having been Catarina, who was born on the fourth of April, 1770, and baptised on the third of June. In the graveyard of this church, surrounded by his wife, children, and many of his descendants, Andrew lies buried. His crumbling tombstone bears the following inscription :

In Memory of

CAPTAIN ANDREW MELICK.\*

Who was born December 24, 1729, and departed this life June 29, 1820,

Aged 90 years, 6 months and 5 days.

Beneath this earth the remains  
Of an old and respected fellow  
Citizen reposes. Stranger pause and  
Contemplate the frailties to  
Which human nature is exposed,  
And ere you leave this spot learn  
To know and feel that man is dust  
And to dust must return.

His wife Catharine, who died on the twenty-ninth of October, 1804, in the sixty-fourth year of her age, has the following verse upon her gravestone :

Rest gentle corpse beneath this clay,  
Now time has swept your cares away,  
For surely now all troubles cease  
While in the grave you rest in peace.

At the breaking out of the Revolution Aaron was beyond the age required by the acts of provincial congress for serving in the militia. As has already been shown he was a member of the Bedminster committee of observation and inspection, and furnished the sinews of war. He did more than this; he buckled the armor on his oldest son John, then a lad of but eighteen, and sent him off with his blessing to fight the battles of his country. It is to be regretted that our knowledge of John's Revolutionary services is not more complete in its details. In General William S. Stryker's "Roster of the Men of New Jersey in the Revolution," published by authority of the state, he appears as a private in Captain Jacob Ten Eyck's company of the 1st Battalion, Somerset militia, and also as a private in one of the New Jersey regiments of the continental line.

At the outset of the war this 1st Battalion was commanded by William Alexander—known to history as Lord Stirling; a son of Somerset in whose Revolutionary record the people of the county justly take much pride. While in England in 1756 he laid claim to the earldom of Stirling, which had been in abey-

---

\* Although Andrew's name appears on his tombstone "Melick," throughout life he generally spelled it "Malick," and it was so written on the muster-rolls of the 1st Sussex Battalion.

ance for a number of years. Although successful in establishing a direct descent, the house of peers, before whom his claim went for final adjudication, decided against him. The title, however, seems to have been allowed, in this country at least, by courtesy. Washington, in his correspondence, invariably addressed him as "My Lord," and always spoke of him as "his lordship." On his return to America in 1761, he settled at Basking Ridge on the estate, as has been shown in a previous chapter, that had been acquired by his father, James Alexander. Here he made improvements which for taste and expense were much greater than anything of the kind ever attempted in the province. His grounds were laid out in the manner of an English park, and the spacious mansion possessed all the characteristics of a gentleman's seat in the old country. This large dwelling, together with its connecting offices, stables, and coach-houses, were ornamented with cupolas and gilded vanes, and surrounded a paved court or quadrangle. There was a grand hall and an imposing drawing room, with richly decorated walls and stuccoed ceilings. Jones, the tory historian, who, of course, bore Lord Stirling no love, states that while living here "he cut a splendid figure, he having brought with him from England, horses, carriages, a coachman, valet, butler, cook, steward, hair-dresser and a mistress." Here this American nobleman lived the life of a country gentleman of fortune; he rode in a great coach with gilded panels emblazoned with coronets and medallions, and altogether affected a style and splendor probably unequalled in the colonies. He was a member of the king's council, a colonel in the militia, and was naturally the most conspicuous figure in the county.

At the first sign of a severance of the relations between the colonies and the home government, Lord Stirling warmly espoused the popular cause, and throughout the war, as is well known, proved himself a stanch patriot, and a soldier brave to rashness. On the thirteenth of October, 1775, the provincial congress of New Jersey, acquiescing in a recommendation of continental congress, organized two battalions, consisting of eight companies of sixty-eight privates each. This was the first call on New Jersey, and, together with a third battalion organized in February, 1776, it was known as the "First Establishment" of troops from the colony for the continental army. The men



were enlisted for one year, and Lord Stirling was commissioned as colonel of the 1st Battalion. All readers of history are familiar with his subsequent career. He was soon promoted to be a brigadier-general and fought stubbornly at the battle of Long Island, where he finally was captured by the enemy. Having been exchanged for the governor of Florida, at the battle of Trenton his brigade opened the fight. For his distinguished services he was elevated to the rank of major-general, and as such, in 1777, we find him fighting with Washington at the bloody battle of Brandywine. The next year, he it was who, at the most critical time on the field of Monmouth, so effectively handled his artillery as to dismay and check the British, while at the same time exciting their surprise and admiration. So, throughout the war, he was ever conspicuous among the leading and most noted of the Revolutionary generals. His appearance was imposing, and it has been said that, next to Washington, he possessed the most martial presence of any commander in the army. Lord Stirling never returned to his home amid the New Jersey hills. He died in 1784 at Albany, New York, while in command of the "Northern Department."

When Colonel Alexander was transferred from the militia to the continental line, Lieutenant-Colonel Stephen Hunt was promoted to the command of the 1st Somerset Battalion. The acquaintance of Hunt we have already made as the owner of the mills adjoining the "Old Farm" on the opposite side of Peapack brook. He will also be remembered as a member of the committee of observation and inspection with Aaron Malick. That John Malick should have enrolled himself in this regiment cannot be charged to any special spasm of patriotic virtue. He had no choice. As early as the third of June, 1777, the provincial congress declared that the time had come for the people of the province to arm for defence. On that date, and in August and October of the same year, acts were passed making it obligatory on all citizens, between the ages of sixteen and fifty, to enroll themselves into militia companies that the several committees of safety were directed to form. These companies were then embodied into regiments which were distributed throughout the state, Somerset's quota being two. Each man was obliged to furnish himself with a "good musket or firelock, and bayonet,

sword or tomahawk, a steel ramrod, worm, priming-wire and brush fitted thereto, a cartridge-box to contain twenty-three rounds of cartridge, twelve flints, and a knapsack." Militiamen were also required to keep in readiness at home one pound of powder and three pounds of bullets. The only men of proper age who could avoid militia service were those employed by the province, or who were occupied in the manufacture of government supplies. Of course, there were instances of individuals of cowardly nature or weak patriotism who were glad to take advantage of this exemption and seek such employment. In March, 1778, the Hibernia furnace in Morris county was engaged in producing shot and shell, and consequently offered itself to such persons as a city of refuge. The superintendent of the works, in speaking of the exemption of his employés, thus wrote to his principal, Lord Stirling :—

My Lord, this is the only thing that induces the greater part of the men to work here, as they are farmers and have left their farms and come here solely to be clear of the militia and from no other motive. I find they are determined to shuffle the time away they are exempt and do as little business as they possibly can. Could not your Lordship send us some of the Regular and Hessian deserters? I will do my endeavour to make thirty or forty of them serviceable.

The militia law of August, 1775, in compliance with the recommendation of continental congress, authorized the raising of minute-men; Somerset furnished four companies formed in one battalion. They were uniformed in hunting shirts, took precedence over other militia, and were required to be in constant readiness to march to any point for the defence of New Jersey or a neighboring colony. So many of the minute-men joined the continental army—as it was their privilege to do—that the battalions became much reduced, and before the first of March, 1776, they were disbanded and incorporated in the militia. The first service that the Somerset troops were called upon to perform was in answer to an application of the New York committee of safety for a force to aid in suppressing tories on Long Island. Seven hundred militiamen were consequently ordered to march under field officers Colonel Nathaniel Heard, Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Thomas, and Major John Dunn. Of this command one hundred were minute-men from Somerset, and there are reasons to believe that John Malick was among the number. The battalion marched from Woodbridge on the sev-

enteenth of January. On reaching Manhattan Island they were reinforced by three hundred men, among whom was a New York city volunteer organization, which, it is said, was composed of the most abandoned of the population. This reinforcement was under the command of Major De Hart of New Jersey, and on the twenty-ninth instant the combined forces crossed to Long Island and proceeded at once on the object of the mission, which was the apprehension of violent loyalists, and the disarming of the disaffected of the inhabitants. The political aspect of affairs on the western end of Long Island was very different from that of its neighbors, patriotic New England, New Jersey, and the rest of New York. Loyalty and rebellion blended, the balance of power, before the arrival of troops, being largely in favor of the former. The rich aristocrats, and the phlegmatic Dutch who were also well-to-do, were averse to disturbing the peace and order of the communities. This was especially so in Queen's county, which was largely tory, and the county of King's was almost equally reluctant to show its influence on the side of the Revolutionary movement.

The march of this invading force through these two counties spread dismay among the inhabitants. Colonel Heard was well fitted for his ungrateful mission, and was indefatigable in pursuit of the objects of the movement. So far as lay in his power he treated friend and foe with civility and kindness. He found it difficult, however, to control his auxiliary force, especially the company from New York city; their excesses caused him much pain; and acrimony and bitterness were engendered among the residents of the island against the military representatives of the colonists. To quote from the "Collections of the Long Island Historical Society":—

So flagrant and scandalous were many of the outrages perpetrated by De Hart's force that the officers of the minute-men, who had doubtless been chosen agreeably to the orders of Congress as prudent and discreet men, were shocked at their license and longed to be rid of their disorderly companions. The minute-men of New Jersey were respectable farmers and tradesmen, heads of families in many instances; and these humane men scorned the petty plunder which the others appropriated, as much as they commiserated the distress of which they were compelled to be the authors.

The above quotation is a fair example of the many warm tributes found in Revolutionary literature to the yeomanry



of our state. In them was a military force, unique in the history of warfare. Far be it from me to decry the inestimable services of the men of the continental line—their bones lie under the sods of too many well-fought battle-fields. But the New Jersey militiamen stand as distinct figures on the Revolutionary canvas, and their praises cannot be too often or too loudly sung. They well deserved the liberty for which they fought, and the remembrance of the self-sacrifice with which they exerted themselves in behalf of freedom and independence is a heritage dearly prized by their descendants, who now enjoy all the blessings that flow from their valuable services. It must be acknowledged that for a short sixty days, or maybe forty, at the close of the year 1776, they faltered in their faith, and, discouraged by the fearful adversities of the hour, many were inclined to abandon the cause, and seek protection for their homes and families from a victorious enemy. But it was a temporary disaffection. They soon learned to detest the promises of the invader, and, angered by the outrageous injuries visited on them by the British, they resumed their arms. Henceforth the militia of the Jerseys stood pre-eminent among the defenders of the liberties of the people. As was written at the time by one who, though not a resident of the state, was a witness of and a participant in their glorious achievements :—

They hovered around the enemy and harrassed him beyond his stationary guards; the aged watched, explored, designed—the youth, alert, courageous, and ever ready for the outset, planted a hedge of pickets in General Washington's front to abate his painful solitudes, to conceal his nakedness, and support the Revolution during a period in which a second army was totally disbanded and a third levied under the eyes of a British commander.

On this head we also have the testimony of Washington. In a letter written to the Pennsylvania legislature in October, 1777, he says :—

The exertions of the New Jersey militia have kept the enemy out of her limits, except now and then a hasty descent, without a continental regiment. Besides doing this, she has sent, and is now sending reinforcements to this and the northern army.

John Hancock, too, writing in September of the same year to Governor Livingston, testifies :—

The militia by their late conduct against our cruel enemies have distinguished themselves in a manner that does them the greatest honor, and I am persuaded

they will continue to merit, on all occasions when called upon, the reputation they have so justly acquired.

In August, 1776, the militia was divided into two divisions—that is, every organization was divided into two parts. One was ordered to report immediately to General Washington for one month's tour of duty, as it was termed; the other was required to be in readiness to relieve the first. In this manner, until the close of the war, the two divisions did alternate and valiant service, acting with the continental army at the battles of Long Island, Assunpink, Princeton, Germantown, Springfield and Monmouth. They also, when not on a tour of duty, were frequently called upon to defend their homes and communities, and performed a distinguished part in the fights and skirmishes known as Quinton's Bridge, Hancock's Bridge, Three Rivers, Connecticut Farms and Van Nest's Mills (Weston).

Although early in 1776 campaigns were being prosecuted in the North and South, the main theatre of war continued to be in the East. But in April it was transferred to New York. Too soon the scene will again be shifted—the next time to the west side of the Hudson River, for New Jersey was yet that year to know the martial sound of trumpets, to grow familiar with the tread of armies, and to feel the dread stroke of war. On the seventeenth of March the British acknowledged the superior generalship of Washington by evacuating Boston, embarking in their fleet and sailing away for Halifax. As the commander-in-chief felt confident that the ultimate design of the enemy was to attack New York, he decided to make that city his base of operations, and consequently marched with his army to Manhattan Island. On the ninth of July the fleet from Halifax passed inside of the Hook. A few days later Sir Henry Clinton with three thousand men arrived on Sir Peter Parker's battered squadron that had just returned from the misfortunes of Charleston. Almost daily thereafter ships crossed the bar laden with troops, until on the twelfth of August eighty-two transports and six men-of-war arrived, bearing a final contingent of nearly eight thousand Hessians and one thousand English guards. At this time New York bay and its vicinity presented a maritime scene unequalled before or since. Almost its entire surface was covered by ships, attended by innumerable galleys, bateaux and

small boats. Thirty-seven men-of-war guarded four hundred transports, which had brought to America thirty-five thousand soldiers and sailors, together with artisans, servants, trains of artillery, and all the necessary horses, provisions, and munitions of war for that great body of men.

During the summer the country was in a painful tension. The sense of the great struggle so surely impending was uppermost in every one's mind. On the third of June the continental congress called upon the colonies for thirteen thousand eight hundred militia to re-inforce the army at New York. New Jersey was required to furnish thirty-three hundred men, and eleven days thereafter the provincial congress ordered that the force be raised to serve until the first of December, and to be formed of five battalions, composed of eight companies of seventy-eight men each. One of these battalions contained three companies from Somerset and five from Hunterdon, its field officers being Colonel Stephen Hunt, Lieutenant-Colonel Philip Johnston and Major Joseph Phillips; Hunt became disabled, and resigned on the thirteenth of July, when the lieutenant-colonel was promoted. Colonel Johnston was subsequently killed at the battle of Long Island, and was succeeded by Major Phillips, Captain Platt Bayles being promoted to major. When this command marched away, John Malick carried a musket in its ranks. The five battalions were brigaded under Colonel Nathaniel Heard, who was promoted to be a brigadier-general. His brigade formed a part of Washington's army, which on the eighth of August was composed of seventeen thousand two hundred and twenty-five men, mostly raw troops, of whom thirty-six hundred and fifty-eight were sick and unfit for duty. Of this force eight thousand lay on Long Island between Bedford and the East river, the rest on Manhattan Island, the line extending as far as King's Bridge, the extreme points being seventeen miles apart. The command with which John Malick was connected was on Long Island.

On the twenty-seventh of August this little army of poorly armed, undisciplined militia, that was stretched thinly along an extended line south of Brooklyn, received the shock of a vast, thoroughly-equipped body of British and Hessian soldiers, supported by a great fleet. Defeat was almost a foregone conclusion ;



in the light of subsequent knowledge it seems extraordinary that the American army was not entirely annihilated. The total loss of the enemy was three hundred and sixty-seven men, of whom but twenty were killed, five being officers. The estimated loss of the Americans in killed, wounded and prisoners was two thousand, among the latter being Generals Sullivan and Lord Stirling, and one who served his country with equal ardor on that day, though in the more humble position of the bearer of a flint-lock—John Malick.

Included among the dead was Colonel Philip Johnston, the commandant of the provisional battalion to which the Somerset companies were attached. At a critical period of the battle his command occupied the right and centre of Sullivan's advance line at the redoubt at Flatbush pass. Here our Jersey soldiers made a heroic stand against Colonel von Donop's force of German yagers, riflemen and grenadiers. In the heat of the action a musket ball tore its way into the heart and ended the life of Colonel Johnston. So perished, just thirty-five years to a day from the date of his birth, a gallant officer, and one of the first to fall in the service of the new state. He was the son of Philip Johnston, who lived in a large stone mansion at Sydney in Hunterdon county, in which house the younger Philip was born in 1741. The colonel had acquired a military reputation before the Revolution, having gained credit as a brave soldier while serving with the New Jersey battalion in the French war. His behavior at the engagement on Long Island was most marked. General Sullivan, who witnessed his spirited conduct and death, said of him: "No officer could have behaved with greater firmness and bravery;" and General Jeremiah Johnson characterized him as being as gallant an officer as ever commanded a battalion, and declared his conduct on Long Island to have been remarkable for intrepidity and heroism. Colonel Johnston was a fighter by heredity, as his family was descended from an ancient barony in Anandale, Scotland, which in early days was a warlike clan and a great terror to border thieves. Like many brave soldiers the colonel was a warm friend, and a tender, loving husband and father. It is recorded that in 1776 when he was leaving home for the front he went into the room where his three little children were in bed, and, kissing them farewell, knelt down and

commended his family to God in prayer. One of those children, Mary, became the wife of Joseph Scudder, and was the mother of Doctor John Scudder, the world-renowned missionary to India.

It is not within the province of this work to narrate the details of the battle of Long Island. When the relative condition of the two armies is considered, that it should have resulted in so dire a disaster is readily to be seen was inevitable. George Collier, commander of "His Majesty's Ship Rainbow, forty-four guns," in a letter to England, thus wrote of the calibre of the opposing forces. While not endorsing the sentiment or the conclusion of the extract, we may value the information as the evidence of an eye-witness, and esteem it the greater because written after the engagement by an enemy who, naturally, would not desire to rob the victors of any of their laurels by unduly belittling the strength and effectiveness of their opponents:—

Mr. Washington of Virginia, who had formerly served in the last war against the French, had the chief command of the rebel army and took upon himself the title of General. The utmost of his collective force did not amount to sixteen thousand men, all of whom were undisciplined, unused to war, wanting in clothing and even necessities, and very ill provided with artillery and ammunition. His officers were tradesmen of different professions, totally unacquainted with discipline, and consequently utterly unskilled in the art of war.

The writer then goes on to speak of the English army:—

General Howe had now the satisfaction of finding himself at the head of full twenty-four thousand fine troops, most completely furnished and appointed, commanded by the ablest and best officers in the world, and having a more numerous artillery than had ever before been sent from England. Such was the exact state of both arms before any operation was undertaken. Justice on the royal side and treason on the other made the balance still more unequal.

Another foreign officer who participated in the battle—Colonel Von Heeringen of a Hessian regiment—also thus wrote as to the American soldiers:—

No regiment is properly dressed or armed, every one has a common musket like those which citizens use in Hussia when they march out of town on Whitsuntide, with the exception of one of Stirling's regiments that was dressed in blue and red and consisted of three battalions, for the most part Germans enlisted in Pennsylvania. They were tall fine fellows, and carried beautiful English muskets with bayonets.

John Malick's campaigning for the time-being was at an end. A few days later he was taken over to New York and delivered with many other prisoners to the tender mercies of Provost-

Marshal Cunningham, of infamous memory. He was thrown into one of the New York sugar-houses, and his sufferings in that pest-prison can better be imagined than described. Lieutenant Robert Troup of the Long Island militia, in an affidavit made before Gouverneur Morris, gives a distressing account of the treatment of himself and other prisoners taken at the battle of Long Island, and placed in charge of the provost. They were allowed no fuel, and the provisions were so scanty and of such an inferior quality that, as he expressed it:—

He doth verily believe that most of them would have died if they had not been supported by the kindness of some poor persons and common prostitutes who took pity on their miserable situation and alleviated it.

There were three sugar-houses at this time in use as prisons: Rhinelander's, on the corner of William and Duane streets; Van Courtlandt's, on the northwest corner of Trinity churchyard and Thames street; and a third, the most noted, a five-storey stone building which stood a few feet east of the Middle Dutch church, at what is now numbers thirty-four and thirty-six Liberty street. During the fall and winter thousands of persons were incarcerated in these sugar-houses, and the unfortunates suffered great hardships because of overcrowding, filth, and disease. All persons of humanity were outraged by the treatment of the prisoners. Their rations were of the worst possible character, and when winter came many perished with the cold, they being provided with neither fire nor covering. So great were their sufferings that fifteen hundred died. The dead were dragged from their prisons, and piled up outside the doors till there were enough to make a load. They were then carted away to the Potters' Field, tumbled helter-skelter in a great trench, and but partially covered with earth. The miseries endured by the prisoners were made much greater by the inhumanity of their jailor, Provost-Marshal Cunningham. The name of this man will go down through the ages as one to be execrated by all lovers of humanity. Not content with the physical sufferings he was enabled to heap upon those in his charge, he did not hesitate to add the most terrible mental afflictions. It was his delight to torture the minds of special prisoners by announcing that on a certain day they were to be hanged. He it was who, on the twenty-second of September of



this year, executed with unnecessary brutality young Nathan Hale, the "patriot spy," whose last words were "I only regret that I have but one life to lose for my country." In conducting this execution the provost acted in a most unfeeling manner. The brave captain was hanged from an apple tree in Colonel Rutgers' orchard, near where now Market street and East Broadway intersect. He was surrounded by spectators who were indignant at Cunningham's brutality, the women giving loud sobs in their sympathy for the sufferer. Notwithstanding Hale's appeals he was denied the services of a clergyman; and even a Bible, for a moments' devotion, was refused him. The provost destroyed letters that the sufferer left for his mother and friends, under the plea that it would not do to let the rebels know there was a man in their army who could die with so much firmness. For the benefit of those who take comfort in compensations it may be well to state that this same Captain Cunningham was hanged in London in 1791 for forgery. In his dying confession he acknowledged that when provost in New York he had executed many prisoners on his own responsibility, and without trial. How long John Malick remained in the clutches of this monster is unknown. Tradition speaks of his having been taken from prison by a British general whom he was forced to serve until included in a cartel. When finally exchanged he enlisted in the continental line, but of his additional Revolutionary record nothing has been preserved.

Our future interest in the American army lies in its experiences on New Jersey soil. We may therefore pass over Washington's masterly retreat from Long Island under the cover of a dense fog; the evacuation of New York city; the successful stand made by the continental army at Harlem; the indecisive action at White Plains on the twenty-eighth of October; and the fall of Fort Washington on the sixteenth of November, which may be considered the greatest disaster that befell the American arms during the war. Before the latter catastrophe the main British army had moved to the east side of the Hudson, in the vicinity of Dobb's Ferry. Washington, feeling uncertain as to the designs of the enemy, dispatched Heath to Peekskill with three thousand men to guard the approaches to the Highlands, and leaving Lee with over five thousand men at

Northcastle, crossed the Hudson with what was left of the army, and encamped in the vicinity of Hackensack. General Greene was already in New Jersey with a considerable force, garrisoning Fort Lee, immediately opposite Fort Washington.





## CHAPTER XXIII.

### *The British in New Jersey—Washington's Retreat to the Delaware—General Lee in Somerset.*

Now commences New Jersey's bitter experience of the war. On the nineteenth of November Cornwallis's army, six thousand strong, crossed the Hudson in two hundred boats, and scaling the precipitous heights of the Palisades at old "Closter Landing," the scarlet-coated column with bristling bayonets moved rapidly on Fort Lee. This was not the first appearance of the foe in the state. Soon after the arrival of the British in the harbor of New York a detachment was landed on Constable's Hook, which place was occupied for some time. The necessity was occasioned by the presence of General Mercer's "Flying Camp" on Bergen Neck, the English fearing that the Americans might prove annoying to the fleet, as some of the vessels lay close to the shore at the mouth of the Kills.

On the approach of Cornwallis the garrison at Fort Lee abandoned that post and fell back to Hackensack, joining the main body of Washington's army which had made a stand on the right bank of the river. The combined forces now numbered less than six thousand men, but its commander was actively engaged in endeavoring to procure reinforcements. Urgent appeals were made to Governor Livingston for militia, and couriers were dispatched to General Lee, who had been left with between three and four thousand men (not counting those whose time was about expiring) east of the Hudson, directing him to make all haste in joining the main army with his command.

From this time up to the cessation of hostilities, the soil of New Jersey was the board upon which many of the most desperate of the Revolutionary games were played, and her



territory was much of the time the fighting ground or plunder of the enemy. It is claimed that her losses in proportion to wealth and population were greater than that of any other state save South Carolina. With the exception of the winter of Valley Forge and the Virginia campaign against Cornwallis in 1781 the continental troops were constantly in, or on the confines of, the state. In addition, her militia was constantly called upon by the commander-in-chief for special services, or to swell the number of the American army.

But we must proceed with the disheartening tale of the retreat across the Jerseys. On the twenty-second of the month Washington reached Newark, Cornwallis having forced him to withdraw from Hackensack. On the following day his army was mustered and found to contain but fifty-four hundred and ten men fit for duty, of whom the enlistments of only twenty-four hundred and one extended beyond the coming January. One brigade, that of General Bradley, reported but sixty men present, while General Beale's brigade was twelve hundred strong, but the time of the latter's men expired within a week. Washington remained at Newark for six days, when the van of the enemy appearing his column was set in motion for "Brunswick." The British troops rested for several days at Newark, and their stay was marked by desolation and ruin. Its citizens received their first lesson in the miseries of being under the heels of a conquering host. Tory and patriot were alike plundered, women and young girls were much worse than insulted, and as a witness of that time writes, those only escaped robbery and murder who were fortunate enough to procure a sentinel to guard their doors. He further recites that "there was one Captain Nutman who had always been a remarkable tory, and who met the British troops on Broad street with huzzas of joy. He had his house robbed of almost everything. His very shoes were taken off his feet, and they threatened to hang him."

On leaving Newark the Americans moved in two columns, one marching *via* Elizabethtown and Woodbridge, and the other through Springfield, Scotch Plains and Quibbltown (New Market), they coming together again at New Brunswick. Washington had hoped to make a stand on the south bank of the Raritan, having confidently expected to receive reinforcements at

New Brunswick. He was doomed to disappointment. Lee, who had been repeatedly ordered to hurry forward his command, had not yet come up, and the militia did not respond to the calls of the governor. In addition, a general spirit of insubordination pervaded the army, and hundreds, deserting the cause, went home, believing that a further struggle against the superior organization, arms and discipline of the British troops would be unavailing. Cornwallis, on the other hand, on approaching New Brunswick was largely reinforced by Howe, and Washington's weary, wayworn, shattered battalions were again obliged to take up their hurried flight toward the Delaware. The retreat was by way of Princeton and Kingston, and the inhabitants of lower Somerset had an unhappy first view of the continental army. They had good reason for despairing of the patriot cause, when they beheld their country's defenders, many of them bare-footed, and all illy protected from the wintry weather, dwindling away with each mile of their disheartening march, while being chased across the state by a well-clad, victorious force, "tricked out in all the bravery of war." During the night that the column marched from New Brunswick the rain fell violently, and the roads were deep with mud caused by the passage of artillery and wagons. About daybreak on the following morning the rear-guard passed through Rocky Hill, every step of the exhausted men being above the ankles and often to the knees in mire.

Washington, anticipating the possible necessity of abandoning the state to the enemy, had collected at Trenton all the boats of the upper Delaware. He reached that place with the main body of what was left of the army on the third of December, having left Lord Stirling with a detachment at Princeton to watch and endeavor to check the enemy until the baggage and stores could cross the river. The total strength of the American force, as shown by a return made on the first instant, was four brigades of sixteen regiments, with a total apparent number of forty-three hundred and thirty-four men, but of these, ten hundred and twenty-nine were sick and absent, while those left were rapidly leaving the fleeing column. On the sixth, Stirling was reinforced by twelve hundred men from Trenton; but on the seventh the enemy advanced in such force as to necessitate the hurried

retreat of the entire American army. By midnight Washington, with all of his men, was west of the Delaware; as the troops disembarked from the last boat the music of the pursuers could be heard, as their advance entered the town that had just been evacuated. What remained of the army—less than twenty-five hundred men—were now safe. The enemy, after vainly endeavoring to obtain boats, showed no disposition to continue the chase, but went into winter quarters in the different towns, content for that campaign with the occupation of the state, and, as they thought, the annihilation of an army. The rebellion was believed to be crushed. Howe and Cornwallis returned to New York, and the latter, thinking his services to be no longer required in America, decided to sail for England.

For the time-being New Jersey was a captured province. While, as will be presently shown, many of its citizens made their submission to the victors, the cruelties perpetrated on the inhabitants by the occupying army were such as to greatly increase among the masses the feeling of hatred toward British rule. The historians of England find great difficulty in hiding the stains blotting the pages that recount the atrocities committed by British soldiers on New Jersey soil; committed, too, with the connivance, or at least the acquiescence, of their commanding noblemen—was word ever so misused?—the Howes, Cornwallises, Percys and Rawdons. The sufferings of the people were not only caused by their being forced to impoverish themselves in furnishing billets and forages to the British, but by such marauding and plundering by the troops as would have disgraced the followers of an eastern satrap. General Howe's army was at this time given up to indiscriminate and universal thieving, the officers not only countenancing the outrages, but participating as well. The men were licentious and permitted to commit every manner of rapine, violence and cruelty; consequently the tartaned Scot with his flowing skirt, the natty grenadier, and the dashing dragoon with scarlet coat and bright yellow short-clothes, looked upon a Jersey rebel as legitimate prey.

Max von Eelking, the German historian of the Revolution, writes that "Sir William Howe was much given to sensuous pleasures and enjoyments of every kind, frequently forgetting in their



pursuit the high duties of a general. He kept at all times a good kitchen and usually also a mistress, and liked to see others enjoy themselves in the same way." Governor Livingston, in a speech before the assembly in 1777, declared that the English soldiers, while in New Jersey, warred upon decrepit age and defenceless youth, plundered friends and foes, destroyed public records and private monuments, and, to quote his own words, "violated the chastity of women, disfigured private dwellings of taste and elegance, and in the rage of impiety and barbarism profaned edifices dedicated to Almighty God."

When the British came marching through Middlesex county in pursuit of the retreating Americans, Dunlap the art historian, then a small boy, accompanied his father to Piscataway, who went to claim from General Grant, the commandant of a detachment, protection as a subject of the Crown. Though but a lad he was much impressed by the lawlessness and looting of the troops. In later years he thus described the scenes witnessed on that occasion :—

The men of the village retired on the approach of the enemy. Some women and children were left. I heard their lamentations as the soldiers carried off their furniture, scattering the feathers of beds to the winds, and piled up looking glasses with frying pans in the same heap by the roadside. The soldiers would place a female camp-follower as a guard upon the spoil while he returned to add to the treasure.

While many instances might be given of the sufferings visited on the Jersey people at this time, a few illustrations will suffice to excuse or warrant so wholesale a condemnation of the occupying army. Of course, those citizens most active in the patriot cause were especially marked for the vengeance of the British and their partisan allies. No feud so deadly as one between brothers. The ferocity exhibited at this time by the tories against their fellow countrymen, and often against neighbors, was inhuman to a degree that in these days of peace and amity it is difficult to comprehend. General Greene, in writing to his wife from New Jersey on the sixteenth of December, thus speaks of the sufferings of the inhabitants :—

The tories are the cursedest rascals amongst us—the most wicked, villainous and oppressive. They lead the relentless foreigners to the houses of their neighbors, and strip the poor women and children of everything they have to eat and wear; and after plundering them in this sort, the brutes often ravish the

mothers and daughters, and compel their fathers and sons to behold their brutality; many have fallen sacrifices in this way.

In the same month Greene wrote to Governor Cook of Rhode Island that General Howe's ravages in New Jersey exceeded all description—that "houses were plundered, men slaughtered, women, and even little girls not ten years old, ravished in the presence of husbands, sons and brothers."

In the line of the writer's maternal ancestry are the Middlesex families of Ayres, Dunn, and Dunham. Of the last named, fifteen members served in the army, nine of whom were spoliated by the British. David, David, Jr., and Samuel, of Piscataway, had their houses and barns burned; and Elisha, Jonathan, Josiah and John, of Woodbridge, also suffered great losses. Azariah—of the committee of safety—was robbed of many valuables, and even his aged father, the Reverend Jonathan, of Piscataway, was plundered by the thieving soldiery. Samuel, Jacob and Reuben Ayres, who were in the army, had their Woodbridge houses pillaged: Samuel lost cattle, sheep, hay and women's clothing, among the last being "one black Calamanco Cloak lined, new," and "one Scarlet Cloak, part worn;" Reuben's house was burned, and his horses and a "good gun" appropriated.

Fifteen members of the Dunn family were in the army, ranging in grade from a private to a colonel. Eleven of them were despoiled by the English and tories. Captain Hugh Dunn,\* of the 1st Middlesex militia — the writer's great-great-grandfather — at the outbreak of the war had just completed a new house. It is still to be seen at the end of a long lane running from the turnpike, about one mile east of New Brunswick; its old-fashioned well-sweep and the great tree in the door-yard, in which is imbedded a Revolutionary cannon-ball, testifying of ancient days. When the enemy overran Middlesex county, many of the inhabitants deserted their homes. Not so Captain Hugh, who determined to stay on his lands and defend his possessions. He was forced to give up his new dwelling to British officers and to move with his family into the

---

\* He married Abigail Carman, who brought him a dowry of bedding and bed curtains, a silver tankard, a horse and side-saddle, and her negro servant "York."

kitchen-part of the old house, in the main body of which was quartered a company of Hessians. In the end he fared much better than did some of his neighbors who moved back into the country, his losses being confined to furniture, cattle, grain and other personal effects, among them being—as he recites in his statement to the authorities, preserved at Trenton—a “new coat for my Negro.” He and his wife paid dearly in another way, however, for just then a baby was born to them, and when the little girl began to talk, a stammering tongue and an impeded speech, which lasted through life, told the story of the excitements and fears of that turbulent period. Sturdy Hugh Dunn was a stanch patriot, and did valiant service in the cause of freedom. His convictions were of the strongest character, and they are illustrated by many curious stories preserved by his posterity. After the famous Boston tea-party, throughout his long life, he never again permitted himself to taste the “cheering cup.” He even held his own brother in contempt, who at the outset of the war sold his farm and moved to Canada. Many years afterwards, when this same brother sent him from the British Possessions a present of a barrel of fish, he would not even grant it storage, but set it out on the road-side, giving all passers-by permission to help themselves.

All this winter of 1776 and 1777 the Dunns of that neighborhood were marked for British vengeance. The well-furnished two-storey house of Justus Dunn was burned; Daniel's horse was taken; Benjamin lost books, furniture, and, as he states, a “stout negro man”; Jeremiah was forced to contribute horses, cattle and crops to the enemy; Major John Dunn, a member of the committee of observation and inspection, was robbed of horses and household furniture, including two clocks valued at sixteen and thirty pounds; Lieutenant-Colonel Micajah Dunn, another member of the committee of observation and inspection, lost his horse, two guns and clothing. The above items are given to show how certain it was that those serving the country should suffer at the hands of the British. During their stay of a little over six months in Middlesex county these ungenerous foes ravaged the property of six hundred and fifty persons, and burned more than one hundred dwellings, mills and other buildings. Charles D. Deshler, an authority on Middlesex history,



estimates that at that time there were but two thousand householders in the county, which would show that about one in every three was pillaged.

A son of Somerset prominent at this period for valuable services rendered his country was that able scholar and statesman, Richard Stockton, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. He was a man of wealth, and lived on a handsome estate near Princeton, which had descended to him from his forefathers. His homestead was repeatedly plundered by the enemy, and on the thirtieth of November, 1776, while visiting a Mr. Cowenhoven, he and his host were dragged from their beds by a party of refugee royalists. They were carried to New York, and Mr. Stockton was treated with such barbarity as to bring on an illness which in 1781 resulted in his death. A neighbor of Richard Stockton, and also a signer of the Declaration of Independence, was John Hart—"honest John Hart." He was a substantial farmer living in the vicinity of the village of Columbia, in Hunterdon, now Mercer county. Though an illiterate man, and quite wanting in the cultivation and accomplishments which, with few exceptions, distinguished the members of the second congress, he possessed sound sense, strong will-power, and great tenacity of purpose, qualities which enabled him to be of signal service both as an actor and prompter in the drama of the Revolution. Hart's devotion to the interests of the revolted colonies brought upon him the malignant hatred of the tories, and the persecutions of the enemy. His sufferings during the first year of the war were most severe; his property was destroyed, his family dispersed, and he himself, driven from the deathbed of his wife, was hunted through the woods, and from cottage to cave. So dire a treatment laid the foundation of disease which cut short his career in 1780.

Although Bedminster township lay far north of where the British cantonments were located, it did not escape the miseries inflicted on the communities by the enemy. In December, 1776, a squadron of British cavalry suddenly appeared in Pluckamin, and visited all manner of indignities upon the place and people. Women were grossly insulted, dwellings robbed, and stock driven off. The doors of the Lutheran church were battered down, the pews broken up, and the pulpit hacked and disfigured

with sabre strokes. The object of this raid was to secure the person of Captain Isaac Van Arsdale, who had made himself obnoxious because of his activity in behalf of the colonists. On learning of their approach he escaped to the woods, and, in conjunction with some neighbors, succeeded to some extent in harassing the marauders. At least one man was known to have suffered from their musket balls, as he was brought to Eoff's tavern, where sheets were torn up to make bandages to staunch his wounds. Major McDonald, who owned the mills on Chamber's brook, was probably in sympathy with these cavalymen, as they treated him with consideration; he, in return, rolled out a barrel of "apple jack," and regaled them with bread and cold ham.

On another occasion a troop of light-horse created great havoc in Bedminster. They seized Elias Van der Veer, the father of the late Doctor Henry Van der Veer, and carried him off to Trenton. The detachment had been especially ordered to make him a prisoner, as he had become well-known to the enemy as an active patriot, and a spirited co-worker in the American cause with his brothers-in-law, Colonel John Schenck, and Captains Henry Schenck and Frederick Frelinghuysen. He was taken from his mill and placed on a horse between two troopers, and, although the weather was severe, was not given an opportunity of putting on a hat or coat. In passing through Pluckamin a hat was placed on his head by a neighbor, who on seeing him passing ran out for that purpose. The exposure, and the cruelties practised upon Mr. Van der Veer while in prison, caused his death on the twenty-ninth of November, 1778, in the thirty-third year of his age, as his gravestone in Bedminster churchyard bears witness.

It is not strange that innumerable experiences of a like character, together with the fact of Washington having been driven from the state, should have produced a profound feeling of despondency. The stoutest hearts began to despair of the future, and many commenced to think only of the safety of their families and property. The victorious enemy, recognizing this growing sentiment, offered amnesty to soldiers and protection to citizens if they would return to their allegiance. Disaffection spread, and as many as two hundred persons came in one day to the

British headquarters and pledged their faith to the Crown ; among these were Samuel Galloway, a member of the first continental congress, and Samuel Tucker, of Trenton ; the latter had presided over the provincial congress of New Jersey when the state constitution was adopted, and in 1776 was justice of the supreme court and treasurer of the state. It is claimed that Tucker secured protection for the purpose of preserving public funds and private trusts, then in his possession. Washington, in addressing the national legislature on the first of January, 1777, thus alludes to such weak-kneed patriots : " After being stripped of all they had without the least compensation, protection had been granted for the full enjoyment of their effects."

The members of the family in the " Old Stone House " did not waver in their colonial sympathies, and Aaron showed no hesitation in his fealty to the best interests of the budding nation. So it was with all his brothers excepting the youngest, Peter. My fidelity as a family historian demands a true and unbiased account of ancestral failings, as well as of virtues ; and it must be acknowledged that Peter took advantage of the proclamation of the " Right Honorable Lord Howe, and his Excellency, General Howe," and received a protection paper from Lieutenant-Colonel Mawhood, of the 17th Regiment, British line, who commanded a brigade of foot, whereby he was assured protection " both for himself, his family and property, and to pass and repass on his lawful business without molestation." Peter's disaffection does not appear to have been permanent ; he was never classed as a loyalist, and like them did not suffer from attainder or confiscation, but continued to be a valued citizen. In making his submission he was doubtless influenced by his business relations with James Parker, whose acquaintance, it will be remembered, we made when Johannes visited the provincial capital in 1752. Mr. Parker sometime before the Revolution purchased of the executors and heirs of John Johnstone, deceased, extensive bodies of land lying north of Peapack brook, within the Peapack patent. He appointed Peter Melick his agent for its care, improvement, and sale. Peter was obliged to make frequent journeys to Perth Amboy in order to consult with his principal. It is fair to presume that he imbibed more or less of the loyal sentiment there openly and almost universally



displayed. Being the seat of the king's government, and since 1762 a garrison town, a large element of its population, especially among the wealthier citizens, were dominated in their sympathies by the ever-present influence of royal power. At the close of the war but a very small proportion of those who had formed the colonial aristocracy remained residents of the ancient capital. General Washington, on the fourth of July, 1776, in a communication to congress, thus refers to Perth Amboy :—

The disaffection of the people of that place and others not far distant, is exceedingly great, and unless it be checked and overawed it may become more general and very alarming.

It does not appear that James Parker openly evinced hostility to the new order of things. He endeavored to occupy the middle ground of neutrality. Though in April, 1775, he was chosen a delegate to the provincial congress, he did not take his seat, and in November of that year he located his family on a farm in Bethlehem, Hunterdon county, his Perth Amboy home not being re-established until 1785. His property escaped confiscation, though he himself does not seem to have remained at all times beyond suspicion; in 1777 he was placed under arrest by the authorities and for a time was confined at Morristown. Mr. Parker's wife was a daughter of the Reverend William Skinner, rector of St. Peter's church. Her family was pronounced in favor of a continuance of British rule, and at its overthrow the rector's son, Courtlandt, had for seven years been attorney-general for the Crown. In 1776 he was commissioned a brigadier-general, and authorized to raise five battalions among those men of New Jersey who adhered to the king. He succeeded in obtaining at that time but five hundred and seventeen recruits, although later in the war the number in his command was largely increased.

The strong reluctance shown by James Parker and other leading citizens of that portion of the state, to support the Revolution, may be ascribed somewhat to their extreme feeling of loyalty to the church of England. They found it difficult to dissever church from state. The clergy, by their oaths of conformity and allegiance, felt themselves bound to sustain the Crown, and the communicants of the church, in a great majority of instances, were influenced by their spiritual guides. In 1775

Doctor Tucker, dean of Gloucester, addressed a circular letter to the ministers of the "Established Church in North America" warning them against teaching principles as to a civil government drawn from Mr. Locke rather than from the gospel. This admonition was scarcely needed. Both before and after that time the rectors from their pulpits pelted their people with Paul;—cried out that "the powers that be are ordained of God;" did not hesitate to preach that "they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation;"—and so, in their weekly discourses, rang all the changes on the first eight verses of the thirteenth chapter of the epistle to the Romans. The apostle Peter, too, helped them with texts as to the duty of obedience and non-resistance to the higher powers, enabling them to show their parishioners that those who "despised government, presumptuous are they." The dissenting ministers fought under the banner of Saint John, and declaimed with equal vehemence against the idolatrous reverence paid to tyrants. They did not hesitate to draw comparisons between the king of England, in his rage against his American subjects, and that horrible wild beast with seven heads and ten horns, of revelation, which was ordained by the devil for the destruction of mankind.

The attitude assumed by both clergy and laity of the established church resulted most disastrously to the sect, and throughout the war its adherents were ever under the ban of suspicion; the people of other denominations maintained—to quote a writer of that period—"that a churchman and a foe to American liberty were synonymous terms." The effect of such a feeling drove the ministers from their pulpits, and brought ruin upon the congregations. When the British evacuated Philadelphia in 1778, Doctor William White, chaplain of congress, and after the peace the first bishop of Pennsylvania, was the only Episcopal minister who remained in that state. When the war was over, in many of the northern states not a church was left; and in all New Jersey Doctor Abraham Beach, rector of Christ church, New Brunswick, was the only minister who had been able to maintain regular services during the struggle. Throughout the Revolution the chaplains of American refugee regiments were mainly ministers of the church of England.

Another sect that suffered severely was that of Methodism.

Its adherents were yet a feeble folk ; they did not number at the outset of the war over one thousand souls, the American communion having been established by Philip Embury in his own house in New York as recently as 1766. It is claimed that previous to 1771 there were not over fifty Methodists in New Jersey. Bishop Asbury records that in that year there were about two hundred and fifty in Philadelphia, about three hundred in New York and a few between the Hudson and the Delaware. Probably the first church edifice of that denomination in New Jersey was the one erected just before the Revolution on the corner of Queen and Fourth streets in Trenton. The communicants of this sect rapidly increased in the United States, and by 1793 numbered sixty thousand. Methodists were objects of suspicion during the war, and it was not uncommon for their preachers and class-leaders to be tarred and feathered. The feeling against them was due in a great measure to a pamphlet published by Wesley, entitled "A Calm Address to the Americans." It claimed on moral and legal grounds that parliament had a right to tax the colonies, and it held that American subjects opposing this right were actuated only by a desire to overthrow the government. In other words, the monograph covered about the same ground as did Doctor Johnson's pamphlet, "Taxation no Tyranny." The celebrated lexicographer was much gratified at Wesley's support of his views, and wrote him, saying, "To have gained such a mind as yours may justly confirm me in my own opinion."

Still another body of Christians that suffered much in the Revolution were the Quakers, and both amusing and pathetic stories are told of their experiences, growing out of their adhering to non-combatant principles. The Quaker was ever between the upper and the nether millstone. His government drafted him into the ranks,—his "meeting" disciplined him for either bearing arms or procuring a substitute. The old record-books of the Society of Friends furnish curious information as to what was considered a falling away from Quaker grace. Benjamin Harris was cut off from communion with the "Plainfield meeting" for refusing to give any "satisfaction for his misconduct," in that he "signed a paper for independency" and "suffered his apprentice to go in the army." Another friend—Marmaduke



Hunt—makes confession, when disciplined by the “meeting,” that while confined in Morristown jail his distresses were so great that, as he says, “liberty was offered me on condition of my taking the affirmation of fidelity to the states, which through unwatchfulness I submitted to.” It is on record that several Mendham Quakers were summoned, and made to confess their fault, and show penitence for having redeemed goods which the authorities had taken from them for refusing to train with the militia.

On the twelfth of December there were tumult and excitement on the southern border of the “Old Farm.” Late on that afternoon, through the woods that stretched away beyond the north branch of the Raritan toward the Bernard hills, could be heard the rat-ta-ta of drums and the shrill cry of fife. At first faint, and in the distance, but soon louder and clearer; then there fell on the ear the tramp of troops, the ring of hoofs on the frozen ground, and the heavy roll of artillery. It was the little army of General Charles Lee that Washington was so impatiently expecting, and which had been so many days on the march from the Hudson. The men trudged along the narrow road in column of fours, and in route step, each one carrying his gun as he liked. They were brown and weather-beaten; their many bivouacs on the Westchester and Jersey hills had left marks on their uniforms and accoutrements showing the dire effects of wear, wind and weather;—more properly speaking on clothing, not uniforms, as many of these continental soldiers were without stripe, plume or color, and often a sash or a corded or cockaded hat was all that distinguished the officer.

The Revolutionary soldiers of “seventy six” knew little of neatness or of the picturesque in dress. With the exception of an occasional militia coat of ancient design, coarse hunting shirts and rough linsey-woolsey suits were the rule for the first year or so of the war. Their guns were of various patterns, the ordinary carbine, fowling-piece, and rifle not being uncommon, all having powder-pans and flint-locks. Powder was generally carried in a cow’s horn swung over one shoulder, while from the other hung a leather pouch for bullets. All the ideas prevailing at the outset of the war as to soldiers and weapons were very crude. Even the generally astute Franklin held peculiar views and gave

curious advice, as is shown by the following extract from a letter written by him to General Lee on the eleventh of February, 1776 :

I still wish with you that Pikes could be introduced, and I would add bows and arrows. Those were good weapons not wisely laid aside. First—Because a man may shoot as truly with a bow as with a common musket. Second—He can discharge four arrows in the time of charging and discharging one bullet. Third—His object is not taken from his view by the smoke of his own side. Fourth—A flight of arrows seen coming upon them terrifies and disturbs the enemy's attention to his business. Fifth—An arrow striking in any part of a man puts him *hors de combat* till 'tis extracted. Sixth—Bows and arrows are more easily provided everywhere than muskets and ammunition.

The clothing furnished the privates of the two battalions forming the first establishment of the Jersey line, called out by resolution of congress of October, 1775, was to each man one felt hat, one pair of yarn stockings and one pair of shoes. The monthly pay of the men was five dollars, but they were obliged to find their own arms ; the enlistment was for a single year. The second New Jersey enlistment, authorized by congress in September, 1776, was composed of four battalions to serve for the war, unless sooner discharged. In addition to their monthly pay the privates and non-commissioned officers received one hundred acres of land, and an annual kit of clothing comprising two linsey hunting shirts, two pairs of overalls, a waistcoat of wool or leather, one pair of breeches, a hat or leathern cap, two shirts, and two pairs of hose and shoes. Some of the militia—notably those of Pennsylvania—often made an attempt at a more dashing apparel. The term "Jersey Blues" had its origin in a volunteer company from the vicinity of Springfield. Its uniform furnished by some patriotic women of the township consisted of tow frocks and breeches dyed a bright blue. In the matter of arms there was within a year a marked improvement, as the agents abroad became able to make purchases in behalf of the young republic. When Washington's army entered Philadelphia in 1777, previous to the battle of Brandywine, Graydon stood on the Coffee-house corner, and thus speaks of the appearance of the troops as they passed down Front street :

They amounted to but eight or nine thousand men; though indifferently dressed they held well-burnished arms, carried them like soldiers, and looked in short as if they might have faced an equal number of men with a reasonable prospect of success.

An important element in that little army was the Jersey line brigaded under General Maxwell ; it opened the battle of Brandywine, continuing in the fight the entire day. The brigade also distinguished itself at the engagement of Germantown, the 1st Battalion suffering severely, both in officers and men.







## CHAPTER XXIV.

### *The Capture of General Charles Lee—His Army Encamps on Peter Melick's Land in Bedminster Township—The Battle of Trenton.*

At the close of this twelfth day of December, 1776, when Lee's army crossed the north branch of the Raritan and entered Bedminster, his battalions, with clank of arm and swing of sabre, pressed on along the Lamington highway until the head of the column had passed a considerable distance beyond the crossing of the Peapack road; the troops then deployed to the right and encamped, the greater part of them occupying the lands of Peter Melick. When the moon climbed the heavens that night it illumined with its mellow gleam a strange spectacle for this quiet Bedminster country. The roads and fields were encumbered with cannon and baggage-wagons, and stamping horses were tethered to trees and fences. Camp fires gleamed on the hill-sides, around which were stretched tired, bronzed-faced men, with ragged blankets for a covering, and with knapsacks and bundles for pillows. Sorry-looking soldiers they were, with their patched clothing, worn shoes cobbled with strings, and antiquated cross-belts and cartouch-boxes. A strange spectacle, indeed, upon which the moon looked down, with naught to break the stillness of the sleeping camp, save now and then the whinneying of a picketed horse, or the occasional challenge of a pacing sentinal.

Poor Peter's protection papers proved of but little avail at this juncture. He had not anticipated a continental visitation; his fears, and for these he had prepared, were of predatory bands of British light-horse, or more dangerous troops of partisan rangers. He did not think it wise to remain at home to welcome these

military guests; his neighbors did this for him, at the same time informing the troops that the owner of the land upon which they had bivouacked was an "exempt." As was the fashion of the time, vengeance followed. Peter's fence rails fed the camp fires, and his recently filled smoke-house fed the troops, as did his chickens, shoats, and cattle. Altogether he was forced to make a very handsome contribution to the needs of the continental army. We may believe that in later years, when enjoying all the blessings resulting from the services of his country's devoted band of soldiers, he reflected without chagrin upon the sacrifices that he had been forced to make in those troubled times. My knowledge of the incidents of that night is gained from Peter's oldest daughter, Catharine, then a child of nearly five. She afterwards became the wife of Enos Mundy, and died in 1863 at the age of ninety-two. From her, many important facts have been gleaned as to early Revolutionary days, partly drawn from memory, but mainly from what she had learned from her parents and others of that time. Her statement of the events preceding and succeeding General Lee's capture was taken down in writing and preserved by one of her descendants.

As is well known, Lee did not continue this far with his troops, but stopped for the night, with a small guard and some of his aides, at a tavern kept by Mrs. White at Basking Ridge. It is probable that General Sullivan, who was second in command, quartered that night at Aaron Malick's house, as it was among the most substantial of the neighborhood. At least family traditions aver—they being corroborated by Mrs. Mundy—that the house was full of officers, who arrived mounted. It is pleasant to learn something of the personality of the leaders of the Revolution who campaigned in this Bedminster country. Sullivan at this time was thirty-seven years old; possessed a well-proportioned and commanding figure, animated and handsome features, with a dark complexion illumined by the ruddy hue of health. His voice was deep and melodious, and in his military career he used it to great advantage, for it was always quick to respond alike to stern and gentle emotions. In the morning an officer came in great haste to the "Old Stone House" and announced the capture of the commanding general. Mrs. Mundy expresses it in her statement:—

There was a great fuss made in the morning, because a big officer had been captured or killed, or something of that sort, and Grandfather Malick had to go to Germantown with soldiers on horseback, and he did not get home again until in the afternoon \* \* \* quite a number of big officers staid at Grandfather's, and an officer came in the forenoon and told of this officer being captured or killed.

It seems almost unnecessary to dwell at any length upon so familiar a Revolutionary incident as the capture of General Charles Lee, and the causes that led thereto, but perhaps this Bedminster story might not be considered complete should all of the details of the circumstance be omitted. There is no doubt that Lee was a brave and brilliant officer, possessing superior mental qualifications. He hated oppression and scorned meanness. Though when stirred by violent impulses his personal animosities were intense, he is said to have ever been an open and honest enemy. Yet at such times both in action and word he was too often governed by his angered passions rather than by reason. He was intemperate in language and always over-zealous as to his personal rights. One readily discovers from his correspondence—a mass of which has been preserved—that he was constitutionally, what might be in vulgar parlance termed, a sorehead. He fully coincided with the assurances of his admirers that he was the greatest general in the country, and the rock upon which his career was shipwrecked was a headstrong nature that could not brook command. The yellow-eyed serpent of jealousy coiled in his heart, and his unceasing vengeful feelings toward Washington were too great for his naturally generous nature to overcome. Could he have brought himself to the occupation of a second place in the hearts and admiration of the people, his name would probably have been remembered as one of the leading and successful generals of the war.

Lee was at this time forty-five, and his years had been those of such varied experiences as rarely fall to the lot of man. By birth an Englishman, he first becomes known to us in 1757 as a captain of grenadiers in Abercrombie's fatal assault upon Ticonderoga. Three years were then spent in campaigning in the northern wilderness, when, as a lieutenant-colonel, he went with Burgoyne to Portugal to aid in repelling the attacks of Spain. He next figures as an impetuous liberal politician in England, and then for two years as a staff-officer of the king of Poland at



Warsaw. Then we find him with a company of Turks, almost perishing on the Bulgarian mountains while guarding the Grand Seignior's treasure from Moldavia to Constantinople. For successive years he was on the Bosphorus, at Warsaw, and in England, in which latter country he grew turbulently indignant on failing to obtain army promotion. As a major-general in the Russian service he next campaigned in command of Cossacks and Wallachs, when the fighting was of the severest character. And now we hear of him in Hungary, where he killed an Italian in a duel; and in the following winter in England, deep in the vortex of politics, and violent in his opposition to the government. The year 1772 was spent in France and Switzerland. On leaving those countries he threw himself body and soul into the vexed question of the American colonies, starting in 1773 for this country to view for himself the condition of affairs.

After reaching America Lee became a violent supporter of the provincial claims against England, and his fearless spirit, his enthusiasm and brilliant wit, together with the romance of his life, soon gave him a prominence hardly equalled by any man in the country. He advised with members of congress, and interviewed deputies; always feeding the flames of opposition he finally was recognized as a leader in the Revolutionary movement. To more closely ally himself with American interests he purchased a Virginia estate, whereupon, hostilities having commenced, congress commissioned him as major-general in the continental army. He was intensely chagrined at not being named for the chief command. While probably an ardent lover of liberty, and apparently wholly honest in advocating colonial rights, he had been quick to discover that the Revolutionary movement was to be one of the most important events of this or a past age, and he was ambitious to figure before the world as its leader. He felt keenly disappointed that congress should have failed to recognize his superior military qualifications, and the great sacrifices he had made for the country. When Washington was commissioned, Lee naturally scouted the idea that a man who knew nothing of a greater campaign than had been Braddock's could vie with him, a veteran of many wars, as commander-in-chief of an army. Yet, at this time at least, his love of liberty seems to have overshadowed his ambition. He threw up his

commission in the English army, and ran the risk of losing all of his possessions across the water, which were considerable, in order to accept the position offered him by congress. In the beginning he was indefatigable in his endeavors, and his accomplishments as a soldier were so great as to seem to secure for him a brilliant future.

It was Lee who first suggested to Washington and congress, in 1776, the propriety of occupying Manhattan Island with troops. This resulted in his marching on the fourth of February into the city of New York at the head of a force he had raised in Connecticut; he was immediately reinforced by Stirling's New Jersey regiment and by Pennsylvania troops. This course was at first strongly opposed by the New York committee of safety, who feared that garrisoning the city would provoke the English ships to an attack which Lee's command would be too small to successfully meet. But the country at large held Lee in high esteem and gave him full support, which is shown by his correspondence with, among others, Washington, Franklin, Benjamin Rush, Robert Morris and John Adams. The latter wrote him from congress:—

A luckier, a happier Expedition than yours to New York never was projected. The whole Whig world is blessing you for it, and none of them more than your Friend and Servant.

So it was when late in February he was appointed to the Canada command. Benjamin Rush then wrote him:—

Fortune seems in a good humour with you. It is not enough that you have triumphed over external and internal Enemies at New York, but you are about to enjoy new triumphs in another part of the continent. \* \* \* Should your blood mingle with the blood of Wolfe, Montcalm and Montgomery, posterity will execrate the plains of Abraham to the end of time. Your appointment to the Canada expedition gave all your friends here great pleasure. \* \* \* Mr. Pitt conquered America in Germany. But who knows but General Lee may conquer Britain in Canada."

Franklin also wrote him the same date, February nineteenth:—

I rejoice that you are going to Canada. God prosper all your undertakings, and return you with Health, Honor and Happiness.

Congress changed its plans, and early in March, Lee, instead of going to Canada, was transferred to the southern department.

As is well known, at Charleston he added to his reputation, although more so than he really deserved, and when he returned north to assume command near New York he was in the full tide of popular favor. But the disasters of Long Island, White Plains and Fort Washington he falsely ascribed to the incompetence of Washington. Upon this belief he fed his jealousy until it absorbed his whole being and wrecked his career. As has been shown, while Washington was making his heroic retreat across the Jerseys, Lee not only failed to hurry to his support, but deliberately disobeyed the commands of his chief. While the army that was being pursued by Cornwallis was anxiously looking for the appearance of Lee's corps, that general delayed crossing the Hudson for several weeks, and then advanced in a most leisurely manner, as if fearful of being a help or advantage to the retreating force. His dilatoriness cannot be charged to his being lukewarm in the cause, or to an altogether determined disobedience on his part. He builded on the hope that the continued delay might furnish him with an opportunity for striking a blow on the flank of the enemy independent of his chief, and thus perform a service that would redound to his individual honor. Like too many men before and since, who have occupied public trusts, his patriotism was dwarfed by personal ambition.

Lee's force at Newcastle had been about seven thousand men, but owing to the expiration of terms of enlistment, when he crossed the Hudson on the second of December his command was but twenty-seven hundred strong. His troops took up their line of march in a column of four files front, Nixon's brigade furnishing an advance guard of thirty men, and Glover's brigade constituting a reserve corps, ready as circumstances required to draw out of the line and form one hundred yards in the rear. Flankers marched in single file on either side, and so the column moved slowly on, reaching Pompton on the seventh, and Morristown on the eighth, from where Lee wrote Washington that the militia had increased his force to four thousand men. He rested at Morristown for several days, camping on the night of the eleventh on a little plain southwest of the Ford mansion, now known as "Washington's Headquarters." Early in the following morning he continued across the country by way of New Vernon



and Vealtown, and so on to where his troops encamped for the night, on the Melick farm, the present site of the village of Bedminster, a distance of about thirteen miles. On the way, Lee, turning over his command to Sullivan, left his troops, and, as the historian Headley expresses it, "governed by some freak or whim, or still baser passion," took up his quarters at Mrs. White's tavern at the village of Basking Ridge. He retained with him Major William Bradford of his personal staff, several other members of his military family, and a small guard.

At four o'clock on the morning of the thirteenth there arrived at White's tavern one Major James Wilkinson, a staff officer of another continental general, who felt sorely because of Washington's superior position—Horatio Gates. The sudden and unexpected retreat of Sir Guy Carleton from before Ticonderoga to Canada had enabled General Schuyler to send several regiments to aid Washington. This force having entered New Jersey, Wilkinson, who was barely nineteen years old, had been dispatched by its commandant, Gates, with a letter announcing his proximity, but on learning that the commander-in-chief was already beyond the Delaware, the major had turned aside and taken it to Lee as next in rank. Lee received the letter in bed, promising to give an answer after breakfast, whereupon Wilkinson lay down on his blanket before a comfortable fire until daylight. The general remained in bed until eight o'clock, when he came down stairs, half dressed and in his slippers. Major Scammel of Sullivan's staff, a brave officer who afterwards fell before Yorktown, called to obtain orders for the morning march. After a map had been spread on the table and examined, Lee said, "Tell General Sullivan to move down towards Pluckamin." The general then spent some time in listening to complaints from soldiers of his command. He was indignant at many of their demands, especially at those coming from members of Colonel Sheldon's Connecticut light-horse, whom he charged with the desire to go home. These militia troopers were without doubt but poor apologies for soldiers. They were dressed in antiquated state uniforms, much the worse for long service, wore old-fashioned, full-bottomed wigs, often awry, and all their accoutrements were of a most ancient and obsolete order. Many of their horses had left the plough to enter service, and, together with their

trappings, presented anything but a military appearance. One of these "nutmeg" horsemen being captured at the battle of Long Island some British officers amused themselves by forcing him to canter up and down in front of their quarters, while they made merry over his ridiculous appearance and quaint replies to their questions. On being asked what especial service had been required of his troop by the Americans, he answered, "to flank a little and carry tidins."

Lee did not breakfast before ten, and then sat down to write to Gates. A single quotation from this letter will show its general tone, and the attitude assumed by its writer toward Washington: "*Entre nous* a certain great man is most damnably deficient." Meanwhile, Major Wilkinson had his horse saddled and brought to the door, and then sat down at a window and awaited with patience the letter. At about high noon he suddenly saw a troop of dragoons turn from the highway and dash down the lane toward the house, which in a few seconds they reached and, having opened files, surrounded. "Here," cried the major, "are the British cavalry!" "Where is the guard," exclaimed Lee, "why don't they fire? Do, sir, see what has become of the guard!" As careless as the general, the guards, with arms stacked, were sunning themselves on the south side of the house. They were soon overcome, two brave fellows who resisted, being killed by sabre strokes. A very short but spirited defence was made by Lee's suite, who, firing from the windows, killed several of the dragoons, including a cornet. So near was Harcourt, their commander, to being killed that a ball carried away the ribbon of his queue. Among Lee's officers was a Frenchman, M. Jean Louis de Virnejoux, who acted with the greatest bravery in defending the house, but it was soon seen to be useless to continue the defense. The British called upon Lee to surrender, threatening that five minutes delay would insure the burning of the building. The discomfited officer almost immediately appeared at the open door, saying: "Here is the general, he has surrendered!" He was hastily placed on Wilkinson's horse, his legs being firmly bound to the stirrup leathers; the trumpet sounded assembly, and just as he was, without a hat, and in slippers and dressing-gown, they hurried him off to New Brunswick.

The British also carried with them, strapped on a trooper's horse, M. de Gaïant, a French officer who had just arrived at Boston to offer his services to the country. Being on his way to pay his addresses to Washington, he had joined Lee's column as a means of safe transit. History affords but few examples of a general officer presenting a meaner appearance than did Lee, as surrounded by his exultant captors he clattered through Somerset. His small and restless eyes had lost their haughty glances—his usually satirical mouth drooped at its corners with humiliation—his large nose was red with cold—his long, lank, thin body shivered in the December blasts—while his soiled shirt and fluttering dressing-gown gave him an air quite opposed to that of a military chieftain.

Historians generally agree that Lee's army halted and rested the night preceding his capture at Vealtown, now Bernardsville. From Morristown this would have been a march of but seven miles; his men would fairly have had to crawl to make only that distance since early morning, as the road in use at that time was well worked and travelled. In face of the evidence that can be adduced to the contrary, before accepting this general belief that the army lay at Vealtown, it may be well for us to ascertain on what original authority this opinion is based. In all the writings of those living at that time the only work I can find that definitely locates Lee's encampment that night is the "Memoirs" of General James Wilkinson. This seems to be the sole authority from which historians have drawn their conclusions. Nowhere does Wilkinson mention in his book that he visited the army—or that he knew of his own knowledge the location of the encampment—nor does he say from whom, or in what manner, he obtained his information. In estimating the historical value of his "Memoirs" we may remember that they have not passed unscathed the test of criticism. Numerous defects can be pointed out in the pages relating his experiences during the earlier years of the Revolution. It must be borne in mind that at the time he witnessed Lee's misfortune he was but nineteen years old, and that sixty years elapsed before the work narrating the capture was published. It is not strange that errors should have crept in, and altogether we may fairly question the value of such testimony. From the facts heretofore given, together



with the traditions of the neighborhood, we are justified in reaching the conclusion that the encampment on the night of the twelfth of December was in Bedminster, and not in Bernards, township.

Lee had supposed himself to be at least twenty miles distant from the enemy, and much surprise was felt that his proximity had been discovered by the British. On the previous afternoon Aaron Malick had occasion to visit New Germantown, probably on business connected with the Lutheran church, and did not return till late in the evening. This was a time when no one was above the suspicion of disloyalty. When Wilkinson, or some other officer, reached the "Stone House" on the morning of the thirteenth and found that Aaron had been absent the previous night, he was at once suspected of having informed the enemy of Lee's whereabouts. He was placed under arrest and rigidly examined, and was finally sent under guard to New Germantown to prove himself clear of any conspiracy, and to show that it was there he had been, rather than in the direction of the enemy. He had no difficulty in doing this, and was consequently released. On his way home, at the "round hill," about half a mile west of the Larger Cross Roads, he met what was now Sullivan's command, pushing on towards the Delaware. While talking with some of the officers, the discharge of cannon was plainly heard which announced the arrival of Lee at New Brunswick. It was evidently late in the day before Sullivan had put his column in motion. The excitements incidental to the announcement of the capture of Lee had probably necessitated consultation and delay. When again on the march he did not follow the instructions brought from Lee by Major Scammel as to the route, and, instead of turning south toward Pluckamin, pursued a westerly course. He encamped that night — the thirteenth—at New Germantown, where he rested till eleven o'clock the next morning. From there no time was lost in marching to Pennsylvania, where he joined Washington, moving by way of Pittstown and Phillipsburg, the latter place being reached on the night of the fifteenth at ten o'clock.

The capture of Lee was discovered later to have been in a measure accidental. It seems that Elder Muklewrath, of the Mendham Presbyterian church, had been with the general the

night before complaining that the troops had stolen one of his horses. On the following morning he fell in with a detachment of the 16th British light dragoons, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel, the Honorable William Harcourt, afterwards the third Earl Harcourt, G. C. B., which was reconnoitering in the neighborhood. In some manner the elder divulged the proximity of Lee, and, it is said, either voluntarily or involuntarily, guided the enemy to the general's quarters. Presbyterianism and patriotism were in such close alliance during the war that we are loth to believe that the elder willingly contributed to this catastrophe. This regiment of Harcourt's—called the Queen's Own—was considered the crack cavalry corps of the British forces. The men were mounted on fine horses sixteen hands high, and in addition to sabres were armed with carbines, the muzzles of which were thrust in a socket at the stirrup. Uniformed in scarlet coats faced with white, bright yellow buckskin breeches, black boots and jangling spurs, their dashing and formidable appearance was heightened by polished brass helmets, from which chestnut hair flowed to the shoulders.

When Lord Cornwallis failed to find boats with which to cross the Delaware and continue his pursuit of the American army, he marched to Pennington, where he arrived on December tenth, remaining there four days. While at that place he was informed that troops under the command of General Lee were reported to be crossing Morris county on their way to reinforce the main army. He at once decided to dispatch a mounted patrol to gain intelligence of the strength and locality of this corps. Lieutenant-Colonel Harcourt applied for the direction of the detachment, and a volunteer for the expedition was Cornet Banastre Tarleton, afterwards famous—or infamous—in the southern campaigns. The infinite address with which Harcourt conducted this enterprise to so brilliant an issue won for him high encomiums from his army and government.

Washington's magnanimous soul could not see in Lee either a rival or an enemy. He had great confidence in his talents as a soldier, and deeply deplored his capture, deeming it a serious loss to the country. Many of the people also held extravagant notions as to Lee's merits, and the affair altogether was considered a public calamity. His exchange and subsequent downfall

are well known. As he and his affairs have no further relations with Somerset county, the only additional reference I shall make to this singular man will be to cite the following extraordinary clause found in his will at his death, seven years later :—

I desire most earnestly that I may not be buried in any church, or church-yard, or within a mile of any Presbyterian or Anabaptist Meeting House ; for since I have resided in this country I have kept so much bad company when living, that I do not choose to continue it when dead.

Perhaps Lee had the Mendham elder in mind.

As the close of the year 1776 drew near, our state's cup of misfortune would seem to have been full and overflowing. Its legislature had been driven by an approaching enemy from Princeton to Trenton, from Trenton to Bordentown, then on to Pittstown, and from there to Haddonfield where it had dissolved on the second of December. The army, almost destroyed, had abandoned the state ; a general, high in the estimation of the people, had been captured, and the citizens in great numbers were going over to the enemy. We, whose patriotism and love of country have been fed by the inheritance of over a century of national feeling, can have but a small appreciation of the doubts and uncertainties that attacked our forefathers in those darkest days of the Revolution. That so few made their submission to the Crown is the wonder, not that so many should have proved faint-hearted, and lost faith in the cause that seemed so promising but a short year before. It must be remembered that in the bays and harbors rode a lordly fleet, flying the flag that had been an object of affection and reverence to the colonists. Distributed throughout New Jersey was a thoroughly equipped and disciplined army, officered by veteran soldiers and supported by the prestige of a stable and powerful government. And upon what opposing powers and resources were our New Jersey ancestors leaning ? Upon a continental congress that was totally without power or authority of enforcing its own edicts ; upon a collection of petty provinces inexperienced in self-rule, none of which possessed armories, strong fortresses, or works of any character for furnishing the munitions of war ; upon the ragged remnant of an army that had been driven across the state by a victorious enemy, an undisciplined force of raw recruits, com-



manded by a man better known in Virginia than in New Jersey, who was entirely without experience in the handling of large bodies of men, and who, since leaving Boston, had been defeated in all of his military enterprises. Time, the great average-adjuster, had not yet declared the retreat from Long Island to equal some of the most important victories in history.

But the people believed in Washington. It was one of the peculiar attributes of the character of this remarkable man that throughout his entire career his mere presence invariably produced a feeling of confidence. And now, notwithstanding the repeated defeats of the continental army, hardly an eye rested on his distinguished form but that reflected trust and veneration. Best of all, Washington believed in himself! During this period of gloom and perplexity the hopeful mind of the commander-in-chief was never more harassed with embarrassments. Yet, in the face of the fearful discouragements of the hour, he was firm in faith, and undaunted in his belief in the ultimate triumph of the American cause. The magnificent equipoise of such a character was not easily disturbed. Even at this time, the serenity of his countenance gave no sign of the stupendous mental exertions he was making in order to triumph over seemingly overwhelming adversities. Two days after crossing the Delaware the number of his men was reduced to seventeen hundred, of whom hardly more than one thousand could be relied upon for effective service. But at once, with apparently unabated ardor, and by the most indefatigable exertions, Washington proceeded to build upon this nucleus of an army. By the twentieth of December his force had been augmented to nearly six thousand men. Proffered bounties, and personal solicitation and influence, had retained in the service soldiers whose time had expired; the Pennsylvania militia had turned out in force; regiments from Ticonderoga united with the army, and General Sullivan had brought up Lee's division.

The crying evil that attached to the continental army during the first year of the war was the short term of enlistment. When hostilities actually commenced the people failed to realize that they were involved in a prolonged struggle, but thought a few months campaigning would result in the adjustment of all difficulties. At the beginning of the Revolution it was said that

forty thousand armed men could be brought to Boston within twenty-four hours, by the displaying of a light on Beacon hill ; and when Washington took command at Cambridge, it was of an undisciplined force nearly fifteen thousand strong. One year later, as we have seen, it was with difficulty that the general in his retreat across the Jerseys could keep together a mere handful of men. Soldiers whose time had expired were too disheartened by hardships and repeated defeats to re-enlist ; while new recruits were not inclined to connect their fortunes in midwinter with an ill-clad, dispirited wreck of an army, which, without tents and much of the time without food, had just been driven from the Hudson to the Delaware by an exultant foe. In this matter of short enlistments we can hardly condemn the want of forethought in our forefathers, when we reflect that in the present generation the same error was committed at the breaking out of the late war.

We left Washington in Pennsylvania repairing damages. The English commanders, Howe and Cornwallis, considered the war at an end, and the latter was preparing to sail for England on a furlough. The British were distributed in cantonments from the Raritan to the Delaware, under command of General Grant, New Brunswick being his headquarters and base of supplies. About fifteen hundred Germans and a squadron of English cavalry were posted at Trenton under command of Colonel Rall, \* and another body of Hessians was stationed at Bordentown under Count von Donop. No fears were entertained of the Americans, and the foreign officers, jubilant over recent successes, were preparing to spend the Christmas holidays with great jollity. And now, happily, a rift appears in the black cloud of disaster that has so long enveloped the American arms, and a bright gleam is about to illumine the page which records the close of the first year of our national independence. On the cold and sleety night of the twenty-fifth of December, when the Delaware was choked with ice, Washington crossed the river with twenty-five hundred men and twenty field-pieces. A patriot army, whose

---

\* This officer's name is commonly given in histories as Rahl, but the autograph collection of Dr. T. Addis Emmet of New York contains the signature of the Hessian colonel, wherein the name is plainly spelled *Rall*.

achievements of that night and morning have been celebrated by poet, painter and historian! The command was divided into two divisions under Generals Sullivan and Green, which took up their line of march for Trenton, eight miles away. On reaching Birmingham, distant from the town about four miles and a half, Sullivan's column continued down the river road, the other, under Green, filed to the left, and followed the Scotch road, which joined the Pennington road about a mile from Trenton. Washington was with the latter division.

Owing to delays occasioned by the ice in the river and the slipperiness of the roads, it was eight in the morning before Greene reached the outposts of the enemy. They were soon driven in by the advance brigade under Lord Stirling, their commanding officer, a lad of but eighteen, being wounded. Sullivan's division, which had been guided by Captain Mott of the 3d New Jersey battalion, entered the westerly part of the town about the same time, and both commands pushed forward, keeping up a running fire on the retreating outposts. The surprise was complete. The Hessian officers, still in the midst of their Christmas festivities, were hardly in a condition to repel so sudden an attack. Colonel Rall had been engaged in playing cards with a convivial party of officers at the residence of a rich merchant, Abraham Hunt, on the northwest corner of King (Warren) and Second streets. A short time before the attack he had returned to his quarters considerably the worse for his night's festivities. On being aroused by his aide and apprised of the approach of the enemy the dumbfounded colonel was quickly in the saddle and at the head of his troops, but before they could be completely formed the Americans were on them with cannon and bayonet. A short and decisive engagement resulted in a complete success for Washington's army. His troops were so disposed as to surround the enemy, who had no choice between being cut to pieces or surrender. The British light-horse made their escape, but the less fortunate Hessians grounded their arms. According to an account published in the "Philadelphia Post," of the twenty-eighth of December, the capture included one colonel, two lieutenant-colonels, three majors, four captains, eight lieutenants, twelve ensigns, two surgeon-mates, ninety-nine sergeants, twenty-five drummers,



nine musicians, twenty-five servants, and seven hundred and forty privates. In addition, the victorious Americans carried back with them to Pennsylvania three captured standards, six fine brass cannon, and about one thousand stand of arms. The continental forces had but four casualties, while the enemy's dead amounted to thirty men and six officers. The colonel commanding, who was badly wounded, was placed on parole; he died a few days later at the residence of Stacy Potts, on Warren street, at the head of Perry street, the grandfather of the late Judge Joseph C. Potts of Jersey City. The fortunes of war bring about strange contrasts. Among the Trenton captives was the Hessian band of music. On Christmas night, to heighten the pleasures of the foreign officers' festivities, it had played loud and long, confusion to all rebels. Six months later the same band furnished the music at the dinner given by congress at Philadelphia, celebrating the first anniversary of American independence. After each toast the German musicians were called upon for patriotic airs breathing a love of liberty and freedom; their fine performances contributed greatly to the enjoyment of the occasion.

It was intended that Colonel Cadwalader, who commanded a brigade of Pennsylvania Associators, and General Ewing with his division, should also have crossed the Delaware, but they were prevented by the ice. Otherwise there is but little doubt that the capture of von Donop and his force would have been added to the brilliant achievements of this memorable December morning. This affair of Trenton was considered, and properly so, a great victory. That at a time when the fortunes of Washington were at so low an ebb he should have been able to achieve so signal a triumph, had a marked influence on the army and country, animating the people, and inspiring the troops with fresh courage. This was especially felt by the New Jersey citizens and militia, who to a certain extent had been witnesses of both the misfortunes and glories of the past thirty days. The effect upon the citizens was to again instil a belief in the availability of their army and the ability of its commanding general. Again they grew confident in the ultimate success of the American arms, and lost the foreboding, by which they had been attacked, that the contest in which their country was engaged

was about hopeless. Surely the entire people had great cause for rejoicing, after the gloomy and trying experiences of their army since its first disaster on Long Island.





## CHAPTER XXV.

### *The Hessians in New Jersey—Just a Little in Their Favor— A Correction of Some False Traditions That Have Been Fostered by Prejudiced Historians.*

On that cold day after Christmas, when the story of the battle of Trenton went flying from hamlet to farm over the hills and valleys of Somerset, the startling news was a matter of peculiar interest to the members of the family at the "Old Stone House." Their rejoicing over the victory of the Americans was tempered somewhat by the knowledge that the vanquished were Germans, and that some of them with but little doubt had been Aaron's fellow-townsmen in the old country.

In a former chapter we have learned from a letter of the "*Herr Præceptor*" that previous to the year 1749, Bendorf was transferred from the sovereignty of its former owners to that of Margrave Karl Wilhelm Fredrich of Anspach. Charles Alexander, the son of this murdering margrave, in 1791 sold all his territory to Prussia for a pension. He it was who, when George III. applied to the princes of Germany for troops to aid him in subduing his revolted American colonies, supplied the English government with three regiments, aggregating 2,353 men, for which he received over five hundred thousand dollars. Among the enemy captured at Trenton was a portion of one of these regiments, and its flag taken on that day was afterwards deposited in the museum at Alexandria, Virginia. When this museum building was burned, a few years ago, the flag was destroyed together with that of Washington's life-guard and other interesting Revolutionary relics that had been placed there by G. W. P. Custis. It was the custom for German princes, in filling the ranks of battalions intended to be bartered to foreign



governments, to secure recruits when possible from their outlying possessions rather than from their home dominions; it is fair to presume, then, that Bendorf was obliged to furnish its full quota to the forces destined for America. Aaron was probably well-informed of these facts by his correspondents abroad, and though the news of the affair at Trenton may have added much to the happiness of the holiday season, yet he would have been quite wanting in sensibility had he reflected without concern upon the possibility of there being among the unfortunates who had been killed, wounded or captured, men who in their youth had been his playmates on the streets of his native town.

When the British ministers learned that an American revenue could only be collected by force of arms, they had but little difficulty in finding German rulers who were willing to sacrifice their troops in a quarrel that did not concern them, provided they were well enough paid. Duke Ernest, the prince ruling Saxe-Gotha and Altenburg, though a relative of England's king, declined peremptorily the offer of the British ministers for troops. Bancroft tells us that when England applied to Frederic Augustus of Saxony, the prince promptly answered through his minister that the thought of sending a part of his army to the remote countries of the new world touched too nearly his paternal tenderness for his subjects, and seemed to be too much in contrast with the rules of a healthy policy. Charles Augustus of Saxe-Weimar declined to permit any of his subjects to recruit for service in America except vagabonds and convicts. This ruler, who was but nineteen years old, was doubtless influenced by the broad and generous spirit animating the counsels of his minister Goethe. Frederick the Great, also, to his credit be it said, condemned the practice of putting armies in the market, but other princes were only too glad to swell their treasuries at the cost of the loss of a few subjects.

From Edward K. Lowell's valuable work "The Hessians in the Revolutionary War," we learn that the English government secured soldiers from five German rulers, besides that of Anspach-Beyruth: Frederic II., Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel, furnished 16,372, of whom 10,492 returned home after the war; from Charles I., Duke of Brunswick, were obtained 5,723, of whom returned 2,708; William, Count of Hesse-Hanau, 2,422, returned

1,441; Frederic, Prince of Waldeck, 1,225, returned 505; Frederic Augustus, Prince of Anhalt-Zerbest, 1,152, returned 984.

Of the troops furnished by the margrave who owned Bendorf, less than one-half again saw Germany. Jones, the tory historian, avers that the British ministry stipulated to pay the German princes ten pounds for each man that did not return home at the close of the war; for each wounded soldier, however slight the injury, five pounds were to be paid. Commandants were careful to report even the scratch of a finger, consequently, in 1786, when the bills came in from the German powers, the English were obliged to pay four hundred and seventy-one thousand pounds in settlement. Karl Schnizlein, "Royal Bavarian Director of the General Court of Justice, and Secretary of the Historical Society for Mittelfranken, Germany," in a letter dated the twenty-eighth of September, 1887, assures me that the treaty between the British government and the Margrave Charles Alexander of Anspach differed materially from those made with the other German princes. This was especially so as to—as he expresses it—"paying premiums for perished soldiers." Furthermore, that the money allowed for the Anspachian-Beyreuthian troops by the British ministry was not to the personal advantage of the margrave, but was paid into the treasury and used for the redemption of the indebtedness of the country. Mr. Schnizlein also states in his letter that while he does not know of any archives from which information can be obtained regarding enlistments in the troops that went to America, it is probable that among the subsidiary forces of the margrave there were men liable to serve as soldiers from the margraviate of Sayn-Altenkirchen (Bendorf).

Just here it would seem eminently proper to say a few words in vindication of the memory of these over-maligned Hessians. It may fairly be considered within the scope of this work, which, after all, is the story of a German ancestry whose place of nativity presumably furnished men to swell the ranks of the so-called mercenaries. The descendants of such an ancestry will surely acquiesce in an effort to relieve these people from a long-standing and unmerited obloquy. It is quite time that the name of the German auxiliaries of the English army in America was severed from

the odium attached to it for over a century past. Most of the barbarities and cruelties practiced upon the citizens of New Jersey by the entire British forces have been charged against the so-called Hessian troops, and it is only within a few years that some disposition has been shown to deal justly with the record of the conduct of the German soldiery.

Hessians! how they have been hated by the Jersey people! the very name is still spoken by many with a prolonged hiss-s. For generations the word has been used even as a bug-a-boo with which to frighten children, and by the imperfectly read the German troops have been stigmatized as "Dutch robbers!" "Blood-thirsty marauders!" and "Foreign mercenaries!" Why blame these tools? While many of them were not saints, neither were they the miscreants and incendiaries, bent on excursions of destruction and rapine, that the traditions fostered by prejudiced historians would have us believe. Many of these Germans were kindly souls, and probably the best-abused people of the time. Individually they were not mercenaries, and a majority of the rank and file without doubt objected as strongly to being on American soil fighting against liberty, as did their opponents to have them here. Some idea may be obtained of their repugnance to coming to this country from Schiller's protest against the custom of his countrymen's being sent across the seas in exchange for the gold of foreign governments. He tells how on one occasion upon orders being published directing a regiment to embark for the colonies, some privates, stepping out of the ranks, protested against crossing the ocean, and demanded of their colonel for how much a yoke the prince sold men? Whereupon, the regiment was marched upon the parade, and the malcontents there shot. To quote Schiller:—

We heard the crack of the rifles as their brains spattered the pavement, and the whole army shouted, "Hurrah for America!"

Germany's despotic princes justified their human traffic with the specious plea that it is a good soldier's duty to fight when his country requires his services—that whether it is against an enemy of his own government or that of another, should not be considered or enter into his conception of allegiance. They argued that there is no boon so great as a full treasury, and when a subject contributed by enlistments to that end, he was



fulfilling the highest duty of citizenship. Their people, unfortunately, did not respond to such views of patriotism; consequently, in securing recruits the most severe measures were necessary. Impressing was a favorite means of filling the regimental ranks; strangers as well as citizens were in danger of being arrested, imprisoned, and sent off before their friends could learn of their jeopardy, and no one was safe from the grip of the recruiting officer. This is illustrated by an interesting account given by Johann Gottfried Leume, a Leipsic student, who was kidnapped while travelling, forced into the ranks of a moving regiment, and dispatched to America to fight England's battles. As every conceivable method of escape was devised by conscripts, desertions were punished with great severity, though, as a rule, not with death, as the princes found that their private soldiers had too high a monetary value in European markets to be sacrificed by the extreme penalty.

In many principalities the laws obliged the towns and villages in which soldiers escaped, to supply substitutes from among the sons of their most prominent citizens, and anyone aiding a fugitive was imprisoned at hard labor, flogged, and deprived of his civil rights. Bancroft states that the heartless meanness of the Brunswick princes would pass belief if it was not officially authenticated. On learning of Burgoyne's surrender, they begged that their captured men might be sent to the West Indies rather than home, fearing that on reaching Germany their complaints would prove a damage to the government trade in soldiers. Notwithstanding the severe penalties visited on deserters, yet when the Anhalt-Zerbst regiments on their way to embark—1228 strong—passed near the Prussian frontier, over three hundred deserted in ten days. In 1777, when the margrave of Anspach-Beyreuth wished to forward some recruits to America he was obliged to march the detachment unarmed to the point of embarkation on the Main, and while on the way the recruits were guarded by a trusted troop of jägers. In spite of these precautions many escaped, and several were shot while making the endeavor.

The late Frederick Kapp has contributed greatly to our knowledge of Hessian and Anspach soldiery. In regard to recruiting, he informs us that an officer in charge of a detachment of newly-enlisted men was directed, when on the march in

the old country, to avoid large towns, also the vicinity of the place where any of the recruits had lived, or had been formerly stationed. So great precautions were considered necessary to prevent escape, that it was the duty of an officer when billeting at night with strangers to room with his men, and, after undressing, to deliver his weapons and the clothing of the entire party to the landlord or host. In the morning the men's clothing was not to be brought in until the officer was completely dressed and he had loaded and primed his pistols. While *en route* should a recruit grow restive, or show signs of insubordination, the instructions were to cut the buttons and straps from his trousers, forcing him to hold them up in walking, thus rendering flight impossible. Lieutenant Thomas Anburey, a British officer captured with Burgoyne, in a book descriptive of his experiences in America, has much to tell regarding the Hessian contingent of the northern army. We may suppose that his following recital as to the manner of foreign enlistments was based on information gained from German officers:—

The Prince caused every place of worship to be surrounded during service, and took every man who had been a soldier, and to embody these into regiments he appointed old officers who had been many years upon half-pay, to command them, or on refusal of serving to forfeit their half-pay. Thus were these regiments raised, officered with old veterans who had served with credit and reputation in their youthful days, and who had retired, as they imagined, to enjoy some comfort in the decline of life.

This American service was especially objectionable to the Germans because of their knowledge that our country was the home of many of their nationality. They did not wish to fight friends. Nor were their fears groundless, for in their first engagement after landing—the battle of Long Island—among Lord Stirling's troops opposed to them were three battalions, mostly composed of Pennsylvania Germans. These American troops were well uniformed and equipped, and looked so much like the mercenaries that at one time the English thought them to be Hessians, which error cost the British a colonel and eighty privates. That was not the first time that princely avarice had been the means of causing men from the valleys of the Rhine and its tributaries to contend with each other. Lowell recounts that in 1743 Hessians stood against Hessians, six thousand men

serving in the army of King George II., and six thousand in the opposing force of the Emperor Charles VII.

When the news of the capture of the Hessians at Trenton spread through New Jersey and Pennsylvania, the inhabitants thronged from every direction to view these beings whom they had been led to believe were monsters; they were very much astonished to find them like ordinary men of German extraction. The people were filled with wonder, however, at their strangely martial appearance. Their officers, with embroidered coats and stiff carriages, were in strong contrast to the easy-going commanders of the continental forces, while the men in their dress and accoutrements presented a very different appearance from that of the generally poorly clad and equipped soldiers of the young republic. This was especially true of the grenadiers. They wore very long-skirted blue coats which looked fine on parade, but were ill calculated for rapid marching; a yellow waistcoat extended below the hips, and yellow breeches were met at the knee by black gaiters. A thick paste of tallow and flour covered the hair, which was drawn tightly back and plaited into a tail which hung nearly to the waist. Their moustaches were fiercely stiffened with black paste, while above all towered a heavy brass-fronted cap. When in full marching order they must needs have had stout legs and broad backs to have sustained the weight they were forced to carry. In addition to cumbersome belts, a cartouche box, and a heavy gun, each man's equipment included sixty rounds of ammunition, an enormous sword, a canteen holding a gallon, a knapsack, blanket, haversack, hatchet, and his proportion of tent equipage. Max von Eelking, in his "Memoirs" of von Riedesel, translated by W. L. Stone, writes that the English officers said the hats and swords of the Brunswick dragoons were as heavy as the whole equipment of a British soldier.

These Trenton captives were sent over the Delaware into Pennsylvania and quartered at Newtown. Lord Stirling, who was there, received the officers with much consideration, saying, "Your General de Heister treated me like a brother when I was a prisoner," [after the battle of Long Island]; and so, gentlemen, will you be treated by me." Corporal Johannes Reuber, one of the captives, writes in his journal that in passing through



the towns and villages the Germans were upbraided and treated with contumely by the populace, which continued until Washington caused notices to be posted throughout the vicinity, saying that the Hessians had been compelled to become combatants, and should be treated with kindness and not with enmity. The prisoners were very grateful to Washington for being allowed to retain their baggage, and for their generally kind treatment. In their gratitude for conduct so opposed to what they had expected, they called their illustrious conqueror "a very good rebel."

General de Heister, referred to by Lord Stirling, was an old man who, after fifty years of service, yielded to the earnest entreaty of his personal friend, the landgrave of Hesse-Cassel, and consented to command the eighty-seven hundred Hessians who came to America to join Howe's army. During the prolonged voyage the old gentleman exhausted his whole stock of tobacco and patience. From his transport he thus wrote to Sir George Collier of H. M. S. Rainbow, who commanded the conveying war-ships :—

I have been imposed on and deceived, for I was assured the voyage would not exceed six or seven weeks,—it is now more than fourteen since I embarked, and full three months since I left England, yet I see no more prospect of landing than I did a week after our sailing. I am an old man, covered with wounds, and imbecillitated by age and fatigues, and it is impossible I should survive if the voyage continues much longer.

Sir George visited the veteran on his ship and raised his spirits by plentifully supplying him with fresh provisions and tobacco, and by assuring him that the voyage would soon terminate. The old German called upon his band to play, brought out some old hock, and Sir George left him quite exhilarated after drinking in many potations the health of the king, the landgrave, and many other friends.

Of the German officers, Revolutionary literature teems with testimony as to their courtesy and good breeding; and numerous instances could be given going to show that they often endeared themselves to the people that they were here ostensibly to subdue. Among those of leading rank, de Heister, von Riedesel, von Donop, and von Knyphausen left on the communities most agreeable impressions. The latter was a man of honor, possessed a most kindly nature, and while stationed in Philadelphia won the

favorable consideration of the citizens. In appearance he was rather distinguished, erect and slender in figure, with sharp martial features. He was very polite, bowing to all respectable persons met on the street, and was fair and honorable in his dealings. In May, 1782, when this general in company with Sir Henry Clinton embarked from New York for England, a diarist of that time recites: "Knyphausen has the good wishes of all people, but Sir Henry leaves a poor character behind him." Bancroft characterizes von Riedesel as a man of honor and activity; and the same historian speaks of de Heister as a brave old man, cheerful in disposition, good-natured, bluntly honest and upright. Stone in his preface to von Eelking's "Memoirs" of von Riedesel says that the general "possessed all the qualities of a good and brave soldier," that "his love of justice was well-known," and that "his name honors not only his own state but also his common fatherland." Colonel von Donop it was who fell in the glaxis of Fort Mercer, amid the great slaughter which the gallant but rash charge led by him had ensured. Colonel Greene, who displayed much bravery in repulsing the enemy, was most humane in his treatment of the wounded that his cannon balls and grape shot had left piled in front of the fortification's double abattis. Among von Donop's last words before his death, which occurred a few days after the action, were:—

I fall a victim to my own ambition, and to the avarice of my prince; but full of thankfulness for the good treatment I have received from my generous enemy.

As to the Hessian officers of lesser rank, equally good tidings have come down to us. Mr. De Lancey, in his paper on Mount Washington and its capture, published in the first volume of the "Magazine of American History," avers that the Hessian officers in America were polite, courteous and almost without exception well educated; he recites that as far as birth was concerned the English officers of Howe's army were much inferior in social rank to those of the Germans. Any rich Englishman could make his boy a gentleman by buying him a commission, but in Germany it was necessary for a youth to be one by birth if he aspired to be an officer. When the British army in 1776 occupied Manhattan Island, the troops were to a large extent billeted on the citizens. Mrs. Lamb recounts, in her "History of the

City of New York," that Mrs. Thomas Clark, a widow lady, owned, and occupied with her daughters, an attractive country seat near Twenty-fifth street and Tenth avenue. She was greatly distressed because some Hessians were quartered on her property. Like every one else at that time she supposed them to be iniquitous persons, who would visit upon her family all manner of indignities. To Mrs. Clark's great relief, she found her apprehensions groundless; nothing was disturbed, and the commanding officer proved not only to be a gentleman, but so considerate and agreeable that he became a favorite both with herself and her daughters. Early in the war, experiences of a like character were frequent. Mrs. Ellet's "Domestic History" tells that after Howe's army had advanced into Westchester county a Mrs. Captain Whetten, living near New Rochelle, noticed one day that a black flag had been set up near her house. Upon asking an English officer its meaning, she was much distressed by his replying;—"Heaven help you, madame, a Hessian camp is to be established here." Her fears were unnecessary, as when the Germans arrived good feeling soon existed between them and the family. One of the officers was quartered in the house; when night came Mrs. Whetten was about sending to some distance for clean sheets for his bed, when he protested against her inconveniencing herself on his account, saying, "Do not trouble yourself, madame, straw is good enough for a soldier."

Graydon, in his "Memoirs," gives an account of his spending the winter of 1778, in Reading, Pennsylvania. There were there a number of officers, prisoners on parole, of whom he thus speaks:—

Among them were several Germans who had really the appearance of being what you would call down-right men. One old gentleman, a colonel, was a great professional reader, whom on his application I accommodated with books such as I had. Another of them, a very portly personage, was enthusiastically devoted to music, in which he was so much absorbed, as to seldom go abroad. But of all the prisoners, one Graff, a Brunswick officer, taken by General Gates' army, was admitted to the greatest privileges. Under the patronage of Dr. Potts, who had been principal surgeon in the Northern Department, he had been introduced to our dancing parties, and being always afterward invited, he never failed to attend. He was a young man of mild and pleasing manners. There was also a Mr. Stulzoe of the Brunswick dragoons, than whose, I have seldom seen a figure



more martial, or a manner more indicative of that manly openness which is supposed to belong to the character of a soldier. \*

It would be interesting to learn just how so deep-seated an aversion to the Hessians first became planted in the minds of the people, particularly in those of Pennsylvania and New Jersey. It could not have been because of their nationality, as among the populations of those states were many Germans who had always been appreciated as a worthy folk, quiet rather than bellicose in character. Yet, for some mysterious reason, these Teuton soldiers were looked upon with great dread by the inhabitants, especially by those who knew the least of them. The terror they inspired was often dissipated by a better acquaintance, as the private soldiers were found to be—with of course individual exceptions—simple-minded souls, and more afraid of their officers than of anything else. Mr. Onderdonk, in his "Revolutionary Incidents," speaks of them as:—

A kind, peaceable people, inveterately fond of smoking and of pea coffee; their offences were of the sly kind, such as stealing at night, while the British and new raised corps were insolent, domineering, and inclined to violence and bloodshed.

Gouverneur Morris in 1777 was ordered by the convention of the state of New York to prepare a narrative of the conduct of the British toward American prisoners. Among the papers submitted was the affidavit of Lieutenant Troop of the militia, which recited that "he and other officers confined on Long Island were much abused by nearly all of the British officers and in their presence by the soldiers; they were insulted and called rebels, scoundrels, villains and robbers:" that when imprisoned at Flatbush they were given so short allowance of biscuits and salt pork "that," to use his own words, "several of the Hessian soldiers took pity on their situation and gave them some apples, and at one time some fresh beef, which much relieved them." The following extract is from a letter written by Washington at Morristown on the fifth of February, 1777, to Samuel Chase, one of

---

\* The "Graff" spoken of by Graydon was Cornet Auguste Ludwig Lucas Gräfe of the Brunswick dragoons; after the peace he remained a year in America, when he returned to Germany where he died as governor of Mecklenberg-Strelitz. The Mr. Stulzoe of the Brunswick dragoons was Cornet Johann Balthasar Stutzer, who died at Brunswick, Germany, in 1821, as a pensioned lieutenant-colonel.

a committee of seven appointed by congress to inquire into the conduct of the British and Hessian officers toward American soldiers and toward the citizens of New York and New Jersey:—

I shall employ some proper person to take the depositions of people in the different parts of the province of New Jersey, who have been plundered after having taken protection and subscribed the Declaration. One thing I must remark in favor of the Hessians, and that is, that our people, who have been prisoners, generally agree that they received much kinder treatment from them than from the British officers and soldiers. The barbarities at Princeton were all committed by the British, there being no Hessians there.

Max von Eelking, in his "*Die Deutschen Hulfstruppen in Nordamerikanischen Befremungskriege, 1776 bis 1783*," speaks of the effect that the landing of the Hessians on Long Island had upon the inhabitants. After telling that they were in great awe of the Germans and that many fled on their approach, he goes on to say:—

When the first fear and excitement among the population had subsided, and people had become aware that after all they had not to deal with robbers and anthropophagi, they returned to their homes, and were not a little surprised to find not only their dwellings as they left them, but also the furniture, their effects, aye, even their money and trinkets. The fact was that the Germans, used to discipline, did not ask for more than they were entitled to. Their mutual relations now took a more friendly form, and it was not a rare case that a thorough republican would treat the quartered soldier like one entitled to his hospitality, and carefully nurse the sick or wounded one.

During the winter of 1776, there was living at Burlington, a Mrs. Margaret Morris, who recorded her experiences in a journal of which a few copies were printed for private circulation. When Count von Donop's command penetrated as far as Mount Holly, she, in common with every one else, was at first much exercised over the proximity of the abhorred Hessians. On the seventeenth of December the following entry was made in her diary:—

A friend made my mind easy by telling me that he had passed through the town where the Hessians were said to be 'playing the very mischief'; it is certain there were numbers of them at Mount Holly, but they behaved very civilly to the people, excepting only a few persons who were actually in rebellion, as they termed it, whose goods, etc., they injured.

In the "Personal Recollections of the American Revolution," edited by Sidney Barclay, there appears the journal of a lady who made her home with her father, a clergyman, in the centre of

Long Island, while her husband was with Washington's army. An entry of January, 1777, recites:—

The soldiers [Hessian] take so much notice of the children that I fear lest they should contract evil, especially Charles. They have taught him to speak their language, he understands nearly all their conversation. They make pretty willow baskets for Marcia and Grace, and tell them of their own little ones at home, over the stormy ocean. The children are fond of them, and they feel no enmity toward them. What is more melancholy than the trade of a hired soldier! I deeply commiserate their wretched lot.

This little domestic scene hardly pictures the Germans in the guise of wicked marauders. The same diarist, in writing in 1783 of the evacuation of the island by the Hessians, says further:—

Many of the poor creatures have formed attachments, and the ties of kindness and gratitude are hard to break. Many of them begged to be permitted to remain in some menial capacity, but the ties of kindred prevailed with the greater part.

The journal of Captain Pausch, chief of the Hesse Hanau artillery during the Burgoyne campaign, thus speaks of the behaviour of the privates of that command:—

They never fail after *reveille* and tattoo, to make their offerings to their God by singing morning and evening hymns; one hour afterwards they give themselves up to enjoyment, but in such a manner as to never give cause for complaint or punishment.

The journal of John Charles Philip von Krafft, free corporal in Lieutenant-Colonel Hinter's company in von Donop's regiment of Hesse-Cassel musketeers, furnishes a most interesting glimpse of the daily inside life in a German regiment which served in America as a contingent to the British army. Von Krafft makes many comments on Hessian forbearance as compared with British marauding. In speaking of the march across the Jerseys in 1778, he tells of entering a house near Freehold when he was informed by its occupants that some English soldiers had just stripped them of everything, even taking the silver buckles from a woman's shoes. This woman said to him that "she saw very plainly there was no truth in what people had told her of the Hessians, namely, that they were cruel. She saw that it was the English alone." These people gave von Krafft some fresh provisions, including a rooster and three chickens which had been concealed in an oven. They would not name a price, but he gave them one shilling and ten-pence English



money, for which they wished him many blessings, and begged him to pick some cherries from the trees in the dooryard. On the twenty-sixth of June he reached Freehold and found, to quote from the journal :—

Every place here was broken into and plundered by the English soldiers. The church, which was made of wood and had a steeple, was miserably demolished.

He recites that his regiment halted for an hour and a half on the main street of Freehold, during which time the English soldiers had :—

Been breaking and destroying everything in the city hall house, even tearing down the little bell in the steeple. No Hessian was to be seen among them, the commanders of regiments not allowing it.

He acknowledges, however, that some abuses were secretly practised by his countrymen. In September, 1778, in writing of his experiences while on a foraging party near the twenty-mile stone in Westchester county, New York, von Krafft says :—

We were not forbidden to get provisions, but very strictly admonished not to take anything from the people in their houses. \* \* \* For a few days we had an abundance of food, and this was my only booty.

Did space permit, much further of interest could be drawn from the journal of this Hessian soldier. It can be found among the collections of the New York Historical society.

The Marquis de Chastellux, in writing of the capitulation at Yorktown, speaks of the contemptuous attitude of the captured British soldiers toward the Americans. They made friends with the French, but in their chagrin and disappointment held aloof from the hated rebels. Says Chastellux :—

After the surrender the English behaved with the same overbearing insolence as if they had been conquerors ; the Scots wept bitterly, while the Germans only conducted themselves decently, and in a manner becoming prisoners.

The bitter feeling evinced by the people toward the subsidiary troops of the English army was probably engendered by their conduct at the battle of Long Island. Their excesses have been greatly exaggerated by early historians in accounts of that action ; it is gratifying, therefore, to read in one of Professor John Fiske's latest historical contributions, refer-

ring to this battle, that "the stories of a wholesale butchery by the Hessians which once were current have been completely disproved." There is no doubt, however, that during that engagement the Germans were guilty of some unnecessary cruelties, but any fair-minded person familiar with all the facts must admit that the circumstances of ignorance and false teaching palliate to a certain extent their behavior on that occasion. The Long Island Historical Society, in its account of the battle, publishes the letter of an officer in Fraser's Scotch battalion, from which I make the following extract :—

The Hessians and our brave Highlanders gave no quarter, and it was a fine sight to see with what alacrity they dispatched the rebels with bayonets after we had surrounded them so that they could not resist. We took care to tell the Hessians that the rebels had resolved to give no quarter to them in particular: which made them fight desperately, and put all to death who fell into their hands.

The statement of this bloodthirsty Highland officer is corroborated by the before referred to historian, Max von Eelking. He records :—

That the Hessians were very much exasperated and furious, is not to be denied ; \* \* \* the course pursued by the Hessians was urged upon them by the Britons. Colonel von Heeringen says on this subject, in his letter to Colonel von Lossburg: "The English soldiers did not give much quarter and constantly urged our men to follow their example."

Another officer, who was present at that time, narrates that the Germans early learned enough English to beg for quarter from the savage rebels, of whom they stood in great fear. They acted as if they were going to be eaten, and some of them when taken, bawled out as best they could, "Oh! good rebel man, don't kill poor Hessian!"

That the heart of the Hessians was not in the work of aiding in the subjugation of Great Britain's colonists is proven by the fact of their frequent desertions. It is estimated that of the nearly thirty thousand German troops brought to America by the English, more than five thousand deserted, many of them becoming valued citizens of the country; and frequent instances can be shown of their descendants ranking among the leading people of the United States. Judge Jones, in his "History of New York," avers that Henry Ashdore was the first in America of the name now so well known under its anglicized form of

Astor. He was a peasant from Waldorf in Baden, who came to this country with the British during the Revolutionary war, but, after a short period managed to escape their service, and entered into that of the "Art and Mystery of Butchering." Upon the cessation of hostilities he induced his youngest brother—then a youth of twenty—to come to New York. This was John Jacob Astor, who died in 1848 the richest man of his day in America. J. G. Rosengarten, in a paper read before the Newport Historical Society in 1886 informs us that the ancestor of General George A. Custer was a German soldier, named Kuster, who was among those captured by Gates in 1777. He settled in Pennsylvania, but subsequently removed to Maryland, where the distinguished general's father was born in 1806.

John Conrad Dochlar, an Anspach sergeant, in enumerating in his diary the German troops made prisoners at Yorktown, mentions the "Prince Royal" regiment of Hesse-Cassel, as having once been strong, "but now a great sufferer from death and desertion"; and the Anspach-Beyreuthian regiments as having had "about forty killed and wounded, besides losing fifty deserters." While Burgoyne's captured army was quartered at Cambridge, Massachusetts, in 1778, many of von Riedesel's soldiers deserted, and enlisted in Armand's light-corps then being recruited at Boston. During the month of April forty-five men escaped, while in May the Brunswickers lost seventy-two soldiers. When the convention army started for Virginia in November fifty Germans deserted before reaching the Hudson. The auxiliary troops, while *en route* south, entered New Jersey on the fourth of December, halting for the night of the fifth at Sussex Court-house. While marching through Stillwater township, in Sussex county, a dozen or more "Hessians" escaped and hid until all the prisoners and their guards had passed by. They settled permanently in the township, and several well-known families in that neighborhood are the posterity of these German soldiers. In Morris county also, there are a number of resident families descended from thirty Hessians who at one time during the Revolution were employed at the Mount Hope mine. Lieutenant Anburey of Burgoyne's army—before quoted—in describing the march of the captured troops to Virginia, thus speaks of Germans who deserted :—



Seeing in what a comfortable manner their countrymen lived, they left us in great numbers as we marched through New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania.

Washington, in a letter from Englishtown on the day after the battle of Monmouth, writes that thus far Sir Henry Clinton in his march through the Jerseys had lost by desertion five or six hundred men, "chiefly foreigners." Six days later General Arnold, who had been left in command at Philadelphia, reported that five hundred and seventy-six deserters had reached that city, of whom four hundred and forty-six were Germans. The journal of von Krafft recites that there were so many desertions among his countrymen during the retreat across the Jerseys that General von Knyphausen announced, through his regimental commanders, that the men must not believe the "statements in circulation that the rebels would give plantations and houses to those who remained behind." This general, as a warning to the troops, as they marched by caused a deserter to be hanged on a tree by the road, "which caused a dreadful uproar." When the English marched out of Philadelphia they were but eleven thousand strong. When Howe landed at the head of Elk he had eighteen thousand men. As a writer of that time says :—

This terrible diminution can be only accounted for by the spirit of desertion, which, among the Hessians, prevailed to a very great degree.

General Greene, in a letter to John Adams written from Basking Ridge in March, 1777, thus speaks of the Germans captured at Trenton :—

The mild and gentle treatment the Hessian prisoners have received since they have been in our possession has produced a great alteration in their dispositions. Desertions prevail among them. One whole brigade refused to fight or do duty, and were sent prisoners to New York. Rancor and hatred prevail between them and the British soldiery.

From Lossing we learn that of the officers captured at Trenton, Ensign Carle Fried Frurer, of the Knyphausen regiment, and Ensign Kleinsmith, joined the American army; and the historian Onderdonk claims that many leading families of Long Island trace their descent from deserters from the ranks of the mercenary troops. Von Elking mentions by name twelve officers of the Brunswick contingent who settled permanently in America. Among them were six who remained by permission after the peace, two who returned home but came back to this

country, and four who deserted during the war. The latter included Chaplain Carl Melsheimer of the dragoon regiment. On the Sunday after the battle of Princeton, General Maxwell with some Jersey militia came out of the Short Hills, and falling suddenly on the British post at Elizabethtown, made prisoners of fifty Waldeckers and forty Highlanders. A writer who describes this affair in a letter dated at Philadelphia on the sixteenth of January, recites :—

The English troops at Elizabethtown would not suffer the Waldeckers to stand sentry at the outposts, several of them having deserted and come over to us.

At the time of the battle of Germantown there was living in that place a rich German baker, named Christopher Ludwick. Having learned that among the prisoners taken during that engagement were eight Hessians, this patriotic baker conceived the idea of putting his unfortunate countrymen to a more valuable service than that of being guarded or paroled. He went to headquarters and induced the commander-in-chief to place these men completely in his hands, the only proviso being that there should come to them no bodily harm. He then constituted himself their host and guide, and taking them all about Philadelphia and its vicinity, showed them how the Germans were prospering in this country; how comfortably they were housed, what fine churches they had, with what freedom and independence they followed their avocations, and with what happiness those in the humbler pursuits of life were living. This wise custodian then dismissed his prisoners, charging them to return to their regiments and inform their fellow-soldiers of all that they had seen, and explain to them the happiness awaiting those who would desert and settle in Pennsylvania. The seed thus planted bore rich fruit. It is said that among the deserters resulting from this action, numbers afterward became prosperous citizens of Philadelphia. Ludwick's success in this enterprise encouraged him to further endeavors in the same direction; he visited a Hessian camp on Staten Island, and without detection succeeded in causing several soldiers to flee to Pennsylvania. This honest German afterward became baker-general to the American army. He is said to have often been a visitor at headquarters, where Washington recognized his worth, and appreciated to the full the value of his services.

Speaking of General Washington brings to mind the fact that, while living in Philadelphia as chief magistrate of the nation, his coachman was an ex-Hessian soldier. It was one of the events of the week to see "Fritz," seated on the box of the executive's carriage, drawing up his four bright bays on Sunday morning in front of Christ church. He was tall and muscular, looking the soldier, his long aquiline nose pressing closely down over a fierce moustache. In a livery of white, touched with red, he carried himself with an important air, showing a severe countenance under his cocked hat, which was worn square to the front, but thrown a little back on his queue. Washington's arrival at church was always the occasion of an enthusiastic but a quiet and respectful ovation. Long before the hour he was expected Second street would be packed with a patient throng of citizens. On the approach of the well-known white coach, ornamented with medallions, the crowd silently opened a narrow way or lane from the curb to the church door, and, as the president stepped with calm dignity from the carriage, profound silence reigned, every eye being riveted on the distinguished form. As Washington, stately in person and noble in demeanor, slowly moved across the pavement toward the sacred edifice, it was an impressive spectacle. From the dense crowd there came not a sound, but the respectful silence in which the assembled multitude stood in the presence of the "father of his country," testified more strongly than would have the bravest shouts, or the loudest acclamations, to the admiration and veneration with which they viewed this "greatest, purest, most exalted of mortals."







## CHAPTER XXVI.

*Washington's March from Trenton to Morristown—The Battles of Assunpink and Princeton—The American Army Encamped at Pluckamin—Death and Burial of Captain William Leslie.*

With the turn of the year 1776-'77 important events rapidly succeeded each other. Naturally one would say that the history of this time will make trite reading, but the occurrences of the next few weeks are too closely identified with the experiences of Bedminster people to be passed over without a somewhat extended notice. In addition, an endeavor will be made in this chapter to present some facts and incidents that have hitherto escaped the attention and knowledge of the ordinary Revolutionary student. It is not my purpose to tell over again the well-known stories of Assunpink and Princeton, but rather to dwell on the many minor scenes and events connected with the march of the continental army from the second to the sixth of January, 1777; to relate some details of interest that historians generally have been forced to pass by, in order to dilate on the two noted engagements which at that time entirely altered the current of American history. While the foundation and continuity of the narration cannot be preserved without mentioning these actions, yet, whatever of interest and value may follow will be due to the lesser historical gleanings presented, which may be said to be, to some extent, the result of an intimate knowledge of the locality in which the scenes are depicted, and a lifelong acquaintance with its people.

The Christmas holidays of the year 1776, which will ever be considered one of the great epochs in American history, completely changed the aspect of the Revolutionary contest. Sir

William Howe and Lord Cornwallis, astounded at the news from Trenton, were at once alive to their error in thinking that American independence was a matter of the past. Abandoning his proposed home voyage, Cornwallis hastily marched his troops toward the Delaware, being joined on the way by Count von Donop's force from Bordentown. The British column, five thousand strong, reached Trenton late on the afternoon of the second of January. Washington was already there with nearly an equal number of men, although his army was largely composed of undisciplined, ununiformed militia. Intent on reoccupying if not recapturing New Jersey, he on the thirteenth of December had again crossed the Delaware.

Cornwallis on reaching Princeton had with him about eight thousand men. Leaving fifteen hundred there under Lieutenant Colonel Mawhood, and dispatching General Leslie with fifteen hundred more to Maidenhead, he marched with the remainder on the morning of the second, intent on annihilating Washington's ragged army. The American general, to check this advance, on the evening of New Year's day sent out a strong force of riflemen and artillery under Generals de Fermoy and Adam Stephen. They met the enemy on the following morning, arresting their progress for nearly two hours, then falling back toward the Delaware continued harassing and impeding the hostile march, until it was nearly dark before the British faced the main body of the Americans at Trenton. After sunset the enemy advanced in two heavy bodies to the north side of Assunpink creek in order to force the bridge, but from the opposite shore the American dogs of war barked from their iron throats a dubious welcome. The enemy's attempt to force a passage of the stream was defeated by the effective manner in which General Knox handled his artillery, which was advantageously planted on the high southern bank of the creek. Owing to the lateness of the hour Cornwallis retired to the rear of the town, on the Princeton road, deciding to await daylight before renewing the attack, and when, as he boasted, "he would catch that old fox Washington." The British general's confidence in what the morrow would bring forth proved to be misplaced. From time immemorial a fox has been the most uncertain of all game, and Lord Cornwallis had quite neglected to remember that it was not uncommon for

that wary animal, when just about trapped, to quietly steal away.

Frederick the Great, on being told that a distinguished general had never made a mistake, replied, "then he must have fought very few campaigns." If Washington could ever be charged with a lack of military judgment it was when he placed his army in the position it occupied on this night of the second of January. Realizing his dangerous situation he was full of anxiety. Should an engagement follow the dawn, defeat would mean the destruction or capture of the entire continental force, the troops being so disposed as to render a retreat impracticable. An engagement was certainly to be expected, the chances of success lying almost wholly with the enemy, as opposed to the raw levies of the Americans was the flower of the British army. Washington's decision was promptly reached, a decision that was probably as important in its immediate results and in its future effect upon the destinies of the country, as was any he was called upon to make during his entire career. The British had left at Princeton the 17th, 40th and 55th Regiments of infantry and three squadrons of dragoons. They were to join Cornwallis in the morning, but could they be reached by the Americans before that time their destruction was not impossible. Washington, calling his generals together, disclosed his plan, which was to move quietly around the enemy's flank, and marching rapidly on Princeton, strike a telling blow in that unexpected quarter.

It has been said that this strategy was the suggestion of General St. Clair, but Stryker, in his "Princeton Surprise," contributed to the "Magazine of American History," has conclusively proved this claim to be groundless, and such excellent authorities as Gordon and Bancroft insist that the idea was the conception of the chief. Be this as it may, the movement was quickly executed. Silently sending off the *impedimenta* in the direction of Bordentown, the camp-fires were brightened, and pacing sentinels were left on guard, whose frequent challenges deluded the outposts of the enemy. Soon after midnight the ragged but heroic army broke camp, St. Clair's brigade leading the way. The other commands following, they pushed out far east of and around the sleeping British soldiers ;



in the deep stillness of the night, along a narrow new road through the woods, the troops silently defiled over the frozen ground, their departure entirely unsuspected by the enemy.

In speaking of Revolutionary armies such terms as corps, divisions and brigades are not always applied in the sense of their present uses. To mention a division does not imply a command made up of the full number of regiments and brigades. When Baron Steuben assumed the duties of inspector-general at Valley Forge, in March, 1778, he found that the term division, brigade, and regiment did not convey an idea upon which a calculation could be based as to the strength of the army. In some instances a regiment was stronger than a brigade. Disorder and confusion reigned supreme, and the continual coming and going of men enlisted for three, six and nine months made it impossible to preserve intact either a company or a battalion. To quote his own words: "I have seen a regiment consisting of thirty men and a company of one corporal." There was no uniformity of formation except in the line of march, and as to manual, each colonel had a system of his own. With this little force that was stealing through the dark gloom of the forests toward Princeton there were at least eleven generals, although the entire army barely aggregated a modern brigade. The number of commissioned officers was also out of all proportion to the non-commissioned officers and enlisted men. As a rule, the line, field and staff of a regiment or battalion had under them but a handful of soldiers.

So far as I can learn, of this devoted band but few organizations of foot were completely uniformed and equipped. One was the Dover light-infantry, clad in green faced with red, which was a militia company raised in the northern district of Kent county, Delaware, and commanded by Captain Thomas Rodney; the second was four light-infantry companies of Philadelphia militia under Captain George Henry. A third uniformed organization was Colonel William Smallwood's battalion, a mere fragment—barely seventy men—of what in the preceding June had been a noble regiment, eleven hundred strong, composed of the finest youth of Maryland. On the twenty-seventh day of the preceding August, at a point in Brooklyn where now Fifth avenue and Tenth street intersect, the men of this command,

together with Colonel Haslet's Delaware regiment, held the enemy in check at a severe loss to themselves, while the rest of the regiments of Lord Stirling's division were making their escape from a most dangerous position. Three times they rallied and charged the enemy, knowing the result must be their own sacrifice, yet willing to suffer at so great a cost in order that while holding the British at bay their comrades could make good their retreat. The combat over, two hundred and fifty-six of these Maryland lads were either lying among the dead and dying, or with their general, Lord Stirling, were in the hands of the enemy. The carnage had not been in vain, as the flying Americans were saved from complete destruction. Washington, choking with emotion, witnessed this bravery from a little redoubt within the present boundaries of Court, Clinton, Atlantic and Pacific streets, and the courage and self-devotion of this handful of young soldiers were the admiration of both armies. The battalions now marching toward Princeton were all similarly reduced. The Rhode Island and Virginia regiments had been greatly depleted; of the latter, Colonel Scott's command was but a corporal's guard, while Weedon's, which was probably the strongest battalion with the army, had less than one hundred and forty men fit for duty.

The 1st Delaware regiment, under the brave Colonel Haslet, also made a name for itself at the battle of Long Island, but at a fearful cost. Its strength, which at the outset had been a full thousand, mustered during the retreat across the Jerseys but one hundred and five men. The time for which this command was enlisted expired on the first of January, and most of the officers and men returned home in the hope of securing positions in the new continental regiments that were there forming. Six of them, however, refused to overlook the necessities of the situation and abandon the continental army on the eve of an engagement. On the night march we are describing this 1st Delaware regiment had consequently dwindled to Colonel Haslet, Captain Holland, Doctor Gilder, Ensign Wilson and two privates. The colonel was made second in command of General Mercer's brigade which numbered all told about four hundred men. As this spirited and distinguished young officer rode by the side of his troops, encouraging the soldiers in their hurried march, he

little thought that in a few short hours, with the coming of the dawn, he would be called upon to lay his young life on the altar of his country.

The only mounted force then with the army was the 1st Troop of Philadelphia light-horse, commanded by Captain Morris. It was a militia company composed of twenty-one gentlemen of independent fortunes, whose services during their tour of duty were invaluable to the commander-in-chief. They furnished him with couriers, guards, patrols and videttes, and when discharged on the twenty-third of January Washington tendered them his sincere thanks for the effective aid they had rendered the army. With each discharge was a testimonial which asserted that though the members were gentlemen of wealth they had shown a noble example of discipline and subordination, and in several actions had manifested a spirit and bravery which would ever do honor to themselves, and be gratefully remembered by their chief.

Among the artillery that was jolting and rumbling over the stumps and frozen ruts on this cold January night was a New Jersey command known as the "Eastern Battery" of state troops, which a month before had been assigned to Colonel Procter's artillery regiment in General Knox's brigade. Early in the war, owing to the exposed situation of New Jersey, and to its lying between the two prominent cities that were likely to be the strongholds of the enemy, it was found necessary to organize a force for the protection of the inhabitants. These troops were volunteers from the county militia, and were known as "New Jersey Levies" and "State Troops." Though primarily intended for home protection, they were required, when called upon, to serve beyond the borders of the state. The first organization of these lines authorized by the provincial congress were stationed in the eastern and western divisions of the state. Among the officers of the Eastern Battery were Captain Frederick Frelinghuysen and Second-Lieutenant John Van Dyke. This battery did excellent service on the banks of the Assunpink and at Trenton on the morning after Christmas. Its men also won the commendation of their general for the manner in which they served their guns at the battles of Princeton and Monmouth. Lieutenant Van Dyke of this command was a native of Eliza-



bethtown, and his war experiences were rich and varied in character. When the time of service of this New Jersey battery expired he became an officer in Colonel Lamb's artillery regiment of the New York line. While taking a short sea voyage, when on a furlough owing to illness, he was captured by the enemy and spent some time on the prison ship, "Jersey." He was one of the officers who walked with Andre to the gallows, and his pen has furnished us with a very full account of the incidents of that unhappy expiation.

Captain Frelinghuysen retired from the artillery in May, 1776, being succeeded in the command of the battery by Captain Daniel Neil, which officer, like Colonel Haslet, was now marching to his death. Frelinghuysen was still with the army and participated in this Princeton surprise, having in November been appointed brigade-major on the staff of General Dickinson of the New Jersey militia. He was campaigning in a familiar country, having graduated from the college of New Jersey six years before at the early age of sixteen. There were other "Princeton men" with the continental troops, among them Surgeon Benjamin Rush of the class of 1760, and Colonel Joseph Reed—a native of Trenton—whose parchment was dated in 1757. The latter was a member of Washington's military family. Doctor Rush, who was a well-known physician of Philadelphia, was serving as a volunteer surgeon with the Pennsylvania militia. Von Moltke claims geography to be the most important factor in the science of war. These two staff officers, because of their local knowledge of the vicinity, are said to have contributed greatly to the brilliant success of that momentous winter's day, which a rising sun and this little army were about to make historic.

The morning of the third of January was clear and cold. A white hoar-frost sparkled and glittered on the fields, and the branches of the trees were gemmed with buds of ice. Soon after daybreak the people in the vicinity of Princeton were awakened by the noise of musket-shots. File-firing commenced pattering like drum-beats, followed by a regular fusillade of platoons; then came the roaring of cannon. The citizens soon discovered that war in its full flower was at their very doors. General Mercer with his brigade, which on nearing the town

had been detached from the main column, came upon the British advance at Samuel Worth's mill, near where the King's highway crosses Stony brook, about one mile southwest of Princeton. He would have been overwhelmed, but Washington with the continentals and militia promptly came to his support; a sharp and decisive engagement followed; in less than thirty minutes victory perched upon the American banners, and the enemy, horse and foot, were in full retreat.

I do not propose to weary the patience of my readers with an account of this famous battle. Able historians have made us all familiar with the miraculous escape of Washington when exposed to a cross-fire of friend and foe; have told over and over again of General Mercer's having been pinned to the earth by the fatal thrusts of British bayonets; of how the smoke rose above the combatants and hung in air, a clear, white, cumulus cloud, as if weighted with the souls of those who had just closed their eyes on the radiance of that winter morn; of the appearance presented by the British commander, Lieutenant-Colonel Mawhood, who in the heat of the action rode at the head of his men on a little brown pony, with two springing spaniels playing before him; of Knox's training his artillery on Nassau Hall to dislodge a portion of the 40th Regiment which had taken refuge in the college building; and of the many other incidents crowded within the short space of time occupied in completely routing the British forces. Taking into consideration the number of troops engaged, no action during the war was so fatal to American officers. One general, one colonel, three captains, one lieutenant and an ensign were killed; but then, as has been learned, officers were so numerous in this little army that even in so short an exposure to the enemy's fire that number of casualties was fairly to be expected. All told, the American loss was but thirty, while the British left one hundred dead on the field and nearly three hundred men in our hands as prisoners, including fourteen officers. Fifty of the captives were sent into Pennsylvania, the rest being brought along with the army.

Among the enemy's fatally wounded was a young Scotchman, William Leslie, a son of the Earl of Leven and a captain in the 17th Regiment of foot. He was of a military line, being a descendant of that old Earl of Leven who was a soldier under Gustavus,

and who at the battle of Marston Moor boldly rode at the head of his tough Scotch covenanters to oppose the cavalier troopers, massed by the thousands under the silken standard of Prince Rupert. It is a singular circumstance that when Captain Leslie received his death-wound, so far from home and kindred, the only two Americans knowing of him and his people were in the immediate vicinity, one being in the army against which he was contending. He fought his last battle almost within the shadows of the walls of a college whose president, John Witherspoon, was the lifelong friend of his parents. Before being called to America Doctor Witherspoon had been a prominent Presbyterian minister at Paisley, a Scottish town not far from Melville House, the seat of the Earl of Leven. Captain Leslie's mother, the countess, was a devout adherent to the kirk of Scotland, and had the interests of Presbyterianism much at heart. That she might keep informed as to its progress in America, for a number of years after her old friend had been called to the presidency of the college of New Jersey she continued with him a religious and friendly correspondence, and ever held him in high esteem.

Strange as it may appear, when Leslie fell he almost at once received aid from another friend of his parents. Surgeon Benjamin Rush, before mentioned, had gained his medical education at the University of Edinburgh. While in Scotland he became acquainted with the family of the Earl of Leven. The young student's refined and polished manners, together with the peculiarly fascinating conversational powers with which he was endowed, made his frequent visits to Melville House always welcome. After his return to America he was ever held, especially by the countess, in affectionate remembrance; this feeling was heightened to a tender and grateful regard by the doctor's attention and services to her wounded son. When the heat of the engagement at Princeton was over, Washington and his staff while crossing some fallow ground discovered a party of soldiers supporting an injured officer. Upon enquiring and learning his name and rank, Surgeon Rush, who was in the general's suite, thus addressed his chief: "I beg your excellency to permit this wounded officer to be placed under my care, that I may return, in however small a degree, a part of the obligations I owe to his worthy father for the many kindnesses received at his hands



while I was a student at Edinburgh." The request was, of course, granted; Rush was quickly out of the saddle, and with the aid of an orderly placed Leslie in a farmer's wagon that was collecting the wounded. The young soldier at once received surgical treatment, and every care and attention was bestowed on him until his death, which occurred during the following afternoon.

The Americans had no cavalry to follow the fleeing enemy, and the foot soldiers were in anything but a condition for pursuit. After the fight Washington was sorely tempted to push on to New Brunswick in the hope of securing the British stores. It was impossible, owing to the condition of his men; for much of the past thirty-six hours they had been marching and fighting, many of them had had neither breakfast nor dinner, and the entire army were completely exhausted. He was thus forced to seek the hill country where his victorious troops could without molestation obtain the rest and refreshment they so much needed. Re-forming his column, the general pressed on along the King's highway to Van Tilburgh's inn, at Kingston, which stood, and until lately was still standing, on the north side of that thoroughfare. Here, turning to the left on the narrow Rocky Hill road, he marched his way-worn soldiers down the valley of the Millstone.

The first information that Cornwallis had of the affair at Princeton was the booming of cannon on the break of that cold day which he had expected to devote to catching "the old fox." He was much chagrined at Washington's escape, but was soon in full pursuit, the rear-guard under General Leslie, which had rested at Maidenhead, being in the van. A stern chase is always a long one. Much time was lost in crossing Stony brook, the bridge having been destroyed. On nearing Princeton a cannon-shot from a small redoubt brought the British to a halt, their generals thinking that the Americans had fortified themselves in the town. This gun was fired by a few militiamen who had then hastily retired, but an hour was lost before Cornwallis discovered this, and was again on the march. Having great fears for his military chest and supplies at New Brunswick, he hurriedly passed on through Princeton and Kingston without learning that at the latter place his foes had filed to the left.

Meanwhile, let us follow Washington, who was for the first time penetrating Somerset county. An auspicious advent! Arrayed in the continental blue and buff, as he sat his horse with all that martial dignity peculiar to himself, he came as a conqueror, welcomed by the enthusiastic greetings of the populace. The little army toiled along the east bank of the Millstone, the men in high spirits over the experiences of the past twenty-four hours, but yet, so weak from cold, hunger and fatigue that they defiled along in dispersed order, with heavy steps, guns carried in whatever way was easiest, and their eyes almost glued with sleep. Many fell out by the way, and stretching themselves on the frozen ground sought that repose which exhausted nature refused longer to await. But few of the men were decently clad, much less amply protected from the wintry air, while sad to relate some were without covering for their feet. It is told that Washington while riding by the side of his troops noticed that William Lyon, a continental soldier from Middlesex county, was without stockings, and almost, if not entirely, without shoes. As he trudged sturdily along, his bare and bloody feet left their marks on the ice and gravel of the roadway. The general, checking his horse, tapped Lyon gently on the shoulder and said: "My brave boy you deserve a better fate." "Ah," replied the plucky young soldier, "there is no danger of my feet freezing as long as the blood runs." This Revolutionary hero survived that hardship and many others, not dying till 1841. Rumbling along in the midst of the column were country carts containing that sad contingent of all victorious armies, the wounded—poor wretches who rested wearily against the sides of the wagon bodies, their countenances making mute appeals for human sympathy; some with arms in slings, some with heads bandaged, some with limbs and jaws shattered, while others lying in the straw were pale and wan, with eyes fast glazing.

Much of interest appertaining to this march to Morristown is to be learned from the manuscript diary of Captain Thomas Rodney of the Dover light-infantry, which is preserved by his descendants. This officer's company was embodied into a regiment with the four companies of the Philadelphia light-infantry, under the command of the senior captain, George Henry. When

the van of the American army reached the bridge which then spanned the Millstone in front of the residence of Christopher Hoagland, near Griggstown, British cavalry appeared in considerable force on the opposite bank. Just then the condition of Washington's men was such that he desired neither to pursue nor to be pursued, so, riding forward, he ordered Rodney to halt and break up the bridge. The captain recites that on this being done the enemy were forced to retire; this would lead one to suppose that the river's depth at that time was much greater than now, as the present volume of water would hardly prove a bar to the passage of mounted men. Commissaries were sent forward to notify the inhabitants of the coming of the troops, and to direct that food be prepared for their refreshment. It is said that this demand met with a fair response, and when the army at dusk reached Somerset Court-house—Millstone—where it encamped for the night, a considerable number of rations were in readiness.

Washington and some of his staff quartered at the residence of John Van Doren, just south of the village; the house is still standing, as is the barn in which the general's horse was stabled. Mr. Van Doren's military guests were not always of so distinguished a character. Some months later it was soldiers of the enemy that took possession of this old homestead. Upon their approach the men of the household thought it wise to disappear, but old Mrs. Van Doren pluckily stood her ground and defied the intruders. She refused to give up her keys or tell where the family treasures were secreted, whereupon the brutal soldiers, after ransacking the house, hung her up by the heels in the cellar. After their departure she was released by her neighbors, but not until black in the face, and almost lifeless.

During the night many laggards came into camp, and in the morning the column was again pushing northward, crossing the Raritan at Van Veghten's bridge, near the present Finderne railway station. Here, as Rodney states, Washington was again tempted to march on New Brunswick, but realizing that his troops must have repose he finally abandoned the project. Moving up the river, at Tunison's tavern—now Fritt's—the army filed to the right and continued over the hills to Pluckamin, which place was reached during the afternoon. The wounded were distributed in the houses of the village; the Lutheran



church as a temporary prison received the captured men, while in the Matthew Lane house—now owned by John Fenner, Jr.—it is said that the thirteen captured officers were placed under guard. Poor Leslie was no longer a prisoner, his soul having taken flight while the wagon, in which he and other wounded men were carried, was descending the hill below Chamber's brook, at the outskirts of the village. The troops encamped on the bleak hillside just south of Pluckamin, the top of which, as Rodney writes, was covered with snow. Torn with the shock of conflict, weak from need of nourishment, and enfeebled by cold and exhaustion, this place of security, together with the prospect of rest, was most grateful to the little army. Commissaries had been busy; within a few hours the camp was pretty well supplied with provisions, and before the drums beat tattoo nearly one thousand men, who had been unable to keep up on the march, rejoined their commands. When the darkness of night closed around Pluckamin mountain, the ruddy glow of camp fires shone among the trees near the foot of its northern slope. The flames, flashing up, illumined groups of soldiers, stacks of arms, and tethered horses; near by, baggage-wagons, caissons, and cannon were parked in military lines, while here and there the shadowy forms of sentinels could be distinguished. There is no such comfort as fullness and warmth after cold and hunger. It was not long before most of the tired men were full-length at the foot of the trees, forgetting the travail of a soldier's life in needful sleep.

Sunday the fifth of January was a great day for Pluckamin. The news of Washington being in Bedminster had rapidly spread, and while it was yet early, on the roads and lanes leading to the village numerous parties of country people could be seen, all hurrying to visit the soldiers and learn for themselves the latest news of the campaign. Throughout the entire day the place was astir with an animated multitude, and excitements of all kinds ruled the hour. Squads of infantry and artillerymen were everywhere. Farmers' wagons laden with provisions came rolling in from the neighborhood of Peapack, Lamington and the valley. Stern, brown-visaged officers, in heavy boots and tarnished uniforms, were mounting here, dismounting there, and clattering through the streets in every direction. Foraging

parties were being dispatched; couriers and express messengers rode off in hot haste; horses neighed, men shouted, and on all sides were hand-shakings and congratulations. The martial instinct of the people seemed alert; eyes sparkled and all hearts beat quickly. Every little while brought new arrivals of country people, and the details of the famous victory must be gone over again and again. Although the war was yet young the soldiers had plenty to tell of marches and counter-marches, of camp life and bivouacs, of attacks, routs, wounds and hardships. And then the new-comers were carried off to the Lutheran church, which was surrounded by a cordon of sentinels. And through its doors and windows, what a brave show!—two hundred and thirty British soldiers; broad-shouldered, big-boned Scotchmen, stalwart grenadiers, and dragoons brilliant with color—caged lions, who looked with gloomy stares upon the inquisitive and rejoicing Americans, whom the experiences of the past few days had taught them to better appreciate as soldiers and freemen.

And so the day wore on! Everywhere were motion and confusion. Eoff's tavern kept open table, and on its porch continental and militia officers of all grades mingled. It was *cling-clang! cling-clang!* all that Sunday on the anvil of the village forge, for from sunrise to the gloaming honest John Wortman and his brawny assistants were busy with hammer, sledge, and tongs, shoeing army horses and repairing army wagons. "Captain Bullion," too—John Boylan, Pluckamin's first storekeeper—was robbed of his usual Sunday quiet, being obliged to expose his wares for the benefit of impatient soldiers and visitors. Surgeons hurried from house to house, drums beat for guard-mount, subalterns marched reliefs to the different sentry-posts, and the din of war was in the very air. Amid the bustle and animation, in fancy, I can see Aaron Malick, clad in his Sunday breeches of blue cloth, his red waistcoat with flapping pockets showing from under an amply skirted coat adorned with metal buttons. He had come down from the "Old Stone House" with the hope of learning something of his boy John, but that poor lad was still in the grip of Provost Cuninghame, and knew nothing of the happy close of a campaign which had commenced for him rather ingloriously. In after years Aaron often told of the aspect Plucka-

min presented on those memorable days when it was occupied by the heroes of Trenton and Princeton. He especially delighted in reminiscences of the generals whose names grew greater as the war progressed—of Greene, tall and vigorous, with the air of one born to command; of Sullivan, alert and soldierly; of Knox, whose broad, full face beamed with satisfaction; but, above all, of the conspicuous figure of Washington, who seemed a king among men as he moved amid the throng, with high-born eye, lofty but courteous port, and a calm, strong face reflecting a mind full of the tranquillity of conscious power. Tradition mentions the Fenner house, before referred to as still standing, as having been the headquarters of the commander-in-chief. He spent much of the early part of this Sunday in preparing his report of the battle of Princeton, and of the movements of the army since crossing the Delaware. Upon the completion of the dispatch, Captain Henry was detailed to carry it at once to congress at Philadelphia; this left Captain Rodney, as next senior in rank, in command of the light-infantry regiment.

Visitors to Pluckamin on that eventful Sunday were treated to an unexpected affair of ceremony. About midday a detachment of forty men from Rodney's regiment marched into the village, and drew up in line with its centre opposite the entrance to the building in which lay the dead body of Captain Leslie—probably Eoff's tavern. The young British officer was about to be buried with the honors of war, the light-infantry being selected as escort because of their soldierly appearance and superior uniform. The detachment was commanded by Captain Humphries, it having been turned over to him by Rodney, who had not considered himself sufficiently familiar with the details of a burial ceremony. At the beat of muffled drum and wail of fife the men presented arms, as the corpse was borne from the house to the flank of the line. The escort then broke into column of fours, and, reversing arms, marched in slow time and with solemn step to the Lutheran churchyard, where they filed to the left, forming in line opposite an open grave which had been dug near the head of that of Johannes Moelich.

There were wet eyes and true grief at that sepulchre, for Doctor Rush was not the only mourner present. Among the citizens and military clustering about the bier were the captured



British officers, whom Washington had generously permitted to be present in order that they might bid a final adieu to a comrade in arms who had been much beloved. And then the solemn hush was broken by the deep voice of the chaplain, saying, "I am the Resurrection and the Life, saith the Lord." As the simple service continued, the body of the young warrior slowly descended to its gravelly bed, the troops, meanwhile, resting their bent heads on the butts of their muskets, the muzzles being pressed to the ground. When the icy clods fell on the rude coffin the escort fired three volleys over the open grave, and then, shouldering arms, marched away, the drums and fifes striking up a lively tune on reaching the highway. The prisoners were returned to their quarters, the crowd dispersed and again contributed to the village tumults, leaving Leslie to sleep in his remote and retired tomb until its deep silence shall be broken by a majestic *reveille*, ushering in that eternal day which shall proclaim the full brotherhood of man, and in which such distinctions as friend and foe shall be no more, forever.

Captain Rodney tells us that these high military honors were accorded because of the desire of the American army to pay "due respect to bravery, tho' in an enemy." Leslie's gallantry in action at Princeton had won the admiration of his opponents; indeed, this may be said as of the entire 17th British regiment. In the height of the engagement, Washington, on witnessing the courage and discipline of this command, could not forbear exclaiming to his officers, "See how those noble fellows fight! Ah! gentlemen, when shall we be able to keep an army long enough together to display a discipline equal to our enemy's?" The attention of Surgeon Benjamin Rush to the son of his friends in Scotland did not end with the funeral. He marked the grave with a brown headstone inscribed:—

In memory of the Hon. Captain William Leslie of the 17th British Regiment, son of the Earl of Leven in Scotland. He fell January 3d, 1777, aged 26 years, at the battle of Princeton. His friend Benjamin Rush M.D. of Philadelphia, caused this stone to be erected as a mark of his esteem for his worth, and respect for his noble family.

This headstone stood for nearly sixty years before it succumbed to the gnawing tooth of time. About the year 1835 Professor John D. Ogilby of Rutgers college, when in Scotland,

was requested by the then Earl of Leven to find and, if necessary, re-mark the grave. Upon the professor's return to America he applied to the writer's father for information as to where the officer was buried. Together they visited Pluckamin and had the present stone set up, reproducing the original inscription.

This soldier's grave is a connecting link between our quiet Somerset village and the busy life of one of the most gifted Americans of the last century. When Doctor Rush died at the age of sixty-eight, few men in the United States were better known, were held in higher esteem for genius and learning, or were more sincerely beloved for philanthropy and good works. When at Pluckamin with Washington's army he was thirty-one years old, his Princeton degree having been gained at the early age of fifteen. In person he was above middle stature, with a slender but well-proportioned figure. His combined features bespoke a strong and an active intellect, and though his whole demeanor was thoughtful and grave, expressive blue eyes illumined a highly animated countenance. Doctor Rush was a man of wide and varied knowledge, with a talent for imparting it to others that was singularly felicitous. It is claimed that no one long remained in his presence without feeling conscious of an intellectual refreshment; and a contemporaneous writer has recorded that "his conversation was an attic repast, which, far from cloying, invigorated the appetite of those who partook of it." This distinguished surgeon must have left Pluckamin immediately after the burial of Captain Leslie, as on the following day he dated a letter from Bordentown, and on the same afternoon was summoned and went to Princeton to attend upon the dying General Mercer. Before the end of the month he had taken his seat in congress, which was then sitting at Baltimore. His figure soon became a familiar one to Somerset people, as in April he received the appointment of surgeon-general of the hospital in the middle department, and in July was made physician-general of the army.

Another interesting incident connected with the stay of the army at this time in Pluckamin, was the arrival in camp of the gallant Captain John Stryker's troop of Somerset horse, laden with spoils from the enemy. Cornwallis in his hurried march toward New Brunswick was so unfortunate as to disable a num-

ber of his baggage-wagons. He left them at the side of the road in charge of a quartermaster with a guard of two hundred men. Captain Stryker, though having with him but twenty troopers, resolved upon the capture of these stores. In the darkness of night he distributed his small force in a circle, completely surrounding the camp. The guard were suddenly astounded by a volley of musket-shots and the whistling of bullets, while from under the black arches of the bordering trees came loud and repeated shouts, as if from a countless host. Demoralized by recent defeats the men incontinently fled, thinking that they had been attacked by a large force of the Americans. Their fright was not so much caused by the roar of musketry as by the unearthly yells of the lusty troopers which so suddenly broke the stillness of the night. Captain Stryker was not long in so repairing the wagons that they could be hauled to a place of safety; he lost no time in making his way to Washington's camp with his treasures. The joy of the troops was unbounded when it was discovered that the wagons contained woollen clothing, of which the men stood in sore need.

Early on the morning of the sixth of January, Pluckamin lost, as suddenly as it had gained, the distinction of being the headquarters of Washington's army. Soon after sounding *reveille* the drums beat assembly, and the men were under arms. The different commands filed out of camp, and forming into column passed through the village, taking up their line of march northward. Our oft-quoted diarist has given us the formation. A small advance-guard led the way, followed by the-humbled English officers; then came the light-infantry regiment, swinging along in column of fours; next, the prisoners, marching in a long thin line and flanked by Colonel Edward Hand's Pennsylvania riflemen. This young officer—he was then thirty-two—always presented a fine military appearance, as he had a splendid figure and was considered one of the best horsemen in the army. He was an Irish surgeon who had settled in Pennsylvania in 1774. At the outset of the Revolution, abandoning his profession, he offered his services to the country. He served with credit during the war, attaining the rank of brigadier-general, and in later years was a member of congress and filled other honorable civic positions. After the riflemen rode



the doughty and intrepid Knox, sitting squarely on his horse, and followed by his artillery brigade as the van of the main column. Distributed alongside the extended line were the mounted general and staff officers.

Rested and refreshed, it was probably the most peaceful and satisfactory march experienced by the continental army since leaving Hackensack, three months before, with Cornwallis at their heels. We may presume that precautions to guard against surprise were not considered necessary; it is not probable that squads of men were thrown out on the flanks, or that scouts and skirmishers ranged far in advance. Secure from pursuit, the little army in good heart trailed slowly along the narrow road, breaking in upon the country quiet with rattle of scabbard and snort of charger, with champ of bit and jingle of harness, with rumble of baggage and gun wagons, and the crunch on the frozen ground of thousands of marching feet. On reaching Peter Melick's farm at the "Cross Roads," the advance turned to the right. Passing over the north branch of the Raritan river the army climbed the Bernards hills, awakening the echoes of their shaggy woods with the unaccustomed sound of drum and bugle. With frequent halts the column moved on through Vealtown (Bernardsville) and New Vernon, until just before sunset it reached Morristown, where we, after having piloted Washington and his men in safety through Somerset county, may leave them to go into winter quarters.





## CHAPTER XXVII.

### *Washington's Army at Morristown in the Winter and Spring of 1777—The "Old Farm" on a Military Thoroughfare.*

In ringing up the curtain on the next act of our local drama, a scene is disclosed very different from any heretofore shown on these Bedminster boards. In life, as on the mimic stage, startling and unexpected changes are not only always in order but frequently come as unannounced surprises. And so it is with the era we have reached in telling the story of the "Old Farm." Its familiar environment of country quiet is transformed—its accessories are all of a different pattern. In the place of the fir tree and the myrtle have come the thorn and the bramble; ploughshares and pruning-hooks have literally been beaten into swords and spears. Though war and rumors of war had now long been rife, its alarms and incidents had not been a portion of the daily life of this agricultural community.

When Breeds' Hill trembled under its cannonade Bedminster repose was not disturbed, and when the battle of Long Island raged, the family in the "Old Stone House" was affected thereby only as it touched its members personally in their love of country, or in their anxiety for those engaged in the conflict. Even when the tide of combat, crossing the Hudson, rolled over the level plains of the Jerseys, and the American army, sullen and dispirited, fell back to the Delaware before an exultant enemy, Bedminster was too far distant to have the spell of war overturn its usual routine of existence. At times during the month of the year just gone its rural calm had been broken by military turmoil, as, for instance, when Sullivan came marching through with Lee's division. But such occasions had not been

many, nor for long, and the homesteads, fields, and folds had quickly relapsed to their accustomed quiet. Now, however, all this was to be changed, and the beat of drum and blare of trumpet were to become familiar sounds. The "Old Farm" bordered a military thoroughfare, for in establishing the American camp at Morristown for the winter other cantonments had been located in the south, east and west. There was constant going and coming between the different posts, and the highways and byways were alive with soldiers. Farmer-lads on their way to mill with sacks of corn athwart their horses' backs, rode cheek by jowl with spurred and booted troopers, and listened with open-eyed wonder to their warlike tales. The rattle of farm-wagons was supplemented by the heavy roll of artillery trains, and squads of infantry were met at every hand.

At this time many a continental officer whose name now ornaments the pages of history dismounted at the "Old Stone House" for rest and refreshment, or for a draught from the deep well of its flanking dooryard, whose waters then as now had great repute, the wide country 'round. This dwelling lays no claim to the possession of a bed upon which Washington has slept; exhibits no chair upon which he has sat; or table at which he has dined; but it is fair to presume that more than once its walls have reflected that august presence. As at that time this house ranked among the most important of the township it is not probable that the commander-in-chief could always have passed it by. His papers and correspondence show him to have been that winter constantly on the road, visiting the different outposts and making the acquaintance of the country and people. We shall, therefore, not be charged with trespassing beyond the boundary line of possibility, when, in fancy, we see him giving a dignity and grandeur to the homely interior of the old house, as he stands, erect, serene, majestic, before the great fireplace in the living-room. He is questioning Aaron, perhaps, as to the character of some of the inhabitants thereabouts, or receiving at the hands of Charlotte a hospitable mug of cider or a cup of cream; while the family and friends look with love and respect upon the illustrious man who has retrieved the honor of the country, and won the approbation and esteem of every grateful American.



Washington had great fondness for horses. Having from boyhood been at home in the saddle he presented when mounted a singularly graceful appearance. During the winter and spring of which we are now writing he was frequently seen trotting along the Bedminster highways, accompanied by members of his staff and a small guard. A chronicler thus describes his impressions, received a few years afterwards, on unexpectedly coming upon the general riding over the Somerset hills:—

As I walked on, ascending a hill suddenly appeared a brilliant troop of cavaliers. The clear sky behind them equally relieved the dark blue uniforms, the buff facings and glittering military appendages. All were gallantly mounted—all were tall and graceful, but one towered above the rest. I doubted not an instant that I saw the beloved hero. \* \* \* Although all my life used to the pride, pomp, and circumstance of glorious war, to gay and gallant Englishmen, the tartaned Scot, and the embroidered German of every military grade, I still think the old blue and buff of Washington and his aids, their cocked-hats worn sidelong, with the union cockade, their whole equipment, as seen at that moment, was the most martial of anything that I ever saw.

And we may readily believe that the inhabitants looked with delight on these chance meetings with the commander-in-chief. Since the affairs of Trenton and Princeton his praises were in everyone's mouth and he was fully believed to have established a reputation for generalship unequalled in that age. As the years have gone by, this verdict has stood the test of time—not with Americans only, but with the world at large. Von Bulow the German, Botta the Italian, Walpole the Englishman, Guizot, the Frenchman, have all aided in building for him a temple of immortality.

We may suppose that Aaron journeyed frequently to Morristown during the winter; visitors were made very welcome at the American camp, especially if they brought supplies. Farmers soon found that they had an excellent market near at home, and that commissaries were eager to pay fifteen cents for beef, forty-five cents for butter, and eight shillings for geese and turkeys. The main part of the army lay in the Lowantica, or Spring, valley, which stretches from Morristown toward Green Village. The camp was laid out on what have since been known as the Treadwell and Muchmore farms. The main street of this military village, which was about eighty feet wide and bordered with large officers' tents, occupied the slope just west of the

dwelling of the late A. M. Treadwell. It was well graded and used as a parade-ground, a large liberty-tree being planted in its centre. On parallel streets, about forty feet wide, were the soldiers' huts built in blocks of four or five together, and, in addition, there were log store-houses and large cabins for the use of sutlers and commissaries. Both officers and men were in splendid spirits, and the sentiments of all had undergone a marvellous change, an almost jubilant confidence having taken the place of the despondency of the close of the year. As Washington wrote to Governor Cook, on the twentieth of January:—

Our affairs here are in a very prosperous train. Within a month past, in several engagements with the enemy, we have killed, wounded, and taken prisoners between two and three thousand men.

A week later he wrote in the same strain:—

Our affairs at present are in a prosperous way. The country seems to entertain an idea of our superiority. Recruiting goes on well, and a belief prevails that the enemy are afraid of us.

It was even so! The pendulum of public opinion had swung to the other extremity of its arc. The people expected that the American army, small in numbers, poorly clad, badly fed, and with but little training, would prevail against Howe's well-appointed force of veteran soldiers. Strange as it may appear, this expectation was not altogether without realization. That at times the Americans did successfully cope with the enemy, and that, though often suffering privations hitherto almost unknown in the annals of warfare, they continued to harass the foe, and ultimately triumphed, can largely be charged to the fact of superior generalship. In addition, the extent and variety of the country, with its inimical population and alert militia, made a British success barren of results. There always remained an army—though a ragged one—in the field. It was not like European fighting where often one great action would be decisive and end the war. As General Greene wrote at this time:—

We cannot conquer the British force at once, but they cannot conquer us at all. The limits of the British government in America are their out-sentinels.

Tolstoi claims that the real problem of the science of war is to ascertain and formulate the value of the spirit of the men, and their willingness and eagerness to fight. The Russian author is

right. Could this always be done it would often be found that large armies, thorough equipment, and perfection of discipline do not always carry with them assurances of successful campaigns. Greater than these, greater than the genius of generals, is that element of personal spirit pervading the contending forces. Our own Revolutionary struggle is an excellent exemplification of this fact. The English soldiers had but little enthusiasm for the work they were called upon to do,—the subsidiary troops, none at all. The Americans, on the contrary, animated by a spirit that had the force of a religion, were ever ready and willing to meet the enemy—ever ready to dog their heels, harass their flanks, and fall upon their outposts. For liberty and their native land they were ever eager to fight in battalions or in small parties, as guerillas or as individuals. British soldiers, however well disciplined, were no match for American citizens who were fighting to avenge burned homes, ravaged families, and an invaded soil.

Washington's headquarters in Morristown were at a tavern, which, together with the old court-house with its wooden cupola and shingled sides, faced the village-green, now an open common. This tavern was kept by Jacob Arnold, who was well known as the commander of a troop of Morris light-horse. It occupied the present site of Marsh and Hoffman's large brick building. The original structure was removed in 1886 to Kimball avenue, where reconstructed and modernized it is still to be seen. At the outset of the war Morristown had but about two hundred and fifty inhabitants, and the most of its property was owned by the Johnes, Hathaway, Doughty, Ford and Condict families. Its two church edifices, Presbyterian and Baptist, on the arrival of the American army, were converted into hospitals, in which use they continued for about eighteen months. The Presbyterian congregation was forced to worship, even in the cold weather, in the open air, assembling in an orchard in the rear of the old parsonage on Morris street. It was in this historic grove that Washington partook of communion, after being assured by parson Johnes that "Ours is not the Presbyterian table but the Lord's table, and we hence give the Lord's invitation to all his followers of whatever name."

The commander-in-chief appointed the light-infantry to be his



personal guard, requiring twenty-six men to mount sentry around the Arnold tavern. That this guard might always be within a more convenient distance than was the general camp, the entire regiment was installed about one mile away, in the large Ford mansion, now the well-known "Headquarters." General Greene quartered with a Mr. Hoffman, whom tradition mentions as a good-natured man, whose charming wife was a great lover of the clergy. It is said that Mrs. Hoffman was often perplexed with doubts and difficulties on religious questions raised by the general's aides, especially by the merry, restless, witty Major Blodget. Early in January Mrs. Washington, Mrs. Knox and other ladies joined their husbands in camp; after that, the officers of the army knew many comforts and not a few pleasures. Visits were exchanged between hospitable, blazing hearthstones, merry sleighrides were enjoyed over the snow-covered Morris and Somerset hills, there were dinners at the different generals' quarters, little dances were frequent, and occasionally a subscription, ball—or assembly, as it was termed—was given. The latter affairs put the rural as well as the army society agog, invitations being extended in the neighborhood. These more important dances were held in a large room over the commissary's store-house, which faced the square, and which after the war was converted into the Morris Hotel.

There were occasions of sorrow in camp as well as of gladness. A few days after the army reached Morristown, Colonel Daniel Hitchcock of Rhode Island, who had fought and marched under Washington from the outset, fell a victim to the fatigues and exposures of the campaign. This officer was a graduate of Yale college, and few gentlemen in the army excelled him in talents and ability. At Assumpink and Princeton he commanded a brigade of five regiments, and after the latter action Washington warmly pressed the colonel's hand, while expressing his approbation of his conduct and of the behavior of his command. On the eleventh of January Colonel Jacob Ford, Jr. of Morristown, who had commanded a regiment of New Jersey "State Troops," died of lung fever, the result of a severe cold contracted in the service. His command had been with the American army in the retreat from the Hudson. On reaching New Brunswick Washington detached General Williamson with the

militia battalions of Colonels Thomas of Essex, Symmes of Sussex, and Ford of Morris, ordering them in the direction of the Short Hills and Morristown, to cover that portion of the country and to prevent, as far as possible, marauding bands of the enemy from harassing and plundering the inhabitants. Soon after this, General Williamson and Colonel Thomas retired from the army, whereupon on the twentieth of December Maxwell was dispatched to Morristown to take command of the troops there. His orders directed him to harass the enemy, supply the commander-in-chief with information, and to do what he could to prevent the people from seeking British protection. His force was composed of the Sussex, Essex and Morris battalions, and the regiments of Colonels Greateon, Bond and Porter, (about five hundred men), which, while marching through New Jersey under Gates, had been halted at Morristown. On the thirty-first of December Colonel Ford, while parading under Maxwell at the head of his command, was attacked by a sudden illness. He was borne off by two soldiers and put to bed, from which he never arose. Colonels Hitchcock and Ford expired much lamented; they were buried with military honors, Captain Rodney's light-infantry company acting as escort, for the same reason as had caused its selection for the funeral of Captain Leslie at Pluckamin. Jacob Ford, Sr., the father of the colonel, also died on the nineteenth of the same month.

General and Mrs. Washington were much attached to each other, and, so far as was possible, avoided long separations. Greene, in writing at this time to his wife, says:—

Mrs. Washington and Mrs. Bland, from Virginia, are at camp, happy with their better halves. Mrs. Washington is extremely fond of the general, and he of her; they are happy in each other.

It was the custom of the commander-in-chief to despatch an aide-de-camp each winter to escort his wife to headquarters. Her arrival was a noted event, and her plain chariot, with neat postilions in scarlet and white liveries, was always welcomed with great joy by the army. After the war Mrs. Washington used to say that she nearly always had heard the first and last cannon-firing of each campaign. Mrs. Ellet, in her "Domestic History of the Revolution," states that on this, Mrs. Washington's first visit to New Jersey, she was met by her husband some distance

from camp, probably at Pluckâmin, he having come from Morristown for that purpose. The lady at whose house the general awaited the arrival of his wife was much astonished, when the carriage stopped, at seeing a so plainly dressed woman descend. She at first thought her to be a servant, but the idea was soon dispelled by seeing Washington hasten to aid her in alighting, and by noticing the tenderness of his greeting. After satisfying himself as to her health and the comforts of the journey, his first inquiries were for the favorite horses he had left at Mount Vernon.

This was a time for ladies of monumental head-gear and exceedingly elaborate toilets; but Mrs. Washington was very quiet in her tastes, and except on occasions of ceremony, always dressed with much plainness. In many respects the first lady of the land afforded an excellent example to the women of America. Lossing depicts her at home as looking after every detail of the household, going about with a bunch of housekeeper's keys depending from her waist, and personally directing her many servants. While at Morristown, one day a number of the ladies of the village called upon her. Considering the occasion one of great importance and wishing to create a favorable impression, they arrayed themselves in their best gowns. One of the ladies, in her old age, gave the Reverend Doctor Joseph F. Tuttle, Morristown's historian, the following account of their visit:—

We were dressed in our most elegant silks and ruffles and so were introduced to her ladyship. And don't you think we found her with a speckled homespun apron on, and engaged in knitting a stocking! She received us very handsomely and then resumed her knitting. In the course of her conversation she said very kindly to us, while she made her needle fly, that American ladies should be patterns of industry to their country women. \* \* \* We must become independent of England by doing without those articles which we can make ourselves. Whilst our husbands and brothers are examples of patriotism we must be examples of industry!

"I declare," said one of the visiting ladies afterwards, "I never felt so rebuked and ashamed in all my life." Mrs. Washington used to entertain Mrs. Neilson, Mrs. Wilson, and other intimates of Morristown camp society with accounts of her homelife, and how there were always sixteen spinning-wheels going. She showed the ladies two morning dresses which had been made in her own house from ravellings of an old set of satin chair



covers. This material was carded, spun, and woven with cotton yarns, in alternate stripes of white cotton and crimson silk.

Mrs. Neilson was the wife of Colonel John Neilson of the Middlesex militia, one of the most active of New Jersey's sons of the Revolution. At the advent of the British he was driven from New Brunswick, his Burnet street residence being seized for the headquarters of General Howe. While her husband was serving with his regiment Mrs. Neilson spent the winter at Morristown; so highly was she considered at headquarters that she was always given a seat at the dinner-table next to that of Mrs. Washington. Mrs. Wilson was a young and beautiful woman, the wife of Captain Robert Wilson of the New Jersey line who was wounded at Germantown, and who died at the early age of twenty-eight. Her father, Charles Stewart, of Landsdowne, near Clinton in Hunterdon county, was on Washington's staff. He had commanded the 1st Regiment of New Jersey minute-men, and in 1776 entered the family of the commander-in-chief as commissary-general of issues, which position he retained throughout the war. General Washington and his wife were warmly attached to General Stewart, and were often his guests at his spacious mansion at Landsdowne, on the banks of the south branch of the Raritan river.

Life has many sides. Mrs. Washington must have appreciated this to the full, in the strong contrasts presented by her alternate experiences of quiet home life at Mount Vernon, with its comforts and luxuries, and of the excitements, discomforts and dangers incidental to camp life each winter. - She, however, always gladly braved the latter in order to enjoy her husband's society, and that she might aid him by counsel and consultation in the care of his distant estate. In the accounts which Washington presented to the United States in July, 1783, and which comprehended his expenditures for eight years, the following entry appears :—

To Mrs. Washington's travelling expenses in coming to and returning from my winter quarters for act. rendered. The money to defray which being taken from my private purse, and brot with her from Virginia. £1064.10.

The general doubted at first the propriety of making what appeared on its face to be a charge of a private nature; but after consideration he decided that the claim was a just one, inas-

much as the exigency of public affairs had prevented his making an annual visit to Mount Vernon, which self-denial resulted in much personal loss. It is almost unnecessary to say that in congress no voice was raised against the payment of this item.

The buoyancy of feeling pervading the community was much enhanced during the month of January by a series of military successes. Mention has already been made of Captain Stryker's troopers having captured valuable stores, after putting to flight a force of the enemy ten times their number. On the seventh of the month General Maxwell, with a considerable body of continentals and militia, fell suddenly upon Elizabethtown, capturing fifty Waldeckers and forty Highlanders, and making a prize of a schooner loaded with baggage and blankets. About the same time a detachment surprised Spanktown—Rahway—driving out the enemy and securing a thousand bushels of salt. On the twentieth of January a foraging party of the enemy came out from New Brunswick to obtain flour from the mills on the Millstone. They were attacked with great spirit at what is known as Weston bridge by four hundred Jersey militia and fifty Pennsylvania riflemen, who completely routed the enemy, killing and wounding a number, making nine prisoners, and securing forty wagons and nearly one hundred English draught-horses. The attacking party was led by General Philemon Dickinson, a zealous officer who commanded all the New Jersey militia, and who during the war won for himself much renown.

These many satisfactory enterprises, coming so soon after the affairs of Trenton and Princeton, still further increased public confidence. Washington deemed it expedient to take advantage of this prevailing sentiment by endeavoring to counteract the effect of the Howes's exemption proclamation. He consequently issued a counter one, directing all persons who held British protection papers to deliver them at headquarters or some other designated point, and there take the oath of allegiance to the United States. Thirty days from the twenty-fifth of January were allowed in which to do this, and those failing to comply within that period were required to withdraw themselves and their families within the British lines. Probably it was at this time that Peter Melick experienced his second change of heart toward the American cause, for he certainly remained in New

Jersey, and we hear nothing more of his disaffection. With detachments of the American army lying on his north, south and east, and with squads of continental soldiers passing and repassing almost daily on their way to and from the various posts, Peter could not have highly valued his British protection papers, and doubtless was glad enough to recover the good opinion of his neighbors by again ranging himself on the side of those who supported the government. The result of this order was much as Washington had anticipated. Some citizens in the vicinity of Elizabethtown, New Brunswick and Perth Amboy, unable to resist the dominating influence of the proximity of the English army, adhered to their belief in the uselessness of continuing the contest, and, therefore, were forced to abandon their homes. But the majority of the inhabitants, now feeling secure in the protection afforded by American arms, were very ready to disavow their recent submission to the emissaries of the Crown. This was particularly the case in Somerset and Morris, and for the rest of the war Tories were few and silent in those counties.

All this time the British were quiet within their lines, and seemed content to await warmer weather before undertaking further operations. This gave to the Americans a much-needed opportunity for recuperation and for recruiting a new army, the terms of the enlistments for the old one, which had been for a single year, having expired. Meanwhile it was necessary that a close watch should be kept upon Howe's force lest he should steal unawares in the direction of Philadelphia, or of Burgoyne's northern army. For this purpose different cantonments were established extending from the Highlands on the north, under Heath, to Princeton on the south, under Putnam. This last general's command of about six hundred men served as a corps of observation. During the winter and spring the graceful figure of Putnam's chief aide was often seen galloping across the country; and more than one Somerset maiden learned to look with fluttering heart and mantling color for a passing smile from the dangerously handsome Major Aaron Burr. If Dame Rumor wags a truthful tongue, this young staff officer was not always content with paying a passing tribute to rural beauty. Whatever ambitions, worthy or otherwise, may have attacked this extraordinary man in civil life, they do not seem to have



affected his military career. The major wrote to a friend from Princeton on the seventh of March that he was well contented, neither expecting nor desiring promotion, and, as he expressed it, "I am at present quite happy in the esteem and entire confidence of my good old general." During the few months that Putnam was stationed at this point he was very active in scouring the country, and he took from the enemy nearly one thousand prisoners and about one hundred and twenty wagon-loads of baggage and other booty. Sullivan's command lay in the vicinity of Scotch Plains, from which place he constantly sent out scouts to watch and report on the movements of the foe, and Dickinson, with the Jersey militia, did the same service in the vicinity of Somerset Court-house—now Millstone. General Lincoln, with a considerable force, guarded the Raritan ford at Bound Brook. A block-house or fortification was erected near the mouth of Bound Brook creek, on ground now occupied by the station of the Lehigh Valley railroad; an earth-work connected it with the river. Lincoln quartered with Peter Williams at the east end of the village, whose dwelling was the most pretentious in the place, and the only one that could boast of two storeys. It stood where now is the lower crossing flag-station of the Central railroad.

To be within easy support of these various posts, in February Greene's division moved down to Basking Ridge, where it remained until the opening of the next campaign. "Great men," says the hero worshipper, Carlyle, "taken up in any way are profitable company." If General Nathanael Greene was not great he at least did great things, and not the least, by any means, of his achievements was his having so educated himself as to rise in a few years from a very ordinary social plane to be the friend and companion of Washington, and from a private in a Rhode Island company to the rank of major-general in the American army. The personality of Greene made a strong impression on the people of Somerset. Vigorous in mind and body he was ever actively alert in behalf of the cause for which he had drawn his sword, and was much beloved by his friends while feared by his foes. Being enterprising and full of resources, he was considered as dangerous as his chief, and Cornwallis is reported to have said that he never felt secure when encamped in his neigh-

borhood. In case of Washington's death it was generally admitted by the country that Greene of all others was most fitted for the chief command.

At Basking Ridge this general's headquarters were at Lord Stirling's handsome residence, where Lady Stirling and her attractive daughter, Lady Kitty, made most agreeable hostesses. At this time this manor-house was the seat of hospitality, refinement and luxury ; great sociability prevailed, and many friends were welcomed with old-fashioned heartiness. There was no lack of excellent society in the neighborhood. The Presbyterian clergyman, Doctor Kennedy, was a man of education and good breeding whose friendship was sought by all. The home of the distinguished Mr. Southard was near by, and, in addition, many exiles who were socially prominent had found secure retreats among these Bernard hills. On the main road, a little below the church, John Morton of New York had established himself on a farm recently purchased. His dwelling was spacious, and as it was filled with furniture, silver, books, pictures and mirrors it made an imposing and attractive homestead. The young people of this household proved to be an interesting addition to the vicinity, as they were engaging in manners and appearance, and intent on making the most of their enforced seclusion. One of the daughters became the wife of the celebrated Josiah Quincy of Boston, and the eldest son, Jacob, after the war won an honorable place at the New York bar. His younger brother, Washington, distinguished himself in 1797 by running off with, and marrying, Cornelia Schuyler, Mrs. Hamilton's sister ;—doing it, too, with all the appropriate melodramatic touches and features properly incidental to such an affair, including midnight, moonlight, a rope ladder, and a hasty flight on horseback. On Mr. Morton's farm a hospital was located, which continued there for two years, its doctors, Tilton, Stevenson, and Coventry adding not a little to the neighborhood's social coterie. Half a mile away Elias Boudinot of Elizabethtown had established his family in two farm-houses, and his sister, Mrs. Hatfield, was not far off with her family. Mr. Boudinot's only daughter, Susan, a charming girl of twelve, was frequently at the great house as the guest of the ladies Stirling. This young girl was the apple of her father's eye. He thus speaks of her in a letter to General

Lincoln, dated "Elizabethtown, Oct. 5, 1784,"—"This moment I arrived here, on my way to Philadelphia, accompanying my little ewe lamb to the city, having given her away to a certain Mr. Bradford." This "ewe lamb" in her twentieth year married William Bradford of Pennsylvania, afterwards attorney-general of the United States. He died in 1795, but his widow survived, so I have heard, until 1854.

Altogether, we may imagine that General Greene and the young men of his staff discovered that their lines had fallen in very pleasant places when they found themselves domesticated in a family made up of intelligent, cultivated and elegant women. To the historical student old letters are highly interesting, as they often throw powerful side lights on, and bring into clear relief, scenes and incidents of much interest. They restore a dead past to a warm, breathing present, and their value is the greater because of their writers having been ignorant that they were contributing to pages of history or biography. So it is that in a letter written by Greene to his wife, from Basking Ridge, we obtain a glimpse of social life at the Stirling mansion, and are introduced to Governor Livingston's daughters who must have contributed largely to the pleasure of the general and his aides while they quartered with the household. He writes:—

They are three young ladies of distinguished merit, sensible, polite, and easy. Their manners are soft and engaging; they wish to see you here, and I wish it, too; but I expect long before that happy moment to be on the march toward Philadelphia.

When the British overran Union county Governor Livingston was forced to abandon his Elizabethtown residence, Liberty Hall. While he was here, there, and everywhere, serving the state and aiding Washington, his family spent the winter with Lady Stirling, who was Governor Livingston's sister. In the spring the governor established a home on a farm at Parsippany to which he could retreat when necessary. But even there, several unsuccessful attempts were made by refugees to capture the chief-magistrate, for whom a standing reward was offered by the enemy. The Livingston young ladies were exceedingly popular, and highly considered by the best people of that day, their many physical and mental graces often acting as social oil upon the troubled waters of that turbulent time. Their exper-



iences during the war, both while visiting the army as the guests of Mrs. Washington, and while at home in Elizabethtown, were of the most varied character. On one occasion Susan, the second daughter, by her cleverness, aided perhaps by her personal charms, was the means of preserving her father's most valuable papers; this was at a time when a marauding band of the enemy were ransacking Liberty Hall. She was considered a wit in Revolutionary circles, and many of her bright sayings have been preserved; the following would show that British, as well as American, officers enjoyed her society and appreciated her humor. It was in New York, at the time of the evacuation, that in conversation with Major Upham, one of Lord Dorchester's aides, she expressed the hope that the English would soon depart; "for," said she, "among our incarcerated belles the scarlet fever must rage till you are gone." The major cleverly replied that he feared the ladies would be tormented by a worse malady, the "blue devils." After the war Susan married John Cleves Symmes, who had been colonel of the 3rd Battalion, Sussex militia, but who resigned on the twenty-third of May to accept appointment as associate-justice of the New Jersey supreme court. Her oldest sister, Sarah, who was decidedly the beauty of the family, had, long before, married John Jay, and was a social star in Philadelphia society during her husband's presidency of congress, and also at the French and Spanish capitals while Mr. Jay was his country's representative abroad. The governor's youngest daughter, Kitty, married Matthew Ridley of Baltimore, and he having died, she in 1796 became the wife of John Livingston of Livingston Manor.

To return to the continental army! For this year, 1777, matters were at the lowest ebb in February; at one time in that month it is claimed that fifteen hundred men could not have been mustered in Washington's camp. But this condition of affairs, which the enemy happily did not discover, rapidly mended. As the spring advanced the force at Morristown was gradually augmented by recruits who had been enlisted for the new army by the different states. The second establishment of eighty-eight battalions, of which the New Jersey quota was four, had been authorized by congress in the preceding September. New Jersey's first battalion was in readiness in December, and the

three others in February and April. They were brigaded under General William Maxwell, who had commanded the 1st Sussex regiment. This brigade formed part of Major-General Adam Stephen's division which lay during the spring and early summer in the vicinity of Elizabethtown, Rahway, and Bound Brook. The enlistment of this establishment was for the war, and while hostilities lasted the New Jersey line was an important element in the continental army and did most excellent service. Before the end of May in 1778 a new organization was established whereby the New Jersey battalions were reduced to three, this being made necessary because of the ranks having been decimated by battle and disease. Maxwell continued in command until July, 1780, when he resigned, being succeeded by Colonel Elias Dayton of the 3rd New Jersey regiment, who remained at the head of the brigade until the troops were discharged on the third of November, 1783.

General William Maxwell's memory and reputation are worthy of a higher place in history than they have attained. We find that now the names of other Revolutionary generals are better known and more highly considered, whose services to the country did not equal in importance and value those of the brave commandant of the Jersey line. This to some extent is due to the fact of his correspondence and all biographical material having been lost just after the Revolution when his house was destroyed by fire. Maxwell early made the acquaintance of Washington, having campaigned with him in Braddock's unfortunate expedition. Throughout the French and Indian wars his services as an officer of the provincial troops were noteworthy, and he bore himself with honor under Wolfe at the taking of Quebec. In 1776 he was chairman of the Sussex county committee of safety and colonel of the 1st Sussex battalion of militia, in which Johannes Moelich's son Andrew commanded a company. He early attained the rank of brigadier-general in the continental line, and so conducted himself during the war as to win in an eminent degree the special regard of Washington. He died in 1796 in his sixty-third year, and lies buried within the shadows of the walls of the First Presbyterian church of Greenwich in Warren county.

By the last of April the army rejoiced in the possession of new

muskets of a uniform pattern, two vessels having arrived from France bearing twenty-four thousand stand of arms. In that month there reached camp a man who had already won golden opinions as a soldier, and who was destined to do yet greater things for the country. This was Colonel Daniel Morgan, who appeared at the head of one hundred and eighty stalwart riflemen, a command that was afterwards recruited to a regimental standard, and known as the 11th Virginia or "Morgan's Rangers." This officer was long of limb, possessed great strength and muscular activity, with a face which, though scarred by an ugly wound received in the old French and Indian war, plainly indexed a character full of inherent strength, good humor, honesty and self-reliance. He was a Jerseyman, having been born in Hunterdon of Welsh parentage in 1736. He early left home to seek his fortune, and finding his way to Virginia became a teamster. As such, Morgan with his own wagon and horses accompanied Braddock on his unfortunate expedition. This made him a soldier, for his military instincts soon caused him to exchange the reins for a musket.

How time avenges one ! After the fall of Yorktown, Morgan, then a brigadier-general, was invited to dine with some of the captured British officers at Winchester, who were in his charge. In conversation with Captain Samuel Graham—afterwards Lieutenant-General Graham—the American officer playfully remarked that the British still owed him a lash from a whip. On being asked for an explanation, he told of his having driven a wagon in the early years of the French and Indian war ; for some grave irregularity he was sentenced by court-martial to receive five hundred lashes. He got but four hundred and ninety-nine, as he counted them himself as they fell, and afterwards convinced the drum-major, who wielded the whip, of his mistake. Private Morgan's bravery in 1758 secured for him an ensign's commission from the governor of Virginia. At the outbreak of the Revolution he raised in that colony a company of ninety-six young marksmen, all skilled in woodcraft, and with them joined the army that assailed Quebec. He proved a brave and an adroit fighter, winning even British encomiums for the courage displayed in the assault. After the wounding of Arnold he was captured, and so marked had been his conduct in that



affair that the enemy offered him a command, which he indignantly declined. After eight months' captivity he was exchanged, and, as we have seen, joined Washington's army. Thenceforward he shared in the hardships of every campaign until the summer of 1779, when his shattered health forced him to resign. When the unhappy tide of war, flowing southward, rose to a flood in the Carolinas, and Gates exchanged his northern laurels for the willow of defeat at Camden, Morgan again offered his services to the country. As "General Morgan" he became Greene's most trusted lieutenant, and in January, 1781, he covered himself and the southern army with glory, while winning the battle of Cowpens without the aid of a single piece of artillery. The "old wagoner" fulfilled the promise he made his men "that he would crack his whip over the head of Ben Tarleton in the morning as sure as he lived."





## CHAPTER XXVIII.

*The Continental Army in Somerset County in the Spring and Summer of 1777—Scenes and Incidents at Bound Brook and Middlebrook—British Efforts to March to the Delaware Defeated.*

There was fighting at Bound Brook on Sunday, the thirteenth of April. Early that morning General Lincoln was surprised, and narrowly escaped capture with his entire force. This officer, while a brave soldier and estimable in private life, was more than once singularly unfortunate in his military enterprises. Bancroft characterizes him as being heavy of mould and inert of will; he was certainly caught napping at this time, for his patrols must have been improperly placed or thoroughly inefficient.

The enemy, four thousand strong, advanced in three divisions under Generals Lord Cornwallis, Grant and Matthews, with Count von Donop in command of a body of Hessians and yägers. The troops marched from New Brunswick at nine o'clock on Saturday night, and the expedition was conducted with so much secrecy that but few of the inhabitants knew of their departure until Sunday morning. One division crossed the Raritan at Van Veghten's bridge—Finderne, one at Raritan Landing, and the third in front of Bound Brook. It is said that the British, in marching, avoided the roads; at all events they reached the American outposts, and there lay on their arms till daylight, their proximity entirely unsuspected. On Sunday morning long before breakfast the garrison of the block-house were greeted by a rattle of musketry, and a rain of ball clattering against the wooden walls of their stronghold. Two divisions of the enemy had simultaneously charged the town, while the third

appeared on the opposite bank of the river. Before such an advance there was nothing to do but give way. General Lincoln, whose troops did not number one quarter those of Cornwallis, had no opportunity of forming his men, and barely time to get in the saddle and order a hasty retreat; indeed so close was the foe that one of his aides fell in their hands before he could mount his horse. Some desultory, defensive firing was continued for a time by a portion of his troops, but eventually they fell back to the mountain in the rear of the town, with the loss of two pieces of artillery and sixty men killed, wounded, and prisoners. Among the missing were Lieutenants Ferguson and Turnbull of Colonel Procter's 4th Artillery regiment, both of whom were well known and liked in the vicinity of Bound Brook. The latter was killed, but, later on, Ferguson was discovered to be among the captives; he was not exchanged until December, 1780, and eleven years afterwards was shot dead in the battle of Maumee, under St. Clair, where as major in the regular army he commanded a battery of artillery.

This sudden onslaught of the British filled the Bound Brook villagers with dismay, and, as panic-stricken as the troops, they deserted their homes and sought safety in flight. When the firing ceased and the smoke cleared away, the enemy found no one to dispute with them the possession of the place; its only occupants were a dead soldier stretched in a pool of blood on the blockhouse floor, with a few more of the slain and some of the wounded lying singly or in heaps on the streets and in the adjoining fields. Considerable booty was secured, comprising a quantity of arms, two wagons loaded with ammunition, several horses, and about one hundred head of cattle and sheep. In addition, several hundred barrels of flour were destroyed, together with a lot of whiskey, rum, and other stores that the continental army could just then but illy spare. General Greene hurried to Lincoln's support, but Basking Ridge being twelve miles distant, it was after midday before his division reached Bound Brook; by that time the enemy had evacuated the place, and retired to Raritan Landing. A detachment was at once despatched to hang on their rear; that night this pursuing party surprised the British pickets, killed one officer and seven privates, and brought away sixteen prisoners. Greene, in writing to his



wife of the excitements and incidents of the day, related that he had dined in the same house at which Generals Cornwallis and Grant had breakfasted in the morning. This was the Van Horne mansion, still to be seen on the turnpike adjoining Middle Brook on the southwest, and of which there will be more to tell hereafter.

The villagers on returning to Bound Brook with the troops looked with rueful eyes and loud lamentations upon the devastation perpetrated by the soldiers during their short stay. Immediate steps were taken to restore order and repair damages; help and comfort for the troops at least, soon coming from the outside. At two o'clock Lord Stirling wrote from Basking Ridge to General Lincoln:—

It has just occurred to me that a little refreshment for your men will be no disagreeable acquisition to you; I have therefore ordered 600 lbs. of beef, three barrels of flour, and twenty gallons of rum to be sent you instantly. I have ordered Dr. Barnet and Dr. Boylan at Boylan's tavern to care for any wounded men you may send there. Whatever you may stand in need of let me know and I will endeavor to supply it.

Surgeon William M. Barnet was of the 1st New Jersey regiment, second establishment, which had but recently been organized. Doctor Boylan was a son of John Boylan the Pluckamin storekeeper, and his practice being in the vicinity of Basking Ridge he was probably Lord Stirling's family physician. This affair at Bound Brook caused much concern to the commander-in-chief; it showed conclusively that the post was one of exposure and danger, and great anxiety was felt lest a second attack should be attended with even more disastrous results. It had been hoped that an advance on the enemy might be made to advantage, but after Greene had reconnoitred their position and examined the condition of the American posts it was deemed unwise to make the attempt. It appeared that the British were massing troops in Piscataway township, and fears were had that some stroke was in contemplation. On the nineteenth of April, Greene in a letter to Lincoln giving the results of his reconnoissance writes as follows:—

His excellency wishes you to keep a good look out. He thinks that the cannon with you are in a dangerous situation and will in a great degree be useless if the enemy make an attempt to surprise you. He therefore wishes you to send them to Morris Town immediately and only consider Bound Brook an advance Piquet.

The general thinks you had better order all the stores back between the first and second mountain and draw your daily supplies from there.

The letters of General Greene and Lord Stirling both express the kindest feeling towards Lincoln, and they fairly typify the sentiments with which that general was universally regarded by his brother officers. He was respected as a man of ardent patriotism and heroic courage, and although his vigorous and usually judicious military efforts were as a rule requited by the frowns of fortune, he never lost his popularity or the confidence of the army, congress and the commander-in-chief. He had been a farmer until over forty years old at Hingham, Massachusetts, and all he knew of the soldiers' art before the war was gained as a militia officer. At the outset of the Revolution, after serving in the provincial congress and as one of the committee of correspondence he was appointed major-general by the council of Massachusetts, and in October, 1776, at the head of the militia of his state joined the main army at New York. He soon displayed great ability as a commander, which, together with his upright character and undoubted merit, induced Washington to recommend him to congress, whereupon in February, 1777, that body created him a major-general on the continental establishment. Though his inherent qualities and superior powers were pronounced, his military misfortunes were proverbial. At Bound Brook, at Stillwater, at Savannah and at Charleston, misadventure followed him. He was certainly of importance in promoting the capture of Burgoyne, but unhappily was deprived of sharing in the glories of the capitulation, having a few days before received a painful wound, which obliged him to retire to Albany, and from the effects of which he never wholly recovered. Lincoln's spotless reputation remained untarnished even after he had lost Charleston and the southern army, and in October, 1781, after conducting himself with credit before Yorktown, where he received the submission of Cornwallis's army, congress chose him to be secretary of war. The general was long remembered at Bound Brook as an erect, broad-chested man, having a frank, open countenance, with an aspect rather venerable and benign. His indefatigable perseverance and unconquerable energy won the citizen's admiration, and, though genial by nature and easily approached, his mere presence invariably pro-

voked respect. It is said that, always himself correct and chaste in conversation, none dared when with him to indulge in profanity or in levity on serious subjects.

There was another arrival from Virginia that spring at Morristown, which excited great interest. It was that of Brigadier-General John Peter Gabriel Muhlenberg, who had left New Jersey in 1772 as an humble Lutheran clergyman. He was warmly welcomed by the Germans of the New Jersey hill-country, but they found it difficult to grow accustomed to his continental blue and buff and military trappings. So much glitter and sheen seemed a strange metamorphosis from the modest canonicals of their old German pastor; but it was the same man, with the same great affections and merry heart, that had left them five years before, and he found many friends who delighted in his return. We may be sure that the general went out of his way to visit his old parishioners living in the Bedminster stone house. He could not have had other than pleasing remembrances of his past intimacy with Aaron Malick, who had been an active and leading member of his congregation, and two of whose children he had baptized. From these circumstances we may fairly fancy the warm reception extended to the parson-soldier as his burly form darkened the doorway of the living-room, and his hearty tones called down, in the good old German pastoral fashion, blessings on all in that house.

The attachment felt by the people of Zion and St. Paul's congregations toward their former rector was not only because of the faithfulness with which he had ministered his holy calling; he had endeared himself to them by the sympathy and affection with which he had entered into all their daily affairs. While ever ready to sorrow when they sorrowed, he was equally quick to rejoice in their happiness. He was a part of their life—of their pleasures as well as of their pains. With them he fished the streams, with them he roamed the hills for game; he could dance as well as pray, and no festive occasion was complete without his presence. Evidently this clergyman's christianity was not of the gloomy kind. In his visit to London, after leaving New Jersey, he did not hesitate to enter in his journal that he and a brother minister had visited the theatre to see David Garrick. The reason of his going abroad was the necessity of



obtaining ordination from an English bishop, as in Virginia the rector of no denomination could enforce the collection of tithes unless regularly ordained.

When Muhlenberg reached his parish in the Old Dominion, his personal qualifications and high character soon won from his new people the same love and respect that he had enjoyed from those of New Jersey, and it was not long before his popularity throughout the entire valley of the Blue Ridge was unbounded. By his skill with the rifle he shot his way into the affections of many a frontiersman, and his love of hunting brought him the companionship of not a few of the leading men of that hunting-loving province—among them, Patrick Henry and Washington. With the latter he often explored the mountains with horses, hounds and horns in search of deer, and it is said that in the use of his favorite weapon he found himself the peer of his illustrious companion. The friendship thus formed proved lasting, and was probably largely influential in transforming the country parson into a Revolutionary soldier. Muhlenberg became the political as well as the religious leader of the Germans in the colony. He was untiring in his endeavors to quicken the patriotic impulses of his people, and when the clouds of discontent and apprehension began to darken the political horizon the prominent whigs of Virginia found in him a most important and valuable ally. He was made a member of the Virginia convention, became the chairman of the committee of correspondence for his county, and in December, 1775, was commissioned as colonel of the 8th Battalion—known as the German regiment. When bidding good-bye to his congregation in January, 1776, at the close of his sermon he announced that he believed with Holy Writ that there was a time to preach and a time to pray, but that those times had passed away; then, with increased emphasis, he cried out with dramatic fervor that there was also a time to *fight!* and that that time had now arrived!—thereupon he suddenly threw off his gown, and stood before his people in the full uniform of a continental colonel. At a signal, drummers, who had been stationed outside the door, beat a stirring march, and Muhlenberg, displaying a list, solicited recruits. Nearly three hundred German Lutherans enrolled their names, infusing into his regiment an element which caused it to be dis-

tinguished throughout the war for bravery and discipline. In February, 1777, Colonel Muhlenberg was appointed a brigadier-general, and, being assigned the 1st, 5th, 7th and 13th Regiments of the Virginia line, was ordered to report to Washington at Morristown. Later his old regiment, the 8th, joined his brigade, which with General Weedon's formed Greene's division. One need have but a slender acquaintance with Revolutionary history to be familiar with how ably this soldier of the Cross served his country as a soldier in the field; how well he proved the truth of the sentiment he had expressed in the peroration of his farewell sermon—that there was a time to pray and a time to fight; and how equal he always was to the requirements of either occasion.

As the spring advanced, the British were displaying more activity in their camps, and an important movement was evidently in contemplation. At New Brunswick they were constructing a portable pontoon bridge, and in many ways their operations indicated an intention of soon attempting the passage of the Delaware. Washington deemed it wise to post his army in a stronger position so as to be better able to check the enemy in any overland endeavor to reach Pennsylvania. He selected the heights in the rear of Bound Brook, or Middlebrook, and directed that an encampment should be laid out on the side of the hill below Chimney Rock, to the right of the gorge through which Middle brook descends. Under the new establishment the immediate force of the commander-in-chief was forty-three regiments from New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Virginia and Maryland. The brigades, of which there were ten, were under Generals Muhlenberg, Weedon, Maxwell, Wayne, Smallwood, Woodford, De Boore, De Haas, Conway and Scott. There were five divisions of two brigades each—commanded by Major-Generals Greene, Sullivan, Stirling, Stephen and Lincoln. On the nineteenth of February congress had promoted Stirling, Stephen and Lincoln, and had made brigadiers of Colonels Wayne, Muhlenberg, Weedon, Woodford and De Haas. The muster-rolls showed the army to contain eight thousand three hundred and seventy-eight men, of whom but one hundred and eighty were cavalry. This made an average brigade strength of but little more than eight hundred rank and file. Of this small force upwards of two thousand were sick, leaving less than six thous-

and men fit for active service, one-half of whom were raw recruits who had never met the enemy.

On the twenty-third of May General Greene, and Colonel Clement Biddle the commissary-general, reached Camp Middlebrook, and the necessary orders were immediately issued for withdrawing the troops from the different outposts and massing them at that place. On the twenty-fourth the regiments began to come in, and laying out the encampment was regularly commenced. In following Revolutionary paths through this portion of New Jersey we often come upon the footprints of Colonel Biddle. He was a Philadelphian, and had been a member of the Society of Friends, but when the war cloud gathered his love of liberty and country proved greater than the inherent devotion to peace which is generally considered to be the paramount feature of Quaker natures. Because of taking up arms he was read out of meeting, and Mrs. Biddle for supporting his course was subjected to the same discipline. In the quartermaster and commissary departments, he was a most faithful officer from July, 1776, till September, 1780, and his services were highly appreciated by Generals Washington and Greene. Mrs. Biddle supported her husband's course in deed as well as in word, and formed one of the little coterie of ladies whose society so often made Revolutionary camp life attractive.

On the twenty-seventh Washington made a preliminary examination of the new position and its vicinity, and on the following day moved with the main army from Morristown to Middlebrook. And now the troops were finally disposed so as to guard against surprise, and to deceive the adversary. Putnam was relieved by Sullivan, who, with an augmented force of fifteen hundred men, posted himself in the neighborhood of the Sourland hills to act as a menace to any advance-guard that the enemy might send forward. Maxwell was stationed on the left, and small guards were posted at Millstone, Pluckamin, Quibbletown and Westfield, and the mountain gap at Steel's tavern and other passes were fortified. Colonel Morgan, with his rangers was posted as an outguard at Van Veghten's bridge. He was instructed to keep small scouting parties in the vicinity of the roads leading from New Brunswick to Millstone and Princeton, and in case of discovering bodies of the enemy moving in those directions he



was to fall upon and gall their flanks. Morgan probably quartered with Derrick Van Veghten, a patriotic old gentleman whose better acquaintance, later on, we shall have the pleasure of making. And now we find Washington biding his time, watching from his eyrie for every sign or incident indicating on the part of the enemy an intention to advance. Meanwhile both officers and men found plenty to do; earth-works were thrown up, cannons so mounted as to sweep the plain below, huts and store-houses erected, and much time was devoted in endeavoring to transform raw recruits into something approaching disciplined soldiers. Commissaries were soon flying around among the farmers, and for some weeks to come Middlebrook camp was an excellent market for sheep and cattle. Farm-kitchens and cellars were ransacked for cider vinegar—then considered a sovereign remedy for camp fever, which was found to prevail in some brigades, produced by a too continuous flesh diet. The supply soon became exhausted, and a substitute was made with rum, molasses and water, a little flour being added to produce fermentation. So, two weeks or more passed away, until the army was just beginning to wonder whether Howe purposed summering on the Raritan, when suddenly the campaign opened.

On the morning of Sunday the fourteenth of June the inhabitants of Franklin township were made acquainted with the pictorial effect of war to an extent not before enjoyed—if such a word can be used in speaking of a display made by an enemy. All through the previous night, along the Amwell road and along the road following the west bank of the Raritan, had been heard the hollow tramp of marching men—the rumbling of artillery—the sound of countless hoof-beats—the blast of bugles—and the sharp tones of military command. At daybreak rank upon rank of soldiers with guidons and pennons fluttering were seen sweeping along these highways and occupying the country that intervened between Millstone and New Brunswick. Everywhere were troops, and still troops! They stood in compact masses—they bivouacked in the fields—the eye swept down long lines of color and along ranks of glittering steel; the rising sun, flashing on helmets of brass and bathing royal standards proudly floating over well-equipped battalions, illumined a scene unusual indeed for Somerset people. This was no army formed of men, hungry,

tattered, worn-out by the marches they had made, but a well-fed, gaily apparelled force, strong with the refreshment of long quiet. Here were Anspachians and Waldeckers, the first, sombre in black leggings and dark blue uniforms, the second, gaudy with many hues and tricked out in foreign finery. There, a regiment of Scotch, stalking by as if on their own breezy highlands, national and picturesque in bare knees, flowing kilts, and tartaned bonnets. Neat, graceful English grenadiers offered a complete contrast to the more heavily-accountred German foot-soldiers; while sturdy Hessian yägers with yellow housings and dangling scabbards, and squadrons of British dragoons in all the splendor of glint and color, added to the brilliancy of the picture. Such soldiers seemed only to need the word of command to make their way to the Delaware or to any other point to which they might be ordered.

On the night of the thirteenth, General Howe, leaving two thousand men at New Brunswick, marched, nearly fifteen thousand strong, in the direction of the American camp. The army moved in two divisions, one, under De Heister, along the Amwell road through Middlebush, the second, under Cornwallis, along the river road, filing to the left at the cross-road running into it three miles from New Brunswick. In the morning the troops came to a halt with the right of the army at Millstone, while the left rested on the river. This was indeed an advance in force. There no longer seemed any reason for questioning that the objective point was to be Philadelphia. But the British general, profiting by past experiences, was wary, and his first desire was to cripple the American army. So, instead of marching southward and exposing his flanks, he presented his front to Washington, hoping that the American general would come down from his stronghold and give him battle.

Naturally the question suggests itself,—why did Howe, having twice Washington's force, hesitate to push on directly to the Delaware? Several excellent reasons operated on the mind of the British general. Had his successor, Sir Henry Clinton, on leaving Philadelphia the following year weighed the consequences equally well, he would not have lost on the march to Sandy Hook two thousand men. It must be remembered that the roads running towards the Delaware were narrow and in

many places bordered with trees, offering excellent ambuscades, and affording opportunities for the militia to pursue a guerrilla warfare, at which they were becoming adepts. Should he have moved in one column on a single road the narrowness of the way would have prevented a marching formation of over four files front. An army of fifteen thousand men with its batteries, baggage, and supply-trains, even if kept continually closed up, would stretch out at least six miles. Such a force, however, could not be prevented, owing to stoppages and accidents, from lengthening, so that it would be safe to say he would have been offering to the adversary an exposed flank of over eight miles. A forced march could not be made; the arms and kits of the English soldiers weighed fifty pounds, those of the Hessians much more; this, together with being encumbered with long trains, would have prevented a day's march averaging more than twelve miles. Thus five days would be consumed in reaching Philadelphia were the marching continuous, which was, of course, not to be expected. The calamities that would result from such a movement must be apparent to all—they certainly were to Howe. With Washington hanging on his right flank and rear,—with Sullivan, who had been largely reinforced by militia, harassing his left flank,—with the entire line of march through a hostile country teeming with an armed population, the most severe losses would have been unavoidable. Like a scotched snake that drags its wounded length, the army would have left behind a trail of blood. Marching in two divisions by parallel roads would have but divided the difficulties and invited destruction to at least one of the columns. Howe was not willing to make the attempt until he had beaten Washington; after that, he proposed to turn his attention to Sullivan, and thus clear the way for his advance.

With the approach of the English all was stir and bustle in the American camp. The army paraded on the hillside, prepared to receive the enemy should an attack be attempted, but declining to abandon its strong position for the uncertainties of an engagement on the plain below. So the adversaries confronted and watched each other for five days, the British entrenching themselves somewhat, throwing up earth-works at Millstone and Middlebush. Meanwhile the militia flew to arms,



and distributed in small squads made the stay of the enemy as uncomfortable as possible. Marksmen lurked behind the trees, or lay concealed under the fences. Unhappy the lot of the red-coat who wandered too far from camp—the forager who straggled too far from his party—or the picket who occupied a too extended line. Morgan's men were also ubiquitous; like so many wasps they stung the foe at every turn. Joseph Clarke of the continental army, in speaking of the conduct of the militia on this occasion, recites in his diary:—

They turned out with such a spirit as will do them honor to the latest ages. Never did the Jerseys appear more universally unanimous to oppose the enemy; they turned out young and old, great and small, rich and poor. Scarcely a man that could carry a musket was left at home. This soon struck a panic into the enemy, for they could scarcely stir from their camp but they were cut off.

Howe continued to manœuvre in front of the Americans hoping to bring on a general action, but Washington was too wise to permit his raw troops to cope with this veteran force unless it should be in the strong position he occupied. Some of the junior generals, quite willing to test the mettle of the new army, were eager for the fray; among them Brigadier Anthony Wayne, an officer who was full of nervous energy and who always felt within himself the potentiality of great deeds. He urged that at least some side-stroke should be attempted, and on the sixteenth of June, dating his letter from Mount Pleasant, he thus wrote to his division commander, General Lincoln:—

\* The prisoners just brought in are a corporal and a private belonging to the 1st Reg. of foot-guards. They say there is an encampment of the enemy on this side of Raritan, which is confirmed by a deserter from the 28th, who says there are still five Reg's yet at Brunswick, three on the other side of the river, and two on this, just below the new bridge. One of them, the 26th, is very weak. Can't we beat up their quarters before sunrise? I am confident we can, my people are all ready to move at a moment's notice. The light horseman will await your orders.

The commander-in-chief, however, would not permit any movement to be made; his desires were all accomplished in barring the enemy's southern progress. On the nineteenth of June, Howe, despairing of attaining his purposes, suddenly retired with his army to New Brunswick. Three days later, on Sunday the twenty-second, the British entirely evacuated that place, retreating to Perth Amboy. Greene's division, strengthened by

Wayne's brigade and Morgan's riflemen, had been dispatched down the right bank of the Raritan to harass the foe in the rear. Muhlenberg led the advance, which circumstance offers excellent evidence as to the estimation in which the parson-soldier was held by his chiefs. In a pursuing column it is in the van, and in a retreating force it is at the rear, that the best generals are always placed. This expedition considerably hastened the departure of the British from New Brunswick, its field-pieces and riflemen causing them much annoyance. The pursuit continued as far as Piscataway without doing much damage, as the rear of the retreating column was strongly and ably guarded by Cornwallis. It was expected that Sullivan and Maxwell would have coöperated with this movement; Sullivan's orders came too late, and Maxwell did not receive his at all. Had these two divisions come to Greene's assistance the enemy's main body would probably have received severe punishment, and much wanton destruction of property prevented, for the British line of retreat was marked by blazing homesteads.

When Howe fell back to Amboy, Washington, in order to be within supporting distance of Greene, moved with the main army to Quibbletown,—now New Market. Historians are not agreed upon the question whether in retiring to Amboy the former really intended to evacuate the state, or whether it was a feint made to tempt Washington from his strong position. Howe's report of these operations states that his troops were ready to cross to Staten Island, when discovery was made that the American army had advanced from Middlebrook;—that he then determined to renew the attempt to bring on an action. This can hardly be considered the best of evidence, for it was not uncommon for the British general to so fashion his reports as to convey impressions calculated to serve what he might happen at the time to consider his best interests. Be this as it may, on Thursday the twenty-sixth Howe hurriedly marched in the direction of Westfield, hoping to push around to the rear of the Americans, and thus prevent their again reaching the heights. But Washington was too alert to be the victim of such strategy. The movement was in two divisions, one, under Cornwallis, by way of Woodbridge toward Scotch Plains, the other, under Howe, to Metuchen; there the latter general expected to join the extreme left of the first

column and then swing around the rear of the main American army, it being intended that the right of the combined British forces should stretch to and guard the mountain passes. It was thus that Washington was to be trapped.

Nothing of the kind was effected. Morgan was soon hovering on Cornwallis's flank, and at Woodbridge a spirited engagement cost him a considerable number of men. When near Plainfield a force under Lord Stirling still further disputed the British advance, but after a sharp fight was obliged to retire to the mountains, though not until Cornwallis's plans had been effectually defeated. Stirling having prevented that general from reaching the heights it was useless for Howe to threaten Washington's front. The main American army was thus enabled to return in safety to Middlebrook. Cornwallis and his men, exhausted by rapid marching and the extreme heat, moved on in the direction of Westfield where they rested till the next afternoon. The column was then put in motion for Rahway where it again encamped. During the march Morgan's troops and a body of light-horse assailed the enemy mercilessly on their flanks and rear, as they did the following day when the column was again pushing toward Amboy. It was not till then that the two British divisions came together. Colonel Morgan's tireless services merited and received much commendation from the army, and special mention of his bravery was made by Washington in dispatches to congress. His riflemen had been on continuous duty day and night since the nineteenth, when the enemy retired from Millstone, and his men, animated with the dash and spirit of their leader, had vied with each other in valorous deeds. In the various skirmishes occurring after Howe resumed the offensive the Americans lost in killed, wounded and missing about two hundred men, while the casualties of the British did not exceed one-third of that number. But the advantage lay by all odds on the side of the continental army, as it had completely frustrated the designs of the enemy.

On Monday, the thirtieth of June, Howe and his army crossed to Staten Island on the pontoon bridge constructed at New Brunswick for use on the Delaware, bidding for that year a final adieu to the Jerseys. Napoleon defines the art of war as the talent of being stronger than the enemy at a given moment. The result



of the game played between Washington and Howe showed that, however true this may be when opposing masses meet face to face for a supreme effort, there are surely exceptions to the rule when the elements of tactics and strategy enter into the contest. At such times the number of men is not invariably the standard of effective strength; a most important factor must be considered,—the genius of the respective leaders. Herein lies the secret of the checkmate received by the British. There is no doubt that General Howe ascribed great importance to the measures he had taken to tempt the American army from its stronghold, and thus bring on a general engagement. He had concentrated a force much greater in numbers and hoped to win the day by the superiority of his battalions. The withdrawal of his army to Staten Island was an acknowledgment of the frustration of his entire plan—he had been foiled in all his manœuvres and outgeneraled in every movement.

Thus ended the first invasion of New Jersey. Seven months occupation of the state by a thoroughly-equipped foreign army had resulted in nothing. The undisciplined forces of the Americans—through the genius of their leader and the spirit animating officers and men—had defeated every effort made by the enemy to penetrate beyond the Delaware, and most of the time had restricted them to the vicinity of the Raritan. Soon after crossing to Staten Island the British embarked on two hundred and seventy transports that were lying in the Lower bay. What Howe would next do was now the question in the American camp. Washington was at a loss whether to continue in Somerset, so as to move quickly toward Pennsylvania should the British sail for the Delaware capes, or whether to march to the Highlands of the Hudson, fearing that the enemy might ascend the North river in order to combine with Burgoyne. There was at least no reason for longer perching on Middlebrook heights. Early on the morning of the second of July was heard the shout and din of breaking camp. Huts were dismantled, baggage-wagons were loaded and guns limbered. Soon the woods about Chinney Rock were echoing for the last time that year to drum-beats for assembly, and the men, with knapsacks packed and strapped, were hurrying to their different companies. Horses, ready saddled, pawed the ground in front of officers' quarters, and

troops were in motion in every part of the camp. Washington had decided to march farther northward so as to be better able to move in either direction when Howe's intentions should be known. So again the people of Somerset witnessed what had now grown to be a no inconsiderable army marching along their highways, which by this time must have begun to grow familiar to many of the continental officers.

On the afternoon of the fourth the troops encamped at Morristown, where they remained for one week. Meanwhile the English fleet was under sail, now heading up the Hudson, now cruising in the sound, now bearing away for the Hook, each change of direction adding to the uncertainty and anxiety of mind of Washington and his generals. On the eleventh it was determined to continue the march westward, but on the following day the army was arrested at Pompton by a drenching rain storm. Washington was ill at ease. This watching an enemy that was on board a fleet he found a very different business from standing on the brow of the "Blue hills," and surveying the foe on the plains below. He chafed sorely at this delay, but it was unavoidable; the descending floods continued, the roads were choked with mud, and the Pequannock and Ramapo rivers were swollen into rapid torrents. A long halt not having been anticipated a concentrated camp had not been pitched, the troops bivouacking, as best they could, in an extended line under the dripping trees that bordered the road. And so two very uncomfortable days were passed. The rain was incessant, the men were soaked to the skin, water trickled, dripped and splashed from caissons, wagons and saddles, while from the horses' sides and flanks rose a thick steam, which mingled with the aqueous vapors exuding from the soaked and spongy ground.

On the fourteenth the column was again in motion, toiling over the miry and slippery Ramapo hills, and pushing on through the Clove to the Hudson which was reached on the twenty-second. The commander-in-chief though full of perplexity was ever watchful of the enemy, and as their latest move pointed seaward he again fell back with the greater part of his army to Pompton. Two days later—on the twenty-fourth—the mystery seemed solved, for on that day he wrote General Lincoln:—

I have just received information that the fleet left the Hook yesterday, and as

I think the Delaware the most probable place of their destination I shall move the army that way.

Sullivan and Lord Stirling's divisions, having been thrown across the Hudson, were recalled, the latter being ordered to march toward Philadelphia, the former to halt at Morristown. And now we again see the continentals—moving in several divisions—swinging their hurried way along the Somerset roads, which a hot July sun and thousands of trampling hoofs and feet had already made dusty. On Sunday the twenty-eighth the eyes of Bedminster people looked with delight upon the conspicuous and well known figure of Muhlenberg, mounted on a tall white charger with rich housings, riding at the head of four thousand troops. General Greene being absent on a few days' leave Muhlenberg had command of the division, and with him marched General Washington, and also General Knox with his artillery train of fourteen pieces and one howitzer. How the old parishioners of the German general must have marvelled at his strangely martial appearance! As his erect form, amid his soldier comrades, passed along the familiar highways—crossing the north branch of the Raritan; through the two Cross Roads; crossing the Lamington; over the gentle rises and through the pleasant valleys of Tewksbury; on, in the direction of the Delaware—what comparisons must have been made with former days; with those days when he rode this same country on errands of mercy and love, astride of a modest cob, wearing instead of epaulettes of bullion the livery of a Lutheran domine, and when in place of the swinging sword and warlike holster, were peaceful saddlebags stuffed with Bibles, prayer-books and sermons.

On the thirtieth, Muhlenberg's division was resting at Coryell's ferry on the Delaware, having arrived on the twenty-eighth. This place being at the crossing of the old York road was one of the chief gateways to Pennsylvania, and is frequently mentioned in Revolutionary annals. On its site is now the flourishing city of Lambertville, which received its name early in this century from its first postmaster. As late as 1797 there were at this point but four dwelling houses. It was first settled in 1732 by Emanuel Coryell from Somerset county, who purchased a large body of land, built a hut, and established a ferry. Shortly after-



wards he erected a stone tavern, which, since occupied as a residence, continued in existence until within a few years. Without doubt it was at this tavern that Washington, Knox, and Muhlenberg quartered while halting at the ferry. To expedite crossing the river the divisions of Stephen, which had marched from the Clove by way of Chester and Sussex Court-house, and Lincoln, which followed Muhlenberg's, reached the Delaware four miles above at Howell's ferry, now Stockton, while Lord Stirling's division, debouching south, rested at Trenton. On the thirty-first a courier was dispatched to hurry forward Sullivan's division, an express having brought the news of two hundred and twenty-eight sail of vessels being at the capes of the Delaware. The next day, to Washington's great surprise and dismay, a second express announced that the fleet had sailed eastward. The clouds of doubt and uncertainty which had so happily seemed dissipated, again gathered, darkening the horizon. Once more it became necessary for a portion of the army to take up its line of march in the direction of the Hudson, Washington remaining in Pennsylvania so as to be near congress until Howe's intentions should be fully disclosed. This was a trying time for the troops. The heat was extreme, and the men suffered much fatigue and injury from their continuous and hurried marching along the dusty roads, and over the many hills that intervened between the Hudson and the Delaware. Washington, in a letter to his brother from Germantown on the fifth of August, writes that since the British removed from the Jerseys the troops under his command had been more harassed by marching and countermarching than by any other thing that had happened to them in the course of the campaign.

Congress and the commander-in-chief were now kept for many days in a state of anxious suspense, the complete disappearance of the fleet rendering it uncertain whether Howe's next stroke was to be in the direction of the upper Hudson, of Philadelphia, or of Charleston. If in the latter, it was felt that the continental army was too distant to be of any avail; consequently its different divisions were distributed in Pennsylvania and New Jersey, ready to move quickly should time divulge that either of the other points was to be the destination of the fleet. To the great joy of every one, on the twenty-eighth of August Howe

showed his hand—all doubts were set at rest, for transports and convoys were discovered within the Virginia capes, and, with their canvas wings wide spread, standing fairly up Chesapeake bay.





## CHAPTER XXIX.

*The State of Religion in New Jersey in the Eighteenth Century—The Effect of the Revolution on Public Morals—The Strong Reformed Dutch and Presbyterian Congregations of Bedminster—Curious Church Customs.*

And so this extraordinary chase, unparalleled in the chronicles of warfare—a chase of an army on the sea by an army on the land—drew near to a finish. The continental divisions were quickly brought together, and the concentrated force, now largely increased by regiments from the south and by Pennsylvania militia, marched down the Delaware, the men elated that there was no longer any uncertainty as to the intentions of the enemy.

But, as they are hurrying on to the inevitable collision, you and I, reader, must cry, halt! We have for some time been drifting together on the tide of national history. This was all very well while that tide ebbed and flowed within our own state; but now that it has sought channels beyond the borders of New Jersey it behooves us to abandon the great historic figures in whose excellent company we have been, and turn again to the contemplation of a simpler form of humanity. As our story is essentially one of a place and people, we have no longer any excuse for following the fortunes of the continental army. By doing so we may invite the charge of aspiring to pen a history of the war for American independence; for the desire to do this, or for the necessary ability for its accomplishment, we lay no claim. Ours the simpler duty of writing the story of an old farm, and as fascinating as the greater theme may be, we must not devote too much time to the historic interest of those wonderful years when a great nation was in the throes of its birth, and thus neglect those minor personal interests in which rest



the foundation of our work. It is only when the tumultuous waves of history sweep over the quiet neighborhood in which our narrative lies, that we may permit ourselves the pleasure of attempting the portrayal of scenes and incidents of national importance. We confess, however, to a feeling of regret at turning our backs upon the continental army. There is a singular charm in either witnessing or participating in scenes where men contend together for mastery, and it is undoubtedly true that all human nature retains its primitive savage love of conflict. Perhaps this may be why we deplore not being able at this time to follow the men of the Jersey line, as they tramp along with Washington's column to meet the enemy. We should like to witness the well-authenticated bravery of Muhlenberg, amid the whirl of combat on the Brandywine; to peer through the dense fog that hung over that bloody sea of strife when the waves of success and defeat were surging back and forth on the streets of Germantown; yes, even to share with our Jersey soldiers the sufferings and privations of Valley Forge—but it is impossible. For all wars there must be a home-guard. To those by no means distinguished but still honorable ranks, we are assigned, for to preserve the plan of this work it is clearly our duty to remain near the home and haunts of our ancestors. The army will come again to Bedminster, when it will once more properly be within our province to delineate its fortunes.

Upon returning to Somerset county we find it strangely quiet after the military turmoil of the preceding seven months. While some of its citizens had been bent on killing and-maiming men, others more peacefully occupied had not neglected nurturing the land, ploughing, planting, and tilling the fields. Though not blind to the importance of all that was going on around them, still they had been guided by the ordinary considerations of the necessities of daily existence, and had continued to prosecute their various occupations, and so contributed—unwittingly and humbly—toward fashioning the history of their time. In a great clock the small wheels seem of minor importance, yet did they fail to make their revolutions the entire mechanism would be useless, and the hands could no longer mark off on the dial the seconds, minutes, and hours of life. Society is a machine of intricate construction and delicate adjustments. Mankind, with

its many-sided characters and greater and lesser capacities, furnishes the motive power. Thus we find that all this time Bedminster men, when not under arms on their monthly tours of militia duty, were engaged in turning the smaller social wheels, occupied themselves with their ordinary pursuits, performed their daily duties, and sought pleasure and amusement as if war were not.

Those pleasures, it would seem, did not always keep strictly within legal bounds, for we find that in 1778 the October term of Somerset courts convicted John Schenck of breaking the law against horse-racing, and fined him ten pounds. This derelict who was guilty of so heinous an offence against society was the son of Peter Schenck, a member of the provincial congress from Somerset county, one of the elders of the Hillsborough—Millstone—Reformed Dutch church, and the owner of the mills where is now Weston. The worthy elder probably grieved over his son's youthful peccadillos, but they did not prevent John's growing up to be a useful citizen. We may thank him, at least, for contributing to our knowledge of the rigid views held by our ancestors as to what they considered dangerous amusements. Would not these good men of the olden time have despaired of the republic had they foreseen that a century later their posterity would consider their forefathers' vices as virtues, and at state and county fairs offer tempting premiums to winning horseracers? Could they, do you think, have been made to believe that in the year 1843 nearly seventy-five thousand people would witness the New Jersey mare, Fashion, trot for a purse of twenty thousand dollars; that in 1889 the turf of the United States would give employment to thirty-five thousand men and boys; that stakes in that year to the amount of nearly two million dollars would be won, and that almost as many persons would attend the races as inhabited the country when American independence was declared?

While Washington and his men were at the front, assailing the enemy with lead and steel, the patriotic citizens at home were guarding the rear against the attacks of a much more insidious foe. Mention has been made in a previous chapter of the almost unlimited powers vested in the council of safety. Between the sessions of the legislature this important committee

kept a zealous oversight of the conduct of the citizens, sitting for that purpose at short intervals in different parts of the state. Then would be summoned to the presence of this august body both suspected and unsuspected persons—the one to explain as best they could their attitude toward the new republic, the other to testify as to what they knew regarding the daily walk, conversation, and behavior of the people of their respective vicinities. From the fifteenth to the twenty-sixth of July (1777) the council of safety sat at New Germantown, in Hunterdon county. The following is an extract from the minutes of the meeting on Tuesday, the twenty-second instant :—

Ordered that warrants be issued to apprehend and bring the following persons forthwith before the Government and Council of Safety, to take the oath, etc., to wit : Christopher Vandevender, John Teeplen, T. Keeper, Jacob Eoff, Senr., Jacob Eoff, Junr., John Thompson, Samuel Siloy, Joseph Kelly, Thomas Willot, John Fossey, Aaron Craig, John Castner, Senr., John Castner, Junr., Abraham Castner, David King, Senr., and David King, Junr., of Pluckamin. Also James Castner, Peter Teeple, Samuel Perry, John Steel, Jacob Fussle, John Aupelman, Tice Aupelman, Philip Meelick, Jacob Castner, Peter Moelick, John Shaw, and Elisha Laurance, of the county of Somerset.

The minutes of the council meeting, held on the twenty-fifth instant, recite :—

Doctor Aaron Craig and John Teeple Tavernkeeper, appd. before the Board pursuant to citation and severally took and subscribed the Oaths of abjuration and allegiance agreeably to law. \* \* \* Philip Meelick appeared before the Board pursuant to citation, and produced proof of his having taken the Oath agreeably to law, on the 12th of this instant, whereupon he was dismissed.

Nothing is said of Peter Melick having presented himself before this council. It has already been shown that early in the war his loyalty was more than questionable, but that eventually he arrayed himself on the side of the government there is no doubt. We had supposed that before the time of the meeting of this committee he had again changed his attitude toward national affairs. It is not impossible that he may still have been “sulk-ing in his tent,” but it is more reasonable to suppose that he was absent from the county, as no proceedings were instituted either against his person or to confiscate his property. Citation before the committee was not, necessarily, evidence of disaffection, as all male adults were required to take the oath of allegiance, and some of the firmest of patriots were peremptorily summoned to repair their negligence. During the few days that the com-



mittee of safety sat at New Germantown one hundred and eighty-three citations were issued, and one hundred and fifty-seven oaths administered. John Meheln and William Paterson were present as members of the board, and the Reverend James Caldwell from Elizabethtown, and the Reverend Alexander McWhorter of Newark, appeared on the seventeenth before the committee to represent the exposed situation of Middlesex and Essex counties, and to petition for relief.

On examining old Somerset records we are led to believe that to some extent this county escaped the religious blight that generally fell upon the communities during the Revolution ; and that social morals were not permitted to sink to the low level of those of many other localities. That Bedminster township was pre-eminently favored in this regard is beyond dispute, and it can be attributed to the far-reaching influence on its people of its two strong Reformed Dutch and Presbyterian congregations, and their able ministers. During the early years of the eighteenth century the state of religion in New Jersey was at an exceedingly low ebb. Professing Christians were very lax in the outward observances of the forms of their faith, and in their daily lives gave but little evidence of the belief that was supposed to be theirs. All kinds of error and practices prevailed in the churches ; conversion in the present sense of the term does not seem to have been a necessity for membership, and in many instances even ministers do not appear to have been over-zealous in spiritual matters.

Among the dissenting congregations it was the crying aloud in the wilderness of the ministers Theodorus Jacobus Frelinghuysen of the Dutch churches of the Raritan valley, and Jonathan Dickinson of the Presbyterian congregations in the vicinity of Elizabethtown, that first aroused the people to the sense of their need of a more vital piety. The efforts of these divines were supplemented in 1740 by the earnest, and what was considered almost inspired preaching of Whitefield, Tennent, Edwards and other eminent pastors of that time. A religious awakening ensued which had a most marked effect upon the morals, character and daily walk of the people. The churches were invigorated, and for a generation afterwards religion occupied a place in the thoughts and lives of the people that it

had never known before. As has been stated in a previous chapter, it is claimed that in the age following these religious teachers New England and New Jersey gave more thought to Christian philosophy and systematic theology than the same amount of population in any other part of the world.

Interesting testimony regarding the severe opinions prevailing at that time as to frivolous and dangerous recreations, is furnished by the record of a meeting in 1767 of the consistories of the Bedminster, Raritan, and North Branch Reformed Dutch churches—then under one ministry. The fathers of the congregations had come together to suspend a member for attending a shooting match, for dancing and playing cards. They inscribed in Dutch on their book of minutes—as is shown by the translation made for the Reverend Henry P. Thompson's "History of Readington Church"—the following as the result of their deliberations:—

Shooting matches are illegal, and contrary to the laws of the land, and afford inducement for the assembling of many idle and fickle persons, where nothing is ever transacted except that which is utterly useless, and usually ungodly. \* \* \* Inasmuch as dancing is a wantonness unbecoming Christians, and a temptation to fleshly lusts, and besides an offence to the pious, especially in their time of need, therefore, those who indulge therein are to be admonished. \* \* \* Those who, after admonition, continue to play with dice and cards, must not be allowed to come to the Lord's Supper, and if contempt for this discipline be manifested, they must, at last, be cut off from the church. \* \* \* The conduct of ——— is thus of great offense to this church; and in addition thereto, he has shown contempt of that ecclesiastical oversight to which he solemnly promised to submit himself. Therefore, this consistory, because of the said ——— continuance in such conduct, consider him an unworthy partaker of the Holy Sacrament, and hereby forbid him the use thereof, and lay him under censure until he shall manifest sorrow and repentance.

From the records of the Morristown Presbyterian church during the pastorate of the Reverend Timothy Johnes—1742-1794—can also be obtained some interesting information as to what manner of social offences were visited with ecclesiastical condemnation. In 1760 a man and his wife were disciplined for eating stolen watermelons—we are not informed who purloined the fruit. In 1766 a man was adjudged guilty of a "premeditated first quarrel;" and in 1772 another contentious brother was before the church "for taking hold of an antient man, a member of ye church, and shaking him in an unchristian and threatening manner." For "ye premature marriage of wife's sister after

first wife's death," the newly-married pair were brought before the session in 1786, but we are left in ignorance as to just what measure of time the worthy elders and deacons considered premature.

With the outburst of anger and acrimony engendered by British tyranny, that precipitated the Revolution, the Christian zeal and fervor that had distinguished the members of the dissenting congregations received a serious check. The outbreak of hostilities exerted a most unfriendly influence on religious opinions, and the inhuman practices of war had a deadly effect on moral character. Tory and whig were alike too intolerant of each other's convictions to square their conduct by Christian teachings. Both in social and political life hatred took the place of that broad and generous spirit which the laws of God demand shall govern citizens in considering the interests of a common brotherhood. The disintegration of society, the scattering of the members of congregations, and the frequent use of church edifices for military purposes, all tended to prostrate religious affairs, and to give them a minor rather than a paramount importance. The business of the time was to kill, not to save, men. Campaigning dulled those finer feelings that had been bred under domestic influences and church teachings, profanity increased, cruelty and lawlessness usurped the place of brotherly affections, and scepticism and unbelief grew and became widespread. In some localities a community of Christian feeling was nearly exterminated, and the abandonment of all Sabbath observances was the rule rather than the exception. This was especially true of neighborhoods lying in the track of contending armies. The Presbyterian church buildings of Princeton, Mount Holly, Elizabethtown, Westfield, Newark, Springfield and Connecticut Farms; the Dutch edifices of New Brunswick, Millstone and Raritan, and many others, were either entirely destroyed or so injured as to be unfit for service. Pertinent to the foregoing account of the condition of religion during the war is the following record taken from the books of Lamington church:—

Bedminster, May 20th, 1778—The Synod of New York and Philadelphia met at Bedminster in Somerset county, New Jersey, in consequence of an advertisement in the newspaper by the moderator, agreeably to advice of a number of the mem-





[illegible][illegible]

composed of dogma and polemics—and stored away each point in their minds for more leisurely digestion, and for use as arguments during the week in discussions in the fields, stores, and blacksmith-shops. Hymn-books were few in those days; the precentor, or “lining-deacon,” still stood under the pulpit to “raise the tune,” and to read out in sonorous tones two lines of each hymn, the singing consequently being of a ludicrously disjointed and disconnected character. In their forms of worship the Dutch were tenacious of original methods, and strenuously resisted all efforts at reform. Before this time some endeavor had been made to introduce hymn-books and continuous singing, but without avail, and it was not till after the close of the century that the “lining-deacon” ceased to be an institution in that denomination.

Long before the Revolution the Congregationalists and Presbyterians had introduced singing by note in their churches, but this innovation had been brought about only after long controversies, and much bitterness of feeling. The objections advanced against the change were many and curious, not to say, absurd. In the front rank, of course, stood that well-worn argument of all conservatives,—“that it was needless, the old way being good enough.” But many honest people with “dimly lighted souls” were fearful that the whole idea was a scheme of the evil one to undermine true religion. It was claimed that to abandon the ancient melodies in favor of new tunes would cause disturbances in the churches, grieve good men, and make the young disorderly, because taking them away from home influences while occupied in learning the new way of singing. In fact, the proposal created a great stir among the dissenters, and many of the pamphlets and articles published on the subject displayed much rancor and ignorance. Said one writer:—

Truly, I have a great jealousy, that if we once begin to sing by note, the next thing will be to pray by rule, preach by rule, and then comes popery.

In the Mendham Presbyterian church singing by note was introduced during the pastorate of Francis Peppard, which commenced in 1764. To many of his people this innovation was a great offence; one of the elders—Cummins, by name—ever after showed his repugnance to the choir by stalking out of church when singing began, not returning until its conclusion. Not-



withstanding the opposition, this reform, like many others before and since, under the enlightenment of free discussion, finally prevailed in Congregational and Presbyterian denominations. But all this did not disturb the more phlegmatic Dutch, who at this time were well enough contented with their fathers' ways. In Bedminster church it was not until the year 1790—when a new generation had largely outgrown not only the usages but the language of Holland—that the people would even consent to do away with having preaching at stated intervals in the Dutch tongue. As late as 1810 there was yet occasionally preaching in that language in some of the Raritan churches.

At the period we have reached it was still the custom of the Bedminster congregation, as it continued to be for many years later, to listen to two long sermons on Sundays, with an intermission of but half an hour between each service. During this interval Mr. Hardenbergh conferred with his consistory, and exchanged greetings with members of his flock ; while it was the practice of his wife to gather about her certain of the women, with whom she would discuss the sermon and hold converse on subjects of experimental religion. Meanwhile, the people generally, when the weather permitted, clustered in knots under the trees or rendezvoused beneath the white covers of their farm wagons, and ate the luncheons brought from home. Some of the neighborhood slaves, of good repute, were given the privilege of having stands on the church-green for the sale of root and malt beer, thick slices of buttered rye bread, sugared olekokes, Dutch crullers, and gingerbread. It was for these Sunday booths that the children saved their pennies, or eggs, which were equally current. They were the missionary boxes of that time, and constituted about the only ray of sunlight that crossed childhood's path on what must have been—if child-nature was the same as now—the gloomiest day of the week.

“ Hush ! 'tis the Sabbath's silence-stricken morn :  
No feet must wander through the tasselled corn ;  
No merry children laugh around the door,  
No idle playthings strew the sanded floor ;  
The law of Moses lays its awful ban  
On all that stirs.”

The little Jersey lads and lasses, in late colonial and early

Revolutionary days, did not, in their Sabbath journeys, find their ways strewn with flowers. There were no Sunday schools, no attractive Bible stories, no interesting library books. The joyous sound of childish voices was never heard in glad Sunday songs, for the "Old, old story" had not yet been told for them in tuneful verse. They had to content themselves with the Heidelberg and Westminster catechisms, and the same strong spiritual food as had their elders—largely composed of stern Calvinistic tenet and dogma.

The Reverend Ashbel Green, in his autobiography,—though by no means intending so to do—has painted in sombre colors the strict and solemn manner in which the Lord's day was observed under his paternal roof, about the time of which we are writing. His father was for forty-five years the Presbyterian clergyman at Hanover, near Morristown, where he died in 1790. This divine was equally learned in law, medicine, and theology, and also engaged largely in business enterprises. A letter was once addressed to him as "Preacher, Teacher, Doctor, Proctor, Miller, and Distiller." His gravestone records that he possessed "a genius, solid, inquisitive, and penetrating; an industry, active and unwearied; a learning, curious and accurate; a manner, simple and reserved; a piety, humble and enlightened." Doctor Ashbel Green tells that upon his father's family returning from church on Sunday, after listening to two long sermons, a short rest was taken, when the children with the mother were brought together for religious instruction and devotion. Each one was asked in regular order every question in the "Westminster Shorter Catechism," besides being expected to make remarks and explanations on the most important questions and answers. When this was finished, the children, of whom there were five or six, were questioned on five Bible chapters that had been given them during the week for study. This was succeeded by their being asked as to the two texts of the day, and all that could be remembered of the sermons. This was followed by their repeating sentences of devotional poetry, and the telling of the religious reading they had had during the week, other than the Bible; then came prayers and a pious address by the sire.

By the time all this was over the day must have been well on

the wane, but still no relief from this religious strain came to the young people. Secular conversation of any kind was not permitted, and no ordinary home subjects were ever broached by the family, excepting those relating to the evening milking, and the care of the horses and cattle. Shall we be charged with being hypercritical of such colorless Sundays, if we wonder whether the boys were not occasionally wicked enough to steal out behind the barn, and there give one long, low whistle, as a vent to suppressed vitality? In the face of the reverend doctor's testimony we may not marvel at the story told of the little colonial maid, who interrupted the weekly catechetical inquisition by asking if there were to be any Sundays in heaven; and who, on being answered, "Yes, it will be all Sunday, one long saints' eternal rest," replied, "Well, then, father, do you know that I'd a heap liefer go to the other place."

The weight of puritanical Sabbaths, which pressed so heavily on childish heads, was much lessened by the establishment of Sunday schools. Strange as it may appear, their introduction was strenuously opposed—not, as one might suppose, by the free-thinkers and the ungodly—but by members of orthodox churches, and even by ministers. As early as 1747 one was opened at Ephrata, Pennsylvania, by Ludwig Hacker, a German Seventh-day Baptist; this was thirty-five years before the first one was instituted in England by Robert Raikes. Hacker's pioneer school stood alone in America until 1786, when one was established in Virginia. They soon became numerous throughout the country as individual enterprises. It was not until 1809 that their control began to be assumed by the churches. In that year the Reverend Mr. Steele, the pastor of the Presbyterian church at Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, opened a school for Sunday teaching in the court-house on Market square in that city. It was under the care and direction of his congregation, and was supported with zeal and enthusiasm by some of the most influential citizens. The first record I have found of a New Jersey Sunday school is of one founded by Jacob Day and Peter D. Vroom, afterwards governor of the state, in the congregation of the Presbyterian church at Hackettstown, on the fifth of May, 1812. It is a singular circumstance that these two men should have both, after living most useful and honorable lives, died on



the same day in 1873. They out-lived nearly all of the thirty-four children who had constituted this first school that had been organized under their auspices.

Among the earliest of the Sunday schools in New Jersey was one established in May, 1815, by the Reverend Burr Baldwin, in the old academy at Newark. The first in Trenton was formed in the winter of the same year. It was a joint enterprise of some young men connected with the Baptist, Methodist, Quaker and Presbyterian congregations, beginning in a room over the public market, with six teachers and twenty-six scholars. In three months the attendance had so increased as to result in each church carrying on its own school. Three years later a Sunday school was started by Miss Catharine Campbell in her father's house near Springfield, in Union county; encouraged by its success, within a few months some ladies organized Sunday classes in connection with the Presbyterian church of that village. Its pastor, the Reverend W. Teller, is my authority for saying that this school had no men teachers, because the good brothers did not care to compromise their Christian standing until they were sure the new enterprise would be successful. Even at that late day many of the churches still looked with great suspicion on the Sunday schools, and not a few of the pastors thought there was much danger that such innovations would "draw away the general interest from the long established means of grace and methods of salvation." About the same time, or possibly in the preceding year, a Sunday school was started by the Presbyterian congregation of Madison, the movement having originated with Elder William Thompson, who had read a tract on the subject. The first teachers, however, were all women. The next school organized in New Jersey was by the Woodbridge Presbyterian church in 1819, under the pastorate of the Reverend Henry Mills. Here again we find that the teachers were all drawn from the women of the congregation.

Aaron Malick during his life continued to be associated with the Lutheran church at New Germantown, but as his children grew to men's and women's estate they connected themselves with the Reformed Dutch church, with which congregation their Bedminster descendants have continued. Aaron seems also to have had the interest of this Dutch flock at heart, as is

shown by his having given his bond to aid it financially. He must have been a liberal Christian, and in sympathy with all denominations, as we find his name occasionally among the communicants of the Bedminster Presbyterian church at Lamington. At the outset of the war this pulpit was occupied by the Reverend Jeremiah Halsey, who died in 1780. In March, 1781, the Reverend Doctor John Mason, of New York, became the supply of the Lamington congregation, and in May, 1782, the services of Doctor John Rodgers were secured, he remaining in charge until the peace in 1783, when he returned to the First Presbyterian church of New York city, which he served for forty-six years. Like his brother of the Dutch pulpit, he dealt telling blows from the sacred desk at tories as well as at unbelievers, and earned a national reputation as a patriotic clergyman. His pronounced course in opposition to the Crown necessitated his leaving New York on the advent of the British, who converted his Wall street church into a barrack for troops. The condemnation of an enemy often rises superior to the best of praise. Judge Jones, in his "History of New York City," in his venomous tory way, thus describes Doctor Rodgers :

An incendiary and a person of rigid republican principles, a rebellious, seditious preacher, a man who had given more encouragement to rebellion by his treasonable harangues from the pulpit than any other republican preacher, perhaps, upon the continent. Being a minister he had free access to all the families of the Presbyterian persuasion, consequently opportunities for using his influence and doing a great deal of mischief.

Judge Jones' description grossly misrepresents the character of this worthy man, for he possessed not only the faith and hope, but also the charity of a Christian. Amidst all the decision with which he thought, and the firmness with which he acted, during the struggle for independence, he was distinguished for his liberality toward those who adopted a different opinion or pursued an opposite course. In his judgment of others, as has been well said, he showed the liberality of a gentleman, not soured by that spirit which assails and sometimes subdues clerical men of great talent and worth. The Bedminster people grew warmly attached to this eminent divine whom the chances of war had exiled to their retired hill country. Elders of the last generation remembered him as a large man with an imposing presence ; of courtly

and gentle manners, but uncompromising in the elucidation of his religious and political views. In making visits he wore his gown and bands on week days as on Sundays, and as he walked abroad, carrying a gold-headed cane, and arrayed in a buzz-wig, cocked hat, and silver knee and shoe buckles, presented a distinguished and dignified appearance. It was not uncommon for ministers of that time to wear their gowns when out of the pulpit. The Reverend John Witherspoon during the six years that he was a member of the United States congress always appeared in his seat in the house arrayed in full clerical robes.

The Presbyterian heart has ever glowed warmly with a religious zeal, blended with an independent and anti-monarchical spirit; this is especially true of Scotch covenanters and their descendants, by whom the early New Jersey churches were largely leavened. Such members of this communion from their earliest religious thinking had become imbued with the affinity existing between republican forms of government and that of their own church. They were also made well acquainted by their religious literature with the good policy and wisdom of a proper spirit of rebellion. Luther and Calvin were both rebels, and John Knox did not hesitate to tell Queen Mary that under some circumstances subjects did not owe duty and obedience to their princes. A brave sentiment to utter at so dangerous a time. It is not strange, then, that persons bred in this faith, with characters dominated by virtue, courage, and an inflexible will born of the memories and traditions of persecutions, should have had in them the love of popular liberty, and, from the first dawn among the colonists of the feeling of resistance to oppression, have been in the van of the revolt against the king of England.

Patriotism and Presbyterianism were closely allied throughout the entire Revolutionary contest. In that communion there were few loyalists, and both clergy and laity not only preached and talked against the surrendering of any of the privileges of free-men, but were ready to, and did, donate their property and lay down their lives to the end that the country they loved so well should be free and independent. On the seventeenth of May, 1775, the synod, then sitting in Philadelphia, appointed Doctors Witherspoon and Rotgers and the Reverend James Caldwell—three prominent Revolutionary figures, two of whom we may



proudly claim as Jerseymen—as a committee to present to the churches an appeal on behalf of the country. Though ministers of the gospel of peace, these committeemen in their address deemed it their duty to take a firm stand on the side of war, should a continuation of hostilities be necessary to preserve the united interests of the colonies. They further urged upon the people the duty of aiding in the execution of the measures proposed by continental congress. From then until 1783, when the synod issued another pastoral letter, congratulating the people upon the happy termination of the war, both clergy and laity were marked as special objects for British and tory persecution.

Where is the Jerseyman of us all who can fail to have a realizing sense of the debt owing to the Presbyterians of his state for their sufferings and sacrifices during the struggle with Britain? It was on the clergy that the direst evils fell, for with the death or running out of a “rebel parson” it was considered that one more of the seditious streams flowing from Presbyterian pulpits had been dammed. Among the ministers who fought with the army, or preached and prayed from drum-heads, stands conspicuously in the foreground, James Caldwell, pastor of the Elizabethtown church. The sad story of his privations and death—and what was worse, the murder of his wife—need hardly be retold in these pages.

“Why, he had

All the Jerseys aflame. And they gave him the name  
Of the “rebel high priest.” He stuck in their gorge,  
For he loved the Lord God, and he hated King George.”

His church was considered a hot-bed of rebellion, and its congregation has a distinguished Revolutionary record. In it were such sturdy patriots as Governor William Livingston; Elias Boudinot, commissary-general of prisoners, president of congress and first president of the American Bible Society; Abraham Clark, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence; Generals Elias and Jonathan Dayton; Colonels Spencer and Barber; and forty other commissioned officers, to say nothing of non-commissioned officers, privates and militia. In this connection it is interesting to note that this is the oldest English speaking congregation in the state, organized probably previous to the summer of 1665, and, without doubt, antedating that of Newark

by two years. A majority of the first settlers came from New England and Long Island, and were of the congregational or independent communion. Such was the new church established in East Jersey, Presbyterianism not having yet been planted in the middle colonies. Up to 1709 the people of Elizabethtown had been of one mind as to religion, the affairs of the parish and the town being jointly discussed and settled at town-meeting. About this time a missionary of the church of England appeared in the settlement, and gathered about him a small following, which ultimately blossomed into St. John's Episcopal church. It was not until 1717 that the first church of Elizabethtown gave up its independence, and became connected with the Philadelphia presbytery, a denominational body organized about 1705, and patterned after the Presbyterians of Scotland.

Another clerical martyr for upholding his convictions with pen, tongue and sword was John Rosbrugh of Delaware Forks, the chaplain of the 3rd Battalion, Northampton, (Pa.), militia. He was captured at Trenton by a troop of horse on that January night when Washington stole away from the banks of Assunpink creek, and was savagely butchered, though incapable of resistance. The "Pennsylvania Evening Post," in giving an account of the affair, states that the "damn'd rebel minister"—as his captors called him—after being thus massacred "was stripped naked, and in that condition left lying in an open field till taken up and buried by some of the inhabitants." One of his last letters to his wife, if not the last, is still in existence. It bears the superscription, "Mrs. Jean Rosbrugh, Delaware Forks," and is yellow, crumpled and much broken. In the following reproduction the words within brackets supply the place of those wanting in the original:—

[Monday] morning, 10 o'clock, at Bristol Ferry, Decem[ber thirtieth, My dear wife, I] haven't a minute to tell you [that the] company are all well. We are going over to N[ew Jerse]y you would think [it] strange to see your Husband, an old man, riding with a french fusee slung at his back. This may be ye la[st] ye shall receive from your Husband. I have committed myself, you [and the dear ple]dges of our mutual love to God. As I am out of doors [I cannot] write more. I send my compliments to you and children [and all our] friends. Pray for us. From your loving Husband. JNO. ROSB[RUGH].

Very many of the Presbyterian clergy of New Jersey suffered

cruelties because of their zeal. Azel Roe of Woodbridge, taken prisoner, was confined in a New York sugar-house. Nehemiah Greenman of Pittsgrove was obliged to hide in the woods to escape the enemy; Mr. Richards of Rahway also escaped capture by flight, but Charles McKnight of Shrewsbury was not so fortunate; he was wounded at Princeton, and afterwards was carried off, and treated with such brutalities by his captors as to result in his death. In fact, indignities of every kind were the portion of Presbyterian clergymen throughout the entire country, as in them was supposed to be concentrated the very essence of rebellion. The continental army was sprinkled with ministers of this denomination; many as chaplains, some as surgeons, while others did not hesitate to carry a musket in the ranks. New Jersey furnished its full quota of soldier-parsons. Caldwell and Rosbrugh of Trenton have already been mentioned. McWhorter of Newark for a time was chaplain of Knox's brigade; Rodgers of Lamington, early in the war, of Heath's brigade; while Armstrong afterwards of Elizabethtown, preached, prayed, and marched with the one from Maryland. Ashbel Green, president of Princeton college, was in his youth an orderly sergeant in the militia; Asa Hillyer of Orange acted as an assistant-surgeon, and so the list of clerics among the New Jersey Presbyterians who preached to, or practiced with, the soldiers, the doctrine of being "faithful unto death," might be greatly extended.

Mentioning Aaron's having communed with Lamington Presbyterians recalls the fact that in the last century the partaking of this sacrament by that denomination was made a much greater occasion than it is at present. At Lamington it was the custom at such seasons to secure the assistance of another minister. The Friday preceding communion Sunday was observed as a fast, and the regular pastor preached in the church at twelve o'clock. On Saturday afternoon the visiting clergyman delivered a preparatory sermon. On Sunday morning came the action sermon, after which the ordinance was administered, often to five successive tables, long addresses being made at each. Then there was the usual half hour intermission, giving the people an opportunity for regaling themselves with cake and beer at the always well supplied stand of Betty McCoy. On Monday morn-



ing at ten o'clock the visitor preached a farewell sermon, and thus ended the four days' services.

Betty McCoy was an old Scotch woman, and a noted character in the congregation. She acted as a sort of pew-opener, church-cleaner, purveyor, and, at times, general exhorter. When not so occupied she was usually visiting and gossiping among the people of the neighborhood, by whom she was welcomed as a worthy creature for over one-third of a century. Many stories are told of the acidity of her tongue, of the innateness of her wit, the excellence of her appetite, and the fervor of her religion. Rumor has it, that at one time at Pluckamin she put to flight an entire troop of British horse, one of the men having endeavored to take from her a package of much cherished tea.

There were other ways prevalent among Presbyterian congregations of the last century that would now excite surprise, if not reprehension. What would you think of an installation ball? Whether such a custom was one more "honored in the breach than in the observance," I cannot say, but Doctor S. W. Boardman, in an address in 1887 at the Centennial of the Hackettstown Presbyterian Church, referred to an ancient custom of concluding the installation services of a minister by giving a ball in the evening, at which the new pastor and his wife were expected to open the dance. Unless I am incorrectly informed, the descendants of a minister who occupied the Wethersfield, Connecticut, pulpit for about half a century, preserve the tickets or invitations issued for the ball that was given in honor of his installation. Evidently in social customs this denomination was not in accord with the more severe views of their Reformed Dutch neighbors. Many pleasing pictures are fashioned in the mind by the contemplation of the days of long ago; but here is one in which the lights seem harsh, the tones garish, and the colors inharmonious. It is not an agreeable vision, this, of the sedate brothers of the Presbyterian sessions and their wives, solemnly advancing and retreating, bowing and curtsying, scraping and tip-toeing, through the stately figures of a minuet, while younger and more frolicsome members of the communion cut pigeon wings in contra-dances and reels? We know that the good book says "Let them praise His name in the dance," and Eccle-

siastes announces a season for everything, but these religious hops seem a broad, rather than an evangelical, interpretation of the scriptures, and we can hardly agree with the early New Jersey disciples of John Knox in thinking that the installation of a new minister over a congregation was properly "a time to dance."

Many other curious customs and observances connected with churches in Revolutionary days could be narrated. As is well known, the word temperance, as relating to drinking, was not yet coined, and it was considered that liquor was necessary to health. Ministers or laymen would swallow a glass of apple-jack as unhesitatingly as they would a piece of bread. The story is current in Bedminster that one Sunday a clergyman was sent to supply Lamington church, who preached an excellent sermon. On descending the pulpit stairs the elders gathered about him, and, as was customary, paid his fee in crisp half pound notes. "Gentlemen," said the minister, "will you walk out with me?" Whereupon, crossing the road they entered the tavern and ranging themselves in front of the bar all took a drink with the clergyman. He then handed the tavern-keeper a half pound note, saying "take your pay out of this bank note, I have just received it for preaching the sermon." They then all returned to the church and soon afterwards were engaged in the afternoon service. Later on there will be more to say regarding the drinking habits of our ancestors.





## CHAPTER XXX.

### *Revolutionary Events of 1777 and 1778—Washington's Army at Camp Middlebrook in the Winter and Spring of 1779— Interesting Incidents of the Encampment.*

We are now nearing the close of the year 1778, and such of my readers as are martially inclined may join me in welcoming the return of the continental army to Somerset. Much has transpired since we bade good-bye to its officers and men on the banks of the Delaware. It is not needful to detail their varied experiences on the Brandywine, at Germantown, at Valley Forge; are they not written on the pages of many histories? Though Howe had gained two considerable victories in Pennsylvania, he had neither destroyed nor crippled Washington's army; and by his costly change of base had secured little else than comfortable winter quarters in Philadelphia,—quarters which actually weakened and demoralized his command. It was the Americans who really reaped advantage from the Pennsylvania campaign of 1777; it converted their raw force of citizen-soldiers into an effective army, and gave the country an increased confidence in its defenders. Even the veteran warriors of Europe expressed astonishment that Washington's crude levies had so soon been able to so successfully stand against the thoroughly disciplined English and German regulars.

The Americans were not without other causes for satisfaction with the occurrences of the year 1777. Early in October more than one chaplain and clergyman was preaching in exultant tones from the words of Joel:—"I will remove far off from you the northern army." This text tells the whole story! A great shout of joy had gone up from the entire country when the wonderful news of Burgoyne's surrender came rolling down the



broad reaches of the upper Hudson—reverberated through the narrow defiles of the Highlands—and, sweeping on southward, carried an ecstasy of delight to the inhabitants of both banks of the river, while filling with confusion, and choking with anger, the British and tories in New York city.

There are sombre shadows in the picture displayed by the next slide of the magic lantern of history. It is the vision of cold and hungry soldiers, shivering under tattered blankets in the rude huts of Valley Forge. But when the black clouds of adversity hung lowest over the American camp, almost obscuring hope, suddenly, amid the darkness, a bright light shot athwart the national heavens. Through the bleak forests on the banks of the Schuylkill rang pæans of rejoicing and thanksgiving, which found an echo in the loyal hearts of a happy people from New England to the Carolinas. "As cold water to a thirsty soul, so is good news from a far country." It was glad tidings from over the seas that so quickened with joy the patriot pulse. While the woods surrounding Washington's cantonment were still carpeted with snow, intelligence reached headquarters that on the sixth of February, 1778, a treaty of amity and commerce, and a defensive treaty of alliance, the essence of which was the absolute and unlimited independence of the United States, had been concluded with France. Great was the happiness of the American people when they learned, later, that the Catholic French, whose interests it would seem should have fostered, and whose traditions have favored, the cause of monarchy and England, had agreed to furnish men and treasure to aid in establishing a Protestant republic on the western hemisphere. It was the beginning of the end! The Revolution no longer partook of the character of a rebellion of rebels, but was to be recognized among the nations of the world as a great political movement, destined to be the agency for the cutting asunder of ancient bonds, and, probably, for the establishment of a powerful government.

During the spring, General—now Sir William—Howe went home to explain as best he could the causes for the non-success of his campaigns since leaving Long Island. He was succeeded by Sir Henry Clinton. This general, not relishing the possible appearance of a French fleet at the capes of the Delaware, no longer felt his army to be secure in its comfortable quarters. By

the fifth of June he had destroyed his out-works, and the British transports dropped down the river, having on board some of the German troops, the heavy baggage, a part of the cavalry, and a large contingent of loyalists. With the main army, Clinton evacuated the city on the eighteenth, taking up his line of march for New York, by way of Haddonfield, Mount Holly, Allentown, and Freehold. Morgan's riflemen were quickly hanging on his right flank, while Maxwell with the Jersey brigade, Dickinson with the Jersey militia, and Cadwalader with Pennsylvania volunteers, harrassed the left of his long line, which was so encumbered with wagons and bat-horses as to stretch, like a narrow, many-colored ribbon, over nearly twelve miles of country. With such an exposure the slowly moving column was fearfully galled, which, together with the intense heat, made this memorable march across our state rank among the enemy's most unhappy experiences of the war. It was not a march, but a retreat. With the thermometer marking ninety-two in the shade, and the men heavily accoutred, it is not strange that soon, covered with blood and dust, many of them, spent with exhaustion, fell by the way.

The major part of the Americans crossed the Delaware at Coryell's ferry, and reached Hopewell, near Princeton, on the twenty-fourth of June, when Washington held a council of war with twelve general officers. His advisers were equally divided as to the wisdom of risking a general engagement. Whereupon, as usual, he reached his own conclusions—the result being the battle of Monmouth on the twenty-eighth, which, to quote the chief's words, “from an unfortunate and bad beginning turned out a glorious and happy day.”\*

One of the most unique spots on the entire American coast is that solitary outpost by the sounding sea which stands guard at the entrance to New York harbor—that spinal curvature of sand, bristling with stunted trees, which forms what sailor and fisher folk know as the Horseshoe cove. On the one side spreads the

---

\* At the Hopewell council Col. Hamilton was exceedingly indignant that so many of the officers should have opposed attacking the enemy in force. In a letter to Elias Boudinot, written a few days later, he says that their judgment “would have done honor to the most honorable society of midwives and to them only.”

sheen and sparkle of the glistening bay, whose low murmuring waves lap its yellow strand, while seaward its dunes and beaches offer the first barrier to Atlantic billows, that have swept unchecked their imperious way for nearly three thousand miles. Between, are hummocks and swales of drifting sand, mostly covered with a maze and tangle of sombre cedars and other ever-green trees, twisted, bent and scarified by many a weary gale. With the exception of a few buildings clustering about the government station and the railroad terminus, it is an uninhabited waste of desolate solitude, where the winds sadly sigh through the dense undergrowth, and where the silence is otherwise unbroken save by the wailing of the surge, the cry of the sea-fowl, and the hum of the Jersey mosquito.

On the second of July, 1778, the repose and silence of Sandy Hook was suddenly disturbed by the din of war. The seagulls and fishhawks, startled by the unusual sound of pibroch, bugle, and drum-rattle, deserted their accustomed haunts, and with loud screams sailed away over the bay to the mainland. On that day General Clinton's army, exhausted by the exploits and discomfitures of the hot field of Monmouth, came pouring across the Shrewsbury river on a pontoon bridge which he had been two days in building. The line of retreat from Freehold was strewn with knapsacks, firelocks, and other implements of war, and with not a few dead men. This sandy neck was soon alive with troops and all the paraphernalia of a great body of soldiers. Amid the dark green of the thickets and undergrowth were to be seen the varied colors of scarlet, blue, and other uniforms, and the glint and glitter of burnished arms. Massed on the shore, and at points where the open spaces in the woods were most frequent, were red ranks of British grenadiers, gaunt Scots in green and plaid, fierce-looking German *yägers*, white-wigged Hessians, and buff-breeched light dragoons. Interspersed among the long lines of baggage and artillery trains, which extended for several miles along the beach of the inner bay, were ambulances and country wagons laden with wounded and invalided men.

This phenomenal spectacle was not confined to the land, for Lord Howe's fleet had most opportunely arrived from the Delaware. The Horseshoe presented a scene of naval pageantry



that in these piping times of peace would attract a great array of visitors. Anchored on its surface were innumerable transports, guarded by formidable men-of-war flying from their mizzens the royal cross of St. George. Passing and repassing between them and the shore were great numbers of large scows, long-boats and yawls, manned by British tars, busy in transporting to the ships the troops, baggage, artillery and tents of Clinton's army. Some of the wagons that had carried the baggage and wounded were burned near the water's edge; their horses—that is, the sound ones—were made to swim to the ships, being towed behind the boats that transported the men. All useless and disabled horses were turned loose and chased back into the open country. Several days were occupied with the embarkation, during which time, had the Americans taken advantage of the opportunity, a deadly blow could with but little doubt have been dealt to the British army. After crossing the pontoon bridge some of the regiments were forced to march through the deep sands several miles to the light-house at the end of the Hook, and then, to reach the small boats the men were obliged to wade in the water over their knees. It was the sixth instant before the embarkation was completed, and the last of the fleet weighed anchor and set sail for New York. And so concluded a nearly two years' endeavor of a thoroughly equipped foreign host to subdue the Americans. Every effort made by the enemy to destroy the continental army had been defeated, and the object for which the British were contending was not one whit further advanced than when in the autumn of 1776 Cornwallis crossed the Hudson and entered the Jerseys.

After the battle of Monmouth, Washington, leaving Maxwell's brigade and Morgan's rangers to watch the enemy, marched his army to New Brunswick, where they arrived on Wednesday the second of July, and encamped on each side of the river. Colonel John Laurens, of the general's staff, writing to his father on that day, dates his letter from "Headquarters on the lovely banks of the Raritan opposite New Brunswick." After describing the recent battle, he goes on to say :—

We are now arrived in a delightful country where we shall halt and refresh ourselves. Bathing in the Raritan and the good living of the country will speedily refresh us. I wish, my dear father, that you could ride along the banks of this delightful river.

After the intense heat and rapid marching of the previous ten days, this refreshing halt was a delightful experience for the army. The men were quick to take advantage of the proximity of the river to wash and cleanse themselves, they being conducted to bathe in squads by non-commissioned officers, who were directed to prevent their bathing in the heat of the day, or remaining too long in the water. As Saturday was the fourth of July, the commander-in-chief on Friday thus addressed the army in general orders :—

Brunswick Landing, July 3, 1778 : To-morrow the anniversary of the Declaration of Independence will be celebrated by the firing of thirteen pieces of cannon, and a *feu de joie* of the whole line \* \* \* the soldiers are to adorn their hats with green boughs and to make the best appearance possible. A double allowance of rum will be served out.

The festivities were not permitted to interfere with the trial of General Lee for his misconduct on the field of Monmouth. The court-martial, which had been organized two days before, had a sitting in the morning. In the afternoon the time was more agreeably occupied, as all the general officers, the colonels commanding the brigades, the commissary, muster-master, and judge-advocate generals, with the surgeon-general of the hospital, were entertained at three o'clock by Washington at dinner.

On Sunday morning the left of the front line broke camp and marched by way of Quibbletown, Scotch Plains, Springfield, Hackensack and Paramus to King's ferry, where the Hudson was crossed. On Monday the right of that line marched by the same route, and the next morning the third and last division followed. By the twentieth the entire army was east of the North river, headquarters being established at White Plains.

It must not be forgotten that the purpose of this chapter was to again introduce the continental army into Somerset. It is quite time this was done. For the remainder of the season the activities of war centred in distant regions—mainly at Newport and Savannah. The lot of the force under Washington was one of comparative peace and comfort, owing to the inactivity of the British in their quarters on the island of Manhattan. Both officers and men had been greatly encouraged by the retreat of the enemy across the state during the summer, and by the fact that Washington had remained master of the field at Monmouth.

They believed that to a large extent they had solved the art of war, they were fully imbued with the national spirit, and felt that the country was strong and its future assured by reason of the powerful alliance of France.

At the end of November the commander-in-chief made his dispositions for the winter. Cantonments were established surrounding New York, and extending almost from the sound to the Delaware. Six brigades were quartered east of the Hudson. West of the river at Smith's Clove the North Carolina brigade was stationed to guard the Highlands, while to protect lower Jersey Maxwell's brigade was placed in the vicinity of Elizabethtown. Early in December Washington came marching through Bedminster on his way to the old camp at Middlebrook heights. His force was composed of seven brigades of infantry, embracing the troops of Virginia, Delaware, Pennsylvania and Maryland; General Knox's artillery brigade, Lee's legion of light-horse and the life-guard. Again our township is to be enlivened by military scenes, and this time for no short season, for Knox halted his brigade at Pluckamin and there established his winter quarters. His artillery included a fine train taken with Burgoyne's army. These guns narrowly escaped recapture by the enemy when Washington's army crossed the North river at King's ferry on its way to New Jersey. Charles Inglis, the royalist rector of Trinity church, in a letter from New York in December, to J. Galloway of London—the backsliding patriot—says that Sir Henry Clinton having intelligence of the proposed crossing of the artillery, determined it should be intercepted. Several thousand men were embarked on vessels which sailed secretly up the Hudson. They were two or three hours too late—the rear of the artillery column was just disappearing over the hills as the vessels stood up their final reach, abreast of King's ferry. This miscarriage was greatly deplored by the enemy as they were confident of securing not only the guns, but all the heavy baggage of the army.

Reader, if you purpose continuing in the company of the writer, you must follow the soldiers. As sure as sparks fly upward, so sure will a small boy drop bat, top, or marble when he hears the music of a military band. It must be confessed that your scribe is in sympathy with that same small boy; for he has



ever been incapable of resisting the fascinations of the rhythmic sway of marching columns, the glitter of drawn sabres that marks the undulating motion of a moving squadron of troopers. Washington had left Paramus on the ninth of December, and his first communication from Middlebrook was dated on the twelfth. He had been strongly urged to turn over his command to Greene, and to winter, himself, in Philadelphia. In his zeal for the service he resisted the invitation, preferring the meagre and contracted quarters of camp to the conveniency and amusements of the capital, in order that the affairs and requirements of the army could receive his constant care and attention. The commander-in-chief, not being able to find a building in the vicinity of Bound Brook or Middlebrook ample enough for his purposes, established his headquarters at the Wallace house—then barely completed, and now owned by Mrs. Jane Meehan—located where the road from Somerville to Raritan crosses the track of the Central railroad. Although at this time Bound Brook was an ancient village, it was nearly thirty years later before Somerville had an existence. Besides the Wallace house and the Reformed Dutch parsonage that John Frelinghuysen built of Holland bricks, two other dwellings and a tavern on the site of the present Van Arsdale's hotel were the only buildings where now flourishes the capital of the county.

Mrs. Washington joined her husband at the Wallace house, and this most honored of all Somerset's mansions opened its hospitable portals that winter and spring to many distinguished people. The daily dinner was an affair of ceremony and importance, as, in addition to the visitors at headquarters, the company included a certain number of officers whom it was the general's habit to invite daily to dine. It was, of course, impossible that the commander-in-chief should be personally acquainted with all the officers of his army, his practice therefore, was to extend invitations through brigade orders. Often as many as thirty persons were entertained. Edward Everett Hale, in his recent biography of Washington, publishes a letter written by the general, from Camp Middlebrook, to a deputy quartermaster-general at Philadelphia, from which we gain some idea of the extensive *menage* sustained in this Somerset house that winter. The letter ordered purchased for use at headquarters a dinner service of queensware.

Among the pieces enumerated as desired, were two large tureens, three dozen dishes, eight dozen shallow plates, and three dozen soup plates. Washington's letter further requested that there should be sent him "six tolerably genteel but not expensive candlesticks;" "as much fur as will edge a coat, waistcoat, and breeches;" and "two pounds of starch." He also asked for a new hat, saying, "I do not wish by any means to be in the extreme of the fashion, either in the size or manner of cocking it." It would appear that our own state at this time could furnish handsomer table appointments than could Philadelphia. The deputy quartermaster-general searched the Quaker city in vain for queensware; but Lady Stirling came to the commander-in-chief's relief and informed him that—as she happened to know—such a service as he desired could be procured at New Brunswick. All this may be called trivial, it is true, but life is largely made up of trivialities, and these serve a pleasing purpose in illustrating certain phases in the undercurrents of Revolutionary camp life. They are interesting, too, as showing how this marvellous man, while bending—or rather, standing erect—under the weight of the momentous affairs of the country, could still find time to direct the minor details of household and personal concerns.

Although the dinner, from force of circumstances, could not abound in superfluities, it was amply provided, and handsomely served. General and Mrs. Washington occupied seats at the side of the table, while the honors were performed by Colonel Hamilton or some other member of the military family. Promptness was the rule at headquarter dinners. Washington never permitted that anyone should be waited for longer than five minutes, conceding that time for variance in watches. To guests arriving when the company was seated he would make some pleasant apology, a not uncommon one being, "Gentlemen, I have a cook who never asks whether the company has come, but whether the hour has come." This was at least less discourteous than the practice of the celebrated Doctor Kichiner, the president of the "Eta Beta Pi" club of London, who, when frequently entertaining friends at dinner, invariably, five minutes after the hour had the front door locked, and the key placed by the side of his plate on the table.

An officer, who was with the army that winter, has left a

record of his impressions on the occasion of his enjoying the hospitalities of headquarters. He has much to say of the simple and modest deportment of his illustrious host, who, while conversing affably with his guests, preserved a reserve amounting almost to a hauteur, and whose cheerful, open countenance, together with great dignity of manner, impressed each one present with a combined feeling of love, fear, and veneration. Washington treated all at the table with equal attention; and when the cloth was removed, after a few parting glasses of wine, retired, leaving his guests to the courtesies of his staff-officers.

The winter encampment at Middlebrook opened with a much happier outlook than had the one at Valley Forge, the year before. The embarrassments of this time, as shown by Washington's correspondence with Governor Livingston, were the reductions of the battalions owing to expiration of time of service; the difficulty of completing the quotas of reinforcements, because of the country's feeling too great a security after the success of the last campaign; and the rapid decline of the currency, which added greatly to the difficulties of the commissaries in their efforts to supply the needs of the soldiers. Notwithstanding all this, affairs were buoyant as compared with what they had been the previous year. The men were in excellent health and spirits; their commander, in a letter to Lafayette, writes of them as being in better condition than they had ever been since the formation of the army. The weather was unusually mild, and the spring came in early. There was no severe cold after the tenth of January and scarcely any frost, and by the first of April fruit trees were in bud, and vegetation began to appear.

Surgeon Thacher, of Colonel Gibson's Virginia regiment, has depicted in his diary some interesting scenes and incidents connected with this winter's encampment. His command was attached to the division of Major-General Israel Putnam, which lay below Middlebrook heights, near Chimney Rock, about one mile from the present Bound Brook station, camping—as I am informed—on lands now owned by De Witt C. Mather. Other brigades occupied near-by and adjoining lands, about one hundred acres of which have recently been purchased by citizens of Bound Brook, and converted into public grounds, known as the



"Camp-field." At this point many interesting Revolutionary relics have been ploughed up by former owners of the land. Until within a few years numerous low mounds were to be seen, which when opened revealed large stones and brickbats—the remains of the foundations of chimneys and fire-places—plainly indicating the site of the log-cabins or huts in which the troops were quartered. These huts were constructed of dove-tailed tree-trunks, no nails or iron-work of any kind being used. The interstices between the logs were filled with clay, and the chimneys, made of small sticks, were similarly plastered. The officers' huts were generally divided in two apartments, for four occupants who comprised one mess, but the privates' and non-commission officers' huts had but one room, and contained ten or twelve straw-filled bunks for that number of men. Late in the autumn, General Gates having been ordered to Boston, Putnam was sent to take his place in Hartford. This left the division under the command of its senior brigadier—Muhlenberg, our old friend, the Jersey parson. Thacher writes of him as being corpulent and clumsy, but as "brave as Cæsar," and although exhibiting but few of the refinements of education, his bold and undaunted front and military carriage proclaimed the veteran soldier. He was a good liver and fond of entertaining his brother officers. On New Year's day he gave a supper and dance, inviting many of the ladies of the neighborhood, and none of the company were permitted to retire before three o'clock in the morning.

Somerset is peculiarly rich in Revolutionary houses. A notable example is the one which was occupied that winter by General Greene, located midway between Bound Brook and Somerville on the banks of the Raritan, a short distance southwest of the Finderne railway-station. It was built by Derrick Van Veghten early in the last century, he having been born in 1699 in an adjoining stone house. This earlier structure was erected by his father, Michael, who, born in 1663, migrated from the upper Hudson, and was among the earliest of the Dutch pioneers in the Raritan valley. Although bearing many marks of age this dwelling's two solid storeys of Holland brick still press firmly and unimpaired upon their foundation, and its roof-tree continues to cap a family homestead. A brigade was encamped on that

portion of the Van Veghten land forming the slope northeast of, and back from, the river, now known as the Shaw farm. Derrick Van Veghten, who at this time was nearly eighty years of age, was very strong in his sympathy for the patriot cause, and did much to add to the comfort of the rank and file of the army, as well as of its officers. His homestead, which even then was a very old dwelling, was the centre of a bounteous hospitality.

The hills of Somerset have echoed to the tread of many heroes. As has been before implied, few Revolutionary figures can be credited with the possession of more distinguished attainments than can Nathanael Greene. What greater eulogy could a soldier desire than that spoken of this officer by Washington? Here are his words:—

There is no officer in the army more sincerely attached to the interests of his country than General Greene. Could he but promote these best interests in the character of a corporal, he would exchange, without a murmur, his epaulet for the knot. For, although he is not without ambition, that ambition has not for its object, the highest rank, so much as the greatest good.

Greene at this time was acting as quartermaster-general, he having accepted the position in the previous March, in order to relieve that department and Washington from great embarrassments.\* He had retained all his right of rank and pay as major-general in the line, and at the battle of Monmouth commanded the right wing of the army. In addition to the official intercourse at the Van Veghten dwelling, made necessary by the occupancy of Greene, the presence of his lady proved a powerful attraction, and drew many to this old Dutch farm-house. Mrs. Greene was possessed of brilliant qualities, which earned for her high distinction and great influence, her society and friendship being sought by the best people of the country. At this time she was about twenty-five years old, and is said to have been singularly lovely in person. Expressive

---

\* It was not long before quite a village of blacksmith's shops, store-houses, and other buildings connected with the quartermaster's department grew up on the main Raritan road at the crossing of the road running to the Raritan bridge (Finderne). The near-by elevation, even then known as Mount Pleasant, where is now the residence of John C. Shaw, was also in use at that time by the army for camping and other purposes. This was probably the location of Wayne's encampment in 1777 when he dated his letter to General Lincoln, from "Mount Pleasant." (See page 419.)

gray eyes lit up a fair face of regular and animated features. With a nature joyous and gay, her quickness of perception and unusually retentive memory combined in making her conversation brilliant, and her society a delight to all who came within the magic of her presence. She was held in great esteem at headquarters. Long after the war, at the levees given by Mrs. Washington in Philadelphia as wife of the chief magistrate, it was the custom of the President to personally accompany the widows of Generals Greene and Montgomery to and from their carriages—a distinction which he conferred upon none other of the lady guests.

The troops of General Wayne, which comprised the 1st, 2d, and 7th, Pennsylvania regiments, were encamped south of the Raritan, on a ridge of land west of the road running from Finderne station to Millstone, adjoining where is now the residence of D. R. Disborough. This general is often mentioned in Revolutionary annals as “Mad Anthony,” because of a bravery that was fearless of consequences. Somerset traditions, however, distinguish him as “Dandy Wayne,” for the reason of his having been conspicuously handsome, with much magnetism and dash, and always uniformed and appointed with great care and fastidiousness.







## CHAPTER XXXI.

*The Artillery Park at Pluckamin—General and Mrs. Knox at the Van der Veer House—The French Alliance Fête—General Steuben at Bound Brook.*

The corps of artillery commanded by General Knox lay, as has been said before, at Pluckamin. The guns were parked and the men's quarters were erected on the northwest side of the Cornelius Eoff farm, now owned by Nathan Compton, a piece of rising ground a short distance from the road, which displayed the camp to good advantage. A range of field-pieces, mortars, howitzers and heavy cannon formed the front line of a parallelogram, while flanking the remaining sides were huts for the officers and privates, and other necessary buildings. Facing the parade, and standing on a slightly-elevated plateau, was a spacious and well-proportioned structure, capped with a small cupola. It was called the academy, and enclosed a room fifty feet by thirty, with an arched ceiling and plastered walls. Here from a low rostrum at one end of this room, the brigade preceptor delivered lectures on tactics, gunnery and other military subjects. It may be readily supposed that this capacious hall also furnished an agreeable rendezvous for the officers during the long evenings of that winter. Altogether, the encampment unfolded itself very attractively to an approaching visitor, and was in every respect a superior military village; one of a no inconsiderable population, as the returns of the artillery corps at that time show its total effective strength to have been forty-nine companies, containing sixteen hundred and seven men. Had the companies been full the command would have numbered over one thousand more.

Both officers and men of this artillery brigade wore uniform

coats of black, turned up with red, jackets and breeches of white wool, and hats trimmed with yellow. The adoption of this dress had created dissatisfaction among some of the commands, their officers being loth to abandon their former distinctive uniforms. Colonel Procter, whose batteries had marched with Washington since 1776, especially demurred against the men of his crack corps losing their individuality of dress, they, from the first, having well served their guns in blue coats faced with white and buff. Washington, however, wrote to President Reed, saying:—"As black and red have been pitched upon for that of the Continental artillery, it is unreasonable for him [Procter] to make objections to it;" so of course the colonel was forced to succumb.

In an earlier chapter mention was made that in the first years of the struggle Revolutionary soldiers were rarely arrayed in martial attire. As the war progressed, and enlistments were made for longer terms, uniforms were adopted, and in other ways the regiments presented a much more soldierly appearance. One of the greatest offences against historical verity is the prevalent belief that the continental troops were uniformed in blue and buff. Such were the colors of the commander-in-chief, his staff, and of many of the generals, but the prevailing uniforms of the rank and file were brown, blue, and green, with trimmings of various hues. This popular but erroneous notion has been fostered by artists, who, in illustrating Revolutionary scenes, have pictured continental soldiers clad in blue coats with buff facings, buff waistcoats and breeches, top boots, cocked hats, and ruffled shirts. This is false as to the dress of the men, and, often, also as to that of the officers; the latter, in the artillery, at least, were arrayed in the same colors as the privates. Interesting testimony in this regard is furnished by a letter written by Knox from Pluckamin, to his brother Peter, at Boston, on the thirteenth of January. The general says:—

I have heard that there is plenty of black cloth in the state store of Massachusetts, and, to be sure, I belong to Massachusetts. I therefore beg as you would wish the benedictions of the righteous that you would apply to said store for cloth enough to make a couple of coats for myself, and one for Maj. Shaw, [a staff-officer], we are both naked, therefore I pray you cloath us—and if they have white for waistcoats—don't forget that \* \* \* I could not procure these articles under a small fortune here and yet they are absolutely necessary \* \* \* don't forget the uniform buttons—and all the trimmings—were you to see my cloaths I think you would not think my request unreasonable.

Of the troops under Washington's immediate command at that time, some of them were uniformed as follows:—General Wayne's Pennsylvania division wore blue coats lined with white, ruffled shirts, red flannel leggings, and "a sort of cap dressed up with fur." Among other Pennsylvania regiments, the men of the 9th had brown coats faced with red, with red cuffs and capes, and cocked hats with white loopings; the 11th Regiment, long blue coats faced with red and buff, and small round hats with black feathers. The 3rd Virginia regiment was uniformed in light drab coats with pale blue facings, green vests, and linen overalls; the 6th Virginia wore black coats faced with red, white waistcoats, linen shirts and overalls; while the coats of the 13th Virginia were blue, cuffed and faced with yellow. The 5th Maryland regiment wore brown coats faced with red, spotted swanskin vests, oval brass buttons, brown broad-cloth breeches; while the 6th was arrayed in gray coats faced with green. The prevailing uniform coat of the Jersey line was blue turned up with red;—but enough of Revolutionary dress has been given to show that the so-called continental garb had no place in 1779 in either the infantry or the artillery. As for the cavalry, Lee's legion wore cocked hats, and "green coatees," faced with white, their waistcoats were white and their breeches black. Colonel Moylan's 4th Regiment light dragoons, a command well-known in Somerset, though not with this year's encampment, wore green coats turned up with red, green cloaks with red capes, red waistcoats, buckskin breeches, and leather caps trimmed with bearskin. The artists, before mentioned, perhaps found their typical continental soldiers in the men of Washington's life-guard; they being near the person of the general wore uniforms that in colors and distinctive features in many respects harmonized with his full dress, and that of his staff-officers.

General Knox, together with his wife, quartered at the Jacobus Van der Veer house, on what is now the Ludlow farm, just below the Bedminster church. Time is a fell destroyer, but often does his work with slow and kindly hands. This ancient dwelling is still standing, and its hearthstone continues to centre and cement family ties. Although many of its old-time characteristics have been retained, it has been somewhat modernized, and few passers-by would suspect that it was



erected before the year 1760. During the winter and spring of 1779 it was the most important house in the neighborhood, and the rallying point for both military and social affairs. Scores of people came and went each day, and if this old dwelling is ever in a retrospective mood it must look back upon those busy months as a very distinguished epoch in its existence. Knox was very popular in Somerset county, and old residents of the last generation delighted in anecdotes and reminiscences of his amiability and good fellowship. When stationed at Pluckamin he was about thirty-four years old, stout but active, possessed great intelligence, and had a most genial presence. He readily made warm attachments, and the villagers all looked upon him with great admiration. Tradition speaks of his walking about with a grand and self-complacent air, greeting in hearty tones those he knew, with a strong and decisive voice easily recognized as that of one accustomed to command. His large and full face was brightened by a covert smile, and on removing his hat a low, broad forehead was exposed, with short hair standing up in front but long and queued behind.

Mrs. Knox, who shared with her husband the inconveniences and dangers of his campaigns, was nearly as well known as the general, and has been called the heroine of the Revolution. She was a woman possessing many graces of mind and person, and, though vivacious, preserved a most dignified address. Her imposing appearance, independence of spirit, amiability of character, and originality of mind made her a conspicuous figure in Revolutionary society. The following extract from a letter written by General Greene to his wife, on the twenty-third of the preceding June, would lead us to believe that campaigning agreed very well with both General Knox and his lady:—

Mrs. Knox has been in Philadelphia and is now gone to Morristown. She is fatter than ever, which is a great mortification to her. The General is equally fat, and therefore one cannot laugh at the other. They appear to be extravagantly fond of each other; and, I think, are perfectly happy.

Mrs. Knox had many visitors, not only among the ladies of the near-by camps and surrounding country, but friends from a distance, who came for a more protracted stay. Two young ladies named Andrews arrived in January, Captain Lillie of

the general's staff, meeting them at Elizabethtown, where, owing to the uncertainties of travel at that period, he was obliged to await their coming for a week. Miss Betsey and Miss Sallie Winslow of Boston also spent the winter at the Van der Veer house, remaining with Mrs. Knox till June. They were amiable and spirited girls, the elder one being the soul of the many camp entertainments occurring during the season. As to the younger sister, Major Shaw, another member of the general's military family, mentions her in a letter as a "lively little hussy," and thinks she "will make a very fine woman."

Social intercourse abounded in the military community of Pluckamin and its vicinity, and the officers often extended a generous hospitality to merry-makings at the artillery park. Major Shaw in a letter to General Knox's brother William, in Boston, on the twenty-fourth day of May, writes:—

You know what an agreeable circle of ladies this state afforded two years ago—some of whom now and then kindly enquire—"what has become of Major Knox?"—it is since much enlarged, so that we can (in military stile) at a moment's warning parade a score or two.

Kettle-drums, as well as drums contributing to the field-music of the army, were features of Pluckamin camp. It was the custom of the officers occasionally to give in the academy afternoon receptions, when tea would be dispensed to the guests, followed in the evening by what they called a "social hop." The last affair of this kind was on the twenty-seventh of May, with which the ladies present expressed the highest satisfaction. An accident occurred at its close which might have proved serious; but I will let a witness—Major Shaw—give an account of the incident:—

A clumsy gentleman in mounting a chair [or gig] after the Ball, to drive Miss Livingston and the amiable little Ricketts to our quarters, fell, like Phaeton, head foremost from his seat, but, happily for him, the part striking being composed of solid materials prevented his receiving any injury. The horses starting at the same instant threw the little girl out also, with such violence that had not Lillie, who was standing by her, fortunately caught her, she must have dashed to pieces. The shock was so violent that she fainted in his arms, but with some little assistance soon recovered. Don't you envy Lillie his happiness in saving such a cherub?—I'm sure I did, as did, I believe, every one present.

Captain Lillie, who so deftly stood between the cherubic "Ricketts" and a dangerous fall, was born in Boston in 1753.

He entered the army at the age of two and twenty as a lieutenant of artillery, and at the close of the Revolution held a captain's commission, and for several years had been an aide to General Knox. He served with distinction at the battles of Long Island and Trenton, and stood within a few feet of Mercer when he fell at Princeton. Lillie sustained himself well in the heat of the action on the Brandywine, and on that dark, dismal night at Paoli, when one hundred and fifty of Wayne's men were either killed, wounded, or made prisoners, with much address, through morasses and woods, he brought off his artillery in safety. At Germantown he ably supported a soldier's character, and on the hot field of Monmouth overcame in single combat a sergeant of grenadiers, and bore him in, with his arms, a prisoner. This capable young officer was a conspicuous figure in Pluckamin during this winter of 1779, and was long pleasantly remembered. He died in 1801, while in command of the military post at West Point.

By far the most notable social event in Somerset's Revolutionary history, was the grand fête and ball given at Pluckamin on the eighteenth of February by the officers of the army, under the direction of Knox. That general, in a letter of the twenty-eighth of February, to his brother, wrote :—

We had at the Park on the eighteenth a most genteel entertainment given by self and officers—everybody allows it to be the first of the kind ever exhibited in this state *at least*: we had above seventy ladies—all of the first *ton* in the state—we danced all night—between 3 and 400 gentlemen—an Elegant room—The Illuminating, fire works, etc., were more than pretty.

This celebration was in honor of the first anniversary of the French alliance; it should properly have taken place on the sixth, but was deferred till so late a date because of Washington's absence in Philadelphia. The attendance comprised all the army officers in that part of the country, prominent citizens and their families from this and adjoining states, and there were also present a great number of Jersey people as spectators. A large pavilion or temple was erected, one hundred feet long and of excellent proportions, showing thirteen arches supported by columns, and illuminated with paintings and mottoes descriptive of the conception and progress of American liberty.



The commander-in-chief, with his staff and escort, rode on the parade at three o'clock in the afternoon. He was soon followed by Mrs. Washington in a coach drawn by four horses, accompanied by a gentleman of slender form, with a pleasant face and a dark complexion. This was Henry Laurens, a man of great wealth and social position in South Carolina, who had recently retired from the presidency of congress. The wheel of fortune was soon to make an unhappy revolution for this person. In the next year, while on his way to Holland as minister plenipotentiary from the new republic, his ship was overhauled by a British cruiser; he was carried prisoner to England and there thrown into London Tower, where he languished in close confinement for fifteen months. Another distinguished arrival at Pluckamin camp was William Duer, ex-member of congress from New York. It was a prospective alliance,\* rather than one already consummated, that attracted him to this fête; for just then he was fathoming celestial harmonies,—being a willing captive to the charms of Lady Kitty Stirling.

The guests whom it was intended to especially honor having arrived, the celebration was inaugurated by the discharge of thirteen cannon, whereupon the assembled company sat down to a very fine dinner served in the academy. A writer of that time describes the room as being spacious, and recites further:—

The tables were very prettily disposed both as to prospect and convenience. The festivities were universal, and the toasts were descriptive of the happy event which had given certainty to liberty, empire and independence.

The rostrum, where usually the military lessons were given, served as a convenient orchestra-stand, from which the company were entertained with army music. A handsome exhibition of fireworks was given in the evening by Colonel Stevens of the artillery, after which came a grand ball, extending far into the night, the magnificence of which gave abundant topic for talk and reminiscence for that, and the succeeding, generation of Pluckamin folk.

This dance, of course, took place in the academy. After the dining tables were removed, besides the space occupied by dowagers, wall-flowers, and other on-lookers, there was left a "range for about thirty couples to foot it to no indifferent measure." What a scene it must have presented for staid Plucka-

min! Balls in the olden time lacked much of the hilarity and vivacity of the dances of to-day, but what they lost in the apparent gaiety of the occasion was more than compensated for by the picturesqueness of the costumes and by the stately grace and courtliness of the dancers. Scarlet coats, satin short-clothes, and striped waistcoats added much to the color and beauty of the scene, as their wearers stepped the stately minuet, or went down the middle in the popular contre-dance. No breathless couples whirled in the giddy waltz, nor went tearing across the room in the hoydenish galop. Over-heated girls, dishevelled locks, and torn dresses were not features of the hour, for dignity and decorum ruled supreme in all social festivals. The sobriety of this occasion, notwithstanding the joyousness of the event it celebrated, was, without doubt, enhanced by the presence of Washington. His personality always impressed others with a certain degree of veneration and awe, and even in times of festivity his countenance, while benign, was said to be almost austere, and his manner uncommonly reserved. Thacher recounts that even his most intimate associates were never connected with him by the reciprocal ties of friendship, and but few could boast of having been with him on an easy and a familiar footing.

Doctor Ashbel Greene, who, as chaplain of congress and president of Princeton college, made the acquaintance of all the leading Americans of that time, has left on record that he found in Washington more of that indefinable quality called presence, than in any other person he had ever known. The reverend doctor writes:—

In his general manners he was eminently courteous and kind; and yet, to the last I could never speak to him without feeling a degree of embarrassment such as I have never felt in the presence of any other man or woman with whom I was acquainted.

Robert Morris, of Philadelphia, though intimately associated with Washington, has acknowledged being always overcome in his company by a feeling of awe; and Lord Erskine, one of the greatest of English advocates, has expressed in the following language how he was impressed by the person and the character of this illustrious man:—

I have a large acquaintance among the most valuable and exalted class of men; but you are the only human being for whom I ever felt an awful reverence.

Mr. Lossing quotes the aged widow of Alexander Hamilton as having said that Washington never danced ; that though he frequently attended balls and assemblies, and always honored some lady with his hand, he merely walked through the figures. The general's evening dress is said to have been of black velvet, with knee and shoe buckles, a steel rapier, and his hair, thickly powdered, drawn back from the forehead, and gathered in a black silk bag adorned with a rosette. He opened the ball with Mrs. Knox. Cannot you see him, with his imperturbable face and kindly, grave mien, as, holding aloft his partner's hand, with all the graceful dignity of a nobleman of nature he steps with her down the room ? Another partner of the commander-in-chief was a daughter of Judge Linn, and more than one beauty of that period, now sleeping under crumbling headstones in Pluckamin and other churchyards, was made happy, in after-years, by the remembrance that she danced that night with the "Father of his Country."

The society reporter is not, as is so generally supposed, a modern feature of journalistic enterprise. He was an institution in the last century, and the one who figured among the guests at this Pluckamin fête was evidently not far behind his brothers of the modern press in liveliness of fancy. In the "Pennsylvania Packet," of the sixth of March, he describes Mrs. Greene, Mrs. Knox and the other ladies who surrounded Mrs. Washington, as being a "circle of brilliants, the least of which was more valuable than the stone which the King of Portugal received for his Brazilian possessions." I cannot refrain from giving a further extract from this Revolutionary "Jenkins's" account of the festivities on this anniversary occasion. It is interesting as showing that in those patriotic days the affairs of the country even gave color and direction to the pleasantries and ball-room *badinage* of young girls and gallants :—

As it is too late in the day for me to follow the windings of a fiddle, I contented myself with the conversation of some one or other of the ladies during the interval of dancing. I was particularly amused with the lively sallies of a Miss \* \* \*. Asking her if the roaring of the British lion in his late speech did not interrupt the spirit of the dance ; "Not at all," said she, "it rather enlivens, for I have heard that such animals always increase their howlings when most frightened. And do you not think," added she, "you who should know more than young girls, that he has real cause of apprehension from the large arma



ments and honorable purpose of the Spaniard?" "So," said I, "you suppose that the King of Spain acts in politics as the ladies do in affairs of love, smile in a man's face, while they are spreading out the net which is to entangle him for life." "At what season," replied the fair, with a glance of ineffable archness, "do men lose the power of paying such compliments?"

I do not recollect that I have ever been more pleased on any occasion, or in so large a company. There could not have been less than sixty ladies. Their charms were of that kind which give a proper determination to the spirits and permanency to the affections. More than once I imagined myself in a circle of Samnites, where beauty and fidelity were made subservient to the interest of the State, and reserved for such citizens as had distinguished themselves in battle. Is it that the women of Jersey by holding the space between two large cities have continued exempt from the corruptions of either, and preserved a purity of manners superior to both? Or have I paid too great attention to their charms and too little to those imperfections which observers tell us are the natural growth of every soil?

General and Mrs. Knox tasted sorrow as well as pleasure, while living in the Van der Veer house. About twenty-five feet west of the Reformed Dutch church a tombstone is still to be seen, upon which is the following inscription:

Under this stone are deposited the Remains of Julia Knox, an infant who died the second of July, 1779. She was the second daughter of Henry and Lucy Knox, of Boston, in New England.

Mrs. Knox was, in all, the mother of ten children. Seven of them may be said to have been laid on the altar of her country, as that number died in infancy; due without doubt to the excitements and severe bodily and mental strain incidental to campaigning. Bedminster traditions preserve an unhappy story connected with the death of this Revolutionary babe. Notwithstanding that Knox was in the township defending the homes and liberties of the people, the consistory of the Reformed Dutch church refused to allow this little one to be buried in the churchyard. In their ignorance and superstition the Dutch fathers considered the fact of Knox being a member of the Congregational church of New England sufficient to warrant their refusing his child a sepulchre.

The general's host, old Jacobus Van der Veer—himself one of the consistory—was very indignant at the stand taken by his co-trustees. He, poor man, had suffered from the same bigotry. A few years before, on the death of an insane daughter a burial place had been denied his child; this, too, in the face of the fact that the church-grounds had been a gift to the congregation from

the man they were treating so harshly. The worthy elders reasoned that the girl's infirmities would endanger her salvation in the next world, consequently her body in this one could not be permitted to crumble into dust among those of the elect. Van der Veer buried his daughter in a field just beyond the line of the "God's acre." He is said to have taken Knox by the hand, and leading him to the lonely grave outside the fence, ejaculated with a choking voice, "Gen'ral, this is my ground, bury your child here." The prejudice of the church people seems to have lessened, as a few years later the fence was moved, so that the burial-ground now includes the once excluded graves of the children of honest old Jacobus Van der Veer and the brave Revolutionary soldier.

The winter and spring at the Pluckamin and Middlebrook camps were passed in perfecting the army in tactics and drill, under the able oversight of Inspector-General Steuben. At the latter cantonment the huts were erected in uniform and compact lines forming successive streets. For a considerable distance facing the front line the ground was cleared and smoothed, and freshly swept each morning, thus forming a fine parade for drills and inspections. Here the men were daily exercised in the manual of arms and the school of the company, and the regiments and brigades were frequently reviewed and inspected by General Steuben. This officer was an enthusiastic soldier, and exceedingly diligent in his special department. At inspections it was his custom not only to rigidly scrutinize the bearing, uniform and general appearance of each man, but to take in his hands the muskets and accoutrements, examining them to discover, if possible, a speck of rust or defect in any part. Flints and cartridges were counted, knapsacks unslung, and every article spread on the soldiers' blankets to see if they contained all that had been furnished by congress.

Major North, of Steuben's staff, recorded that he had seen the general and his assistants occupied for seven long hours while inspecting a brigade of three small regiments. Such thoroughness was unknown in the continental army before the advent of Baron Steuben. He was at this time about fifty years old, of great dignity of deportment, rich and elegant in dress, and wore brilliant decorations. Doctor Ashbel Green, who, in his youth,

campaigns with the baron, said that his large size, strikingly martial aspect, together with his handsome horse-trappings and enormous holsters, made him appear as a perfect personification of the "God of War." In the old country Steuben had been aide-de-camp to Frederic the Great; of high rank in the service of the margrave of Baden, from whom he received the "Order of Fidelity;" and grand marshal of the court of the prince of Hohenzollern-Heckingen. The king of Sardinia sought his services, and the emperor of Austria endeavored to attach him to his army. All of these brilliant positions, with their honors and emoluments, were sacrificed that he might fight for American independence. There is no doubt that his primary motive for espousing the cause of the colonies was a desire to connect himself with a movement that he felt confident would offer a wide field for his military ambitions. But the baron had not long been allied with the continental army before he became imbued with the spirit animating its officers and men, and soon his deepest sympathies were aroused, and he became a patriot among patriots. On the thirteenth of July, 1783, he thus wrote to the officers of the New Jersey line:—

A desire for fame was my ruling motive for visiting America, but when I saw so many brave, so many good, men, encountering every species of distress for the cause of their country, the course of my ambition was changed, and my only wish was to be linked in the chain of friendship with those supporters of their country, and to render that country which had given birth to so many patriots every service in my power.

On reaching the army at Valley Forge in 1778 Steuben was appointed inspector-general. From the outset of the war the troops had been in sore need of just such military knowledge as he was peculiarly fitted to impart, and they soon gave evidence by increased discipline and effectiveness, of his ability as a tactician and disciplinarian.

The baron made his headquarters, nearly a mile south of the Raritan, at a house located at the end of a shady lane running from the New Brunswick road, then the residence of Abraham Staats, now owned and occupied by Cornelius W. La Tourette. Mrs. La Tourette is the granddaughter of its Revolutionary owner. Since that time two wings have been added, but the central part of the house remains as it was during Steuben's occupancy. Its sloping roof, low eaves and shingled sides speak



of times long by-gone, but it is still modern in the sense of its picturesque homeliness being in full accord with its turfy setting and tree-embowered surroundings.

It was during this spring that Steuben issued his famous "Regulations for the Infantry of the United States," but it is probable that the work was completed before he established himself at the Staats house. He first wrote the book in German, and, after translating it into incorrect French, turned it over to his staff-officers. Fleury then put it into good French, when it was again translated, this time into poor English by Duponceau. The book was then entirely rewritten in correct English by Captain Walker, and when completed, hardly a word of it could be read by its author. General Washington and his lady were frequent visitors at this old dwelling, and on several occasions it, together with the surrounding grounds, was the scene of elegant entertainments given by the baron, who greatly enjoyed playing the role of a beneficent host. At such times the banquet was spread in an adjacent grove. When Lossing was in Bound Brook, preparing his "Field Notes" published in 1848, he found old residents who well remembered the foreign appearance that the dignified officer presented, his magnificent apparel, and the splendor of the gold and diamond decorations he wore when in full dress.





## CHAPTER XXXII.

*Festivities and Ceremonies at Camp Middlebrook—The French Minister, M. Gerard, and the Spanish Envoy, Don Juan de Miralles, Visit General Washington—The Grand Review in Their Honor.*

Numerous circumstances conspired to make the Middlebrook cantonment conspicuous for its agreeable features. There were few or no annoyances from the enemy, and, as has before been said, both officers and men of the continental force were in excellent temper. The hours of the army during this mild winter and spring were not all taken up with work and drills. The officers found time for social intercourse and festivities, such opportunities presenting themselves more readily because of a custom prevailing in the armies of the Revolution which had no existence in those of the late civil war. We have seen that the generals were often accompanied by their wives and families. This was an example that the junior officers were not loth to follow; the result was a very respectable contingent of ladies' society in the vicinity of Middlebrook camp. In addition, the young nation's defenders fraternized with the county families, so, altogether, there was no difficulty in securing a goodly assemblage at the frequent reunions and dances given by the officers. Mrs. Washington, Mrs. Knox, Mrs. Lott from near Morristown, and Lady Stirling and her daughter Kitty being within easy driving distance saw much of each other, and always took part in the social gatherings of the army. Greene, in a letter to Colonel Wadsworth on the nineteenth of March, thus speaks of pleasant hours passed in the Van Veghten house:—

We had a little dance at my quarters a few evening past. Upon the whole we had a pretty little frisk. \* \* \* Miss Cornelia Lott, and Miss Betsey Living-

ston are with Mrs. Greene. This moment they have sent for me to drink tea. I must go.

Cornelia Lott was the daughter of Abraham Lott, a prominent merchant who lived in handsome style at Beaverwyck, eight miles from Morristown. He was at the head of a cultivated household, and during the war his substantial mansion, from which he dispensed a generous hospitality, was frequently resorted to by officers of the army. One of his daughters married Captain Livingston, an aide-de-camp of Greene. The general's wife on the occasion of her first visit to New Jersey, in 1777, spent a portion of the summer with this family. Her husband in writing to her from Morristown, in May of that year, thus spoke of the household into which she was soon to be introduced :—

Mr. Lott's household have engaged you to spend the summer there. They are one of the finest families you ever saw. The old gentleman and his lady are as merry as boys of fourteen; there are four or five young ladies of delicate sentiments and polite education. They are all anxious to see you, and cultivate your acquaintance. They long to see you, and impatiently wait your coming. Heaven grant it be speedy! Mr. Hoffman and ladies of this place wish to see you, as do Lady Stirling and Lady Kitty, one of the finest young ladies I ever saw. But Mr. Lott claims the preference to your society. You may learn music and French, too, there. Adieu, my second self.

Mrs. Greene and Cornelia Lott grew to be very fond of each other; so great was their friendship that on the birth of Mrs. Greene's second daughter the child was named Cornelia Lott.

Attached to the line and staff of the army were many brilliant young men. In Washington's immediate military family were Colonels Alexander Hamilton and Tench Tilghman, his two most trusted aides. The manners of the latter, who was at that time thirty-four years old, were distinctly those of one who had always moved in polite circles. He belonged to a distinguished Maryland family, and was connected with the best people of that aristocratic province. At the outset of the Revolution his father adhered to the Crown, and Philemon, a younger brother, entered the British navy. But Tench was from the beginning a sturdy patriot, and in 1776 joined Washington's army as captain of a Pennsylvania company that had volunteered for one campaign. His handsome presence, bravery on the field, together with his personal merits and the high social position he was known to occupy, attracted the attention of his superiors, and at the expir-



ation of a short term of service he was invited to be a member of Washington's military family. Throughout the war he continued near the general's person as aide, secretary and confidential friend, and stood by his side at Annapolis, when he delivered to congress his commission.

Hamilton was a bright, particular star in that military firmament. Though then but two and twenty his dignity of character was such as to insure for him all the consideration due to one who had profited by the experiences of many years; it is said that when he entered a room, notwithstanding his youth, it was apparent from the respectful attention of the company that he was a distinguished person. Colonel Hamilton was slight in figure and of rather under size, but possessed a graceful carriage and courtly manners, together with an air of much refinement. His cheeks were as rosy as a girl's, the color mantling a very fair complexion from which the powdered hair was rolled back and gathered in a club behind. On the first of March in 1777, when barely twenty years old, he was appointed aide-de-camp to Washington, and, owing to his intelligence and sagacity, soon gained the full confidence of his chief, and was invited to assist in the planning for the concentration and arrangement of the new army then forming. As says Troup:—

The pen of the army was held by Hamilton; and for dignity of manner, pith of matter and eloquence of style General Washington's letters are unrivalled in military annals.

Hamilton's amiability and agreeable presence inspired in all with whom he came in contact the most affectionate attachment. Campaigning brought him his faithful wife, for it was while at headquarters the following winter that he met, and fell in love with, the charming daughter of General Philip Schuyler—but more of that hereafter.

These two aides divided between them the honors of presiding at General Washington's table, and of generally acting as majordomos at headquarters. They must have added much to the pleasure of visitors, especially to those of the fair sex. Perhaps this may partly explain the fact of the Wallace house having entertained so many ladies that spring. There were several young ladies there from Virginia—a Miss Brown is also spoken of—and we know that Governor Livingston's two daughters,

Katy and Betsy, as they were familiarly called, were Mrs. Washington's frequent guests. The governor's eldest daughter, Sarah, who had for five years been the wife of John Jay—then president of congress—was also entertained. Mrs. Jay was both clever and beautiful, and considered a social star, not only in Philadelphia, but afterwards in Madrid and Paris, when she accompanied her distinguished husband to the courts of Spain and France. It is said that the brilliancy of her complexion gave rise to much speculation in Revolutionary society. Even Doctor Witherspoon, who admired her greatly, used playfully to express to Kitty Livingston his doubts as to the genuineness of her sister's coloring. The French minister went so far as to lay a wager with a certain Spanish don, whose acquaintance we shall shortly make, that Mrs. Jay's complexion was artificial. The gentleman from France acknowledged his error by paying the bet.

Another young soldier at headquarters who contributed greatly to the social atmosphere of the army was William Colfax, an officer of Washington's body-guard. At the outset of the war, when but nineteen, he entered a Connecticut regiment, fought at Bunker Hill, and served until the peace, being three times wounded, once dangerously. He was transferred to the guard at Valley Forge in 1778. When at Middlebrook, his buoyant nature and engaging appearance won for him many friends. He had dark hair, always well powdered and worn in a queue, a clean shaven face, a clear, florid complexion, and beautiful blue eyes dancing with expression. Colfax was a personal favorite of Mrs. Washington who presented him with a linen thread net for his queue, knit by her own hands, which is preserved by his descendants. As was the case with Hamilton, campaigning brought him his wife. Just above Pompton, in Bergen county, at the junction of the Wanaque and Hamburg roads, there is still standing a venerable frame dwelling, having a long, low roof which slopes almost to the ground in the rear. Its old-time accessories all speak of the last century; and here during the Revolution lived Casparus (Jasper) Schuyler, a cousin of General Philip Schuyler, and a grandson of Arent Schuyler who migrated from the Upper Hudson in 1710, and settled first at Pompton, where he acquired a thousand acres of land, and later at New Barbadoe's Neck on the Passaic river.

The continental officers, in their many marches between the Hudson and the Delaware, were often hospitably entertained in this old Dutch mansion, and the younger men found the efforts of their host most ably seconded by his charming daughter, Hester. Her attractions made a deep impression upon the susceptibilities of young Colfax, who, soldier-like, lost no time in laying siege to her heart. We may presume her defences to have been weak for she soon made an unconditional surrender, and they celebrated together the advent of peace by getting married. Colfax settled at Pompton on land still in possession of his descendants, and on which he died at the age of eighty-two. In a little enclosure, but a few feet from the highway and a short distance from the present family mansion, he lies buried, the grave being marked with a white marble pyramid bearing the inscription, "General William Colfax, Captain of Washington's Life Guard." Throughout his life he continued to be interested in military affairs; he served in the militia, and commanded a brigade in the war of 1812. His son, Schuyler, was the father of the late Schuyler Colfax.

It was considered a great honor to belong to the life-guard of Washington. The men were selected with much care from the different regiments, all states being represented; it was requisite that each member should be American born, of good moral character, finely formed, from five feet eight inches to five feet ten inches in height, and from twenty to thirty years old. They were uniformed in blue coats faced with buff, red waistcoats, buckskin breeches, white body belts, and black felt cocked hats bound with white tape. This command was kept thoroughly drilled in all manner of infantry manœuvres, that it might stand as a model for the army. While at Middlebrook it contained one hundred and eighty men, but at the end of this year—1779—its number was increased to two hundred and fifty, and Colfax was given the command. A year later Washington reduced the guard to its original strength, and in 1783 sixty-four men comprised the entire rank and file.\*

The custom was to have the life-guard hutted adjacent to the

---

\*In that year the following privates were from New Jersey:—Jonathan Moore, Benjamin Eaton, Stephen Hetfield, Lewis Campbell, Samuel Bailey, William Martin, Labau Landar, Robert Blair, Benjamin Bonnell, and John Fenton, drummer.



quarters of the commander-in-chief. Upon an alarm being given, the guard would at once take possession of headquarters and barricade the entrances; then, all the windows being opened, five men would be placed at each one, where with guns loaded and cocked they would remain until troops from the camp surrounded the house. Mrs. Washington in after years used to tell with much amusement how that often, on occasions of false alarms at night, she had been obliged to bury herself in the bed clothes in order to be protected from the winter winds, which swept through the open windows of her sleeping rooms while the soldiers stood guard.

Perhaps one of the most popular men in the vicinity of Middlebrook camp was a swarthy-faced, graceful youth of twenty-three—Henry Lee, afterwards the father of Robert E. Lee, who gave up his sword at Appomattox. A Virginian by birth, he graduated at Princeton, and when only twenty was captain in the cavalry regiment which later came under the command of Colonel Bland. He early attracted the attention of the commander-in-chief, who at the battle of Germantown selected his troop as a personal guard. Lee's mother is said to have been, when quite a young girl, the "Lowland Beauty" who first taught the youthful heart of Washington to beat tumultuously with thoughts of love. As all natures are human it is not impossible that the elevation of the young cavalry officer can be attributed to the general's tender remembrances of this early association; be this as it may, Lee's bravery and soldierly qualities soon won for him a majority, and he was given a separate command of three companies of light-horse. During the spring of 1779 he was a frequent and welcome visitor at the old Van Veghten house, near by. When Mrs. Greene and the young Virginian first met in camp, their vivacious natures and merry hearts proved mutually attractive, and their acquaintance soon ripened into a friendship which lasted through life. It was at Mrs. Greene's home, beneath the shade of the palms and live-oaks of a Georgia sea-island, that Lee died in 1818, four years after her own death. And now for these many decades the two friends have lain side by side on this same island, in a little coquina-walled graveyard hidden in the depths of an olive grove and surrounded by tropical fruits and flowers.

While at Camp Middlebrook Major Lee and several brother officers were quartered at "Phil's Hill," a large mansion still to be seen on an elevation north of the main road, just west of Middlebrook stream—of late the property of John Herbert. It was then the hospitable dwelling of Philip Van Horne, the father of five handsome and well-bred daughters who were the much admired toasts of both armies. Van Horne, himself, as far as loyalty was concerned, seems to have been a suspicious character, and at one time Washington contemplated his removal to New Brunswick. Indeed, he was arrested and put on his parole, but was permitted to remain at Middlebrook, where he and his bright-eyed girls continued to welcome alike friend and foe, and, it is said, were often enabled to be the means of mitigating the ferocities of war. The young ladies had their reward—they all obtained husbands. One of them married Colonel Stephen Moylan of the 4th Pennsylvania light dragoons, the fascinations of whose merry nature and fine appearance, the latter enhanced by his red waist-coat, buckskin breeches, bright green coat and bearskin hat, were too great for the Middlebrook beauty to withstand. This dashing Irish colonel was the brother of the Roman Catholic bishop of Cork, and was the first president in America of the "Friendly Sons of St. Patrick." After the war he became distinguished as an old-school gentleman and a hospitable host. He, his wife and two daughters, one of whom inherited her mother's fascinations, drew many persons to their attractive home on the northeast corner of Walnut and Fourth streets in Philadelphia.

The Middlebrook tavern, a short distance from the Van Horne house, is another Somerset building that has a Revolutionary story to tell. When it was erected is not known, but it was certainly before the middle of the last century, as, you will remember, we found it here in 1752 when Johannes first rode down the great Raritan road on his way to the post-office. Its present occupant and owner is fully alive to its old-time associations, and is careful to preserve intact all that testifies of ancient days. In its quaint barroom many stabs made by Revolutionary bayonets are to be seen in the heavy beams of its low-studded ceiling.

In reading the story of these stirring times, when thoughts of

war seemed paramount with all, it is noteworthy that the undercurrents of personal feelings, hopes, and sympathies flowed persistently on, as if peace and plenty, not war and want, were the portion of this generation. The great drama of the Revolution moved steadily forward, and its action was not marred by the fact of its actors, to some extent, being hampered and controlled by their individual interests. Some men, at least, at this time rose superior to individualism, and squared their conduct by the needs of their country. Among the young officers of Camp Middlebrook there was a worthy example of this patriot class in Colonel Alexander Scammel, who will be remembered as Sullivan's brigade-major at the time Lee was captured at Basking Ridge. He was now thirty-five years old, and in January of the previous year had been appointed by congress to succeed Colonel Pickering as adjutant-general of the army. He had a manly presence, standing six feet two in his stockings, and possessed a great heart, with warm affections. His was a nature that sternly realized that it was vitally essential to the complete development of the Revolutionary scheme that all individual and selfish ends should be put to one side if they conflicted with the advancement of the common cause. So it was that here at Middlebrook he laid down forever what had been, next to his country's good, the most cherished desire of his life. For several years he had corresponded with Miss Abigail Bishop of Mystic, Connecticut, to whom he was devotedly attached, and whom he had confidently expected to marry. But the war proved an obstacle; the young lady would not marry a soldier, and, though the colonel wrote her many tender and appealing letters urging his suit, she firmly persisted in making the acceptance of his hand conditional upon his retiring from the army. Finally, despairing of inducing her to alter this resolution, he, after a great struggle, abandoned all thoughts of marriage.

His correspondence from Middlebrook with her and her father plainly expressed the keen distress with which he faced the necessity of breaking the engagement. In a letter dated the thirteenth of April, to her father, he writes that, though her resolution made him very unhappy:—

My fixed determination has been ever since hostilities commenced to continue



in the army so long as my bleeding country demanded my services, and to prefer my country's good to every self interested consideration.

In another letter of the same month, this time to his brother, he says that the rupture with Miss Bishop will doom him to old bachelorism, but he comfortingly adds :—

Let us establish our independence on a lasting and honorable foundation, and I shall be happy at all events.

Poor Scammel! He lived, loved, and died! History has not honored this hero to the degree of his deserts. He made the sacrifice but did not live to enjoy the reward, or even to know that the reward was secured. Two years later, when in front of Yorktown, he commanded a light-infantry regiment, and while reconnoitering on the thirtieth of September was surprised by a party of the enemy's horse, and so wounded that he died on the sixth of October.

Late in April army society was pleasantly agitated over the arrival at Middlebrook of the French minister, M. Gerard, and Don Juan de Miralles, a gentleman of distinction from Spain. They were met some distance from camp by General Washington, who, accompanied by the life-guard and a cavalcade of prominent officers, escorted them in honor to headquarters. M. Gerard was already well known to the chief and to some of his generals, having been in the country since the preceding July. He was looked upon by all with peculiar interest—not to say affection—because of being the representative of the nation's valued allies, the French. His visit to camp was for the purpose of consulting with Washington respecting some concert of action between the French fleet and the American army. Minister Gerard's impressions of the commander-in-chief, gained on this occasion, have been preserved. In a letter to Count de Vergennes, written from Middlebrook, in speaking of his many conversations with the general, he says :—

It is impossible for me briefly to communicate the fund of intelligence which I have derived from him; \* \* \* I will now say, only, that I have formed as high an opinion of the powers of his mind, his moderation, patriotism and his virtues, as I had before from common report conceived of his military talents, and of the incalculable services he had rendered his country.

Don Juan de Miralles was a recent arrival in America, and attracted much attention because of the element of uncertainty

that seemed to attach both to his mission and to himself. He was an unofficial Spanish agent who had been dispatched to the United States by the governor of Havana, in order to obtain information as to American affairs which would enable the Spaniards to reach a conclusion as to the propriety and wisdom of recognizing and aiding the new republic. He was supposed to be endeavoring to further these ends, but it was subsequently discovered that his personal sympathies ran counter to the attainment of such results. The envoy seems at this time to have created an excellent impression on Washington, who in a letter to the governor of Havana speaks of him in most favorable terms. Congress, while showing the envoy every consideration, appeared to be a little afraid of him, and, as he did not directly represent the Spanish court, was careful to treat with him only in an unofficial capacity, and through the intervention of the French minister. Bancroft says that Don Juan really looked upon the United States as the natural enemy of his country; and that, as he came here as a spy and an intriguer, congress displayed an unwise confidence in welcoming him as the representative of an intended ally.

Spain was at this time coquetting with congress, and showed but little disposition to negotiate an alliance except on the basis of the exclusive right of navigating the Mississippi. She was also anxious that her right to conquer and retain Florida should be acknowledged. Though urged by France, she held back from entering into fraternal relations, while there was yet a prospect that by offering pecuniary assistance to our struggling country its legislators could be allured into concessions that would greatly inure to the benefit of Spain. To the average American of a century ago the matter of controlling the commerce of the Mississippi, or of claiming the territory beyond that stream, did not seem of much moment. This is evidenced by a letter of Gouverneur Morris, who wrote at that time: "As to its navigation"—referring to the river—"everybody knows that the rapidity of its current will forever prevent ships from sailing up it." While members of congress from the middle and New England states considered the country lying east of the Mississippi quite ample enough for the needs of coming generations, southern members, fortunately, had some conception of the future value of the

western territory and its mighty water-ways. Thus a congressional discussion was provoked, which continued until the procession of events in Europe had forced Spain into an alliance with France. Our own country was then able to enjoy all the benefits of Spanish assistance without making those valuable concessions which had been demanded.

The presence of these guests in camp added much to the social gaiety, and resulted in occasions of ceremony and pomp in which old Bound Brook witnessed scenes of military pageantry, that to its inhabitants of prosaic to-day would seem more than brilliant. A notable event of this character was the grand parade and review given on the second of May in honor of the European envoys. The peaceful spot of this review, with its quiet fields and hedges, gives now no signs of the bustle and activity witnessed over one hundred years ago. But traditions cluster thickly just here, and the journals of participants are at our command, so we need not rely entirely on imagination in picturing in vivid colors the scenes and incidents of this gala occasion. Great preparations had been made, and on the morning of the review crowds of people gathered to enjoy the display. A decorated grand-stand had been erected in a large field, on which were seated Mrs Washington with two young lady visitors from Virginia, Mrs. Knox and Mrs. Greene, and we are free to conclude that, among others, the Stocktons had driven over from Princeton, the Livingstons and Clarks from Elizabethtown, the Stirlings from Basking Ridge, and the Lotts from Morristown; for we are told that dignitaries and leading families arrived in carriages from all parts of the state.

The local color and picturesqueness of the scene were not entirely contributed by flying banners, pacing sentinels, and uniformed officers hurrying here and there in their efforts to further the preparations of the commandant of the forces. The "quality" added not a little to the picture, for the age of fine dress had not yet gone out, and the line between the gentry and the masses was still strongly drawn by the apparel of their respective classes. Ladies at festive gatherings were decked in lofty, round hats with tall feathers, and wore satin petticoats, taffetas and brocades. Gentlemen of the old school still were crowned with full-bottomed wigs, though younger men, more



in the mode, had their own or false hair drawn in a queue, stiffened with lard and powdered with flour. This custom provoked Sir Joshua Reynolds, in his "Discourses," to compare a man of fashion with a Cherokee Indian who daubs his face with red and yellow, saying, that on meeting, whichever of them laughed first at the other's fashion was the barbarian. Neither had the stately courtesy of colonial days yet disappeared. In fancy we can see the Jersey gallant with his cocked hat under the arm of his varied-hued coat, in knee breeches, striped silk stockings, and pointed buckled shoes, bowing low by the open door of the lumbering vehicle of that time, and with grace and ceremony handing its fair occupant to a seat on the reviewing stage. The lady, before seating herself, salutes the gentleman with a very low, well-poised and stately curtsy; whereupon, the gallant, as was the custom with the polite man of that day, not only raises his heavily-laced cocked hat and bows low, but waves his leg and scrapes the floor with his foot.

Let us, in imagination, mount the grand-stand and witness with the expectant throng the approaching display. And now, salvos of artillery announce the arrival of the generals and their distinguished guests. They enter the field splendidly mounted, forming a brilliant cavalcade. In the advance is Major Lee—brave "Light-Horse Harry," the pet of the army—with his legion of graceful Virginians clad in green and white. Superbly horsed, gay with nodding plumes, and noisy with clanking sabres, champing bits and jangling spurs they prance proudly by, making way for the commander-in-chief, on whom all eyes are turned. Washington at this time is forty-seven years old, calm and dignified in countenance, of stately presence, and of noble bearing. Uniformed in blue and buff, with epaulets of bullion, varnished boots, ivory-hilted short-sword, and a three-cornered hat with a black cockade, he sits his bright bay with the grace of a perfect horseman, his martial and beloved appearance filling with delight the eye of every beholder.

Then come the generals, their staffs and orderlies, and the foreign guests. Among them—Greene, not yet thirty-seven, tall and manly, with a face of singular intelligence; big-bodied, big-hearted, merry-eyed Knox, on whom all look with favor;

Muhlenberg, the fighting parson, rolling in his saddle ; Wayne, soon at Stony Point to dictate one of the most brilliant pages of American history ; Steuben, looking every inch the soldier ; and the slender and erect Colonel Hamilton, with his distinguished presence and aristocratic bearing. In their midst rides the courtly Don Juan, in his suit of crimson and aiguillette of gold, and the French minister, in an embroidered coat rich with jewels and foreign decorations. On they come !—amid the rat-ta-ta of snare-drum, the bum-bum of bass, the shrill cry of fife, and the blare of trumpet ! On they go !—past the grand-stand—flashing in the bright sun-light with all the pomp of military trappings, and the glint of gold, silver and steel.

Meanwhile, the infantry and artillery, having taken possession of the spacious field, are formed on its two sides, the regiments in line of masses, in column by divisions. The commander-in-chief, with his general officers and the foreign envoys, passes in front of the troops, from right to left, in review, receiving the drum-ruffles and military honors due his rank. The generals then dismount at the grand-stand, and witness with their ladies and guests the evolutions and field manœuvres of the army, together with musketry and cannon-firing. This being concluded the ceremonies and business of the day are finished by the troops passing the reviewing-stand, paying the marching salute.

At the sound of a bugle the line wheels into column, and the men come swinging down the left of the parade, in cadenced step, their burnished arms shining in the sun. On reaching the color-marker they change direction, bring their guns to a carry—and now, with pennons fluttering and flags waving, the battalions go sweeping by, in division fronts and quick time, each officer saluting, and each soldier bearing himself as if proudly conscious of being under the eye of the commander. What wonder that the air is rent with acclamations ! that cheer after cheer rises from the throats of the vast concourse of spectators ! Here in these patriotic ranks are men who shivered on that bitter December night of the affair at Trenton ; who bled on the banks of the Brandywine ; who fought desperately in the fogs of Germantown ; who suffered with hunger and cold at Valley Forge ; and who thirsted through the intense heat of the bloody field of Monmouth. From Washington down to the smallest man in the rear rank of

the last platoon of the extreme left of the column,—what a congregation of heroes! It seems to me, did I own the historic field of this review it would be prized beyond all earthly possessions, and my last injunctions to those that are to follow would be;—Sell all that you have! but do not part with the land that has trembled under the tread of the illustrious Washington, his generals, and the continental army!

The review being over, the generals, their staffs, and the distinguished guests remounted their horses and left the field. Being joined by some of the regimental colonels—making a party of sixty in all—they rode through the village, and clattering over the Raritan bridge soon turned down a grassy lane and drew rein in front of Steuben's quarters at the Staats house, where, spread in a marquee under the trees, a bountiful repast was in waiting. Although Washington was present, the entertainment was intended to especially honor the French minister who was warmly attached to the baron, their friendship having begun in Europe. Steuben was a genial host, his wit and pleasantry making him a great favorite in all social circles. On this occasion he was ably assisted in entertaining his guests by the group of clever young men forming his military family. Among them was Captain Peter S. Duponceau, a jovial French lad only nineteen years old, who was always ready to frolic and laugh. He came from France as the baron's secretary, and he must have brought with him abundance of Gallic assurance, for, on landing at Portsmouth, he celebrated his arrival in this country by kissing the first pretty girl he met on the street. Duponceau after the war became prominent as a lawyer in Philadelphia, where he died at the age of eighty-four, much venerated for his learning and distinguished as a linguist and philologist. Another of Steuben's young men was Captain Benjamin Walker, then about twenty-five, who, owing to his being an excellent tactician and thoroughly conversant with French, had been transferred from the 2d New York regiment to the staff as assistant-inspector. He afterwards became a valued member of Washington's military family.

Probably no one present at the banquet under the trees on this May-day did more to promote the merriment and hilarity of the company than Steuben's aide-de-camp, Captain James Fair-



lie, a youth of twenty-one. He was commissioned an ensign in a New York regiment, and distinguished himself at the capture of Burgoyne's army. His amiability and wit always enlivened any society in which he was thrown, and it is said that even the taciturn Washington was not proof against his drolleries. Irving tells that once when the commander-in-chief was sailing with some officers on the Hudson he was so overcome by one of Fairlie's stories that he fell back in the boat in a paroxysm of laughter. No mention of the men who at this time surrounded the inspector-general would be complete without speaking of his favorite aide-de-camp, William North, whom he loved like a son. In the introduction of the baron's system of discipline into the continental army North rendered most efficient aid, and the friendship of these two men continued until Steuben's death, when he made his former staff-officer heir to half his fortune.

On the fourteenth of the same month there was another parade and review, with its attendant ceremonies. This time it was not in honor of representatives of the civilized courts of Europe,—but of the savage and untutored sons of the forest, to whom the authorities deemed it good policy to pay some attention and courtesy. General Washington was mounted on a fine gray horse, and, in addition to his customary retinue, was followed by his servant "Bill."\* As the cortège passed in front of the line, and received the salute, it was accompanied by a band of Indians, mounted on mean horses without saddles, some of them with old ropes and straps for bridles. The faces of the red men were painted, they wore dirty blankets, tufts of hair were their only head covering, and from their ears and noses barbaric jewels were suspended. Altogether, as a witness has recorded, "they exhibited a novel and truly disgusting spectacle."

The reverse of the medal! It was not all pride, pomp, and

---

\*The full name of this faithful attendant was William Lee. He was a mulatto slave, large, pompous, and alert, and before the war acted as Washington's huntsman with the Fairfax county hounds. As long as his master lived, he remained near his person and considered himself only second in importance. He made the general laugh in the heat of the action at Monmouth, by incontinently fleeing on the near approach of a British cannon-ball, after having marshalled into line of battle a lot of the officers' valets. Washington's will gave him his freedom, but he remained at Mount Vernon until his death, which occurred many years after that of his master.

parade at the Middlebrook camp. On the twentieth of April a great assemblage of people and a detachment of troops surrounded an open space, wherein five soldiers sat on their coffins with halters around their necks, under a gallows. They were condemned to an ignominious death for desertion, and for a crime that the commander-in-chief always found it hard to forgive, that of robbing the inhabitants. With their open graves in full view, and while standing under the beam of death awaiting the final preliminaries preceding their plunge into eternity, three of them received a pardon, and were conducted from the gallows more dead than alive; the other two were obliged to submit to their fate. Thacher, in his journal, records that the scene was particularly distressing, owing to one of the condemned being accompanied and supported at the fatal moment by an affectionate and sympathizing brother. "They repeatedly kissed and embraced each other, and would not be separated till the executioner was obliged to perform his duty, when, with a flood of tears, and mournful lamentations, they bade each other an eternal adieu,—the criminal, trembling under the horrors of an untimely and disgraceful death,—and the brother, overwhelmed with sorrow and anguish for one he held most dear."

The presence of an occupying army in the community must of necessity entail upon the inhabitants much inconvenience, and often distress and loss. It was Washington's endeavor to protect the people of Somerset from all unlawful and marauding acts of the more disorderly element in his army. Thieving and the destruction of property at all times met with condign punishment. The citizens were very grateful to the commander-in-chief for his care and protection of their interests. On the first of June Domine Hardenbergh, on behalf of the consistories and people of his several congregations, addressed a long letter to General Washington expressing the grateful sense of the community for his own and his officers' vigilance in maintaining strict discipline throughout the army, whereby the good people of the neighborhood had been protected in their persons and property, and their calamities sensibly relieved. On the next day Washington made the following courtly answer:—

To the Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Dutch Church of Raritan :  
Camp Middlebrook, June 2, 1779.

Gentlemen:—To meet the approbation of good men cannot but be agreeable.

Your affectionate expressions make it more so. In quartering an army, and in supplying its wants, distress and inconvenience will often occur to the citizen. I feel myself happy in the consciousness that these have been strictly limited by necessity, and your opinion of my attention to the rights of my fellow citizens; I thank you, Gentlemen, sincerely, for the sense you entertain of the conduct of the army, and for the interest you take in my welfare. I trust the goodness of the cause, and the exertion of the people under Divine protection, will give us that honorable peace for which we are contending. Suffer me, Gentlemen, to wish the Reformed Church at Raritan, a long continuance of its present Minister and Consistory, and all the blessings which flow from piety and religion.

I am, etc.,

Geo. Washington.

It was here at Middlebrook that Washington completed his plans for an active campaign against the northern Indians. The expedition, which was placed under the command of Sullivan, had for its object the chastisement of the natives for the atrocities committed in Pennsylvania, and the destruction of the cohesive power of the confederated Six Nations in order to weaken the value of the Indians as English allies. The troops employed by Sullivan were the brigades of Clinton, Poor, Maxwell and Hand, and some independent companies, together with a park of artillery under Colonel Procter. Clinton's brigade was already at Canojoharie, ready to form a junction with the main body when it reached the Susquehanna. Maxwell's force, as has been said before, lay at Elizabethtown. His Jersey soldiers had not enjoyed that winter the rest and quiet experienced by the men of the Middlebrook cantonment. On the night of the twenty-fourth of February the enemy attempted the capture of the entire brigade. The British Colonel Sterling, with the 33d and 42d Regiments and a light company of the guards, embarked from Long Island at Red Hook at nine o'clock and crossed to Bergen Neck. The troops then marched to Newark bay, where the boats, which had passed silently through the Kills, again took them on board and landed them on the Newark meadows.

Colonel Sterling pushed to the rear of Elizabethtown, intending to guard all the roads leading from the place, and then to move in force on the Americans. Before his dispositions were completed Maxwell learned of the approach of the king's troops, and hastily retreated by way of the Rahway road, the only one unguarded. The enemy dashed into the town to find that their game had escaped. They remained there the greater part of



the night, burning the barracks and storehouses and Stephen Crane's ferry-house. On returning to their boats they were more or less cut up by cannon and musketry, several men being killed and forty wounded.

Marching orders for the Indian expedition were received by Maxwell at Elizabethtown early in May. Attached to his brigade, besides the three Jersey regiments under colonels Ogden, Shrieve, and Dayton, were Colonel Spencer's regiment, together with sixty-eight men from colonel Baldwin's regiment, and seventy-five of Colonel Sheldon's light dragoons, making a total brigade strength of one hundred and eleven officers and twelve hundred and ninety-four men. Lieutenant Colonel Barber of the 3d New Jersey regiment was made Sullivan's chief of staff, and Captain Aaron Ogden of the 1st Regiment was detailed as aide to General Maxwell. Of Colonel Barber we shall learn much hereafter. Captain Ogden was a gallant officer, who not only served with distinction in the line but on several occasions was a member of the military families of Generals Stirling and Maxwell. He commanded a light-infantry company in Lafayette's corps at Yorktown, and after the war was a United States senator, and the governor of New Jersey.

This Indian campaign came at a very inopportune time for the officers of the Jersey brigade, they being just then indignantly dissatisfied with the authorities for making no reply to their petition for relief, which had been submitted to the legislature on the seventeenth of April. The pecuniary distress of both officers and men was great, for not only had their pay long been in arrears, but when paid, owing to depreciation, that of a colonel would not supply his horse with oats, and the four months pay of an enlisted man was only enough to furnish his family with a single bushel of wheat. Notwithstanding this discontent immediate steps were taken to put the different commands in a condition for marching; but, fortunately, before breaking camp the anxieties of both officers and men were relieved by the former receiving two hundred dollars, and the men forty dollars, each. On the eleventh of May, the 1st Regiment took up its line of march from Elizabethtown to Easton, which point Sullivan reached on the nineteenth. The 3d Regiment arrived at Easton on the twenty-sixth, and Colonel Shrieve's regiment, the 2d, left

Elizabethtown on the twenty-ninth, marching to Easton by way of the forks of the Raritan, and Pittstown. The officers before their departure were entertained by the citizens who also formed a cavalcade and escorted the regiment from the village. We may imagine that the men of this command, as they marched along the Raritan road through Middlebrook, received warm greetings from their comrades of the continental army, who doubtless envied them the prospective excitements of an active campaign through a new country. Returning from the expedition the Jersey brigade crossed the Delaware on the twentieth-sixth of October, camping the next night at Oxford, marching thence by way of Sussex Court-house, Pompton, Morristown and Springfield, to Scotch Plains, which place was reached on the fifth of November. This expedition against the Indians was in every respect successful. The little army penetrated to the heart of the Seneca country, desolating the lands and homes of the Six Nations of the North, burning forty of their towns, and destroying over one hundred and sixty thousand bushels of corn. During the campaign but forty-two men were killed or died, though but three hundred horses returned out of fourteen hundred that had started on the expedition.

The Somerset encampment did not break up till June and July, when the troops marched northeasterly over the hills to Morristown, and from there, by the way of Paramus and Ramapo, to the Highlands of the Hudson. On the fifteenth of July "Mad Anthony Wayne" made his famous charge on the rugged heights of Stony Point, covering himself and his men with glory; and on the nineteenth of August Major Lee attacked and captured the fort at Powles Hook, securing one hundred and fifty officers and men as prisoners.





## CHAPTER XXXIII.

*The Wedding of William Duer and Lady Kitty Stirling—  
Princeton College in the Revolution—The Famous Raid of  
the Queen's Rangers Through the Raritan Valley.*

When the continental army marched northward to the Hudson it did not altogether deprive Somerset from being a locality on which public interest centred. Before the close of the year 1779 several events transpired in the county which were important enough to attract much attention.

On the twenty-seventh of July there were great festivities at Basking Ridge, the occasion being the marriage of William Duer to Lady Kitty Stirling. The spacious Stirling mansion was filled with guests, including many prominent officers of the army, and civil and social magnates from New York and New Jersey. Family traditions aver that the soldiers from a near-by camp assembled in front of the house and clamored loudly for a view of the bride. Whereupon, the dainty Lady Kitty, in full bridal array, stepped in her satin slippers out on the lawn, and there received the congratulations of her father's fellow-campaigners. This is about the last mention we have of this family in our state, for in a few years their handsome seat, with its broad surrounding acres, passed into the hands of strangers. A writer who had visited Lady Stirling's household at the time it counted General Greene among its number, and who returned to Basking Ridge ten years later, speaks in a pathetic way of the scene of neglect and decay that met her eye. The great house stood

"In faded majesty, as if to mourn  
The dissolution of an ancient race."

Its grand hall and decorated drawing-room were used as a store-house, and piled with sacks of corn and wheat. Pigs and



poultry roamed at will in the paved quadrangle, and its surrounding stables and coach-house were fast going to ruin. Through the unhinged door of the latter was to be seen the great family coach; its glory had departed, for the medallions, coronets, and gilt were bespattered and stained, hens made their nests on its formerly sumptuous cushions, and roosted at night on the high dash and huge leathern springs. As has been said before, Lord Stirling's earthly reward for his valuable services to the country was an early grave, and the affectionate and grateful remembrance of his countrymen. To his family he left an honored name and—adversity. At the outset of the war his landed property in New York and New Jersey was estimated to be worth one hundred thousand colonial pounds, above encumbrances. When public tranquillity was first disturbed he at once recognized that he should be forced to neglect his private affairs while discussing with his sword the great questions at issue. "To meet with a failure is one thing, but to commit one is another," and Lord Stirling's poverty at the time of his death was not due to want of forethought. The unhappy condition of his affairs was the outcome of the general prostration of the country at the close of the war, and the great changes in currency values. On entering the army he obtained from the legislature an act which empowered commissioners to sell the most of his New Jersey lands, and, after paying indebtednesses, to invest the proceeds for his benefit. The properties were sold while the continental money was yet a lawful tender, but before the debts could be paid the tender act had been repealed. The currency rapidly depreciated, and before his death, in 1784, he had to face the fact that his efforts to provide for the future of his family had resulted in his being left without his estates,—without any value to the proceeds of their sales,—and without his debts being paid. Creditors within the British lines attached and sold his New York property, his obligations soon swallowed up the homestead, and he was thus stripped of everything.

Although Lord Stirling left his family without fortune, his daughter was not forced to become acquainted with poverty. Her marriage brought wealth, and gave her a social setting which secured all the enjoyments flowing from the possession of superabundant personal luxuries, and the companionship of culti-

vated and distinguished people. Manasseh Cutler, in his journal of 1784, mentions having dined with Colonel Duer that summer in New York. He found him living in the style of a nobleman, displaying on his table fourteen different kinds of wine before a large company of guests. Mr. Cutler speaks of his hostess, Lady Kitty, as an accomplished, sociable woman, who most gracefully performed all the honors of the board, attended by two servants in livery.

Another occasion of that year, sufficiently important to be noticed on these pages, was the college commencement held in September at Princeton, when six students received their diplomas. These were the first graduates since 1775, as until this year there had been no classes since early in 1776, although partial instruction had been given to a few students by the president and one of the professors in the summer of 1778. Previous to 1779 Nassau Hall had been used as a barrack by both armies, which, of course, left it in a very dilapidated and polluted condition. We have already learned of Washington having been forced, on that frosty morning of the third of January, 1777, to train his own guns on the walls of this building, in order to dislodge a detachment of the 40th British regiment that had there sought refuge from the victorious Americans. A cannon ball is said to have entered the chapel, and to have passed through a portrait of George II. which occupied the same frame in which is now Peale's noted picture of Washington. This chapel, together with the library, was stripped of furniture and ornaments, Governor Belcher's portrait was stolen, and all the books disappeared, some of them being afterwards found in North Carolina, where they had been left by Cornwallis's men.

The Presbyterian church had also been in use by the troops, and much mutilated. A fireplace was built against the wall, the chimney being carried up through the roof. But little was done towards repairing either the church or college building until the summer of 1783, when preparations were made for the autumn commencement, which was by far the most important one held for eight years. General Washington and continental congress, by being present, gave an unusual dignity to the occasion, the sittings of the national legislature being then in the library-room of Nassau Hall. The members, and their president Doctor Elias

Boudinot, together with General Washington and the ministers of France and Holland, occupied seats in the church and listened to the valedictorian, Ashbel Green—afterwards president of the college—who was highly complimented for his effort by the general. At the close of the proceedings Washington handed to the college trustees a purse of fifty guineas as a contribution toward the repairs of Nassau Hall. The college dons, however, appropriated the sum to the securing of Peale's famous portrait of the American Fabius.

I wonder how many of the undergraduates and *alumni* of the "College of New Jersey" are aware that their being able to sing of the glories of "Old Nassau," on campus and at annual banquet, is due to the humility of a colonial governor? In 1756, one year before the death of Governor Jonathan Belcher, that dignitary presented his library to the college. In gratitude for the gift the trustees requested that they might be allowed to give his name to the now venerable building, then being erected, which for so many years has housed the faculty and students of this ancient seat of learning. His excellency declined the proffered distinction. He requested that it should be named to "express the honor we retain," to quote his words, "in this remote part of the globe, to the immortal memory of the glorious King William III., who was a branch of the illustrious house of Nassau, and who, under God, was the great deliverer of the British nation from those two monstrous furies—Popery and Slavery." And so it was that the trustees decided that the new collegiate building, "in all time to come," should be called "Nassau Hall."

This was not the "beginning of things" for the College of New Jersey. The sturdy oak of *alma mater*, whose vast circumference of shade now shelters some six hundred students and fifty professors and officers, is the one hundred and forty years' growth from a little acorn that was planted in Presbyterian soil in Elizabethtown in the year 1746. Its founder and first president was the Reverend Jonathan Dickinson, for forty years the pastor of the First Presbyterian church of that town, whose congregation was the earliest organized in the colony for the worship of God in the English language. An old academy which occupied the site of the present lecture-room of the First



Presbyterian church, and which was burned by the enemy during the Revolution, contained the class recitation-rooms of the new college, while the students, twenty in number, boarded with families in the village. President Dickinson's duties were many and various. He and an usher were the only teachers of the college, and his ministerial work was severe, as the members of his large congregation were scattered over the country as far as Rahway, Westfield, Connecticut Farms, and Springfield. In addition to the labors of so extended a parish the pastor was compelled, owing to his meagre salary, to cultivate a farm. He also practised medicine, and obtained a high reputation as a physician. The Massachusetts Historical Society possesses a copy of a pamphlet published by him in 1740, in which he gives his views of the "Throat Distemper," a disease since known as diphtheria. It was not uncommon in colonial days for the clergy to attempt the healing of the bodies of the people as well as their souls; indeed, early in the last century the ministers were almost the only physicians in the New Jersey province.

President Dickinson was spared to serve the college but for one year, as he died in October, 1747. The loss of this godly man was greatly deplored by the entire community—he having even won the esteem and affection of those in the communion of the church of England. This circumstance is worthy of note, as in the last century there was little sympathy between the Presbyterians and the Episcopalians. St. John's Episcopal church in Elizabeth had been organized in 1704 by the Reverend John Brooke, a missionary of the London "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." Extracts from the correspondence between this society and its New Jersey missionaries will show the sentiment prevailing among churchmen at that time as to dissenters. The Reverend Edward Vaughan, in a letter written in 1709, speaking of the great number of Independents, Baptists and Quakers in New Jersey, thus wrote:—

From which absurdities Mr. Brooke brought a considerable number of them to embrace our most pure and holy Religion, and I hope that my labors will be attended with no less success, and observe that those late converts are much more zealous than those who sucked their milk in their infancy.

Writing again in 1711, he speaks of the mission at Woodbridge, and of several families in that village as displaying a

disposition, "to embrace the Christian faith instead of the erroneous opinions of the Quakers and Independents." In another letter, in 1717, he writes as follows of religious beliefs:—

Elizabethtown is a considerable village, and equals, if not exceeds, any in the Province, as well in bigness as in numbers of Inhabitants; custom and education has engaged them for the most part in the Congregational way, but notwithstanding they are not so very rigid in that persuasion as altogether to deny their attendance on my ministry, and to resist the force of reason and argument by which many of them have been (and will questionless be) gained upon and persuaded to leave their errors and to join in Worship and Communion with the Established Church.

The following is a quotation from a letter of Mr. Halliday, another missionary, to the secretary of the society, dated in November, 1716:—

In this part of east Jersey there are three large Townships, Newark, Elizabethtown and Woodbridge, which consists of upwards of a thousand families, the chief settlers of which were New England Independents, who are now old and confirmed in their erroneous way. In each of these towns there is a large Independent Congregation who support their preachers. The Church are only one handful of People from England and Scotland, not passing sixty families in any Congregation in this Division. By which it appears that the generality of the Country, being bound to their Preachers by the prejudice of their Education leave but a small number of the people to us.

The above extracts are given as going to show that the first president of the college must have been a man of rare virtues and sympathies to gain the affectionate respect of a people who apparently considered him a teacher of error. It is evident that he quite won the heart of Mr. Vaughan, who himself was much beloved. This missionary, though properly the rector of St. John's at Elizabethtown, also supplied the pulpits of several adjacent parishes, and in a pastorate of nearly four decades did a valuable work in thoroughly establishing Episcopacy in East New Jersey. His parishioners, in a letter to the "Propagation Society," expressing their happiness under his pastoral care, wrote that:—

He has to the great comfort and edification of our families, in these dark and distant regions of the world, prosecuted the duties of his holy calling with the utmost application and diligence; adorned his behaviour with an exemplary life and conversation; and so behaved himself with all due prudence and fidelity that they who are of a contrary part have no evil thing to say of him.

These two clergymen, after laboring in adjoining vineyards

for nearly forty years, lay dying at almost the same hour. In Doctor Murray's "Notes on Elizabeth Town," it is stated :—

The news of the death of Mr. Dickinson (with whom Mr. Vaughan's personal relations were always of the most pleasant character) was carried to Mr. Vaughan just as he was dying, and among the last audible words that he was heard to utter were these: "O that I had hold of the skirts of brother Jonathan."

At this time the Reverend Aaron Burr—the father of the slayer of Alexander Hamilton—was the Presbyterian minister at Newark, and eminent both as a scholar and as a divine. On the death of Mr. Dickinson the trustees of the college confided the students to his care. Under Mr. Burr's presidency the institution flourished at Newark for eight years, when, the under-graduates having increased to seventy in number, it was decided to locate the college permanently at Princeton. After much opposition on the part of the congregation of the Presbyterian church, who protested against the loss of their pastor, Mr. Burr and his young men, in October, 1757, betook themselves southward.\* At this time Princeton was already a village of some importance. Being located on the thoroughfare between New York and Philadelphia—the "King's highway"—its vicinity was well peopled while the greater part of New Jersey was yet mantled in continuous forest. Professor Kalm, the Swedish botanist, who passed through Princeton in the year 1748, found it:—

A town of wooden houses, with gardens and pastures between them. The woods were cut away, and the country so cultivated that one might have imagined himself in Europe.

---

\* Aaron Burr married a daughter of Jonathan Edwards, the celebrated divine who succeeded him in the presidential chair of the College of New Jersey. Joseph Shippen, Jr., while a college student at Newark, wrote to his father in Philadelphia on the 6th of July, 1752, saying, "Mr. Burr on the last of May made a journey into New England, and during his absence made a visit of about three days to the Rev. Mr. Edwards' daughter at Stockbridge, in which short time, though he had no acquaintance with, nor indeed, had even seen the lady these six years, I suppose he accomplished his whole design; for it was not above a fortnight before he sent a young fellow, who came out of college last fall, into New England to conduct her and her mother down here. They came to town on Saturday, the 27th ult., and on the Monday evening following the nuptial ceremonies were celebrated between Mr. Burr and the young lady." The writer goes on to say that he thinks Miss Edwards a person of great beauty, but rather too young for the president. She was then twenty-one while Mr. Burr had reached his thirty-seventh year.



We shall not be much out of the way in classing the college at that time with grammar schools of the present day, as many of the pupils of such schools are now familiar with studies of which even the names were unknown to the Princeton lads of the last century. Students under the presidency of Aaron Burr, or even of Doctor Stanhope Smith, would have been aghast at much of the required and elective work of the present curriculum. "Ologies" were largely unknown; metaphysics, psychology, biology, and even applied chemistry were not thought of, and the course of studies was mostly confined to those that would now be considered fundamental. Even college presidents of the early days had but a limited knowledge of what would now be included in a broad education; their most pronounced strength lay in the direction of polemic and didactic theology. The Reverend W. W. Blauvelt, the late *emeritus* pastor of Lamington Presbyterian church of Somerset county, at the time of his recent death was the oldest graduate of another New Jersey college—Rutgers. He was of the class of 1814, having received his degree when only fourteen years old. In some interesting reminiscences published by him a few years ago, he speaks as follows of the head of Rutgers' faculty:—

Our venerable President (Dr. Livingston) remarked in my presence: "The chemists talk of their oxygen and nitrogen and hydrogen. Fools, fools! what do they know about it? After all it is nothing but *matter*." This aged father found it difficult to admit that there had been any advance in science since the time when, sixty years before, he completed his course at the University of Leyden in Holland.

Speaking of Doctor Blauvelt having graduated at the age of fourteen brings to mind the fact that in the olden time the course was short at Princeton. Among its students we find that Doctor Benjamin Rush, of the class of 1760, graduated at fifteen; Aaron Burr, our country's third vice-president, of the class of 1772, at sixteen; Adjutant-General Joseph Reed, whose local knowledge contributed so greatly to Washington's success at the battle of Princeton, of the class of 1757, graduated at sixteen; and "Light-Horse Harry Lee," of the class of 1774, at seventeen. In fact, most students of the last century, and even early in the present one, received their parchments at an age when now they would be but thinking of matriculation.

A third event that especially marks the year 1779 in New Jersey's Revolutionary history is the noted raid of the Queen's Rangers in October through Middlesex and Somerset counties. In cleverness of conception and in rapidity and dash of execution this military enterprise was considered by both armies as being among the most brilliant of the war. The germ or nucleus of this command is to be found in a corps of partisan rangers, half hunters, half woodsmen, who were held in high repute in colonial times. Their first commander was Major Robert Rogers of New Hampshire, and under him they performed many arduous and valuable services on the French and English fighting-ground between Ticonderoga and Crown Point. This officer disciplined his men until they were equally at home in the open country or on forest trails, in whaleboats, canoes, or on snowshoes, in civilized or in savage warfare. He was thoroughly versed in all the arts of woodcraft, his endurance and fearless bravery were phenomenal, and until the Revolution he and his rangers were never mentioned without honor. \*

After the victory of Wolfe at Quebec, the capitulation of the French and the surrender of all Canada Rogers was given command of the expedition that was sent to the west to take possession of those outposts on the extreme frontier where still floated the lilies of France. While on this hazardous journey, at the present site of Cleveland, the English for the first time met the savage warrior Pontiac, whose conspiracy a few years later made famous.

At the breaking out of the Revolution Rogers, adhering to the Crown, was commissioned a major and authorized to raise a corps of hussars and infantry, to be called the Queen's American Rangers. He procured his men mainly from among the refugees of New York and Connecticut, and did excellent service during the early part of the war. In 1777 he resigned and went to England. While there, he was appointed, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, to the command of the King's Rangers, another refugee corps. Among the officers in this second body of rangers were several

---

\* Rogers' Rock on Lake George derives its name from this partisan soldier. During the French war, one day—so runs the story—after performing prodigies of valor, he escaped from a pursuing party of Indians by sliding on snowshoes down its precipitous side to the frozen lake below.

renegade Jersey men, including that Captain John Hatfield who, it is supposed, so cruelly hung the poor butcher, Ball, at Bergen Point, and Lieutenant Richard Lippencott, the dastard who certainly did hang Captain Joshua Huddy in 1782, near Sandy Hook. When Rogers resigned from the Queen's Rangers, John Graves Simcoe, a brave young officer of the 40th British regiment of foot, who had distinguished himself at the battle of Brandywine, applied for and received the command, with the rank of major. The Queen's Rangers under his control was always in the advance or on the flank of the British army and became the most efficient legionary corps in the English service; its men won laurels for themselves and their young commander in many well-conducted raids and brilliant actions. Simcoe, who was soon promoted to be a lieutenant-colonel, was ever on the alert; he infused into his men his own spirit of tireless energy, and Sir Henry Clinton, in one of his reports to his government, asserts that the rangers within three years after this dashing young officer had taken command, killed, or made prisoners, twice their own number.

Simcoe was born in 1753, and at an early age passed through Eton and Oxford with much honor. Though a student who always stood foremost among his fellows, his aspirations were ever in the direction of a military life, and when but nineteen years old he was commissioned an ensign in the army. He continued to be a most diligent student; it is said that Tacitus and Xenophon were his companions in camp, and that few retired scholars read more than did this officer, even when employed on the most active duties. He rapidly rose to a high rank, and died a lieutenant-general at the age of fifty-four years, after having enjoyed many titles and preferments—among others that of governor-general of Canada. Simcoe was an honest fighter and a good hater, and never outgrew his antipathy to anything and everything American. In his orders he did not hesitate to characterize his foes as a "mean and despicable enemy," and his journal, though published by himself long after the war, invariably speaks of the American army as "the rebels," and its commander-in-chief as "Mr. Washington." Many years later, when he was ruling Canada, the Duke of Rochefoucault-Liancourt wrote of him as follows:—



But for this inveterate hatred against the United States, which he too loudly professes, and which carries him too far, General Simcoe appears in the most advantageous light. He is just, active, enlightened, brave, frank, and possesses the confidence of the country, of the troops, and of all those who join him in the administration of public affairs.

It was on the morning of the twenty-sixth of October that this famous raid of the Queen's Rangers through the Raritan valley occurred. Its object is said to have been two-fold,—the capture of Governor Livingston, whom Simcoe had been falsely informed was staying with Philip Van Horne at "Phil's Hill"—Middlebrook; and the destruction of fifty large flat-boats which he had been told were at Van Veghten's bridge, on their way to the army. These boats had been built on the Delaware by Washington's orders so as to be ready to aid in an attack on New York city which he was then meditating. They held seventy men each, and had been hauled across country on wheels to the Raritan. Simcoe's plan was to move with his cavalry with great expedition from Amboy to Bound Brook and Van Veghten's bridge; and then hastily return on the opposite side of the Raritan. When nearing New Brunswick he purposed bearing off to the south, in the hopes of being able to entice the militia and others, that by this time might be following him, into an ambuscade near the South river, where a supporting force of his infantry were to lie in wait for the expected victims.

To execute this purpose Major Richard Armstrong, who commanded the foot, was despatched to South Amboy, from which place he was directed to march with haste and in silence six miles to the bridge crossing South river, the point where his troops were to await in ambush the arrival of the cavalry with, it was hoped, the Jersey militia in pursuit. Colonel Simcoe, with a mounted force of about eighty picked men, had expected to embark at Billop's-point, Staten Island, for Perth Amboy early on the night of the twenty-fifth, but owing to the lateness of the hour at which his bateaux arrived it was six in the morning before he was fairly on the march. Major Armstrong, with the foot, who had crossed with Simcoe in order to guard the approaches to the town, then re-embarked for South Amboy. The raiding column embraced forty-six men of the Ranger hussars, twenty-two of the Buck's light dragoons, (a Pennsylvania refugee corps), commanded by Captain Sandford, and a few guides and volunteers,

under Lieutenant James Stewart. This last officer was a loyalist Jerseyman, and well known and hated in Middlesex and Somerset as "Tory Jim."

Simcoe moved with great rapidity through Piscataway township to Quibbletown—New Market—taking pains on the way to impress everyone met with the idea that his force was a body of Americans. This he was the better able to do because the uniform of his command differed but little from that of Lee's legion, the men wearing green coatees, leather breeches, and cocked hats bound with white braid. Indeed, Lee, who greatly admired Simcoe, says in his memoirs that the colonel, with the most successful audacity, stopped during the march at a depot of forage, and announced to the commissary that his force was the Virginia light-horse. He drew the forage he needed, paying the customary vouchers therefor, signing them in the name of Lee's quartermaster. Before reaching Quibbletown one Justice Crow was overtaken, whom the colonel, in order to make him believe that the raiders were from Washington's army, charged with being a tory: to further the belief the justice for a time was carried along, under guard, with the detachment, notwithstanding the protestations of the countryman that he had "only been a-sparkin'."

A short halt was made at the Quibbletown tavern, ostensibly to look for tories; then the troopers hurried on to Bound Brook where they rested for a little while at a public house kept by Peter Harpending, and afterwards known as the Frelinghuysen tavern. It stood on the main street where is now the store and dwelling of B. B. Matthews. Its boniface was a stanch patriot and was one of the men of Somerset whom the Howes stigmatised as "arch-traitors," and excepted from the general amnesty offered in 1776. This was not the first appearance of the Queen's Rangers in Bound Brook. An affidavit made in 1782, by the widow of Ennis Graham, shows that on the nineteenth of December, 1776, this partisan corps suddenly dashed into the village under the guidance of George H. Fisher, a tory refugee. Among the other inhabitants who suffered at their hands was her husband, who was robbed of cash, watches, and jewelry. A few days later he went to New Brunswick hoping to obtain some satisfaction from British headquarters; his satisfaction proved to be the further loss

of the fine horse he rode, which was taken from him "for his majesty's service."

On leaving Bound Brook Colonel Simcoe, having secured a guide in a country lad, made his way up the heights toward Chimney Rock, to Washington's camp of the year before. According to an account published in "Rivington's Gazette" by a junior officer accompanying the expedition it was intended to destroy the huts and buildings, but on learning that they had been sold to some of the inhabitants the colonel decided to leave them standing. The raiders' next stop was at Philip Van Horne's, Middlebrook, where they were disappointed at not finding Governor Livingston. Here, in lieu of nobler game, they captured a captain, a lieutenant, and another person, who being sick were placed under parole. The troops then continued their march to Van Veghten's bridge, on the Raritan. The greater part of the boats they expected to find there had been sent forward, but, with hand-grenades brought for the purpose, they destroyed eighteen that were left, together with their traveling carriages, an ammunition wagon, some harness, and a quantity of forage and stores. Here they committed what the Reverend Doctor Messler characterizes as a barbarous action—the burning of the Dutch Reformed church building. Simcoe, in his report of the raid, excused this act by saying that the "Dutch Meeting"—as he termed it—had been converted into a forage depot, and that a rifle shot was fired at the soldiers from the opposite side of the river. Messler insists that this is not true; asserting that he was informed by a creditable eye-witness that the only forage was the ropes and tackle used in bringing the boats from the Delaware; that the shot was from a young man "out shooting pigeons," who, at a distance of six hundred feet, to alarm the dragoons discharged his fowling-piece, and then ran off to escape capture.

The rangers were not over one hour at Van Veghten's bridge; they then crossed the Raritan and pushed on to Hillsborough—Millstone. There they burned the Somerset court-house, after first releasing from jail three loyalist prisoners, one of them, according to Simcoe's report, being a dreadful spectacle; "he appeared to have been almost starved and was chained to the floor." This county building stood about twelve rods west of



the present bridge over the Millstone. While burning, its flames ignited and consumed the near-by dwellings of William Cocks and Cornelius Lott, the latter being valued, according to its owner's affidavit, at six hundred and twenty pounds ten shillings and eleven pence. By this time the country people were up in arms and the militia gathering, so the column was soon again in motion. Filing to the east it crossed the river and hurried along the Amwell road in the direction of New Brunswick. Simcoe's plan was, on reaching the dwelling of Garret Voorhees, which was supposed to be standing at the corner of a cross-road leading into the Princeton road, to turn to the right and make his way rapidly to the South river, where he hoped to pilot his pursuers into the ambushade. Both he and his guide kept a bright lookout for the house which was to mark the diverging road. Unhappily for the success of the expedition they were neither of them aware that this was one of the many buildings that the British had wantonly destroyed when they retreated from Millstone, in June, 1777. Consequently the rangers passed this cross-road at a sharp trot without recognizing it, and were within two miles of New Brunswick before the error was known.

During the early part of the march of this command its character had not been discovered, but on reaching Quibbletown some one at the tavern recognized Colonel Simcoe. A messenger was at once dispatched to New Brunswick, whereupon Colonel John Neilson moved with his regiment—the 2d Middlesex militia—to Raritan Landing, where the smoke from the burning buildings at Millstone announced the position of the enemy. Had Neilson crossed the river, with but little doubt the raiding column would have been either captured or destroyed; but he, thinking that the rangers must re-embark where they had landed in the morning, remained on the Middlesex side to oppose their passage of the bridge. Meanwhile he sent forward Captain Moses Guest with thirty-five men to harass the foe on the march. This officer, on reaching a point where the narrow Amwell road was flanked by thick woods, ambushed his men and awaited the coming of the enemy. The British colonel's situation had now grown distressing. He well knew that his guide was at fault and had missed the cross-road; shots were popping on his flanks, a Captain Voorhees, with some militia horsemen, was pressing on

his rear, and he was in great concern over possible ambuscades in front. When the wood was reached where Guest and his men lay concealed, Simcoe, who was riding in advance with the guide, was fearful that it contained an ambushed enemy. On discovering an opening in the fence he wheeled his horse, intending to lead his men to the right, and thus avoid the possible danger. Just then, as he said in his report, he heard the words "Now! Now!" and knew nothing more until he found himself a prisoner in the hands of the Americans. A sudden fusillade had killed his horse with five bullets, and stretched him on the ground, stunned by the violence of the fall. His troopers, being on the canter, swept by without discovering that it was intended to leave the highway. The timber was too dense to admit of charging the enemy, so the rangers pushed on through the woods, in open files, receiving a volley from the militia which killed one man, and wounded three others and some horses.

The command now devolved on Captain Sandford of the Bucks county troop, who, supposing the colonel to be killed, continued toward New Brunswick at an increasing pace. The raiders found themselves in a critical situation. The mounted force hanging on their rear were increasing in numbers, and the militiamen in their front were rapidly multiplying to oppose their further advance. But the desire of the rangers was to avoid, not to enter, New Brunswick, so, on reaching a point within the present city limits where Town lane and George's road come together, Captain Sandford suddenly faced about his squadron and charged the pursuers, putting them to flight. Their leader, Captain Peter V. Voorhees, in attempting to break through a fence became entangled, and was so cut and slashed by the troopers' sabres that he died in a few hours. The killing of this officer was considered by the Americans little less than a murder, as he was wholly in the enemy's hands and incapable of resistance. Captain Voorhees' death was greatly lamented; he was a brother-in-law of Colonel Neilson of New Brunswick, and a gallant officer of the continental line, having entered the service in 1775 as a second-lieutenant in New Jersey's first establishment of troops. Since November, 1777, he had commanded a company in Colonel Matthias Ogden's 1st Regiment of the New Jersey line, with which he had just made

the campaign under General Sullivan against the Six Nations. He was on leave, and was to have been married on the following day—indeed, it is said that he was on his way to visit his *fiancee* when he came upon a party of militia in pursuit of the Queen's Rangers, and put himself at their head.

Captain Sandford's anxiety was now to reach his body of supporting infantry, so, as recounted in the before quoted junior officer's report of the expedition, in order to delude the enemy in his front he marched to the left as if intending to enter New Brunswick. The Americans in front then pushed to their right, in order to check a retreat in that direction. Whereupon the rangers, taking advantage of that move, retraced their steps and with a sharp gallop gained the left flank of the Jerseymen, and thus made their escape in the direction of South river. Before four o'clock in the afternoon Captain Sandford with his cavalry had joined Major Armstrong and the foot at the bridge, and that night the combined forces crossed from South Amboy to Staten Island. There was some little skirmishing on the way with small parties of militia, without much result; there were wounds given on both sides; one hussar—Molloy—was killed, and two Americans made prisoners. Although the expedition failed in drawing the militia into the ambuscade, the exploit, altogether, reflected great credit on the British arms, and but for the loss of Simcoe it would have been considered brilliantly successful. At least sixty miles of hostile country were passed over with the loss of but few men, about thirty prisoners were secured, much property destroyed, and many bad horses exchanged for good ones taken from the prisoners and the country people.

When Simcoe's horse was shot from under him, and he fell stunned to the ground, Doctor Messler says that he would have been killed had not James Schureman, of New Brunswick, saved his life by thrusting aside the bayonet of a militia private who lunged at him with murderous intent. Others claim that it was Jonathan Ford Morris, a young medical student, who so deftly averted the soldier's blow. He it was, at least, who propped the British colonel against a tree, bled him until restored to consciousness, and bestowed on him other medical and friendly attentions. Morris was at this time but nineteen years old, having one year



before resigned a lieutenancy in Procter's artillery regiment. He entered the army at the early age of sixteen and served with merit as a private, surgeon's mate and lieutenant; his love of country, or of adventure, had led him to march with the militia as a volunteer when they set off from New Brunswick on that October day to check the progress of the Queen's Rangers. After the war he became a popular and successful physician and surgeon, settling first at Bound Brook, and later at Somerville where he died in 1810. Colonel Simcoe was ever grateful to Doctor Morris for his services on this occasion, and, when governor-general of Canada, wrote him urging that he should remove to the British Possessions in order to receive substantial proof of an Englishman's gratitude. But Morris was unwilling to exchange his flag and fealty in order to secure personal favor and advancement.

It is always both curious and interesting to observe the relation existing between events and consequences. As to the former we are prone to reach immediate and often false conclusions, for it is only in the light of subsequent years that their true value can be ascertained. Had Colonel Simcoe magnanimously spared the "Dutch meeting," and the court-house at Hillsborough it is not impossible that to-day there would be no Somerville, or at least that that town would not now flourish as the county-seat of Somerset. The people of Bridgewater township, therefore, can at the present time reflect with equanimity upon the devastations perpetrated during this famous raid. But when these two most valued buildings in the community were burned, the loss was considered most grievous. This is especially true as to the destruction of the Dutch house of worship; for over half a century it had been the rallying point for the religious and social interests of a majority of the citizens. Here they and their fathers had gathered to listen to that inspired Holland worthy, Theodorus Jacobus Frelinghuysen, and to his no less beloved son, John; here they had brought their children to be baptized, and here under the sods surrounding its walls lay two generations of their dead.

Being without a church building had a most baneful influence upon the cause of religion, and, together with the evil effects produced by the war, produced a low condition of morals that

was most hurtful to the community. Owing to the poverty of the times it was several years before the congregation could provide a respectable edifice for church services. A temporary structure was secured at the joint expense of the county freeholders and the church consistory, by moving up from Camp Middlebrook to the present site of Somerville a log building that had been used by the army for court-martial and other purposes. This served as a court and church building until 1784 when, after much discussion as to the locality most available for establishing the county town, a log court-house was built about twelve rods east of the present structure. In 1798 the present court-house was erected, and three years later we have the first official record of the name, Somerville. In 1784 it was resolved at a public meeting that a new church edifice should be built, and a subscription list was started in which it was permitted subscribers to indicate whether their preferences were for the new location, then called Tunison's tavern, or the old one at Van Veghten's bridge. The building of the new court-house had insured the nucleus of a population at the former place, consequently, the majority of the subscribers favoring Somerset court-house, the new church was there built, and completed in 1788—a brick structure, by far the most substantial in the county. Doctor Messler records that, though many alterations and additions have been made, the building remains essentially the same as when erected—now one hundred years ago.





## CHAPTER XXXIV.

### *The Cold Winter of 1780—Washington's Army Again in Morristown—Varied and Interesting Camp Experiences—Fighting at Connecticut Farms and Springfield.*

A work of this character necessarily covers periods of time devoid of interest. This particularly applies to those parts chronicling the affairs of the occupants of the "Old Stone House." It is hardly to be supposed that their daily experiences could at all times have been so replete with incidents as to add to the weight of this narrative. During these days of Revolutionary turmoil the current of domestic life in this dwelling flowed peacefully on in sober comfort, for within its walls was an orderly and a cheerful household, where love and duty kindly blended, and where each day's busy hours wore away in the homely toils and pleasures usual with farm families. Aaron's children now numbered five,—the final complement,—Margaret having been born on the twenty-second of December, 1767, and Maria, on the twenty-fourth of March, 1771. John, who had long ere this been released from the clutches of the British, was again off soldiering, this time with the continental line. Daniel, now a sturdy boy of sixteen, was aiding his father in the tannery and on the farm, and educating himself so as to eventually become an able man of business and his father's partner. Two of the girls were old enough to take upon themselves much of the cares of indoors; and, doubtless, as was the custom with farmer's daughters, waited each night at the bars, with clinking pails and wooden stools, while the motherly brown cows came lowing up the lane, with big depending bags ready to give down the milky torrents. War-times naturally brought privations and some discomforts, but there were compensations, not only in the increased value



given to farm and tannery products, but in the many excitements that ruled the hour, which it is reasonable to suppose must have given added zest to the ordinarily quiet life of this rural community. Later on it is not improbable that we shall find material in the daily routine of this family's existence that will make interesting reading; but before again taking up such homely topics we must wait until camps and their influences have disappeared from the neighborhood. Just now we will turn once more to the continental army, which is to spend this winter and spring—1780—on the northeast border of Somerset.

"Gaine's Mercury" announced on the sixth of December that, with the exception of a number of Eastern men to be hutted on the east side of the North river under the command of Gates, and a garrison of twelve hundred left at West Point, "all the army are marching down the country in divisions under their proper generals, supposed for Morris county." This journal was right as to the destination of the troops. Early in December the army went into winter quarters between Morristown and Mendham, Washington establishing himself at the residence of the widow of Colonel Jacob Ford, on the Newark turnpike—now the "Washington Headquarters." Her family gave up all of the building excepting two rooms, but as the general's household comprised eighteen persons he was much inconvenienced for want of space. He wrote to Greene, who was still quartermaster-general, in January, complaining of his contracted quarters, saying:—"all Mrs. Ford's family are crowded together in her kitchen, and scarce one of them able to talk for colds they have caught." This resulted in a small log kitchen being attached to the east end of the mansion, and a larger log house being erected which furnished offices for the commander-in-chief, his aides and secretaries. The life guard were barracked in fifty rude huts that were set up in a triangular bit of meadow just east of the dwelling, from where, in case of alarm, the house could in a few moments be reached and surrounded.

Washington's first letter after the establishment of the camp was dated the seventh of December; in it he recites that "the main army lies within three or four miles of the town." The exact location was on Kimball Hill about four miles southwest of Morristown, midway between, and on a crossroad leading from,

the roads running to Basking Ridge and to Mendham. About one thousand acres were occupied, embracing properties then known as the Kimball and Wicks' farms, a portion of the latter now being owned by Samuel B. Axtell. The Wicks dwelling is still extant, and serves as an excellent example of colonial farm architecture. "Kimball Hill" commands extensive views ranging from Schooley's mountain on the west to the Short Hills on the east, and from the New York Highlands on the north to the heights above the Raritan on the south. The encampment was pitched on this commanding elevation because of its being a natural watch-tower, enabling the army to be ever on the alert against surprise or invasion. During each night men were constantly scanning the horizon to discover the first tongue of flame leaping heavenward from any of the many beacons that were planted on the spurs of the encircling hills between the Delaware, Hudson, and Shrewsbury. During the day, in case of an alarm, signal guns were fired from the beacon-posts. The cannon that oftenest had occasion to shriek warnings from its iron throat became historically known as the "Old Sow;" it was an eighteen-pounder set up at the beacon-post on the Short Hills just back of Springfield.

However advantageous Kimball Hill may have been in a military sense it proved a very bleak and inhospitable camping ground, and it was not long before some of the line officers of the army were making unfavorable comparisons between this exposed situation and the warm, near-by Lowantica valley that had sheltered the encampment of three years before. The weather this winter was in extraordinary contrast to the mildness of the preceding one; the cold was the severest ever known in the colonies, and the snow fell almost continuously from the tenth of November until far into March. The Lower bay, New York bay and Hudson river were equally firm as the land, and people crossed Long Island sound from Connecticut to Lloyd's Neck, a distance of twelve miles, as if on a prairie. The ice of New York bay was thick enough to enable two hundred sleigh-loads of provisions, drawn by two horses each and escorted by two hundred cavalry, to cross from New York to Staten Island. The Raritan river was frozen solid for four months, during which time its surface was more used as a thoroughfare for teams than were the highways on its banks.

In January the Somerset militia were called out—not to fight the king of England—this time the enemy was the king of storms, for on the night of the third the greatest body of snow fell known during the war. The whole face of the country lay buried from three to five feet deep; roads, fences and frozen streams were obliterated, and, as the storm had been accompanied by a very high wind, in places the drifts were piled ten to twelve feet high. The army on Kimball Hill suffered severely, as the weather was intensely cold. Thacher tells that officers were almost smothered in the snow because of the collapsing of their tents by the high winds; and, to quote another witness and sufferer: "No man could endure the violence of the storm many minutes without danger of his life." The roads being blocked, great difficulty was experienced in procuring fuel and supplies, and the army was on the point of disbanding for want of provisions. So it was that the militia were called upon to break the roads from Morristown to Hackensack on the north, and to Princeton on the south. In addition, the people were requested to come to the aid of the militia with their teams. Greene wrote to Colonel Hathaway:—

The roads must be kept open by the inhabitants or the army cannot be subsisted; and unless good people immediately lend assistance to forward supplies the army must starve. The dreadful consequences of such an event I will not torture your feelings with a description of; but remember, the surrounding inhabitants will experience the first melancholy effects of such a raging evil. \* \* \* You will call to your aid the overseers of highways and every other order of men who can give despatch and success to the business.

Notwithstanding the aid furnished by militia and inhabitants in breaking the roads, such a great body of snow paralyzed all arteries of travel, and the army was soon in an extremity for provisions. Washington was forced to levy on the inhabitants for cattle, flour and grain. He called upon the magistrates of the respective counties to undertake the business of relieving the distresses of the troops; taking care at the same time to notify them that a force had been detailed to impress the necessary supplies, should the people fail to voluntarily alleviate the sufferings of the men. The commanders of the forces were directed to show great tenderness toward the inhabitants in case such extreme measures became necessary; care was to be taken that families should not be deprived of their milch cows, or of



needed subsistence. The necessity for a recourse to severity happily did not arise, as the sympathies of the people were at once enlisted, and relief was afforded without delay or indecision.

The distressing situation of the army was not altogether due to the transportation of supplies being obstructed by the uncommon rigor of the weather. The depreciation of the currency had increased to an alarming extent. Congress had made continental paper legal tender for debts, however contracted; but its value steadily decreased, until by 1780 it was almost impossible to determine how much paper money represented one Spanish milled dollar, which at that time was the unit of value. Credit was thus prostrated and the commissaries found themselves without a current purchasing medium with which to secure adequate supplies. In looking over old files of that time it is interesting to observe the ruling prices in continental money. In 1779 a horse was sold at Camp Middlebrook for six hundred dollars currency that had been offered for eighty silver dollars. A year later paper values had so much more decreased that a mare of eleven years sold at a vendue held in February, 1780, for eight hundred and five pounds. At the same auction a frying-pan brought twenty-five pounds; a wood-saw, thirty-seven pounds, ten shillings; three rusty bone-handle knives and forks, twenty-two pounds, ten shillings; an old eight-day clock in a walnut case, two hundred and fifty pounds; fifty sheaves of oats eighty pounds, and other sales were made in like proportion.

Notwithstanding that at this time the troops were in a deplorable condition as to provisions and clothing, Washington was not willing to let pass an apparently opportune moment for striking a blow at the enemy on Staten Island. The frost had converted the Kills into a solid bridge. On the afternoon of the fourteenth of January a detachment of foot and artillery set out from the Morristown parade on sleds to reinforce the brigade lying at Elizabethtown. Early on the fifteenth the party, twenty-five hundred strong, commanded by Lord Stirling, crossed at De Hart's point and marched on the enemy's works. The enterprise proved a failure. The British garrison having been strongly reinforced an assault was not attempted; after some skirmishing the Americans retired, bringing with them a few prisoners, the casualties being not many on either side. Ten

days later the British made a return visit to the Jersey shore, their enterprise being crowned with more success than had the Americans' sally on Staten Island. At midnight on the twenty-fifth of January about four hundred infantry and one hundred dragoons, commanded by the tory Lieutenant-Colonel Buskirk, crossed on the ice at Trembly's point and surprised Elizabethtown. Four officers and about sixty privates were captured, the inhabitants were plundered, and the court-house and the Presbyterian church burned. The same night a small party attacked Newark with equal success, burning the academy.

Human nature is ever the same. Many a brave Englishman prepared for death at Waterloo by dancing the night before at the Duchess of Richmond's ball. So it was with our Revolutionary soldiers—recreations must be had even in the face of the most adverse circumstances. Early in the winter subscription balls, or assemblies, were established at Morristown, Washington and his leading generals heading the subscription list. As was usual with each annual encampment there was a fair sprinkling of ladies with the army. Mrs. Washington arrived before the first of the year, having passed through Trenton on the twenty-eighth of December, where a troop of horse paraded in her honor; Mrs. Greene and Mrs. Knox were in camp, and many other ladies had joined their husbands. General Greene's second son, Nathanael, was born at this encampment. This fledgeling of turbulent war times, whose genesis was horizoned by the hills of Morris, was destined to live eighty useful years, and to be the father of the general's biographer, Professor George W. Greene.

A young lady reached Morristown during the winter whose arrival created a flutter in camp society, especially among the young men surrounding headquarters. It was Miss Betsey Schuyler, who came to visit her friend, the wife of Doctor Cochran who occupied a cottage in the village. This physician was one of the best known men in the army, his cheery nature and abundant good humor securing for him hosts of friends. From April, 1777, he had been surgeon-general in the general hospital, and in October, 1780, he was taken into Washington's military family, being appointed chief physician and surgeon to the army. Elizabeth Schuyler was the second daughter of General

Philip Schuyler, who, having recently resigned from the army, had on the sixteenth of November taken his seat in congress as delegate from New York. She was a beauty and a belle, very small and delicately formed, with an oval face and bewitching black eyes. Colonel Tench Tilghman, on meeting her for the first time, described her as being :—

A brunette, with the most good-natured lively dark eyes that I ever saw, which threw a beam of good temper and benevolence over her entire countenance.

This handsome staff-officer was just then proof against her fascinations, being no longer fancy free. His affections were already enlisted in the direction of his cousin, Anna Maria Tilghman, whom he had met for the first time a few months before while on a furlough, and who subsequently became his wife. It was not so, however, with his brother staff-officer, the distinguished Colonel Hamilton, who succumbed at once to the attractions of this imperious little beauty. Their friendship quickly grew into a sweeter bondage ; anon the god of war lost that first place he had held so long in the interests of the young soldier ; rugged Mars made way for the gentler god, who soon guided the barque of these young people—freighted with their new affections—into the safe harbor of matrimony.

On the nineteenth of April the Chevalier de la Luzerne, who had succeeded Gerard as minister from France, and Don Juan de Miralles, whose acquaintance we made at Camp Middlebrook, with their suites, arrived at headquarters on a visit. They were received with great honors ; salvos of artillery were fired, and a brilliant escort of officers and orderlies was sent to meet them at the Somerset county line. Out of compliment to these distinguished guests, on the twenty-fourth four brigades of the army were paraded in review. The ceremonies began with the discharge of thirteen cannon, whereupon, as a witness recites :—

The foreign officers entered the field mounted on elegant horses, which with General Washington, the general officers of our army with their aides and servants, formed a most splendid cavalcade, which attracted the attention of a vast concourse of spectators.

A reviewing stand had been erected, upon which were seated Governor Livingston, his wife and daughters, as well as many



gentlemen and ladies of distinction from different parts of the country. The generals and guests received the review mounted, and then from the grand-stand witnessed the evolutions of the brigades. In the evening there was an exhibition of fireworks, after which the excitements and pleasures of the day terminated with a grand ball, which was long talked of as one of the most noted of New Jersey's social events.

One of the guests for whom all this display had been prepared was unable to be present. Don Juan de Miralles, the Spanish envoy, on this all-important day was tossing with fever in one of the upper chambers of the Ford mansion. He grew rapidly worse, and four days later, to the great consternation and regret of his hosts, died. His funeral on the following day was literally attended by thousands of persons, the procession of soldiers and civilians on foot, which included General Washington and several members of congress, extended for a mile. While the funeral cortege with its vast escort moved, with solemn slowness to the music of muffled drums, from headquarters to the Presbyterian burying-ground, minute guns were fired, and every military honor accorded to the remains of the distinguished stranger. A Spanish priest recited the Roman Catholic service for the dead at the grave, the details of the burial being attended with much pomp and ceremony. Lest some predatory soldier should be tempted to dig for hidden treasure a guard was left in the churchyard. This was considered necessary because of the Spanish dignitary having been buried in full regalia. He was arrayed for interment in a scarlet coat embroidered with heavy gold lace; a three-cornered gold-laced hat and a well curled wig were on his head, and a costly gold watch, set with diamonds, in his pocket; diamond rings were on his fingers, and several rich seals depended from his watch guard. Surgeon Thatcher recites that the body was laid out in a coffin covered with rich black velvet ornamented in a superb manner. This leads one to wonder where in so short a space of time such burial magnificence could have been procured.

It is not surprising that the soldiers should have inwardly protested against so much of value being placed under ground with the dead, when live men, serving their country, were in sorest need of the merest necessities. Although the response made by the citizens in January to Washington's appeal had

saved the army from the immediate danger of starving or disbanding, it had very far from ended the sufferings of the soldiers. Throughout the winter and spring the privations and want almost equalled the unhappy experiences of the memorable encampment at Valley Forge. For weeks the men were on half rations, often without meat, often without bread, much of the time nearly frozen for need of blankets and clothing. Frequently the horses were destitute of forage, and the hospital had neither sugar, coffee, tea, wine nor liquors. The military chest was empty and the army was unpaid for five months; even when the soldiers received their pay, owing to the diminished value of government money it was of but little avail. As previously mentioned a memorial of a few months before from the Jersey line to the legislature showed that four months' pay of a private would not procure a bushel of wheat, that the pay of a colonel would not keep his horse in oats, and that a common laborer, whose wages were in hard money, received four times as much as an American officer. The memorial further urged, "that unless a speedy and ample remedy was provided the total dissolution of their line was inevitable," and in conclusion it said, "that their pay should either be made up in Mexican dollars or in something equivalent."

Under such a tide of misfortunes it speaks well for the discipline and temper of the men that they, when so destitute of every comfort, neither inaugurated a war of plunder on the inhabitants nor deserted to the enemy. At this time the American camp was flooded with circulars calling upon the men to fly from sickness, famine, and nakedness to the British army, where they would be received with open arms, and fed, clothed, and paid. Upon Washington fell the embarrassments and responsibilities of this time. The citizens looked upon him as their protector from the marauding of an impoverished and a famished soldiery, while the army relied upon him for provisions. To satisfy both was no small undertaking; but Washington seemed equal even to such an emergency. He not only guarded the interests of the inhabitants but retained the army in service, and preserved the affections of his soldiers. To secure order and subordination great firmness was necessary, and sometimes he was forced to resort to severe punishments. One unhappy

day in May eight soldiers, who had been court-martialed for thievery, desertion, and other crimes, were brought in carts to the gallows for execution. After being addressed by the chaplain as to the wickedness of their lives and the justice of their sentences, they were placed under the fatal beam on one scaffold, halters about their necks, their coffins on the ground before them, and their open graves in plain view. When the condemned with their eyes bandaged were groaning and appealing to Heaven in their extremity, and the thousands of spectators stood in awe-stricken expectation of momentarily beholding their final agonies, an officer suddenly rode forward and read the commander-in-chief's reprieve of seven of the culprits. It would be impossible to describe the emotion of the pardoned; weak and agitated by the excitements of the occasion, it was almost necessary to carry them from the scaffold. After they had somewhat recovered, the chaplain urged them to remember the awful fate they had escaped by the clemency of the general, and begged that their future lives might in consequence be devoted to a faithful discharge of duty.

The one poor wretch remaining to be executed was a brave fellow, and, before starting on his journey alone, addressed the soldiers, urging them to take warning by his fate and to be true to their duties and country. The offense for which he suffered was that of forging discharges, whereby he and over one hundred men had escaped from service. When the fatal moment had arrived he placed the noose about his neck, himself, and adjusted the knot, at the same time protesting that the halter was not strong enough to bear his weight. When swung off, the rope broke and the unhappy man was dashed on the ground and much bruised. On mounting the scaffold again he cried out:—"I told you the rope was not strong enough, do get a stronger one!" A new halter was procured, and upon a second attempt being made he was successfully launched into eternity. The admonition of the chaplain had no effect upon one of the reprieved soldiers, for on the sixteenth of June the hardened wretch was hung for deserting to the enemy.

And so, with the varied experiences of happiness and misery, incidental to camp as well as to ordinary life, the spring wore on to early summer. In May the entire continental troops con-



sisted of seven thousand men, while in June Washington had but thirty-seven hundred and fifty with him at Morristown. This did not include Maxwell's Jersey brigade, which lay at Elizabethtown, and the militia, a considerable body of which was at the same place, under Colonel Dayton. During the winter Sir Henry Clinton, leaving von Knyphausen in command at New York, sailed southward with a large detachment of troops, and invested Charleston. After a prolonged defence, on the eleventh of May the garrison of three thousand under General Lincoln capitulated to a British force of nine thousand men. Including the adult inhabitants of the city the enemy secured five thousand prisoners, among them seven generals and two hundred and thirty-eight other officers. It was a severe blow to the American arms and added much to the depression of the public mind.

Owing to this loss, and to the discontent of Washington's army because of the lack of clothing and pay, the British were led to believe that the whole country, including citizens and troops, would welcome the royal standard, and, provided they felt sure of English support, would again give their fealty to the Crown. In order to foster this feeling and encourage disaffection the enemy landed in force on the sixth of June at Elizabethtown-point, intending to penetrate in the direction of Morristown. The invading troops were six thousand strong, composed of three divisions under Generals Sterling, Matthews and Tryon, with von Knyphausen in command. The column took up its line of march early on the morning of Wednesday the seventh, moving in closed ranks down what is now Elizabeth avenue. It was the flower of the British army, the celebrated Coldstream Guards being in one of the divisions. An eye-witness thus describes their appearance:—

In the van marched a squadron of dragoons, known as the Queen's Rangers, with drawn swords and glittering helmets, mounted on very large and beautiful horses. Then followed the infantry composed of English and Hessian troops, and every man, horsemen and foot, clad in new uniforms, complete in panoply, and gorgeous with burnished brass and polished steel.

This eye witness was in error as to the dragoons in the van being the "Queen's Rangers"—they were the "Queen's Own"—the same command to which Harcourt's troopers that captured General Lee belonged. The Rangers wore three-cornered

braided hats, but the "Queen's Own" were distinctive as being arrayed in polished helmets and rich uniforms.

Von Knyphausen expected to be met with open arms. Nor was he disappointed—at least not in fact, though perhaps in kind. His men were not fairly on the march before arms opened to them on every side. When the head of the column moving towards Elizabethtown reached where the Old and New Point roads divide, a small guard of militia fired and fled. General Sterling, who led the first division, was unhorsed and his thigh fractured. Just at sunrise the advance turned north into Broad street, filing again to the west on what is now Jersey street. Marching down this then country road the foreign host crossed the present line of the Central railroad at where is now El Mora station, and so proceeded in good order by way of the Gallop Hill road to Connecticut Farms.

The welcome that the marching column received was a very different one from what had been anticipated. Puffs of smoke and the spatter of bullets greeted the soldiers from trees and hedges, and the citizens seemed relentlessly alert, ready to make targets of English grenadiers or of Hessian horse and foot. The conduct of the New Jersey militia was magnificent. General Irvine, in speaking of them in a letter to his wife on the eighteenth of June, said that they "not only turn out, but fight and die bravely defending their families." Soon the invading force was fearfully galled and so angered as to be ready to wreak vengeance on all things animate and inanimate. Dwellings, church, and people alike fell a prey to the frenzied soldiers; even a weak and unoffending woman was not safe from their vengeful slaughter. When the troops passed the parsonage at Connecticut Farms a red-coat jumped over the fence, and pointing his gun in an open window, fired two balls through the body of the wife of the Reverend James Caldwell, of the first Presbyterian church at Elizabethtown, stretching her dead on the floor. Mr. Caldwell had moved his family to the village, thinking that retired spot to be more secure from chance incursions of the enemy. The brutal murder of this estimable lady, who was the mother of nine little children, caused a great cry of horror to go up from the entire country, and served to greatly increase the feeling of hatred toward everything British.

The flames ignited by the invaders soon licked up this little village, including the church of the Presbyterian congregation, which had stood since 1730 as the first offshoot of the Elizabethtown church. When von Knyphausen crossed from Staten Island, the previous day, Maxwell with his brigade was at Elizabethtown, but on the landing of the enemy he retired to Connecticut Farms. At the same time notice of the enemy's approach was sent to Washington. Colonel Dayton had established a system of fleet-footed scouts, who, running rapidly one to the other, were able to quickly convey intelligence to Morristown. Clayton, in his "History of Union County," says that Mrs. Elizabeth Sayre, who died in 1850 in her ninety-second year, used to tell in her old age of having entertained, refreshed and comforted these weary runners in their hurried flight across the state; her homestead, on the corner of the Deanstown road in the valley below the Short Hills, is still standing. Washington, being thus apprised of the British movement, was early on the march, and late in the afternoon reinforced Maxwell. But during the day the Jersey brigade and the militia opposed the enemy with great stubbornness; first in the vicinity of the Farm's meeting-house, where they checked their advance for nearly three hours. The Americans then fell back slowly in the direction of Springfield, when a stand was made, an action following, which Maxwell, in a letter to "His Excellency Governor Livingston," characterized as the closest he had seen during the war. To quote from the general's letter:—

Never did troops, either continental or militia, behave better than ours did. Every one that had an opportunity—which they mostly all had—vied with each other who could serve the country most. In the latter part of the day the militia flocked from all quarters, and gave the enemy no respite till night closed the scene. At the middle of the night the enemy sneaked off and put their backsides to the Sound near Elizabethtown.

The doughty commandant of the Jersey line, in addressing "His Excellency," was not very choice in his language, but he fully explained the situation. Early in the day the British had learned that the royal standard was not to be a talisman with which to convert disloyalty into loyalty. The object of the expedition was plainly not to be attained, and, although wagons containing seven days' provisions had accompanied the march, it



was decided, after learning of Washington's coming up, to retreat to Elizabethtown. This was done under cover of the night, while the Americans lay on their arms expecting an engagement in the morning.

When the American army marched to Connecticut Farms in support of Maxwell, Mrs. Washington was left at Morristown with a temporary guard, commanded by Captain John Steele. This officer was a Pennsylvanian who, though but twenty-one years old, was already gray, due to the fact of his having laid for a long time on the field of Brandywine, far spent with loss of blood from a wound in his shoulder. His recovery was despaired of for many months, and when convalescent his hair blanched and his face failed to regain the ruddy hue of health. On the fourteenth of June, in a letter to his brother regarding his temporary command, he wrote:—

I am happy in the importance of my charge as well as in the presence of the most amiable woman on earth, whose character should I attempt to describe, I could not do justice to, but will only say that I think it unexceptionable.


One night during Washington's absence there was an alarm, and four members of congress, who were in camp in order to learn the needs of the army, joined Captain Steele's detachment as volunteers. In speaking of them, in his letter, the young officer expressed a wish that he had a company of congressmen for the next campaign, as it would surely result in the army's being better victualled;—to quote him:—

The rations they have consumed considerably overbalanced all their services done as volunteers, for they have dined with us every day since, almost, and drank as much wine as they would earn in six months.

Von Knyphausen with his royal detachment did not recross to Staten Island but remained behind intrenchments at the Point. While there, Sir Henry Clinton returned from the South; elated by his success at Charleston he determined to reinforce the Hessian general, and again endeavor to beat up the Americans' base of supplies at Morristown. To ensure success he first made a feint northward in order to draw Washington from New Jersey. This ruse was successful. The American general suspecting a design against West Point moved his army on the twenty-first in that direction, leaving Greene with two brigades to protect the stores, and support Maxwell in guarding the lower country. At

five o'clock on the morning of the twenty-third the enemy advanced from Elizabethtown, their numbers increased by a large body of cavalry and fifteen or twenty pieces of artillery. They moved rapidly in two columns, though considerably harrassed by Lee's legion and the militia. Greene, collecting all his available troops at Springfield, there met the enemy and opposed their march with great spirit. The British manœvered for two hours in a futile effort to flank their opponents, after which a general action ensued lasting about forty minutes, when, as Greene says in his report of the operations of the day, "superior numbers overcame obstinate bravery, and forced our troops to retire." The American general fell back to the first range of hills where he advantageously posted himself so as to check any effort of his foes to gain the heights. The British showed no disposition to advance further but contented themselves with wasting and ravaging the country. In a few hours four houses were all that was left of what had been the flourishing village of Springfield; two of them, as I am informed, are still preserved as mementoes of that exciting and unhappy day. One, the Jonathan Dayton house, bears the scars of war in the shape of a hole made by a cannon ball; the other is the second house east of the church and was at one time the residence of Abraham Clark, a signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Thus ended the last pitched battle of the Revolution on New Jersey soil. The honors remained with the Americans—the dishonors and greatest loss of men with the British. Testimony is universal as to the good order and discipline displayed by the soldiers of the republic, and Washington in his report to congress pays another of his many tributes to the Jersey militia, by saying: "They flew to arms universally, and acted with a spirit equal to anything I have seen during the war." The British fell back early in the day, their line of retreat being marked by dead and wounded men; the militia were on their rear and flanks for the entire distance, keeping up a continuous fire upon them until they reached Elizabethtown, at sunset. At midnight the enemy evacuated the state, removing their pontoon bridge; and so ended another of their many varied and calamitous misadventures in New Jersey.

 The departure of the British was followed by the breaking up

of the camp on Kimball Hill. Among the stories preserved of that time is one illustrative of the spirit displayed by farmer Wicks' daughter, Tempe, on the occasion of a sudden and unexpected emergency. This young woman was a fearless rider, and the owner of a valuable saddle-horse. When the regiments were on the move some soldiers attempted to steal her favorite, claiming him to be wanted for army purposes. Horses being scarce were much needed, and this spirited animal, even were this not so, would have been a tempting bait for careless campaigners not over-particular as to the rights of property. Miss Wicks, when mounted and a short distance from home, was surrounded; but with a bold dash she escaped from her captors and rode rapidly up the hill to the house. Springing to the ground she led her steed through the kitchen and parlor into a rear spare bedroom, which had but one window guarded by a closed wooden shutter. The disappointed soldiers repeatedly searched the farm in vain for the coveted horse, but the courageous young lady kept him secreted in the house until the last of the troops had left the neighborhood. Miss Wicks afterwards married Captain William Tuttle, of the 3d New Jersey regiment.

The rest of the year wore away without much advantage to the American cause. The surrender at Charleston was supplemented by the reverse at Camden, where Gates lost much of the prestige gained at Saratoga. With an empty military chest, a barren commissariat and an army in need of almost everything it was impossible for Washington to engage in an active campaign. The best that could be done was to present a bold front north of New York city and watch the enemy. On the tenth of July, to the great joy of the country, the long expected succor from France reached our shores. On that day a French fleet, with six thousand troops under the command of Lieutenant-General Count de Rochambeau, arrived at Rhode Island. The expectations of the Americans were raised to the highest pitch, as it was supposed that the coöperating armies would now be able to strike a decisive blow. All such hopes were blasted by the arrival of a superior British fleet which blockaded the French ships and army at Rhode Island, incapacitating the allies for the time being from aiding the Americans. And so the campaign of 1780 early closed in chagrin and disappointment.



The gloom of this period was further darkened by the black treachery of Benedict Arnold, which resulted in the necessary sacrifice of that handsome and gifted youth, Major Andre—a tragedy which brought honest grief to both armies.





## CHAPTER XXXV.

*The Mutinies of the Pennsylvania and New Jersey Lines in 1781  
—The French Army in Somerset on the Way to Virginia—  
The Hanging of Captain Joshua Huddy and the Case of  
Captain Asgill.*

The next twelve months will see the end of campaigning in Somerset county, and we shall then be able to turn our attention in other directions than in that of following the line of march of columns of soldiers. Wherever the continentals may drift before finally disbanding we may be sure that their route will lay amid no pleasanter bits of landscape than when they were trailing along the highways and by-ways of Morris and Bedminster.

At the end of November the army was in winter quarters, Washington establishing himself at New Windsor on the Hudson, where the eastern troops were cantoned. The French continued at Newport, excepting Lauzun's legion which was stationed at Lebanon, Connecticut. The New Jersey and Pennsylvania lines were in our state; the former at Pompton, the latter on Kimball Hill, near Morristown, both being under the command of General Anthony Wayne. This officer, in writing on the sixth of December from "Mount Kemble" to General Irvine, says :—

We arrived here the 30th ultimo and found a very great proportion of the Huts destroyed, but by collecting the materials still left on the ground occupied by Gen. Hand's Brigade and improving those of his yet standing, we shall get under cover during the week.

In another letter Wayne writes :—

The men are poorly clothed, badly fed, and worse paid, some of them not having received a paper dollar for near twelve months; exposed to winter's piercing cold, to drifting snows, and chilling blasts, with no protection but old worn-out coats, tattered linen overalls, and but one blanket between three men.

What wonder that such sufferings should have fomented in the troops a feeling of discontent and bitterness? Another cause for dissatisfaction was a disagreement that had arisen between the officers and men as to the true interpretation of the phraseology of the enlistment papers. By them the men were bound to serve for "three years or during the war." Those who had been in the army over three years claimed that their services were being prolonged beyond the term of enlistment—contending that the election was with them whether to remain at the end of that time. The officers maintained that the alternative was with the government, and that the war not having ended the men could be held until the cessation of hostilities.

The feeling of discontent bred by such a condition of affairs rapidly increased, until on the night of the first of January it resulted in an open revolt. The men of several regiments refused longer to obey their officers, and declared the intention of marching at once to Philadelphia to demand of congress the redress of their grievances. A vain attempt was made to arrest their departure; coercion only resulted in a spread of the mutiny. Shots were fired on both sides, wounds inflicted, and several of the insurgents killed. They in their turn gave a death-wound to a Captain Billings, who was endeavoring to bring them under subjection. A black-oak tree on the side of the Jockey Hollow road, which runs over Kimball Hill east of the Wick's house, is still pointed out as the spot where this officer was shot by the rebels. He was buried where he fell. General Wayne found himself powerless to quell the mutiny. With a cocked pistol in his hand he exhorted his men to return to their duty, threatening that a failure to do so would entail the direst punishments. They replied through their spokesman with great firmness, saying:—"We love and respect you, but you are a dead man if you fire. Do not mistake us; we are not going to the enemy; were they now to come out you would see us fight under your orders with as much resolution and alacrity as ever." Just before midnight the mutineers, thirteen hundred strong, armed and under command of their non-commissioned officers, set off in good order from camp taking with them six field pieces and an adequate number of artillery horses.

Bad news travels quickly. By the next morning the people



of Bedminster and the surrounding country knew that the army was in revolt, and much anxiety was felt lest the soldiers should commit excesses during their march southward. Nor were their fears without reason, but happily this danger was averted by the sagacity of Wayne. This general, upon consultation with his officers after the rebels had started, determined that if he could not command his men he would at least follow in their wake, and by judicious management and by seeing that they were supplied with provisions prevent plundering and depredation. In the morning, accompanied by regimental Colonels Stewart and Butler, he overtook the insurgents bivouacked at Vealtown and immediately had an interview with the non-commissioned officers. This resulted in a committee of the sergeants being appointed, who drew up a specification of grievances and who made the most solemn promises to preserve good order during the march. Wayne dispatched couriers to Philadelphia announcing the unfortunate condition of affairs, and urging that congress be prepared to treat with the men. Whereupon a committee from that body was appointed, which with President Reed at its head proceeded to Princeton, where the insurgents were met and negotiations were at once entered into for an accommodation of all differences.

The tories were prompt to carry intelligence of this insurrection to the enemy, who falsely concluded that it would be the desire of the insurgents to make their way to the British lines. Acting on this supposition Sir Henry Clinton collected a number of boats opposite Perth Amboy, and dispatched five thousand troops to the lower end of Staten Island. He then sent a New Jersey tory named Ogden and a British sergeant to the rebels, telling what arrangements had been made in support of their movement, and offering to discharge all debts due them from the United States without demanding military service in return. The board of sergeants to whom the propositions were made immediately turned the bearers, together with their papers, over to Wayne, and eventually these emissaries were hung as spies. The soldiers were indignant that their loyalty to the government was suspected; "See, comrades," said one of the sergeants, on reading aloud Clinton's message, "he takes us for traitors! Let us show him that the American army can furnish but one Arnold, and that

America has no truer friends than we." Such a spirit on the part of the men had a powerful influence in securing for them a favorable adjustment of their difficulties. A compromise mutually advantageous was effected, whereby some of their just demands were complied with and many of the soldiers were discharged, their places in the Pennsylvania line being filled by recruits in the spring. So most fortunately terminated an affair which, had it been managed on both sides with less discretion, might have led to the disruption of the entire army.

So great a breach of discipline was not without its evil effects upon other portions of the continental force. In the middle of January some of the Jersey line at Pompton, encouraged by the success of the Pennsylvanians, refused longer to do duty. Washington fearing further trouble had already taken the precaution of having a trusted command of one thousand men under arms, ready to march from headquarters at a moment's notice. This detachment made a rapid move on the Jersey camp, when the refractory soldiers were forced to parade without arms and deliver up their ringleaders. Three of the latter, who had been at the head of the revolt, were at once tried by drum-head court-martial, sentenced, and two of them executed on the spot, twelve of the most guilty of their associates being obliged to serve as the firing party. In such a terrible but effective manner was this second mutiny throttled at its birth. It seems severe measures to have meted out to our Jersey soldiers when the Pennsylvania line had been dealt with so leniently, but it must be remembered that the latter were in force, that they were in excellent temper, and that the government was taken unawares and obliged to meet the difficulty as best it could. This last insurrection, however, found Washington prepared to cope with the exigency; it was absolutely necessary to nip this second attempt in the bud, for had it prevailed it would have meant the utter destruction of the army.

The next incident of interest in the Revolutionary story of Somerset is the memorable march of the allied armies across the county on their way to the triumphant campaign in Virginia. When Sir Henry Clinton returned in June, 1780, from his success at Charleston, he left at that place four thousand men under Lord Cornwallis. After the capture of Lincoln no continental force remained south of Pennsylvania. To fill this void the

Maryland and Delaware troops were despatched southward under the command of DeKalb, whose troops also included militia from both the Carolinas ; he was soon succeeded by Gates. The latter general's campaign ended with the disaster at Camden, and on the thirtieth of October he retired in favor of Greene, who was transferred from the quartermaster's department to the command of the Southern army.

The achievements of this able general produced a marked change in the aspect of affairs, for with an inconsiderable and miserably provided army he successfully contended with a regular British force, his efforts culminating in the brilliant victories of Cowpens and Eutaw Springs. Before the first of April, with alternate marching and fighting, the opposing armies had crossed the two Carolinas, and Cornwallis had entered Virginia. By this time the British general had been largely reinforced and had divided his command. At the Virginia line Greene abandoned the pursuit of Cornwallis and turned back to meet the other division. The Earl continued to Winchester, and to Petersburg where he combined with General Philips, and being there further reinforced by fifteen hundred men from New York he found himself at the head of a formidable army, seven thousand strong. He advanced from Petersburg, opposed guardedly by Lafayette, who in February, 1781, had marched to Virginia with twelve hundred men to operate against Arnold, that traitor having been for some months conducting a predatory warfare in that state. This force of the marquis was formed into three battalions. One of them was composed of light-infantry companies detailed from the New Jersey line, consisting of thirteen officers and one hundred and forty-eight enlisted men, with Lieutenant-Colonel Francis Barber at their head. Lafayette declared his light-infantry to be the best troops that had ever taken the field, and that an equal number of British never ventured to meet them. Stryker, in his monograph on the Virginia campaign, affirms that this splendid New Jersey command bore a conspicuous and honorable part throughout all the movements that culminated in the fall of Yorktown.

Colonel Barber at the outset of the war was the master of an Elizabethtown grammar-school, but his patriotism soon carried him into the army, and being naturally a student he rapidly



acquired a knowledge of the art of war. At different times he served with distinction on the staffs of Sullivan, Stirling, Greene and Steuben, and during the struggle was distinguished for bravery and ability ; notably in the famous assault on the redoubts of Yorktown, when his light-infantry acted as a supporting column. With the strange irony of fate, Colonel Barber, after passing nearly unscathed through the many dangers of the prolonged Revolutionary contest, was accidentally killed in 1783, just eight days before the announcement of the cessation of hostilities. While riding from camp to his quarters, near New Windsor on the Hudson, on the eleventh of February, a tree suddenly fell across his path striking him dead from his horse.

The passage of Lafayette's little army across New Jersey, on its way to Virginia, was the most rapid movement of troops chronicled during the war. Although the roads were deep with mud but two days were consumed in marching from Morristown to Princeton. He was at Pompton on the twenty-third of February and embarked at Trenton on the first of March, reaching the Head of Elk on the third. Messengers had been sent ahead to notify the New Jersey people of Lafayette's proposed rapid march, and the citizens cheerfully aided the progress of the detachment. Its commandant wrote Washington that whenever he halted his troops he found wood and cover in waiting, and not the least complaint had been made by the inhabitants. During the spring the marquis had been reinforced by Steuben with Virginia militia and by Wayne with Pennsylvania regulars. Cornwallis, deciding to make Virginia the seat of future operations, proceeded to Yorktown, where he strongly fortified himself and awaited the arrival of a British fleet from the West Indies, by which help he hoped to prosecute a vigorous campaign. All this time Washington was not unmindful of what was transpiring in the south. Knowing that a French fleet would soon arrive at the Virginia capes, he believed that he saw an opportunity in conjunction with the allied army for striking a deadly blow at the enemy. His preparations accordingly were secretly and effectively made.

During the entire summer of 1781 the British garrison and tory residents of New York city were in constant trepidation because of the proximity of the combined American and French

forces. Early in July Washington's army was encamped at Dobb's Ferry, and by the sixth of that month he was reinforced by Rochambeau from Newport. The enemy had good cause for fearing an immediate attack and Clinton had grave doubts of the favorable results of an encounter, his force having been much weakened by drafts on him from Cornwallis. Washington was well informed of the fears and apprehensions of the British general, and, by a series of feints and movements, did what he could to add to his discomfitures and to prolong his anxieties. Clinton learned from his spies and scouts that on the twenty-second of July the Americans and French, five thousand strong, were marching and countermarching on the heights north of Harlem, that on the twenty-third Washington and Rochambeau dined at the Van Courtland mansion at King's Bridge, and that a few days later they were reconnoitering in the vicinity of the British outposts.

Washington and his leading generals kept their own counsels, and the continental officers, generally, were as curious as were the English as to what was to be the outcome of the many preparations being made within the American lines. Camps were established, earth works were thrown up, bread-ovens erected, and much else done by order of the commander-in-chief calculated to alarm the enemy and deceive his own army. Meanwhile the position of Cornwallis in Virginia was growing perilous in the extreme. Though Clinton had nearly eighteen thousand men on and about Manhattan Island, while menaced by Washington he dared not detach a single company to reinforce the southern army. This explains the American general's masterly manœuvres. He was biding his time. When the news came that Count de Grasse, with twenty-eight ships of the line carrying four thousand soldiers, had entered the Chesapeake he showed his hand—at least to his own force. On the nineteenth of August small detachments were sent against New York and Staten Island to occupy the enemy, while the main allied army broke camp, crossed the Hudson, and hastily marched southward. So sudden and unannounced was this movement that the armies were well on their way through New Jersey before the officers learned that they were bound for Virginia. It was for a long time controverted whether Washington had really intended a

stroke at New York, and whether it was the opportune information that Count de Grasse was approaching the Delaware capes that fixed his determination to attack the enemy in Virginia, as being a more vulnerable quarter. All doubts on this score were set at rest in 1788 by a letter from Washington, published in "Carey's Museum," in which an explicit statement was made that :—

It never was in contemplation to attack New York, unless the garrison should first have been so far degarnished to carry on the southern operations as to render our success in the siege of that place as infallible as any future military event can ever be made. \* \* \* that much trouble was taken and finesse used to misguide and bewilder Sir Henry Clinton in regard to the real object is certain; nor were less pains taken to deceive our own army, for I had always conceived, where the imposition does not completely take place at home it would never sufficiently succeed abroad.

The allied armies in crossing New Jersey marched by different routes in four divisions, two American and two French. The right column of the continentals, composed of Hazen's regiment, the corps of sappers and miners, the artillery, stores, baggage and thirty flatboats on carriages, passed through northern Somerset on the twenty-eighth, marching on that day from Chatham to Bound Brook. On the night of the thirtieth this division encamped at Princeton, and on the following day was at Trenton where the heavy ordnance, baggage, stores and a portion of the troops were embarked for Philadelphia. The American left column, under Major-General Lincoln, comprised the light-infantry commanded by Colonel Scammell in the van, the two New York regiments under Brigadier-General Clinton on the left, and the Jersey brigade and the Rhode Island regiments in the centre. This division separated from the right at Chatham on the twenty-eighth, joining it again on the thirty-first at Trenton, having marched by the way of New Brunswick and Princeton. An old order book of the light-infantry, now before me, presents some interesting glimpses of the experiences of this left column while on the march. Assembly was beat each morning at half after three and the troops were in motion at four. The column was preceded by the commissaries with a drove of cattle, who, on reaching the place of encampment for the night, slaughtered the necessary stock and had the rations of beef ready to be issued on the arrival of the troops. Brigade-com-



manders were ordered on reaching camp-ground to make immediate application to the commissary for fresh beef, "and if it was not killed and ready to serve out They are to demand the Reason and report it." Each regiment was allowed one uncovered and three covered wagons for carrying baggage and tents, which were ordered to fall in between the New York brigade and the rear-guard. In addition two empty wagons followed each brigade in which were placed men too sick or lame to march. Wagoners who permitted such persons to ride without written permission from the corps commanders were to be punished at the first halt. The women contingent of this force appear to have caused considerable annoyance. They were inclined to steal rides from the wagons, and evidently were not amenable to military discipline. One of the orders relating to them recites :—

Prior to the commencement of our march this morning the commanding officers will inform the women of their respective corps that the General saw many of them yesterday from their proper line of march, strolling in gardens and orchards, an irregularity which must not be repeated. Should any attempt it hereafter they will be denied their rations and prevented farther from following the army.

But it was the passage of the French divisions that excited the liveliest interest among the Jersey people. The allies' right column consisted of Lauzun's legion; the regiment Bourbonnais, uniformed in black turned up with red; the Royal Deux-Ponts, in white broadcloth coats faced with green; and the heavy artillery, the men of which were uniformed in blue with white facings. The left column of the French army contained all the stores and baggage, together with the regiments Saintonge and Soissonnais, the men of the former being arrayed in white and green, while the white uniforms of the latter were faced with pink, their grenadier caps being gay with floating pink plumes. Attached to each regiment were companies of chasseurs formed of light active men, and of grenadiers who were always soldiers of good size and appearance. The latter were considered the elite of the corps, being men of long service and acknowledged bravery; they wore high bearskin hats and distinctive uniforms, and always marched at the head of each battalion.

The two French divisions lay at Whippany on the night of the twenty-eighth, where the left column rested on the following

day while the right marched to "Bullion's tavern,"\* in Bernards township. This first division on the thirtieth pushed on through Bedminster and Bridgewater to Somerset Court-house (Millstone), the second division reaching "Bullion's tavern" on the same night. The next halt of the right column was at Princeton on the night of the thirty-first, the left occupying the same night the camp that the right had vacated in the morning. So the two French divisions continued their march one day apart, on through Trenton to Philadelphia, which they entered on the third and fourth of September, camping one mile beyond the city. There has been left us numerous notices of the passage of the foreign troops through our county. The *Abbe Robin*, the chaplain of the regiment Soissonnais, furnishes us with the dates of the halts of his division, and records that the conduct of the men was admirable, there not even being a single instance of one of the soldiers taking an apple or a peach from an orchard without obtaining leave. The Duponceau manuscripts recite: "It was given out in general orders that if a Frenchman should have a dispute with an American the Frenchman should be punished, whether he was in the right or in the wrong."

The "Journal of Claude Blanchard," commissary of the French army, records many of that officer's impressions of the Somerset country. He found the dwellings of Bernards township "always unique." He says:—

They have no gardens, no fruit walls, only some apple trees, some peach trees and some scattered cherry trees, all forming what we call orchard. The road which I took to reach "Bullion's Tavern" is not disagreeable, but the farms are still middling, they were sown with maize and buckwheat; I also saw a little hemp there.

Princeton seems to have found favor with the commissary, which he calls:—

A pretty village of about sixty houses; the inns there are handsome and very clean. A very handsome college is also to be seen there, built in the same style as that at Providence.

---

\* The location of this tavern, which is often spoken of in Revolutionary itineraries, has long been in dispute. It has been claimed by Liberty Corner, Basking Ridge, and Bernardsville (Vealtown). The preponderance of testimony is altogether in favor of the site of the present tavern at the latter place, opposite the "Vealtown Spring."

Another diarist furnishes us with an interesting account of some of the French officers from one of the divisions having been entertained at John Morton's residence, near the church at Basking Ridge. Mrs. Morton's parents,—Mr. and Mrs. Kemper—who had emigrated from Germany early in the century, were at this time visiting their children at Basking Ridge. While all the other members of the household were delighted with the appearance of the French soldiers, and vied with each other in their entertainment, the old gentleman and his wife retired to their chamber. They could not forget the sufferings of fatherland under Gallic oppression, and were confident that no good would come to the American cause by the employment of such allies.

The foreign troops while swinging through Bedminster on their hurried march made a magnificent appearance. As soldiers the Frenchmen were a revelation to the inhabitants, presenting a marked contrast to the poorly clad and equipped continentals. The view of such perfect phalanxes, thronging helmets and thick array of waving banners was a new military experience for Bedminster people, and when the *tambour-majors*, resplendent in *panache*, aiguillette and tinsel, flourished their ponderous batons, making the hills and valleys vocal with the melody of the Gallic bands, the acme of warlike splendor seemed to have been reached. The private soldiers in their handsome and varied uniforms appeared as neat as their officers; easy, debonair, and with natures proverbially gay, they were not stern-looking, grim-visaged warriors, as though wielding the offensive blade from love of carnage, or eager to sack cities and devastate and raze villages. But do not for a moment make the mistake of thinking that these Frenchmen were mere holiday soldiers. They could fight,—and they did fight, like gladiators when the time came. On the fourteenth of October one-third of the Regiment Gatenois—afterwards the royal Auvergne—which had landed from Count de Grasse's fleet, fell in the trenches near Yorktown when storming a redoubt. Heavy pockets make light hearts. Perhaps that is why the French soldiers bore such cheerful countenances, as they were paid regularly every two weeks. They had other causes for being contented with their military lot. One James Tilton, in a letter from Williamsburg, Virginia, in December, 1781, to Captain Thomas Rodney of Delaware, wrote:—



It must be mortifying for our poor devils to observe the comfortable and happy life of French soldiers. They appear on parade every day like fine gentlemen. \* \* \*. The officers treat the soldiers with attention, humanity and respect, and appear to employ all the means necessary to inspire them with sentiments of honor. Theft is said to be a crime held in universal abhorrence among them. I have not seen or heard of any instance yet of a French soldier being whipped. Their desertions, I believe, have been rare, and their sickness but little. When will our army bear this comparison?

The Jersey people especially marvelled at the brave show made by the Duke of Lauzun's legion, a corps of six hundred men, hussars and infantry, the very pick of the French army. These soldiers, especially the hussars, were sparkling with life and activity and seemed to look upon the march as a holiday excursion. Their officers were all tall young men with handsome faces and noble bearings, who made a superb appearance mounted on fine horses, richly caparisoned. Their distinctive characteristics—which were quite new on this side of the water—were the moustaches they all wore. We may easily figure the interest and admiration that these volatile, laughter-loving *beaux sabreurs* must have excited in the hearts and minds of the American girls met during their campaign. It is said that following the impulses of their gay dispositions, more than once after a day's march their assurance and captivating manners secured for them partners for an evening dance. The legion had quartered during the winter and spring at Lebanon, Connecticut, where the corps was most hospitably entertained. In return, the officers had given many dances and dinners, and altogether had endeared themselves to the people of the neighborhood.

The *Duc de Lauzun-Biron* was a nobleman of great wealth, and celebrated alike for beauty, bravery and wit; by his prepossessing manners he made himself very agreeable to the Americans, those with whom he was intimate always remembering him with much affection. His career, which in the beginning gave great promise, came to a tragic end on the last day of the year 1793, when he was guillotined at Paris, charged with favoring the Vendéans. Two of his officers—brothers by the name of Dillon—one, a major, the other, a captain, who had made excellent impressions in America, suffered the same fate. A violent death was in later years the dire lot of a number of

the men who officered the French contingent force during the Virginia campaign. Among them was Count de Custine—otherwise Adam Philipe—who commanded the regiment Saintonge. On returning to France, after serving with distinction in America, although a nobleman he joined the revolutionary party, and in 1792 was at the head of the French army on the lower Rhine. His nobility having always made him an object of suspicion, in the following year he was accused of treason, and, though protesting to the last his loyalty to the cause, was guillotined on the twenty-seventh of August.

The death of another officer was still more at variance with the brilliancy of his career. This was that of Count Jean Axel de Fersen—a Swede. At the early age of nineteen he went to France and was made colonel of the king's Swedish body-guard. His singular beauty attracted universal attention, and even the queen became so sensible of his fascinations as to expose herself to adverse criticism. It is said that the count's advent in America was due to his regard for her majesty's reputation, for fearing that her too openly expressed preference for him would cause scandal he decided to avoid such a catastrophe by entering the military family of Rochambeau as an aide-de-camp. At Newport he became a great favorite in society and won the affections of all the women. His character as well as his person was much admired, and his success with the sex, and with the Americans generally, was the greater because speaking their language. He did excellently well at Yorktown, being complimented by Washington for his soldierly qualities and conduct. The life of this well-favored young officer was strangely full of adventure. He it was who, disguised as a coachman, drove Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette from Paris to Varennes, on the occasion of their unsuccessful attempt to escape from their loving subjects. The count met his tragic end in 1810 at Stockholm. He was suspected of conniving at the death of the young king, Christian Augustus, and was murdered by a mob while attending that monarch's funeral.

The combined armies were quickly beyond the Delaware. It was the thirtieth of August—by which time the French and American generals were being enthusiastically welcomed at Philadelphia—before Sir Henry Clinton, almost wild with anger

and humiliation, discovered that the British had again been out-generaled—that his army was again the victim of the superior strategy of the American Fabius. On the eighth of September, while Greene was whipping the enemy at Eutaw Springs Washington was in Baltimore, and on the evening of the ninth he was at Mount Vernon—his first visit in six years. Here two days were spent in entertaining distinguished guests from the two armies. The generals and their retinues on the fourteenth joined Lafayette at Williamsburg; by the twenty-eighth, all the divisions of both nations having come up, the combined armies moved on Yorktown, and by the fifth of October the place was completely invested. Shortly after midnight of the twentieth, people living in the vicinity of High and Second streets in Philadelphia were disturbed by a loud pounding on the front door of the dwelling of Thomas McKean, president of congress. It was Lieutenant-Colonel Tench Tilghman, who had ridden express from General Washington bearing dispatches, announcing that on the previous day seven thousand British and German soldiers had laid down their arms, and that with them Lord Cornwallis, the king of England's ablest general, was a prisoner. Soon, booming cannons, clanging bells, and loud-voiced watchmen carried the glad news to every quarter of the city. When the morning light was breaking, couriers were flying in all directions conveying intelligence to the country that the darkness was disappearing—that Britain had forever loosened its hold on America.

The fall of Yorktown virtually closed the Revolutionary war. Three months had not gone by after the capture of Cornwallis became known in London before parliament concluded to abandon offensive operations. Negotiations for peace began at once, and continued until the thirtieth of November, 1782, when a provisional treaty was signed. Meanwhile a few skirmishes in the South, and in Monmouth county, New Jersey, constituted about all the active military operations. The one event that distinguished the closing year of the war, and in which the people of Somerset were much concerned, was the sad condition of a young English officer, who in the autumn of 1782 was confined in the huts of the Jersey line, in Chatham township, Morris county, awaiting execution. It was not only the people of Somerset who anxiously interested themselves in the misfortunes



of this youth. The knowledge of his approaching fate harassed congress, disturbed two European courts, and agitated the society of London and Paris. His unhappy predicament was brought about in this wise.

Of all the sad Revolutionary chapters contributed by Monmouth county, none are more dismal than the one narrating the tragic death of Captain Joshua Huddy, who was hanged by refugee Jersey men at Gravelly Point, about one mile north of the Highland lighthouse and opposite the southerly portion of Sandy Hook. Huddy, who was an active patriot, had commanded one of the two batteries of artillery of state troops that had been organized by an act of the legislature in 1777. This militia captain was especially vigilant in suppressing the incendiary acts of tories and refugees, of whom there were many in Monmouth county, where he was stationed. The terror he inspired among these people was such as to make him a marked man, and the object of their vengeance whenever an opportunity presented itself. In the summer of 1780, while in his house at Colt's Neck, five miles from Freehold, he was attacked by sixty men headed by Colonel Tye, a mulatto, who generally roamed the country with a mongrel crew of negroes and tories. With the exception of a colored servant girl about twenty years old Huddy was alone in the house; but fortunately he had a number of muskets belonging to the members of his absent guard. Together these two made a brave defence; the girl loaded while he rapidly fired from different windows, giving the impression of their being a strong force inside. Several of their assailants were wounded, including their leader, who subsequently died. Finally the house was set on fire, and the captain agreed to surrender provided the enemy would suppress the flames. Tye's men were greatly exasperated on entering at finding so few defenders. As the militia were now collecting, they hurriedly put out the fire and carried Huddy off to their boats at Black Point on the Navesink river. The troops, which were in close pursuit, appeared on the bank soon after the refugees had shoved from the shore. A lively fusillade ensued, during which Huddy sprang into the river and swam boldly to his friends, though reaching them with a bullet in his thigh.

In the spring of 1782 Captain Huddy commanded twenty-five

men who were garrisoning a rude fort, or block-house, which stood just north of the bridge at the village of Tom's River in Ocean county. This fort was attacked by the enemy, the expedition for that purpose being composed of forty refugees under the command of Captain Evan Thomas and Lieutenant Owen Roberts, of the Bucks county (Pa.) volunteers. They embarked at New York on the morning of Wednesday, the twentieth of March, on whaleboats manned by Lieutenant Blanchard and eighty seamen. It was not until after midnight that the entire party landed at Coates Point on the north side of Tom's River. They were joined by a detachment of Ocean county refugees commanded by Richard Davenport. Securing a guide in one William Dillon, the force stole silently through the woods in the direction of the village, and at daylight on Sunday morning suddenly charged the fort. Captain Huddy and his men made a gallant defence with swivels, muskets and pikes, but the block-house was finally carried by assault after the garrison had exhausted its ammunition, one-third of the men being killed.

The brave commander was conveyed to New York, and subsequently to Sandy Hook, where he was confined, heavily ironed, in the hold of a guard-ship. Six days after Huddy was taken, a refugee named White, a Shrewsbury carpenter, was captured by a party of county light-horse. He was placed in charge of three men, the father of one of whom had been murdered the year before by some loyalists, White being of the party. The wheel of fortune had made an unhappy revolution for this Shrewsbury carpenter. When his guard was relieved he was found dead, the explanation being given that he had been shot while endeavoring to escape. There is no doubt, however, that a son had cruelly avenged the murder of a father. Though this occurred after the capture of Huddy, the refugees, eager for a pretence whereby his death could be encompassed, charged him with being privy to the killing of White. Without listening to a defence, or even going through the form of a trial, poor Huddy was hurried to Gravelly Point by a band of sixteen loyalists under one Captain Lippencott, and there barbarously hanged on a gallows hastily formed of three fence-rails and a flour-barrel. It is said that he died with extraordinary firmness, and that with

a serene mind and a steady hand he drew up his will on the head of the barrel from which, a few moments later, he was forced to spring into eternity. His murderers left a label affixed to his breast upon which was written an attempted justification of their act, ending with: "Up goes Huddy for Philip White." Richard Lippencott, the self-constituted executioner, was a renegade Jerseyman and an officer in a refugee regiment, the King's Rangers, whose colonel, Robert Rogers, had preceded Lieutenant-Colonel Simcoe in the command of the Queen's Rangers.

This inhuman murder filled the country with indignation, and urgent demands were made that immediate punishment should be visited upon the murderer. Thereupon the authorities insisted that the British commands should deliver up Lippencott, threatening that, otherwise, one of the English officers in their hands must die in his stead. In furtherance of this retaliatory measure eight captains and five lieutenants, who were on their paroles in Pennsylvania, were directed to report at Lancaster, in order that the victim might be selected. They assembled on the morning of the twenty-fifth of May in a room of the Black Bear tavern,—twenty mounted dragoons waiting in the inn yard to bear away the unfortunate who should be chosen.

In the presence of Brigadier-General Moses Hazen, commandant; his aide, Captain White; Mr. Witz, commissary of prisoners; Major Gordon, a paroled British officer in the charge of prisoners; and the dragoon officer, the lots were drawn. The names of the thirteen British officers were written on separate slips of paper and placed in a hat; another hat contained thirteen slips of the same size, all blank but one, which was inscribed, "unfortunate." Captain White and the commissary held the hat while two drummer-boys simultaneously drew the papers. When the one was reached on which was written "unfortunate," it appeared with a slip containing the name of Captain Asgill of the "Foot Guards" who was the youngest officer present; he was a youth possessing many graces of mind and person, and was of high connections in England. At once, upon the result of the drawing being known, the brigadier turned to the dragoon-officer, saying,—“This gentleman, Sir, is your prisoner.” The meeting then broke up, every one in tears excepting the young man selected. Major Gordon prevailed upon General Hazen to



delay the departure until Tuesday the twenty-seventh; on that day Asgill and Gordon left Lancaster for Philadelphia, escorted by the dragoons. From there the unfortunate British officer was sent to the Jersey line at Chatham, the place assigned for his execution, and put in charge of Colonel Elias Dayton of the 2d New Jersey regiment. Washington wrote the colonel on the fourth of June directing him:—

Treat Captain Asgill with every tenderness and association, and politeness consistent with his present situation which his rank, fortune, and connections, together with his private state, demands.

A few days later, Washington, fearing that Dayton was following his instructions too literally, thus wrote him again:—

Sir, I am informed that Captain Asgill is at Chatham without a guard, and under no restraint. This, if true, is certainly wrong; I wish to have the young gentleman treated with all possible tenderness consistent with his present situation, but considered as a close prisoner and kept in the greatest security. I request, therefore, that he may be sent immediately to the Jersey line where he is to be kept close prisoner in perfect security till further orders.

At first it appeared as if nothing could avert the dire extremity of Asgill's execution. Washington was deeply afflicted by the unhappy fate menacing the young officer, but, after deliberation, his determination had been firmly fixed on retaliation as the only means of preventing a continuance of refugee iniquities. The sympathies of America and Europe were aroused in behalf of Asgill, who was but little more than a boy. Sir Guy Carleton, who had succeeded Sir Henry Clinton in the command of the British army, successfully appealed to Washington for delay. Later he submitted the result of a court-martial, whereby Lippencott had been exonerated on the ground that William Franklin, ex-colonial governor of New Jersey and the then president of the "Board of Associated Loyalists," had given verbal orders for the execution of Huddy because, as it was claimed, he had been a persecutor of the king's faithful subjects in New Jersey. Sir Guy, who was a man of broad views and great humanity, broke up this "Board of Loyalists," and in a communication to Washington declared that notwithstanding the acquittal of Lippencott he "reprobated the measure," and gave assurances of prosecuting a further inquiry.

Meanwhile the commander-in-chief and congress were besieged with communications and memorials praying that the life of the

proposed victim might be spared. Finally the sympathies and good offices of our country's valued allies, the French, were enlisted, and Count de Vergennes, representing the court of France, made a strong appeal to congress in behalf of clemency. In support of this appeal he presented a most tender and pathetic letter that had been addressed to him by the British officer's mother, pleading, as only a mother could plead, that mercy might supersede the necessity for retaliation. This, together with the prospect of a speedy peace, rendering the motive for avengement as a preventative of future murder unnecessary, materially changed the situation of affairs.

There was another circumstance that powerfully influenced congress and the country in sustaining altered views regarding the fate of the young soldier. Washington had been very much distressed that General Hazen had been unable to send him for purposes of retaliation an officer who was an unconditional prisoner. Asgill was among those who had surrendered with Cornwallis. The fourteenth article of the capitulation expressly excluded all the prisoners from liability to be used as hostages in subsequent reprisals, and the British Major Gordon on the twenty-seventh of May had protested strongly in writing against a violation of the terms of surrender. Washington in a letter to the secretary of war on the fifth of June acknowledged being sorely embarrassed by the possible infringement of the article of surrender, and begged that the secretary would transmit to him his views, and those of members of congress with whom he had talked on the subject. As the days went on, public feeling grew stronger that, even if poor Huddy was unavenged, good faith demanded that retaliation should not be visited on the British in the person of Captain Asgill. So, altogether, it began to appear as if he was not destined to atone for the death of the American captain.

On the twenty-fifth of August General Washington ordered Colonel Dayton to leave his charge on parole at Morristown, and on the seventh of November congress, recognizing the altered sentiment of the country, directed that the prisoner should be unconditionally set at liberty. And thus, happily, historians, in writing of the closing year of the Revolution, have not been forced to devote a chapter to the recital of the distressing details of a final blood reprisal.



## CHAPTER XXXVI.

*Peace—Prostration of the Country After the War—American Loyalists and Their Experiences—The Inquisition Against William Melick and the Confiscation of His Property.*

Of all the general orders issued by Washington to the army during the war, none was received with more profound satisfaction than the one dated, "Head Quarters, Chatham, April 18th, 1783," which directed the cessation of hostilities. It further ordered that an accompanying proclamation of peace should be read the next evening at the head of every regiment of the army, after which the brigade chaplains were to render thanks to Almighty God for "over-ruling the wrath of man to his own glory, and causing the rage of war to cease among the nations." At the same time an extra ration of liquor was to be issued to every soldier, to drink "Perpetual peace and happiness to the United States of America."

On the third of September the final treaty of peace was signed at Paris, and definite treaties entered into with other countries, whereby the liberty and independence of the United States were fully acknowledged, and the country was received among the great family of nations. There was nothing left for the patriot army to do but to disband. Furloughs were freely granted to the soldiers, who upon going home were not required to return. On the third of November the entire army was discharged, and thus a force of nearly ten thousand men were dismissed and dispersed over the states without, with but one exception, tumult or disorder. The officers received five years' full pay in money, or, at their election, half pay for life. The case of the privates was, indeed, hard. The general government found itself power-



less to procure the necessary funds for paying the large arrearages due the army. The brave men who had stemmed the tide of British oppressions were obliged to content themselves with the immediate recompense of four months' pay, and a future recompense of promises, well intended but poorly carried out. It was at first feared that the distribution throughout the country of so many men who had good reasons for grievance would cause disturbances and lawlessness. Happily the strength of the government was not to be tried by such a condition of affairs. The army melted quietly away; and, peaceably laying down their arms, the privates, as a rule, betook themselves to honest labor, and became absorbed among the farmers, planters and mechanics. The one exception to such a peaceable disposition is to be found in the action of the Pennsylvania levies, who in the last of June, in defiance of their officers, surrounded the State House in Philadelphia, and threatened destruction to congress unless their demands for redress were immediately gratified. The national legislature succeeded in escaping from duress with dignity and retired to Princeton, convening in Nassau Hall, as has been narrated in a previous chapter.

Our Revolutionary chronicles are now ended. War—ruthless war—with its attendant horrors, no longer stalks over the land, sowing broadcast discord, hatred and vengeance, and trampling under foot human affections and the happiness of communities. In its place, peace! an honorable peace! securing all the great principles and demands for which the country has been contending for eight long and doubtful years. The effusion of blood and all the terrible calamities incidental to civil strife are now to be matters of the past. The future is made bright by the revival of hope, and the anticipation that the toils and dangers, the stern resolves and active endeavors, the tears of sorrow and the moans of despair, of the years now happily bygone, are to be followed by an era of national prosperity; an era when trades will again flourish, business activities once more prevail, and the people prosper in the tranquil possession and enjoyment of the liberties they have wrested from the hand of oppression.

But all these beneficent results were not so immediate as might be supposed would have been the case. With the close of the war unreflecting persons had anticipated the enjoyment

not only of the repose and safety of peace, but of a period of instant and unbounded prosperity. Such buoyant natures soon discovered that the country was in a most lamentable condition, and that the poverty of the people was almost universal. With the exception of some of those engaged in agricultural pursuits, and the few who had grown rich from privateering, or who had fattened on dishonest gains in government contracts, almost every one was deeply in debt, and insolvencies, prosecutions, and legal embarrassments of all kinds became common. Order, industry and contentment were not the flowers that first bloomed on the Revolutionary plant; they came later, after the disappearance of the factions, clamors, bankruptcies and distresses that were bred by financial depressions, and the political doubts and uncertainties prevailing as to the relative rights of the different states.

It must be admitted that until the recent celebration of the centennial of the adoption of the constitution of the United States, many persons who considered themselves generally well-grounded in history had but an indefinite conception of the political condition of our country for the eight years succeeding the close of the Revolution. In their minds prevailed a confused idea that with peace came at once all the blessings that the country has since enjoyed, and that a staple and harmonious government, based on a sound constitution, was an easy and an almost immediate sequel to the country's independence. It is only recently, and through the public prints, that such persons have been made to realize the dangers that threatened the country during the years intervening between the peace and the adoption of the constitution. The prostration of affairs, to a certain extent, can be ascribed to the great deterioration in the character of the men who represented the colonies in the continental congress, and to their lack of ability in coping with the complications arising from the slight bond existing between the different states. The original articles of confederation were entered into to meet the exigencies of war. With little or no powers of coercion, they were of but slight avail while the conflict lasted, their efficiency resting on the good faith of the people. When they were originally ratified, had the wishes of the New Jersey delegates been considered it would have been

greatly to the advantage of the country. They urged certain amendments to the articles of confederation that would have tended much to enhance the strength and usefulness of the national compact. These amendments were not accepted by congress, and as they had not been made a *sine qua non* to the New Jersey representatives the articles of confederation went into effect as originally passed. After the war, disputes, contentions, and jealousies between the different sections much weakened the usefulness of the fragile tie. Some states, as early as 1781, proposed amendments whereby greater powers should be secured to the general government, New Jersey going so far as to urge that congress, in order to meet the expenses of the war, should be vested with the exclusive power of regulating foreign and domestic trade, of collecting duties, and of selling western lands. Doctor Witherspoon labored to this end but the effort came to naught, as the people had great fears that a general government with power to act would at least establish an aristocracy, if not an autocracy. The poor man could not see any difference between being taxed by congress or a parliament. When the war came to an end national rulers were considered almost unnecessary, and it was with the greatest difficulty that the required congressional quorum for transacting business could be secured.

The members of the confederated legislature were no longer, with individual exceptions, the best representative men of the country, as had been the case with those sturdy patriots who had first bound the thirteen provinces together by the Declaration of Independence. Now that the colonies were free from British rule there no longer seemed that necessity for cohesion that a common danger had fostered. Petty differences and distrust of each other usurped the place of united patriotism, for each representative but reflected the sentiment of the legislature of his state in being indifferent, if not fairly hostile, to any combined confederation whereby a central authority could protect the entire community in its rights and privileges. Prejudice was so great that even the strongest believers in the future of the country began to despair of the possibility of forming a pivotal government, and feared that the collapse of the confederacy was imminent. Among the greatest evils of the time was the



utter demoralization of the citizens in their views as to the financial obligations of the government at large. Each state considered that, with its worthless currency and wretched financial condition, its own indebtedness was load enough to carry. Members of congress, therefore, only voiced public opinion when they boldly suggested general repudiation—when they even broke faith with the war-worn soldiers who by their sufferings and privations had freed the country, and dismissed them from their service with a pay of meagre thanks and the presents of the muskets they carried.

Hamilton, Madison, Witherspoon, Livingston, and men of like metal, felt that such a sentiment of states' rights would prove a clog to every endeavor to amalgamate the varied and conflicting interests of the different sections into a homogeneous whole. These men did a great work at this time, both by their eloquence in public assemblies and by writing and distributing pamphlets, whereby the people were made acquainted with the dangers by which they were likely to be overwhelmed; and thus a condition of anarchy was averted. In a sort of hybrid way the country held together, though without respect and with but little authority, either at home or abroad. It was not until the year 1786 that a ray of light pierced the dark cloud that so long had apparently obscured the possibilities of a future for that America which but ten years before had aroused the plaudits of the civilized world. In January Virginia called a convention for consultation as to the country's need of a greater uniformity in commercial laws. In response to the invitation representatives from four states met at Annapolis, the New Jersey delegates being vested with greater powers for providing for the exigencies of the Union than were those from the other states, whose instructions confined their deliberations and acts to regulating trade and commerce. The members of this convention finding their powers too limited to adequately meet the requirements of the occasion, and that the number of the states represented were too few, adjourned, after issuing an address or report advising that another convention should be called in May, 1787. This address further urged that, in order that the deliberations could result in an adjustment of parts of the federal system other than the regulation of trade, the deputies to this second convention should

be empowered with an authority equal to that in which the New Jersey delegates were clothed at Annapolis.

As has been shown, at this time all the elements of a great nation were in solution, only needing for their precipitation the direction of a master political mind. Happily for the United States that was to be, Alexander Hamilton was equal to the demands of the occasion. He was a delegate to the first convention, and recognized this to be a great opportunity for addressing the country as to the dangers threatening the national life, and through the heart of the body politic the freedom of each individual province. Throwing the whole force of his fervent soul and great talents in to the work, he succeeded in destroying the apathy of the communities, and in exciting a general desire that one grand effort should be made to establish a government based on mutual right, honor and protection. This resulted in the summoning of a second council which met on the tenth of May, 1787 in Philadelphia.

The convention closed its doors and occupied the entire summer in considering the state of the nation. The delegates fortunately were chosen from among the ablest men of the different states, New Jersey's representatives being William Livingston, William Paterson, William C. Houston and Jonathan Dayton. Nobly did this historic body perform its work. Some idea of the extent and patience of the labors of these delegates can be obtained from the notes made by James Madison, which recite that seven hundred and eighty-two speeches, long and short, were delivered in the convention. The greatest number were by Gouverneur Morris, who spoke one hundred and seventy-three times; Madison, himself, made one hundred and sixty-three addresses. Among the silent members was William Livingston; his talents and ability, however, exerted a powerful influence over the delegates, and a writer of that time names him as the best scholar in the convention. It was not until the autumn that the great work was accomplished, and the constitution of the United States presented to the world. The citizens had looked upon the secret deliberations of the members as those of a mere trade convention, but they found, to the subsequent happiness of the country, that there had been framed for them a more perfect bond of union, whereby the industrial and political interests of the nation had been power-

fully linked together by a document that has stood the test of political convulsions, and has proved in value to the country only second to the Declaration of Independence.

The great question then came before the citizens—would the draft of the constitution submitted by the convention be sanctioned by the states? The political history of our country testifies that New Jersey has ever been among the first in attachment to the Union, and always ready to sacrifice her own pretensions for the general good of the whole country. When the constitution was adopted the New Jersey delegates, notwithstanding they had been in favor of much that differed from the ultimate form taken by the compact, waived their preferences in favor of the general welfare, and signed the instrument. The state was equally prompt in endorsing the acts of its representatives; the legislature ordered a state convention to meet at Trenton in December, and on the eighteenth of that month the constitution was unanimously ratified. This action was in marked contrast to that of some of the states, in several of whose conventions the whole battle had to be fought over again. New York did not ratify until in July, 1788, and then but just escaped not giving its sanction. It was in November, 1789, before North Carolina accepted the constitution, and stiff-necked little Rhode Island held aloof till May, 1790. She was the last of the thirteen to come into the Union, but the constitution had by its terms become the supreme law of the land on the twenty-first of June, 1788, when the ninth state ratified the federal compact.

But all this has carried us too far in advance of our story; we must return to the years immediately following the end of the Revolution. Notwithstanding the glorious results that were assured by the successful termination of the war, the blessings, to a considerable degree, were to be a heritage of future generations. The generation whose sacrifices had achieved independence must needs first eat the bitter fruits of strife. The land was full of widows and orphans. The impoverishment of estates was the rule rather than the exception. The financial demoralization of the entire country hampered all efforts at trade. Another bar to the complete enjoyment of peace was the division of families on political lines; for patriots and loyalists no longer possessed a common country. The following letter written by



Aaron Malick in 1788 shows that the occupants of the "Old Stone House" did not altogether escape from this latter evil. This letter was written to William and John Melick, the sons of Gottfried Moelich, who came to America with Johannes Moelich in 1735, and settled in Sussex, now Warren county. At the outbreak of the war William, the elder son, was not in sympathy with the Revolutionary movement, and joined the British army, serving as a sergeant in a regiment of foot. He saw much active service, and was wounded by a musket-ball, which he carried in his shoulder till his death. In 1784, in company with thirty-five thousand other loyalist Americans, he was forced to emigrate to Nova Scotia. With him went his younger brother John. The latter does not appear to have been an active enemy of his country, and in leaving the United States was probably actuated by the natural love and affection he bore his brother William. They settled in St. John, New Brunswick, establishing themselves there in active business, becoming valued and honored citizens of the British Possessions. Their numerous descendants to-day occupy prominent positions in the social and business circles of St. John.

Somerset County East New Jersey.

Dear Cozen. I Received your Kind Letter with a Deal of Happiness To Hear of your welfare—As it found us all in Good Health, Thanks Be to the Almighty we still Continue in the same.

I Have Nothing in Particular To inform you But I forward your Letter to your Brother Jacob, By My Daughter, and She found them All well—I Have no news to write. But we Have very Dull Times in the way of Our Trade upon the Account of Paper money wich we have among us wich will not Pass in any Other state but Our Own wich makes it very Dificult in Geting Hides. Lather sells now for our money Sole Leather a 2-6 and uper a 4-0 pr pound proc money and Hides Goes a 6d. pr lb the same money—I would Inform you that my Brother in Law Jacob Klines' family is all well but himself. Old age Crowds upon him wich makes him weakley and almost Childish.

I must Now Conclude with myne and my Wiffes' & family's Kind Love to you and John.

from Your Loving Cozen

Aaron Malick.

November 14th 1788.

To William & John Malick.

Of the many untoward circumstances connected with the Revolutionary war, none were more particularly calamitous than the divided sentiments among honest citizens as to the policy of rebellion. Civil war involves cruelties and hardships that are

unknown when civilized nations contend with each other. Every man is forced to actively take sides in the contest; this, of course, greatly aggravates the miseries of strife, as neighbors and friends are thus made antagonists. The American whigs were naturally greatly exasperated against those of their fellow-citizens who upheld the course of Britain, and felt toward them a resentment much greater than that harbored against their European adversaries. The desertion of their countrymen in the hour of trial, early in the war, filled them with angry hatred, and as the years went on this rancor was increased by the feeling that the prolongation of the conflict, and the asperity with which it was carried on, was largely due to the aid and information furnished to the enemy by the so-called renegade Americans.

Among the loyalists were many worthy persons who in adhering to the Crown were merely living up to their honest convictions. Of such, some, like William Melick, braving their lives and fortunes for their beliefs entered the English army. Others, like John Melick, loved peace and justice, and were content to stand aside and take no active part in the controversy. But there was a third tory element whose conduct throughout the contest has fastened a stigma upon the name, loyalist, that will last as long as the pages of history remain open for inspection. Humanity shudders at recounting the atrocities committed by these fiends who revelled in blood and murder; whose rapacious and ingenious cruelties toward those among whom they had been born and bred were often such as would never have occurred to a foreign soldiery. All tories were forced to suffer for the dastardly acts of these inhuman Americans, and so it was that the hatred for these people dated from the very beginning of the war. Throughout the entire time that the prolonged contest continued patriot and royalist may be said to have had each other by the throats.

Dominated by their sympathies, historians, too often perhaps, have been prone to dwell and enlarge upon the overt acts of the king's American adherents, but to the dispassionate student of history evidence abounds going to make plain that tory and whig were alike intolerant of each other's convictions, and ready to fall one upon the other as opportunities

occurred. The following strong language is taken from the minutes of a meeting of the general committee of observation and inspection for Middlesex county held on the sixteenth of January, 1775, and is quoted as showing the feeling animating the whigs even at that early date:—

Resolved—That we think it our duty publickly to declare our contempt and detestation of those insidious scribblers who, with the vilest views, enlist themselves in the cause of ministry, and by the vilest means endeavor to effect a disunion among the good people of the colonies, that they may become a prey to the oppression against which they are so laudably and unanimously struggling; who skulk behind prostituted printing-presses, and with the assistance of the prostituted conductors of them labor to circulate their pestilent compositions through the land, under the show of friendship and a regard to the publick good; who, with the most unexampled effrontery against the sense of every man of the least information and impartiality, will persist in retailing the rotten, exploded, and ten thousand times confuted doctrines of a passive acquiescence in the measures of government, however distempered and tyrannical.

The following extract from a Briton's letter home, published in England, was said to have been taken from a "rebel" newspaper:—

At Quibbletown, Middlesex county, N. J., Thomas Randolph, cooper, who had publicly proved himself an enemy to his country by reviling and using his utmost endeavors to oppose the proceedings of the continental and Provincial Conventions and Committees in defence of their rights and liberties, and he being judged a person of not consequence enough for a severer punishment was ordered to be stripped naked, well coated with tar and feathers, and carried in a wagon publicly around the town, which punishment was accordingly inflicted; and as he soon became duly sensible of his offence, for which he earnestly begged pardon, and promised to atone as far as he was able by a contrary behavior for the future, he was released and suffered to return to his house in less than half an hour. The whole was conducted with that regularity and decorum that ought to be observed in all public punishments.

The "New York Journal" of the ninth of February, 1775, defines a tory as a thing whose head is in England and its body in America, with a neck that ought to be stretched. This not only fairly expresses the sentiment with which they were regarded, but suggests, also, the mode of treatment they had too often dealt them. In 1778, after the British had evacuated Philadelphia and retreated to Sandy Hook, both Pennsylvania and New Jersey brought to trial such citizens as had given aid and comfort to the enemy. Of those convicted in Philadelphia two were hung; but Governor Livingston pardoned seventeen, being the entire number found guilty in New Jersey. Naturally one



wonders to what extent disloyalty prevailed in our state. It has always been difficult to estimate the number of disaffected in any one state, or even to determine how many entered the English service. No record can be obtained of those who enlisted in regular regiments, but the muster-rolls of the provincial corps have been preserved. Sabine, the historian of the loyalists, estimates the latter to have been at least twenty-five thousand, and tory documents claim that between the years 1781 and 1783 the king had more American soldiers than had congress. It is undoubtedly true that at that time disaffection was much more rife in neighborhoods where the British had long quartered than it had been at the outset of the war.

Gainé's "Universal Register, or American and British Calendar," published in 1781 a list of the provincial officers in the English service. From it we glean the following Jersey names:—Courtlandt Skinner was brigadier-general of the New Jersey volunteers; he had been attorney-general and speaker of the assembly, and was the son of the Reverend William Skinner, the rector of St. Peter's church at Perth Amboy. The first battalion of his command was raised largely through the instrumentality of Elisha Lawrence of Monmouth county. Among its officers was Major John Barnes, who had been the high sheriff of Hunterdon county, and at whose house, in Trenton, Washington had quartered previous to the battle of Assunpink. He did not long serve his king as a soldier, being fatally wounded on the twenty-second of August, 1777. A later major of this same command was Thomas Millidge, of Morris county, who before the war had been deputy-surveyor of New Jersey. William S. Stryker, in his monograph on the New Jersey loyalists, speaks of him as having always been represented as a very honorable man, firm in his convictions of duty, and correct in his habits of life. His son Phineas was an ensign in the same regiment. Another of its ensigns was James Moody, who is reported to have been one of the most active partisans of the war. Sabine says that he was an inoffensive farmer until the persecutions of his whig neighbors drove him into the army. In his forays he secured numerous officers and men, besides destroying many arms and much ammunition and property. On one occasion with only seven men he captured eighteen militia officers and committee men; at one time he was

made a spy on Washington, and as a reward for securing the general's papers received a lieutenancy.

Lieutenant-Colonel Isaac Allen, who commanded the 2d New Jersey battalion, was a prominent lawyer of Trenton. In the same regiment was Major Robert Drummond, who was a valuable recruiting officer for Skinner's brigade, he having, it is said, induced two hundred of his neighbors to enlist. Before the war he lived where is now Passaic, being a leading country merchant and a member of the provincial assembly. In 1775-76 he was a deputy to the provincial congress, but in July of the latter year opposed the adoption of the state constitution. He then went over to the enemy, served during the war and died in London in 1789. Captain Joseph Lee, also of this 2d Battalion, before entering the army in 1776, was jailed at Trenton as a tory Jerseyman. Lieutenant-Colonel Abraham Buskirk, who commanded the 4th New Jersey battalion, was an active partisan who committed many depredations, including burning the Elizabethtown church in 1780. Among his officers were his son, Captain Jacob Buskirk, Lieutenant John Van Buskirk and Captain Samuel Ryerson; the latter in the neighborhood of Paterson raised a company of sixty men. Captains Lawrence and Abraham Buskirk and Lieutenant Thomas Van Buskirk were in Lieutenant-Colonel John Bard's Orange Rangers. The adjutant of Tarleton's British legion was Lawyer William Taylor, the son of Sheriff John Taylor of Monmouth county. In Lieutenant-Colonel Roger's King's Rangers were Captain John Hatfield, or Hetfield, who was probably the same man who hung a poor butcher, Ball, at Bergen Point; Lieutenant Richard Lippencott, who undoubtedly hung Captain Huddy; and Lieutenant Christopher Insley. This last officer was probably the one of the same name killed at Tom's River in 1781. Major John Van Dyke raised a corps of three hundred and six men in New Jersey, and Major Richard Stockton, of the 6th Battalion, because of his familiarity with the state's highways and by-ways, became known as the famous land pirate. He belonged to the Princeton family, but was no credit to the name, being a tory of the most malignant stripe, his villainies earning for him an unenviable reputation.

At the close of the war congress was bound by the English treaty to urge the states to abstain from persecuting those who

had been faithful to the crown. It was found impossible for the general government to influence the states in furtherance of this pledge. Popular indignation against the tories was great, and now that the people had in their power the violent oppressors of those who had been of the patriot cause, they would not brook an interference with what they considered their just rights of retaliation. Notwithstanding the recommendation of congress vengeance was visited on the "Fawning Spaniels." The following from a Massachusetts paper may be accepted as a fair exponent of the feeling prevailing at that time :—

As Hannibal swore never to be at peace with the Romans ; so let every Whig swear by his abhorrence of slavery, by liberty and religion, by the shades of departed friends who have fallen in battle, by the ghosts of those of our brethren who have been destroyed on board of prison-ships and in loathsome dungeons, never to be at peace with those fiends the refugees, whose thefts, murders, and treasons, have filled our cup of woe.

Such being the sentiments of the community there was nothing left for the loyalists to do but fly the country. Consequently thousands were forced to emigrate to foreign shores. The English government did much for its faithful American subjects besides insisting upon the stipulations regarding them being entered in the treaty of peace. For those who feared facing the resentment of their countrymen, vessels were provided to bear them to the Bahamas, the West Indies, and to the bleak shores of Nova Scotia. In 1782 a committee was appointed by parliament to take in consideration the claims made by loyalists for indemnity. This resulted in large sums being for several years annually paid for their comfort, until a permanent board of commissioners was established, whose labors brought about the distribution by the English government of nearly fifteen millions of dollars. Sabine mentions this as "an unparalleled instance of magnanimity and justice in a nation which had expended nearly one hundred and sixteen millions in the war."

Among the American whigs, not all cried persistently for vengeance against the loyalists. There were notable and honorable exceptions, and as a rule they were found among those who had been the most active and prominent in the patriotic cause. Of these, Alexander Hamilton, from the very cessation of hostilities, pursued a policy of leniency toward tories, and plead that their mistaken course during the war should not inevitably result in



their losing citizenship and property. Early in 1788 he by his eloquence, aided by the efforts of Schuyler, succeeded in passing a bill which repealed the "Loyalist Disfranchising Act." Tyler, in his life of Patrick Henry, avers that while the war lasted no man spoke against the tories more sternly than did this patriotic Virginia statesman. The war being ended and its great purposes secured, no man, excepting perhaps Alexander Hamilton, was so prompt and so energetic in urging that all animosities of the war should be laid aside, and that a policy of magnanimous forbearance should be pursued respecting the baffled opponents of American independence. However much good these earnest men accomplished by preaching the doctrine of returning good for evil, it could not inure to the benefit of such tories as had already suffered attainder and confiscation. Among these was William Melick, against whom proceedings were instituted as early as 1778. The following is from the records of the Sussex county quarter-sessions, and is interesting as showing the mode of procedure in such cases. It is a sad commentary on the bitterness existing at that time between those closely allied in blood, to see the name of Captain Andrew Malick—William's cousin and Aaron's brother—among the jurors on the inquisition.

Sussex County SS. An Inquisition taken and made at Oxford in this County of Sussex the 20th day of June in the year of our Lord One thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight by the Oaths of the undermentioned Jury, good and lawful men of the said County before James Davison Esqr. one of the Justices of the Peace of the said County who upon their Oaths a.f.s. say that William Melick did since the fourth Day of June One thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight (to wit) On or about the first Day of January One thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight join the army of the King of Great Britain against the form of his Allegiance to his State and against the Peace of this State thê Government and Dignity of the same — — We whose names are here unto set and Seals affixed being the Jurors above named Do upon the Evidence—to us produced find the Inquisition a.f.s. true

Joseph Macken	(s)	Peter Smith	(s)
Andrew Malick	(s)	Peter Wyckoff	(s)
John Petty	(s)	Ernest Menge	(s)
George Ribble	(s)	David Vanderea	(s)
John Pettinger	(s)	Michael Gasler	(s)
Joseph Hixson	(s)	Christopher Crose	(s)
Christian Sharp	(s)	Lawrence Lambertson	(s)
Peter Williamson	(s)	David Johnson	(s)
James Williamson	(s)	Benj.n McCullough	(s)
Peter Vanette	(s)	Coart Johnson	(s)
Christian Cummins	(s)		

I do hereby certify that the above Inquisition was taken before me the Day and year above said as Witness my hand and Seal

James Davison (s)

New Jersey }  
Sussex County } Quarter Sessions November Term A. D. 1778  
present, Timothy Symmes }  
George Allen } Esqrs. Justices  
Thomas Hazen }

The State } Inquisition for joining the army of the King of Great Britain  
William Meleck } &c Proclamation being made and the said William Meleck or  
some Person in his Behalf or some Person who might think himself  
Interested being three times called to appear and traverse pursuant to  
Law the Inquisition found and taken against the said William Meleck,  
and no Person appearing to traverse the same, Ordered that his second  
Default be recorded and final Judgment entered accordingly On Motion  
of Wm Anderson for the Atty Genl.

Certified to, as a true copy, by Charles Rhodes Esq Clerk of the County of  
Sussex and state of New Jersey on the 25th day of May A. D. 1787.

An Estimate of the real and personal Estate of Sergeant William Melick late  
of the County of Sussex Province of New Jersey.

To Estate left by his Father 420 Acres Land with buildings, of which he was to have the Ninth part			
To his Share	161	2	2
To Moveables £500 value of which he was to have Ninth part.			
To his share of the above	55	11	1
To Estate left by his Father and Mother, 250 Acres, of which he was to have the seventh part			
To his Share	107	2	10
To his own Property			
To Horse, Saddle and Bridle	38		
To Grain (Wheat) 200 Bushels (& Rye)	Value 45	15	0
To summer Grain, 50 Bushels	Value 4	10	0
" 3 Sheep	1	16	0
The above Praised by us			
James Stewart Capt.			
N. J. V.			
Wm Hutchinson Capt.			
1 Batt. N. J. V.			
Sept. 12th 1783.			

TO ALL WHOM IT MAY CONCERN.

New Jersey ss. This may certify that the part and share of the Estate of  
Godfrey Mellick deceased, belonging to William Mellick the son, who forfeited  
the same by joining the army of the King of Great Britain, amounts to the sum  
of ninety pounds, one shilling and five pence Proclamation money of the State  
aforesaid, and which came into the hands of the executors of the said Godfrey  
Mellick deceased, was paid by them unto Joseph Gaston Esqr, agent for confiscated  
Estates in the County of Sussex. And they further certify that they never

received any other part of the said William Mellick's estate but the sum above mentioned, the remainder being taken out of the hands of other Persons.

As witness our hands this Fifteenth day of September 1787—

Margaret Tomer.

Andrew Malick.

Thos. Hughes.

On this 15th day of September A. D. 1787, Came before me Thomas Anderson Esqr, One of the Justices of the Peace for the County of Sussex the undernamed Subscribers, Executors of the last will and Testament of Godfrey Mellick dec'd who being sworn on the Holy Evangelists of Almighty God, depose that all the matters and things in the above Certificate contained are the Truth—and further saith not.

Taken before me  
the day and year above }  
Thomas Anderson.

Andrew Malick.

Thos. Hughes.







## CHAPTER XXXVII.

*The Old Stone House In 1788—The First Bedminster Tavern—  
John Malick, Innkeeper—The Practice of Medicine in the  
Last Century.*

The drag-net of history brings to the surface both big and little fishes. Our seine no longer sinks into deep or troubled waters but explores peaceful shallows, and we must be content with such catches as these lesser fishing-grounds afford. Now that the interest of colonial times no longer attaches to our narrative, and now that the fragrant smoke of the calumet of peace has taken the place of the flaring torch of war, it is reasonable to suppose that to some extent the general reader will lose interest in these pages. The remaining chapters must necessarily be devoted to the sober, and doubtless tame, chronicles of the ordinary incidents in the lives of the members of a simple country family. Possibly those readers who remain with the writer to the end will find that their time has not been altogether misspent. Perhaps such ones may feel the satisfaction that often comes to those few favored kinsmen and neighbors who, when the guests have departed and the lights are low, linger with their host about the fire for a parting glass, and pass a final hour in social sympathy and intercourse. Such a time always opens the sluices of the heart, and brings that comfortable enjoyment of each other that can only exist between those bound by the ties of intimate friendship.

As we occasionally look upon the miniature world revolving within the narrow horizon of the walls of the Old Stone House it ever presents a different aspect. With each successive season, with each decade and generation, changes are always to be noted. Children grow to be men and women. Familiar faces alter as their lines deepen, tracing where tears have flowed, where mirth

has lurked, where sunshine and shade have chased each other across their owners' lives. As we turn again in the year 1788 to survey the Bedminster household we discover little tremulous tones in Aaron's voice which tell of the seventy-two years that have over him gone. We find that the tide in the current of his family-life, which swelled with the birth and growth of each child, now, having passed the flood, is on the ebb. Children grown to be men and women soon find homes of their own, and Aaron's offspring were no exception to this rule. His generation, like the one it succeeded, is making way for the one that is to follow, for four of his children have taken husbands and wives, and a second Aaron is playing about the hearth of the deep-chested fireplace in the living-room.

Catharine, the oldest daughter, married in 1782 Peter Perine, a fellow-campaigner of her brother John. His emigrant ancestor and great-great-grandfather was Daniel Perine of the Channel island of Jersey, who came to America in 1665 on the ship Philip, with Governor Philip Carteret. Peter Perine and Catharine Melick moved to Salem, Washington county, New York, in which vicinity numerous descendants of their seven children are still living. Margaret, Aaron's second daughter, married, in about 1787, Joseph Gaston. They moved to Northumberland county, Pennsylvania, where they had seven children, whose descendants are distributed in different parts of that state. Daniel, Aaron's second son, had married his playmate from over the brook, Margaret Gaston, in 1785, their first child, Aaron, having been born in April 1786. Before this time he had entered into partnership with his father in the tannery, and their books and papers show them to have carried on at that time a large and prosperous business. Daniel spent his life on the "Old Farm." His twelve children were born in the stone house, five of them making it their homes for their lives.

Before the time of which we are now writing Aaron had come into possession of the entire tract of land originally purchased by his father from George Leslie. It will be remembered that Aaron's brother Peter inherited that portion of the land lying on the Lamington road. This property he conveyed to Aaron as early as 1772, but does not appear to have given possession until several years later. As we have

seen, he was living on this inheritance at the time of the capture of General Lee in 1776. From two paid bonds in my possession, aggregating two hundred and sixty-seven pounds, given by Aaron to Peter in 1777, I draw the conclusion that the transfer was consummated at that time. Sometime during the war Peter left the neighborhood, living for awhile at Perth Amboy. Ultimately he settled in the vicinity of Martinsville in Somerset county, where some of his descendants are still living.

Aaron's eldest son, John the Revolutionary soldier, celebrated the advent of peace by taking unto himself a wife. In April, 1783, he married Jane Coriel, a Somerset maiden eighteen years old. Three years later his father established him in business by building for him on the corner of the Peapack and Lamington roads the first Bedminster tavern. A portion of this original structure is still to be seen in the present edifice. Large barns and sheds were erected on the opposite corner on the present site of Martin Bunn's store. So now we know how at least one of the continental soldiers occupied himself when campaigning was over. We may readily imagine that while comfortably seated before his tap-room fire he shortened winter evenings by re-fighting his battles for the benefit of friends and admiring neighbors. In those old days, when all travel was in the saddle or on wagon wheels, the innkeeper was a man of much consequence in the community, and the door of the village tavern was not considered the entrance to a bridge connecting vice and morality.

So it was, that not only the chance traveller, catching sight of John's swinging sign, found rest and comfort at his little hostelry; here, on the sanded floor of his old-fashioned bar in cold weather, or on the long benches flanking the front porch in summer, were to be found all grades of rural society, from the village magnate to "Boots" and the hostler. Here came federalist and republican to dispute and argue over their glasses on politics and party; here came old soldiers to tell over and over again how the day was won at Princeton and at Monmouth; here came the gossiping doctor to bait his horse and only too ready to disseminate the news gained in his daily peregrinations; even the ministers thought it no sin to go out of their way in order to stop for a chat with John and his wife; nor did they consider that they



were putting an enemy in their mouths to steal away their brains, while enjoying honest libations of liquor that had mellowed within their host's oaken staves.

That some of the doctor's visits to Bedminster tavern were professional is shown by the following bill, which is an interesting exhibit as to the generous doses prescribed by old-time physicians:—

Mr. John Melick			To Wm. McKissack	Dr.
1787.				
Feb'y 26	Child	To Anthelmintic Powders		£ 0 1 6
		" Vermifuge Decoction with Senna		0 2 0
April 17		" A Visit, 3 Doses Pectoral Drops		0 3 6
		" Emetic & $\frac{1}{2}$ oz. Liquorice Juice		0 1 6
19		" 1 oz. Febrifuge Julip		0 1 0
29	Self	" ZxMercurial Ointment & Box		0 2 0
	Family	" 1 oz. Alterative Powder & $3\frac{1}{2}$ ozs. Itch Ointment		0 7 3
May 21	Daugr	" An Emetic		0 1 0
Nov'r 12	Mrs. Melick	" Cathartic Powder		0 1 6
14	Do	" $1\frac{1}{2}$ dr. Camphor		0 1 0
1788.				
May 11	Do	" 2 dr. Essential Oil & 2 Anodyne Pills		0 2 6
				<hr/> £ 1 4 9

Doctor William McKissack was at that time a resident of Pluckamin, but he subsequently removed to Bound Brook, where he died in 1831, aged seventy-seven. He enjoyed an extensive practice and was widely known and esteemed for his professional judgment and skill. The country physician of colonial days, and of the years ending with the last century, led a laborious life. Most of his waking hours were spent in riding long distances over bad roads. He was obliged to be hail-fellow well-met with every one in the county, for on his popularity largely depended his professional success. In those toying-days there was always something on the sideboard for the doctor, of which he was rarely loath to take advantage; consequently, he generally mellowed with the years, grew rotund in person, and, like Hawthorne's middle-aged Englishman, "his legs abbreviated themselves, and his stomach assumed that dignified prominence which justly belonged to that metropolis of his system." His eye contracted a merry twinkle, a chuckle lurked in his full throat always ready for use, and gradually he grew to be known as a peripatetic story-teller, and often the best gossip in the county.

So it was with Doctor McKissack. At the time of his visits to John Malick's family he was already a large, burly man with an expansive girth. Owing to his great popularity he was welcomed by every one, and, being a generous liver, it is said that sometimes he too frequently accepted the invitation of his friends and patients to recoup himself after arduous hours on the road. Doctor A. W. McDowell, in writing of old times in Pluckamin, says that on one occasion Doctor McKissack drove from that village to Somerville. Starting for home after nightfall, a little exhilarated, he mounted his horse forgetting that there was a sulky behind. On the way back, disturbed by the noise of the wheels, he continually cried out, "Turn out! Turn out behind! don't run over me!" Still the rattle of the wheels continued, and in constant fear he journeyed on. It was not until he reached Pluckamin that the discovery was made that he was astride of a harnessed horse hooked to his own empty sulky.

The gradual growth of medical knowledge in New Jersey is an interesting study. The beginning of things for the healing art may be said to date after the year 1670, for it was of then that Oldmixon, the ancient historian, wrote that the province had no lawyers, physicians, or parsons. To have been without a curer for soul, body or estate suggests a society in its most primitive stage. Even early in the last century New Jersey possessed few or no regular medical practitioners. We have already made the acquaintance of John Johnstone of Perth Amboy, who about the year 1700 stood almost alone as a skilful physician. But he held too many public offices within the gift of the people and of the crown to find time for medical practice, except when without pay he alleviated the ills of the poor. At that time wherever a church was planted there was apt to be a fair physician in the minister, but the people, generally, were obliged to doctor themselves, or, what was worse, to rely upon the services of ignorant old women and their herbs. Even up to the middle of the eighteenth century in the sparsely settled portions of the country the healing art was almost wholly in the hands of such persons. The basis of most of their remedies was sassafras and other simple roots and herbs from which decoctions were made, infused with much ignorance and not a little superstition. Professor Kalm makes mention of medical women

among the Swedes of West Jersey in 1748, and Winterbottom, in his "History of America," as late as 1796 reports that in Cape May county it was only in the most extraordinary cases that women were not called upon as doctors. In the practice of obstetrics, even in the large cities, the entire reliance was upon women, and very generally upon ignorant old women. The late Doctor Stephen Wickes, in his "History of Medicine in New Jersey," states that it was not until the close of the first half of the century that any intelligent effort was made to educate men in this branch of the profession. It met with great opposition, as ignorance, prejudice, and female modesty combined in making the belief general that it would be impossible to use the services of men in such cases. Before the Revolution, one Doctor Atwood is said to have been the first physician who dared to scandalize the feelings of the community by offering his services as an *accoucheur*. It was due to Doctors William Shippen of Philadelphia and V. B. Tennent of New Jersey that the science of midwifery assumed its place among the regular branches of medical education. Doctor Shippen advertised in the "Pennsylvania Gazette" on the first of January, 1765, the notice of his first course of lectures. In it he takes occasion to condemn the practice of calling upon the services of unskilful old women, whereby great suffering and loss of life were caused. The medical school of New York established a professorship of midwifery in 1767, Doctor Tennent being appointed to the chair.

In New Jersey, up to the close of the French and Indian wars, the main reliance of the people for medical attendance was upon the pastors of the churches. It was the custom for those who came from the old country to have taken a course of medical study as a preparation for their duties in the new world. The native ministers, also, even up to the close of the century, on being educated studied both professions, and often, not content with two, mastered so much of the law as would enable them to draw wills, conveyances and other legal instruments. John Wesley, the founder of Methodism, not only like many other parsons prescribed and supplied medicine, but published a book called "Primitive Physick," which went through thirty editions. The ignorance of the times and the extraordinary



remedies in use can best be exemplified by quoting a few prescriptions contained in this precious medical volume. For a violent bleeding of the nose a piece of white paper was recommended to be placed under the tongue. Treatment for cancer in the breast was to swallow in a pint of warm ale an infusion distilled from warts taken from a horse's leg; goose-dung was also to be applied externally. Consumptives were directed to breathe for fifteen minutes each morning in a hole cut in fresh turf. The sovereign remedy for apoplexy was a pint of salted water; for cuts, poultices of toasted cheese; for a cold in the head, orange peel thrust up the nostril, and so on, *ad nauseum*.

As the century grew older men began to appear throughout the middle colonies who could properly claim some medical knowledge, but still, they, like their predecessors the ministers and old women, relied mainly upon herbs and roots for the curing of diseases. Doctor Wickes quotes Salmon's 'Herbal' as a standard work on such remedies. This book of twelve hundred pages was issued in England in 1696 at a cost of sixty pounds per volume. It was the text-book for many New Jersey doctors up to the time of the Revolution. It must not be supposed that at this time New Jersey stood alone within the black belt of medical ignorance. Like all other colonies she reflected the customs of the home country. England was still wanting in almost all the present advanced knowledge of *materia medica* and its manner of practice. Lord Colchester narrates in his "Diary" that up to 1754 no London physician ever visited the wards of a hospital, and only on rare occasions met any of his patients. The healing was attempted through the medium of the apothecaries, who would visit the doctor at his home and describe the symptoms of the sick under their care. The celebrated Doctor Meade, who died in 1754, used to go to Batsson's coffee-house in the city and there consult with and prescribe for all the apothecaries.

Medical progress in the middle colonies can be said to date from the French and English wars—1758–66; this was certainly so in New Jersey. That province furnished a quota of one thousand men; the surgeons and surgeons' mates attached to these troops were thrown in contact with medical men connected with the British regulars, who had received much better educa-

tion than had those of the colony. The result was a recognition on the part of the Jersey doctors of their own inferiority, which bred a natural ambition to emulate the attainments of their brother officers. They learned much by this association with cultivated physicians, and to a certain extent ignorant presumption and self-sufficiency retired before a more general diffusion of knowledge. Still, a doctor would hardly be allowed to practice now with the little preparation that was considered necessary even as late as the year 1800. This applies more especially to physicians outside the larger cities. The small knowledge of the country doctor was generally gained by what he could learn while serving as an apprentice or general assistant to some more or less well-known town practitioner. Indentures for the year 1760 bound apprentices for four years and eight months, for which they paid one hundred dollars, entitling them to board, lodging, clothing, and such tuition as could be obtained through observation and experience. The indenture bound the apprentice to serve his master faithfully, "his secrets keep, his lawful commands gladly everywhere obey." He was forbidden to incur debts, play cards, or "contract matrimony" during his term. Nor could he "hant ale-houses, taverns, or play-houses."

Of course books were few, and observation, memory and an aptitude for the profession constituted the best means of obtaining a practical knowledge of *materia medica* and surgery. In those days a majority of those seeking to become practitioners were without the benefit of medical schools and colleges, and public sentiment was as much opposed to autopsies and dissection as it is now to vivisection. *Post-mortems* were condemned by the ignorant public as but little better than grave-stealing. The uneducated masses were in full accord with George Eliot's Mrs. Dollop in thinking that such slashing of the dead was a poor tale for a doctor, who, if he was good for anything should know what was the matter with you before you died, and not want to pry into your insides after you are gone. Subjects for anatomical study could with difficulty be obtained except by robbing graves. We learn from McMaster that when the medical school at Harvard college was started, a single body is said to have been the only one furnished for a whole year's lectures. In the year 1750 Doctors Bard and Middleton succeeded in obtaining the

cadaver of an executed criminal, and used it in dissection before the first anatomy class in America. In 1752 Surgeon Thomas Wood advertised in a New York paper a course of medical lectures to be concluded with "performing all the operations on the dead body." Dr. Chovet, well known in Philadelphia during the Revolution, gave notice through the press in 1778 that on the seventh of December he would begin a course of lectures on anatomy, to be demonstrated by the use of skilfully constructed wax figures. His advertisement went on to say :

As this course cannot be attended with the disagreeable sight or smell of recent diseased and putrid carcases, which often disgust even the students of Physick, as well as the curious, otherwise inclined to this useful and sublime part of natural philosophy, it is hoped this undertaking will meet with suitable encouragement.

Lectures so demonstrated, we may imagine, left the student with but a slender acquaintance with the delicate mechanism of the human body.

Old-time practitioners being without scientific culture, and having no notion of what is termed the philosophy of medical evidence, were totally ignorant of the initial treatment of cases, consequently were forced to start off with a new patient guided by intuition, conjecture, and experiment, rather than a correct and accurate diagnosis. The necessary sequence of such darkness was mistakes of deplorable frequency. At that time, as a general thing, chemists and druggists had not yet been educated, and established on the most prominent corners of the towns. The apothecary-shop of the neighborhood was usually where the doctor's saddle-bags happened to be at the time. Up to the middle of the last century, and even later, a physician's profit and support lay in the quantity of drugs he administered; his charges not being made for professional visits, but for the medicines prescribed and furnished. In consequence he must either starve or dispense drugs; his saddle-bags, therefore, were in constant requisition, and the stomachs of his poor patients paid the penalty of the unwise custom. Drugs were thus not only taken in large doses, but their use was not by any means confined to the sick. Purgative compounds were administered to the hearty and strong each spring, and it was deemed necessary that at that season of the year the blood of both old and young



should be purified by the use of generous doses of noxious mixtures. Rhubarb and molasses were forced down the throats of healthy children as a fancied preventive of disease, and mercurial medicines were used to such an extent as often to result in the falling out of the patient's teeth. Powerful tinctures, loathsome infusions and bitter barks were prescribed in such quantities as would hardly be credited by physicians of the present day.

Gentlemen of the profession, when at a loss to know what to prescribe, were always ready to pull out the lancet and relieve the patient of copious quantities of blood, often at a time when such a weakening and depleting treatment increased the malady and hastened death. Blood-letting was even resorted to in cases far gone with consumption, and by the old-time physician was considered the *alpha* and *omega* of all practice. During the prevalence of yellow fever in Philadelphia testimony was taken as to its manner of treatment. McMaster quotes from the published report, showing that one patient was bled twenty-two times in ten days, losing one hundred and seventy-six ounces of blood. From another of the sick one hundred and fifty ounces were taken in fifteen bleedings; several lost over one hundred ounces, and from one child but six years old thirty ounces were drawn. The Reverend Doctor Ashbel Green writes in his autobiography that when a lad of but nineteen, and without any medical knowledge, he used to be called upon by his father—the clergyman, physician, farmer, and distiller—to prepare medicines, let blood, extract teeth, and inoculate for smallpox.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century smallpox was still the enemy of mankind, as that dread disease had been from the sixth century, when, in Arabia, it started on its mission of death. It was annually committing fearful ravages—as many as four hundred thousand dying in Europe in one year. The East, as if desirous of compensating the world for originating this terrible scourge, gave to suffering humanity its initial knowledge of how to check its spread, for it was in Turkey that inoculation first became known. This manner of fighting the disease was introduced in the American colonies in 1721 by Doctor Zabdiel Boylston of New England, at the earnest instigation of Cotton Mather, who had learned of the success in the Ottoman Empire of such treatment. In the face of great opposition the doctor's first

experiments were made on his son, a lad of thirteen, and on two negro slaves. The result was such as to warrant his extending the operations, and during the year two hundred and forty persons were inoculated.

For a time Doctor Boylston stood alone. Physicians, people and the press were intense against this new manner of combating the smallpox. Even Franklin, who was generally far ahead of the times in his appreciation of what was valuable for the community, wrote strongly in condemnation of the practice. He altered his views in later life, as is shown by the following quotation from his memoirs, although long before that time the treatment had conquered opposition, and was generally accepted as a true preventive of this terrible scourge of the colonists :—

In 1736 I lost one of my sons, a fine boy of four years, by the smallpox, taken in the common way. I long regretted him bitterly, and still regret that I had not given it to him by inoculation. This I mention for the sake of parents who omit the operation, in the supposition that they should never forgive themselves if a child died under it. My example shows that the regret may be the same either way, and therefore that the safer should be chosen.

It was not until the close of the century that this fell distemper was robbed, to a great extent, of its terrors. Jenner in 1798 put into practical use his wonderful discovery, made some years before, that milkmaids who contracted a mild eruptive disease from handling cows' udders never suffered from the smallpox. Thus commenced the beneficent era of vaccination, which, when, after much opposition, it had been accepted by the medical fraternity, placed this terrible disease almost completely under control, and largely relieved the world from a fear of its ravages.

Let us abandon medical talk, and turn again to the "Old Stone House." There was a wedding in its best room in the autumn of 1788, which attracted much attention and caused considerable comment in the neighborhood. It was the marriage of Aaron's wife's cousin Barbara Margaret Gibbs to Daniel Cooper. Many guests were invited—at least we may so conclude, as traditions all concur in speaking of lavish hospitality on such occasions at the "Old Farm." The bidden relatives and neighbors did not find a timid or a blushing bride, for the widow Gibbs was seventy-seven years old and had been married twice before. The lusty groom was in his eighty-ninth year, and was well acquainted with marriage ceremonies, this being the fifth time

that he had deliberately placed the matrimonial noose about his neck. We are led to believe, however, that Charlotte opened her house and made the occasion one of as much festivity as if the contracting parties were entering the bonds of wedlock for the first time. Father Graff came over from New Germantown to perform the ceremony, and affix the seal of his blessing to this extraordinary connection. Charlotte's cousin did not journey with her new husband to the end, but, like her four predecessors, fell by the way. The aged Mr. Cooper, however, was not discouraged; evidently he was fond of the sex, and gave to the marriage relation his full countenance. Before receiving his final summons to relinquish wives and all mundane affairs he again led to the altar a blooming bride—his sixth wife, whom, when he died in his one hundred and first year, he left a disconsolate widow.

Daniel Cooper was born at sea, late in the seventeenth century, while his parents were emigrating from Holland. On reaching man's estate he settled on Long Hill, in Morris county, becoming a farmer and a large landowner; at one time he was high sheriff of the county and for many years sat on the bench as magistrate. This inflexible judge—"a second Daniel come to judgment"—had the unhappy experience of sentencing his own son to be hung. On the nineteenth of August, 1773, over a thousand persons were assembled in the old court-house at Morristown, which probably had never held a more interesting audience, nor one that exhibited a deeper sympathy with the course that justice had taken. They were there to hear the dread sentence of death pronounced upon four remarkably fine-looking men who were arraigned before the bar of the court. Among them was the son of Daniel Cooper, one of the magistrates sitting on the bench in judgment.

In all Mr. Cooper had eleven children. One of them, Benjamin,\* was interested with Lord Stirling in the Hibernia iron

---

Benjamin Cooper married Charity, the daughter of Charles and Mary Hoff of Pittstown, in Hunterdon Co. The wife died on the 17th of May, 1763, after giving birth to a boy, and both mother and child are buried in the old graveyard of the Bethlehem Presbyterian church. They each have separate monuments upon which is inscribed their ages as well as their names, the mother's being given as seventeen and the child's as "4 hours."



mine. In 1773 a great number of forged bills began to circulate in Morris county ; this led to the arrest and conviction of Doctor Barnabas Budd, Samuel Haines, David Reynolds and Daniel Cooper's son Benjamin, they confessing to having received the bills from one Ford, a clever counterfeiter. This principal, who was also arrested, managed to effect his escape, but his accomplices were not so fortunate ; as has been shown, they were sentenced to expiate their crime on the gallows. Only one of them, Reynolds, who seems to have been the least guilty of all, was executed. The influential connections of the others bore with great weight upon the pardoning power, resulting in a reprieve on the very morning set apart for the executions. Cooper's escape was largely due to his having furnished information regarding the robbery of the treasury of the eastern division of the province of six hundred pounds, in the year 1768. He confessed to being an accessory to this crime, Ford, with the aid of two soldiers in the garrison at Amboy, having robbed the treasury, paying him, Cooper, three hundred pounds as his share of the proceeds. For this confession, together with the influence exerted by Lord Stirling, the son of the upright judge and venerable bridegroom was subsequently pardoned.





## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

### *Some Old Manuscripts and Their Story—The Militia and General Trainings—Country Merchants of the Olden Time.*

Spread upon the table at which I am writing lies a mass of interesting manuscripts. Dating from the days of Johannes Moelich down to those of the past generation, they are as varied in form, appearance and original purposes of use as they are in age and color. These papers have at odd times been discovered in different corners and crannies of the Old Stone House. In handling them we are seemingly not only grasping the hands of all the men, women and children who have ever lived on the "Old Farm," but are also looking into the eyes and listening to the words of a by no means small minority of the Bedminster residents of the last century, as well as of worthies of reputation of the county and state.

Let us take up at random some of these yellow, time-stained papers, and hear the story they have to tell of one hundred years ago. We will begin with a large, important looking document that fairly smells of authority. It announces in the most dignified and old-fashioned phraseology that the council and assembly, in consideration of the especial trust and confidence reposed in Guisbert Sutphen, have, by the command of "His Excellency, the Governor," appointed him one of the justices to aid in the conservation of the peace in Somerset county. This was our old friend Guisbert, whose acquaintance we made at the time of the building of the Bedminster Reformed Dutch church. In the signature attached to his commission one can read with distinctness the character of New Jersey's first governor. The firm, even strokes that inscribed "Wil. Livingston" on this parchment were from no faltering hand, for vigor,

uprightness, and great tenacity of purpose are reflected from every line. The issuing of this commission must have been among the earliest of this war governor's acts, as it is dated the thirteenth of September, 1776. The attesting secretary of state is Charles Pettit, whom we have met before—at Camp Middlebrook in 1779, when he was deputy quartermaster-general under Greene.

Guisbert Sutphen's official robe seems to have descended in the line of his family, for here is another commission of thirty years later appointing his son Peter justice of the peace. This son's commission is shorn of about two-thirds of the legal verbiage that was considered necessary in his father's, though the powers granted are fully equal. The signature is that of Governor Joseph Bloomfield, a descendant of the Thomas Bloomfield who migrated in 1666 with John Pike from Newbury, Massachusetts, and aided in founding Woodbridge. This chief magistrate, who ruled from 1801 to 1802 and again from 1803 to 1812, was a fine looking man, and, with his hair always well powdered and queued, presented in the gubernatorial chair a most dignified appearance. This time the attesting secretary of state is James Linn, the father of the young lady we saw dancing with Washington at the Pluckamin fête. Peter Sutphen's honors were not confined to the judiciary. We now come upon a third commission, dated in September, 1797, appointing him to the captaincy of a troop of horse in a Somerset battalion, commanded by Major James Henry. It is signed by Richard Howell who was governor of the state from 1794 to 1801, and who during the war served in the continental line as major of Colonel Israel Shrieve's New Jersey battalion. He also commanded the New Jersey militia that aided in suppressing the Pennsylvania whiskey insurrection of 1794. His death in Trenton in 1803 at the early age of forty-nine was much deplored.

The close of the Revolution left the military instincts of the American people most actively alert, and, there no longer being a standing army, it was necessarily considered important for each state to have a thoroughly equipped militia. In New Jersey all able-bodied men of proper age were enrolled, and until far into this century the rural citizen-soldier cut a splendid figure before the eyes of his friends and neighbors. For the country people,



about him centred the acme of everything that was grand, magnificent and ostentatious, and the "trainings" of the militia were always important occasions and insured a great number of spectators. "General training days," that is, when the entire troops of the county were drilled, were considered holidays, and high carnival was held, attended often by license and disorder. In Somerset this field-day was frequently held at Pluckamin, the evolutions generally taking place on land now owned by J. Mehelm Brown, lying near the village. At such times all grades of society, white and colored, flocked to the field of Mars to witness the grand doings, and everywhere was flourish, pomp and ceremony. The importance of the country lad, arrayed in a ranger's or cavalryman's uniform, as he strutted before the admiring glances of his sweetheart, was only surpassed by the magnificence of the mounted officers, who curvetted on their caparisoned horses in all the splendor and glitter of epaulettes of bullion and cocked hats with red, white, and black feathers.

At the present time there are no public rural gatherings that approach to the old "general trainings" in prominence or glory. Old residents still remember, and enjoy telling of, the delight with which their boyish eyes looked upon the gala scene—of the flaunting banners, and the martial array of men in their starch and frippery; of the square acres of people, all dressed in their Sunday best, before whom the troops deployed, marched and counter-marched to the inspiring music of drum, fife and bugle. Booths were set up for the sale of cakes, pies, beer, and rum; huckster wagons, laden with like goodies, were distributed about the field, and eating and drinking were by no means an unimportant portion of the business of the day. When the drills and ceremonies of the militia were concluded all kinds of shows and games were instituted for the amusement of the people; gambling and horse racing were frequent features of the occasion, and, as the hours wore on, too often the power of rum asserted itself, and the day came to a close in turbulence and riot.

A legislative enactment of 1815 reorganized the militia of New Jersey. By this new system a company comprised sixty-five men, whose commissioned officers were a captain, lieutenant, and an ensign. The companies were formed into two battalions, commanded by majors, which, together, made a regiment under

a colonel. All the troops in each county constituted a brigade. The "trainings" were annual; those of the companies occurred in April; the battalions, in May; the regiments, in June; while "general trainings," or brigade drills, were ordered at the pleasure of the brigadier-general. That the Old Stone House furnished a militia officer is shown by two saffron-colored muster-rolls on the table before me. They are inscribed:—

The Muster Roll of the first company of the first Battalion of the Second Regiment in Somerset Brigade. Danl Melick, Capt.; William Fulkerson, Lieut; William Smith, Insign.

Then follow fifty-one names, among them those of Demund, Bunn, Lane, Powlison, Todd, Van Doren, and many others familiar to the Bedminster ears of to-day. Evidently there has been but little change in the resident families of the township since 1806, which is the date of these company rolls. One of these lists was written by John Blair, who seems to have been the general scrivener for the community, as numerous bonds, conveyances and other important papers in my hands are exhibits of his excellent penmanship. He was for many years a storekeeper, or country merchant, at the Larger Cross Roads, and considered a business man of more than ordinary intelligence.

Lieutenant William Fulkerson purchased from Aaron Malick on the eleventh of April, 1800, the Bedminster tavern, with thirty acres of land extending to the north branch of the Raritan river, the consideration being three hundred and fifty-one pounds, proclamation money. By this time Aaron's son John had grown tired of keeping a "public;" a few years later he removed with his family to Schoharie county, New York, where he died at the age of seventy-five, in the year 1834. Captain Fulkerson, as he was afterward known, continued to be the Bedminster tavern-keeper until his death about the year 1820. He is remembered as an honorable old gentleman, much respected in the neighborhood, though as he advanced in life he had a failing which was not uncommon with his generation. On infrequent occasions he had seasons of intemperance, lasting a week or ten days. At such times his mind ran very much on his military experiences, which had comprised Revolutionary as well as militia service; his habit was then to talk of himself, using often a favorite expression which he applied to any and everything that met his approval:

"I honor the movement." He used this phrase to such an extent that in later life the "Cross Roads" boys disrespectfully dubbed him—"The Old Movement."

We can now turn from these militiamen, with their vengeful blades, to consider more peaceful pursuits, for our next old paper treats of tending flocks. Instead of the tramp of horse, accoutred for war, we hear the multitudinous clatter of little hoofs, and view spacious meadows where foolish sheep with bent heads, and necks flaked in soft, yellow wool, are "nibbling sharp-toothed the rich, thick-growing blades." But here is the paper referred to; it leads us to believe that Aaron's flocks were too great for his pasture supply:—

Articles of Agreement made this twenty-ninth day and the year of our Lord one thousand Seven hundred and Eighty four with Elisha Lowrance that is to Let him have twenty one sheep valued at Nine Shillings per head, all said sheep the above mentioned Lowrance is to have for four years from this Date and he Doth Agree to give unto Aaron Malick one pound of wool per head yearly, and Return the sheep at the Expiration of four years as Good as when he Received or the money if said Mealick Chuses, as witness my hand this twenty Ninth day, 1784.

ELISHA LOWRANCE.

In turning over these old papers one finds among them a great number of bonds, notes and due bills, their amounts varying from a few shillings to several hundred pounds. These obligations are signed by many different persons, and bear no evidence as to their having been paid. Many of them were given by Aaron and Daniel Melick in payment of debts, and returned to them in the ordinary way of business on maturity. But how can we explain finding in the Old Stone House those that were not their obligations? If they had been held by members of the family as evidences of debt one would suppose that they would have been retained only in case of non-payment. That many of them must have been paid is proven by the well-known character of the persons whose signatures they bear. As a rule they are not of those who would have permitted their promises to pay to have remained dishonored. Besides, at that time of a no-circulating-medium, notes were rarely issued by those unable to pay, especially in quiet country communities, where rogues were not in fashion and spendthrifts were rare. Fortunately the people of Bedminster in the last century did not need much money. Bank bills were of course unknown. Before 1781 the



nearest place of deposit was at Baltimore, Maryland, then a place of ten thousand people. It was in that year that the bank of North America was established in Philadelphia, and three years later the bank of New York and the Massachusetts bank in Boston opened their doors for business. One of the earliest, if not the earliest, financial institution in our state was the "Bank of New Jersey" at New Brunswick, chartered in 1807, which was followed in 1812 by the "State Bank" at the same place. In Somerset county the cost of living was but little; land and taxes were low, ministers' salaries were small, farmers raised enough to supply their table and feed their stock, and made much of the clothing needed by their families. For what they had to buy at stores, blacksmith-shops and vendues, they were all in excellent credit, and notes and barter served as cash.

Mr Jacob Puxarman

For John Boylan, Dr.

1785	To Fundings	Lo - 2-1
Apr 26	To 1/2 Tea 1/3 1/2 Sugar	8- 1-8
28	To 1 2d Rum	1-4
May 4	To 1 1/2 Coffee	1-6
27	To 1 1/2 Molasses	9-
31	To 1 1/2 Sugar	1-5
June 13	To 1 1/2 Ditto	8-
July 29	To 1 1/2 Coffee	1 62
	To 1 1/2 Sugar	9-
	To 1 1/2 Molasses	8-
	To 1/2 Tea	1-0
	To 1 Chamber pot	1-3
		<u>£ 0. 13-9</u>

May the 8th 1789. Received the above sum from  
Mr Aaron Mellick in full by me John Boylan

The members of the family in which we are interested were not infrequent purchasers at the country stores. This is evident from the multifarious paid bills to be seen among these relics of the quill on the table. We will examine a few of them, choosing several of various dates in order to learn the prices that prevailed, and that we may know for what manner of goods farmers went to the country merchant. We will begin with one of a store at Pluckamin, reproduced on the preceding page.

This storekeeper is the same "Captain Bullion" whom we found standing behind his counter on that exciting Sunday in the winter of 1776, when Washington and his soldier-lads, fresh from Princeton and Trenton, encamped at Pluckamin. Though over one hundred years old the ink that recorded the purchases entered in this bill is still distinctly black, and in the flourishes and figures it inscribed it has preserved an excellent exhibit of the bookkeeper's art of that time. John Boylan was a man of substance, and in 1788 was one of the Somerset county judges. He carried on an extensive mercantile business, having, besides his Pluckamin store, stands at Liberty Corner and at Vealtown—Bernardsville.

About the year 1790 this Revolutionary store-keeper disappears from view, and for a number of years thereafter the leading merchant of the vicinity was George I. Bergen, the son of John B. Bergen and Sarah Stryker of Cranbury. By his energy and perseverance he developed in his capacious Pluckamin store a very large trade which extended over a wide area of country, overriding competitors, and causing several store-keepers in the neighborhood to go out of business. After 1800 he dealt largely in pork and provisions for the European markets, the great armies at that time creating a brisk demand and high prices. Owing to the embargo of 1808, followed by the non-intercourse act, he became financially embarrassed, and a few years later was obliged to close up his business. Subsequently, in company with other New Jersey families, he settled in Illinois, where his descendants now live.

Bergen's successor at Pluckamin was John Hunt, the son of that Colonel Stephen Hunt who commanded a New Jersey provisional regiment at the outset of the Revolution. He estab-

lished his business before 1806 as is indicated by the following bill:—

Pluckamin May 1, 1806.

Capt. Daniel Mellick

Bought of John Hunt.

1½ yds Cloth	22 6	£ 1 13 9
3 Scanes Silk	6	1 6
1 D twist		6
1½ Doz Buttons	2 9	4 2
1 Vest Shape		7 6
3 Yds B'lk Velvet	7	1 1 0
2 D Holland	3	6 0
1 Doz Molds		3
1 pr Gloves		6 0
1½ yds Ribbon	1 3	1 11
1½ D D	1 6	2 3
1 Paper pins		1 6
11 Buttons		1 2
		<hr/>
		£ 4 7 6

Aaron and Daniel Melick did not confine their purchasing to near-by stores. The sale and shipment of the products of their tannery and farm required their making frequent journeys to tide-water at New Brunswick. This city was at that time, and for many years later, the centre of an active trade, and possessed numerous large general stores. We may be sure that the women of the stone house had plenty of commissions to be filled when their husbands went "to town." That the visitors did not return empty-handed is evidenced by the bills that have been preserved, dated at New Brunswick. Here is one that is interesting as showing the great variety of goods that could be bought under one roof:—

New Brunswick, Nov. 4th, 1800.

Mr. Melick

Bought of Sarah Brush.

½ Dozen China cups & saucers		£ 0 12 0
1 Tea pot, 4 6, 1 Sugar Bowl, 3 6, 1 Cream p. 2		0 10 0
½ Doz. Supe plates	3 3	0 3 3
½ Doz. Blue edge Do	3 3	0 3 3
1 Oval Dish	2	0 2 0
5⁄8 of Swansdown		0 5 6
2⁄3 of Flannel	2 9	0 1 10
1 Stick of twist		0 0 6
1 Doz. Small Buttons	1d	0 1 0
2 Bandannah Hankerchiefs	6 6	0 13 0
8 pains of 8 By 10 Glass	10d	0 6 8
1 lb. Hyson Skin tea		0 8 0



$\frac{1}{2}$ Doz. 7 By 9 Glass	8d	£ 0 4 0
Sundreys of wood ware		0 9 9
To $1\frac{1}{2}$ Bushels of Coarse Salt	8	0 12 0
		<hr/>
		£ 4 10 9
To Cash		2 0 0
		<hr/>
		£ 6 10 9

Commencing with the year 1785 New Brunswick experienced a remarkable era of prosperity. It continued until 1834, when the opening for business of the Delaware and Raritan canal and the New Jersey railroad paralyzed industries that the inhabitants of the city had hoped were to be perpetual. It prospered not only from the fact of its being in the heart of a rich agricultural, long-settled country, but because, being located on the Raritan near the head of navigation, it was the terminus of several business thoroughfares, some of which extended all the way to Pennsylvania. The traffic across the state between these years was something enormous. Great Conestoga wagons, painted blue, from Pennsylvania, and others almost as large from Hunterdon county, passed daily over the Anwell road to New Brunswick, many of them drawn by four and six horses, all heavily laden with flour, flax, grain and other produce. The wagons conveying the productions of Sussex, Warren, Morris and Somerset counties came by way of Bound Brook, and so on, down the Raritan valley. It is said that at one time on an account being kept of the teams passing through Middlebrook in one day they were found to number five hundred. Hence, probably, no place in the middle colonies, outside of New York and Philadelphia, contained busier storekeepers, mechanics and tradesmen of all kinds than did this Middlesex city; every one had employment, and its wharves were scenes of busy activity.

All the blessings flowing from the Raritan river as an artery of commerce did not at that time alone fall upon New Brunswick. One mile above the city was another busy shipping point—Raritan Landing. Seated amid the rural quiet of its grassy surroundings, this place at the present time offers no indication of the commercial prosperity that gave it an active business experience of nearly half a century. The writer has often heard his father tell of his first visit to New Brunswick, in about the year 1825, when he rode from the “Old Farm” on a load of

corn, in the company of an elder brother. On leaving Bound Brook, instead of crossing the bridge and continuing along the "pike," they travelled the river road, unconsciously following in the footsteps of their great-grandfather, Johannes, when, seventy-five years before, he had first made his way down the Raritan valley. On reaching the "Landing" the load of corn was sold to Michael Garrish, a prominent buyer and shipper of produce who had several warehouses facing the road running from the river road to the "Landing" bridge. They found this connecting road well built up—the north side almost continuously so—with blacksmith shops, cooper-shops, stores and warehouses. At the bridge end was a large grist-mill operated by Miles Smith, a wealthy miller who lived in considerable style at the near-by "Ross Hall." Facing the main highway, and opposite this connecting road, was the stand, or store, of John Pool, whose residence was that handsome colonial stone mansion on the hill, built by Cornelius Lowe, Jr. in 1741, and which, still in excellent preservation, furnishes a most pleasing example of colonial architecture. Mr. Pool carried on an extensive business with the farmers and country merchants, buying their produce and supplying them with salt, plaster and heavy goods.

The merchants and forwarders of New Brunswick occupied broad lots extending from Burnet and Water streets to the river. Their retail stores and dwellings, which were often in one building, faced the streets. In the rear their warehouses fronted a continuous wooden wharf, or bulkhead, broad enough to admit of the passage of teams; frequently the wharves and streets were connected by a private alley. Here on this river-front a lucrative trade was carried on which amassed for not a few merchants considerable fortunes. On Water street were Matthew Freeman, afterward Ayres & Freeman, who remained in business till 1828, Josiah Stout, Samuel Holcomb, Peter P. Runyon, Samuel Metlar and others. On Burnet street, among others, were Colonel John Neilson, James Richmond, Samuel Brush, James Schureman, and James Bennet, afterward James Bishop & Co. All of these merchants owned sloops—some of the larger dealers owned two or three—so at all times there was a very respectable fleet of small craft moored along the Raritan river front. These yessels carried the produce of the back country to New York, and returned

with cargoes of salt, plaster, barrelled-fish and other general merchandise which were sold from the Burnet and Water street stores to the farmers and country storekeepers.

Up to the time of steamboats, many sloops, that were built for that purpose, served as packets for carrying passengers. When we accompanied Johannes to Perth Amboy in 1752 we learned something of the sloop navigation of that period. As the century waned many improvements had been made that added to the comfort of travelling by water, until "a cabin fitted up with a tea-table" was no longer considered so luxurious an appointment as to warrant its being advertised to attract passengers. The year 1788 saw a great revival of business throughout the middle colonies, and the era of stagnation which had continued since the close of the war gave way to one of activity and enterprise. In New York city, in the few months of the open and mild winter of 1778-9, the change was both sudden and extraordinary. Houses and stores sprang up in every direction, and the country roads north of Chambers street began to take on the aspect of a town. With the return of prosperity came a marked increase in the number of travellers, and from this time dates the introduction of large passenger sloops with much heavier tonnage and greater breadth of beam. Often a vessel of seventy tons burden and less than sixty feet in length would be twenty-two feet wide; as the cabin occupied much of the space below deck the passenger accommodations equalled those found on a full-rigged ship of three hundred tons, built for crossing the ocean. When wind and tide served, these short, broad and shallow sloops could make the passage to New York within about four hours, but with adverse winds and bad weather the voyage was often prolonged for two days.

It would appear that the comforts of sloop travel on the Delaware at the beginning of this century were much less than what travellers experienced on the New York end of the journey. From 1800 to 1810, on what was known as the Amboy and Burlington route the water passage from the latter place to Philadelphia was by the little sloop "Mayflower," owned and commanded by the then celebrated taciturn Captain Jacob Myers. Often twenty-four hours were consumed between the two places, though no provision was made to supply the passengers with food



and light. No certainty was ever felt by travellers as to the hour of starting. They were generally required to be on board at seven in the morning, but when ready to cast off the lines, did a load of apples or country produce appear on the wharf the sailing was postponed until the new freight was on board, and until it was very sure that no more was in sight. Thus it was often midday before the "Mayflower" hauled out into the stream and her passengers commenced bobbing and dodging to keep their heads clear of the ever-moving boom. If the comforts of the voyage at the New York end of the route were greater, so, owing to the open water, were the dangers. The "New Jersey Journal," No. 787, recites that on Saturday the tenth of November, 1798, one of the Elizabethtown and New York packet sloops capsized off Bergen Point, drowning eight passengers, men, women and children, from Union and Morris counties.

In the year 1807 Fulton astonished the world by paddling in the "Clermont" from New York to Albany, averaging five miles an hour irrespective of winds and currents. A few years later John R. and Robert James Livingston purchased from Robert R. Livingston and Robert Fulton, who owned the exclusive legislative privileges of operating steamboats in New York waters, the right to establish a steam line from New Brunswick to New York. They constructed at a cost of twenty-six thousand dollars a boat one hundred and thirty feet long and twenty feet beam, which they named the "Raritan," and ran as a packet between those places, touching at Elizabethtown-point and at other landings on the Jersey and Staten Island shores. For two years she was operated at a loss, but eventually the enterprise became profitable.

This induced Colonel Aaron Ogden to build a steamboat called the "Seahorse," about one third the dimensions of the "Raritan," which he ran from Elizabethtown-point, from where he had been operating a sloop ferry for a number of years. As Colonel Ogden had no right to ply in New York waters the trips of the "Seahorse" ended off Bedloe's Island, where passengers were transferred to a boat propelled by horse-power, which conveyed them to the city. Thomas Gibbons, an eminent lawyer and planter of Georgia, was the owner of an undivided half of the "Ancient Ferry" upon which the "Seahorse" was running, Colonel Ogden

being the owner of the other half, and the lessee for a term of years of Gibbons' moiety. Upon the expiration of this lease Ogden and Gibbons quarrelled as to the conditions of a partnership to which Gibbons insisted upon being admitted. This resulted some time previous to 1815 in Gibbons bringing out a new boat, the "Bellona," which was soon plying to New Brunswick in connection with the "Old Union Line" to Philadelphia. The company operated two lines of transit between that city and New York. The first was by post-chaise, one leaving number 145 Broadway each morning at five o'clock, proceeding to Whitehall ferry and crossing to Staten Island; thence to Blazing Star where the Kills was crossed, then on through Woodbridge, New Brunswick and Princeton, crossing the Delaware at Bristol and arriving in Philadelphia at five o'clock the same evening. Before me as I write is an old advertisement of the second route of this "Union Line" dated in 1819. It announces:—

The Vice-President's steamboat *Nautilus* will leave New York every day (Sundays excepted) from Whitehall Wharf, at eleven o'clock a. m. From her the passengers will be received without delay into the superior fast-sailing steamboat *Bellona*, Capt. Vanderbelt, for Brunswick; from thence in Post Chaises to Trenton, where they lodge, and arrive next morning at ten o'clock in Philadelphia with the commodious and fast-sailing steamboat, *Philadelphia*, Capt. Jenkins.

The announcement that passengers would be received by the "Bellona" at Staten Island was an advertising fiction, the exchange being made at the mouth of the Kills. As Gibbons still was without the right to navigate the New York waters with steam he ran his boat in connection with the ferry licensed to ply between New York and Staten Island.

Doubtless, travellers by the "Old Union Line" considered that the height of comfort had been reached in the transit from the Hudson to the Delaware. The "Bellona" was a small single-decked, plainly-finished steamboat, but, together with her sister boat, the "Thistle," put on the route soon after, was considered a marvel of speed and beauty. Compared with a boat of the present day she presented but a mean appearance. Her cabin accommodations were meagre, being confined to a small saloon abaft the wheel on the main deck. No soft cushions, upholstered chairs or curtained windows added to the comfort of the passengers. Ladies sat on hard-backed benches, while men

were well content with round wooden stools. The speed of "the fast sailing and superior steamboat Bellona" did not exceed from ten to twelve miles an hour, but this her passengers thought exhilarating as compared with the slow and uncertain transit of the sloops of a few years previous. Her captain was the father of the late William H. Vanderbilt—the "Old Commodore"—then a long, lank youth of twenty-four years of age. As the commander of this fine vessel he was looked up to by the travelling public, and he enjoyed the princely income of fifty dollars a month for his services. The wife of "Captain Corneel," as he was called—whom he had married when he was but nineteen—kept "Bellona Hall," a small tavern on the steamboat-landing at New Brunswick, where she proved to be a most popular and capable hostess. She saved much money, which later contributed to assist her husband in putting on the river opposition boats whereby he laid the foundation of his great fortune.

We must not permit ourselves to reflect with contempt upon the pride with which our fathers and grandfathers walked the deck of the "Bellona," flattering themselves, perhaps, with the idea that in her the science of locomotion had attained to its full perfection. In the picture one's mind draws of the progress and development of the means of river navigation, from the sloop to the magnificent craft of the present day, the men of 1819 and their little steamers do not occupy a middle distance; on the contrary, they are well in the foreground, for their strides from what had been, covered much more space than have those of their posterity in reaching to-day's apparent perfection of transit.

In the sloop age the New Brunswick masters did not secure all the passengers. Like vessels sailed from Elizabethtown-point, to which some stages ran, and from early days there had been a stage line across country to the Hudson. In 1772 John Meserau's "Flying Machine" was advertised to leave Paulus Hook thrice weekly for Philadelphia. This "Machine," like the stages we saw at Perth Amboy in 1752, was still a country wagon, but it had four horses, with changes, and was supposed to fly over the ruts and stumps at such a high rate of speed as to reach the Delaware within two days. In the same year—1772—an act of the assembly authorized a lottery to raise one thou-



sand and fifty pounds to pay for gravelling the causeway over the Newark meadows. But the patient colonists were obliged to wait two years before commencing the work, as it was not until 1774 that the king's sanction was obtained. Previous to this improvement being made the passage of this bit of road was attended with both delay and danger. Passengers by the "Flying Machine" were forced to cross from New York to Paulus Hook the night before starting, which counteracted to a considerable extent the advantage of flying overland instead of sailing leisurely by sloop.

Elkanah Watson, who journeyed from New York to Philadelphia in 1784, recorded his experiences in a journal. He crossed the Hudson on a cold winter's day in an open ferry-boat, and the Hackensack and the Passaic on the ice. The first night was spent at Newark, which he called a handsome town with spacious streets bordered by trees, and the surrounding country distinguished for its orchards and advanced culture. The next journey was by stage-sleigh as far as Princeton, and on the third day Philadelphia was reached. Another traveller, of just ten years later, made some interesting notes on his journey. He recites that after spending an hour and a half on the Hudson ferry he left Paulus Hook by the coach "Industry" paying five dollars for his seat. In crossing the cedar swamp, before reaching Newark, he made the acquaintance of New Jersey mosquitos, "which," as he observes, "bit our legs and hands exceedingly; where they fix they will continue, if not disturbed, till they swell four times their ordinary size, when they absolutely fall off and burst from their fullness." The Passaic river was crossed by the "Industry" on a "scoue," propelled by pulling a rope which was fastened to the further shore. He calls New Brunswick a very pleasant town. The Raritan bridge had been carried away by a storm, but the coach and six horses was ferried in a "scoue" in six minutes. The want of a bridge over the Raritan did not long delay travel, as the journal of a tourist of the following year, in speaking of New Brunswick, mentions the "very neat and commodious wooden bridge that has been thrown across the Raritan river." Our first traveller's stage-coach did not go beyond New Brunswick, a wagon without springs being used as far as Prince-

ton. The road was so full of deep holes and rolling stones that on reaching the college town the passengers had been so badly shaken that many of them were sick and could hardly stand.

Coaches at that time were yet few, being the exception rather than the rule. The public conveyances, generally, were long-bodied stage-wagons without doors, windows or panels. Leathern curtains were let down to keep out the rain, and entrance was had over the whiffle-trees and front wheels, the passengers clambering back over the intervening benches. After the present century came in, land travel was made more expeditious and the discomforts much lessened. Heavy English mail-coaches, swung on huge leather springs, were introduced, and more frequent changes of horses greatly diminished the time between New York and Philadelphia. The traffic so rapidly increased that, long before the advent of the railroad, how to carry the many passengers became a no inconsiderable problem.

In the palmy days of road and steamboat travel the hour that heralded the arrival of the southern coaches was the most important one of the day for New Brunswick citizens. As the time drew near, a crowd gathered where the taverns clustered in Albany street, the eyes of each one of the expectant throng bending in the same direction. Presently the eager cry, "here they come! here they come!" passed from mouth to mouth. Then with loud huzzas the six-horse coaches, piled with luggage, topped with people, and coated with dust, came swinging around the corner of George into Albany street. With much clatter of hoof and rumble of wheel, cracking of whip and blowing of horn, the long line of lurching vehicles, often numbering thirty, rapidly approached, until with a final flourish of whip and blast of bugle their drivers drew rein in front of the City Hotel and the White Hall and Bell taverns. Then came hubbub and excitement, for Albany street was alive with an animated multitude. To the New Brunswick people it meant more than the arrival of passengers; with them came letters, papers and news from the outside world. The Albany street arrival was a scene witnessed only during those months when the steamboats were not running. When navigation was open, the coaches on entering town turned down New street to Burnet street, thence to the landing, where the steamboat was waiting to continue the journey. The last

stop made before reaching New Brunswick was at Enos Ayres' well-known tavern, five miles south of the town at Dunham's corners, a hamlet whose godfather was Captain Jehu Dunham. Regular travellers by the road were for a time much interested in this hostelry because of its landlord's daughter, who before she was twenty-eight years old had had four husbands. She is said to have been very beautiful, and to have secured her numerous consorts by physical rather than mental perfections. Her conversational powers were limited, but through the daily scanning of over two hundred coach passengers she probably acquired the habit of "looking unutterable things."

Before turning our backs on New Brunswick we will do a little more shopping, and thus learn something of the prices at which dry and wet goods were sold in 1809 :

NEW BRUNSWICK 23d Augt. 1809.

Mr. Daniel Melick

Bot. of Van Dorn & Ditmars

14 lbs Brown Sugar	6 7 lbs	£0 12 0
$\frac{1}{2}$ lb. Soushong tea	8	4 0
$\frac{1}{2}$ " Hyson Skin "	8	4 0
1 " Ground Coffee	2	2 0
2 Bus. Coarse Salt	7	14 0
1 " Fine Do	6	6 0
4 Yds Super Calico	3 6	14 0
$1\frac{1}{4}$ " Coarse "	1 9	2 2
1 Bus fine sand		1 0
		<hr/>
		£2 19 2

Received payment in full

Van Dorn & Ditmars.







## CHAPTER XXXIX.

*The Old Papers Continue Their Story—The Reverend John Duryea of the Bedminster Reformed Dutch Church—The Tax on Carriages—Somerset's Paupers—Daniel Melick's Voyage to Georgia—Slaveholding on The Old Farm.*

Aladdin, standing in the cave of the magic lamp, could with difficulty decide into which glittering pile of gems his hand should be thrust. We, too, feel this *embarras de richesse* in the presence of our heap of interesting manuscripts on the table. When each scrap speaks so eloquently of past generations, it is not easy to determine which one shall next claim our attention. At a venture we will take up a package of narrow papers that time has tanned to the hue of old gold. Ah! on looking through them we find that they do not belie their color, as they all treat of money. They are receipts for salary given by the Reverend John Duryea, the third clergyman of the Bedminster Reformed Dutch church. They extend over a period of several months of the years 1789 and 1790, and are issued to the church treasurer and to individual members of the congregation, in some instances being but for a few shillings. The domine evidently in part collected his own salary and often had difficulty in doing so. Even the treasurer was not always on time in his payments, as is made plain by the following exhibit :—

Received Bedminster August 20th, 1789 of the Treasurer of the Congregation Mr. Guisbert Sutphen Esqr. the sum of Seventeen Pounds Thirteen Shillings & three pence, part of the Sallery which was Due the 8th of July 1789.

£17, 13, 3.

John Duryea.

Recd. Bedminster Sept. 1, 1789 of Mr. Guisbert Sutphen, Esq. the sum of Two Pounds Eleven Shillings which was Due the 8th of July 1789.

£2, 11, 0.

John Duryea.

This collecting by the minister from members of the congregation must have been attended by much inconvenience, as his parishioners were widely distributed, and their subscriptions, as is shown by a list in my possession, were often exceedingly small. That they were not inclined to pay even these meagre sums is told us by a writer in the tenth number of the Somerville magazine, "Our Home." He narrates that when the invitation to preach was extended to Mr. Duryea the call was conveyed to him by John Vroom, an explanation being made that there was but little money in the congregation but that all his temporal wants should be provided for. He preached several months without any payment being made, whereupon, after a regular morning sermon he thus addressed his people:—"You made certain promises to me if I would preach for you. Several sermons have been given and I have performed my part. A bargain thus made becomes a sacred contract. If you refuse, you are a congregation of story-tellers; and you, John Vroom, are the biggest liar of them all." From such a circumstance we may fairly deduce that while this preacher was under the sounding board restful sleep did not unbidden "creep from pew to pew."

Jacob R. Hardenbergh, the Revolutionary pastor of Bedminster church, resigned in 1781 and removed to Rosendale on the Hudson, where he preached until 1786, when he was called to the presidency of Queen's, now Rutgers' college. For over two years the Bedminster people were without a minister, when Theodore F. Romeyn, the grandson of Domine Theodorus Jacobus Frelinghuysen, was called. His pastorate included the Raritan congregation, the Readington people having before this time secured a minister of their own. On the death of Mr. Romeyn in 1785 the two congregations united in calling the Reverend John Duryea. Born in 1760, he was licensed to preach by the New York synod in May, 1784. In this, his first charge, two thirds of his services were given to the Raritan congregation and one third to Bedminster, and he was bound by his call to preach alternately in Dutch and English. Mr. Duryea was a devout man and loved to preach, but his preaching did not satisfy the more intelligent portion of his people. His sermons were extempore and he was not inclined to over study in their preparation. Perhaps this rugged divine was apt at times to be too abrupt

to suit all of his hearers; at any rate dissatisfaction with his pastorate spread, forcing him to resign his charge over the two churches in the autumn of 1788. At that time the Bedminster congregation severed its connection with that of Raritan, and Mr. Duryea continued to serve Bedminster for one year in connection with an unorganized body of hearers at White House and Pottersville in Hunterdon county. He then removed to Essex county, New Jersey, and finally died at the Notch, near the village of Little Falls, in 1836.

In the last century it was not usual for farmers in Somerset county to own carriages. As a rule they were content with their white covered farm wagons, the bodies of which, on Sundays, were strewn with clean straw, while chairs from the kitchen served as seats. Aaron Malick in the year 1796 appears to have considered himself well-enough-to-do to warrant his riding in a four-wheeled carriage, and to warrant his paying the government a tax for the privilege, which at that time was a necessary consequence of such a luxury. Here is the proof:—

THIS IS TO CERTIFY, THAT AARON MELICK OF BEDMINSTER in the County OF SOMERSET—hath paid the Duty of two Dollars upon a four Wheel Carriage called A LIGHT WAGGON owned by him, HAVING FRAMED POSTS & A TOP, & RESTING ON WOODEN SPARS—to be drawn by two Horses—for the Conveyance of more than one Person; for the Year to end on the 30th Day of September 1797.

Samuel Annin

Collector of the Revenue,  
10th Division of New Jersey.

September 19, 96.  
Receid Sept. 1796.

This carriage tax was imposed by congress in the general impost bill of 1794. It created much dissatisfaction, especially among the republicans. The carriage-makers claimed this tax to be unconstitutional, and carried the question to the supreme court; but the government was sustained, and the law remained in force until Jefferson and the republicans came into power. The impost on pleasure-wagons was removed in 1802, together with many other obnoxious impositions; the effort caused a bitter contest in congress between the federalists and republicans, the debate lasting for five days. The result was considered a great triumph for Jefferson's administration, and, of course, was bitterly deplored by the federalists; they urged that the carriage tax had been only paid by the rich, and quoted in proof



the fact that Virginia had six hundred and sixty-six coaches paying tax while Massachusetts had but ninety-nine.

Now turn your eyes, and we will look on poverty. He is poor whose expenses exceed his income. This is the kind of poverty that harasses a man and makes him truly miserable, for sooner or later he is struggling in the vain endeavor to keep up a hollow show. Such a person is waging an unequal fight against that well equipped foe, reality, armed with the weakest of all weapons, pretence. The Bedminster citizens now brought into view by our old papers are not of this unhappy class. They have robbed poverty of at least one of its stings, by honestly acknowledging their indigence. They are the county paupers. In the last century there were in New Jersey neither almshouses nor poor-farms. In some counties, notably in Hudson, it was the custom to sell the paupers at auction to the lowest bidder; the amount bid was paid to the buyer by the overseers of the poor, which bound him to mend the pauper's clothes, to furnish him with a good bed, with washing, lodging and victuals for one year, during which time the pauper was to work for the buyer as much as he was able. All new clothing was supplied by the county.

The Old Stone House for three generations furnished overseers of the poor for Bedminster township. After the justices of the peace had passed upon the application of a pauper for maintenance it was the duty of the overseers to provide for the impoverished-one a comfortable home, generally with a farmer. The amount paid for a year's support—judging from the bills before me—varied considerably, depending somewhat upon the condition of the paupers, and their ability to aid the families with whom they were living. On the twenty-fifth of January, 1797, James Wintersteen received from "Daniel Melick, one of the overseers of the poor," forty-two shillings "in full for keeping Widow Mahew;" while on the eighteenth of March, of the same year, Simon Hagerman, Jr., received seven pounds, ten shillings, "for keeping Leaney Rush a pauper on s'd Town." On the twenty-third of December, 1803, Elizabeth Castner was paid "Twenty Dollars in full for the support of Salley for the year Ending next Town meeting Day," while the following bill shows that in the next year double that amount was paid for a pauper's support:—

Mr. Dan'l Melick, overseer of the poor for Bedminster, Dr.  
1804 To Charles Berger

May 5 To Keeping Margaret Biderman a pauper 54		40 50
weeks at 76 cents pr week		25
Snuff		
		<hr/> \$40 75

Rec'd May 14th 1804 from Dan'l Melick  
the above sum of Forty Dollars and seventy five cents  
for my father,

Catherine Berger.

It was the duty of the overseers not only to secure comfortable homes for their charges, but to clothe them and to furnish them with extra necessaries. Thus we find that on the seventh of January, 1804, John Demund was paid "\$2.50 for making a suit of clothes for Gideon Berry, a pauper." We may suppose that this charge did not include the cloth. On the twenty-sixth of April, the same year, Levi Sutton, a farmer living near the lower lime-kiln on the Peapack road, was paid "One Dollar and twenty-five cents for 10lbs of pickle pork for Joseph Richardson last fall." The next bill is interesting because of its introducing us to a prominent Bedminster citizen of that day:—

Mr. Daniel Melick, Overseer of the Poor		
1796	To Nicholas Arrosmith	Dr.
Augt 3d	To 2½ Yds Lining	£ 7 6
	" 2 Sks thread	4
	" 1 Thimble	3
		<hr/>
Decr	For the Widow Wortman	8 1
Decr 29	To 2 yds Coating	17 0
1797	For Anny Oppey	
Feb'y 2	To paid Jacob Van Deventer	18 0
	For the Widow Wortman	
		<hr/> £ 2 3 1

Rec'd of Daniel Melick overseer of the poor, the above  
Sum of Two pounds 3-1 Nich's Arrosmith.

Nicholas Arrosmith was a contemporary of Daniel Melick, and a near neighbor, living just over the brook. In 1792 he purchased from Robert Gaston the property now known as Schomp's mills, rebuilding the grist and saw mills, and improving the water-power. He also farmed extensively, and kept a general store which was located on the east side of the Peapack road, just beyond the bridge. At that time the road mounted the hill

instead of following the bank of the river as at present. Mr. Arrosmith was without doubt the most conspicuous Bedminster resident of that day; he was a judge of the county court, filled many other positions of honor and trust in the community, and at his death left a large estate.

A bill of Doctor Robert Henry, dated the twentieth of September, 1756, "For medicine and attendance done for Mrs. Biderman, one pound," shows that the paupers when ill were not neglected. Doctor Henry graduated at Princeton in 1776, and in the spring of the following year was commissioned as surgeon's mate in the general hospital, continental army, as assistant to Doctor Cochran, whom we met at Morristown in 1780. He afterwards entered the line, serving four years in Colonel Read's regiment, General Poor's brigade. He was in several engagements, and in the fight at Croton river Colonel Greene of Rhode Island and Major Flagg were killed by his side, and he himself was wounded and taken prisoner. He continued in the service until the army was disbanded, when he settled in Bedminster, where he practiced medicine until his death in 1800. So it is that our old papers tell us how the Bedminster poor were cared for in sickness and in health. They do more than this; they bring us to the paltry bed of the pauper when death has burst the prison bars of his poverty, and made him the equal of princes.

*Sir please pay the Bearer hereof Frederick Young  
or order the sum of ten shillings it being for  
a shirt that Thomas Carey was buried in -  
from your Humble servant Robert Gaston  
June the 5<sup>th</sup> 1790  
M<sup>r</sup>. Aaron Melick Letter  
cousin of poor*

Poor Thomas Carey! "Rattle his bones over the stones, only a pauper that nobody owns." We suspect that he had but little honor while living, and when dying, perhaps no friendly voice spoke comfort to his soul, or gave him the melting tear of



pity. But now, after being many years dead, his name, at least, shall be rescued from oblivion. Whatever immortality it may be insured by appearing on these pages can be charged to the fortuitous circumstance of its having been necessary to buy a robe that he might lie down decently to his long night's sleep.

While each township was willing to take excellent care of the poor within its own borders, they were all exceedingly jealous of having on their hands those for whom it was not properly their duty to provide. Before Joseph Richardson was able to gratify his taste for pickled pork at Bedminster's expense, the courts were called upon to decide whether it was not Hillsborough township that should assume his maintenance. Here is our means of knowing this fact :—

## Somerset Sessions.

The Inhabitants of Bedminster	}	On appeal from an order of Removal of Joseph Richardson A pauper.
vs		
The Inhabitants of Hillsborough		

Rec'd January 4th 1804 of Mr. Daniel Melick overseer of the poor of the township of Bedminster the sum of six dollars as a fee for arguing the above cause.

Thos. P. Johnson.

The attorney retained for this suit, Thomas Potts Johnson, was the second son of William Johnson, an Irish emigrant who was an early settler in Hunterdon county. His mother was a daughter of Stacy Potts of Trenton, at whose house the Hessian Colonel Rall died in 1776. He married a daughter of Robert Stockton, studied law with Richard Stockton, and was admitted to the bar in 1794. Lawyer Johnson's practice soon grew to be considerable in Hunterdon and Somerset counties, due largely to a natural eloquence and an unusually retentive memory. He died in 1838 in his seventy-eighth year.

The counsellor may have plead the Richardson case to the satisfaction of his clients, but his argument did not secure a verdict. Had he prevailed perhaps his fee would have been larger. He was well treated by the township otherwise, as is exemplified by the following receipt of John Meldrum, who for many years was the popular host of a Somerville tavern known as the Somerset House, which stood on the site of the present Van Arsdale's hotel, called yet "The Somerset."

6th Jany } Rec'd of Daniel Melick overseer of poor, 11 shillings for a treat to  
 1804 } the Lawyers after the tryal of Joseph Richardson.

John Meldrum.

In the winter of 1792-93 Daniel Melick went on a trading voyage to Georgia. Here is his bill for freight and passage.

Mr. Daniel Melick to W. Kennedy		Dr.
To freight of goods from York to Savannah		
To 16 Barrels brandy	@ 4	£ 3 4 0
4 Hhd's Do	12	2 8 0
1 Cask shoes		0 4 0
his passage		4 0 0
		<hr/>
Savannah 1st Decr. 1792		£ 9 16 0
Received payment		0 4 0
		<hr/>
		£ 10 0 0

W. Kennedy.

He sailed from New York late in December, and preserved a faithful account of his journey, making daily entries in a journal, the pages of which I am now turning over. The first few leaves are missing, the diary commencing on Friday the fourth of January when he had landed at Newport Bridge, a few miles from Savannah, and complains that the extremely hot weather had made him ill. On Sunday he walked out with Mr. Rodes to the ferry, about five miles away, and then on "to Mr. Peacock's plantation to meet his wife and children." On the fourteenth he attended the trial of three negroes, and on the next day again visited the Peacock plantation—this time in company with Mr. Thurber, of Princeton—and "went in the large barn to see the negroes work." On the seventeenth he bought three barrels of rice and put them in Mr. Walker's warehouse, and two days later a horse-race claimed his attention, where there was an exciting brush for thirty guineas.

On the twenty-first our diarist was present at the trial of two negro women for "poisoning their mistress." They were found guilty, and sentenced to have their right ears cut off and to be branded on the forehead with a letter P. In addition one was to receive sixty and the other one hundred lashes. "Nothing remarkable" occurred on Friday the twenty-fifth, excepting that the "small-pox came at the Landing aboard Capt. Gibbs." Daniel does not seem to have met with much success in the sale of his liquors, and meanwhile appears to have found difficulty in

amusing himself. Dull days were the rule. There were exceptions noted, however, as, for instance, on the first of February when he attended a raffle for forty-one pounds sterling, and on the following Sunday when he went for a walk of two miles in the woods. On the fourteenth he sold some deerskins to Mr. James for four pounds and eleven shillings.

Our traveller remained several weeks longer at Newport Bridge, occupying himself in endeavoring to sell his liquor, and in buying hides and rice which he shipped on the sloops of Captains Rhodes and Man, bound for Savannah. Perhaps he thought to make his apple-jack more palatable for southern palates, and consequently sell better, for he records that on one day he "Bot 7 lbs. of Sugar and Colored 2 Hhds. of Brandy"; and on another occasion he "Drawed off Hhd. Brandy and Reduced it 1 Gallon to every 3½ Gallons." We should be sorry to suspect Daniel of doctoring his liquor, so will charitably believe that to save freight he brought his apple-jack South much above proof, and then reduced it to a marketable grade. On Sunday the twenty-fourth of February he "paid a half Dollar for a horse to ride to meeting." I fear that this ancestor was not as faithful to his religious duties as had been his father and grandfather before him; this is the only mention made of church-going during his three months' absence. On Monday the fourth of March he put his trunk on Captain Man's sloop for Savannah, and the next morning, which was very rainy, he set off on foot for that city in company with a Mr. Sutton. They lodged that night at Mrs. McKnight's tavern, twenty-six miles on the road, which they reached about sunset, very much fatigued. By sunrise the next morning they were again on their way, tramping over a fertile country abounding in extensive plantations devoted to the culture of rice, indigo and tobacco. Savannah was reached at ten o'clock; they found it embowered in trees in full leaf, with peach trees in bloom, and the place alive with people because of "Great horse Racing."

Daniel procured board at the Widow Spencer's for five dollars a week, and at once turned his thoughts to business, but he complains the next day that little could be done owing to racing "Still Going forward." He soon sold his rice, which arrived by the sloops, and bought more, as well as a lot of hides and indigo.



His liquors continued to be a drug on the market, so finally, on the twenty-second of March what remained unsold he shipped back to New York, together with other merchandise, by the ship "Jenny," Captain Schermerhorn. He also took his own passage home by this vessel. On the afternoon of the twenty-fifth the "Jenny" hauled out in the stream, and the next day "Dropt Down the River to five fathom Hole." At seven o'clock on the morning of the twenty-seventh the ship was under way, and by two in the afternoon Tybee lighthouse was abeam and the "Jenny" was plowing northward before a free breeze. The voyage was much like others along the coast, before and since. There were days of sea-sickness, several whales were seen, and occasionally vessels were spoken, bound south. At three in the afternoon of the third of April the Highland Lights were in sight and the pilot came on board, and by evening the "Jenny" was lying at anchor within the Horseshoe. At nine o'clock the next morning all sails were set, and with a fair wind the ship made good time across the bay and through the Narrows, reaching New York in the afternoon.

Our next contribution from these manuscript treasures on the table contains but a few words, but it opens up the whole subject of slaveholding on the Old Farm:—

*"I have no objection to your purchasing the negro man, called Dick from, from  
John Taylor ————— Oliver Burdett  
April 22. 1797  
Mrs Aaron Maltick*

Although the buying and selling of negroes had been common throughout the century in Somerset county, Aaron Maltick was an old man before he became a slaveholder. He had often desired to purchase a few hands to work in the tannery or on the farm, but had refrained in consideration of the wishes of his wife who had always strenuously opposed the introduction of bonds-people into her household. Charlotte was a descendant of a Quaker family, and had inherited that hatred of the institution which has always most honorably distinguished the peace-loving Society of Friends. But in the year 1786 Aaron's brother-in-law, Jacob Kline, offered to sell him his negro man Yombo, who

was a master-hand at tanning, currying and finishing leather. This offer came at a time when Aaron was sorely pressed for help, and the opportunity seemed too good to be passed by. After much urging on the part of the husband, the wife finally stifled her scruples and acquiesced in the purchase.

So Yombo was transferred from the Hunterdon tannery on the Rockaway river to the Bedminster tannery on the Peapack brook, where he soon proved himself a most valuable workman. He was a Guinea negro, having been brought from Africa when a boy, where, as he claimed, his father was a "big man." Yombo was stout, coal black, club-footed and very bow-legged. At first his appearance quite terrified Daniel's little children; he rarely wore a hat, always chewed tobacco, rings hung from his ears, and his language was a mixture of poor English and a jargon peculiar to himself. In addition, his disposition was not in any sense agreeable, and his perverseness always displayed itself when he was not under the immediate eye of his owner and master. But being an excellent workman his peculiarities were passed over, and for many years he was a conspicuous feature of life at the homestead. Yombo had a slave wife living at Elizabethtown. It was Aaron's custom to permit him occasionally to visit her, for that purpose putting money in his pocket and lending him a horse and chair—as the two wheeled gigs of that day were called. Notwithstanding his master's goodness the darkey was treacherous, and, when all ready to start on the journey, Aaron was always particular to look under the seat of the chair, where he not infrequently found a wallet stuffed with finely-finished calf-skins, with which Yombo had hoped to improve his fortunes at Elizabethtown.

The short note written to Aaron Malick by Oliver Barnett presages the advent of the second slave—or rather a whole family of slaves—on the "Old Farm." General John Taylor was a well-known resident of Hunterdon county, who had been an active militia officer in the war, closing his service as colonel of a regiment of state troops. He was only a paper brigadier, that is, had attained the rank and honor of general after the war. At the time this note was written he had become financially embarrassed, and finding it necessary to sell some of his slaves had offered Dick and his family to Aaron. General Taylor's princi-

pal creditor was Doctor Oliver Barnett of New Germantown. Aaron, knowing this, was unwilling to entertain the idea of purchasing these chattels until the doctor's permission had been obtained ; hence the note we have under consideration. Oliver Barnett reached Hunterdon county, unheralded, in 1765, his entire worldly possessions being represented by a Maryland pony. In ten years' time he had developed an extensive practice, and had saved enough money to buy the farm, mill and homestead of Tunis Melick ; the latter he enlarged and beautified, giving it the name it still bears of Barnet Hall. Doctor Barnett was an excellent physician and soon grew rich ; during the war he was surgeon of the 4th Hunterdon battalion, and until his death was widely and highly esteemed.

So now for the second time we behold Aaron and Charlotte facing the question of the wisdom of buying slaves. The matter was given much serious reflection and provoked warm and earnest discussions in the living-room of the old house. We may imagine that Daniel urged the purchase. His parents were growing old ; their children were married, and all but himself had left home. His son, little Aaron, had grown to be twelve years old, his second child, Elizabeth, was ten, the third, Charlotte, eight, and the youngest, Rozannah, but six. The care of these children and the old people, and the oversight of the household generally, was largely on his wife's shoulders, and he doubtless thought that so unusual an opportunity of procuring efficient help should be embraced. Every one said that Dick was a " most likely nigger ;" every one was right, for he was an exemplary, pious black of sterling parts, and his family but reflected the virtues of the sire. Charlotte was at last induced to give unwilling assent to the purchase, which was finally consummated in the spring of 1798.

In fancy we see these colored people as they reach their new home, and stand a little abashed and nervous while receiving welcome from their new mistresses. Dick is of a good dark color, heavy-set and dignified in appearance, courteous and quiet in demeanor, while Nance does the talking and laughing for the family through thick lips which partially cover a full set of white teeth. She is lighter in color than her husband, and very short—not to say fat. You know where her waist is because you



see her apron strings, but with that feminine badge removed, to locate her zone would be like establishing the equator—a matter of calculation rather than visual certainty. Her breadth affords a good cover for her three frightened children, who peer shyly from behind her ample skirts at the new “white folks,” at the same time taking curious note of Daniel’s flock who form a background to their mother and grandmother. Diana the oldest is seven and large for her age, Sam is four, Ben the youngest is a little pickaninny of two—all pretty black, and each one well ivoryed. A few pleasant words, emphasized with cookies, soon calm their agitation, and it is not long before parents and youngsters are at their ease and taking kindly to their new surroundings. The children proved to be quiet and obedient and quickly found themselves possessed of a happy home; they had playmates in Daniel’s boys and girls, mutually kind feelings existed almost immediately, and white and black lived happily together.

Nance was duly installed in the outer kitchen at the east end of the house, and Dick was made general farmer, he having been well recommended for that work. Both husband and wife were devout Christians and regular attendants at church, greatly to the satisfaction of Charlotte whose affections soon went out to these worthy bondspeople, causing her prejudice against slavery to wane daily. Nance became her devoted attendant, cook, and skilful housekeeper, while Dick met his master’s expectations as a farmer and trusty servant. In a few years he had nearly the entire control of the farm, which he managed with great prudence and intelligence; being always faithful to the interest of his master, he was rewarded with a leniency and trust that few white people in the same situation would have enjoyed. In March, 1800, a fourth child, Joe, was born. Two years later the current of home life was unhappily disturbed by the sudden death of Charlotte. It was the result of an accident which occurred in February, when she and her husband were returning from a visit to some friends living near Rockaway. Owing to the breaking of the harness, the chair, or gig, in which they were riding was overturned, and its occupants were thrown violently to the ground. Aaron escaped with a few bruises, but Charlotte was so injured that for five weeks she was on the “verge of Heaven.” Then

came the thirteenth of March, an unhappy day for those who loved her. While sitting in a rocking chair at the window of the best room, looking out on the familiar meadows with their tree-fringed river, suddenly, for her the world grew dim,—death softly laid his hand upon her heart.

“Night-dews fall not more gently to the ground  
Nor weary worn-out winds expire so soft.”

The grief of Nance at the loss of her mistress was as deep and sincere as that of any other member of the household, but to Daniel's wife as sole mistress she was equally faithful, and to Aaron in his old age and loneliness she gave the most devoted care.

The slaves on the “Old Farm” had their indulgences and enjoyments. The Christmas season was one of great festivity, of some pomp, and not a little dignity. During the week between Christmas and New Year's day they generally gave a party when the older colored people of respectability were invited. In those days the slaves were known by the family names of their masters, so on such occasions in the living-room and outer kitchen, which were given up to the entertainment, were to be seen the Gastons, Klines, Linns, Van Dorens, Van der Veers, and such others from near and far as attended the same church and mingled in the same colored society. There was much style and a profuse use of large and heavy words, each person being addressed as Mr., Mrs. or Miss. At the supper, after a lengthy grace fervently uttered by the one supposed to be the most gifted, even staid Dick Melick, who took upon himself the service of the table, displayed airs quite foreign to his generally modest deportment. This supper was, of course, entirely under Nance's supervision, and in quality and quantity was creditable alike to her as cook and to her old master as showing the liberality and kind feeling he extended to his slaves, “*No, Sah. Sarvunts, if you please.*” Although whiskey, cider and metheglin were always furnished to the lowly guests, a too free indulgence would not have been countenanced by the hosts, nor was it ever known, the whole party always conducting themselves most decorously and politely, endeavoring as far as possible to be “jes like white folks.” The pleasures of the Christmas season were not confined to this one festivity; but little work was expected of the blacks during

the entire holiday week, for, dressed in their best, their whole time was devoted to visiting and pleasure.

Another great day for the Bedminster colored people, always celebrated by Dick and Nance, was "general training," usually occurring in the middle of June. Then it was that Dick took the big wagon and put on its tow and linen wagon-cover, tying up the sides so that from within an unobstructed view could be had of the martial array. Nance and the children were placed on chairs in front, and behind was a barrel of root beer of Dick's own manufacture, and a corn-basket full of large round ginger cakes—they called them bolivars—baked by Nance the day before. In addition there was a plentiful supply of new-mown grass from the bleach patch in the garden, which was always mowed at that time; this was to keep the beer cool and to give the horses a bite during the day. Dick, in his Sunday clothes and displaying a most conspicuous nosegay, would then seat himself on the foreboard, seize the reins, and with the stalk of a long whip against his shoulder and the lash hanging behind, would set off with his happy family and join the procession of teams that from early morning had been slowly moving up the long hill in the direction of Pluckamin. On reaching the grounds the horses were taken out and tied to a fence, and the business and pleasures of the day commenced. As long as the barrel and basket held out, beer was to be had for two cents a glass and cakes for a penny a piece. Between customers the sable merchants had plenty of friendly visitors, the children, meanwhile, playing about the wagon, or sitting quietly in round-eyed wonder at all the glories of the day. With the approach of night Dick "geared" his horses and drove slowly home, his spirits lightened by the pleasures he had experienced, and his pockets full-weighted with big copper pennies. He would now have pocket-money for all his needs for months to come, and some to drop in the black bag each Sunday morning at church when the deacon passed it in the gallery, which Dick always did with a most reverential bow.

Our old papers furnish numerous proofs of the excellent care bestowed by Aaron and Daniel on their servants. I cannot refrain from inserting just here one or two bills that fitly illustrate the time and subject upon which we are now dwelling:—



The Estate of Aaron Melick			
1806	Calvin McKidder		Dr
	Decr 25 To work for Yombo		2 6
1807	Feb. 27 " making two pantaloons for Negro boys		6 0
	" cutting Negro cloths		0 6
			<hr/> 9 0

Received May 10th 1811 the above sum of Nine Shillings.

Calvin McKidder.

Not only were the bodies of the dusky toilers clothed, but their minds were not neglected, for here is a bill of Christopher Logan to the "Estate of Aaron Melick Dec'd," dated the twenty-third of March, "To Schooling Negro boy Joe 61 days \$1.39." The village schoolmaster of eighty years ago evidently was not an expensive institution, nor were such low charges for tuition confined to colored scholars. I find another bill of two years later for one of Daniel's children in which "William Hambly teacher," charges "\$4.16 for 159 Days' Schooling."

It will be seen that slavery on the "Old Farm" was not altogether an unmitigated evil. For a number of years much happiness in their mutual relations came to both bond and free; their lives moved on with but little friction, excepting an occasional outbreak from Yombo, which was met by a few earnest words of reproof from Aaron, who even in extreme old age retained the spirit of mastery. But on the seventh of April, 1809, the peaceful calm of home life was rudely arrested by the death of the head of the household, who succumbed to an attack of apoplexy in his eighty-fourth year. Then Dick and his family knew what trouble was. Not only did they honestly grieve at the loss of a good master, but they sorrowed because they knew they must be sold, and possibly separated. A fifth child, Ann, had been born since the manumission laws had gone into effect; she, consequently, could be sold only for service until reaching twenty-five years of age, but the other slaves had no reason to expect anything but servitude for life. What to do with the negroes had been a serious question with Aaron, and a subject of much anxious thought on his part; but the decision he had reached could not be known until his funeral was over and the will read. His death occurred on Monday, the funeral being held at half past ten on the following Thursday. The intervening days offered but little opportunity for sorrow, owing to the

busy activity of the household in brewing, baking, and in generally preparing for the obsequies, as in that age the occasion was made one of feasting as well as of grieving.

The morning of this all important day found the Old Stone House full of friends and neighbors, for Aaron had been widely known and greatly beloved. Daniel, aided by other relatives, received the people, at the same time listening to their words of greeting and sympathy. Pastor Graff came over from New Germantown to conduct the services, it being, it is believed, the last time he officiated on such an occasion. As the hour approached for the service the immediate friends and relatives gathered in the darkened best room. In one corner on a table were several decanters containing rum, apple-jack and madeira, while before the looking-glass, which was covered with a sheet, the plain, almost rude, coffin rested on two chairs. There were no caskets in those days, nor much if any of the multitudinous paraphernalia now attendant upon funerals. Farmers of the olden time, as a rule, supplied their own burial cases and accessories. It was not uncommon for them to put aside, years before the death of any of the household, suitable boards for making coffins. These primitive shells were, of course, roughly fashioned, the interior trimmings and decorations furnished by members of the family being of the plainest character.

On this funeral morning all the other rooms and the hall were filled with neighbors who overflowed through the open doors on to the front and rear porches. In fancy we can see the aged and feeble rector, robed in his Lutheran vestments, standing at the foot of the stairs—before him a little mahogany table upon which rest the big family Bible and the pastor's well-thumbed prayer-book. At his side the tall clock ticks in solemn unison with the slow, measured and sad tones of the holy-man, who speaks from the heart, for he is bidding a last adieu to dust that is dear to him. His voice grows husky as he dwells on the virtues of the departed, and points out to the sorrowing hearers how that the common walk of the good-man of the house had been beyond that of ordinary every-day life. He cannot refrain from speaking of his own bereavement as he remembers that during his thirty-four years of ministrations over Zion's congregation he, who now lies before him shrouded for the tomb, had been not

only a parishioner but a friend and counsellor as well. In fancy we see the simple country-folk in their Sunday garb as they gather about the bier—we hear their low tones and the noise of their feet scraping along the sanded floor. Through the rear door comes the sympathetic murmur of the dam below the hill, borne on the soft April wind, which as it draws through the house carries with it to the outer air a faint mingled odor of cake, varnish and spices.

The burial was at Pluckamin, and it was a large funeral cortege that slowly toiled up the long hill. The hearse was an ordinary farm wagon as, indeed, were nearly all the vehicles that followed after, although a few one-horse chairs, with quite a number of neighbors in the saddle, offered a little variety to the funeral procession. After the interment, as was the fashion of the time, very many of the people returned to the house when much of the rest of the day was taken up with eating and drinking, a succession of dinners being spread in the living-room. The appetites all being satisfied, the relatives and immediate friends gathered in the best room to listen to the reading of the will. It was soon known as to the manner in which Aaron had partially solved the problem of what to do with his negroes. The will ordered that Nance's children should be sold under indenture to serve until the boys reached the age of twenty-eight and Diana twenty-five, when they were to be manumitted. This was evidently a compromise of the old gentleman's between his children and his slaves. Had he freed his negroes it would have meant pauperism for them, and an incubus for his estate, as they would have had to be supported. This plainly had seemed to him to be the best way out of the difficulty, and as no mention in the will was made regarding Dick and Nance there probably was an understanding between him and his children as to their disposal.

The auction, or vendue, was to be held on the twenty-second of May. The intervening weeks proved a serious time to both whites and blacks, and the hours wore heavily on, though only too fast when the thought of separation and the loss of a happy home confronted the poor slaves. The fateful day at last arrived and with it came a large assemblage of people, as at that time an auction sale of this character was always made a festive occasion.



We can judge of the numbers present by the following extract from a bill of Levi Sutton, showing the amount of apple-jack that was consumed in their refreshment. "1809 May 20th To 27 Gallons cyder spirits for vendue and settling a'cts @ 69 cents—\$18.63." William Cummins, well known in those parts as an auctioneer, cried the sale, and Nicholas Arrosmith's son William acted as clerk, each charging two dollars a day for their services. The sale commenced at the barns, when, after the hay, grain and other property had been disposed of, the people were invited to the house to buy the "niggers." Dick's family were sold in the following order, as shown by the account sales preserved:—

One Negro girl till she is 25 years of age, Diana—to Jonathan Dayton Esqr.	\$100
One negro boy, Sam, till he is 28 years of age—to Revd. John McDowell	225
One negro boy, Dick, till he is 28 yrs of age to William R. Smiley	225
One negro boy, Joe, till he is 28, to Jacob Kline	120
One Old Negro man, Dick, sold a slave to Daniel Melick,	40
One Old Negro Wench, Nance, a slave, to Daniel Melick,	40
One Negro girl named Ann, born under Manumission law—to Daniel Melick,	35

The dark cloud had a silver lining: Sam and Diana both went to Elizabethtown to prominent men well known to them, and who had been old friends of their late master. They were to be well cared for and to have good homes. Mr. Smiley who purchased Dick was also intimately known to, and respected by, the household. Joe was carried off to New Germantown by Jacob Kline, Daniel Melick's uncle, which was next to being at home; but above all Dick, Nance, and the little Ann would stay in the stone house. The old home was still theirs.

Then came under the hammer poor old Yombo, bending under the weight of his seventy years. Here is the record of his sale. "One old Negro Man, Yombo, sold a slave to John Hastier ———\$50." It is my impression that this purchaser was the owner of Yombo's wife; at any rate he was a tanner and currier doing business at Elizabethtown. The sale over, Yombo goes contentedly to his new home; the old bark mill and currying

shop, and the seat by the fireplace in the outer kitchen, know him no more. Nothing more was heard of him by the Bedminster people, excepting that several years afterwards word came from Elizabethtown—"Old Yombo is dead."





## CHAPTER XL.

### *What the Old Papers Have to Say About the Drinking Habits of Our Forefathers—The Last Century's Tidal Wave of Intemperance—National Reform—Farewell to the "Old Farm."*

As we turn again to the manuscripts on the table—these silent witnesses of the past—did even a few of them receive at our hands the attention their mute appeals for a hearing claim, this work would be extended through many pages. As their number, then, bars the possibility of our taking them up singly, we will choose for consideration in this final chapter a subject to which directly or indirectly very many of them bear some relation—the drinking habits of our ancestors.

While there is no doubt that the diffusive moral influence of Christianity is, and has been, paramount to that of all other religions, still a sad commentary on the beneficent results of the civilization of this nineteenth Christian century is the failure of its generations to understandingly grapple with and overcome the dread evil of intemperance. Though a great conservator of morality it is only to a limited extent that Christianity has been able to check the moral pestilence and physical scourge of dram drinking. In nearly, if not all, American cities the vital political factor is the saloon; the one great question before the better element of the community is, how shall the elective power of the liquor interest be defeated? It may be admitted, however, that within seventy years there has been a marked decrease in the social use of intoxicants, and that at present the tendency is still for better things, but there must yet be a great improvement before we can hope in our drinking habits to even equal the virtue of the remote ages of the past. In our day, though it is a



maxim in legal practice that those who presume to commit crimes when drunk must submit to punishment when sober, the fact remains that grave offences are condoned by intoxication. That a person should have been so under the influence of liquor as to have partially weakened his understanding is often considered—at least by juries—as in some degree extenuating crime. In this regard we must confess to comparing most unfavorably even with pagan times. When the Greeks still worshipped, among other false deities, the vine-crowned Bacchus, a citizen was the worse, not the better, before the law and judgment when by self indulgence he put himself in such a condition as to be unable to control his mental and moral faculties. Pittacus decreed that he who was guilty of crime when intoxicated should be doubly punished—once for the crime itself, and once for the drunkenness that prompted the guilty act. The Athenians punished offences done in drunkenness with increased severity, and Solon the wise enacted a law making inebriety in magistrates capital.

Intemperance in the use of liquor has been the gradual growth of many hundred years over-indulgence, but the culmination of its baleful influence may be said to have been during the close of the last and the beginning of the present century. Six hundred years ago alcoholic drinks were confined to malt liquors, wines, ciders and metheglin. It is only within three centuries that brandy and whiskey have been recognized as beverages, before that time their use having been confined to medicinal purposes. The great impetus to intemperance came in about 1640 with the introduction of West India rum, and in this country sixty years later intoxicants were powerfully reinforced by the beginning of the manufacture of Medford and other rums by puritan New England. The next period in the increase of the vice of drinking followed the French and Indian war, when the soldiers, who during the campaigns had been furnished with regular rations of spirits, acquired habits of drinking “strong water” which they introduced on their return home into their families and communities. Then came the Revolution, when the government considered it as necessary for the troops to be supplied with rum as with bread; with it the tidal wave of intemperance rose to a great flood, and for over forty years rolled its

devastating wave almost unchecked, for it was not until 1825 that any combined effort was made to arrest the inordinate love of liquor which was carrying with it the property, reputation, health and lives of tens of thousands of people. In the middle states during the last quarter of the eighteenth century many new devices arose for concocting stimulants. In New Jersey the most important of these innovations was the production of apple-jack from apple pulp, and the distilling of cider-brandy from cider. Peaches, too, were converted into a sweet, rich brandy, and the same strong liquor was made from cherries, plums, persimmons and pears. The last, known as perry, was considered the most delicate and appetizing of the stronger drinks. But in Somerset and Morris counties apple-jack sprang at once into favor, and from then until now in that portion of the state in rural communities it has been the standard tippie. Morris soon became the banner county in the production of this seductive compound; to one of its citizens, Richard Kimball, who lived on the south side of Mount Washington (Kimball Hill) in Passaic township, is given the honor of introducing "Jersey lightning" in the neighborhood, he having in 1773 imported from England a twelve gallon copper still, and commenced its manufacture.

In examining the papers before us we find that very many of them verify the belief that with the people of the last century, from the cradle to the grave, plentiful drinking was the feature of every occasion. It was not uncommon for a father at the birth of a son to lay in two pipes of wine or two barrels of rum. As the boy grew toward manhood he frequently surveyed these two packages with both a lively and a melancholy interest, for one was to be broached at his marriage, the other at his funeral. At christenings if not the baby at least the event was always baptized in copious quantities of liquor. The chances of the child, both as to moral and physical health, were greatly hampered by the condition of society to which an advent into this world at that period introduced him. The seeds of intemperance were literally sown in the cradle, for while yet little toddlers the male children learned to love the spirit-soaked sugar reserved for them in the bottom of their parent's tumblers. At home and abroad, in summer and in winter, in prosperity and in adversity,

in the house of mourning and in the house of feasting, a free circulation of rum, apple-jack, or fiery madeira was invariably the rule. At public vendues "a dram to the next bidder" was a frequent announcement of the auctioneer. At the stores where the farmers sold their produce a big, brown, stone pitcher full of water and a teapot of whiskey usually stood at the end of the counter, and all customers were invited to take a cup of tea. That New Jersey farmer who refused each hay or harvest hand a daily portion of one pint of rum was considered a mean man. Did neighbors assemble to aid in raising a barn, to shear sheep, or to draw and stack the minister's winter supply of wood, the bottle was deemed requisite to give strength to arm and will, and to restore flagging energies. An old gentleman of my acquaintance, of Connecticut ancestry, informs me that his grandfather always kept in the cellar a hogshead of New England rum. It was his custom on summer mornings to draw a pitcherful, and then go to the garden and obtain from a bed kept for the purpose a bunch of tansy, with which he would mix a bowl of punch. Then calling together his wife, children and servants each one was given a drink, whereupon they had family prayers. After this came breakfast, all feeling conscientiously satisfied with the day's beginnings, for the rum punch would warn off fevers, miasmas and fluxes, while the prayers ensured the family virtue for twenty-four hours to come.

During the last century in all households of any substance a tankard of punch was brewed each morning and placed on the sideboard for the use of the family and chance visitors. In fact, almost everybody drank, and the majority of people in good society thought it no shame to become tipsy at table; it was the manners of the world, not only of one country or of one state. Even a noble English lord of that time, an exponent of virtue, though opposed to "the habitual soaking of port wine, or whiskey punch," expressed himself in his autobiography favorably toward "an occasional booze" as having "a tendency to excite the faculties, to warm the affections, to improve the manners, and to form the character of youth." This scion of nobility probably thought, with Coleridge, that men were like musical glasses—to ring their best they must be wet. So it was, for the time being all knowledge seemed to be lost as to the boundary line between



moderation and excess. Even when death entered the door, and friends and neighbors assembled to pay their final tribute of respect to the departed, copious libations were considered necessary, until it was not unknown for persons to reel in funeral processions or even to stagger on the brink of the grave. Hawthorne, in describing the obsequies of a colonial governor, recounts that the minister's nose glowed like a ruddy coal of fire, and the aged bearers staggered as they endeavored to solemnly uphold the coffin, for all day "many a cask of ale and cider had been on tap, and many a draught of spiced rum and aqua-vitæ quaffed." At the funeral of Joanna Nevius in 1735 the bill of expenses paid by her son Wilhelmus—published in the Bergen genealogy—shows that while the coffin cost fifteen shillings the outlay for wine, beer, rum, spices, sugar and pipes was nearly five pounds. When Philip Livingston, the father of New Jersey's first governor, died in 1749, funerals were held both at his Hudson river mansion, and at his city residence on Broad street in New York. At each place a pipe of spiced rum was consumed, and to the eight bearers were given gloves, mourning rings, scarfs, handkerchiefs and monkey spoons. These spoons had a shallow, circular bowl, with the figure of an ape carved on the end of the handle. Among the papers of the late William A. Whitehead is the following bill of expenses attendant on the burial of Eleanor Bryant of Perth Amboy in 1776:—

Cash paid for 7 prs. gloves	1. 6.3
" " " Nutmegs	5
" " " 1 Gal wine	1. 4.0
" " " 1 " rum	7.6
" " " 4 prs. Gloves	12.0
" " " 1 Load of Wood	9.6
" " " 2 lbs loaf Sugar	4.0
" " " Sexton	7.6
" " " Coffin	1.15.0
	<hr/>
	£ 6.6.2

This universal habit of toping in the olden time must have sadly seduced the morals of the communities when we find that even the ministers were unable to withstand the alluring vice, and occasionally over indulged without forfeiting the respect of their people. In the Memorial Hall at Deerfield, Massachusetts, is an oblong flask with a round hole in the top just large enough

to admit the small end of a goblet. For a long time it was a matter of conjecture as to what original use this curious article had been put. After abandoning various theories it has been proved that the purpose of the flask was to keep the parson's glass of toddy warm on a winter Sunday morning. We have been told by Doctor Lyman Beecher that clergymen at consociation meetings always had something to drink, and though not intoxicated there was among them on occasions a considerable amount of exhilaration. Doctor Leonard Woods has recorded that he could count at one time among his ministerial acquaintances forty pastors who were immoderate drinkers, and that he saw at one ordination two aged ministers literally drunk, and a third indecently excited. Of course there were instances of clergymen becoming habitual drinkers to an excess that necessitated their deposition from the ministry, but such cases were happily rare. The Reverend Samuel Melyen, one of the early pastors of the First Church of Elizabethtown, was obliged to sever his relations with the congregation owing to intemperance. The unfortunate example of a minister's lapse from virtue does not seem to have proved a warning to the officers of the church, for we are told that at the ordination and installation of Mr. Melyen's successor, Jonathan Dickinson, then barely twenty-one, "great quantities of toddy was consumed."

Drinking at the meetings of religious bodies continued prevalent throughout the century. Doctor Hall, in his history of the Presbyterian church at Trenton, recites that the treasurer's book of that congregation for the year 1792 records a charge "for beer at Presbytery, 45.10d;" also "bought of Abraham Hunt for the use of the congregation when Presbytery sat at Maidenhead:"—

	s	d	£	s	d
8 gals Lisbon Wine	@	7 6	3	0	0
5 " Spirits	@	9 0	2	5	0

Well authenticated traditions are current that when the temperance question began to be agitated in New Jersey it was not uncommon for ministers who were conscious of their own failings to urge the people, saying, "Do as I tell you, not as I do!" At the time of the installation of Doctor Leonard Bacon over the First Congregational church of New Haven free drinks were furnished by the society at an adjacent bar to all who chose to

order them. The spiritual shepherds were not only consumers but producers. Not content with furnishing themselves as examples to their flocks in this pernicious habit of drinking, at times they set up stills, and supplied their followers with the means of tarnishing their reputations and impairing their faculties. In a previous chapter we have learned that the Reverend Jacob G. Green, of Morris county, was equally learned in law, medicine and theology, and engaged largely in secular pursuits. Although so pious that he would not permit the members of his family on Sunday to converse on any but religious subjects, he did not hesitate to own and operate a distillery. In the year 1790 the Reverend Nathan Strong, pastor of the First Congregational church of Hartford and the author of the familiar hymn, "Swell the Anthem, raise the song," engaged with a member of his congregation in the distilling business. The enterprise failed, and the financial straits brought upon the minister prevented his appearing in public life for some time excepting on Sundays, that being the only day on which he could not be legally arrested. This circumstance did not operate against his receiving the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Princeton college in 1801.

The evil of intemperance continued to increase to an alarming extent until by the turn of the century it had assumed proportions in New Jersey that threatened to overwhelm and destroy the physical vigor and the moral character of all grades of society. Ralph Voorhees, in writing of Somerset county at this period, says that drunkenness was like the destroying angel that passed over the land of Egypt,—there was scarcely a house where it did not leave one dead. The bottle and the hand were constant companions, and the wonder is that so many of our forefathers were preserved from the grave of the destroyer, and not only lived to old age as useful members of society, but were even ornaments and pillars in church and state. Mr. Voorhees writes:—

During that period, land became reduced by improper culture, when it was found most profitable to plant orchards, and convert their fruit into cider, and that into spirits. In one township along the Raritan there were at the commencement of the present century eight or more distilleries in operation, and the price of cider-spirits became so reduced that it was sold from twenty-five to thirty cents pr. gallon by the quantity. Almost every farmer had his cellar stocked with



barrels and hogsheads of cider-spirits, of which the family partook as their inclinations and appetites dictated.

It must not be supposed that during all this time there were not men, far-seeing in their generation, who had some conception of the terrible blight that was likely to fall on the morals and health of their fellows if some endeavor was not exerted to stem this torrent of human folly. Even before the middle of the last century sporadic efforts had been made to abate the evil. As early as 1744 John Wesley stigmatized rum-sellers as "poison-generals," who "drive men to hell like sheep." General Putnam of Connecticut and John Adams of Massachusetts had both before the Revolution protested against liquor-sellers; and everyone is familiar with Franklin's appeals to his fellow journey-men-printers that they should abstain from intoxicants.

It is to our old friend whose acquaintance we made at Princeton and Pluckamin in 1777, Doctor Benjamin Rush of Philadelphia, that the honor must be given of being the pioneer in a movement that has been of more advantage to the human race than has any other of modern times. While connected with the army he had become impressed with the error made by the government in so plentifully supplying the soldiers with rum. In 1777 he published a pamphlet addressed to the army protesting that the frequent use of spirits by the men wore away rather than supported their bodily powers, and laid the foundation of fevers, fluxes, jaundice and other ills common in military hospitals. But it was in 1785 that this father of temperance reform gave to the world what soon exerted a powerful influence in checking and controlling the high carnival of drunkenness, disease and death that had overspread the land. This was his celebrated essay, "The Effects of Ardent Spirits on the human Body and Mind," a treatise which was the germ from which grew the great temperance movement that has since extended over the entire globe. Though the seed fell into ground that was rank from the decaying weeds of many years of excess and indulgence it did not at once develop; but containing the potentiality of great results it eventually became quick with life, and forced its way above ground up into the sunlight of public endorsement, until it grew into a great tree bearing rich fruit. Doctor Rush, armed with this essay, commenced an individual crusade against

the dominant evil of the time. Religious societies, general assemblies and other bodies were visited, stirring appeals were made in support of the tract, thousands of copies of which were distributed; leading men of the country were extensively corresponded with, Quaker yearly meetings and Methodist conferences were besieged, and wherever went this earnest doctor his voice could be heard crying aloud, beseeching ministers of every denomination to aid him with all the weight and influence of their sacred offices in saving "fellow-men from being destroyed by the great destroyer of their lives and souls." This was the inception of the temperance reformation. Its germ, the celebrated essay, had slumbered long, awaiting more genial influences; but eventually they were created by the magnetic personality of the tireless author, until, nurtured by the churches, an interest was kindled among the masses which raised the first barrier to the fearful tidal wave of drunkenness that threatened to overwhelm humanity.

The fight of Doctor Rush was not against wine and beer—these he accepted as nourishing and healthful—but against distilled spirits. He declaimed against, not only the abuse, but the use altogether of "hard liquor," excepting in cases of sickness "when" he said "it is better applied to the outside than to the inside of the body." His continuous agitations resulted in enlisting the sympathies of many prominent men; among them the Reverend Doctor Lyman Beecher, who after reading Rush's essay "blocked out" six powerful temperance sermons which, it is said, went echoing around the world in the English, French, German, Danish, Hottentot, and other languages. In 1808 Saratoga county in New York gave America its first temperance society. Other like organizations were soon established in the same state, and in Connecticut and Massachusetts, and within a few years the movement had extended through all the middle and New England states. At this time the propriety and good policy of total abstinence had been conceived by but few minds. The fight was against distilled, not fermented liquor, and it was the moderate use of the former, rather than abstaining from it, that was advocated. It is on record that after the organization in a tavern of one of the earliest societies, the officers, in return for the honors conferred upon them, treated the

members at the bar. The president, raising a glass of liquor to his lips, said to his associates—"Now, brethren, let us show to the world that we can drink in moderation."

For a number of years the progress of reform was exceedingly slow. It had been instituted at a period when the morals of the American people were on the lowest plane known in their history. The breaking up of the army at the close of the Revolution had distributed throughout the country men whose appetites for liquors had been unnaturally developed by the great quantity of free rum furnished the troops by continental congress. The government, notwithstanding the protest of Doctor Rush, had acted under the fatal delusion that the soldiers, owing to their privations and hardships, needed a plentiful supply of stimulants in order to preserve their health and spirits. Throughout the war in the army rum, when it was to be had, was the feature of every occasion, and double quantities were always served to the men on high-days and holidays. Lieutenant Ebenezer Elmer, of the 3d New Jersey battalion, thus describes the reception of the news of the Declaration of Independence when the courier bearing it reached brigade headquarters, on the fifteenth of July, 1776:—

At twelve o'clock assembly was beat that the men might parade in order to receive a treat, and drink the state's health. When, after having made a barrel of grog, the declaration was read, and the following toast was given by Parson Caldwell:—"Harmony, honor, and all prosperity to the free and independent United States of America;" when three hearty cheers were given.

A letter written by Major Barber to Mr. Caldwell, on the seventeenth of the same month, informs us how the news of independence was received by Colonel Dayton's New Jersey command—then at Fort Stanwix. After the Declaration had been read, cannons fired, and huzzas given, the battalion was formed in a circle with three barrels of grog in the centre. The Colonel took a cup and drank to the toast—"God bless the United States of America." The other officers followed, drinking the same toast, as did afterward the battalion, accompanied by loud hurrahs, shouting, and other signals of approbation. So it was to the end,—when on the announcement of the cessation of hostilities barrels were broached in every camp,—rum seemed to be considered the one thing needful, either as a panacea for evil days, or as an aid in rejoicing over success.



The period between the Revolution and the war of 1812 was a singularly unpropitious time in which to endeavor to inculcate in the public mind the idea of restrictive habits and controlled appetites. The people having gained their own political independence had also become imbued through the teachings of the French Revolution with the most reckless notions regarding their personal rights ; and they were but little inclined to brook any interference that tended to check their individual liberty in thought or conduct. It was not until the establishment in February, 1826, of the " American Society for the Promotion of Temperance " that any extraordinary or persistent advancement of the cause ensued. All that had gone before had been but introductory—the laying of the foundation upon which was to be reared the grand superstructure of national reform. Town and county auxiliaries to the parent societies were soon formed in almost all of the states, resulting in a temperance agitation which was widely distributed, and from which has since sprung the Washingtonian movement, the Father Matthew societies, the National League, church societies, law and order leagues, and the many cold water armies that for over half a century have so bravely fought the common foe of humanity.



We have used the old farm as a cord, or chaplet, upon which to string our historical pearls. That cord, having been cut for the needs of a single century, is now full. It remains for us, therefore, but to tie the ends together and to modestly lay our votive gift at the feet of Clio—the fair muse of history. Of books in her honor there have been no end. Many, like luminaries in the literary heavens, have thrown floods of light over vast areas of the globe and have embraced long eras of time, but it is hoped that the work we are now concluding will also serve her cause. All cannot be suns, yet a modest torch or candle can throw light, and reveal what has before been hidden. Thus would we fain believe that this book will find a welcome, because of the little it contributes to our fund of knowledge of times and ways long bygone. Of course it falls far short of what was hoped for when planned, but the ideal is rarely realized in exe-

cution. Content must come with the consciousness that the preceding pages embody an honest endeavor to faithfully and truthfully preserve unrecorded facts and traditions, which, meteor-like, had they once fallen to the ground could never have been rekindled, but now, so far as this book may be considered a repository of information, they become fixed stars in the firmament of history.

Some one has said that the two most engaging powers of a historical writer are to make new things familiar, and familiar things new. Thus as we have turned over the pages of the past, blurred, and often indistinct, though "rich with the spoils of time," an effort has been made in retelling an oft-told tale to increase the interest in the narrative by correcting some errors, by adding a little that is new, and by throwing the light of the most recent research on much that is old. Care has been taken, meanwhile, to follow the injunction of Johnson not to lie on the watch for novelty and great things, for such cannot have escaped former observation, but rather to follow the quiet undercurrents of life of both ordinary and extraordinary folk, and thus fill in many interstices left by greater historians. The writing of these pages has not been in vain if they influence their readers, especially their youthful readers, to turn their minds from the present, and carry their sympathies and interest back to the early days of their country's inception and growth, and fill them with a desire to become more and more familiar with its gradual advancement from primitive beginnings to its present state of high civilization, and importance among the nations of the world.

And now it is time to say farewell to the "Old Farm." We found it an unrecognized indefinite part of an indefinable wilderness. We have traced its emergence from such a condition into definite boundaries and an individual possession. We have followed the gradual growth of its surrounding country from barbarism to a state of progressive refinement and cultivation; we have witnessed the introduction of religion and noted the increase of population; we have seen our forefathers leading contented lives subjects of a king; we have learned what a poor thing is a king when he tries his power against freemen. An old world's kinsman has crossed the seas and established himself

on our ancestral plantation. With interest we have watched in him, in his children and descendants, the gradual transformation of German subjects into American citizens. Three successive generations of occupants have peopled the Old Stone House, and now we leave it with a fourth playing their simple parts therein. Soon, like their predecessors, they will make their exit, following that behest of nature, as inexorable in their day, and in ours, as it was in that remote age when time was measured by olympiads instead of centuries, and when Homer wrote:—

“ Like leaves on trees the race of man is found,  
 Now green in youth now withering on the ground,  
 Another race the following spring supplies,  
 They fall successive, and successive rise ;  
 So generations in their course decay,  
 So flourish these when those have passed away.”

THE END.









## MOELICH—MALICK—MELICK—MELICK GENEALOGY.

*"Those only deserve to be remembered who treasure up a history of their ancestors."*  
—Burke.

So far as can be learned the Moelich family originated in Germany. It still exists in that country, there being resident representatives in Frankfort on the Main, in Bendorf on the Rhine, and in Winnigen on the Moselle. A tradition has come floating down through the generations, which proclaims in a shadowy sort of way that the first Moelich in Germany was a migrator from Greece, and that the word—or one approaching it—in ancient Greek stands for lyric verse. It certainly appears in various forms in that language. It will be remembered that it was by the way of the shores of the deep Gulf of Malic that the Persians reached the Pass of Thermopolæ; and the English word melic, defined in the Imperial dictionary "relating to song, lyric," is from the Greek root melikos, or melos, a song. The word is also to be found in other languages, and is said to be a not unusual family name in the East, especially in Armenia—an Armenian poet of distinction, Agob Melik Agobian, died in 1888 at Tiflis in Georgia, and was honored with a public funeral. There is a Mount Mellick in Ireland. A millet grass that grows on the coast of Lincolnshire, Britain, is called "melick," and one of England's sweetest singers has embalmed the word in the lines: "From the mead where the melick groweth." In Germany the family name is commonly written Mölich, the diæresis over the o indicating that a second vowel has been dropped. In America, during the last one hundred and fifty years, various spellings and pronunciations of the name have been in vogue; the signatures of descendants of emigrant ancestors Moelich appearing as Mölich, Malick, Malik, Meligh, Mehlig, Melik, Melick and Mellick. Distributed throughout the United States and Territories there are at present families, known as Moelich, Malick, Melick and Mellick. The latter name, in some instances, is pronounced as if the syllable division was made between the *l* and *i*, the first syllable being accented.

The plan of this genealogical record is to first give an outline of the German ancestry and then to follow descents down five ancestral streams, flowing from five different German emigrants Moelich, who all came from Bendorf on the Rhine, viz.: JOHANNES (A), who reached America in 1735, and settled on the "OLD FARM" in Somerset Co., N. J.; GOTTFRIED (B), a brother of JOHANNES (A) who came with him to America, and on reaching maturity settled in

Sussex, now Warren, Co., N. J.; JOHAN PETER (C), another brother, who reached America in 1728, and whose son Tunis settled in Hunterdon Co., N. J.; DAVID (D), believed to have been a cousin of JOHANNES (A), who also settled in Hunterdon Co.; and PETER (E), a brother of the last, who settled in what is now Columbia Co., Pennsylvania. In addition will be given the record of all the descendants of JOHAN JACOB KLEIN (Jacob Kline), and SIMON LUDEWIG HIMROTH (Simon Himrod), two German emigrants who married, respectively, Veronica Gerdrutta and Marie Cathrine, the only daughters of JOHANNES (A).

The following abbreviations will be used:—b. born—d. died—dec. dead—m. married—unm. unmarried—wid. widow—Presb. Presbyterian—Meth. Methodist—Epis. Episcopal—desc. descendant—Northumb. Northumberland—grad. graduated—bro. brother—Col. Columbia—app'd. appointed—ch.yd. churchyard—Luth. Lutheran—Rev. Reverend—S. O. F. Story of an Old Farm.

### THE MOELICH FAMILY IN GERMANY.

The first of the name is PETER, who appears in or about the year 1500 on the register of the Lutheran congregation at Winningen. This place is a market town of about three thousand inhabitants, on the left bank of the Moselle, five miles above Coblenz. It has a background of lofty and precipitous rocks, every available spot of which is planted with vines, producing the best flavored wine of the Lower Moselle. Winningen is one of the most ancient settlements in Germany, the unearthing of numerous coins, bits of arms, and remains of masonry, proving conclusively its Roman origin. In the year 888 the place was called Windiga, the present name having first been used about 1136. In 1288 Winningen came into the possession of the county Sponheim, which resulted, a few years later, in its forming, like Enkirch, Trarbach, and other places on the Moselle, a strong Protestant enclave in the midst of the Roman Catholic Electorate of Treves. Since 1814 it has been part of the kingdom of Prussia, and for sixty years before that date was attached to the Grand Dukedom of Baden. During the year 1557 the congregation—whose register has supplied the little information I have regarding the Moselle Moelichs,—went over in a body, under the leadership of Father George Muller, to the reformed religion and, to-day, there are only Lutherans in Winningen. The church, which is a very plain but noble-looking Romanesque structure, was built soon after the year 1200. During the seventeenth century the side naves were raised, in order to introduce galleries, which of course much mars its original architectural outlines. Pastor Theveny, the present incumbent, exhibits with much pride a Roman baptismal font, and, if his visitors are willing to climb, he will also show the fine large bells hanging in the tower. On one of them is inscribed "*in godes namen lueden ich, matheus heis ich, henrich vom proim gois mich anno x vc unde seven.*" (In the name of God I do ring; my name is Mathens, and was formed by Henry of Proim in the 1507).

I. PETER MOELICH of Winningen had a son, II. THEISS (Matthias), b. 1530, d. 1507. Theiss had a son, III. MICHEL, who m. in 1598 Margaretta Knaus. They had a son, IV. FRIEDRICH, b. 17 Jan., 1611, d. 9 Jan., 1695, m. Lucia Borner. Friedrich had a son, V. JONAS, b. 1650, who m. and had b. to him in Winningen, four ch., viz:—VI. GEORG THILMANN, b. 1678; VII. JUSTINIA MARIA, b. 1681; VIII. HANS PETER, b. 19 Sep., 1683, and IX. ANNA APOLLONIA, date of birth unknown. In the year 1688, JONAS (V.), leaving his eldest son GEORG THILMANN and his daughter JUSTINIA MARIA in Winningen, removed with his two remaining children to Bendorf. This town, of 4500 people is located on the right bank of the Rhine, four miles below Coblenz. Like Winningen it was founded by Roman settlers early in the Christian era, they establishing a fortress there, which was destroyed by Huns, A. D. 375. The next known settlement at this point was in the eighth century when the nucleus of a population was formed by the establishing of a mission station in the vicinity by an English missionary named Willibrord. The baptismal font of brown stone now in the possession of the Evangelical Head-Church of that place is said to



have been the one used by this missionary in baptizing the converted Rhine heathens. About the tenth century, as recited in the old documents of the county *Wied*, the Frankish kings set up here three courts. This attracted many settlers and the place soon after assumed the name of BETHIN, or BEDE, meaning cheap, said to refer to the low price at which land could then be acquired. Since then the name has gradually changed from BETHENDORF and BEDENDORF to BENDORF. (See pp. 22-24.)

JONAS (V) established at Bendorf a tannery, and became a prominent citizen and an assessor of the court. His wife having died on the eleventh of May 1693, he married as a second wife Gertraut Lucas. In Bendorf by his first wife he had born to him 2 ch., X. JOHAN MICHAEL, b. 13 Feb., 1689, who remained in the place of his nativity and had there ch. and grand-ch.; XI. MARIA CHRISTINA, b. 25 Sep., 1691. His second wife bore him three ch., viz.:—XII. JOHANNES, b. 14 Feb., 1695, who remained in Bendorf and had there eleven ch.; XIII. MARIA CATHRINE, b. 21 July, 1699, d. in infancy, and XIV. ANNA CATHRINE, b. 17 Apl., 1704, d. in infancy. The second wife of JONAS (V) having d. in 1718, he m. for the third time, 24 Sep., 1719, the widow, Elisabethta Pistoris. JONAS (V) d. at Bendorf in 1722, his last wife surviving him for 20 years, dying at the age of eighty in 1742.

HANS PETER (VIII) the second son of JONAS (V) had born to him in Bendorf eleven ch., viz.:—XV. JOHAN JONAS, b. 27 July, 1710, who emigrated to America, and d. unm. in Hunterdon Co., N. J., (See p. 79); XVI. ANNA CHRISTINA, b. 9 Nov., 1712; XVII. JOHAN DAVID (D), b. 12 Nov., 1715, who emigrated to America, and d. in Hunterdon Co., N. J. see p. 79; for his descendants see genealogy of Johan David (D); XVIII. ANNA SYBILLA, b. 10 June, 1718, d. in infancy; XIX. JOHAN PETER, (E) b. 29 Aug., 1719, who emigrated to America and d. in what is now Columbia Co., Pa.; for descendants see genealogy of Johan Peter (E); XX. MARIA ELISABETH, b. 20 Sep., 1721, d. in infancy; XXI. JOHANNES, b. 23 Sep., 1723, who did not d. in Bendorf and probably emigrated with his brothers, he may have been the unknown John Melick whose name occasionally appears in the last century on the register of Zion Lutheran Church at New Germantown, N. J., XXII. CATHERINE MARGARETTA, b. 23 Nov., 1725; XXIII. MARGARETTA GERDRUTTA, b. 10 Nov., 1727; XXIV. CATHERINA, b. 10 Feb., 1730; XXV. MARIA CATHRINE, b. 13 Dec., 1732.

When JONAS (V), migrated from Winnigen to Bendorf in 1688 he was accompanied by, XXVI. JOHAN WILHELM MOELICH, the father of XXVII. JOHANNES, who founded the "Old Farm," whose story is told in this volume. There is every reason to believe that if not the son he was at least a nephew of JONAS (V). Four of Johan Wilhelm's children were named after the children of JONAS (V), and as will be shown, in the baptism of his nine ch. in almost every instance the godfathers and godmothers were the daughters of Jonas and one instance Jonas himself stood sponsor. Investigations are being continued which, it is hoped, will establish the relationship between these two, and thus provide a common German ancestor for all of the name in America. Johan Wilhelm's wife was Anna Cathrine, her parentage not being known. She had a sister living in Winnigen, the wife of Johan David Krober, he standing godfather in 1712 for her son JOHAN DAVID (XVII). Another sister was the wife of a Mr. Hermann of Hochstenbach, who stood godfather in 1708 to her son JOHAN PETER (XIX). Anna Cathrine Moelich died in 1729 as is shown by the following record on the register of the Evangelical Head-Church at Bendorf, in the handwriting of Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt:—"Certificate of Death; 1729, the 23d of July, Anna Cathrine Mëllich, wife of Hans Wilhelm Mëllich, has been buried. God grant her the eternal life. Amen." (Hans, Joh., Johan., Johannes all stand for the same name, John.)

Johan Wilhelm Moelich (XXVI) had 12 children.

- XXVII. JOHANNES (A), b. 26 Feb., 1702, emigrated to America in 1735, he being the founder of the "Old Farm." For his record and that of his posterity see p 631.
- XXVIII. JOHAN PETER (C), b. in 1708, emigrated to America in 1728, his children settling in Hunterdon Co., N. J.; for his record and that of his posterity see genealogy of Johan Peter (C).
- XXIX. MARIA CHRISTINA, b. in 1710, bap. in the Bendorf church by Rev'd Johannes Reusch, the certificate reading:—"The 26th of October 1710 to Hans Wilhelm Mëllich has been baptized a young daughter and has been named by the Christian name, Maria Christina. The godmothers

have been Jonas Mölich's daughter Maria Christina, and Hans Peter Mölich's wife. The godfather was the barber Mr. Reichard. God grant all prosperity to the child. Amen."

- XXX. JOHAN DAVID, b. July, 1712, bap. in the Bendorf church by the Rev'd Johannes Reusch, the certificate reading:—"The 24th of July, 1712, to Hans Wilhelm Mölich a young son has been baptized and has been named by the Christian name Johannes David. The godfathers were Johannes David Wortman, citizen of this place, and Johannes Mölich, Jonas Mölich's son. The godmother was Jonas Mölich's daughter, Justina Maria, living at Winnigen. God grant to the baptized all prosperity, here and there. Amen." This Johan David d. in Bendorf 15 July, 1756.

- XXXI. ANNA GERTRAUT, b. Jan., 1714, bap. in the Bendorf church by the Rev'd Johannes Reusch, the certificate reading:—"The 21st January, 1714, to Joh. Wilhelm Mölich a young daughter has been baptized and named by the Christian name, Anna Gertraut. The godmother was Anna Gertraut, Johann Michael Mölich's wife; the godfather was Philipp Wilhelm Fassbender. God grant all blessings to the baptized. Amen." Godfather Fassbender was a brother of the Jacob Fassbender who in the year 1750 was a cotrustee with Johannes Mölich (A) in Zion Lutheran Church in New Germantown, N. J. He was also the uncle of Gottfried Klein (Godfrey Kline) the emigrant ancestor of a well known Hunterdon family. (See p. 91.)

- XXXII. MARIA CATHRINA CHRISTINA, b. Feb., 1716, bap. in the Bendorf church by the Rev'd Johannes Reusch, the certificate reading:—"The 23d of February, 1716, to Joh. Wilhelm Mölich a young daughter has been baptized and named by the Christian name Maria Cathrina Christina. The witnesses of baptism were Mrs. Dr. Senheim, of Coblenz, but whose place in proxy took her daughter, Mrs. Counsellor of the Court, Pohl. The other godmother was my beloved wife. The godfather was Jonas Mölich, citizen and assessor of the Court of this place. God grant all blessings to the baptized. Amen." "My beloved wife" was, of course, Mrs. Reusch. This was the last occasion of her husband's officiating at Mölich baptisms as he d. 22 Dec. of that year, having served the Bendorf Head-Church congregation since 3 Aug., 1697. His successor was Pastor Joh Georg Schmidt (See p. 70.)

- XXXIII. ANNA SIBYLLA, b. May, 1718, bap. in the Bendorf church by the Rev'd Joh Georg Schmidt, the certificate reading:—"The 26 of May, 1718, to Joh. Wilhelm Mölich a daughter has been baptized. Her witnesses of baptism have been Mr. Ehrenreich Kirberger, Sibylla Elisabeth, wife of Johan Wimmer, and Maria Cathrina, wife of Joh. Peter Fassbender, citizen of this place. To her has been given the name of Anna Sibylla. God grant her grace for Jesus sake. Amen." This child was evidently named after Anna Sibylla (XVIII) second dau. of Hans Peter Moelich (VIII). Godfather Kirberger was a cousin of the wife of Johannes Moelich (A).

- XXXIV. ELISABETH GERDRUTTA, b. Aug., 1720, bap. in the Bendorf church by Rev'd. Joh Georg Schmidt, the certificate reading:—"The 28th of August, 1720, to Hans Wilhelm Mölich a daughter has been baptized. Witnesses of baptism were Master Hans Peter Hoffbauer, citizen and resident of this place; further, Maria Elisabeth, Johann Mölich's wife; Veronica Gerdrutta, Georg Peter Otto's wife. To the child has been given the name Elisabeth Gerdrutta. God bless the child for Jesus Christ's sake. Amen." Godmother Maria Elisabeth Mölich was the wife of Johannes (XII), the son of Jonas (V). Mrs. Otto was a sister of the wife of Johannes (A).

- XXXV. JOHAN GOTTFRIED, (B) b. 14 July, 1724, emigrated to America in 1735, with his eldest brother Johannes (A) and settled in Sussex, now Warren, Co., N. J. For his record and that of his posterity see genealogy of Johan Gottfried (B).

Johan Wilhelm and Anna Cathrine Moelich also had born to them three ch. between the years 1702 and 1708, who all d. soon after birth. There is no record of the death of Johan Wilhelm in Bendorf, and he evidently removed from there after the death of his wife in 1729, and

is said to have emigrated. No record has been discovered of him in America; had he been there his youngest son Gottfried (B) would hardly have remained until his maturity as the ward of his eldest brother Johannes (A). (See p. 74). There is a tradition extant, the foundation of which has not been discovered, that he started for America with his sons Johannes and Gottfried, and d. on the way, either in Holland or during the voyage.

## THE GERMAN EMIGRANTS MOELICH AND THEIR POSTERITY IN AMERICA.

### JOHANNES MOELICH (A).

(John Melick, of Bedminster, and his descendants.)

- I. JOHANNES MOELICH, was the son of Johan Wilhelm (XXVI) and Anna Catharine of Bendorf on the Rhine, Germany, where he was born in 1702, and baptised in the Evangelical Head-Church by the Rev'd. Johannes Reusch, the baptismal certificate reading:—"The 26th of February, 1702, a young son is born to the world to Master Hans (Johan) Wilhelm Mëlch, and baptised by me on the 29th, and named by the christian name, Johannes, the godfathers were Master Johannes Reichard, citizen and shoemaker in the city of Franckfurth, but he was represented in proxy by his brother Monsieur Reichard, theological student. The other godfather was Johannes Bohm, citizen at Winningen. The godmother was Anna Apollonia Mëlch, daughter of Master Jonas Mëlch. God grant all satisfaction of the body and of the soul to the baptised, for Christ's sake. Amen." Johannes (I), d. 16 Nov., 1763, at Bedminster, Somerset Co., N. J., and is buried in the Lutheran church-yard at Pluckamin. He m. 1 Nov., 1723, at Bendorf, Maria Cathrina, dau. of Burgomaster Gottfried Kirberger, of that place, b. in 1698, and bap. in the Evangelical Head-Church, by the Rev'd. Johannes Reusch, the baptismal certificate reading: "The 8th of January 1698 to the actual burgermeister, Gottfried Kirberger, a young daughter has been born for the world and baptized the next Sunday. The godfather was Master Eberhard Reichard, the godmother was maid Maria Cathrina Hahnin, daughter of Wilhelm Hahn. In the act of baptism to the child has been given the name Maria Cathrina. God give to the baptized all spiritual and material prosperity." (See p. 71.) Johannes (I) emigrated with his wife, his four ch. born in Bendorf, and his youngest brother Johan Gottfried (B), to America, arriving at Phila. 29 May, 1735, by the ship "Mercury," Captn. William Wilson. Tradition speaks of his having remained in Pennsylvania about ten years. He first appears in New Jersey in December, 1747, as the purchaser from John F. Garrits of 409 acres in Greenwich township in Sussex, now Warren, county, fronting on the Delaware river and Pohohatcong creek. In 1750 he was living in Readington township, Hunterdon county, his homestead being 400 acres lying adjacent to the present line of C. R. R. of N. J., midway between North Branch and White House stations. Here he established one of the first tanneries in the province. The business and property was subsequently transferred to his partner and son-in-law, Jacob Kline. Until his death he was an officer and active in the affairs of Zion Lutheran church at New Germantown, in that county. In November, 1751, he purchased of George Leslie 367 acres in Bedminster Tp., Somerset co., on the road as now running from Pluckamin to Peapack. On this land he erected a substantial stone house, to which he removed, and which is still in possession of his descendants, being now occupied by William P. Sutphen. On this property he also established an extensive tannery and a bark mill, which continued in successful operation for over one hundred years. For a complete account of Johannes Moelich and his children see preceding chapters, S. O. F.



## SECOND GENERATION (A).

Johannes Moelich (I) had ch.

2. I. GEORG WILHELM. His baptismal certificate entered by Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt on the register of the Evangelical Head-Church at Bendorf reads as follows: "1724, the twelfth of August, to Johannes Molich a son was born; because of his great debility he was baptized at once; but the child recovering fairly afterwards he had been solemnly blessed in the church the next Sunday. His witnesses have been Johan Wilhelm Molich the child's grandfather, Master Georg Peter Otto, and finally Master Joh. Wilh. Kirberger's wife, and has been given to the child the name Georg Wilhelm." Georg Peter Otto was the husband of Johannes' (1) wife's sister, and Joh. Wilh. Kirberger is believed to have been a brother of Johannes' father-in-law, the Burgomaster. The child d. the 20th of the same month.
3. II. AARON, b. at Bendorf in Rhenish Prussia, 17 Oct., 1725, and was bap. Ehrenreich, on the following Sunday, in the Evangelical Head-Church by Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt. The sponsors were Ehrenreich Kirberger,—believed to have been his mother's cousin—and Johan Wimmer, both of Bendorf. Aaron d. at Bedminster, N. J., 7 Apl., 1809 and is buried in the churchyard at Pluckamin, m. Charlotte Miller, b. 14 May, 1734, d. 13 Mch., 1802, from injuries received by being thrown from a carriage. Aaron inherited from his father the tannery, the stone house and two hundred acres of land upon which he lived until his death. He was an active member of Zion Lutheran Church at New Germantown in Hunterdon Co., and of St. Paul's at Pluckamin. During the Revolution he was an active patriot and at its outset was a member of the Bedminster Com. of Observation and Inspection. He filled many minor offices, was frequently called upon to serve as executor and administrator in the settlement of estates, and during a long and honorable career was always recognized as a leader among the substantial and prominent citizens of the county. He anglicised his name into Malick. See S. O. F. for a full account of his life. (For his 5 ch. see p. 633.)
4. III. VERONICA GERDRUTTA, b. at Bendorf, Germany, 19 Dec., 1727, and was baptized a few days later in the Evangelical Head-Church by Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt. Her certificate of baptism reads:—"The 21st of November 1727 to Johann Mölich, junior, a daughter has been baptized; her witnesses of baptism were Veronica Gerdrutta, Georg Peter Otto's wife [her mother's sister]; the wife of the Burgomaster of Hochstenbach [her mother's brother]; Master Joh. Wilh. (?), citizen and tanner of Sayn, and has been given to the child the name Veronica Gerdrutta; God grant her his grace for Christ's sake. Amen." In America Veronica Gerdrutta was familiarly known as Fanny; she d., 9 Oct., 1801, while visiting a dau. at Germantown, Penna., where she is buried; m. about 1749, Johan Jacob Klein (Jacob Kline), (for her husband and descendants see genealogy of Johan Jacob Klein.)
5. IV. ANDREW, b. at Bendorf, Germany, in Dec., 1729, and was baptized, Andreas, in the Evangelical Head-Church by Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt. His certificate of baptism reads:—"The 17th December 1729 to Master Joh. Mölich jun. of this place a son has been baptized. His witnesses were Præceptor Kippold's wife Maria Cathrina; further Maria Christine, Joh. Hermann Hollinghaussen's, (also) tanners of this place, wife, and Master Andreas Kirberger [his mother's half-brother] of this place, and has been given to the child the name Andreas. God grant to the same his grace, Amen." Andrew (5) d. 29 June, 1820, after living over 90 years; he is buried within the shadows of St. James' Lutheran church, near Phillipsburg, N. J., which congregation he was instrumental in founding. (See p. 305.) Hem. Catherine b. 1741, d. 27 Oct., 1804; she is buried by the side of her husband. On reaching manhood Andrew settled in Greenwich tp, Sussex, now Warren, Co., on land he inherited from his father Johannes, being a portion of the 409 acres that he—Johannes—purchased from John F. Garrets, fronting on Pohohatacong Creek and the Delaware. (See

p. 74.) On this property Andrew erected a substantial dwelling wherein he lived until 1810 when by deed dated May 5, in consideration of fourteen thousand dollars he conveyed his homestead farm, "containing 283 acres and 8 perches, strict measure," to Abraham Carpenter of Greenwich tp. On July 4, 1776, he was commissioned captain in the 1st Sussex regt. (commanded by Col. afterwards Gen. William Maxwell,) and served during the war. His camp chest and military trappings were preserved by his descendants until 1849 when they were lost while his granddaughter, Mrs. John Derr, was moving from Bucks to Northumberland Co., in Pa. He anglicised his surname Malick sometimes signing it Mallk. (For his 5 ch. see p. 636.)

6. V. GEORG ANTHON. His baptismal certificate entered by Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt on the register of the Evangelical Head-Church at Bendorf, reads as follows:—"The 6th of April, 1832, Joh. Mōlich's—a citizen and tanner of this place—son in the Easter Service has been blessed, having received previously on account of great debility the baptism of necessity in the house. With the blessing to him has been given the name Georg Anthon; his witnesses were Master Georg Thillman Mōlich a citizen and law assessor in Winnigen; further, Anthon Kirberger, citizen and court-assessor of this place, Bendorf; and finally Master Philipp Wilhelm Fassbender's, a citizen's wife. God grant to the child His Grace and blessing for Christ's sake. Amen." This certificate is interesting, first, as showing that Johannes (1) was a tanner in the old country as well as in N. J., and second, because in having George Thillman Moelich (VI) as godfather it is additional evidence of an existing relationship between the father of Johannes (1) and of Jonas (V) with whom he came to Bendorf from Winnigen. Godmother Fassbender was the wife of another brother of Jacob Fassbender, a co-trustee with Johannes (1) in Zion Lutheran Church at New Germantown. The child George Anthon (6) died 25 June same year.

7. VI. MARIE CATHRINE (Maria), b. at Bendorf, Germany, 5 Dec., 1733, bap. at the Evangelical Head-Church by Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt, the certificate of baptism being as follows:—"The 8th December 1733 to Joh. Mōlich a daughter was baptized, the witnesses being Christian Klein, citizen of this place, of reformed confession; further Marie Cathrine Hoffbauer, wife of Peter Hoffbauer, law-assessor of this place; and finally Anna Marie Cathrine Marxin wife of Andreas Marx of this place, and has been given to her the name Marie Cathrine. God bless the baptized for Christ's sake. Amen." Godfather Christian Klein was the father of Gottfried Klein who emigrated to America and settled in Hunterdon Co., N. J., and who was the immigrant ancestor of the well-known county family of that name. Marie Cathrine m. Simon Ludewig Himroth (Simon Himrod) who emigrated from Germany to America in 1752. For his full record and Marie Cathrine's descendants see genealogy of Simon Ludewig Himroth.

8. VII. PHILIP, b. in Penna., 9 Oct., 1736, settled in the vicinity of Pluckamin, Somerset Co., N. J. (For his 8 ch. see p. 636.)

9. VIII. PETER, b. in Pa., 5 Dec., 1739, m. Mary Magdalena King. After the marriage he settled on 100 acres that he inherited from his father, being the southern portion of the Bedminster tract, Johannes purchased from George Leslie in 1751. Peter built a house and farm buildings on the present site of the village of Bedminster. Here he was living during the Revolutionary war, and here at least 3 of his ch. were born. He subsequently sold his farm to his brother Aaron and removed to Perth Amboy in Middlesex Co., and later, to Washington Valley, in Somerset Co. He anglicised his surname into Melick. See pp. 304, 328, 335. (For his 8 ch. see p. 637.)

### THIRD GENERATION (A).

Aaron Malick (3) had children:—

10. I. JOHN, b. at Bedminster, 31 July, 1758, d. in Schoharie Co., N. Y., 7 Oct., 1834, m. 15 April, 1783, Jane Coriell, b. 13 March, 1765 d. 7 June 1814. She

and her husband are buried at Argusville in the above Co. John served in the army throughout the Revolutionary war. When 18 years old he enlisted in Capt. Jacob Ten Eyck's company, in the 1st Somerset battalion. He fought at the battle of Long Island, in a provisional regiment, commanded by Col. Philip Johnston; was captured and imprisoned in one of the New York sugar houses. Tradition says that he was taken from prison by a British general whom he was forced to serve as a page. When finally exchanged, he re-enlisted in the continental line. About 1807, he removed with his family to Sharon, N. Y., taking with him from the Bedminster stone house, his father's long clock and the family Bible. He spelled his name Malick, as do all his descendants. See pp. 313, 316, 565, 579; (for 9 ch. see p. 638.)

- 11 II. CATHARINE b. at Bedminster, 15 July, 1761, d. 10 Aug. 1793, m. 3 April, 1782, Peter Perine, b. 15 July, 1753, in Bedminster tp., Somerset Co., N. J., d. 16 Nov. 1823, at Salem, N. Y., where he and his first wife are buried, m. 2d., Mary Mix of Middletown, Conn. He was the 3d son and 5th child of Peter and Mary Perine and the great-great-grandson of Daniel Perin, b. in France, and emigrated from the Island of Jersey in 1685, landing at Elizabethtown from the ship "Philip" with Gov. Philip Carteret. He was a French count and boasted of arms and a crest, m. Mariah Thorel, 18th Feb. 1666, who came over on the same ship. Peter Perine and Catharine Melick settled at Salem, N. Y., and had 7 ch.

I. CHARLOTTE, m. John Van Duyn; their ch. *Harriet*, m. Henry Arrenfeldt; *Catherine*, m. Edward Blackford; *Mary*, unm.; a desc. is Mrs. Edward Blackford, 20 S. Union St., Rochester, N. Y.

II. AARON M., b. 6 Mch., 1787, at Bedminster, N. J., d. in the west, m. Catharine, dau. of Hon. John W. McLean, b. at Jackson, Wash. Co., N. Y., 29 Sep., 1788, d. at same place, 18 Dec., 1825; their one ch., *Jane M.*, res. Argyle, N. Y., b. 10 Oct., 1815, m. James Savage, M. D., b. 1798, d. 1879.

III. HENRY, b. 16 Feb., 1786, d. 12 Aug., 1869, m. *first*, Delana Cartie, b. 17 Jan., 1794, dec., their 2 ch., *Eliza C.*, res. East Salem, N. Y., b. 10 Mch., 1816, wid. of Lewis T. McLean, had 4 ch. all m.: *Thomas K.*, res. Lysander Onon. Co., N. Y., b. 6 May, 1818, m. Mary Brown, has 4 ch., all m.

HENRY PERINE—(III), m. *second*, Amanda, dau. of Fred Kellogg, of Cayuga Co., N. Y., b. 24 Aug., 1794, d. 4 Dec., 1877; their 13 ch.; *Aaron M.*, res. Detroit, Mich., b. 26 Sep., 1821, m. 24 Sep., 1850, Mary Harvey, who d. 8 Oct., 1886; has 2 ch. living, *Delana C.*, b. 1823, d. 1827. *Julia A.*, res. Jordan, Onon Co., N. Y., b. 29 Mch., 1824, m. Jared Tyler, no ch. *Lewis B.*, b. 1825, d. 1888, wife, dec., no ch. *Mary O.*, res. Ira, Cayuga Co., N. Y., b. 28 Mch., 1827, unm. *Peter L.*, res. Omaha, Neb., b. 24 Feb., 1829, m. Gertrude Parker; 1 adopted dau. *Reuben*, res. Ira, N. Y., b. 1830, m. Caroline Benedict, has 5 ch. *Sarah M.*, res. Meridian, Cayuga Co., N. Y., b. 1831, m. R. Daball, no ch. *Francis H.*, res. Los Angeles, Cal., b. 1833, m. Mary Lockwood, has 3 ch. *William M.*, b. 1834, d. 1878, unm. *Caroline A.*, b. 1836, d. 1883, m. John Pardee, of Lysander, N. Y., has 1 ch. *Chas. W.*, res. Kansas, b. 1838, m. a Miss Ellis. *DeWitt*, res. Fulton, N. Y., b. 1840, m. Jane Smith, has 2 ch.

IV. JOHN, b. 1788, d. 1848, m. Hannah Billings, their 7 ch., *Melancthon*; *Moses B.*; *Jos. S.*; *Mary*; *Kate*; *Nicholas*; *William*; a desc. is M. B. Perine, Doon, Canada.

V. MARY, b. 14 Feb., 1789, d. 10 Mch., 1882, m. 11 Mch., 1812, Thos. K. McLean, b. 1784, d. 1872. Their 7 ch., *Aaron*, b. 31 Dec., 1812; *DeWitt*, b. 13 Nov. 1814; *Mary Anne*, res. Greenwich, N. Y., b. 17 May, 1819, m. Revd. Chas. Pitcher; *Henry K.*, b. 8 June, 1824; *Elizabeth*, b. 1827, d. 1870; *Leroy*, res. N. Y. city, b. 14 Feb., 1830; *Revd. John K.*, res. Oakland, Cal., b. March, 1834.

VI. MARTHA, b. 9 Jan., 1791, d. 16 July, 1873, m. 20 Jan. 1816, Joseph Southworth, b. 1791, d. 1863; their ch., *James C.*, b. 1819, d. 1824; *Anna Mary*, b. 1823, d. 1868; *Cornelia F.*, res. Hurley, N. Y., b. 12 Aug., 1829, m. Revd. Sam. T. Searle.

VII. CATHERINE, m. Elisha Billings; a desc. is Mrs. M. A. Porter, Cambridge, N. Y.



12. III. DANIEL, b. in the "old stone house" at Bedmr. 28 Oct., 1763, d. in s. w. room of same house 9 July, 1815, bur. in Bedminster Ref. Ch. yd.; m. *first*, in 1785, Margaret, dau. of Robert Gaston, of Bedmr., b. 17 Mch., 1768, d. 10 Sep., 1807, bur. at Pluckamin, by whom 10 ch.; m. *second*, June, 1808, Catharine Johnston La Rue, b. at Peapack, Somerset Co., 20 Mch., 1780, d. 24 Apr., 1862, buried at Bedminster; by whom 2 ch. She was the dau. of Albert and Catharine Johnston, (he, b. 1725, d. 1799, she b. 1745, d. 1794); and the wid. of Othniel La Rue, b. 1773, d. 21 July, 1803, whom she m. 26 Mch., 1801. La Rue lived on the east side of the Peapack road, half a mile north of the "Old Stone House," near the "Folly." They had one ch., David O. La Rue, b. 5 July, 1802, d. 24 Oct., 1829, Murder Creek, Alabama. He was educated at Princeton College, studied medicine at Morristown under Dr. Whelpley; for one year had charge of a classical school at Oxford, North Carolina, and then commenced practising medicine at Fayetteville, in that state. He afterwards established himself as a physician in Alabama, where he died. Daniel Melick led an active and useful life as a tanner and farmer, 1st as his father's partner, and after Aaron's death as his successor. He was a member of the Bedminster Reformed Dutch church, held minor positions of trust in the township, and was considered a leading man in the community. His papers and accounts, that have been preserved, show him to have been an excellent penman and a methodical man of business. He uniformly spelled his name Melick, though his correspondents generally addressed him as Malick. After his death his widow continued residing in the "Old Stone House," for two years when she removed to Van Neste house, on the east side of the North Branch about a quarter of a mile below the mouth of the Peapack brook. Here she lived with her ch. for two years, when she purchased from William Britton a new house, with a half acre lot at the Cross Roads—Bedminster village—adjoining on the west the present store and residence of Martin Bunn. In 1830, she removed to the house of her dau., Margaret, who had m. Abram D. Huff, with whom she made her home until her death. (See index of S. O. F., and for Daniel's 12 ch. see p. 639.)
13. IV. ELIZABETH, b. at Bedminster, 8 Nov., 1765, injured by falling under the grinding wheel of her father's bark mill, 6 May 1768; d. 14 May, 1768; buried at Pluckamin.
14. V. MARGARET, b. 22 Dec., 1767, m. 12 March, 1789, Joseph, son of Robert Gaston of Bedminster, b. 19 Nov., 1766, d. 18 April, 1834. He settled in Northumberland Co., Penna., where he was a member of the Presbyterian church and served as county commissioner; had ch.
- I. ROBERT, b. 30 Mch., 1790, d. 22 Sept., 1854, m. Eleanor Shannon, b. 12 Dec., 1794, d. 12 Oct., 1867; he was an elder of the Warrior Run Pres. Ch.; their 6 ch., *Martha J.*, b. 1 June, 1826, unm.; *Margaret M.*, b. 1828, d. 1857, unm.; *Solomon P.*, res. Turbotville, North Co., Pa., b. 16 Dec., 1829, m. 5 Nov., 1861, Lydia M. Matchin, b. 10 June, 1839; *Mary E.*, b. 1833, d. 1865, m. 1856, Rev. Henry Q. Graham, now pastor United Presb. Ch. at Homer City, Indiana Co., Pa., has 5 ch.; *Charlotte A.*, b. 3 April, 1835; *Sarah G.*, b. 1837, d. 1845.
- II. CHARLOTTE, b. 22 Sept., 1792, d. 13 Aug., 1824, m. 1812, James Durham, b. 1784, d. 1812, a dau., Mrs. Harriet Hansel, lives at Marion, Lynn Co., Iowa.
- III. ROSANNA, b. 17 June, 1795, d. 4 Mch., 1845.
- IV. AARON, b. 25 Apl., 1799, d. 24 Oct., 1868, m. *first*, Sarah Ann Clarke, by whom one ch., *Clarke*, d. in infancy; m. *second*, Rosanna Camp, by whom 2 ch., *John W.*, b. 28 Mch., 1855; *Anna Rosa*, res. Turbotville, b. 26 Jan., 1859, m. 1886, Amos C. Heacock, and has 2 ch.
- V. DANIEL, b. 26 July, 1801, d. 28 Apl., 1865, m. 1839, Rosa Morris, b. 1803, d. 1873; was a Presb. minister at Phila.
- VI. MARY, b. 14 May, 1804, d. 11 July, 1880.
- VII. ANNE, b. 20 Dec., 1808, m. William Sample.
15. VI. MARIA, b. at Bedminster, 24 March, 1771, d. 18 Nov., 1824, m. Solomon Paterson, settled at Chambersburgh, Pa.: had ch., I. *Nicholas*, b. in 1793, d. 7 Jan., 1865, a Presb. minister at Wilmington, Del., m. Elizabeth

Haughey, no ch.; II. *Charlotte*, m. James McCracken, of Chambersburgh, Pa.

### THIRD GENERATION (A).

Andrew Malick (5) had at least 5 ch.

16. I. CATHARINE. The baptismal record of St. James Lutheran Church, Phillipsburgh, N. J., has the entry:—"Parents. Andreas Meligh & frau Catarina. Child, Catarina, b. Apl. 4, 1770, bap. June 3, witnesses Christopher Inslee & frau Catarine." She d. May 8, 1831, m. 21 Aug., 1787, Johannes Fine (John Fine) b. 5 June, 1768, d. 11 May, 1826. Church record shows them to have been confirmed together in 1787, he aged 20 and she 17, and that they partook of their last communion together in Nov. 1825. John Fine was the son of Philip Fine b. 1744, d. 1810, and who in 1767 was living on the Barker tract in Alexandria township, Hunterdon Co.; near the close of the last century he built a saw and flour mill on the south side of Musconetcong creek, at Finesville, in that Co.; at his death his flour mill was continued by his son; it is now owned by Taylor & Co. and used as a knife factory. John Fine early in the century owned 36 acres near Allertown, Hunterdon Co., which he sold to Joseph Fritts. He was elected in 1813, for 4 years warden of St. James Lutheran church near Phillipsburgh. John and Catharine Fine had 10 ch.:—
  - I. MARY, m. William Tinsman, of Warren and Hunterdon Cos., had 8 ch., a son *J. F. Tinsman* lives at Phillipsburg, N. J.; II. MARGARET, m. John Tinsman; III. PHILIP; IV. BARBARA, m. Hughes, and had at least 3 ch.; V. ELIZABETH, m. Pursel; VI. ANDREW M., m. Hartpense; VII. SARAH, m. John Thompson, of Durham, Pa.; VIII. HARRIET, m. Beatty Hughes, M. D.; IX. CATHERINE, m. John Thompson of Holland, Hunterdon Co.; X. HANNAH, b. 17 Jan., 1813, d. 2 April, 1864, m. John Derr, b. 4 Sept. 1802, d. 26 April 1864, of Springfield Township, Bucks Co., Pa., a descendent of Johann Heinrich Dorr, who emigrated from Germany in 1742, landing from the ship *Loyal Judith* from Rotterdam. John and Hannah Derr had five ch. that reached adult age; *Thompson, Katherine, Henry H., John F., and Andrew F.*; the last son is now in active business at Wilkes-Barre, Pa., being a director of the Anthracite Bank, the Miners' Savings Bank, the Osterhout Free Library and a trustee of the Memorial Presbyterian church.
17. II. REBECCA. The baptismal record of St. James Lutheran church, Phillipsburgh has the entry:—"Parents, Andreas Mölich and frau Catharine. child Rebecca, b. May 13, 1776, bap. July 20, 1776. witness, the Parents."
18. III. JOHANNES (John). The baptismal record of St. James Lutheran church at Phillipsburg has the entry:—"Parents, Andreas Mölich and frau Catarina. Johannes, b. June 29, 1778, bap. July 28, 1778. witnesses, the Parents." He d. 21 Nov., 1863, m. *first* Anna Sharps, by whom 3 dau's; m. *second*, 16 Feb., 1806, Sarah Melick (B 17), b. 30 Jan., 1787, by whom 1 dau.; m. *third*, Esther, dau. of George Cyphess, b. 4 Jan., 1788, d. 13 Oct., 1861, by whom 9 ch.; John (18) first lived near Bloomsbury in Hunterdon, then removed to Belvidere in Warren, where he kept a hotel. (For 13 ch. see p. 641)
19. IV. JACOB, b. 14 Aug., 1783, d. 1 Apl. 1819.
20. V. HANNAH. The baptismal record of St. James' Lutheran church at Phillipsburg has the entry:—"Parents, Andreas Melek Sr. and frau, Catarina. Child Hanna, b. Feb. 27, 1785, bap. May 1, 1785. Witnesses, The Parents." She m. 22 May, 1806, Matthias Melick (B 13), b. 6 June, 1778, d. 5 Mar., 1819; had 2 ch., I. CATHARINE, b. 7 Apl., 1809, II. MARGARETTA S., b. 27 June, 1811.

### THIRD GENERATION (A).

Philip Melick (8) had ch.

21. I. CATHERINE, d. 7 Mch., 1844, m. 2 Jan., 1786, James Todd, b. about 1765, d. 13 Mch., 1840; he was the son of John Todd a Scotch-Irishman who about 1749, when some 20 years old, emigrated to America from Longford,

Ireland, with David, a younger brother. David bought a farm at New Germantown, N. J., and m. a dau. of John King. Catherine and James Todd lived between Pluckamin and Martinsville. He was a skilled cultivator of fruit. He served as a private of militia during the Revolution and probably in the continental line as after his death the government advertised him as entitled to a pension. Had 6 ch.

- I. PHILIP, d. 1814, from disease contracted in army during war of 1812.
- II. JOHN I., b. 5 Sep., 1788, d. about 1871; his ch., *Joseph*, res. Paterson, N. J.; *John A.*, res. Tarrytown, N. Y.; *James A.*, res. Dunellen, N. J.; *Augustus*, res. Bergen Point, N. J.; *Maria*, m. John Martin, d. at Martinsville, N. J., about 1875, no ch.; *Catherine*.
- III. MARTHA, b. 8 July, 1786, d. 29 Sep., 1858, m. Elijah Pennington, b. 5 Dec., 1784, d. 4 June, 1851; their ch. *David*, b. 1810, d. 1844; *Mary*, b. 1827, d. 1849; *Catherine*, b. 1842, d. 1884; *Philip*, b. 1815, d. 1886; *Lot S.*, m. D., res. Sterling, Ill., b. 1812; *James T.*, res. Bunker Hill, Ill., b. 26 May, 1818.
- IV. MARIA, m. *first*, John Martin, m. *second*, William Pennington, no ch.
- V. ANN CASTNER, b. 7 Dec., 1790, d. about 1830, m. David Kirts, dec., no ch.
- VI. DAVID, res. Martinsville, N. J.
22. II. ELIZABETH, b. 1776, d. 1852, m. Jacob Van Dyke, lived between Pluckamin and Martinsville; had 3 ch.
  - I. JOHN, b. 1 May, 1792, d. 9 Apl., 1840, m. 15 Feb., 1817, Margaret Cunningham, b. 30 Sept., 1794, d. 2 Mch, 1859; their 8 ch., *Jacob*, b. 1817; *James*, b. 1819, d. in infancy; *Philip*, b. 1821, d. in infancy; *Henry*, b. 1823; *John*, b. 1825, d. 1847; *Rachell Ann*, res. Bound Brook, N. J., b. 1829, m. a Mr. McBride; *Sarah Elizabeth*, b. 1831, d. in infancy; *Joseph*, b. 1834.
  - II. PHILIP, b. 15 Sept., 1794, d. 3 Oct., 1832, m. Hester, dau. of Ebenezer Tingley, b. 28 May, 1798, d. 11 Aug., 1863; their 5 ch., *Jane Eliza*, b. 1823, d. 1877; *John*, b. 1824, d. 1847, unm.; *Rebecca*, res. Newmarket, N. J., b. 20 Dec., 1826, m. *first*, Archibald Haas, of Bedminster, N. J., m. *second*, Maxson Dunham, of Newmarket; *Catherine Ann*, b. 1829, d. 1858, unm.; *Christiana*, b. 1841, d. 1863, unm.
  - III. CATHERINE, b. 1 Jan., 1798, d. 5 Jan., 1876, m. 1825, Folkert Dow, of Bedminster, N. J., b. 14 Nov., 1802, d. 14 Sept., 1879, their 6 ch., *James*; *Elizabeth*; *Eli*; *Jacob*; *Martha*; and *Elizabeth* who m. John Allen.
23. III. DAVID, said to have settled in Virginia.
24. IV. JOHN, m. 16 Dec., 1781, Mary Todd, of Hunterdon Co., N. J.; in 1785 he was living near Pluckamin in Somerset as in that year he served as an administrator of the estate of Matthias Appleman deceased; later he removed to Ohio and d. near Somerset, Perry Co.; for his 13 ch. see p.
25. V. FANNY, m. a Herriot.
26. VI. CHARLOTTE, said to have gone to Virginia with David (23).
27. VII. MARGARET, said to have gone to Virginia with David (23).
28. VIII. MAGDALENA, m. 2 Jan., 1792, Jeremy Vosseler.

### THIRD GENERATION (A).

Peter Melick (9) had ch.

29. I. DAVID, m. Mary Heuston.
30. II. JOHN, m. Janet Olyphant.
31. III. CATHERINE, b. 26 Apl., 1771, d. 4 Sep., 1863, m. Enos Mundy, of Somerset Co., b. 25 May, 1766, d. 3 Feb., 1841; altho' she lived to be over 90 her faculties continued unimpaired enabling her to recall in her last days many Revolutionary events (See p. 336) Enos and Catherine Mundy settled near Martinsville, Somerset, where many of their desc. still live; had 8 ch.
  - I. DAVID, b. 18 July, 1791, d. 19 Nov., 1872.
  - II. LEWIS, b. 31 July, 1793, d. 27 Feb., 1889. Throughout his long life he was a man of sturdy character, strong in his convictions of right, and he always commanded the utmost respect from all who knew him. He filled various township offices, for several years was a justice of the peace, and from 1840 to 1851 was Judge of the Somer-



set County Court of Common Pleas. For 70 years he was an active member, and among the chief supporters of the Mount Bethel Baptist Church. When 94 years old—in 1887—he visited the writer at Plainfield after driving from his home in Washington Valley, 5 miles away. He walked unsupported, did not wear spectacles, and his hair was but slightly gray, it being thick and bushy growing low on the forehead and about the ears. His son *Ira* lives at Warrenville, Somerset Co., and *Simeon* at Newark; his daughters *Mrs. Thomas Codington* at Mount Bethel, N. J., and *Mrs. Sarah F. Haynes* at Covington, Ky.

- III. FRANCES, b. 27 Nov., 1795, still living—in 1889—in Washington Valley.
- IV. PETER, b. 15 Sep., 1798, lived and d. at Metuchin, N. J.
- V. MARGARET, b. 9 Jan., 1801, dec. m. Washington Leson.
- VI. CATHERINE, b. 17 May, 1803, was still living in 1887 with her son in Kansas.
- VII. JOHN, b. 9 Oct., 1805, unm.
- VIII. ISAAC, b. 3 Oct., 1808, removed to the West.

## FOURTH GENERATION (A).

John Malick (10) had ch.

- 32. I. SARAH, b. 15 Mch., 1784, d. 11 Dec., 1826, m. 1814, Cornelius Loucks, b. 15 Mch., 1784, d. 11 Dec., 1826. Had ch.
  - I. JOHN C., b. 13 Sep., 1807, d. 5 Oct., 1855, m. 1834, Desdemona Marsh, b. 1815, d. 1880; their 3 ch., *Jane E.*, b. 1835, d. 1883, m. 1871, Jos. W. Hastings; *Cornelius* b. 1837, m. 1867, Sarah E. Chown; *Leonard*, b. 1844, d. 1845.
  - II. JANE E., b. 13 Dec. 1812, d. 7 Oct., 1848, m. 2 Jan., 1834, George A. Dockstader, of New York City, b. 15 Aug., 1814; their 2 ch., *Sarah D.*, b. 1835, m. 1860, Washington L. Cooper; *Theodore G.*, born 1837, m. 1866, Ella E. Bean, address 78 Gold St., N. Y. C.
- 33. II. ELIAS, b. 25 Aug., 1787, d. in Michigan 7 Mch., 1865, m. 18 Mch., 1812, Sarah dau. of Daniel Graft, b. 1793, d. 24 Dec. 1854; for his 12 ch. see p. 642.
- 34. III. CHARLOTTE, b. 23 June, 1788, d. 15 May, 1851, m. 6 Dec., 1810, Peter Kilts, b. 8 Dec., 1789, d. 6 Aug., 1828, had ch.,
  - I. DANIEL, res. Sharon Hill, N. Y., m. Maria Ball, their 10 ch., *Peter*; *Lorenzo*; *Daniel*; *Mary*; *Charles*; *George*; *Edward*; *Ida*; *Minnie*; *Anna*.
  - II. JANE, m. John Hyney, their 10 ch., *Peter*; *John*; *Daniel*; *Mary*; *Charlotte*; *Charles*; *Abzina*; *Belle*; *Levi*; *Netta*.
  - III. CHARLOTTE, res. St. Joseph, Mo., m. Silas Somers; their 4 ch., *Ladaska*, *Minerva*; *Erwin*; *Alwina*.
  - IV. SARAH, res. Cobleskill, N. Y., m. *first*, Horace Foster; m. *second*, Frederick Quackenbush; no ch.
  - V. LYDIA, res. Sioux City, Iowa, b. 20 Sep., 1823, m. 31 Dec., 1844, Jacob A. Ressegieu, b. 2 Sep., 1822, had 7 ch., *Harriet N.*, b. 1845, m. Stephen C. Hathaway; *Belle*, b. 1847, m. Linus E. Skinner; *Edwin J.*, b. 1849; *Winfield S.*, b. 1852; . b. 1854, *Horace F.* d. 1856; *Frank D.*, res. Beaver Creek, Minn., b. 1857; *Fred. H.*, twin, b. 1857.
  - VI. ELIZA, dec.
  - VII. ELIZABETH, m. George Ball; their 3 ch., *Frederick*, and 2 who d. in infancy.
- 35. IV. ELIZABETH, b. 26 Sep., 1791, d. in Canada; m. 29 July, 1810, Samuel Haner; had 5 ch.,
  - I. CORNELIUS; II. JANE; m. a Buell; III. SARAH, m. a Reese; IV. LYDIA m. a Van Dusen; V. JOHN.
- 36. V. AARON, b. 24 Mar. 1794, d. in Schoharie Co., N. Y., 18 July, 1850, m. 9 July 1818, Anna dau. of Peter De Remer, b. 5 Dec. 1801. d. 22 May, 1878 (for his. 3 ch. see p. 643).
- 37. VI. FANNY, d. in Wisconsin, m. John Scott, had 9 ch., I. ELIAS, res. Raymond, Wis., b. 2 Apl., 1817, m. Hannah Kilmartin; II. MARY ANN, m. John Neahr; III. Jane, m. Horton; IV. ELIZA, m. Jones; V. LYDIA, m. Lorenzo Deremer; VI. JOHN, res. Raymond, Wis., m. Helen Towers; VII. SARAH, m. West; VIII. CORNELIUS; IX. SPENCER.

38. VII. PETER, b. 10 Apl., 1801, d. 4 May, 1865, m. 13 May, 1823, Caroline Tymeson; (for 2 ch. see p. 643.)
39. VIII. HANNAH, b. 15 Aug., 1804, d. 28 Mch, 1874, m. 5 Jan, 1825, Jacob Salisbury, b. 23 Dec., 1802; d. 9 Dec., 1879; had 8 ch..
- I. JOHN H., b. 29 Jan., 1834, dec., m. 1860, Catherine dau. of Barney Ochampaugh; their 4 ch., *Cora A.*, b. 1863; *Dora B.*, b. 1869; *Alva J.*, b. 1876, *May*, b. 1879.
- II. NICHOLAS Patterson, res. Middlefield, Otsego Co., N. Y., b. 29 June 1826, m. Sarah Jane dau. of John Oothout.
- III. CHARLOTTE JANE, b. 9 May, 1829, d. in infancy.
- IV. SARAH, b. 19 Oct., 1831, d. in infancy.
- V. LOUISA, b. 23 May, 1837, m. William H. Darling.
- VI. AARON, res. Cherry Valley, Otsego Co., N. Y., b. 31 Mch., 1840, m. Joanna, dau. of Edward Griffin.
- VII. PETER, b. 30 Nov., 1844, d. unm.
- VIII. JACOB, b. 19 Apl., 1841, d. unm.
40. IX. JANE, b. 10 Apl., 1807, d. in Iowa, m. Daniel Webster; their sons DANIEL and JOHN live at Ossian, Minishic Co., Iowa.

## FOURTH GENERATION (A.)

Daniel Melick (12) had ch. by first wife.

41. I. AARON, b. 1 Apl., 1786, d. 7 Dec., 1814, unm., served in war of 1812, d. from fever contracted while stationed at Sandy Hook.
42. II. ELIZABETH, b. 25 Mch., 1788, d. at Albion, Mich., 21 July 1851, m. in "Old Stone House," Bedminster, N. J., by Rev. Charles Hardenburg, 3 Jan., 1816, to Dennis Van Duyn, of Peapack, b. 31 Dec., 1791, d. 18 Nov., 1879. He was a desc. of Garret Cornelisq. a wheelwright who emigrated to New Utrecht, L. I., from Zwolle, Prov. of Overysse, in the Netherlands. This immigrant's grandsons William and Denyse, who founded the N. J. family, were living on the Raritan before 1702. Dennis and Elizabeth (42) Van Duyn removed to Romulus, N. Y., thence to Mich.; their 3 ch.
- I. MARY M., res. Albion, Mich., b. 26 Nov., 1822, m. 6 Mch., 1842, Newell Fleming, b. 16 Sep., 1818, d. 8 July 1880. Their 2 ch., *Llewellyn*, res. Sault Ste. Marie, Chippewa Co., Mich., b. 1853, m. 1882, Nelly D. Hopkins and has 3 ch.; *Eliza M.*, res. Albion, b. 1855, m. 1884, Irving C. Foster, M D.
- II. ANNA M., b. 24 Mch., 1825, m. June, 1851, David M. Crane, b. 4 May, 1827, d. 26 June, 1875; their 2 ch.; *Eva E.*, res. Allegan, Mich., b. 1852, m. 1876, D. N. Garrison; *Horace D.*, res. Cheshire, Allegan Co., Mich., b. 1857, m. 1878, Addie J. Hooker.
- III. DELIA COE, b. 9 Dec., 1828, d. 27 Oct., 1880, m. 11 May 1852, Anson Thompson, b. 1 Nov., 1816, d. 21 Sep., 1884; their 4 ch., *Frederick*, b. 1854, m. 1879, Etta L. Crawford; *William B.*, b. 1855, m. 1888, Nelly B. Cranston; *Anne*; b. 1858; *George A.*, b. 1860.
43. III. CHARLOTTE, b. 7 Mch., 1790, d. 9 Jan., 1861 unm.; lived a useful and busy life with her 3 brothers in the "Old Stone House," and d. of paralysis seated in her rocking-chair in the living room. She had a great heart and many virtues and was much beloved by the entire community. The name of "Aunt Charlotte" having been as a sweet savor in the nostrils of Bedminster people.
44. IV. ROSANNAH, b. 14 Apl., 1812, d. 12 Mch., 1859, m. by Rev. Mr. Galpin at Lamington, William J. Todd, b. 1 Oct., 1792, d. 12 Aug., 1870. They settled and always lived on a farm near Peapack in Bedminster tp., on road running to the Larger Cross Roads; had 4 ch.
- I. JOHN, b. 1821, d. 1829.
- II. NICHOLAS PATERSON, b. 21 Feb., 1824, m. 17 Oct., 1850, Margaret, dau. of James Honeyman, of Peapack, b. 15 Mch., 1826; their 8 ch., *Esther Ann*, res. Asbury Park, N. J., b. 1852; *William J.*, b. 1853, d. in infancy; *James H.*, res. Lakewood, N. J., b. 1856, m. Eliza Bagley, and has 2 ch.; *Susan H.*, res. Paisley, N. J., b. 1858 m. George Brooks; *David E.*, res. Lakewood, b. 1860; *Rosanna*, b. 1863, unm.; *Margaret*, res. Ocean Beach, N. J., b. 1866, unm., *Herbert O.*, b. 1871, unm.

- III. DAVID M., b. 28 Sep., 1826, m. at Peapack parsonage 8 Oct., 1863, Caroline Wolf; he succeeded his father on the homestead farm; their one ch., *Jane Space*.
- IV. WILLIAM HARVEY b. 15 June, 1830, d. 30 June, 1889, at Malaga, Gloucester Co., N. J., unm.
45. V. JOHN, b. 5 Apl., 1794, d. 3 Oct., 1850, m. 30 June, 1822, Ann, dau. of Joseph Nevius, of Bedminster b. 28 Feb., 1801, d. 9 Oct., 1876; (See p. 251). He succeeded his father in the tannery and lived in the Bedminster stone house; had one ch.
- I. ELIZABETH, b. 10 Oct., 1824, d. 31 May, 1880, m. by Rev. George Schenck at home 13 Nov., 1850 to John Gordon Van Dyke, b. 24 Feb., 1822; their ch., *John M.*, b. 1851; *Henry Nevius* b. 1853, is now curator of Princeton college.
46. VI. MARY, b. 9 Apl., 1796, d. 26 Apl., 1833, m. 26 Mch., 1826, in "Old Stone House" by Rev. J. M. Fisher, to Peter Sutphen of Bedminster, b. 5 Dec., 1800, d. 1875; they lived at the Lesser Cross-Roads—now Bedminster village—he about the time of his marriage having built the dwelling and store of late owned and occupied by Martin Bunn; had 3 ch.
- I. PETER THEODORE, b. 27 Feb., 1827, d. 2 Feb., 1884, m. 21 May, 1859, Elizabeth H., dau. of Jacob Haas of Peapack, b. 21 Feb., 1831; he graduated in 1859 at the Med. Coll. of the University of Pa., and practised medicine at Peapack and Bedminster; their 4 ch., *Mary Melick*, b. 1860, d. 1863; *Frederick Cornell*, b. 1862, m. 1884, Susie Eugenia, dau. of James R. Spinning of N. Y., and has 2 ch., he graduated at the Med. School of N. Y. University and is now practising medicine at Liberty Corner, N. J.; *William Boyd*, b. 1866, d. in infancy; *Lizzie Rue*, res. Liberty Corner, b. 1868, is studying medicine with her brother.
- II. CATHERINE, b. 11 Aug., 1829, d. Oct., 1831.
- III. WILLIAM P., b. 8 Aug., 1832, m. 19 Dec., 1861, by Rev. Henry P. Thompson, to Jane, dau. of Watson C. Allen of Peapack; on the death of his mother he was taken home by Charlotte (43) and David (47) to the "Old Stone House" where he still resides, having succeeded David (47) on the farm. He has always been active in public affairs, has been a member of the state legislature, has repeatedly been elected collector, assessor, town clerk, and to other township offices. (See preface.)
47. VII. DAVID, b. 6 Apl., 1798, d. unm., 12 July, 1870, from injuries received July 9 by being gored by a bull. He succeeded his father on "the Old Farm," was the head of the family in the stone house, was highly esteemed for his probity and upright character, and filled many positions of honor and trust in the community.
48. VIII. WILLIAM, b. 31 Jan., 1800, d. 10 Dec. 1861, at New Liberty, Indiana, m. 3 Dec., 1823, at residence of Nicholas Arrosmith, Bedminster, by Revd. Wm. Galpin, to Mariah, dau. of Abraham Suydam, b. 10 May, 1801, d. 24 Sept., 1879. William, 5 May, 1825, purchased from Rozanna (44), John (45), Mary (46) and David (47), 53 acres of the homestead farm, on which he erected dwelling and farm buildings at the corner of the Peapack and Holland roads. He sold this land in 1829 to Joseph Nevius, who sold in 1841 to Nicholas Arrosmith, whose estate conveyed in 1844 to D. G. Schomp, and by him it was sold in 1858 to Benjamin Opie, whose son Frank is now the owner and occupant. In 1857, William (48) moved to East Enterprise, Switzerland Co., Ind., where he purchased a farm and permanently settled. (For his 10 ch. see p. 644).
49. IX. DANIEL, b. 13 Jan., 1802, d. unmarried, 30 March, 1870, lived in the "Old Stone House," aided John (45), in the tannery and David (47), on the farm. He was much of his life a semi-invalid.
50. X. CATHERINE, b. 9 Nov. 1804, d. 20 Apl., 1861, at Grass Lake, Mich., m. one Sunday morning, at the "Old Stone House" by the Rev. Isaac M. Fisher, to John Allen, b. 22 Nov., 1802; had 7 ch.; I. ANDREW M., b. 26 July, 1828, II. THEODORE S., b. 17 Oct., 1830, m. 8 Aug., 1863, Elizabeth Matthews, III. STEPHEN, b. 19 Jan., 1833, IV. MARGARET GASTON, b. 7 Feb., 1835, d. 1840, V. DEBORAH ESTHER, b. 20, Nov., 1837, m. and living in Maine, VI. ISAAC SYLVESTER, b. 10, Apl., 1840, VII. PAUL, b. 21, June, 1843, d. 1848.



## FOURTH GENERATION (A).

Daniel Melick (12) had ch., by his second wife.

51. I. MARGARET, b. 2 Jan., 1809, d. 13 Sept., 1886, buried at Bedminster, m. 27 Nov., 1830, at Lesser Cross Roads, by Revd. I. M. Fisher, to Abram D. Huff, b. 26 Dec. 1804, d. 7 Apl., 1883. After marriage they occupied the Van der Veer, now the Ludlow farm, below Bedminster Church. About 1832 they purchased from the heirs of Van Tyne the farm of 150 acres lying north of and adjoining the village of Lesser Cross Roads,—Bedminster—where they lived until death; had ch.
  - I. ELIZABETH, res. Somerville, N. J., b. 25 Sep., 1832, unm.
  - II. CATHERINE A., res. Roycefield, N. J., b. 1 Mch., 1835, m. 23 Nov., 1864, Albert Ammerman of Bridgewater, Tp., b. 20 Dec., 1838; their one ch., *Andrew Melick*, res. Bedminster, b. 1865, m. 1889, Caroline, dau. of Clarke Todd, of Bedminster; Andrew owns and occupies the homestead farm of his grand-parents (51).
  - III. DAVID LA RUE, res. Bedminster, b. 15 Mar., 1838, m. 6 Jan., 1864, Henrietta Van Arsdale, of Pluckamin, b. 15 Apl., 1843; their 6 ch., *Ida L. R.*; *Charlotte M.*; *Elizabeth*; *Margaret*; *Charles H.*; *Mary V. A.*;
  - IV. DENNIS A., res. Somerville, N. J., b. 26 Sep. 1840.
  - V. MARY M., b. 1 Apl., 1843, d. in infancy.
  - VI. CHARLOTTE, b. 27 Mch., 1844, d. 23 June, 1863, unm.
  - VII. MARY M., res. Bedminster, b. 14 Feb., 1848, m. 13 Jan., 1870, William C. Poulson, b. 8 Oct., 1847; their 7 ch., *Herbert E.*; *George M.*; *Louis V.*; *Mabel S.*; *Augusta S.*; *Anna A.*; *Grace W.*
  - VIII. ELLEN, res. Somerville, b. 25 Dec., 1851.
52. II. ANDREW D., b. 7 Apl., 1811, m. 9 June, 1841, by Rev. John C. Cruikshank to Elizabeth Dunn, dau. of Simeon Ayres, of New Brunswick, N. J., b. 26 Oct., 1822. In his youth he went to New Brunswick and obtained employment with the grocery and shipping firm of James Bishop & Co., where he remained until he became a partner (See p. 585) Andrew D. Mellick (52) as he spells his name and as do his descendants, during his N. B. residence was a member of the common council, for many years was a director of the State bank and was active in the fire dept. as foreman of Engine Co. No. 1. In 1844 he removed to the city of New York, becoming a member of the wholesale grocery firm of Beale, Mellick & DeWitt, at 3 and 5 Bridge street, and 30 Pearl street, this house held a leading position in the trade until overwhelmed by the panic of 1857. He first lived in New York in Clinton Place, but in 1845 purchased the brick dwelling No. 20 West 9th street, in which he lived until he removed to Bergen Point, N. J., in the spring of 1855. While living in New York he was a member of the board of trustees of the first Presbyterian church, and aided in completing its edifice on the corner of 5th avenue and 11th street. He was a director of the American Exchange Bank, and of the National Fire Insurance Co., and a member of the New York Historical Society. In New Jersey he was active and foremost in developing that portion of Hudson Co. in the way of locating and laying out streets, establishing grades and other important improvements preliminary to the founding of the city of Bayonne. For his 8 ch. see p. 645.

## FOURTH GENERATION (A).

John Melick (18) had ch. by first wife.

53. I. CATHERINE, d. in infancy.
54. II. ELIZABETH, m. William Stewart.
55. III. HANNAH, m. James Depew.

John (18) had ch. by second wife.

56. IV. MARY ANNA, d. in infancy.

John (18) had ch. by *third* wife.

57. V. ANDREW, b. 14 Oct., 1812, d. 23 May, 1867, m. Anna Maria Albright of Belvidere, N. J., b. 26 Apl., 1814, d. 16 Oct., 1869; had 6 ch.
  - I. ANNE ELIZABETH, b. 12 Oct., 1837, d. 21 Nov., 1839.
  - II. JAMES IRVIN, res. Lapeer, Mich., b. 1 Sep., 1839, m. Sep., 1871, Georgianna C. Brown.
- III. HENRY SOUTHARD, res. Buffalo, N. Y., b. 14 Aug., 1842, m. 3 June, 1874, Nelly Catlin.
- IV. GEORGE KING, res. Lambertville, N. J., b. 29 July, 1845, m. 22 Jan., 1873, Eliza Applegate; their ch., *Emily A.*, b. 1880, d. in infancy; *Percy A.*, b. 1888.
- V. SHARPS, res. Belvidere, N. J., b. 26 Oct., 1847, m. 26 July, 1871, Mary C. Ross, b. 11 Dec., 1852; their 2 ch., *Annie*, b. 1873, *Nelly*, b. 1878.
- VI. PHINEAS KENNEDY, b. 5 June, 1850, d. in infancy.
58. VI. GEORGE, m. Louisa Bradley of Belvidere; had 4 ch.,
  - I. WILLIAM, dec.; II. EMMA, dec.; III. PAUL, dec.; IV. PERCY.
59. VII. ANNA MARIA, dec.
60. VIII. PETER SHARPS, res. Easton, Pa., m. Maria Innis, no ch.
61. IX. SARAH, res. Bloomsbury, Columbia Co., Pa., unm.
62. X. MATILDA, dec.
63. XI. JOHN, dec.
64. XII. CHARLOTTE, res. West Pittston, m. Lewis C. Gordon, publisher.
65. XIII. MARY, dec.

#### FOURTH GENERATION (A).

John Melick (24) had ch.

66. I. MARY, b. 1 Jan., 1778, m. a Drake.
67. II. WILLIAM, b. 4 Nov., 1779, lived and d. in Perry Co., Ohio, a son, ALEXANDER, now lives at Somerset in that Co.
68. III. JANE, b. 31 May, 1781, d. 21 Sep., 1846, m. *first*, Joshua Lobdell, d. in 1812, *second*, Bailey; by first husband had 3 ch.
  - I. SARAH, res. Lyons, Iowa, m. John Mathes.
  - II. ZENOBIA, dec. m. Charles Hummel, dec.
  - III. JOHN, res. La Fontaine, Ind., b. 1809.
69. IV. JOHN, b. 7 May, 1783; lived and d. in Perry Co., O.; no ch.
70. V. DAVID, b. 2 Nov., 1784, d. in Knox Co., O., 16 Sep., 1867, m. Hannah, dau. of Timothy Hankins, b. 4 July, 1789, d. 12 Mch., 1853; he served in war of 1812; for his 13 ch. see p. 647.
71. VI. GEORGE, twin, b. 2 Nov., 1784, lived and d. in Knox Co., O., his son ROBERT lives at Toledo, Iowa.
72. VII. REBECCA, b. 21 Dec., 1786, d. about 1849, m. Wilson.
73. VIII. ELIZABETH.
74. IX. JONAS, b. 12 Mch., 1790, lived and d. in Knox Co., O., surviving several wives; his sons AARON, NOAH, HARRISON, and JEFFERSON live at Sparta, Morrow Co., and his son GREENBURY at Bladensburg, O.
75. X. ELEANOR, b. 20 Oct., 1791.
76. XI. AARON, b. 30 May, 1794, disappeared in youth.
77. XII. NATHAN, b. 24 Apl., 1796.
78. XIII. ROBERT, b. 29 Nov., 1798.

#### FIFTH GENERATION (A).

Elias Malick (33) had ch.

79. I. JOHN, res. Canajoharie, N. Y., b. 1 Mar., 1813, m. 20 Mar., 1836, Anna Eliza, dau. of Lawrence Moshel; for his 7 ch. see p. 648.
80. II. DANIEL, res. Cobleskill, Schoharie Co., N. Y., b. 20 Aug., 1814, m. 15 Sep., 1836, Lena Ann, dau. of John Young, b. 29 June, 1817; his 3 ch.,
  - I. SARAH, b. 2 Nov., 1829, m. 2 Oct., 1861, Harrison Young; their one ch. *Wilbur* b. 20 Oct., 1863.
  - II. AUGUSTA, b. 17 July, 1843, m. 9 Jan., 1861, James Ottman, their 2 ch., *Elsworth*, b. 15 Jan., 1862; *Milo*, b. 28 May, 1864.
- III. CASSIE, b. 15 Oct., 1861, m. 14 Dec., 1872, George Rockfellow; their 2 ch., *Maud*, b. 22 May, 1875; *Pearl*, b. 21 Nov., 1881.

81. III. PHILIP, res. Schoharie, N. Y., b. 29 July, 1816, m. Nancy Brown, b. 1818; their 3 ch.,  
 I. CHARLES, b. 1830.  
 II. HELEN, b. 1842, m. Elin Barroes; their 3 ch., *George*, b. 1866; *Philip*, b. 1876; *Zeld*, b. 1877.  
 III. NANCY, b. 1844, m. Zina Spawn; their 4 ch., *Ula*, b. 1867; *Franklin*, b. 1870; *Burton*, b. 1876; *Fay*, b. 1878.
82. IV. AARON, res. Cobleskill, N. Y., b. 18 Aug., 1818, m. 10 Nov., 1842, Alice A., dau. of Solomon Underhill, b. 23 July, 1821; had 1 ch.,  
 I. PERRY G., b. 6 May, 1844, d. 30 June, 1883, m. 9 Dec., 1869, Elizabeth, dau. of Conrad Brandenstein; their 4 ch., *Bertha*, b. 1872; *Everett*, b. 1875; *Alpheda*, b. 1880; *Perry*, b. 1883.
83. V. CHARLOTTE, b. 19 Aug., 1820, d. 1 Aug., 1854, m. in 1840, Alexander Young, b. 1 June, 1817, dec., had 2 ch.,  
 I. CALVIN G., res. Battle Creek, Mich., b. 17 Oct., 1845.  
 II. HENRIETTA, res. Cedar Rapids, Boone Co., Neb., b. 7 Feb., 1848, m. in 1867, Fredk. Heiser, b. 1845.
84. VI. JANE, b. 10 July, 1822, d. 25 Mch., 1877, m. 1840, Jacob Moshell, b. 1 June, 1819, dec.; no ch.
85. VII. PETER, b. 3 Aug., 1824, m. Jane Graft, b. at Decatur, N. Y., 21 Sep., 1830, d. 22 Sep., 1863, had 3 ch.,  
 I. ERWIN, b. 4 Apl., 1854; II. LESTER, b. 1856, d. in infancy; III. HOWARD, b. 1857, d. 1862.
86. VIII. MARGARET, res. Battle Creek, Mich., b. 7 Aug., 1826, m. 27 Apl., 1871, John J. Almendinger, b. 18 May, 1833.
87. IX. ELIZABETH, b. 3 Jan., 1828, d. 21 Sep., 1842.
88. X. MARY CATHERINE, res. Battle Creek, Mich., b. 14 July, 1831, m. 23 Sep., 1854, Elijah Jones, b. 26 Dec., 1826, had 5 ch.,  
 I. HOWARD, b. 1858, dec.; II. LILY, res. Battle Creek, b. 2 July, 1860, m. 28 Dec., 1887, Edward Piper Junr.; III. NEWELL A., b. 12 Sep., 1863;  
 IV. EDWIN H., b. 22 Feb., 1865; V. ESTELLA, b. 31 Oct., 1874.
89. XI. ANDREW J., res. West Windsor, Eaton Co., Mich., b. 12 Apl., 1834, m. Adeline Baxter; had 3 ch., I. MARY, d. in infancy; II. ESTHER A; III. EMMA J.
90. XII. ANNE ELIZA, b. 9 Sept., 1837, d. in infancy.

#### FIFTH GENERATION (A).

Aaron Malick (36) had ch.

91. I. JANE ANN, res. Argusville, Schoharie Co., N. Y., b. 24 July, 1819, m. 14 Dec., 1836, R. V. S. Ramsey, b. 3 Dec., 1818; had 1 ch.,  
 I. SETH, b. 13 Sep., 1837.
92. II. SARAH, of Argusville, N. Y., b. 30 Dec., 1826, d. 19 Apl., 1887, m. 22 Sep., 1847, Henry C. Lycker, b. 6 Sep., 1821.
93. III. MARIETTA, res. Cobleskill, N. Y., b. 6 Jan., 1830, m. 23 Jan., 1850, Orville Hodge, b. 12 July, 1822, merchant, and for 28 years postmaster; has 4 ch.,  
 I. ANNETTE, b. 24 Jan., 1851, m. 21 July, 1869, Luther S. Taylor, b. 24 May, 1848; their 2 ch., *Orville*, b. 1871; *Grace*, b. 1873.  
 II. CARRIE, b. 17 Apl., 1857, d. 14 Jan., 1871.  
 III. LESTER, b. 8 Dec., 1859, m. 14 July, 1886, Minnie, dau. of Morton A. Empe.  
 IV. LELAND, b. 26 July, 1864; res. of all the ch. Cobleskill, N. Y.

#### FIFTH GENERATION (A).

Peter Malick (38) had ch.

94. I. JOHN, res. Galesburg, Ill., b. 18 Sep., 1825, m. 8 Feb. 1849, Elmira Anthony, b. 1825, d. 16 Jan, 1876, had ch., I. CHARLES, b. 1850, d. 1851; II. EDWIN, b. 1853, d. 1854; III. JOHN, res. Galesburg, b. 23 Apl., 1855; IV. IDA, b. 31 July, 1857; V. EMMA, b. 12 May, 1859; VI. CHARLES, b. 31 Aug., 1861; VII. NORMAN, b. 13 Apl., 1863; VIII. ANTHONY, b. 13 Mch., 1865; IX. ANNA, b. 5 Aug. 1867; X. ELIZABETH, b. 27 Apl. 1869.



95. II. JANE, b. 25 Apl., 1824, d. 17 Dec., 1865, m. Wm. E. Sprong, b. 17 Mch., 1818, d. 28 Feb., 1884, at Sharon Springs, N. Y., had 6 ch.  
 I. ESTHER, b. 14 Apl., 1842, d. 3 June, 1866, m. 1864, Norman E. Curtiss, dec.; no ch.  
 II. MARY, res. Sharon Springs, b. 10 Nov., 1844, m. 14 Mch., 1868, David A. Mereness, b. 20 June, 1844; no ch.  
 III. IRWIN W., b. 31 Dec., 1846, d. 12 Apl., 1849.  
 IV. NORMAN A., res. Grand Rapids, Mich., b. 28 Jan., 1849, m. 9 Dec., 1874, Huldah, dau. of Major Wm. Bingham, of Le Grange, Ind.; 2 ch., William, d. 1878; Arthur B., b. 1881.  
 V. LAURA E., res. Central Bridge, N. Y., b. 26 Sep., 1857, m. 16 May, 1877, Henry Austin, of Albany; their 2 ch., Ethel M., b. 1878; Henry S., b. 1880.  
 VI. ADELLA, J., b. 24 Jan., 1861.

## FIFTH GENERATION (A).

William Melick (48) had ch.

96. I. MARGARETTA, b. 8 Oct. 1824, m. 16 Oct. 1842, Stephen Ricketts, b. 25 Jan., 1821; had 10 ch.  
 I. FRANCIS M., b. 22 July, 1843, d. 23 July, 1883, at Freno, Cal., m. Cordelia Cole; 6 ch.  
 II. MARY E., b. 13 June, 1845, m. 25 Jan., 1864, John Conner, 4 ch.  
 III. LUCRETIA, J., b. 66 June, 1847, m. 17 Apl., 1872, H. J. Cole, 5 ch.  
 IV. ANDREW M., res. Cross Plains, Ripley Co., Ind., b. 26 Dec., 1849, m. 1 Dec., 1878, Molly Pall.  
 V. JOSEPH W., res. East Enterprise, Ind., b. 4 Nov., 1852, m. 29 Oct., 1880, Harriet Lockwood; 6 ch.  
 VI. PHEBE, res. Aberdeen, Ind., b. 4 Oct., 1854, m. 2 July, 1873, Elwood Bovard; 5 ch.  
 VII. OLLIE E., of E. Enterprise, Ind., b. 17 Mch., 1857, d. 14 Apl., 1886, m. Jasper W. Sadlier; 1 ch.  
 VIII. EMELINE, b. 1 Jan., 1860, d. in infancy.  
 IX. WILLIAM C., res. E. Enterprise, Ind., b. 13 Feb., 1862, m. 26, Oct., 1884, Mary Seymour; 1 ch.  
 X. INEZ C., b. 20 Sep., 1869, m. 26 Dec., 1886, Oliver P. Lockwood.  
 97. II. DANIEL, res. E. Enterprise, Ind., b. 13 Aug., 1826, m. 9 Sep., 1847, Elizabeth Myers, b. in Cincinnati, O., 18 Mch., 1829; had 12 ch.  
 I. LOUISA, d. in infancy.  
 II. WILLIAM, b. 2 Aug., 1849, d. 15 Jan., 1865.  
 III. BURR, b. 3 Oct., 1851, d. in infancy.  
 IV. GEORGE B., res. Tuerquis Grove, Switzerland Co., Ind., b. 21 Mch., 1853, m. 20 Dec., 1874, Matilda Byram, b. 1 Sep., 1856; their 3 ch., Celia, b. 1876; Stella, b. 1879; Ernest, b. 1880.  
 V. CHARLES, res. Springfield, Bonhomme Co., Dak., b. 17 June, 1855, m. 23 Feb., 1881, Carrie, dau. of Edward J. Monfore, b. 1 July, 1859; their one ch., Alta Belle, b. 1888.  
 VI. HARRIET, res. Aurora, Ind., b. 26 Nov., 1856, m. 29 Oct., 1876, Griffith, Oak; their one ch., Flora, b. 1877.  
 VII. MARY D., res. Patriot, Ind., b. 31 May, 1859, m. James Oak; their 1 ch., David.  
 VIII. LORING, res. Milo, Warren Co., Iowa, b. 10 Apl., 1861, m. 1 Mar., 1883, Jane, dau. of Lindley Murray Boles, b. 1860; their 1 ch., Elizabeth, b. 1884.  
 IX. JOHN, res. Milo, Iowa, b. 14 Apl., 1863, m. 15 Mar., 1886, Martha, dau. of Fredk. Lohse, of Knoxville, Iowa, b. 1864.  
 X. GORDON V., b. 10 Sep., 1865.  
 XI. IDA J., b. 25 Mch., 1867.  
 XII. CLARENCE W., b. 10 Jan., 1870.  
 98. III. NICHOLAS A., of Madelia, Watonwan Co., Minn., b. 29 Apl., 1828, d. 23 Sep., 1889, m. 1854, Phebe C. Bradford, b. in Switz. Co., Ind., 26 Jan., 1826; he was an obliging and sympathetic neighbor, an honorable citizen and consistent Christian, and had been a member of the Baptist church at St. James since its organization; had 4 ch.

- I. WILLIAM B., b. 22 Jan., 1855, d. in infancy.
- II. CLARENCE B., b. 13 Apl., 1856, d. in infancy.
- III. MARY A., b. 6 Dec., 1858, d. in infancy.
- IV. LOUELLA, b. 15 Feb., 1862.
- 99. IV. CATHERINE L., b. 20 July, 1830, d. 13 Oct., 1831.
- 100. V. JOSEPH G., res. E. Enterprise, Ind., b. 13 May, 1832, m. 20 Dec., 1853, Betsy Abigail Bliss, b. in Stratford, Fulton Co., N. Y., 5 Nov., 1831, no ch.
- 101. VI. EMELINE, of Hamilton, Butler Co., Ohio, b. 5 June, 1834, m. 17 Feb., 1852 Joseph Myers, b. 11 Aug., 1824; had 8 ch.
  - I. WILLIAM J., b. 16 Jan., 1864, d. 26 Feb., 1865.
  - II. ISAAC, res. Omaha, Neb., b. 1856, m. 1879, Susan A. Davis, 3 ch.
  - III. CHARLES, res. Hamilton, O., b. 22 May, 1858, m. 7 Sep., 1887, Rozetta Coleman, 2 ch.
  - IV. ALBERT, b. 7 Dec., 1860.
  - V. FLORA, b. 20 Apl., 1864, m.; 2 ch.
  - VI. JAMES S., b. 6 Feb., 1873.
  - VII. JOSEPH A., b. 1875, d. 1881.
  - VIII. EMMA E., b. 2 Oct., 1880.

## FIFTH GENERATION (A.)

Andrew D. Mellick (52) had ch.

102. I. SIMEON AYRES, b. 30 Nov., 1842, d. at Fortress Monroe, Virginia, 31 July, 1862. At the outset of the War of the Rebellion, at the age of 18, he went to the front as a 2nd lieutenant in the first cavalry co. that volunteered for the war. It was subsequently embodied with the First N. Y. Mounted Rifles, and he was successively promoted to be a first lieutenant and captain. At the time of his death—though not yet 20 years old—he commanded troop B and ranked as senior captain of his reg't. His command was for the first 6 months stationed at Fortress Monroe and at Hampton, doing scouting and vidette service while McClellan was investing Yorktown. For a time Captain Mellick's troop was detailed as a body-guard to Major General Wool, then in command of Eastern Virginia. His regt. led the advance at the capture of Norfolk and Suffolk and remained in the vicinity of the latter place till the end of the year. In June 1862 while scouting between Suffolk and the North Carolina line he was seized with swamp fever. Being joined by a younger brother (103) he was taken to the Atlantic Hotel, at Norfolk, remaining there a month, nursed by his brother, and attended by Doctor Wright of that city—who was afterwards hung.—A furlough having been obtained he was placed on board the hospital ship St. Mark, then lying in Hampton Roads and shortly expecting to sail for the north with sick and wounded from McClellan's army, which had then just reached Harrison's bar. Before the vessel left the harbor, exactly one year from the day of his arrival in Virginia, he died aged 19 years and 8 months. His brother brought his body home and it was buried in Greenwood. Thus briefly lived and honorably died one who in many respects was distinguished above his fellows. He was an able and brave officer, and highly esteemed as a citizen and a soldier. His person was handsome, his presence winning, and he readily made warm attachments. While possessing great vivacity and spirit his nature was reflective and thoughtful, and, for one so young, his maturity in mind and appearance was most extraordinary. His conversation and bearing did not appear as of one at the threshold of life, but impressed all with whom he came in contact as being that of a man who had benefited by the experiences of many years. From the many testimonials as to his character and worth, the two following extracts are selected:—

Head Quarters 5th Army Corps,  
Baltimore, October 2nd, 1862.

\* \* \* \* Major-General Wool directs me to say that he can cheerfully bear testimony to the fidelity, promptness and intelligence with which the late Captain S. A. Mellick of the "N. Y. Mounted Rifles"

performed his duties, while serving under the command of the General at Fortress Monroe; and that he feels deeply for the affliction of the family, while he, at the same time, regrets that the country, in this time of danger, has lost the services of a true man and a gallant officer. The writer, while provost-marshal at Norfolk, had the pleasure to enjoy the society of Captain Mellick almost daily, for the last two weeks he was stationed there; and he found in the captain a man of a warm, genial heart and a patriot, whose enthusiasm for the good cause remained undaunted, even amidst the affliction of sufferings from a mortal disease.

I have the honor to remain,

Your obedient serv't,

C. T. CHRISTENSEN,

Captain and Aide-de-camp.

FORT FEDERAL HILL,

BALTIMORE, August 16th, 1862.

\* \* \* \* It is with feelings of the deepest regret that we learn of the death of our esteemed companion in arms. \* \* \* \* Unanimously elected to membership in the eighth company (7th Reg't. N. Y. S. N. G.) in 1860, he faithfully performed the duties of a soldier while with us, and by his gentlemanly bearing and genial manners won the esteem of all with whom he came in contact. \* \* \* \* We considered him one of the best officers sent from our ranks into the volunteer service. \* \* \* \* The death of our brother awakens with us a sterner resolve that the cause to which he is a sacrifice shall ultimately triumph.

On behalf of the Eighth Co.,

(7th Reg't. N. Y. S. N. G.)

LIEUT. G. L. ARROSSMITH.

103. II. ANDREW D. JUN'R, res. Plainfield, N. J., b. 23 Oct., 1844; member of the N. Y. Bar; served as captain and major on staff of Gen. J. M. Varian, comdg. 3rd Brig., 1st Div., N. G. S. N. Y. from 1872 to 1880; author of "The Story of an Old Farm," and the compiler of this genealogy.
104. III. JAMES BISHOP, b. 9 Dec., 1846, d. at Roselle, N. J., 10 Sept., 1878, after suffering amputation of left leg, bur. at Greenwood, m. at Roselle, N. J., 3 Apl., 1866, Anna Coles, dau. of Henry W. Smith, of N. Y. city, b. 21 Nov., 1845; her res. Orange, N. J.; he was a man of sterling integrity and of a most elevated character. During his residence of 12 years in the city of Elizabeth and at Roselle he was active in church duties and good works, being an officer of the 3rd Presb. Church of Elizabeth, and of the Presb. Ch. at Roselle, and from the time he attained his majority until his death was continuously a Sunday school superintendent; had 4 ch., I. CAROLINE SMITH, res. Montclair, N. J. b. 15 Jan., 1867, m. 16 Oct., 1889, Francis William Wilcox; II. ELIZABETH AYRES, b. 5 Jan., 1870, III. HENRY SMITH, b. 31 Mch., 1873; IV. ANNA, b. 2 Mch., 1875.
105. IV. KATHERINE LA RUE, res. N. Y. city, b. 23 Sept., 1849, m. at Bergen Point, N. J., 28 May, 1872, to Lucius Duncan Bulkley, M.D., b. 12 Jan., 1844; has 6 ch., I. ELIZABETH AYRES MELICK, b. 17 Mar., 1873; II. JULIA, b. 3 Nov., 1874; III. LUCIUS CONSTANT, b. 10 May, 1877; IV. HENRY DUNCAN, b. 17 Sept., 1879; V. KATHERINE LA RUE, b. 18 Oct., 1882; VI. KENNETH, b. 20 Dec., 1885.
106. V. ELIZABETH AYRES, res. San Angelo, Tom Green Co., Tex., b. 10 Apl., 1852, m. N. Y. city, by Rev. Dr. John Hall 12 Oct., 1881, Joseph Tweedy, of Plainfield, N. J., b. 71 Mch., 1849; has 3 ch., I. LAWRENCE LESLIE, b. 20 Aug., 1882; II. ANDREW MELICK, b. 2 Apl., 1884; III. JOSEPH LORD, b. 21 June, 1886.
107. VI. HARRIET AUGUSTA, res. Plainfield, N. J., b. 15 May, 1854, m. at Bergen Point, N. J., by Rev. Henry W. F. Jones 4 Feb., 1873; Rutzen Van Rensselaer Schuyler, b. 4 Feb., 1853; has 2 ch., I. VAN RENSSELAER, b. 16 Mch., 1878; II. SARAH EDWARDS, b. 23, July, 1879.
108. VII. MARY ABIGAIL, res. N. Y. city, b. 5 July, 1857.



109. VIII. GEORGE PHELPS, res. Plainfield, N. J., b. 13 Sept., 1862, m. at Bergen Point, 29 Oct., 1884, Ella, dau. of Justinian Hartley, of B. P., b. 3 June, 1864; had 2 ch.,

I. JUSTINIAN HARTLEY, b. 16 Feb., 1887;

II. ELIZABETH, b. Feb., 1889, d. July, 1839.

#### FIFTH GENERATION (A).

David Melick (70) had ch.

110. I. WILLIAM, b. 1 Dec., 1806, d. in Knox Co., O., in 1879, m. *first* in 1828, Mina Cooper, of Somerset, Perry Co., O., she was killed by lightning, 5 June, 1835; by whom 3 ch.; he m. *second* in Oct., 1833, Sarah, dau. of Thomas Beaty, of Knox Co., O., b. 12 Oct., 1803, d. 14 Dec., 1888, by whom 10 ch.; his ch. by first wife,
- I. DAVID C., res. Bladensburg, O., b. 22 Oct., 1829, m. 1858, and has 4 ch.,  
*William, Grace, Walter and another.*
- II. NANCY, b. 1831, d. July, 1857.
- III. HANNAH, b. 1833, m. 1859, a Harrod, and lives at Martinsburg, O.  
Of the 10 ch. by second wife but 4 survive, viz.:
- IV. ABRAHAM D., res. Bladensburg, O., b. 23 May, 1837, m. 18 Nov., 1858, Minerva J., dau. of William Schooler, of Knox Co., O., b. 29 Jan., 1838; their 7 ch., *Sarah Ann*, b. 1859, m. 1880, Albert T. Hall, of Bladensburg, b. 1857; *Alison*, b. 1861, d. 1864; *Robert E.*, b. 1863; *William T.*, b. 1866, m. 1886, Ollie, dau. of Geo. W. Porterfield; *Beck E.*, b. 1868, *Reuben E.*, b. 1872; *Alvin V.*, b. 1876.
- V. MARGARET, res. Bladensburg, O. m. A. J. Hall;
- VI. JANE, m. *first*, David Earlymine; *second*, Samuel Harris.
- VII. HOMER CURTIS.
111. II. JOHN WESLEY, b. 27 Sep., 1808, d. 12 Apl., 1870, m. 26 Sep., 1833, Harriet Watson, had 9 ch.,
- I. ELIZABETH, b. 20 Aug., 1834, d. 18 June, 1857.
- II. DAVID R., res. La Fontaine, Ind., b. 22 Nov., 1836.
- III. THOMAS, b. 22 Mch., 1838, d. 20 July, 1863, from wounds received in battle; was a member of the 8th Ind. inftry. regt.
- IV. ELEANOR, b. 18 Feb., 1841, unm.
- V. SARAH, res. Fox, Grant Co., Ind., b. 18 Feb., 1843.
- VI. CYRUS, res. Wabash, Ind., b. 19 July, 1846.
- VII. ELIZA, res. Fox, Grant Co., Ind., b. 21 Oct., 1851, unm.
- VIII. WILLIAM, b. 29 Oct., 1854, d. 19 Jan., 1861.
- XI. BELINDA, b. 20 Jan., 1856, d. 20 Aug., 1862.
112. III. TIMOTHY, b. 26 Sep., 1810, dec.
113. IV. DAVID, b. 16 Sep., 1812, dec., his son DAVID lives at La Fontaine, Grant Co., Ind.
114. V. GEORGE, b. 12 Feb., 1815, d. 1860.
115. VI. REBECCA, b. 22 July, 1817; dec.
116. VII. JOSEPH, res. Bladensburg, O., b. 29 Feb., 1820, m. 23 Feb., 1842, Nancy Young, b. 29 Oct., 1825; had 4 ch.
- I. LOUISA, b. 17 Dec., 1842, m. William Hall, of Bladensburg.
- II. NAOMI, b. 23 Dec., 1844, d. 16 Sep., 1847.
- III. HANNAH, b. 30 Jan., 1847; died in infancy.
- IV. HARRIET, res. Lincoln, Neb., b. 14 Dec., 1848, m. 25 Dec., 1875, Zachariah Hammel.
117. VIII. ELIZA, res. Bladensburg, O., b. 17 Feb., 1822, m. 6 Apl., 1841, William Darling; their 10 ch.,
- I. LUCY A., b. 9 Aug., 1841; II. JAMES K., b. 23 Sep., 1843, died in Union Army; III. DAVID M., b. 18 Sep., 1847; dec.; IV. LOUISA, b. 6 Aug., 1850; V. CYRUS, b. July, 1852; VI. NANCY, b. 11 Sep., 1856; VII. SARAH ELLEN, b. 18 Sep., 1860; VIII. AVILDA J.; IX. OTTO, b. 11 July, 1863; X. LEWIS, b. 18 Feb., 1869.
118. IX. MARGARET, res. Richland Center, Wis., b. 13 Aug., 1824, m. a Hankins, and has 2 ch.
119. X. HARRIET, b. 8 Mch., 1827, dec., m. Harrison Darling, dec.
120. XI. MARY ANN, b. 14 Oct., 1829, dec., m. Cyrus Robinson.
121. XII. MARIA, res. Bladensburg, O., b. 1 Jan., 1833, m. Frank C. Hess.
122. XIII. SAMUEL, b. 19 Feb., 1836.

SIXTH GENERATION (A.)

John, (79) had ch.

123. I. JACOB, b. 6 May, 1837, unm., res. Canajoharie, N. Y.
124. II. ELIAS, b. 11 Oct., 1839, m. Catharine, dau. of Jacob Graft, no ch.
125. III. NICHOLAS, b. 7 April, 1841, d. in infancy.
126. IV. LAWRENCE, b. 14 April, 1843, m. 1 March, 1874, Susan, dau. of Andrew Smith; res. Canajoharie, N. Y., have ch., I. ELJAY, b. 5 Jan., 1875; II. CHAS., b. 26 Aug., 1876, d. 1 Feb., 1878; III. ANNA E., b. 19 Feb., 1878, d. in infancy; IV. ELLA R., b. 30 April 1879; V. ANDREW, b. 19 Feb., 1882; VI. ELIAS, b. 14 Aug., 1887.
127. V. SARAH, b. 11 June, 1845, d. 26 Sept., 1871, m. 3 Jan., 1866, Chas. Collins; had ch., I. IRVING, b. 12 April, 1867; II. ROSZELA, b. 9 Nov., 1868, d. 28 Feb., 1869; III. ALMEDA, b. 29 May, 1870.
128. VI. MARY M., b. 19 Oct., 1849, d. 7 Dec., 1853.
129. VII. CHARLES W., b. 3 Jan., 1856, m. 3 July, 1881, Eliza, dau. of Andrew Smith; have ch., I. HENRY b. 21 April 1883; II. CHAS. JR., b. 19 Oct., 1884; III. HENRIETTA, b. 28 Sept., 1886.

JOHAN JACOB KLEIN (Jacob Kline).

Veronica Gerdrutta Moelich his wife, (A 3.) (Fanny Melick) and their descendants.

1. I. JACOB KLINE, of Readington township, Hunterdon Co., N. J., b. in Germany, 6 Mch., 1714, d. 6 Jan., 1789, bur. in the Lutheran graveyard at New Germantown, N. J., m. about 1748, Veronica Gerdrutta (A 3) dau. of Johannes Moelich (A 1). In connection with his father-in-law, he established and carried on in Readington tp. a tannery which was continued by his descendants for over 75 years. He was a justice of the peace and as early as 1749 a trustee of Zion Lutheran Church at New Germantown, N. J. For a description of his residence and other incidents of his life, see pp. 76, 82, 91, 95, 178, 238, 554, 603 and 611.

SECOND GENERATION.

Jacob Kline (1) had ch.

2. I. JOHN WILLIAM, bap. *Johann Wilhelm*, b. 5 Jan., 1750, d. 21 Feb., 1818, on the Readington homestead, m. 24 Jan., 1780, Altje (Alche), dau. of Matthias Smock, b. 19 Aug., 1762, d. 23 Dec., 1818; he was a tanner and farmer and is bur. in Zion graveyard. For his 2 ch. see p. 649
3. II. JACOB, b. in 1751, d. 22 Oct., 1823, m. 7 July, 1782, Phebe, dau. of Peter Nevius, of Amwell, N. J., b. in 1766, d. 18 Feb., 1845. Jacob was a farmer and tanner, and settled at New Germantown on what is now the Benjamin Van Doren farm and established a tannery, since carried on by Jacob Specht. For 37 years he was a ruling officer in Zion Lutheran church, for 18 years county freeholder, for many years a justice of the peace, from 1806 to 1817 town clerk and one of the judges of Hunterdon Court of Common Pleas. For his 11 ch. see p. 649
4. III. MARY, m. 13 Feb., 1776, John Farley; had at least 4 ch.
  - I. JACOB, b. 30 Mch., 1777.
  - II. BARBARA, b. 13 Feb., 1779.
  - III. MYNHARD, b. 26 Mch., 1781.
  - IV. AARON, b. 3 Sept., 1789.
5. IV. MAGDALENE, b. in 1757, d. 16 Mch., 1774.
6. V. FANNY, m. 26 Dec., 1781, Jacob Neff Jun'r., who d. about 1838; had ch.
  - I. JACOB, b. 11 Dec., 1782, d. about 1817, m. Jemima, dau. of George Anson, of Readington, N. J.; their 4 ch.;
  - Ann, b. 1 Feb., 1806, d. 14 Jan., 1881, m. William P. Todd, of Potters-town, and had 4 ch.;
  - Fanny, d. in infancy.

## CH. OF JOHN WM. AND JACOB KLINE, H. VAN DER VEER. 649

*Eliza*, b. about 1811, d. about 1875, m. Abraham Ditmars, of Readington, N. J.; removed to Ohio, afterwards to Dekalb Co., Ind.; their 7 ch., Frances, Helen, Harriet, Peter, Isaac, Mary and Edward.

*Gertrude*, d. in infancy.

II. FANNY G., b. 30 Dec., 1786, d. in 1879-80, unm.

III. ANNA MARY (Polly), b. 17 Sept., 1789, d. 23 Aug., 1818, m. Abram A. Brokaw, of Readington, b. 11 Mch., 1790, d. 13 July, 1876; no ch.

7. VI. AARON, of Drea Hook, N. J., b. 29 Feb., 1760, d. 24 Dec., 1809, m. in 1784, Catherine Brokaw, b. 2 Aug., 1763, d. 18 Dec., 1811; he was a tanner; for his 8 ch. see p. 652.

8. VII. PETER, b. 17 Jan., 1771, a tanner and farmer who lived and died on a farm adjoining the Readington homestead; he m. Sally Johnson, of Readington, by whom one ch., I. PETER P., who d. unm. 31 Mch., 1872, aged 78.

### THIRD GENERATION.

John William Kline (2) had ch.

9. I. GERTRUDE, b. 7 Nov., 1780, d. in Apl., 1864, m. 12 May, 1799, Henry Van der Veer, of Amwell, N. J.; had 6 ch.

I. JOHN (Rev. and D.D.), b. 5 May, 1800, d. 28 Apl., 1878, m. Maria E., dau. of Dr. John Cooper, of Easton, Pa., d. 9 May, 1889. Dr. Van der Veer conducted for many years a private classical school at Easton, Pa.; no ch.

II. JACOB K., of Amwell, N. J., m. *first*, Sarah Ten Eyck, *second*, the widow of Leonard Kuhl; no ch.

III. PETER N., res. Raritan, N. J., m. Jemima, dau. of Jacob Vroom; their ch. *George*, *Henry* who m. a Kinyon of Raritan, *Gitty*, *Annie* and *Emma*.

IV. ALETTA, m. Christianus Van Doren, of Neshanic, N. J.; no ch.

V. MARY, m. John C. Van Liew, of Neshanic; their 3 ch. *Henry V. D.*, *John J.*, and *Anna*.

VI. HENRY, res. North Branch, N. J., m. Frances C. Blackwell, of Amwell, who d. 6 Aug., 1880.

10. II. JOHN, b. 8 Aug., 1784, d. 20 Jan., 1880, on the homestead farm of his father and grandfather, where he spent 83 of his 95 years of life. It is recorded of him that he was "a man of exemplary, devoted christian life, genial in spirit and abundant in hospitality, of unostentatious manners, but yet of positive strength of character, who exerted a widespread influence for good." It is further recorded that he was regarded in later life "the patriarch of the section of country in which he lived commanding more than the respect of all who knew him." John Kline m. *first*, 27 Oct., 1804, Catherine Williamson, d. in 1837; m. *second*, 27 Jan., 1841, Eleanor, widow of Henry Vroom, of Wayne Co., O., and dau. of Dennis Wyckoff, of White House, N. J.; her present res. Somerville, N. J.; no ch.

### THIRD GENERATION.

Jacob Kline (3) had ch.

11. I. JACOB (Colonel), of Kline's Mills and Trenton, N. J., b. 8 Apl., 1783, d. 15 Nov., 1844, m. Lydia, dau. of Tunis Quick, of Readington, b. in Mch., 1786, d. 1 Feb., 1860, Jacob Kline was a colonel of militia, a member of the legislature, president of a Trenton bank, and in 1836 was elected state treasurer; he also owned and operated Kline's grist and saw mills on the north branch of the Raritan in Somerset Co.; for his 6 ch. see p. 653.

12. II. PETER, of New Germantown, Kline's Mills, and Lamington, N. J., b. 16 Jan., 1785, d. 18 Oct., 1860, m. Mary, dau. of Ananias Mulford, of New Germantown, b. 6 Sep., 1788, d. 15 Nov., 1865; for his 8 ch. see p. 653.

13. III. FANNY GERTRUDE, of Liberty Corner, N. J., b. 23 Feb., 1787, d. 28 Jan., 1880, m. 17 Oct., 1807, Isaac Lewis, of Va., a grandson of Rev. Thomas Lewis, who was pastor of the Mendham Presb. church, from 1769 until



1778. Isaac Lewis, b. 8 Feb., 1787, d. 1 June, 1855, was a farmer and tanner; had 7 ch.
- I. SAMUEL, of Liberty Corner, b. 7 Sep., 1808, d. 21 May, 1877, m. in Oct., 1835, Eleanor Layton; their ch. *Jacob K.*, res. Mechanicsville, N. J., who m. *first*, Ann, dau. of Samuel Smith, of Stanton, N. J., m. *second*, Catherine, dau. of Jacob K. Neff, of Readington; *Evelyn*, who m. Anthony Morris, of Liberty Corner, and has no ch.; *Samuel*, res. Newark, N. J., m. Margaret Irving, and has one son; and *Isaac*, d. 14 Jan., 1873, m. Margaret Irving, no ch.
  - II. PHEBE, of Liberty Corner, b. in Aug., 1810, d. 10 Feb., 1874, m. Samuel Irving; their ch. *Isaac*, res. Liberty Corner, m. Rachel King and has one dau., *Minnie*; *Sarah Jane*, m. Garret Freeman, and has 6 ch; *Mary Lavinia*, m. James McCollum, of Basking Ridge, no ch.; *Abbie*, m. Augustus Tapman, of Newark, and has no ch.; *Eugene J.*, of New Vernon, N. J., dec. m. Ann Hill, one son, *Charles*; *Peter*, res. New Vernon, m., one son; *Ann*, m. Swamioick of Newark, one son; Phebe and Samuel Irving had 3 other children who d. young.
  - III. JACOB K., of Washington, N. J., b. in 1812, dec., m. Eliza Bellis, of Millstone, N. J., their ch., *John*, res. Plainfield, N. J., m. twice and has one ch.; *Charles*, dec.; *Alfred A.*, M. D., res. Morristown, N. J., m. Anna B., dau. of Ferdinand Van Doren, of Basking Ridge, and has one dau.; *Alonzo*, res. Washington, N. J., m. a Miss Hampton of that place, and has one dau.
  - IV. SARAH, b. in 1814, m. *first*, Samuel Cross of Liberty Corner, who d. 10 Jan., 1867, by whom a dau. *Sarah Ann*, who m. Daniel Allen of Plainfield, N. J., Sarah Lewis Cross, m. *second*, David King of Liberty Corner, and m. *third*, Francis Runyon of Liberty Corner.
  - V. JANE, res. Liberty Corner, b. in 1816, m. Peter A. Layton of Bernards, b. 5 Mch., 1811, d. 15 Feb., 1873; their ch., *Fanny Elizabeth*, b. 24 Mch., 1840, d. 18 Jan., 1864, m. Ayers Codrington, of Bound Brook, N. J.; *Aletta M.*, b. 8 June, 1846, d. 11 May, 1866, m. George E. Salter, of Fairmount, N. J.; *John*, res. Bernard tp., m. Harriet Hill, and has one dau.; *Isaac*, of Long Branch, N. J., dec., m. Esther Drake, and had one son, *Peter*; *Phebe*, dec., m. Ayers Codrington, no ch.
  - VI. MARY, of Plainfield, N. J., b. in 1818, dec., m. Ayers Leason, dec.; their ch., *Ann*, of Bound Brook, N. J., dec., m. a McNabb, and had 3 sons; *Mary*, dec.; *David*, dec.; *Floretta*.
  - VII. ISAAC V. D., b. in 1820, d. in 1825.
  - VIII. ELIZABETH, res. Liberty Corner, N. J., b. in 1822, d. 5 Aug. 1889, m. John Compton; their ch., *Nathaniel*, res. Newark, m. Josephine Clark, and has two ch.: *Isaac L.*, M. D., res. Bound Brook, m. Caroline Arrowsmith, no ch.; Elizabeth Lewis Compton had 2 other ch. who d. young.
  - IX. CHARLES, b. in 1824, d. in 1828.
  - X. CATHERINE A., of Liberty Corner, b. 5 Sep., 1828.
  - XI. ANNA FRANCES, b. in 1831, d. in 1833.
14. IV. JOHN WILLIAM, of New Germantown, Flemington, etc., b. 28 Dec., 1788, d. 17 Sep., 1847, m. Sarah, dau. of Thomas Williams, of New Germantown, b. 15 Mch., 1795, d. 7 Oct., 1817, had 6 ch.,
    - I. WILLIAM BARNET, of Jersey City, b. in 1818, d. 15 Aug., 1881, unm.
    - II. JOHN F. M., b. 14 Aug., 1821, drowned in the South Branch, 27 Aug., 1827.
    - III. LEWIS A., of Jersey City, b. in 1824, d. 30 May, 1888.
    - IV. MARY E., res. New Germantown.
    - V. HARRIET A. H., res. New Germantown.
    - VI. SARAH, res. New Germantown, m. James H. Sayre, of Elizabeth, N. J., no ch.
  15. V. MARIA (POLLY), b. 17 Apl., 1791, d. 15 Jan., 1869, m. Richard I. Field, of Bound Brook, N. J., b. 12 Sep., 1785, d. 6 May, 1871, had 11 ch.,
    - I. JEREMIAH R., b. 16 Dec., 1809, d. 2 Feb., 1856, m. 15 Mch., 1838, Margaret W. dau. of John Telfair, of New York, b. 26 Dec., 1817; her res. Chicago. III.; their 3 ch., *John Telfair*, b. 8 Dec., 1838, m. in 1868 Mary A., dau. of Nathaniel Childs, of St. Louis, Mo., res. 2045 Blendon place, St. Louis; *Richard I.*, b. 25 Nov., 1841, m. in 1865, Mary E., dau. of Benj. Carpenter of Chicago, Ill., res. 250 Dearborn avenue, Chicago;

- Margaret W.*, b. 27 May, 1849, m. in 1873, Isaac Newton Maynard, b. 6 May, 1849, res. 284 Genessee St., Utica, N. Y.
- II. PHEBE MARIA, b. 18 Nov., 1811, d. 8 Mch., 1889, m. 13 June, 1833, Henry Cornell Brokaw, of Bound Brook, N. J., b. 2 Oct., 1809, d. 29 Nov., 1872; their 6 ch., *Mary Jane*, b. 9 Apl., 1834, m. in 1853, Abraham Smalley, who d. in 1881; res. Bound Brook, N. J.; *Elizabeth Smock*, b. 27 Oct., 1835, m. in 1854 George Macdonald; res. New Brunswick, N. J.; *Catherine Van Nest*, b. 13 Mch., 1839, m. in 1873 Alexander Manning; res. New Market, N. J.; *Rachael D.*, b. 13 Oct., 1841, m. in 1879 Revd. A. E. Baldwin, who d. in 1886; res. New Brunswick, N. J.; *Richard H.*, b. 5 Feb., 1848, m. in 1880 Estelle P., dau. of Jacob Shurts; res. Bound Brook; *Isaac Newton*, b. 2 Jan., 1850, unm.; res. Bound Brook.
- III. JACOB K., res. Bound Brook, b. 31 Jan., 1814, m. 5 Sep., 1843, Rebecca G., dau. of Henry Stewart, of Carlisle, Ind., b. 9 Feb., 1816; their 4 ch.  
*Richard I.*, b. in 1844, d. in 1847; *Mary Elizabeth*, b. 25 July, 1846.  
*Henry S.*, b. in 1855, d. in 1857. *William B.*, b. in 1857, d. in 1859.
- IV. JANE, b. 16 Mch., 1816, d. 16 Dec., 1857, m. 22 Nov., 1838, Henry H. Garretson, b. 20 May, 1810.
- V. RICHARD R., res. Plainfield, N. J., b. 8 Mch., 1818, m. 27 Feb., 1845, his cousin Margaretta (18) dau. of Jacob B. Miller, of Morris Co., N. J., b. 21 July, 1823, d. 25 Nov., 1877; had 5 ch., *Albert Miller*, b. 8 Jan., 1846; *Richard Spencer*, b. 8 Jan., 1848; *Chauncey Mitchell*, b. 27 Mch., 1850, a prominent physician and surgeon at Plainfield, N. J.; *Jacob Ogden*, b. 28 Nov., 1851; *Mary Florence*, b. 8 June, 1856, dec.
- VI. BENJAMIN M., res. Bound Brook, b. 1 May, 1820, m. 22 July, 1851, Helen M., dau. of John D. Field, of Bound Brook, b. 13 Jan., 1831; their 4 ch.  
*Anna Eliza*, b. 2 July, 1852, m. 22 Nov., 1882, William F. Metlar, res. Ross Hall, Baritan Landing (New Brunswick), N. J., *John D.*, b. in 1854, d. in infancy. *Amy K.*, b. 20 Sep., 1858, m. in 1880 Dennis Field Vermeule, of New Brunswick. *Ada A.*, b. 13 Feb., 1863, m. in 1888, Walter Wollsey, D. D. S., res. Bound Brook.
- VII. RACHEL D., b. 5 June, 1823, d. 12 May, 1871, m. in 1847 James Polhemus
- VIII. JOHN K., res. Bound Brook, b. 27 Dec., 1825, m. 6 May, 1850, Lucinda, dau. of John Whitehill, of St. Louis, Mo., b. 14 June, 1828; their dau. *Laura W.*, b. 7 July, 1855, m. in 1875 Charles W. Auten, of New Brunswick, who is dec.
- IX. ISAAC N., res. N. Y. city, b. 4 May, 1828, m. 15 June, 1870, Mary, dau. of Rev. Jacob C. Dutcher, b. 23 Feb., 1848, no ch.
- X. PETER, res. Plainfield, N. J., b. 17 Nov., 1830, m. 3 June, 1863, Helen C., dau. of Chauncey N. Shipman, b. 3 July, 1839, their 2 ch. *Helen S.*, b. in 1868, d. in 1874. *Edward Herrick*, b. 3 July, 1871.
- XI. WILLIAM B., res. 415 N. 7th St., St. Louis, Mo., b. 16 Sep., 1834, m. 17 June, 1874, Harriet E., dau. of George M. Boyd, of Atglen, Chester Co., Pa., b. 23 Jan., 1848; their 2 ch., *Helen Mary*, b. 8 May, 1875, *Park Boyd*, b. in 1876, d. in 1888.
16. VI. ANN, b. 19 Mch., 1793, d. 20 Feb., 1795.
17. VII. PHEBE, b. 19 Dec., 1796, d. 10 Mch., 1874, m. Joseph Bartles of New Germantown, b. 25 Dec., 1784, d. 10 Mch., 1865; had 2 ch.  
I. GEORGE HARVEY, res. Flemington, N. J., m. Lois, dau. of Austin Clark, of Lebanon, N. J.; their 3 ch., *Joseph*, *Austin* and *Ella*.  
II. JACOB K., res. New Germantown.
18. VIII. ELIZABETH, b. 1 Aug., 1799, d. 25 Mch., 1880, m. Jacob B. Miller, of New Germantown, had 9 ch.  
I. MARGARETTA, b. 21 July, 1823, d. 25 Nov., 1877, m. 27 Feb., 1845, her cousin Richard R. Field (15), b. 8 Mch., 1818.  
II. HENRY, who m. a Beardslee.  
III. JACOB, res. Scranton, Pa., m. a DeBentlie.  
IV. ELIZABETH, d. in infancy.  
V. WILLIAM, res. Flanders, N. J.  
IV. ELIZABETH, res. Newark, N. J., m. George Roe, of Hackettstown, who d. in 1883, and has 5 ch.  
VII. and VIII. CLARK and Wesley, twins, d. in infancy.

## 652 CH. OF A. DUNHAM, B. VAN DOREN, AARON KLINE.

19. IX. NELLY STOOTOFF, b. 4 July, 1801, d. 23 Apl., 1803.
20. X. CATHARINE, b. 20 July, 1804, d. 18 Jan., 1857, m. in 1824, Aaron Dunham, of Clinton, N. J., who d. 14 Aug., 1883; had 8 ch., viz:
  - I. MARY C., d. in Aug., 1863, m. James Stryker, d. in July, 1851; their 2 ch. *Catherine T.*, res. Mt. Pleasant, N. J., who m. George Pickel, and has 5 ch.; *Eliza*, res. Clinton, who m. Isaac Creveling, and has one dau.
  - II. PHEBE ELIZABETH, b. 12 Jan., 1829, m. 8 Oct., 1856 Edwin Melick (C. 30), res. Clinton, N. J., b. 20 Sep., 1824; has one son, *Aaron Dunham*, b. 31 Aug., 1851, m. 5 June, 1889, Estelle, dau. of Revd. T. A. Jacobus, of the N. J. M. E. Conference.
  - III. WHITFIELD, res. Clinton, N. J., m. Christiana Carhart; has 4 ch., viz: *Mary Elizabeth*, *Charles C.*, *Katherine K.*, and *Ann* who m. B. Dunham.
  - IV. JACOB, b. in Feb. 1857.
  - V. FRANCES ALETTA, m. James R. Cline, res. Clinton; no ch.
  - VI. MARGARETTA M.
- VII. JAMES, of Salisbury, N. C., d. 14 Apl., 1889, m. Christiana, dau. of William Hoffman, of Annandale, N. J.; had 9 ch., viz; *Sally E.*, *Mary Louise*, *Phebe Estelle*, *Aaron*, *William H.*, *Florence*, *Edwin M.*, *Lorena*, and an infant, dec.
- VIII. NEHEMIAH, res. Salisbury, N. C., m. Fanny F. Conner, of that place.
21. XI. ALETTA, of New Germantown, b. 17 Feb., 1808, d. 9 Jan., 1879, m. Benjamin Van Doren, of Middlebush, N. J., b. 17 June, 1798, d. 13 Apl., 1872; had 5 ch., viz:
  - I. DINAH H., res. New Germantown, m. Jacob R. Fisher, of Bedminster; their 3 ch. *Anna F.*, m. Simon Hageman, of Bedminster, and has 2 sons; *William P.*, res. New Germantown, m. Frances D., dau. of John P. S. Miller; *Benjamin V. D.*, res. Jersey City.
  - II. PHEBE, b. 8 Apl., 1873, m. William Demun, of Bedminster, and left one dau. *Aletta*.
  - III. ANN ELIZA MILLER, b. 17 Dec., 1830, m. 13 Nov., 1856, Smith English Hedges, M. D., of Chester, N. J., b. 20 Nov., 1830; their 3 ch.; *Ellis Walton*, a well-known physician, of Plainfield, N. J., *Benjamin Van Doren*, of Chester, and *Jane English*.
  - IV. BENJAMIN, res. New Germantown, m. Emma L., dau. of John P. S. Miller, and has 2 ch. *Benjamin* and *John*.
  - V. CATHERINE D., of Jersey City, b. 1 Apl., 1836, d. 14 Apl., 1875, m. Maxwell Abernethy, of Warren Co., N. J., and left one dau. *Aletta*.
22. XII. DAVID (Revd), b. 14 Nov., 1812, d. 5 Nov., 1877, while pastor of the Lutheran Church, at Spruce Run, Hunterdon Co., N. J., m. 18 Apl., 1833, Jane, dau. of John Kirkpatrick, of Liberty Corner, N. J., b. 19 June, 1814. For his 12 ch. See p. 654.

### THIRD GENERATION.

Aaron Kline (7) had ch.

23. I. FANNY G., bap. "Fronica Gertraut" b. 29 Oct., 1785, d. in infancy.
24. II. JANE, bap. "Jannetze" b. 16 Apl., 1787, dec. m. Henry Wyckoff, of Readington, and removed to Dayton, Ohio; had 7 ch., viz;
  - I. MARY ANN.
  - II. CATHARINE.
  - III. JANE.
  - IV. NICHOLAS, of California.
  - V. HENRY, who was killed by the Indians in one of the territories.
  - VI. HENRIETTA.
  - VII. JACOB, of California.
25. III. PETER A., was a tanner and farmer who lived at the "Head of Brookye," near Stanton, Hunterdon Co., and at the close of his life, at White House, same co., b. 27 Sept., 1789, d. in Sept., 1858, m. *first*, Mary, dau. of Cornelius Bowman, b. 15 Nov., 1795, d. 8 Feb., 1824, by whom 6 ch.; m. *second*, Rebecca, dau. of John Smith, of Stanton, by whom 9 ch.; for his 15 ch. see p. 655.
26. IV. JOHN JACOB, a tanner at Drea Hook, in Hunterdon Co., b. 17 Aug., 1791, d. 23 Aug., 1849, m. 27 Nov., 1814, *first*, Eva, dau. of Andrew Kliney, b.



## CH. OF D. GERHARDT, P. G. SCHOMP, COL. JACOB KLINE. 653

- 24 Nov., 1797, d. 6 Mar., 1824, by whom 5 ch.; m. *second*, Mary Brewer, widow of Elias Stout, b. 18 Mar., 1805, d. 31 Dec., 1871, by whom 2 ch.; for his 8 ch. see p. 655.
27. V. AARON, of N. Y. City, b. 4 Aug., 1794, d. in July, 1852, unm.
28. VI. ELIZABETH, b. 11 Mar., 1797, d. in 1836 in Carroll Co., Ohio, to which place she had just removed with her husband and family; m. David Gerhardt, of Round Valley, N. J.; had ch.
- I. CATHERINE ANN, res. Frenchtown, N. J., m. Henry Demott, of Stanton, and has ch.
  - II. JACOB, res. Washington Co., Ohio, m. Mary Moreland, and has ch.
  - III. ELLEN, res. Indianapolis, Ind., m. Abraham Ball, of Ohio, and has ch.
  - IV. GEORGE, res. New Germantown, m. Catherine Ann, dau. of Harmon Reger, of N. G., b. 11 Feb., 1818, d. 26 Oct., 1855, no ch.
  - V. AARON, res. Indiana, m. a Hardesty, of Malvern, O., and has ch.
  - VI. NATHAN, of Wilmington, Del., dec., m. *twice*, his first wife, a dau. of Rev. Richard Collier, of Spruce Run, N. J., and has ch.
  - VII. GODFREY, who d. unm. in Indiana.
  - VIII. SARAH, of Indiana, dec. m. Charles Whittaker, and had 2 ch.
  - IX. REBECCA, res. Canton, O., m. James R. Steen, and has ch.
  - X. DAVID H., res. Nebraska, m. a Reeder, and has ch.
29. VII. MARY, b. 8 Jan., 1800, d. 24 Mar., 1824, unm.
30. VIII. CATHERINE, of Branchburg, N. J., b. 6 Sept., 1802, d. 12 Mar., 1864, m. in 1821, Peter G. Schomp, of Readington, b. 28 Aug., 1801, d. 8 May, 1886; had 5 ch.
- I. GEORGE, res. North Branch, N. J., m. Amy Ann Swift, of Williamsburg, L. I.; their 4 ch., *George C., Peter A., Catherine E., and Amy A.*
  - II. CATHERINE ANN, b. 29 Apl., 1824, d. 14 Jan., 1880, m. John Sutphen, b. in Aug., 1819, d. 25 Sep., 1884; their ch. *George*, b. in 1847, d. in 1866; *John* and *Peter* dec.
  - III. ELIZABETH, b. 5 Nov., 1827, d. 3 May, 1863, m. William B. Wyckoff, of Branchburg; their one ch., *Dennis*, b. in 1853, d. in 1866.
  - IV. CAROLINE, m. Abraham H. Lane, of Branchburg, their one ch. *John*, m. Mary, dau. of John Van Pelt, of North Branch, and has one ch.
  - V. JOHN, b. in 1841, d. in 1846.

### FOURTH GENERATION.

Colonel Jacob Kline (11) had ch.

31. I. ALETTA, of Bedminster, d. 10 Mch., 1875, m. Gabriel Van Dervoort, of Burnt Mills, Somerset Co., N. J., d. in Aug., 1877; had ch.,
- I. JACOB, res. Bedminster, m. Gertrude Davis, of Bound Brook, and has 4 ch.
  - II. JOHN, res. White House, m. Mary Elizabeth Feeter, of W. H., and has 2 ch.
  - III. LYDIA K., m. in 1883, John H. Kenyon, of Plainfield.
32. II. PETER NEVIUS, b. 21 Nov. 1817, d. 19 Feb., 1897.
33. III. ELLEN V., b. 17 Nov., 1819, d. in infancy.
34. IV. TUNIS Q., res. Kline's Mills (Pluckamin), b. 29 Feb., 1822, unm.
35. V. JACOB, res. Kline's Mills, m. Mary Burr, of Philadelphia, had ch.
- I. JACOB, res. Somerville, N. J., m. Bessie, dau. of Abraham Van Arsdale, Pluckamin, and has ch.
  - II. BESSIE.
  - III. ORION, res. Owego, N. Y., m.
  - IV. ERIC.
  - V. THEODORE, res. N. Y. city, m.
36. VI. PHEBE, of Kline's Mills, d. 6 Mch., 1839.

### FOURTH GENERATION

Peter Kline (12) had ch.

37. I. JACOB P., of Jersey City, N. J., b. 3 Oct., 1812, d. in 1864, m. Catherine, dau. of Jeremiah Conover, of Pluckamin; had 6 ch.
- I. MARIA O., II. PETER N., III. ELIZABETH W., IV. MARGARETTA M., V. LEWIS A., VI. KATE F.

38. II. A. MULFORD, dec., m. *first* a dau. of Frazer Baldwin, of Bernards, Somerset Co., by whom 2 ch. EUGENE and MARY; m. *second* in Illinois, and had one dau. who is m. and lives at Alton, Ill.; m. a third time, no ch. by last wife.
39. III. J. W. HARRISON, removed to California, and has not been heard from since 1858.
40. IV. MARY LAVINIA, b. in 1821, d. 16 June, 1849, m. Peter J. Lane, of Bedminster; had 3 ch.  
 I. SUSAN, res. Bound Brook, N. J., m. H. Kline Ramsey, and has one son.  
 II. JOB, res. Morristown, N. J., who m. a Keats, and has ch.  
 III. MARY, res. Califon, N. J., m. John R. Clark, of New Germantown, has 2 ch., *Fanny* and *Florence*.
41. V. PHEBE ELIZABTH, unm.
42. VI. MARTIN NEVIUS, res. N. Y. city, m. Elizabeth Howell, of Walton, N. Y., and has 2 ch., I. MARY. II. NELLIE.
43. VII. FRANCES L., b. 4 Jan., 1828, d. 8 Apl., 1860, m. Peter J. Lane, of Bedminster, no ch.
44. VIII. PETER L., res. North Branch, N. J., m. in 1872, Jane E. dau. of Samuel B. Little, of North Branch, and has 7 ch., I. MARY L., II. LIZZIE W., III. S. WALTER, IV. ROBERT R., V. JAMES E., VI. FREDERICK, M., VII. ELOISE.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

Rev. David Kline (22) had ch.

45. I. ANNE ELIZA, res. Phillipsburg, N. J., b. 23 May, 1835, m. 26 Oct., 1853, John F. Dumont, b. 11 Nov., 1824, d. 8 May, 1889; had 13 ch.,  
 I. IRA, res. Ringwood, N. J., b. 27 Sep., 1855, m. 10 May, 1882, Katherine R. Skellinger, of Flanders, N. J., b. 3 Aug., 1855; their 2 ch., *Myra George*, b. 1884; *Edward George*, b. 1886. II. WILLIAM L., b. 6 Apl., 1857. III. CHARLES, b. 20 Dec., 1858, d. 3 Apl., 1859. IV. LAURA, b. 3 May, 1860. V. GRACE, b. 8 July, 1862, d. 27 Jan., 1882. VI. JENNY, b. 5 Sep., 1864. VII. ANNE ELIZA, b. 9 Apl., 1867. VIII. FREDERICK T. F., b. 7 Mch., 1869. IX. WAYNE, b. 14 Apl., 1871. X. INFANT, b. and d. 1873. XI. MADGE T.; b. 30 July, 1875, d. 21 July, 1876. XII. VICTOR ST. CLAIRE, b. 12 Sep., 1877. XIII. ETHEL, b. 6 May, 1879.
46. II. PHEBE, b. 3 Dec., 1836, d. 28 May, 1857.
47. III. PETER, res. South Orange, N. J., b. 9 Feb., 1838, unm.
48. IV. JOHN CASSADAY, res. Glen Gardner, N. J., b. 25 Nov., 1839, unm.
49. V. JACOB, res. Eatontown, N. J., b. 27 Apl., 1842, m. 20 May, 1875, Anna E., dau. of George D. Cook, of E., b. 23 Jan., 1853; has 5 ch.,  
 I. VIOLET, b. 29 May, 1876, d. in infancy.  
 II. DAVID B., b. 15 Aug., 1877.  
 III. HERBERT W., b. 10 June, 1879.  
 IV. JESSIE A., b. 6 Sep., 1882.  
 V. WILLIAM N., b. 8 Feb., 1885.
50. VI. FRANCES MILLER, res. Bergen Point, N. J., b. 12 Dec., 1843.
51. VII. ELLEN TAYLOR, res. South Orange, N. J., b. 29 Mch., 1845, m. 5 Dec., 1867, Andrew D. Hutchinson; has 1 ch.
52. VIII. MARY M. P., res. Glen Gardner, b. 5 Dec., 1846, m. 5 Dec., 1867, Maurice M. Fritz, b. 6 June, 1834, d. 8 June, 1876; has 2 ch.,  
 I. LOUISE POHLMAN, b. 11 Aug., 1869, II. LESLIE DUMONT, b. 23 Mch., 1874.
53. IX. WILLIAM HARRISON, res. 34 E. 14th St., N. Y. city, b. 26 Feb., 1849, m. 11 Sept., 1888, Lillian D. S. Davis; no ch.
54. X. ALFRED BEAUMONT, res. N. Y. city, b. 1 Apl., 1851, unm.
55. XI. JANE MUSIER, res. 10 Lowell St., Lawrence, Mass., b. 16 Mch., 1853, m. 24 Jan., 1880, George H. Adams, b. 24 Oct., 1850; has one ch.,  
 I. MARY K., b. 8 Jan., 1885.
56. XII. ALICE, res. Glen Gardner, b. 27 Mch., 1855.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Peter A. Kline (25), had ch. by first wife.

57. I. CATHERINE, of Readington tp., Hunt. Co., N. J., b. 12 Feb., 1813, d. 10 Jan., 1879, m. Peter S. Swackhamer, b. July, 1813, d. 10 Aug., 1876; had 5 ch.  
 I. JOHN R., m. Margaret, dau. of Thomas J. Stires, of Ill.; has 2 ch. *Peter L.* and *David*. II. PETER K., m. Mary Ann, dau. of Mahlon Carkhuff, of Readington; has 3 ch. *Jenny*, *Mary* and *Ella*. III. MARY JANE, res. White House, N. J. IV. DAVID, b. 22 Oct., 1845, d. 26 Feb., 1877. V. ANNA C., res. White House, N. J.
58. II. MARY, res. Somerville, N. J., m. John J. Voorhees; no ch.
59. III. AARON P., m. Susan Church, of Conn.; one ch. *Mary*.
60. IV. PETER, of the "Head of Brookye," near Stanton, N. J., b. in Oct., 1817, d. 12 May, 1889, m. Laney, dau. of David D. Schomp, of Readington; had one ch. *Mary Elizabeth*, who m. Gabriel L. Gulick, and has 7 ch.
61. V. ELIZABETH, of Centerville, N. J., b. 3 Sept., 1820, d. 14 Aug., 1886, m. Lewis F. R. Ball, b. 8 Mch., 1821, d. 25 Aug., 1886; had 4 ch.  
 I. HARRIET, II. CATHERINE L., III. REBECCA, IV. STEPHEN.
62. VI. CORNELIUS B., res. Mechanicsville, N. J., m. Catherine Alleger, of Readington; has one ch. LAMBERT.

Peter A. Kline (25) had ch. by second wife.

63. VII. FANNY, dec., m. Josiah Cole, of Pleasant Run, N. J.; no ch.
64. VIII. JOHN S., res. Flemington, N. J., m. *first*, Sarah, dau. of Jacob Q. Carkhuff, of Pleasant Run, d. in 1865, by whom 7 ch.  
 I. JOHN W., res. Flemington, m. Laney, dau. of Aaron Thompson, of Pleasant Run, has 2 ch. *Aaron T.* and *Sophia Maria*.  
 II. JACOB Q., res. Flemington, b. in 1853, m. Annie E., dau. of David D. Schomp, of Pleasant Run.  
 III. WILLIAM S., res. Flemington, m. Bell, dau. of James Housel.  
 IV. PETER S., res. Kansas.  
 V. AMANDA, res. Flemington, m. John Ott.  
 VI. LEVI C., res. Plainfield, N. J., m. Laura, dau. of John K. Dalley.  
 VII. EZEKIEL, res. Pleasant Run. b. in 1865, m. Laura Smith.  
 John S. Kline, m. *second*, Sarah Tunison, by whom 9 ch.  
 VIII. ANNIE, IX. JENNY, X. LOUISA, XI. HENRY, XII., XIII., XIV. TRIPLETS who d. soon after birth, XV. GEORGE, XVI. ISABEL.
65. IX. ANN, res. Elizabeth, N. J., unm.
66. X. DAVID, m. Mary C. Smith, dec. by whom one living dau. MARY, who m. A. Brown.
67. XI. ANDREW, served in the Union army, War of Rebellion, and moved west.
68. XII. ABBIE, b. 2 Feb., 1839, d. 9 Mch., 1884, m. *first*, Frank Cornell, of White House, N. J., by whom one son WILLIAM, m. *second*, William B. Vliet, of Lamington, N. J., by whom 3 ch. ALVAH C. and JOSEPH H., twins, and GEORGE P.
69. XIII. MARTIN S., res. White House, served in Union army, War of Rebellion, m. 26 Oct., 1872, Almira Haver, of Round Valley; has one living child, MAGGIE.
70. XIV. WILLIAM S., res. Oregon, m. and has 3 dau.
71. XV. SUSAN, res. St. Paul, Minn., m. John Kitchen, of Raritan, N. J.; has 2 ch. ROBERT and MINNIE.

FOURTH GENERATION.

John Jacob Kline (26) had ch.

72. I. CATHERINE ANN, of Drea Hook, N. J., b. 17 Aug., 1815, d. 12 Nov., 1871, m. David Davis, b. in Oct., 1814, d. 23 Feb., 1887; had ch.  
 I. JOHN, res. Drea Hook, m. Catherine M., dau. of Daniel Dilts, of Readington, and has 6 ch. *George*, Rev., Pastor of Ref. Church of Peapack, N. J., who m. Fanny Johnston, of Washington, N. J., and has one ch. Frances; *Jacob*, res. Annandale, N. J.; *David*, M. D., res. New Brunswick, N. J.; *John Milton*, res. Newark, N. J.; *Bergen*, and *Charles Howard*.



- II. SARAH ELIZABETH. b. 14 Mch., 1841, d. 27 Apl., 1861.
- III. EVELINE, res. Trenton, N. J., m. John Van Fleet, of Readington, N. J., has 3 ch.; *Mary, Laura, and Oscar.*
- 73. II. ELIZA. b. 14 Feb., 1817, d. 1 June, 1867, m. Isaac Dalley, of Branchburg, Somerset Co., and removed to the West; had ch. I. JACOB, res. Scranton, Pa. II. PETER, res. Belvidere, N. J. III. DAVID. IV. MARY. V. JANE.
- 74. III. JOHN J., of Belvidere, N. J., b. 7 Mch., 1819, d. 15 July, 1887, m. 31 May, 1845, Eliza A., dau. of William Cramer, of White House, N. J., b. 7 May, 1821, d. 11 Apl., 1885; had 3 ch.,
  - I. JOHN J., b. 19 Aug., 1850, d. 27 July, 1877, m. a Maffit, of Bristol, Ind.; had one son, *Kenneth.*
  - II. LAURA, m. Edward Prall, of New Hampton, N. J., and has 2 ch.
- III. ELLA, res. Rahway, N. J., m. John Flomerfelt, of Bedminster, N. J., and has one ch.
- 75. IV. ANDREW K., res. Bristol. Elkhart Co., Ind., b. 5 Feb., 1821, m. *first*, 5 June, 1851, Sarah Ann Knapp, b. in 1830, d. in 1874, by whom no ch.; m. *second*, 20 May, 1877, Harriet Sullivan, of Bristol, b. 6 Jan., 1858, by whom 3 ch.
  - I. MARY ALICE, b. 5 Apl., 1878.
  - II. CHARLES A., b. 27 Dec., 1881.
  - III. BERTHA J., b. 16 Nov., 1884.
- 76. V. PETER K., of Branchburg, N. J., b. 22 Dec., 1822, d. 11 Apl., 1886, m. Mary, dau. of William Cramer, of White House; had ch.
  - I. KATE C., of Somerville, dec., m. J. W. Garhart, of White House; their 4 ch., *Cora, Albert, Mary and another.*
  - II. JOHN J., res. Somerville, m. Truth A., dau. of Peter I. Voorhees, of Readington, N. J.; has one ch. *Voorhees.*
  - III. MARY EVA.
  - IV. ANDREW K., M. D., Princeton, N. J.
  - V. ELLA, b. 18 May, 1862, d. 13 Feb., 1882.
  - VI. LILLY.
  - VII. HATTIE.
- 77. VI. AARON K., of Bloomington, N. J., b. 24 Aug., 1840, m. 27 Nov., 1862, Harriet, dau. of David O. Cole, of Readington, N. J., b. 7 Mch., 1840, d. 23 Aug., 1874; has 2 ch.
  - I. GEORGE W., b. 5 Jan., 1864; a graduate of the U. S. Naval Academy, and is an ensign in the U. S. N.
- 78. VII. DAVID D., res. Stanton, N. J., b. 1 Apl., 1842, m. 11 Sep., 1862, Sarah Catherine, dau. of Jacob Sheets, of Stanton, b. 9 Dec., 1845; had one ch., Ida, b. 17 Oct., 1863, d. in infancy.

#### SIMON LUDEWIG HIMROTH, (Simon Himrod).

Marie Catherine Moelich his wife, (A 7.) (Maria Melick) and their descendants.

1. I. SIMON HIMROD, b. in 1731 at Bendorf, Germany, bap. at the Evangelical Head-Church by Pastor Joh. Georg Schmidt, the certificate reading:—"The 16th of December, 1731, to Master Wilhelm Himroth a miller of this place, Bendorf, a son has been baptized; witnesses were Simon Ludewig Rückart, a citizen and fruit-dealer of this place, Veronica Gerdrutta, wife of Master Georg Peter Otto, a citizen of this place, and has been given to the child the name Simon Ludewig. God bless the baptized for Jesus' sake. Amen." His father was a seigneurial miller, and the family evidently was in close relation to the Moelichs as we see that Veronica Gerdrutta Otto, Mariah Katrina's sister, stood godmother to the son. The name is not uncommon in Rhenish, Prussia, there being an Abbey Himrod, in ruins, sixty miles from Bendorf and thirty from Trèves in the county of Wittich. Simon on attaining majority emigrated to America, landing at Philadelphia, 15 Sept., 1752, from the "Ship Two Brothers, commanded by Thomas Arnott, from Rotterdam, last from Cowes." On registering with the

secretary of the province he signed his full name, but later abandoned the use of Ludewig. He joined the family of Johannes Moelich (A) at Bedminster, N. J., and under him and his son Aaron learned the trade of tanner and currier. Simon m. Johannes' dau. Marie Cathrine (A 7), and continued living at Bedminster until 1772 when he removed to Milton, Northumberland Co., Pa. He suffered much from incursions of Indians and Tories in 1779, and it is said that at the capitulation of Fort Freeland on Warriors' Run he and his two eldest sons were made prisoners, taken to Canada and there detained for some time. His wife and younger children probably returned to New Jersey, remaining for a few years. Simon was a member of the Pa. legislature from 1781 to 1785. (See pp. 277, 278, 279).

## SECOND GENERATION.

Simon Himrod (1) had 7 ch.

2. I. AARON, b. 18 Aug., 1757, at Bedminster, N. J., d. 4 Dec., 1820, at Waterford, Erie Co., Pa.; m. 14 Apl., 1783, Isabella, dau. of Moses Kirk, of Northumberland Co., Pa., b. 25 Sept., 1766, d. 22 Apl., 1841. After marriage Aaron settled on the shore of Cayuga Lake but was driven off by the Indians. His name is said to be preserved in that vicinity by Himrod's Point, opposite Trumansburg. For a time he owned and occupied a farm in Turbut tp., Northumberland Co., Pa., now the property of Mrs. Sylvia Cronrath. About 1798 he removed to Waterford tp., Erie Co., Pa., settling permanently on a farm now owned and occupied by his granddaughter, Mrs. Adeline Boyd. For his 13 ch. see p. 658.
3. II. CATHERINE, b. at Bedminster, N. J., 2 Oct., 1760, d. in Crawford Co., Pa., 21 June, 1829, bur. in Long Stand graveyard near Meadville, m. John Ryan, of Northumberland Co., Pa., who d. 10 Feb., 1830. He removed to Crawford Co., Pa., in 1798, having two years before taken up 200 acres of land about 7 miles from Meadville, the house he then erected being now occupied by his grandson, Major George P. Ryan. For his 9 ch. see p. 659.
4. III. ANDREW, b. 1762, at Bedminster, N. J., d. Del. Co., O., m. Catherine, dau. of Moses Kirk, of Turbut tp., Northumberland Co., Pa., who d. 1832. Andrew moved from Pa. to Ohio about 1820. For his 7 ch. see p. 661.
5. IV. MARTHA, b. at Bedminster, N. J., 12 Oct., 1764, d. 10 Aug., 1806, at Milton, Northumb. Co., Pa., m. 1 Jan., 1788, Bethuel Vincent, of Milton, b. 3 June, 1762, d. 1 May, 1837, the great grandson of Levi Vincent, a Huguenot who emigrated from France to N. J. Bethuel Vincent was distinguished in his vicinity for the force and integrity of his character, his retentive memory and clear intellect, together with a robust and vigorous frame. He was postmaster at Milton for many years. When a boy, in July, 1779, at the capitulation of Freeland's Fort to the British Colonel McDonald, he, together with his father Cornelius Vincent, his brother Daniel and a number of neighbors, including the Himrods, was captured. The prisoners were taken to Canada and there detained until the end of the war. For her 9 ch. see p. 662.
6. V. WILLIAM, b. at Bedminster, N. J., 1766, d. 8 Feb., 1813, at Ovid, N. Y., m. Elizabeth Sutphen, dau. of Peter Sutphen, of Somerset Co., N. J., b. 1766, d. 19 Nov., 1849, at Trumansburg, N. Y. He learned the trade of tanner and currier from his Uncle Aaron Malick (A 2), and in 1796 settled on a farm at Lodi, Seneca Co., N. Y., where he established a tannery. Ten years later he exchanged this property for 320 acres at Hector, Schuyler Co., N. Y., to which he removed with his family and the large families of his two slaves Tom and Sill that had been his wife's dowry. He was captain of militia 1797, was app'd major in 1801, lieut. colonel 1804, and major general during the war of 1812, died from fever contracted in the service and was buried with military honors in the Presb. Churchyard at Ovid, his body being subsequently removed to Trumansburg. For his 10 ch. see p. 663.
7. VI. ELIZABETH, b. prob. Feb., 1772, dec.; was living in 1839 with Edward Ryan in Crawford Co., Pa.
8. VII. DAVID, b. 1773, m. Anna Harris.

(There may have been other ch.)

## THIRD GENERATION.

Aaron Himrod (2) had 13 ch.

9. I. MOSES, b. at Northumb. Co., Pa., 9 Jan., 1790, d. at Waterford, Pa., 26 Sep., 1868, m. 15 Jan., 1816, Nancy King, dau. of James Latimer of W., a desc. of John Latimer, of "The Irish Settlements" in the "Forks of the Delaware," she b. Jan., 1790, d. at Erie, Pa., 4 Oct., 1860; he served 4 years from 1811, as lieut. and capt., 7 Co., 136 Reg. Pa. Militia. For his 10 ch. see p. 666.
10. II. WILLIAM, b. in Northumb. Co., Pa., 19 May, 1791, d. at Erie, 21 June, 1873, m. *first* 31 May, 1825, Aurelia H., dau. of George W. Reed, b. 10 Mch., 1804, d. 6 Dec., 1844; m. *second*, 9 July, 1845, Phoebe, wid. of Dr. Moore Bird Bradley and dau. of Bethuel Vincent (5). He was identified with the growth and prosperity of Erie being extensively engaged in the business of real estate, lumbering and building. He erected several hotels, in 1824 completed the new court house and in 1841 as one of the firm of Vincent, Himrod & Co. founded the large iron and stove works on 11th and State Sts. which have since been a source of much wealth to the city. He was active in the Presb. communion, untiring in works of usefulness and charity, and a firm friend to the abolition movement. In Dec., 1839 he established in his own house Erie's first negro sunday school, still well-known as the "Himrod-Mission." For his 5 ch. see p. 666.
11. III. ANDREW, b. 9 Sep., 1792, d. 19 Aug., 1819, at Terre Haute, Ind., m. Sarah Crawford.
12. IV. MARY FOSTER, b. 13 Aug., 1794, d. at the res. of her dau. Mrs. Jacks, Milwaukee, Wis., m. 1 Sep., 1817, Amos P. Woodford; had 2 ch.
  - I. MARINDA, of Milwaukee, Wis., dec., m. Craig Jacks, of Harbor Creek, Pa., dec., has had one ch., *Mary*, dec., who m. H. Armour who lives in N. Y. C., and left 3 ch.
  - II. MARY, dec., m. Munsen Guest, of Waterford, Pa., no ch.
13. V. ELEANOR MCGUIRE, res. near Waterford, Pa., b. 12 Mch., 1796, in Northumb. Co., m. 20 Mch., 1822, to Samuel Phoenix, has 6 ch.,
  - I. AARON, res. near Waterford.
  - II. SARAH CHARILLA, res. Watertown tp., b. 25 Dec., 1829, m. Joseph O. Baldwin, of Cleveland, O.; their 3 ch., *Marcia L.*, b. 1854, m. 1876, Charles O. Skinner, of Waterford; *Nelly M.*, b. 1859, m. 1887, a farmer named Lain, of Wilmot, Cowley Co., Kan.; and *Anna M.*, b. 1862.
  - III. ISBELLA, m. a Hunt.
  - IV. MARY ELIZABETH, res. Cowley Co., Kan., b. 4 Jan., 1839, m. 21 Sep., 1865, by Rev. Thomas T. Bradford, John K. Thompson, b. in Erie Co., Pa., 17 Jan., 1839; have 3 ch. living, one dec.
  - V. JOHN, d. at Libby Prison, Richmond, Va.
  - VI. SAMUEL.
14. VI. JOHN, b. in Northumb. Co., Pa., 18 July, 1797, d. at Waterford 20 Mch., 1880, m. *first*, by Rev. Robert Reed, 28 June, 1827, Rebecca Leetch, b. 1 May, 1797, d. 15 June, 1861; m. *second*, by Rev. T. T. Bradford, 25 Nov., 1862, Nancy Boyd, of Waterford, b. 22 Aug., 1798. For his 6 ch. see p. 667.
15. VII. CATHERINE, b. in Waterford tp., 6 Jan., 1799, m. Saml. Gill, both dec.; left one ch., *MARY*, wid. of Cookson Green, who lives 6 miles from Waterford, and has 2 sons and 5 daus.
16. VIII. SARAH, b. 2 July, 1800, d. at Waterford 30 Jan., 1873, m. by Rev. Robt. Reed, 4 Apl., 1826, to John C. Smith, b. 1801, d. 30 July, 1881; had 4 ch.,
  - I. JAMES, b. 7 Jan., 1827, d. 24 Jan., 1877, at Vineland, N. J., m. 12 May, 1868, Carrie W. Ellis, b. 8 Aug., 1844; their 2 ch., *Mary Belle*, b. 1869; and *Flora Bell*, d. 1871.
  - II. MARTHA, res. Waterford, Pa., b. 22 Jan., 1830, m. 18 Feb., 1857, Frank C. Baxter; their 6 ch., *Elsie S.*, b. 1857; *William K.*, b. 1860, m. 1883, *Ida M. Olmstead*, has one ch. *Lotty Ida*, b. 1884; *John C. S.*, and *Joseph M.*, twins, b. 1864; *Mary F.*, b. 1867; *Mattie C.*, b. 1872.
  - III. JOSIAH H., of Pueblo, Col., b. 23 Feb., 1832, d. 18 May, 1870, m. 8 Mch., 1865, Margaret Leeper, of Canada, b. 11 Feb., 1835; their one ch., *Agnes Maud*, b. 1866.



## CH. OF AARON HIMROD, THOMAS MOORE & JOHN RYAN. 659

- IV. CAROLINE, b. 4 Sep., 1838, d. 12 Mch., 1868, m. 6 June, 1865, Alpheus Peck; their 1 ch., *Sarah E.*, b. 1867, d. in infancy.
17. IX. SIMON, b. 8 Jan., 1802, at Waterford, Pa., d. there 13 May, 1874, m. by Rev. Robt. Reed 13 Feb., 1828, Jane Moore, who d. about 1879. For 8 ch. see p. 667.
18. X. ISABELLA, b. in Waterford tp., 27 Mch., 1804, d. there 27 Mch., 1880.
19. XI. DAVID, b. in Waterford tp., 26 May, 1806, d. there, 23 Nov., 1877, m. by Wm. Vincent, 4 July, 1833, Abigail Patten. b. in Maine, 18 Oct., 1812, her res. 537 Beldon Ave., Chicago, Ill. David Himrod's great integrity and remarkable business capacity made him a conspicuous figure in the vicinity of Erie where much of his life was passed, and his prominent identity with the iron interest of the state together with his discoveries and inventions relating to that industry will render his reputation long enduring. With his brother William and Bethuel B. Vincent he was early engaged in smelting iron, and in 1844 his firm of Vincent, Himrod & Co. commenced building furnaces in the Chenango Valley. He was instrumental in the firm's experimenting with the use of stone coal instead of charcoal; he soon discovered that it made iron of the very best quality, and to him belongs the honor of supplying the first iron in the United States produced from bituminous coal. He was the first to investigate the Lake Superior ore region, and in 1854 he produced iron of the finest quality from the raw material transported from the north west, thus opening up the immense ore fields of that country to the world. In 1859 he organized the Himrod Furnace Co., and continued to be its active manager until he retired from business in 1871. Altogether he was a remarkable man, and during his business career made an impression upon his time and generation, the effects of which will be felt as long as Pa.'s iron industries flourish. For his 10 ch. see p. 667.
20. XII. MARTHA, b. in Waterford, Erie Co., Pa., 4 Jan., 1808, d. there, 25 Feb., 1861, m. by John Boyd 2 Dec., 1834, Thomas Moore, b. 3 Apl., 1813, d. 4 Nov., 1836, had 5 ch.
- I. SARAH, res. Waterford, Pa., b. 22 June, 1835, m. 22 Nov., 1854, Matthew Campbell, who d. 1887; their 5 ch., *Martha E.*, born 1856, m. 1886, Buman Gilkerson; *Bertha J.*, b. 1859, m. 1882 Marshall B. Hood, and has 1 ch., Ruth; *Thomas K.*, b. 1860, d. 1861; *James M.*, b. 1863, d. 1887; *George W.*, b. 1865, m. 1886, Jenny McLean, has 1 ch., Sadie Esther.
- II. JAMES, b. 18 May, 1839, d. at Waterford, 23 July, 1865, unm.
- III. RALPH, res. near Waterford, Pa., b. 24 Mch., 1842, m. by Rev. H. P. Jackson, 4 Mch., 1868, Sophia Avery; has 1 ch *Sophia Avery*, b. 1843.
- IV. THOMAS PRESSLY, b. 26 Oct., 1845, d. 13 June, 1882, m. 4 Jan., 1871, Maggie J. Powell, b. 23 May, 1853, her res. Cochranston, Pa.; their 2 ch., *Hugh H.*, and *Fred H.*, twins, b. 1871.
- V. KIRK CANNING, b. 3 Jan., 1854, d. 11 Dec., 1856.
21. XIII. AARON MELICK, b. 28 June, 1809, d. of consumption in 1834, while studying for the ministry at Lane Seminary, Cincinnati, O.

### THIRD GENERATION.

John and Catherine (Himrod) Ryan (3) had 9 ch.

22. I. MARTHA, m. Archibald McNeill, of Crawford Co., Pa., who d. at Meadville. She removed to Oshkosh, Wis.; their 5 ch., I. JOHN, b. about 1803, d. 1887; II. ELIZABETH, m. *first*, Lewis Campbell, m. *second* and had ch.; III. CATHERINE, dec., m. Asa Hull, of Meadville; IV. CLINTON, m. a Sherwood and lived at Hudson, Wis.; V. EDGAR, m. and lived at Fond-du-lac, Wis.
23. II. MARY, b. 13 Dec., 1789, d. at Memphis, Miss., 15 June, 1866, m. 19 Oct., 1809, Armand Martin, b. 26 Oct., 1785, d. 13 June, 1861, at West Point, Iowa, to which place he moved in 1845 from Erie Co., Pa.; had 9 ch.
- I. ANGELINE, b. 1811, d. 1848, m. 1829, Chas. Dillon McGill, of Saegertown, b. 1802, d. 1875, had 9 ch.; *Mary Ann*, who m. J. L. Hites, res. Hayfield, Pa., *Oscar P.*, dec.; *Armand M.*, m. Matilda Briggs, res. Saegertown; *John E.*, m. Amelia A. Boyd, res. Saegertown; *Emily Ellen*, m. William S. Affantranger, res. Meadville, Pa.; *Andrew R.*;

- ex-Gov., of Minnesota, m. *first*, Lida Bryant, m. *second*, Mary E. Wilson, res. St. Anthony Park, Minn.; *Sarah Augusta*, m. Edward Powell, res. Greenville, Pa.; *Frances Catherine*, m. Henry C. Twitchell, res. Edinboro, Pa.; *Angeline Helen*, m. Leon Koup.
- II. EMILY C., b. 1813, d. 1880, m. 1830, Joseph Grier Wilson, who d. 1888, at West Point, Iowa; had 7 ch., *Mary*, dec.; *Sarah Jane*, m. McRary; *Andrew Porter*, dec.; *Josephine*, m. Homer Hall; *Charles E.*; *Henry D.*, m. Matilda C. Forley; *Samuel M.*, m. Lizzie Thou.
- III. CHARLOTTE, b. 1815, d. 1858, m. William D. Burnes, had 1 ch., *Mina*, m. Charles S. Ridgeway, res. Canton, Mo.
- IV. CHARLES S., b. 1817, moved to Mo. in 1840, m. same year, Emily, dau. of Charles Martin; had 5 ch., *Mary A.*, m. Samuel A. Allen; *Anna Arista*, m. William H. Barnes, res. Zanesville, O.; *Helen Maria*; *Henry Eugene*, m. Mary Thompson; *Alice Irene*, m. *first*, Robert N. Martin, *second*, Fehin Landoy.
- V. JOHN EUDOLPHUS, b. 1820, d. 1850, m. Elizabeth H. Nicholls, had 4 ch., *Charles U.*, killed in Union Army, Little Rock, Ark., 1863; *Robert N.*, m. Alice I. Martin; *Adelaide*, dec.; *Sabina*, m. Horace McDowell.
- VI. SAMUEL, b. 1827, m. 1874, Mary A. Snyder, and has one ch. *Alma*.
- VII. CORDELIA N., res. Canton, Mo., b. 1830, m. 1874, H. M. Wheeler.
- VIII. MARY S., res. Arbela, Mo., b. 1832, m. 1855, E. H. Wheeler; had 9 ch., *Ralph*, dec.; *Jessie*, dec.; *Effe*, dec., who m. William Ventress; *Orrie*, dec.; *Carl*, dec.; *Lottie*, dec., m. George Thomas; *Edith*, m. Levi Redout; *Eric*; *Paul*, dec.
- IX. WILLIAM MANNING, b. 1834, entered Union Army, 1861, d. returning home, 1864.
24. III. SARAH, d. in Crawford Co., Pa., about 1823, m. a Douglas, and had one dau. EMELINE, dec.
25. IV. WILLIAM, b. 7 Nov., 1793, d. 4 Dec., 1871, m. 1818, Catherine, dau. of William Jones, of Meadville, Pa., b. 2 May, 1793, d. 16 Apl., 1856; their 11 ch.,
- I. MARGARET, b. 1819, d. 1844, unm.
- II. EMELINE, res. Elk Creek, Cal., b. 1821, m. 1864, William S. Carver.
- III. SARAH, res. Pacific Grove, Cal., b. 1822, m. 1850, Charles B. Donnelly, who d. 1854, their 2 ch., *James C.*, who m. Ellen A. Rhoads, and *Effe C.*, dec., m. E. S. Campbell.
- IV. AMANDA, res. Red Bluff, Tehama Co., Cal., b. 1824, unm.
- V. SIMEON, res. The Homestead, Meadville, Pa., b. 1826, unm.
- VI. CORYDON, b. 1828, murdered by thieves in Cal. 1879, m. Mary D. Haas.
- VII. MARTHA, b. 1830, m. 1855, James A. Buckingham, and had 10 ch., of whom are living—*Annie*, who m. Joseph Smith; *Clara Adela*, *William Oscar*, *John Albert*, *Regina Belle* and *James Harper*.
- VIII. ANDREW, res. Red Bluff, Cal., b. 1832, unm.
- IX. CATHERINE, res. Meadville, Pa., b. 1835, unm.
- X. ISABELLA, b. 1835, m. 1858, Alexr. C. Hill; had 5 ch., *Charles Wm.*, m. Della May Hollenbeak; *Winnie Catherine*, m. Linnaeus Polley; *Jesse H.*, m. Ida Schofield; *Alfaretta*; *Aurelia R.*
- XI. AURELIA HIMROD, res. White Sulphur Springs, Montana, b. 1837, m. 1861, John C. Tipton; she owns the German Bible that belonged to Simon Himrod, the immigrant.
26. V. ANDREW, b. 7 Sep., 1795, d. Crawford Co., Pa., about 1874, m. 26 Oct., 1820, dau. of William Jones, of Meadville, d. July, 1887; had 9 ch.,
- I. JOHN A., b. 1821, d. in Cal., 1875, m. 1848, Isabel, dau. of Truman Mal-lory.
- II. ADELLA, res. Brooklyn, N. Y., b. 1823, m. *first*, 1843, William M. Barrows, of Greenburgh, Pa., who d. 1862; m. *second*, 1864, James Denmore, lawyer, editor, and publisher, b. near Rochester, N. Y., 1820, d. 16 Sep., 1889, in Brooklyn; by first marriage had 3 ch., viz.:—*Ernest R.*, res. Brooklyn, m. Rachael Wyman; *Walter John*, res. Brooklyn, m. Frances Evelyn Carlin; *Edgar*, d. unm. By second marriage had one ch., *Darya*.
- III. EDWARD, res. Dakota, b. 1825, m. 1847, Margaret Collum; their 2 ch., *Helen*, who m. Henry Barber; and *Jessie*.
- IV. ELIZA, b. 1827, m. 1849, Henry Womersley, b. 1821, d. 1875; their 6 ch., *Henry R.*; *Adella Antoinette*, res. Brooklyn, m. Edward Rauff;

## CH. OF JOHN RYAN, JOHN MCGILL & ANDREW HIMROD. 661

- John W.*, dec.; *John Andrew*, dec.; *Annie P.*, m. *William Craston*, of England; *John*, m. *Emma Morris*
- V. SARAH J., res. Center Co., Pa., b. 1830, m. 1846, Michael Cole; their 9 ch., *William*; *Andrew*, m. *Eliza Warner*; *John A.*, dec.; *Isabel*, dec.; *Frank*; *Ernest*; *Alexander*; *Ida* and *Elmer*.
- VI. WILLIAM SWAZEY, res. Nebraska. b. 1832, m. 1855, Harriet, dau. of David Barrows, of Greensburg, Pa.; their 7 ch., *Charles*, m. *Alice Clarke*; *Henry*; *Ida*, m. *George Benson*; *George*; *Edgar*; *Tina*, dec.; *Tinnie*.
- VII. MARY ISABEL, res. Carbondale, Col., b. 1834, m. *first*, 1856, *George H. Collom*, m. *second*, 1883, *Thomas Graham*; had 2 ch., both by 1st marriage, *Francelia R.*, who m. *George Johnson*, and *Harry*, who m. *Phoebe Metzenbaucher*, and lives in Chicago.
- VIII. ANDREW W., b. 1836, d. at St. Paul, Minn., 1887, m. 1870 *Celia Green*; their 3 ch., *George William*; *Celia Agnes*; and *Eliza Genevieve*.
- IX. GEORGE PLUMMER, res. Longstand, Crawford Co., Pa., b. 1843, m. 1866, *Sarah*, dau. of *Asa Gehr*, of Woodcock, Pa.; served throughout the civil war with much credit in 150th Pa. Regt. (Buck-tails), captured at Gettysburg, confined in Libby and other prisons until exchanged when he rejoined his regt.; was sheriff of Crawford Co., Pa., 1875 to 1878; served as ordnance officer and asst. adj. genl. 6th brig. Pa. N. G. 1878 to 1881; had 9 ch., *Almont*; *Duff P.*; who m. a *Miss Sherrick*; *Minnie S.*, *Andrew A.*; *Ernest B.*; *George*; *James*; *Norman* and *Adella*.
27. VI. EDWARD, b. 2 Oct., 1797, d. 16 July, 1878, m. *first*, 7 June, 1824, *Elizabeth Clarke*, of Crawford Co., Pa., b. 1806, d. 1840, m. *second*, *Harriet* —; no ch.
28. VII. ISABELLA, b. 28 Oct., 1800, d. 25 Mar., 1876, at Saegertown, Pa., m. 12 July, 1822, *John McGill*, of Saegertown, b. 19 Oct., 1793, d. 27 Oct., 1878; had 6 ch.
- I. CATHERINE. b. 1823, d. 1825.
- II. ANNA MARIA, res. Saegertown, b. 1824.
- III. SARAH C., b. 1826, d. 1875, m. 1854 *Robert Hunter*.
- IV. AUGUSTUS, Ed. of the Weekly Press, Saegertown, Pa., b. 1828, m. 1855, *Sarah Peiffer*, of Venango, Pa., b. 1826; their 4 ch., *William R.*; *Isabella*, m. *W. B. Hough*; *Lillian*, m. *M. O. Campbell*, of Smethport, Pa.; and *Rebecca*, dec.
- V. ELIZA R., res. Hydetown, Pa., b. 1830, m. 1864, *James R. Fleming*, and has several ch.
- VI. WILLIAM R., res. Harmonsburg, Pa., b. 1833, m. 1861, *Caroline A. Harkin*, b. 1839; has 9 ch.
29. VIII. CATHERINE, twin. b. 28 Oct., 1800, dec., m. *John Scott* dec.; had 1 ch.
- I. WILLIAM R., who is an attorney-at-law, Meadville, Pa.

### THIRD GENERATION.

Andrew Himrod (4) had 7 ch.

30. I. SARAH, b. in Northumb. Co., Pa., 23 Jan., 1795, d. at Berkshire, Del. Co., O., 21 Dec., 1866, m. 10 Jan., 1822, *Zelotes Jones*, of Berkshire, b. 30 Apl., 1797, d. in Otoe Co., Neb., 27 Jan., 1874, had 5 ch., I. MARTHA, b. 17 Nov., 1822. II. SOLOMON, b. 8 Aug., 1826. III. ANDREW K., b. 25 Mch., 1831; DAVID, b. 14 Dec., 1835, d. 29 Aug., 1864; V. SARAH, b. 2 Sep., 1837.
31. II. MARTHA, was blind, and unm. in 1839.
32. III. ISABELLA, b. in Northumb. Co., Pa., 14 Aug., 1801, d. Canaan tp., Morrow Co., O., 27 Mch., 1863, m. 26 June, 1823, *John Rice*, b. 1794, d. 1868, their 8 ch., I. RACHEL, b. 8 May, 1824; II. CATHARINE, b. 4 Sep., 1825; III. JACOB, b. 22 Aug., 1827; IV. LYDIA, b. 20 July, 1829; V. MARIA, b. 18 Mch., 1832; VI. ISABEL, b. 6 Dec., 1836; VII. SIMON HIMROD, b. 24 Apl., 1840; VIII. PAUL KESTER, b. 29 June, 1842.
33. IV. CATHERINE, b. at Milton, Pa., 14 Nov., 1803, d. Delaware, O., 23 June, 1884, m. 6 May, 1829, *Alexander Anderson*, b. 15 July, 1796, d. 30 Mar., 1860, held the office of constable and coroner, had 5 ch.,
- I. WILLIAM, b. 15 Apl., 1832, d. 1875, has 1 son, *Chas., S.*, res. Delaware, O.
- II. ISABELLA, res. Wescott, Custer Co., Neb., b. 5 June, 1835.
- III. JOHN ALEXANDER, b. 19 Feb., 1839, d. 1884, had one son, *Louis*, res. Delaware, O.



- IV. ANDREW MATTHEW, b. 21 Apl., 1841, is adjutant of the Ohio Soldiers' and Sailors' Home at Sandusky.
- V. JAMES GILLIS, b. 24 Mch., 1843, d. 1867.
34. V. MARIA, m. George Welch, of Oxford, Del. Co., O.
35. VI. SIMON, b. 4 Oct., 1809, at Milton, Pa., d. July, 1837, in Del. Co., O., m. 1837, Charlotte, (probably) Caulkins. Charlotte (Caulkins) Himrod m. Daniel M. Janes, and d. 10 Mch., 1856.
36. VII. MARGARET, b. at Milton, Pa., 16 Feb., 1814, d. in Del. Co., O., 14 Dec., 1885, m. 12 Sept. 1838, Joseph Raleson, of Berkshire, O., who d. 24 July, 1877, had 6 ch., I. SIMON, b. 1 Jan., 1840, killed in battle of Gettysburg, 2 July, 1863; II. HENRIETTA, res. Berlin, Del. Co., O., b. 10 Dec., 1840, m. a Smith; III. LEMUEL, b. 22 Feb., 1842, d. 23 Aug., 1863; IV. LOUISA, b. 23 June, 1846; V. FIDELIA, b. 5 Nov., 1849.

## THIRD GENERATION.

Bethuel and Martha (Himrod) Vincent (5) had 8 ch.

37. I. SARAH, b. 13 Dec., 1788, d. 30 Oct., 1839, on her husband's plantation near Mobile, Ala., of yellow fever; m. Col. John B. Hogan, of U. S. army; had 5 ch.
- I. ANNE M., d. 1842, m. G. H. Byard, Cash. Bank, of Mobile, had 2 daus., 1 dec.
- II. AMELIA, res. Mobile, Ala., wid. of Oliver S. Beers.
- III. SARAH, res. Canada, m. Rev. William Meikl.
- IV. LUCY, dec. m. Thomas Hamilton, lawyer of Mobile.
- V. JOHN B., d. leaving a wid. and 2 ch.
38. II. WILLIAM, b. 4 July, 1790, d. 19 Mch., 1872, at Waterford, Pa., m. 20 Feb., 1817, Elsie J. dau. of Thomas Nicholas, of Pine Creek, Pa., dec.; had 9 ch.
- I. JOHN PERICLES, res. Erie, Pa., lawyer and judge, b. 1817, m. 1845, Harriet S. dau. of John Shaddock, of Wesleyville, Pa., who d. 1888; has 2 ch. *Harriet Frances*; and *Catherine Elsie*.
- II. MARGARET MARTHA, b. 1819, d. 1841, unm.
- III. GEORGE CALHOUN, b. 1821, d. 1847, m. wife dec.; left 2 ch., *George T.*, of San Francisco, Cal.; and *Frank* of Mobile, Ala.
- IV. ANNA BELLA, res. Waterford, Pa., m. F. B. Strong and has 7 ch.
- V. THOMAS N., b. 1825, dec., m. and left 1 son.
- VI. PHEBE MARIA, b. 1827, m. Samuel Rae, who is dec.
- VII. OSCAR BETHUEL, b. Oct., 1829, dec., leaving wid. and 2 sons at Webster City, Iowa.
- VIII. WILLIAM H., b. 1832, d. 1852, unm.
- IX. SARAH HOGAN, now P. M. at Waterford, Pa., b. 11 Feb., 1838.
39. III. DANIEL, b. 17 Jan., 1792, d. 6 Oct., 1858, at Waterford, Pa., m. 25 July, 1815, Rachel, dau. of Thos. Brown, of Bucks Co., Pa.; d. 28 May, 1868; Daniel moved from Milton to Waterford in 1826 where he was a farmer and tanner, a trustee of the Waterford Academy, and for many years elder of the Presb. Church; his 10 ch.:
- I. RICHARD M., b. 1816, dec.
- II. THOMAS BROWN, res. Erie, Pa., b. 26 Mar., 1818, m. 19 Oct., 1842, Lydia W. Strong.
- III. WILLIAM, b. 1820, m. 1842, Ellen Van Nest, of Quincy, Ill.
- IV. MOSES S., b. 1821.
- V. SARAH ANN, b. 1823, m. 1845, Wm. R. Lockwood.
- VI. MARTHA MARGARET, b. 1825, m. 1853, George W. R. Himrod.
- VII. MARY ELIZABETH, twin, b. 1825, dec.
- VIII. JOHN H., b. 1828, dec.
- IX. MARY E., twin, b. 1828, dec.
- X. ELIZABETH, res. Erie, Pa., b. 1830, m. 6 Sept., 1866, Dr. Wm. Faulkner.
40. IV. MARY, b. 14 Mar., 1794, d. 15 Nov., 1890, at Mobile, Ala., m. Wm. T. Brown; has one ch. living, MRS. ELIZABETH K. RASER, who resides with a dau. *Mrs. James Betknap*, at Erie, Pa.; grandchildren named Schroder, ch. of a dec. dau. now living in N. Y. city.
41. V. BENJAMIN (Capt.) b. 6 June, 1796, d. 30 Oct., 1839, of yellow fever at Mobile, Ala., left ch., who are dec.; has probably grandch., ch. of his dec. sons, BENJAMIN and CHARLES living at Mobile.

42. VI. JOHN HIMROD, b. 20 Apl., 1798, d. 13 Aug., 1873, at Erie, Pa., m. *first*, at Demopolis, Ala., 6 Sep., 1821, Mary Raser, b. 30 July, 1803, d. 16 Feb., 1852, by whom 4 ch.; he m. *second* at Erie, Pa., 2 June, 1852, Ann Richards, b. 22 Feb., 1825, by whom 4 ch.; he lived at Tuscaloosa, Ala., until 1838, when he removed to Chillisquaqua, Northum. Co., Pa., thence in 1852 to Erie, Pa., thence a few years later to Chicago, Ill.; his 4 ch. by first wife were
- I. JOHN HEYL, D. D., LL. D., res. Buffalo, N. Y., b. Ala. 23 Feb., 1832, m. at Portville, N. Y., 10 Nov., 1853, to Elizabeth, dau. of Henry Dusenbury, of Deposit, N. Y. Dr. John H. Vincent was educated at Lewisburg Academy, in Pa., and the Wesleyan Inst., Newark, N. J., licensed to preach in 1850 and was admitted to the N. J. Annual Conference (Methodist) in 1853, transferred in 1857 to the Rock River Conference, Ill., he officiated as pastor at Joliet, Mount Morris, Galena, Rockford, and Chicago, until 1865. In that year he established the *Northwestern Sunday-School Quarterly*, and *The Sunday-School Teacher* in 1866; in this year he was appointed Gen. Agt. of Meth. Epis. Sunday-School Union and in 1868 was elected Cor. Secy. of same. In 1888 he was elected, at the quadrennial session of the General Conference, Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Few public men, it is believed, have exercised greater influence on popular education than he. His greatest achievement is the Chataqua Literary and Scientific Circle, which now, in its 12th year, has spread over Christendom, and numbers nearly 100,000 members. As a still higher means of educating the masses he has succeeded by his tireless activity and administrative genius in establishing the Chataqua University, of which he is the Chancellor. He has one son, *George Edgar*, b. in 1864.
- II. BETHUEL THOMAS, res. Greeley, Col., b. 1834, at Tuscaloosa, Ala.; was pastor of Fortieth St. M. E. church, Phila., in 1887.
- III. FRANK LYON, M. D., b. 1839, d. 1889 at Clifton Springs, N. Y., m. *first*, Maggie Jordon, of Jamestown, N. Y., d. 1866; m. *second*, 1868, Anna dau. of Martin Curtis; b. 1836; Dr. Frank L. Vincent graduated from Hahnemann Med. Col. of Chicago, rec'd deg. of A. M. from Hamilton Col. 1873, practiced medicine in Illinois and New York, and at time of death was on medical staff of Clifton Springs Sanitarium; had two ch., *Robert H. and Frank R.*, of Troy, N. Y.
- IV. MARY ELIZABETH, m. James O. Farovid, and lives at Hyde Park, Chicago, Ill.
- John Himrod Vincent had 4 ch. by *second* wife, viz.,
- V. CHARLES RICHARD, res. N. Y. C., b. 4 Oct., 1854.
- VI. HENRY, b. 26 Dec., 1855.
- VII. WILLIAM, b. 8 Mar., 1862.
- VIII. ANNA, res. 451 Janis St., Toronto, Can., m. G. D. Massey.
43. VII. PHOEBE, b. 1800, d. in infancy.
44. VIII. PHOEBE, b. 23 Mar., 1803, m. *first* 1839, Moore B. Bradley, M. D., of Waterford, Pa., b. 1790, d. 1841; m. *second*, 1845, her cousin William Himrod (10) of Erie, Pa., b. 1791, d. 1873, had 1 ch., Moore Bird, b. 1840, d. 1842.

## THIRD GENERATION.

William Himrod (6) had 10 ch.

45. I. MARIA, b. at Somerville, N. J., 22 Apl., 1792, d. at Trumansburg, N. Y., 13 Aug., 1870, m. 15 June, 1811, as a *second* wife, John McLallen, b. at West Stockbridge, Mass., 25 Dec., 1773, d. at Trumansburg, 16 Dec., 1844. He removed to N. Y. state in 1792, and obtained from his bro.-in-law, Abner Treman, a piece of land at the present site of Trumansburg upon which he built the first tavern in the village. Treman had been a Revolutionary soldier and recd. for his military services a strip of land about three-quarters of a mile wide and two miles long embodying the site of Trumansburg, the village deriving its name from this ex-soldier. Had 9 ch.
- I. WILLIAM HIMROD, b. 18 May, 1812, d. 30 Nov., 1887, at Aurora, Ill., to which place he removed about 1857, m. 5 Oct.,

- 1843, Matilda, dau. of Michael Biggs, of Lodi, N. Y., b. 13 Aug., 1822, d. 27 Aug., 1868; their 3 ch., *John James*, city clerk of Aurora, Ill., b. 1844, m. 1874, *Ella J.*, dau. of Daniel J. Emerson, of Rockford, Ill., b. 1 May, 1848, has 3 ch.; *Mary*, b. 1848, d. 1884, m. 1872, *Lauren Ford Otis*, of Aurora, Ill., b. 1842, left 2 ch.; *Emily*, b. 1858, d. in infancy.
- II. EDWARD ELY (Col.), b. 1 Jan., 1814, d. 27 May, 1886, at Trumansburg, num.; he was a man of high standing in business and social communities and was greatly respected; entered the state national guard and rose from the ranks to the command of a regt.; for many years he was an authority upon matters pertaining to civil engineering.
- III. JOHN, b. 19 July, 1815, d. at Steamburg, Schuyler Co., N. Y., 21 Jan., 1854, m. 19 Feb., 1846, *Ann E.*, dau. of Joshua McKeel, her res. Mount Vernon, Iowa, their 2 ch., *De Witt*, b. 1850, and *Bertha*, b. 1851, m. 1875, *Thomas Bower*, and. res. Waterburg, Tompkins Co., N. Y.
- IV. MARY KING, b. 26 Jan., 1817, d. 17 Jan., 1847, m. 26 Aug., 1839, *Lemuel Dorrance Branch*, b. 21 Sep., 1815, d. 15 Mch., 1860; their 2 ch., d. in infancy.
- V. DEWITT CLINTON, b. 3 May 1818, d. 3 Sep., 1845, unnm.
- VI. PHILEMON FERDINAND, b. 20 Aug., 1823, d. at St. Louis, Mo., 4 June, 1853, unnm., grad. at Yale College with honors in 1847, studied law and located at St. Louis, where he d. when apparently just crossing the threshold of a brilliant professional and public career. He early won the esteem of the citizens of his adopted state and had already become identified with the interests of the city and commonwealth. Almost a giant in stature his dignified, though affable manners, and his winning personality attracted all with whom he came in contact, while his undoubted talents and high character commanded respect and admiration.
- VII. CALVIN, b. 26 Apl., 1825, d. in infancy.
- VIII. MARGARET, b. 26 Apl., 1826, at Trumansburg, N. Y.; "after 31 years of helpless suffering," inflammatory rheumatism confined her to a chair, but she bore her affliction with cheerfulness, and took pleasure in the society of her friends and of her brother Edward from whom she recd. the tenderest care; no services were too onerous for him to perform that would contribute to her comfort or alleviate her sufferings.
- IX. ELIAS KING, b. 1 May, 1828, d. 29 July, 1845.
46. II. PETER, b. 25 Feb., 1794, d. 30 Aug., 1868, at Cayuga, N. Y.; m. *first*, 8 Aug., 1813, *Mabel*, dau. of John McMath, of Ovid, N. Y., b. 15 July, 1797, d. 7 Feb., 1836; m. *second*, 6 July, 1836, *Mary*, wid. of Charles Towar, of Lyons, N. Y., and dau. of John Leonard, of Ovid, N. Y., b. 28 Apl., 1800, d. 12 Oct., 1859; m. *third*, 30 Oct., 1861, *Sophronia*, dau. of Charles Bailey, of Ithaca, N. Y., b. 27 Feb., 1821. Peter Himrod lived for many years at Ovid and Lodi, was an active business man and farmer of high character, and rose through successive ranks to be major-general of the state militia. He possessed a commanding and well-proportioned figure, surmounted by a noble and winning countenance. He was eminently conscientious and strong in his religious principles. For his 8 ch. see p. 608.
47. III. CATHERINE SUTPHEN, b. 8 July, 1796, d. 13 Apl., 1876, at Burnett, Wis., m. 8 Apl., 1815, as second wife *Alvah Bement*, b. 23 Nov., 1791, d. 27 Mch., 1842, had 9 ch.,
- I. ABIGAIL MARIAH, b. 20 Apl., 1816, d. 2 Oct., 1842, m. 1834, *William Thayer*.
- II. MARGARET HIMROD, b. 9 Feb., 1818, d. 5 June, 1839.
- III. WILLIAM, res. Evansville, Wis., b. 4 Mch., 1820, m. 15 June, 1842, *Sarah Rosekrause*.
- IV. DAVID HIMROD, b. 11 Mch., 1822, m. 12 Mch., 1845, *Mary Ann Dickerson*, b. 10 Mch., 1827; their 3 ch., *Alvin*, b. 1847, m. 1869, *Jane Leath*, *William*, b. 1849, d. 1877, m. 1874, *Mary Leath*; *Maggie*, b. 1857, d. 1860.
- V. ERASTUS R., res. Oregon, Dane Co., Wis., b. 2 Apl., 1824, m. 20 July, 1849, *Catherine Kirtz*.



- VI. ALVAH, b. 4 July, 1827, d. 21 Mch., 1829.
- VII. HARRIET ELIZABETH, b. 18 Dec., 1829, d. 2 Sep., 1836.
- VIII. CATHERINE, res. Burnett Station, Dodge Co., Wis., b. 9 Aug., 1832, m. 8 Dec., 1850, Nathan F. Thomas; their 4 ch., *Theresa*, b. 1851, d. 1852; *Wm. Edward*, b. 1854; *Mary Ella*, b. 1858; *Maria Ella*, twin, b. 1858.
- IX. LOUISA, b. 10 Oct., 1839, d. 16 Jan., 1840.
48. IV. MARGARET, d. in youth.
49. V. ELLEN, b. about 1800, d. at Cuba, N. Y., Oct., 1877, m. Erastus Bement, bro. of her sister's husband, b. about 1793, d. 1876; had 5 ch.,
- I. WILLIAM H., d. about 1854, at Buffalo, N. Y.
- II. LEWIS H., res. Ithaca, N. Y., b. 10 Mch., 1821, m. 15 Aug., 1844, Phebe, dau. of Lemon Morehouse, of Armenia, N. Y.; their 5 ch., *Frank*, res. Wilson, O., b. 1846, m. and has 1 ch.; *Frederick*, b. 1848, d. 1865; *Burt*, b. 1852, d. 1844; *Edward*, res. Ithaca, N. Y., b. 1857, m. Etta Perego; *Lewis*, b. 1865.
- III. ELLEN, d. in youth IV. NELSON, V. WILBUR, res. Cuba, N. Y.
50. VI. LEWIS, b. at Lodi, N. Y., 1802, d. at Aurora, N. Y., m. Harriet Brownell; he was associated with Captain Wilcox and the Morgans of Aurora in the ownership of steamboats on Cayuga Lake; has one ch., *CARRIE*, res. Aurora, who m. Charles R. Bush and has 2 ch., *Charles* and *Lizzie*.
51. VII. JUDITH, b. 1804, d. at Trumansburg, N. Y., 13 Oct., 1881, m. about 1830, Milo Van Dusen, b. 17 May, 1800, d. 28 Mch., 1874. During the last 45 years of her life she was totally blind but it did not prevent her performing household duties and in needlework she was especially expert. She was possessed of active, energetic and intelligent qualities; had 2 ch.
- I. WILLIAM HIMROD, res. Hornellsville, N. Y., b. 26 May, 1831, m. 11 Nov., 1862, Cornelia, dau. of Walker Glazier, b. 28 Oct., 1830. He was chief clerk of Motive Power Dept., Western Div. N. Y., Lake Erie, and W. R. R. Co., but has now retired from active business; their 2 ch., *James M.*, b. 1869, and *Minnie Cornelia*, b. 1871.
- II. BELINDA LORAIN, res. Trumansburg, N. Y., b. 14 Nov., 1332, m. 13 Oct., 1857, Waldron B. Dumont; their 3 ch., *Fred S.*, b. 1858, d. 1881; *Isabella J.*, b. 1860, d. 1888, m. 1885, Harper J. Goodyear, left one ch. *Charles Bush*, b. 1868.
52. VIII. WILHEMUS MYNDERSE, b. 1807, d. 10 May, 1858, at Brooklyn, N. Y., m. *first*, 16 Oct., 1830, Christina Selfredge, who d. 30 Oct., 1840; m. *second*, 1841, Elizabeth, dau. of Henry Winters, of Broadway, N. J., b. 10 May, 1812, d. 30 Nov., 1883; had 4 ch.
- I. JOHN DE MOTT, res. 453 Lafayette Ave., Brooklyn, b. 29 Oct., 1840, m. 27 Sept., 1870, by Rev. Dr. J. Halsted Carroll, Mary Ellen Smith; served in Civil war in Co. A, 10 Reg. N. Y. Volunteers and Battery L, 4th Artillery; has for many years been connected with the N. Y. and Havana S. S. line; their 2 ch., *William* and *Edward*.
- II. MARY ANN, b. Mch., 1843, dec.
- III. CATHERINE W., res. 146 South Portland Ave., Brooklyn, b. 7 Oct., 1846, m. Benjamin H. Lawton, Jun'r, of Newport, R. I., b. 3 Oct., 1840; their 2 ch., *Frederick B.*, b. 28 June, 1870, and *Benjamin H.*, b. 1871, d. 1872.
- IV. ELIZABETH H., res. 142 South Portland Ave., Brooklyn, b. 17 Apl., 1849, m. 22 Sept., 1869, William T. Whitmore, of Middle Haddam, Conn., b. 20 Sept., 1841; he entered U. S. Navy as paymaster, Aug., 1862, resigned, 1865; their 4 ch., *Bessie L.*, b. 29 Aug., 1870; *William T.*, b. 1 Jan., 1872; *Arthur E.*, b. 28, Nov., 1874; *Raymond D.*, b. Oct., 1885.
53. IX. DAVID W., res. Trumansburg, N. Y., b. 16 July, 1809, m. 22 Aug., 1833, Christiana, dau. of William Gibson, of Kircudbright, Scotland, and a desc. of Sir Alexander Gibson, of Durie, Co. Fife, Scotland, b. 6 May, 1811; her father was a merchant in N. Y. until 1812 when he removed to Springfield, Otsego Co., N. Y. For many years David Himrod was an elder in the Presb. Church at Trumansburg, N. Y., and at Dunmore, Pa.; was postmaster of latter place, 1880-5, and at one time was major (staff) N. Y. Militia. For his 8 ch. see p 669.
54. X. JOHN SUTPHEN, (Rev.) b. 14 Dec., 1812, d. at Greenport, Col. Co., N. Y., 20 Nov., 1883, m. 30 Apl., 1845, Catherine Neilson, dau. of Dr. Augustus R. Taylor, of New Brunswick, N. J., d. 27 Jan., 1884; he grad. at Rut-

gers College in 1839, and at Theo. Sem. at New Brunswick in 1842. In the ministry of the Reformed Church he was exceptionally successful his labors in all the congregations he served being attended with rich results. His several charges were at Hillsdale, N. Y., 3 years, Claverack, N. Y., 6 years, South Bushwick Ref. Church, Brooklyn, 8 years, and Greenport, N. Y., where was "spent 20 years of unremitting toil and successful achievement." His name is perpetuated by Himrod Street in Brooklyn, which was named in his honor during his pastorate in that city.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

Moses Himrod (9) had 10 ch.

55. I. ADALINE, b. 2 Dec., 1816, m. 2 Sep., 1845, Flavel Boyd, b. 6 July, 1812, d. 29 July, 1889; had one dau., b. and d. Oct., 1856; she occupies the farm of her grandfather, Aaron (?).
56. II. JOHN LATTIMORE, res. Humboldt, Iowa, b. 23 Aug., 1818, m. 20 May, 1851, Mary Elizabeth Brown, b. 9 June, 1826, d. 8 Mch., 1867, at Kingsville, O.; had 8 ch.,
  - I. BONITA, res. Dryden, N. Y., b. 6 Mch., 1852, m. 5 Feb., 1873, Rev. Edward Augustus Mirick, b. 16 Mch., 1840; their 2 ch., *Lillian*, b. 12 Nov., 1873, and *Edwara Himrod*, b. 23 Sep., 1878.
- II. TOVEY BROWN, res. Weaver, Iowa, b. 19 Aug., 1853, m. at Redwing, Minn., 13 Nov., 1877, Dorcas Williams; their 2 ch., *James L.*, b. 20 Nov., 1879, and *William B.*, b. 2 Feb., 1883.
- III. ADALINE BOYD, res. Neosho Falls, Kan., b. 9 Jan., 1856.
- IV. RUTH AMANDA, res. Humboldt, Iowa, b. 23 Sep., 1857.
- V. MARGARET CORDELIA, b. 1 July, 1859, grad. Womens' Med. Coll., N. Y. Infirmary, 28 May, 1888.
- VI. ELLA, res. Humboldt, Iowa, b. 25 July, 1861.
- VII. GRACE HAMMOND, res. Omaha, Neb., b. 23 July, 1863.
- VIII. JOSEPH BOYD, res. Waterford, Pa., b. 25 Feb., 1867.
57. III. MARY ANN, res. Waterford, Pa., b. 9 Feb., 1820.
58. IV. ISABELLA, twin, b. 9 Feb., 1820, d. 14 Feb., 1830.
59. V. AARON MELLICK, res. Waterford, Pa., b. 23 Jan., 1822, m. 14, May, 1853 Mary Jane Cook, b. 4 Dec., 1826, d. 6 Mch., 1885; had 7 ch.
  - I. MOSES L., b. 12 Sep., 1854, dec. m. 29 June, 1882, Mary L. Mitchell, b. 12 Apl., 1861, their 1 ch., *Cassie May*, b. 18 May, 1883.
  - II. EVA ANNA, b. 15 June, 1856.
  - III. LEE, b. 10 Sep., 1858.
  - IV. ALFRED C., b. 2 Dec., 1860.
  - V. FRANK H., b. 7 June, 1862.
  - VI. BELLE, b. 4 Mch., 1865.
  - VII. CARL H., b. 1 Aug., 1868.
60. VI. DAUGHTER, b. and d. Oct., 1826.
61. VII. MARGARET CORDELIA, twin, b. 8 Oct., 1826, drowned 24 Oct., 1853.
62. VIII. JAMES WALKER, res. Waterford, Pa., b. 13 Sep., 1828, m. 16 Jan., 1861, Isabella S. Riddle, b. 25 Dec., 1828, d. 28 Aug., 1877; had 1 ch., *JENNY COOK*, b. 27 Apl., 1869.
63. IX. SARAH ANN, res. Waterford, Pa., b. 30 Dec., 1829, m. 29 Apl., 1856, Harvey Boyd, bro. of her sister Adaline's (38) husband, b. 21 Feb., 1815; have 3 ch., I. JOHN F., b. 30 Mch., 1858; II. ELIZABETH L., b. 11 Oct., 1860; III. SARAH ANNA, b. 3 Feb., 1862.
64. X. WILLIAM D., res. Waterford, Pa., b. 21 Feb., 1832, m. 18 Dec., 1856, Frances Sarah, dau. of S. J. Trask, of W.; had 6 ch., I. HENRY R., b. 18 Apl., 1858; II. RALPH B., res. Onona, Iowa, b. 8 Sep., 1859, III. NANCY L., b. 1861, d. 1858; IV. PAUL M. O., res. Wichita, Kan., b. 28 Oct., 1863; V. HARVEY BOYD, b. 15 Oct., 1869; VI. WILLIAM C., b. 11 Feb., 1878.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

William Himrod (10) had 5 ch.

65. I. PHILEWA H. R., b. 17 Apl., 1826, d. 11 Feb., 1835.
66. II. AARON, b. and d. 17 Apl., 1831.
67. III. GEORGE W. R., twin, res. Lockport, Ill., b. 1 Apl., 1831, m. 28 June, 1853, Martha Margaret, dau. of Daniel Vincent, of Waterford, Pa., b. 6 Oct., 1825; their 3 ch., I. FRED, b. 28 Aug., 1854, II. MARY, b. 4 May, 1856, III. MARTHA, b. 1 Nov., 1857.

68. IV. SAMUEL H., b. 17 Mch., 1834, m. and has 2 ch., MELLICK and FRANK.  
 69. V. WILLIAM H. J. R., res. Erie, Pa., b. 13 May, 1841, m. 11 Dec., 1862, Julia A., dau. of Presley Arbuckle, of Erie, b. 23 Feb., 1840; had 7 ch.,  
 I. PRESLEY A., b. 23 Oct., 1863; II. WILLIAM DEWITT, b. 21 Oct., 1865;  
 III. HENRY REED, b. 21 Oct., 1868, d. in infancy; IV. RAY, b. 16 June, 1873; V. JULIA ALLISON, b. 2 Mch., 1876; VI. HARWOOD B., b. 11 Mch., 1878, VII. HELEN LOUISE, b. 23 Oct., 1882.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

John Himrod (14) had 6 ch.

70. I. JOHN A., b. 20 June, 1828, drowned 17 May, 1852.  
 71. II. A SON, b. 22 July, 1829, d. 17 Aug., 1829.  
 72. III. SUSAN L., b. 17 Sept., 1830, d. 20 Sept., 1832.  
 73. IV. AARON W., b. 10 Apl., 1832, drowned 30 Apl., 1834.  
 74. V. WILLIAM, b. 24 July, 1834, d. at Stillwater, Minn., 18 Sept., 1886, m. 5 Aug., 1863, Frances A. L. J. Conover, of Marion, O.; he was a private in civil war wounded at Malvern Hill, 2 July, 1862; had 3 ch., I. EMMA LOUISE, b. 19 Jan., 1866; II. KATE MARION, b. 9 Dec., 1867; III. HELEN L. U., b. 10 Sept., 1873, d. 17 Apl., 1882.  
 75. VI. HELEN MARY, res. Racine, Wis., b. 4 Apl., 1838, m. 3 June 1856, George Q. Erskine, b. 13 Dec., 1827, he is pres. of a bank in Fargo, Dak., and of one in Crookston, Minn.; have 2 ch.; I. HELEN ROSALINE, b. 16 Oct., 1858; II. ETHEL AURELIA, b. 27 Jan., 1860, m. 19 Oct., 1886, Sheldon W. Vance, Prof. of Mod. languages at State University, Vermillion, Dak.,

## FOURTH GENERATION.

Simon Himrod (17) had 8 ch.

76. I. NANCY, b. 18 Aug., 1829, d. 27 Jan., 1869, at Cedarville, O., m. 1866, John F. Frazier, of O.; had 1 ch. I. John H., b. 19 Jan., 1869.  
 77. II. ELIZABETH, b. 15 Oct., 1830, d. 9 Jan., 1873, m. Henry Hugh Whitney, of Waterford, Pa.; had 3 ch., I. CELIA, b. 15 Nov., 1863; II. MABEL, b. 10 Nov., 1867; III. PARKES, b. 19 Aug., 1870.  
 78. III. AARON, b. 5 Apl., 1832, d. 15 Feb., 1873, m. 30 Dec., 1861, Nancy Smith, b. 21 Aug., 1834; her res. Waterford, Pa.; had 2 ch., I. REED S., b. 20 Jan., 1863, II. SIMON S., b. 21 Apl., 1864.  
 79. IV. JAMES M., b. 30 June, 1834, d. 24 Feb., 1860.  
 80. V. FRANCES K., b. 21 Feb., 1835, d. 20 Aug., 1862, m. Jan., 1859, Clinton Fritts, of Waterford, Pa.; had 2 ch., I. JAMES HUNTER, b. 2 Nov., 1859; II. MARY FRANCES, b. 2 Nov., 1861, d. July, 1887.  
 81. VI. MARTHA J., b. 10 Jan., 1839, m. 16 Jan., 1866, Albert Lamb, of Pleasantville, Pa.  
 82. VII. SIMON STEELE, b. 9 Aug., 1841, d. in Union army, 19 Jan., 1863.  
 83. VIII. CELIA L., b. 23 May, 1844, d. 13 Apl., 1863.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

David Himrod (19) had 10 ch.

84. I. PHOEBE, b. 22 Sep., 1834.  
 85. II. MARIETTA, b. 12 Feb., 1837, d. 11 Apl., 1887, at Neosho Falls, Kansas, where her husband lives; m. 9 Sep., 1861, E. S. Woodward, b. 1 May, 1836; he served in Union army during Civil war, rose from capt. to col. and was brev. brig.-gen'l for gallantry in the battle of the Wilderness where he lost a leg; had 3 ch., I. HANNAH, b. 26 Oct., 1862; II. KATE, b. 26 Jan., 1868; III. ALICE, b. 31 May, 1870.  
 86. III. PATTEN; cashier 1st Natl. Bank of Stirling, Kan.; b. 20 Jan., 1839, m. May, 1875, Clara Hawkins, widow. Served as capt. in Ohio regt. during Civil war—taken prisoner and confined at Columbia, S. C.; had 1 ch., DAVID, b. Mar., 1876.  
 87. IV. CHARLES, res. 537 Beldon ave., Chicago, b. 24 Dec. 1841, m. 7 Oct. 1869, Alice F., dau. of Wm. Judson, of Waterford, Pa., b. 25 July, 1841; he is a leading iron merchant in Chicago, served 3 years in the Union army; has had 2 ch., I. GERTRUDE, b. 6 Nov., 1871, d. 6 Aug., 1882; II. A SON, b. 17 Aug., d. 10 Sep., 1880.



88. V. ANNA, b. 24 Dec., 1843, d. at Chicago, 14 Jan., 1887.  
 89. VI. HENRY, b. 31 Jan., 1846, d. Youngstown, O., 17 Jan., 1877.  
 90. VII. KATE, res. Longton, Kan., b. 15 July, 1849, m. 7 Dec., 1875, Thomas B. Biggers, b. 24 Oct., 1838; served through the Civil War as major.  
 91. VIII. KIRK, of the firm of Charles Himrod & Co., Iron Merchants, Chicago, Ill., b. 31 Dec., 1851, m. 11 Oct., 1883, Minnie, dau. of Gustave Boehm, of Chicago, b. 11 Jan., 1863; has 2 ch., I. CHARLES B., b. 16 May, 1885; II. ANNA FRANCESCA, b. 24 Jan., 1887.  
 92. IX. GERTRUDE, res. Chicago, b. 23 Oct., 1854, m. 24 Dec., 1878, Thomas A. Hagerty, of Washington Co., Pa., now with Charles Himrod & Co., b. 22 Feb., 1849; has 2 ch., I. KIRK, b. 3 Feb., 1880; II. LOUISA, b. 13 June, 1882.  
 93. X. BERNARD, res. Chicago, with C. Himrod & Co., b. 18 June, 1858.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

• Peter Himrod (45) had 8 ch.

94. I. WILLIAM, res. 230 Union St., Brooklyn, b. 23 Apl., 1814, at Ovid, N. Y., m. 2 Sept., 1839, Ellen, dau. of William Covenhoven van Horne, a son of Cornelius van Horne of Centreville, Hunterdon Co., N. J., and a desc. of Cornelius Janszen van Hoozee, who d. at New Amsterdam (N. Y.) about 1693; she b. 20 Sep., 1820. William Himrod commenced his business career in 1827 in the store of Herman Camp, at Trumansburg, remaining there until 1835, when he established a mercantile business at Ovid, N. Y.; in 1847 he removed to N. Y. city and engaged in the produce commission business at No. 3 Water St., he being one of the pioneer merchants of the old corn exchange who used to meet daily at 17 South St., an association which has since grown to be the N. Y. Produce Exchange. Later he became interested in milling and operated mills in N. Y. c., in West Farms and Carthage Landing, N. Y., and in New Brunswick, N. J.; for a number of years he was agt. for the Equitable Life Ins. Co. of N. Y. and is now special agent for the Hartford Life and Annuity Ins. Co. was appd. brigade-inspector of rifle corps, N. Y. S. militia in 1836 with rank of major; was deacon for many years in the first Presb. church, of Brooklyn, and deacon, elder, and trustee in the Westminster Presb. Church of South Brooklyn, also elder of the 84 St. Presb. Church, N. Y. C.; had 4 ch.  
 I. ANNA CHRISTINA, b. 2 Nov., 1840.  
 II. ELIZABETH, b. 2 Dec., 1842.  
 III. MARY JEANNETTE, res. 230 Union St., Bkln., b. 16 Nov., 1844, m. N. Y. C. by Rev. Dr. Hugh Smith Carpenter, 20 Feb., 1882, Albert Jefferson, son of Williamson W. Dalton of Palatka, Florida, b. 17 Oct., 1843; their 1 ch., Henry Himrod, b. 22 Sep., 1883. We are indebted to Mrs. Dalton for this record of the descs. of Himrod. Much interesting biographical matter that she had carefully collected it has been impossible to use for want of space.  
 IV. JULIA ELLEN, res. 20 Irving Place, N. Y. C., b. 6 Aug., 1847, m. N. Y. C. by Rev. Dr. Hugh Smith Carpenter, 31 Oct., 1882, Josiah, son of Samuel Quiney, of Boston, Mass., b. 22 Aug., 1844; has been for many years an importer of decorative pottery.  
 95. II. JOHN McMATH, b. 10 May, 1816, d. 24 Nov., 1822.  
 96. III. LOUISA McMATH, b. 29 Apl., 1818, d. 8 Nov., 1818.  
 97. IV. CHARLES, res. Lodi, N. Y., b. 15 July, 1820, m. first, 15 Feb., 1849, Deborah, dau. of Michael Biggs, of Trumansburg, N. Y., b. 6 Nov., 1824, d. at Tekonsha, Mich., 22 Aug., 1849, m. second, 4 Jan., 1853, Margaret, dau. of James Hill, b. 1 June, 1829; had 3 ch., I. IDA DEBORAH, res. Ithaca, N. Y., b. 27 June, 1854; II. ELLA JANE, res. Ithaca, N. Y., b. 2 Aug., 1863; III. WM. CORNELIUS, b. 31 May, 1865.  
 98. V. OLIVER WM., b. 26 June, 1822, d. 22 Oct., 1881, at Alameda, Cal., m. 19 Aug., 1850, Mary J., dau. of Lyman Crutlenden, b. 8 Sep., 1825; her res. Alameda, Cal. He removed to the Pacific slope in 1849 where he operated in mines and grain, being associated with Mills, Freidlander & Co. While on a sick-bed in 1874 he elaborated a new system of book-keeping which he afterwards copyrighted and successfully introduced in

business houses in Cal.; had 1 ch., I. HARRIET ELLEN, b. Dec., 1854, d. 26 Mch., 1855.

99. VI. JANE DEMOTT, res. Worcester, Mass., b. 4 Apl., 1824, m. 17 Aug., 1844, George Robertson, of N. Y. C. b. 21 Apl., 1809, had 4 ch.,
- I. MARTHA JANE, res. Worcester, Mass., b. 18 July, 1844, m. 4 May, 1871, John F. Warner, of Jamesport, L. I., b. 6 June, 1840.
  - II. ELLEN HIMROD, res. 44 Morgan St., Buffalo, N. Y., b. 24 Mch., 1846, m. 20 Jan., 1869, John H. McIntosh, of Cayuga, N. Y., b. 26 Mch., 1845; have 2 ch., Charles H., b. 24 Dec., 1870, John Henry, b. 11 Dec., 1873.
  - III. CECILIA ELIZABETH, res. Corning, N. Y., b. 2 Dec., 1849, m. 10 Nov., 1875, Daniel F. Chandler, of Trumansburg, N. Y., b. 22 Nov., 1848; had 2 ch., William R., b. and d. 10 Feb., 1879, and George, b. and d. 29 June, 1880.
  - IV. WILLIAM PETER, res. 74 Clinton Place, N. Y. C., b. 1 Sep., 1853, m. 29 Dec., 1881, Mary Elizabeth Shea, dau. of Robert Montgomery, of N. Y. C., b. 5 June, 1857; their 3 ch., Robert Deemes, b. 13 Dec., 1882; Grace Marion, b. 2 May, 1885; Edith, b. 23 May, 1888.
  - V. JAMES OLIVER, b. 22 May, 1857, d. 15 Mch., 1858.
  - VI. GEORGE WHARTON, res. Worcester, Mass., b. 30 July, 1863.
100. VII. PETER, b. 23 Feb., 1834, d. 6 Apl., 1887, m. 9 Jan., 1861, Amaletta, dau. of Michael B. Ellison, of Lodi, N. Y., b. 28 Dec., 1836, her res. N. Y. C. For 10 years he suffered from asthma; among the many remedies he used he formulated one which he manufactured under the name of Himrod's Asthma Cure, and about 1873 he, in connection with Col. S. R. Pinkney, founded the "Himrod Manufacturing Co." at 1 Park Row, now at Fulton and Church Sts., N. Y. C.; had 1 ch., FRED, b. 4 Apl., 1866.
101. VIII. JAMES, b. 25 Jan., 1836, d. at Alameda, Cal., 13 Nov., 1878, m. at Sacramento, Cal., 27 Sep., 1870, Jane Eliza, dau. of David M. Cowdrey, of N. Y., b. 22 Oct., 1834, d. 26 June, 1886, from injuries received on 23rd, by being struck by a locomotive in attempting to cross the track on the way to church at Passaic, N. J. He enlisted 24 Aug., 1861, in Co. A, 40th Reg. N. Y. S. V., served with his regt. throughout the war participating in many engagements in South Carolina, Georgia, and before Richmond, Va., rose through the successive non-commissioned grades to be second lieut. ranking from 4 Apl., 1864 and first lieut. ranking from 16 Aug., 1864; had 2 ch.
- I. MABEL COWDREY, res. 290 Union St., Brooklyn, N. Y., b. 18 Dec., 1871.
  - II. HUGH CARPENTER, res. 290 Union St., Brooklyn, N. Y., b. 10 Aug., 1874.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

David W. Himrod (53) had 8 ch.

102. I. WILLIAM GIBSON, res. Philadelphia, Pa., b. 26 May, 1834, m. *first*, May, 1857, Elsie A. Newkirk, of Musquaka, Iowa, b. 1840 d. 8 July, 1869; m. *second*, 29 Mch., 1871, Electa Ann, dau. of Lewis S. Smith, of Cazenovia, N. Y., had 4 ch.
- I. MARY GRACE, b. 3 Aug., 1858, m. 3 Sep., 1878, William Emerson Watkins, of Hyde Park, Pa., b. 14 Dec., 1856.
  - II. STELLA JOSEPHINE P., b. 4 June, 1861, m. 4 Apl., 1886, Daniel R. Watkins; their 1 ch., Thomas Bronson, b. 1886.
  - III. SARAH MARIA, b. and d. 1865.
  - IV. ELIZABETH CHRISTINE, b. 14 Feb., 1868.
103. II. LOINE LAMAR, res. Rochester, N. Y., b. 3 Mch., 1836, m. 19 Sep., 1861, Caroline B., dau. of Philemon Thompson, of Trumansburg, N. Y., b. 2 Apl., 1842; had 2 ch.
- I. PHILEMON H., b. 6 Dec., 1863, d. 17 Apl., 1876.
  - II. ANNA BELLE, res. Rochester, N. Y., b. 5 Dec., 1865, m. 21 Mch., 1889, Charles E. Chapman.
104. III. EDWARD McLALLEN, b. 1 Oct., 1837, d. at Trumansburg, N. Y., 18 May, 1887; Editor of the Trumansburg News, City Editor of the Daily Democrat, Scranton, Pa., and was afterwards on the staff of the Scranton Morning Republican; was an officer of the Penn. State Senate 1877-8, and altogether was a man highly esteemed for his ability in his profession and for his many sterling qualities of heart.

105. IV. PETER SUTPHEN, b. 10 June, 1839, d. 5 June, 1840.  
 106. V. SARAH ELIZABETH, b. 19 June, 1843, d. 1 Feb., 1844.  
 107. VI. SARAH MARIA, b. 19 Mch., 1847, d. 6 Feb., 1859.  
 108. VII. LAURA TAYLOR, b. 20 Sep., 1849, d. 10 Oct., 1849.  
 109. VIII. CHRISTINE, res. Philadelphia, Pa., b. 11 Mch., 1859, m. 22 Aug., 1822, Conway P. H. Day, b. 28 June, 1838, Bristol, Eng'd, d. 10 July, 1889, at Trumansburg, N. Y.; have 3 ch.,  
     I. MARJORIE, b. 25 Aug., 1883.  
     II. HAIGHTON HIMROD, b. Dec., 1884.  
     III. STELLA HIMROD, b. 23 Dec., 1886.

## JOHANN GOTTFRIED MOELICH (B).

(Godfrey Melick, of Warren Co., N. J., and His Descendants.)

1. JOHANN GOTTFRIED MOELICH was the youngest son of Johann Wilhelm (XXVI) and Anna Catherine, of Bendorf on the Rhine, Germany, where he was born in 1724, and baptised in the Evangelical Head-Church by the Rev. Joh. Georg Schmidt, the baptismal certificate reading: "The 14th of July, 1724, to Joh. Wilhelm Mölich a son was born and baptized on the following Sunday; his witnesses of baptism were Gottfried Knebel, a child of a citizen of this place, but who migrated soon afterward; Johann Anthon Kirberger, Master Hans Wilhelm Kirberger's son, Master Johann Banthel's eldest daughter Cathrina and has been given to him the name Johann Gottfried." (See p. 71.) The father of godmother Cathrine Banthels had been the pastor of the Evangelical Head-Church and the predecessor of the Rev. Johannes Reusch, who was installed in 1697. Godfrey Melick, as he was known in America, emigrated from Germany in 1735 with Johannes (A) landing at Philadelphia, 29 May, from ship Mercury. He remained a member of Johannes family until 1747, when he removed to Greenwich Tp., Sussex now Warren Co., N. J., where he permanently settled on land that had been purchased for him during his minority and where he d. 11 Sep., 1776. He married 20 May, 1748, Margaret, dau. of Christian Falkenberger b. 2 Feb., 1733, d. 26 Sep., 1799. After his death his widow m. a Tomer by whom one son John who d. at Orangeville, Columbia Co., Pa., about 1840, leaving a widow Hester. (See pp. 25, 50, 74, 561.)

## SECOND GENERATION (B).

Godfrey Melick (1) had 10 ch.

2. I. GODFREY, b. 24 Mch., 1749, d. 23 Jan., 1777, m. and had one son, SAMUEL WILLET.  
 3. II. CHRISTOPHER, b. 1 Dec., 1750, d. 15 Feb., 1832, m. Mary, dau. of Matthias Shipman, b. 22 Sep., 1754, d. 11 Feb., 1836, both bur. in St. James Luth. Ch. yd., Philipsburg, N. J. Matthias Shipman came from Saybrook, Conn., and settled in Lopatcong tp., Warren Co., N. J., his homestead being now (1888) occupied by his gr.-grandson William; during our Revolution he was Col. of 1st Sussex regt. For his 12 ch. see p. 671.  
 4. III. WILLIAM, b. 9 Mch., 1753, d. 27 Apl., 1808, m. Zurliah Kent, d. 6 May, 1847; at outset of Revolution he was a loyalist and entered the British army in which he served as sergeant throughout the war, receiving a bullet in the shoulder which he carried until his death. In 1783 he settled at St. John, N. B., Can., where he became prominent in business and social circles, and at his death owned the most extensive tannery in the city. (See Chap. XXXVI). For his 8 ch. see p. 672.



5. IV. JACOB, b. 3 Jan., 1755, d. 20 Feb., 1832, buried in Briar Creek Cemetery in Columbia Co., Pa.; m. 30 July, 1781, Sarah Laycock, b. 23 May, 1760, d. 17 Mar., 1812. He owned and lived on a farm near Bloomsburg, Hunterdon Co., N. J., until Feb., 1811, when he purchased from the heirs of John Fringle 314 acres near Bloomsburg, Col. Co., Pa., paying therefor \$2990, upon which he lived till his death. For his 10 ch. see p. 672.
6. V. MARY MARGARET, b. 20 Aug., 1757, d. 25 Feb., 1822, m. John Martin, youngest son of Martin Huishizer, who emigrated from Germany between 1750 and 1760, b. 18 Jan., 1747, d. 9 Apl., 1810; had ch., I. CATHARINE, b. 14 Sept., 1775, d. 17 March, 1853, m. Samuel Drake; II. GODFREY, b. 9 June, 1778, d. 3 March, 1858, m. Margaret Hix; III. MARTIN, b. 2 Feb., 1781, d. 19 Jan., 1862, m. Anna C. Sharp; IV. MARGARET, b. 6 Dec., 1783, d. 27 May, 1866, m. William Smith; V. WILLIAM, b. 23 Sept., 1786, d. 16 Dec., 1852, m. Hester Heller; VI. HANNAH, b. 20 March, 1789, d. 17 Feb., 1865, m. John Duckworth; VII. JOHN, b. 24 Jan., 1792, dec; VIII. MARY, b. 16 Apl., 1794, d. 17 Sept., 1827, m. Peter Tinsman; IX. DANIEL, b. 15 Feb., 1797, d. 2 Dec., 1881, m. Margaret Carpenter, he was a prominent citizen of Warren Co., and an elder of Greenwich Pres. Ch., his son Doctor P. F. Hulshizer, is now resident physician, at Stewartsville, in that Co.; X. ANDREW, b. 29 Jan., 1800, d. 12 Apl., 1883, m. Lena Sharp; XI. JAMES, b. 22 March, 1803, d. 10 Oct., 1879, m. Lydia Austen.
7. VI. HENRY, twin, b. 3 Dec., 1751, d. 9 Apl., 1859, m. 5 Apl., 1781, Rebecca, dau. of James Stewart, b. 10 March, 1762, d. 27 Jan., 1835. Both bur. in St. James' Luth. Chyd., Phillipsburg, N. J. For his 11 ch. see p. 673.
8. VII. ANDREW, twin, b. 3 Dec., 1759, d. 18 Nov., 1843, m. 11 Dec., 1785, in St. James Luth. Ch. at Phillipsburg, N. J., Catharine Crumline, b. 1 Dec., 1764, d. 11 July, 1839. He lived and died in the forks of Big and Little Fishing creeks near Bloomsburg, Col. Co., Penna. For his 8 ch. see p. 673.
9. VIII. JOHN, b. 15 April, 1762, d. 6 May, 1856, m. Mary, dau. of Joseph Beck, b. in Phila., 31 Jan., 1777, d. 19 April, 1857. In 1783 he removed with William (4) to St. John, N. B., though not forced to do so, as had been his loyalist brother. For his 9 ch. see p. 674.
10. IX. CATHARINE, b. 17 Jan., 1765, d. 29 Jan., 1846, m. 5 Sept., 1784, Philip Fine, b. 18 April, 1763, d. 14 Aug., 1834; had ch., I. JOHN, b. 22 Aug., 1785; II. WILLIAM, b. 7 Sept., 1787; III. PHILIP, IV. GODFREY, b. 8 June, 1792, d. 5 June, 1819; V. MARGARET, VI. MARIA, b. 6 June, 1796; VII. JACOB, b. 26 Aug., 1800; VIII. CHRISTOPHER, b. 15 Aug., 1803. All their children bap. in St. James Luth. Ch., Phillipsburg, N. J. John Fine was an elder in that church.

## THIRD GENERATION (B).

Christopher Melick (3) had 12 ch.

11. I. GODFREY, b. 2 May, 1774.
12. II. WILLIAM, b. 13 Dec., 1775, d. 24 Feb., 1841, unm., bur. in St. James Luth. chyd., Phillipsburg, N. J.
13. III. MATTHIAS, b. 6 June, 1778, d. 5 March, 1819, bur. in St. James Luth. chyd., Phillipsburg, N. J.; m. 22 May, 1806, Hannah, dau. of Andrew Malick (A 4); had ch., I. CATHARINE, b. 7 Apl., 1809, II. MARGARETTA S., b. 27 June, 1811.
14. IV. MARGARET, b. 6 June, 1780.
15. V. JACOB, b. 17 July, 1782, d. 1 April, 1819, bur. in St. James Luth. chyd., Phillipsburg, N. J.; m. Mary, dau. of Jacob Sharp.
16. VI. JOHN, b. 5 Nov., 1784, d. 30 July, 1855, unm., in consequence of falling from a load of hay, bur. in St. James Luth. chyd., Phillipsburg, N. J.
17. VII. SARAH, b. 30 Jan., 1787, m. 16 Feb., 1809, John, son of Andrew (A 4)
18. VIII. CHRISTOPHER, b. 14 May, 1789, d. in infancy.
19. IX. MARY, twin, b. 14 May, 1789.
20. X. SAMUEL, b. 13 Apl., 1793, d. 11 May, 1832, m. 3 Jan., 1816, Sarah Hunt, b. 18 June, 1798, d. 9 Jan., 1878. For his 8 ch. see p. 675.
21. XI. ELIZABETH, b. 20 Apl., 1796.
22. XII. ISAAC, b. 11 Dec., 1798, d. 26 Apl., 1863, bur. in St. James' Luth. Chyd., Phillipsburg, N. J.

## THIRD GENERATION (B).

William Melick (4) had 7 ch.

23. I. MARGARET, b. 3 May, 1794, d. 24 Mch., 1860, at Loch Lomond, Co. of St. John, Canada, m. 12 Dec., 1811, John Jordan, b. 28 Mch., 1790, d. 24 Feb., 1863, at Fredericton, N. B., Can.; for 18 years he represented his city and co. in the legislature. For their 11 ch. see p. 675.
24. II. SARAH, b. 3 May, 1795, d. 7 Dec., 1845, m. 10 Aug., 1816, Nathan Reed, a sail-maker, at Woolwich, Maine, b. 29 Sep., 1791, d. at sea. For their 4 ch., see p. 676.
25. III. DAVID, b. 1797, d. in infancy.
26. IV. WILLIAM GODFREY, b. 1799, d. 6 Aug., 1834, unm.
27. V. ELIZABETH, b. 1801, d. 7 Aug., 1883, unm.
28. VI. RACHEL JANE, b. 1803, d. Oct., 1843, m. James Farler, had 3 ch., I. ANNIE, m. George Squires; II. MELICK, m. Margaret Sentell; III. JAMES, m. Annie DeForest.
29. VII. MARY, b. 26 Jan., 1806, d. Nov., 1884, m. Thomas Plummer, had 4 ch.
  - I. MARY C., dec., m. William Plummer, of N. Y., and had 3 sons.
  - II. SOPHIA, d. May, 1886, m. Israel Hawes, had 2 ch.
  - III. THOMAS, m. Rhena Braten, had one ch.; residence in N. Y.
  - IV. ALICE, m. James Sinclair, had one ch.
30. VII. HULDAH, b. 15 May, 1808, d. 13 Jan., 1887, m. John Hay, of St. John, N. B., Canada, b. 23 May, 1804, d. 30 March, 1860; had ch.; I. CECILIA A., res. St. John, N. B.; II. MARIA V., res. St. John, N. B.; III. ALBERT S., res. St. John, N. B., jeweller, m. Jennie K., dau. of Leonard Weeks, their ch., *Ella A., Charles L., Morton M.*, dec., and *Clara C.*; IV. GEORGE A. F., res. French Village, N. B., farmer, m. Emma J. Fowler; their ch., *Alberta M.*, dec., *Louis D.*, and *Grace C.*; V. JOHN M., res. St. John, N. B., jeweller, m. Frances M., dau. of John S. Kowe; VI. GEORGE F., dec.

## THIRD GENERATION (B.)

Jacob Melick (5) had 10 ch.

31. I. JACOB, b. 19 Nov., 1781, d. 21 Nov., 1847, m. 10 Oct., 1811, Lydia, dau. of Jesse Barber, b. 13 Oct., 1794, d. 12 April, 1879. Lived at New Village, N. J. For 15 ch see p. 676.
32. II. ELIZABETH, b. 11 Dec., 1783, d. 22 Dec., 1858, at Light Street, Penna., unm.
33. III. JOHN, b. 9 Apl., 1786, d. 7 Feb., 1827, m. Hannah, dau. of Peter Van Buskirk, b. 12 May, 1790, d. in Ohio 17 Dec., 1876, had 4 ch.
  1. MARTHA MATILDA, res. Shenandoah, Richland Co., O., b. 31 Jan., 1815, m. 27 Dec., 1832, Jacob Creveling, b. 3 Nov., 1811, d. Oct., 1878; had 7 ch., but 2 of whom matured, viz: *William F.*, b. 5 Jan., 1838, d. Oct., 1876, m. 1863, Harriet Miller; and *Andrew W.*, b. 11 Jan., 1841, m. Zarada Burns.
  - II. ROSETTA, b. 21 Sep., 1822, d. 9 Jan., 1861, m. 1843, John Oman, b. 1818, d. June, 1884; their 7 ch., *Isaiah*, d. in infancy, *Alfred, Alexander, William, Oscar, Mary Jane*, res. Shiloh, O., m. Thomas Hunter, and *John S.*
  - III. JANE, d. in infancy.
  - IV. JACOB, b. 1825, d. 1858, m. Sarah Ann Swan; their 3 ch., *Martha*, who m. James McCoy, *Mary Ella* and *Sarah Ann*, who m. Laman Hocken, and lives at Pern, Nehama Co., Neb.
34. IV. MARGARET, b. 29 Nov. 1788, d. at Salona, Pa., 1832, m. George Gilbert; had 3 ch., I. JACOB, II. SARAH, III. ELIZABETH.
35. V. MARY, b. 7 Feb., 1791, m. 24 Aug., 1815, Jonathan Agler; no ch.
36. VI. CATHERINE, b. 24 May, 1793, d. 25 Feb., 1818, m. Samuel Bright, and left one son.
37. VII. REBECCA, b. 23 Apl., 1795, d. 21 Nov., 1815, m. 29 Dec., 1814, William, son of Abn. Willet; no ch.
38. VIII. HENRY, b. 13 July, 1797, d. 25 Oct., 1798.
39. IX. WILLIAM, b. 2 Sept., 1799, d. 23 Nov., 1829, unm.
40. X. DANIEL, b. 28 Nov., 1801, d. 2 Aug., 1866, m. 13 Feb., 1823, *first*, Mary Magdaline, dau. of Philip Weller, b. 3 Oct., 1802, d. 30 Aug., 1847; m. *second*, 17 Oct., 1848, Margaret, dau. of Josiah McClure, b. 17 June, 1804. For his 9 ch. see p. 677.

## CHILDREN OF HENRY AND ANDREW MELICK (TWINS). 673

### THIRD GENERATION (B).

Henry Melick (7) had ch.

41. I. JAMES, b. 14 Aug., 1781, d. 18 Oct., 1848, m. Rebecca Catharine Smith, b. 17 Sep., 1782, d. 3 Aug., 1873; bur. in St. James' Luth. Ch. yd., Phillipsburg, N. J. For his 7 ch. see p. 678.
42. II. WILLIAM, b. 18 May, 1783, d. 18 Mch., 1787.
43. III. JOHN, b. 16 Aug., 1785, d. 4 Nov., 1815; bur. in St. James' Ch. yd.: m. Elizabeth Huselton; had 3 ch., I. HANNAH; II. HENRY; III. JANE.
44. IV. GODFREY, b. 10 Dec., 1787, d. 3 Mch., 1870, m. Sarah, dau. of Abraham Hance, b. 26 Jan., 1797, d. 3 Dec., 1865; had 8 ch.
  - I. ABRAHAM, res. Stewartsville, Warren Co., N. J., b. 28 Mch., 1818, m. Elmira, dau. of John Snyder.
  - II. MARY, res. Stewartsville, b. 7 Aug., 1820, unm.
  - III. JAMES H., res. Stewartsville, b. 22 May, 1822, m. Ann, dau. of Spencer Carter.
  - IV. MARGARET, b. 1824, d. 1851.
  - V. HENRY H., b. 24 Mch., d. in 1865, after serving in Civil War, m. Mary Knaup, her res. Easton, Pa.
  - VI. PETER M., res. Newark, N. J., b. 19 Oct., 1830, m. Mary E. Smith.
  - VII. JOHN H., res. Stewartsville, N. J., b. 28 Aug., 1833, m. Elizabeth, dau. of Basil Linn.
- VIII. SARAH A., res. Stewartsville, N. J., b. 26 Jan., 1837, m. Henry Frey.
45. V. JACOB, b. 23 Dec., 1789, d. 1 Apr., 1881, m. Mary Sign, b. 10 Oct., 1813; had 4 ch., I. REBECCA; II. JOHN; III. MARY; IV. WILLIAM.
46. VI. WILLIAM S., b. 23 March, 1792, d. 14 Jan., 1834, m. Hannah Sharp, b. in March, 1797, d. 23 April, 1868; both bur. in St. James' Luth. chyd.; had ch., I. JOHN, II. CHRISTOPHER, III. JAMES, IV. CATHARINE.
47. VII. REBECCA, b. 11 Aug., 1794, m. Peter Tinsman; had 1 ch., b. 10 July, 1816, d. in infancy.
48. VIII. MARGARET, b. 24 Dec., 1797, m. John Mutchler; had ch., I. GEORGE, b. 3 April, 1818, d. in March, 1869; II. HENRY M., b. in Nov., 1819; III. ELEANOR, b. 31 Dec., 1821, d. 22 Feb., 1886; IV. VALENTINE, b. 28 Feb., 1823; V. JACOB, b. 8 May, 1825; VI. JOHN, b. 4 April, 1827; VII. REBECCA JANE, b. in Feb., 1829, m. G. W. Clindum; VIII. WILLIAM, res. Easton, Pa., b. 21 Dec., 1831; IX. JAMES, b. 8 May, 1833, d. in Jan., 1887; X. GODFREY, b. 4 May, 1836, dec.
49. IX. JANE, b. 28 March, 1799, m. William Person; had ch., I. CHRISTIANNE, II. JACOB, III. REBECCA, IV. HENRY, V. CHARLOTTE, VI. HUGH, VII. JOSEPHINE.
50. X. SARAH, b. 20 Oct., 1802, m. Peter Bloom; had ch., I. WILLIAM, II. REBECCA, III. ABRAHAM, IV. CATHARINE, V. JOHN, VI. ERVIN.
51. XI. ELEANOR, b. 29 Oct., 1804, m. William White, now living near Columbus, O.

### THIRD GENERATION (B).

Andrew Melick (8) had 8 ch.

52. I. ELIZABETH, b. 8 Aug., 1786, d. 6 Apr., 1870, m. in 1803, Joseph Crawford, b. in 1778; d. 27 Sept., 1844; had ch. I. CATHARINE, b. 20 Dec., 1804; II. EDMOND, b. 3 Oct., 1806; III. ANDREW, b. 22 Feb., 1809; IV. JOHN, b. 11 Feb., 1811; V. MARY, b. 3 Dec., 1813; VI. HANNAH, b. 27 July, 1815; VII. JOSEPH, b. 25 Sept., 1818, res. Orangeville, Columbia Co., Pa., m. Catharine, dau. of Harman Labaw, b. 22 June, 1822, d. 19 June, 1875, had ch., *Clinton, Elizabeth, John, Harmon, William, Alfred, Joseph, Rebecca and Mary*; VIII. CATHARINE, J., b. 8 Aug., 1821; IX. ELIZABETH, b. 15 July, 1824; X. STEPHEN, b. 9 May, 1827; XI. SARAH ANN, b. 22 March, 1830.
53. II. JOHN, b. 13 Mch., 1778, d. 31 Aug., 1847, m. Sarah Conner, b. 6 June, 1791, d. 23 Aug., 1843; had 2 ch.
  - I. ANDREW, b. Mar., 1815, d. Nov., 1865, m. Feb., 1833, Sarah White; their 7 ch., *John; Etisha; Henry*, res. Camba, Mt. Pleasant, Pa., m. 1866, Louisa Krouse and has 3 ch., Caroline, Esther and Rose; *Andrew*, b. 1849, d. in infancy; *David W.*; *Peter*, res. Camba, m. Anna Howell



and has 6 ch., Henry, Charles, Willets, Peter, John and Esther; *Margaret*, res. Orangeville, Pa., m. Henry Melick, and has 1 ch., Laura Esther.

- II. ESTHER ANN, res. Bloomsburg, Col. Co., Pa., b. 6 June, 1817, m. David Stroup, b. 18 July, 1809, d. 18 Aug., 1844; no ch.
54. III. ANDREW, b. 28 Mch., 1790, d. 11 Mch., 1868, m. 5 Jan., 1816, Sarah Besht, b. 26 Sep., 1794, d. 3 Aug., 1851. For his 7 ch. see p. 679.
55. IV. WILLIAM, b. 1815, d. Nov., 1885, unm.
56. V. STEPHEN, b. 27 May, 1800, d. 30 Apl., 1857, m. 30 Apl., 1830, Sarah, dau. of Peter Melick, b. 16 Nov., 1802, d. 10 Feb., 1848; lived and died in Luzerne Co., Pa. For his 7 ch. see p. 679.
57. VI. CATHARINE, b. 25 Dec., 1802, d. 5 Oct., 1865, m. 1 May, 1824, John Hiester Vanderslice, b. 9 Aug, 1805, d. 29 Oct., 1874; had ch., I. REBECCA ANN, b. in Dec., 1824, m. in Jan., 1851, Jackson Hower, b. in June, 1828, res. Bloomsburg, Col. Co., Pa.; II. HENRY WILLIAM, res. Bloomsburg, Col. Co., Pa.; II. TACY ELIZABETH, b. 21 Mch., 1835, m. 10 Feb., 1857, John M. White, res. Light St., Col. Co., Pa., b. 30 Dec., 1833; have 3 boys and 2 girls, all living; IV. HANNAH HELLENA, m. James M. Salmon, res. Bangor, Northampton Co., Pa.; V. JOHN HEISTER, b. 23 Aug., 1840, m. 2 July, 1862, Eliza Jane White, b. 7 Mch, 1841, res. Milan, Rock Island Co., Ill.; VI. SARAH SUSANNA; VII. HARRIET M., b. 16 July, 1854, d. 22 Apl., 1883.
58. VII. GODFREY, b. 31 Dec., 1805, d. Feb., 1878, m. *first*, 1835, Susan, dau. of Harmon Kline, m. *second*, 1850, Caroline Jacoby, b. 1 April, 1825, d. 18 Mar., 1885. For his 8 ch. see p. 680.
59. VIII. HENRY, b. 11 Nov., 1808, in Col. Co., Pa., d. 9 July, 1877, in Richland Co., O., to which place he removed in 1837, m. 12 Apr., 1832, Christiane, dau. of Wm. Roseberry; had 1 ch.
- I. ANDREW, res. Plymouth, Richland Co., O., b. 11 Nov., 1838, m. 12 Nov., 1850, Frances Elizabeth, dau. of Ephraim Hart. Andrew Melick served in Civil war in 45th Reg. O. V. I. from 22 Aug., 1862, to 3 July, 1865; has 9 ch., *Henry Ephraim*, b. 9 Nov., 1870; *Hiland Llewellyn*, b. 14 Dec., 1871; *Nettie*, b. 28 Jan., 1873; *Philip Hayes*, b. 8 Oct., 1875; *Andrew Willard*, b. 29 Aug., 1877; *Jason Forster*, b. 22 Feb., 1879; *Lois Idell*, b. 1 Sept., 1880; *Mary Elsie*, b. 3 Oct., 1882; *Abram Lloyd*, b. 26 Dec., 1883; *Daisy Myrtle*, b. 26 Jan., 1886.

### THIRD GENERATION (B.)

John Melick (g) had 9 ch.

60. I. WILLIAM BECK, b. 18 June, 1794, d. 21 June, 1832, m. Mary Vail, b. about 1800, d. 17 Aug., 1827, leaving 1 son, I. WILLIAM NAGLE.
61. II. HENRY, res. St. John, N. B., Canada, b. 26 Jan., 1796, m. Isabella, dau. of Lawrence Forster, b. 6 June, 1800, d. 27 July, 1884; no ch.
62. III. JANE, b. 14 Mch., 1798, d. 26 Jan., 1883, m. Wm. Leavitt, merchant of St. John, N. B., Can., b. 19 Mch., 1790, d. 2 June, 1836, had 6 ch.
- I. JOHN, d. 1879, unm.
- II. JANE CAROLINE, res. 7 Dorchester St., St. John, N. B., Can.
- III. MARY GRANDON, res. 7 Dorchester St., St. John, N. B., Can., m. *first* Alfred L. Busly, d. 1862, by whom 2 ch., *Wm. Leavitt*, and *Mary T.*; m. *second* Wm. Hogg, of Grangemouth, Scotland, d. 1876, by whom no ch.
- IV. WILLIAM HENRY, res. 16 Craig-y-don Parade, Llandudno, N. Wales, b. 6 June, 1829; m. *first* Annie Gorst, dau. of Philip Crellin, of Liverpool, Eng., dec., by whom 2 ch., *Annie Jane*, res. 45 Osborne Road, The Brook, Liverpool, Eng., b. 10 Oct., 1854, m. George John Hancock; *Margaret Alice*, b. 18 May, 1856, unm; Wm. Henry Leavitt, m. *second*, 10 Feb., 1868, on the Island of Tobago, Elizabeth, dau. of Wm. Wanstall, by whom 4 ch., *Mary Elizabeth*, b. 13 July, 1869; *Maud Peabody*, b. 3 Feb., 1876; *Blanche Eleanor Louise*, b. 23 Feb., 1880; *Jessie*, b. 30 July, 1882.
- V. JAMES HAY, res. 88 Myrtle St., Liverpool, G. B., m. 1870, Isabella McAuley, had 3 ch., *Barbara*, *James* and *Jane*, all dec.
- VI. CLARENCE, res. 7 Dorchester St., St. John, N. B., Can.

## CH. OF HENRY FOTHERBY, SAMUEL MELICK, J. JORDAN. 675

63. IV. JOHN, b. 13 Apr., 1800, d. 31 Aug., 1870, m. Anne Durland.
64. V. JAMES GODFREY, b. 24 May, 1802, d. 8 May, 1885, m. *first*, a dau. of Daniel Smith, of St. John, N. B., who d. in childbirth, the infant surviving but two days; m. *second*, 15 Feb., 1834, Caroline M., dau. of William Fairweather, of Millstream, N. B., b. 17 Aug., 1807, d. 11 Feb., 1888. James Godfrey Melick was a jeweler at St. John, N. B., for upwards of 40 years; retiring from business in 1864, he purchased a residence at Hampton, N. B., where he resided until his death. For his 7 ch. see p. 680.
65. VI. CHARLES JOSEPH, b. 16 Nov., 1806, d. 19 May, 1873, m. Margaret, dau. of Lawrence Foster, b. 2 Sept., 1805, d. in Nov., 1866.
66. VII. GEORGE, b. 13 Sept., 1813, d. 14 Oct., 1820.
67. VIII. MARY ANN, b. 5 Sept., 1816, m. Henry Fotherby, of Wakefield, Yorkshire, Eng., merchant, b. 12 Dec., 1814, d. 15 Aug., 1866; had 4 ch., I. HENRY, d. in Yorkshire, Eng., 10 Jan., 1881; II. WILLIAM LEAVITT, d. in infancy; III. ELIZA PRIESTLEY, unm.; IV. MARY, unm.
68. IX. MARGARET SOPHIA, b. 14 Mch., 1820, d. 2 Aug., 1820.

### FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

Samuel Melick (20) had 8 ch.

69. I. WILLIAM HUGHES, b. 21 Dec., 1816, d. 20 Mch., 1877, m. 15 Mch., 1838, Mary, dau. of John Coe, of Haverstraw, N. Y., b. 6 Jan., 1817. For his 5 ch. see p. 680.
70. II. JOHN HUGHES, b. 22 June, 1818, d. 10 Oct., 1855, at Clayton City, Iowa, m. 5 Apl., 1841, Rebecca J. Posten, b. 20 Nov., 1820, d. 13 Feb., 1883 at Washington, N. J. For his 8 ch. see p. 681.
71. III. MATTHIAS, b. 1 June, 1820, d. 29 Oct., 1859.
72. IV. MARY ELIZABETH, b. 9 Aug., 1822, d. 13 Sep., 1827.
73. V. CHRISTOPHER, b. 5 Oct., 1824, d. 10 Nov., 1827.
74. VI. MARTHA MOORE, b. 9 Feb., 1827, m. 18 Mch., 1852, to the Rev. Joshua H. Turner, b. 14 May, 1820, d. 19 Feb., 1867; res. Wilmington, Del.; had ch., I. ALTHEA, b. 6 June, 1853, m. 2 July, 1873, to H. A. Bradfield, res. Bristol, Pa.; had ch., *Martha M.*, b. 6 Feb., 1875; *Edna*, b. 16 Jan., 1881; II. SARAH ELIZABETH, b. Feb. 3, 1857, d. 18 July, 1859; III. ELEANOR MYERS, b. 21 Oct., 1859, m. 30 June, 1887, Fred. Willmont Fenn; res. Wilmington, Del.
75. VII. SAMUEL, res. Stroudsburg, Pa., b. 8 Feb., 1829, m. 9 June, 1851, Elizabeth Phillips; for many years he was leading jeweller at Newburg, N. Y., from which place he removed in 1889; had 10 ch., I. MARY ELLA, b. 31 Aug., 1852; II. JOHN HUGHES, b. 15 Aug., 1854; III. WILLIAM M., b. 4 Sep., 1856, d. 5 Nov., 1861; IV. LEWIS P., b. 15 Oct., 1858; V. MARTHA J., b. 6 Aug., 1860; VI. EDWARD P., b. 16 Mch., 1863; VII. HENRY, b. 28 Mch., 1865, d. 8 Mch., 1872; VIII. NETTIE HUNT, b. 28 Oct., 1867, d. 4 Sep., 1871; IX. ANNA P., b. 11 Dec., 1863, d. 30 July, 1875; X. SAMUEL D., b. 8 Dec., 1872.
76. VIII. JOSEPH, b. 15 Apl., 1831, d. 8 Sep., 1832.

### FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

John and Margaret (Melick) Jordan (23) had 11 ch.

77. I. JANE, b. 27 Oct., 1812, d. May, 1838, m. in 1834, Robert Roberts, of St. Andrews, N. B., Canada, had 2 ch., I. ROBERT J., res. N. Y. City, and II. JANE J., who m. Nathaniel Upham, of Upham Parish, Kings Co., Can.
78. II. SARAH ANN, b. 28 Apr., 1814, d. in infancy.
79. III. WILLIAM M., res. Westfield, Kings Co., N. B., b. 29 Mar., 1816, m. 3 June, 1844.
80. IV. JAMES, m. *first* in 1844, Sarah Copperthwaite, of Woodstock, Can., by whom 3 ch. I. WM. F., res. Montreal, Can.; II. ELIZABETH, m. C. D. Trueman, merchant, of St. John's, N. B., and III. HENRIETTA, res. Brooklyn, N. Y., m. Henry Jordan; James (80) m. *second*, Charlotte Daniel, of St. John, N. B., by whom one dau. unm.
81. V. JOHN, m. Mary Alice Jordan, had 4 ch. I. ARTHUR, who was recently drowned; II. ELLA LE BARON; III. MARGARET and IV. BURPIE B.

## 676 CH. OF NATHAN REED, JACOB MELICK & T. WRIGHT.

82. VI. MARY B., res. St. John's, Newfoundland, unm.
83. VII. MARGARET ANN, m. Edward Sentell, res. Vancouver, British Col., had 10 ch. I. MARGARET, m. Chas. M. Fowler, of Upham, Can.; II. MARY; III. EPHRAIM; IV. EDWARD, dec.; V. ALFRED; VI. FREDERICK; VII. SOPHIA, m. Mr. Cameron, of Queens Co., N. B.; VIII. FLORENCE. IX. CHARLOTTE; X. GEORGE.
84. VIII. SARAH ELIZABETH, m. Rev. George S. Milligan, Supt. of Schools, at St. John's, Newfoundland, no ch.
85. IX. GEORGE D., b. 1829, removed to California, 1860, has not been heard from in 7 years.
86. X. CHARLOTTE, R. B., res. Houlton, Maine, m. B. O. Hatheway, no ch.
87. XI. CAROLINE A., d. uam.
88. XII. THOMAS P. res. Loch Lomond, Co. of St. John, Can., m. *first* Isabella Forbes, of Brooklyn, N. Y., by whom 2 ch.; m. *second* Sarah Brown, of the Parish of Simonds, Co. of St. John, Can., by whom 3 ch.

### FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

Nathan and Sarah (Melick) Reed (24) had 4 ch.

89. I. JAMES LOWELL, res. Westmoreland Road, St. John, N. B., Canada, b. 9 Aug., 1817, m. Eliza Good, has several ch.
90. II. ELIZA JANE, res. Bath, Maine, b. 30 Sept., 1819, m. 29 Sept., 1840, George D. Dunham, b. 13 June, 1813, d. 7 Jan., 1876, had 7 ch.; I WM. G., d. in infancy; II. JOHN M., b. in 1843, m. and has 1 ch.; III. DOUGLAS A., b. in 1845, m. has 2 ch.; IV. JAMES L., b. in 1848, d. 1863; V. WM. H., b. 1850, d. 1856; VI. ANNIE E.; VII. EMILY C., d. in infancy.
91. III. WILLIAM GODFREY M., res. 805 Bedford Ave., Brooklyn, L. I., b. 23 Mch., 1822, m. 8 June, 1857, Phoebe Elizabeth, dau. of Wm. Simonson, of Hempstead, L. I., had 9 ch.
  - I. WILLIAM E., b. 6 April, 1852; II. ELLA, b. 11 May, 1855, m. Geo. T. Crutlesden; III. OSCAR, b. 5 Dec., 1857; IV. ANNIE, 8 Jan., m. Caspar Feld; V. JENNIE W., b. 10 Sept., 1863, d. in infancy; VI. MINNIE M., b. 10 Oct., 1864; VII. LIZZIE D., b. 16 Nov., 1867, d. in infancy; VIII. MAGGIE B., b. 1 Feb., 1870; IX. LILIAN D., b. 1872 d. 1887.
92. IV. CHARLES HENRY, b. 5 Oct., 1824; was a mate of a sailing vessel from Boston; he is supposed to have been drowned at sea, unm.

### FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

Jacob Melick (31) had 15 ch.

93. I. SARAH, b. 22 Jan., 1812, m. Jerome Hartpence.
94. II. ELIZABETH, b. 22 Oct., 1813, d. 17 Mar., 1876, m. 12 Oct., 1836, Thomas Wright; had 8 ch.
  - I. ANNA, b. Dec., 1838, d. 10 Jan., 1859.
  - II. EMMA, res. Staunton, Va., b. 5 Mar., 1840.
- III. WILLIAM M., b. 1 Dec., 1841, d. 27 Mar., 1886, m. in 1865, Cordelia Caldwell; has 1 ch., Anna, res. 41 Harrison Ave., Brooklyn, N. Y., b. 1865, m. 1888, Theodore A. Newlan.
- IV. ASHER, b. 23 May, 1843, dec.; m. Emma Rice.
- V. EDWIN, res. Staunton, Va., b. 8 July, 1845, m. 16 Feb., 1867, Charlotte Veer Drury, b. Isle of Monserrat, W. I.; had 6 ch., Thomas V. and Clara A., d. in infancy; Eloisa, b. 30 Sept., 1873; George S., b. 9 Feb., 1876; Edwin C., b. 16 Mar., 1879; Chas. D., b. 9 Mar., 1882.
- VI. MARY, b. 2 Dec., 1847, d. in infancy.
- VII. GEORGE H., res. 500 Cambria St., Phila., Pa., b. 4 Dec., 1849.
- VIII. LYDIA, b. 24 Aug., 1857, d. in infancy.
95. III. WILLIAM B., b. 6 April, 1815, d. 5 April, 1885, at Albany, N. Y., m. 14 July, 1842, Margaret Matilda Sharp, b. 8 Jan., 1821, d. 30 March, 1885, For his 4 ch see p. 681.
96. IV. JOANNA, b. 3 June, 1817, m. 18 Oct., 1838, William King Hulshizer, of Asbury, Hunterdon Co., N. J., b. 7 July, 1812; had two ch.; I. JOSEPH, b. 1839, d. 1843; II. JAMES M., b. 23 Nov., 1851, d. 24 March, 1881, unm.



97. V. JOHN, b. 3 Feb., 1819, d. 30 May, 1884, m. *first* Elizabeth, dau. of Wm. Pinsell, b. 19 Feb., 1820, d. 4 Aug., 1848, by whom 3 ch.; I EDWARD, b. 1839, d. 1851, II. LYDIA ANN, b. 1842, d. 1876; III. MARY MARGARET, b. 1843, d. 1869, John (97) m. *second*, 30 Oct., 1849, Elizabeth, dau. Sam. Hart, of Trenton, N. J., b. 30 Sept., 1819, d. 4 March, 1876, by whom 4 ch.; IV. JACOB, b. 23 June, 1851; V. WILLIAM, b. 13, April, 1854; VI. JOSHUA J., b. 19 Feb., 1857; VII. CHARLES G., b. 13 June, 1859.
98. VI. GEORGE B., b. 11 Jan., 1821, d. 18 Dec., 1840, unm.
99. VII. AMANDA, b. 19 Dec., 1822, unm.
100. VIII. MARY CATHERINE, b. 19 Nov., 1824, d. 31 March, 1854, unm.
101. IX. MARGARET, b. 17 Jan., 1827, d. 9 May, 1853.
102. X. JAMES H., b. 25 July, 1829, m. 23 Oct., 1855, Ruth Ann., dau. of Lot Breese, b. 27 Dec., 1830; had ch., I. ANNA, b. 1 Jan, 1851, d. 25 Feb., 1870; II. WILLIAM BARBER, b. 19 Oct., 1859, III. ELLA BREESE, b. 10 Feb., 1861; IV. MATILDA SHARP, b. 26 Aug., 1864.
103. XI. EMMA M., b. 23 April, 1831, d. 1 July, 1881, m. 19 Aug., 1869, Hon. Robt. S. Kennedy, b. 10 Oct., 1802, d. 20 Mar., 1879. He was widely known throughout the state, and wielded much influence. Besides filling many minor positions of trust he was for several years one of the lay judges of his county, for two terms a lay judge of the Court of Errors and Appeals of N. J., and in 1850 was United States marshal of his state. Judge Kennedy was one of the founders of the Stewartsville Presbyterian church in Warren county, N. J., where he resided. No ch.
104. XII. JANE, res. Newtown, Penna., b. 3 July, 1833, m. 25 Oct., 1855, John S. Beers, b. 9 Aug. 1833; d. Sept., 1888; had ch. I. MATILDA MELICK, b. 6 Mar. 1857, m. Oct., 1881, John C. Harmon; II. ANNA WRIGHT, b. 15 Sep., 1859; III. WILLIAM H., b. 17 Aug., 1863, d. 7 Dec., 1863; IV. HENRY OGDEN, b. 9 Mar., 1868; V. MARY EMMA, b. 18 Aug., 1871.
105. XIII. JESSE, b. 18 Aug., 1835, d. 2. Apr., 1837.
106. XIV. ANNIE, b. 3 Jan., 1837, d. 25 Sept., 1837.
107. XV. LYDIA W., b. 27 April, 1838, d. 12 April, 1879.

#### FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

Daniel Melick (40) had 9 ch.

108. I. PHILIP WELLER, b. 29 Feb., 1824, m. Mary Ellen, dau. of Richard Camden, of Mt. Bethel, Pa., by birth an Englishman, b. 18 Feb., 1839; graduated from Lafayette College and Princeton Seminary; entered the Presb. ministry and was settled over various Pa. parishes until outbreak of Civil war, when he was commissioned chaplain of 153d Pa. Vols., remaining with reg't until its discharge; again was settled over various congregations in Pa. until 1873, when he resigned from the ministry and engaged in mercantile pursuits in Elizabeth City, N. C.; had ch., I. IDELETTE, b. 25 Aug., 1862, d. 1866; II. CAMDEN WELLER, b. 22 Aug., 1867; III. GRACE, b. 23 July, 1870; IV. ADA, b. 9 Dec., 1871.
109. II. SARAH JANE, res. Elizabeth City, N. C., b. 20 Dec., 1825, m. 29 April, 1847, Joseph Eves, b. 5 Dec., 1814, d. 15 Nov., 1887; removed from Pa. to N. C. in 1870; had 10 ch.
  - I. WILLIS M., b. 5 April, 1848, d. 29 May, 1850.
  - II. MARY MARGARET, res. Big Rapids, Mich., b. 25 July, 1849, m. 3 Jan., 1871, William Fibley, b. 6 Dec., 1845, in Pa.; their 5 ch., *Joseph J.*, b. 1873; *Jesse S.*, b. 1876; *Sarah E.*, b. 1879; *Katie La Monte*, b. 1881; and *William W.*, b. 1885.
  - III. MARTHA ELIZABETH, res. E. City, N. C., b. 2 Aug., 1851, m. Thomas B. Wilcox; has 5 ch.
  - IV. AVA ATTA, res. Newbegun Creek, Pasquotank Co., N. C., b. 25 Oct., 1853, m. John A. Mead; has 7 ch.
  - V. CHARLES CLARK, res. Newbegun Creek, N. C., b. 12 Nov., 1855, m. Emma C. Davenport; has 5 ch.
  - VI. DANIEL H., b. 16 Nov., 1857, d. 21 Jan., 1882, m. Mary Frances; had 2 ch.
  - VII. JOSEPH PEARCE, res. Newbegun Creek, N. C., b. 27, June, 1860.
  - VIII. ELLIE MATILDA, res. N. Creek, N. C., b. 9 May, 1863, m. Robert C. Lowrey; has 3 ch.

- IX. MINNIE JANE, res. Virginia Beach, Va., b. 26 Jan., 1867, m. Taylor Forbes; has 1 ch.
- X. WILLIAM W., res. N. Creek, N. C. b. 9 Jan., 1871.
110. III. JACOB D., res. Muncy, Pa., b. 22 Apl., 1828, m. 16 Oct., 1851, Elizabeth M., dau. of William White, of Columbia Co., Pa.; Jacob D., (110) served in Civil war, first as 1st lieut. Columbia Co. Tigers, a company raised in 1862 for general defence. In June, 1863, he was commissioned adjutant 28th Reg't Infantry, Pa. N. G., and mustered in the service of the U. S. under President Lincoln's proclamation of that month; performed duty at Harrisburg and Carlisle defending the latter town from Earley's attack, and took part in dislodging the enemy from Hagerstown. During the last year of war was in the provost marshal's office at Williamsport, Pa., having charge of the correction of the enrollment of the Congressional district; had 5 ch.,
- I. DEL ROY, res. Muncy, Pa., b. 30 Aug., 1852, unm.
- II. DANIEL O'REL, b. 15 Oct., 1853, d. 8 Feb., 1869.
- III. WILLIAM MCCLURE, res. Muncy, Pa., b. 10 Oct., 1857.
- IV. JAMES PEARCE, res. Lock Haven, Pa., b. 4 Oct., 1862.
- V. JENNY, b. 21 Feb., 1871, an adopted dau. and a niece.
111. IV. MATTHEW PATTERSON, b. 30 June, 1831, d. 6 Dec., 1832.
112. V. WILLIAM WILLET, b. 10 Jan., 1833, d. 31 Aug., 1867, m. *first* Margaret, dau. of William Mather, b. 22 Mch., 1838, d. 24 Feb. 1865; had ch; I. WILLIAM CALVIN, b. 30 July, 1858, d. 7 Sept., 1861; II. AGNES, b. Feb., 1863, d. 25 Dec., 1884; William W. (112), m. *second*, S. Agnes, sister of first wife; her res. Orangeville, Columbia Co., Pa.
113. JOHN P., b. 18 Aug., 1835, d. 5 May 1836.
114. VII. MARY ELIZABETH, b. 25 March, 1837, m. 10 Sept., 1856, Nathan W. Stecker, b. 15 Sept., 1832, res. 449 Twentieth street, San Francisco Cal.; had ch.; I. EUGENE ADDISON, b. 31 March, 1858; II. WILBUR MELICK, b. 29 April, 1861, d. 8 Aug., 1863; III. FRANK DANA, b. 26 Aug., 1863, d. 26 Nov., 1863; IV. HENRY MCCLURE, b. 26 Mch., 1865, m. Dec., 1885, Minnie Updegraff; res., Wallace, New Mexico; V. MARY MARGARET, b. 23 Dec., 1867.
115. VIII. DANIEL RAMSEY, b. 21 Nov., 1839, d. 17 May, 1866, from consumption contracted in army; m. 4 May., 1865, Sarah Matilda, dau. of John White, b. 21 Oct., 1841; he graduated from Lafayette medical college, practiced as a physician, and served during rebellion as lieut., Co. G. 132d Regt. Penna. Vol's; he commanded his company in a brilliant charge at Antietam, and at the repulse at Fredericksburg after his regt. had been driven back he returned to the field and carried off his wounded brother, James P., (116) amid a storm of shot and shell; no ch.
116. IX. JAMES PEARCE, b. 26 June, 1843, d. 28 Dec., 1862; served during Civil War as corporal Co. G. 132nd regt., Pa., Vols.; wounded at Antietam, 17 Sep., 1862, again in the charge at Fredericksburg, 13 Dec., 1862, causing his death at Mt. Pleasant Hospital, 15 days later. A boy in years, a man in heart and courage.

## FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

James Melick (41) had 7 ch.

117. I. HENRY J., res. Philipsburg, N. J., b. 13 March, 1808, m. 17 April, 1834.
118. II. RACHEL, b. 16 Dec., 1810, d. in Dec., 1840, m. 10 May, 1837, Philip Shipman; had 1 ch., d. in infancy.
119. III. WILLIAM S., b. 7 March, 1812, d. 29 Oct., 1882, unm.
120. IV. REBECCA, res. Philipsburg, N. J., b. 8 June, 1814, unm.
121. V. JAMES S., res. Williamsport, Pa., b. 29 March, 1816, m. 25 Nov., 1851, Mary Martha, dau. of Ralph Hunt, b. 21 July, 1827; had 8 ch.,
- I. MARY ELIZABETH, res. Philipsburg, N. J., b. 21 Sep., 1854, m. James H. Hess, b. 23 June, 1854; their 3 ch., *Clarence B.*, b. 2 Nov., 1877; *Henry Lewis*, b. 16 Dec., 1879; *Annie Hunter*, b. 13 Dec., 1884.
- II. JAMES BERGEN, 530 East 3rd St., Williamsport, Pa., b. 14 Aug., 1857, m. Annie, dau. of James M. Purcell, b. 21 Oct., 1855; their 2 ch., *Mary P.*; *Martha H.*, b. 2 Nov., 1888.

## III. IDA, b. 13 Aug., 1863.

122. VI. ELIZABETH, b. Aug., 1818, d. in infancy.

123. VII. SARAH JANE, b. Oct., 22, m. 1826 Nov., 1852, William Allshouse, b. 28 Dec., 1830, was a tanner and currier at Belvidere, N. J., and was surrogate of the co. from 1859 to 1864; in 1866 removed to present res. Pontiac, Mich.; had ch., I. FLORENCE, b. 14 Oct., 1853, unm.; II. CATHARINE M., b. 2 July, 1855, unm.; III. JOHN C., b. 15 Nov., 1857, m. 15 June, 1881, Sarah Melissa, dau. of Alex. G. Collins, b. 29 Oct., 1860; their ch., Ethel, b. 13 May, 1883, and Chester, b. 8 Oct., 1884, res. Pontiac, Mich.; IV. ELIZABETH, b. 18 May, 1859, unm.; V. EDA, b. 1 Dec., 1863, m. Joseph A. Linabury, b. 15 March, 1858, hotel keeper at Pontiac, Mich.

## FOURTH GENERATION (B).

Andrew Melick (54) had 7 ch.

124. I. CATHARINE, b. 10 Feb., 1817, m. Isaac White, had 9 ch.; NEWTON WHITE, of Bloomsburg, Col. Co., Pa., is a son.

125. II. ELIZA, b. 14 Nov., 1819, m. 29 Jan., 1840, Samuel B. Henry, b. 1 May, 1817; she dec.; his res. Orangeville, Pa.; had ch., I. JAMES, b. 14 Nov., 1840, d. in infancy; II. SARAH LOUISA, b. 10 Sep., 1841; III. MARY CATHERINE, b. 27 Feb., 1843, d. 23 Apl., 1863; IV. FRANCIS STEWART, b. 22 Jan., 1844; V. JOSEPH BENSON, b. 29 Feb., 1846, d. 8 Mch., 1866; VI. EUDORA ANN, b. 20 Jan., 1847; VII. JAIRUS DAY, b. 13 Feb., 1849; VIII. ANDREW BOYD, b. 19, Nov., 1850; IX. NORA MATILDA, b. 22 Sep., 1852, d. in infancy, X. LIZZIE, b. 4 Sep., 1854, d. in infancy, XI. EVAGEEN, b. 3 Sep., 1855; XII. ORVAL A., b. 2 Sep., 1857; XIII. JOHN HARVEY, b. 5 Oct., 1859.

126. III. JACOB, b. 8 Apl., 1823, m. Minerva Melvina Kline, res. Pittston, Pa., had ch.; I. HESTER ANNE, b. 20 June, 1847, m. Daniel Long, res. Pittston, Pa., II. FRANCIS, b. 25 June, 1851, dec.; III. SARAH AMELIA, b. in Aug., 1856, m. Jasper Creveling, res. Pittston, Pa.; IV. AMOS W., b. 29 Sep., 1860, res. Bloomsburg, Pa.

127. IV. JOHN A., res. Shiloh, Richland Co., Ohio, b. 25 Aug., 1828, m. 25 Sept., 1851, Sarah Jane, dau. of Samuel White, of Columbia, Co., Pa., b. 4 July, 1834. For his 8 ch. see p 681.

128. V. SARAH ANN, b. 10 May, 1831, m. Peter White, res. Mendon, St. Jos. Co., Mich.

129. VI. HESTER ANN, b. 18 May, 1835, m. Jas W. Shipman, res. Shiloh, Ohio; had ch.; I. ANDREW J., b. 26 Sept., 1857; II. SARAH M., b. 24 Jan., 1859; III. JOHN H., b. 22 Aug., 1864, m. 23 Dec., 1885, Mamie, dau. of Clark Cleveland.

130. VII. ANDREW R. b. 21 May, 1841, d. in infancy.

## FOURTH GENERATION (B).

Stephen Melick (56) had 8 ch.

131. I. ELIZABETH, b. 20 March, 1831, d. 30 Sept., 1853, unm.

132. II. RACHEL ANN, res. Town Hill, Luzerne Co., Pa., b. 9 Aug., 1833, m. 1 June, 1856, Robert W. Chapin, b. 11 Oct., 1834, had 3 ch., I. STEPHEN W., b. 27 Jan., 1858; II. CHARLES E., b. 23 April, 1861, d. 18 March, 1864; III. MINNIE R., b., 18 Dec., 1868, d. 14 Jan., 1872.

133. III. ANDREW, b. 25 Dec., 1835, d. 29 Dec., 1880, m. 1 Jan., 1863, Abiah, dau. of Peter Franklin; had 1 ch., Fredonia, b. 27 Jan., 1866.

134. IV. PETER, res. Watertown, Luzerne Co., Pa., b. 27 May, 1838, m. 28 June, 1868, Margaret J., dau. of Samuel Wilcox, b. 10 Aug., 1848; had 6 ch., I. RUTH C., b. 25 Jan., 1869; II. SADIE, b. 28 March, 1870; III. CLARA J., b. 5 Jan., 1871; IV. LEROY S., b. 17 March, 1875; V. OTTO, b. 5 July, 1877; VI. HANNAH L., b. 30 Dec., 1881.

135. V. STEPHEN, b. 13 Nov., 1840, d. 7 April, 1870, m. 19 Sept., 1869, Elizabeth, dau. of Daniel Suthiff, widow, m. Charles Hughes, res. Catawissa, Columbia Co., Pa.; had 1 ch., LENA, b. 22 July, 1870.

136. VI. CATHARINE, res. Watertown, Luzerne Co., Pa., b. 6 March, 1843, m. 29 Aug., 1867, Benjamin A. Bidlack, b. 1 Aug., 1842; had 3 ch., I. SARAH A., b. 18 Oct., 1872; II. AMY B., b. 8 April, 1875; III. STEPHEN B., twin, b. 8 April, 1875.



137. VII. FANNY, b. 24 June, 1846, m. *first*, 19 Sept., 1869, John Watson, b. 14 Jan., 1841, d. 3 May, 1872, by whom 1 ch., I. WILLIAM WOOD; m., *second*, 7 Feb., 1877, George D. Brandon, b. in 1825, by whom 3 ch., II. GEORGE A., III. SAIDA E., IV. EMMA L.
138. VIII. SANDERSON W., b. 21 Jan., 1846, d. 15 May, 1875, unm.

#### FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

Godfrey Melick (58) had 4 ch. by 1st wife Susan Kline.

139. I. HENRY, b. 1 May, 1836, m. Margaret, b. in Dec., 1839, and had 1 ch., Laura, b. 28 Feb., 1883.
140. II. CLINTON, b. 16 Feb., 1839, m. 31 Dec., 1863, and had 5 ch., I. EMMA, b. 23 Aug., 1864; II. MINNIE A., b. 11 March, 1873; III. CORA R., b. 25 Aug., 1877; IV. DELLA, b. 21 March, 1881; V. HENRY C., b. 30 Jan., 1885.
141. III. MARY CATHARINE, b. 17 Oct., 1840, d. in 1863, m. in 1862, Henry Hippenstiel, res. Orangeville, Col. Co., Pa.; had 1 ch., Henry, b. in Feb., 1885.
142. IV. REBECCA ANN, b. 14 Aug., 1845, m. Abraham Kline, and has 4 ch. Godfrey (58) had 4 ch. by 2d wife, Caroline Jacoby.
143. V. JOHN, res. Canby, Col. Co., Pa., b. 7 June, 1851, m. Clara Everitt, and had 6 ch., I. VERDA LETITIA, b. 29 July, 1878; II. FRANKLIN T., b. 19 Feb., 1880; III. ELMIRA CAROLINE, b. 29 April, 1881; IV. JESSIE LUELLA, b. 5 Dec., 1882; V. STELLA PEARL, b. 16 June, 1885; VI. OSCAR RAY, b. 9 July, 1887.
144. VI. LYDIA ELLEN, b. 17 Jan., 1856, unm.
145. VII. SUSAN MARIA, b. 1 Aug., 1857, m. Matthias Whitnight.
146. VIII. HARRIET LUCINDA.

#### FOURTH GENERATION (B.)

James Godfrey Melick (64) had 7 ch.

147. I. GEORGE GODFREY, res. 109 State St., Boston, Mass., b. 19 Oct., 1836, m. 13 Dec., 1867, Mary Ann Matilda, dau. of James D. Perkins, of St. John, N. B., b. 27 March, 1846; had 6 ch., I. MINNIE, b. 7 April, 1868, d. 11 April, 1870; II. GEORGE H., b. 11 Oct., 1869; III. UNITA, b. 7 May, 1873, d. in infancy; IV. CHARLES D., b. 5 Jan., 1878, d. 4 March, 1886; V. MYRTLE L. KENT, b. 5 March, 1879; VI. MARTIN LANSDOWNE, b. 31 July, 1881.
148. II. MARY ELIZA, b. 27 Aug., 1838, d. 5 Oct., 1858.
149. III. JAMES WILLIAM, res. St. John, N. B., b. 19 March, 1840, d. 3 May, 1889, m. in June, 1873, Kate McCaffrey, of Fredericton, N. B., had ch., I. FREDERICK; II. FRANK; III. LIZZIE; IV. HERBERT.
150. IV. FREDERICK COLBROOK, res. St. John, N. B., b. 17 July, 1843, unm.
151. V. DEBORAH JULIETTE, b. 26 June, 1845, m. 27 Nov., 1873, James E. Fairweather, res. Hampton, N. B., no ch.
152. VI. CATHERINE ALICE, b. 15 Nov., 1847, m. 11 Oct., 1871, Charles D. McAvity, res. Hampton, N. B.; had 5 ch., I. WILLIAM DOUGLAS, b. 27 Sept., 1872; II. GEORGE THOMAS, b. 9 Feb., 1875; III. CAROLINE MAUD, b. 9 July, 1878, IV. JAMES HERBERT, b. 14 Feb., 1883; V. KATE ISABEL, b. 9 July, 1885.
153. VII. ANDREW WELLINGTON, res. St. John, N. B., b. 28 July, 1850, m. 14 Feb., 1883, Isabel Hayward, has 2 ch., I. HELEN L., b. 26 Nov., 1883; II. ETHEL W., b. 6 April, 1885.

#### FIFTH GENERATION.

William Hughes Melick (69) had 5 ch.

154. I. CHARLOTTE LOUISA, b. 6 April, 1839, m. 23 Jan., 1861, Peter M. Van Keuren, of N. Y. city; had 4 ch., I. WM. M., b. 17 Jan., 1864, d. 21 Feb., 1866; II. JESSIE, b. 19 Dec., 1866, d. 25 Sept., 1867; III. GEORGINE M., b. 14 Sept., 1868; IV. HELEN, b. 29 Jan., 1871, res. 357 Garden street, Hoboken, N. J.
155. II. JOHN HENRY, b. 8 July, 1841, d. 14 July, 1841.
156. III. SARAH JANE, b. 2 Oct., 1842, m. 21 Jan., 1863, James A. Purdy, of N. Y. city; had 2 ch., I. MARY M., b. 3 Mar., 1864, d. 13 Sept., 1886, m. 22 May, 1884, Thos. H. Sheffield, of Stonington, Conn., had 1 ch., Warren Thomas, b. 15 Mar., 1885; res. Hoboken; II. WILLIAM M., b. 24 Oct., 1867.

157. IV. ANNA GEORGINA, b. 11 Feb., 1845, m. 12 Oct., 1870, J. Goodheart De Voe; had 3 ch., I. CHARLOTTE L., b. 11 Feb., 1876; II. ALICE E., b. 24 Nov., 1881.  
III. THURMAN G., b. 5 Oct., 1886. Res. Hoboken.  
158. V. JOHN, b. 4 April, 1847, d. 8 Dec., 1854.

FIFTH GENERATION (B).

John Hughes Melick (70) had 7 ch.

159. I. RACHEL POSTEN, b. 20 Feb., 1842, d. 3 July, 1842.  
160. II. EDWARD POSTEN, b. 31 May, 1843, killed at Antietam 17 Sept., 1862, he joined Co. G., Capt. Abbott, 132 Regt., Pa. Vols. Just seven weeks from the day he left home he fell on the field of battle; during his short military career his conduct and bearing were so brave and admirable as to attract particular attention, and had he lived he doubtless would have attained promotion and distinction.  
161. III. SARAH, b. 6 June, 1845, unmarried; res. Stroudsburg, Penna.  
162. IV. ADDISON BROWN, b. 20 May, 1847, m. 16 Mar., 1876 to Emma Edinger; res. Stroudsburg, Penna., had ch., I. WM. E., b. 22 May, 1879.  
163. V. HESTER A., b. 12 April, 1849, d. 24 Nov., 1888, m. 15 Nov., 1887, Alfred B. Groff, of Washington, N. J.  
164. VI. MARY, b. 28 April, 1851, d. 1 Jan., 1870.  
165. VII. HELEN, b. 26 Mar., 1853, m. 2 Sept., 1879, Charles Creveling; b. 4 April, 1841; res. Oxford Furnace, N. J.; had 3 ch., I. JANE, b. 1 July, 1880; II. JACOB VAN HORN and ELIZABETH C., twins, b. 25 Aug., 1882.

FIFTH GENERATION (B).

William Barber Melick (95) had 4 ch.

166. I. EMMA, b. 8 July, 1843, m. 15 Jan., 1861, Chas. B. Heydon; res. 186 Jay St., Albany, N. Y., had 4 ch., I. ELIZABETH SHARP, b. 25 Nov., 1861, m. 14 Sep., 1881, George W. Coriell, res. New Market, N. J.; II. AGNES AMELIA, b. 28 Feb., 1867; III. EMMA MELICK, b. 7 Oct., 1875; IV. ALICE READ, b. 7 Nov., 1878.  
167. II. MARTHA, b. 4 Oct., 1845.  
168. III. JAMES REDFORD, b. 12 Oct., 1849, m. 23 Dec., 1869, Margaret E., dau. of Ben. Kirtland; had 10 ch., I. CHARLOTTE THURBER, b. 24 Sep., 1870; II. CHAS. BENJ., b. 18 Oct., 1872; III. WILLIAM BARBER, b. 2 Oct., 1874; IV. DANIEL READ, b. 3 Jan., 1876; V. JAMES REDFORD, JR., b. 25 Jan., 1879; VI. and VII. FREDERICK and FRANK, b. 31 Jan., 1881, d. 2 July, 1881; VIII. ARTHUR KIRTLAND, b. 9 Jan., 1884, d. 3 Oct., 1884; IX. PHILIP WACKERHAGEN, b. 19 Aug., 1885; X. HENRY READ, b. 20 Aug., 1888.  
169. IV. ELIZABETH SHARP, b. 18 July, 1852, m. 5 Oct., 1875, Daniel P. Read, res. 268 W. 13th St., N. Y. City; had 2 ch., I. ARCHIE, b. 17 June, 1878, d. in infancy; II. HENRY M., b. 26 Dec., 1879.

FIFTH GENERATION (B).

John Melick (127) had 8 ch.

170. I. SAMUEL HUBERT, b. 22 May, 1853, m. 1 Jan., 1878, Lucy, dau. of David Myers.  
171. II. ANDREW NEWTON, b. 7 May, 1856, m. 22 Feb., 1886, Florence, dau. of John Licy.  
172. III. WILLIAM CLARK, b. 4 Aug., 1858, m. 27 Dec., 1877, Matilda, dau. of William McKinney, b. 4 Aug., 1857.  
173. IV. JOHN CLEMUEL, b. 7 June, 1860, m. 22 Jan., 1885, Dora, dau. of John Fransky.  
174. V. CHARLES ELLSWORTH, b. 6 July, 1863.  
175. VI. MINNIE JANE, b. 18 Aug., 1868, m. 23 June, 1887, Frank Bricker.  
176. VII. IDA MAY, b. 23 April, 1872.  
177. VIII. EDWARD HAYES, b. 23 March, 1877.

## JOHAN PETER MOELICH (C.)

His son Tunis Melick of Hunterdon Co., N. J., and descendants.

1. JOHAN PETER MOELICH was the son of Johan Wilhelm (XXVI) and Anna Katherine of Bendorf on the Rhine, Germany, where he was b. in 1708, and bap. in the Evangelical Head-Church, by the Revd. Johannes Reusch, the certificate reading:—"The 9th Sunday after Trinity, 1708, to Master Hans Wilhelm Mölich of this place a young son has been baptized and named by the Christian name, Johann Peter. The god-fathers were Mr. Peter Hoffbauer, citizen at Winnigen, and Johann Peter Mölich, bachelor, of this place. The godmother was Master Hermann's, of Höchstenbach, conjugal housewife, the child's mother's own sister. God grant to the baptized all prosperity on earth, and after this life in eternity. Amen." Godfather Johan Peter Mölich, bachelor, was Hans Peter (VIII), son of Jonas (V); he must have married soon after this time as his first child Jonas (XV) was born in 1710. When but twenty years old Johan Peter (I) emigrated to America landing at Philadelphia, 24 Aug., 1728, from the ship, "Mortonhouse," John Coultas, master. The vessel sailed from Rotterdam, touching at Deal, and leaving the last port, June 15. The records of Palatine arrivals preserved at Harrisburg do not show that he brought with him either wife or child. He probably married soon after arrival as his son Tunis was born in 1730. As no traces of him have been found in New Jersey he probably remained in Pennsylvania, perhaps at Germantown, from whence many of the New Germantown, N. J., Germans migrated. He was not living in 1755, as the record of the marriage of his child Maria Catharina (3), in that year, describes her as "the daughter of the late John Peter Melick." All his decs. spell their name *Melick*,

## SECOND GENERATION (C.)

Johan Peter Moelich or Melick had at least 3 ch.

2. I. TUNIS, ANTON, or ANTHONY, b. 6 Mar., 1730, d. 27 Nov., 1795; m. Eleanor, dau. of Abraham Van Horn, of White House, Hunterdon Co., N. J., b. 21 Mar., 1734, d. 3 Jan., 1819, from burns caused by her clothing igniting from the fireplace; both are buried in Zion churchyard, New Germantown, N. J. He first settled at White House, where he built a grist mill on South Rockaway Creek, on land now owned by Wyckoff Van Horn, fronting on the road leading from the village to the railway station. Subsequently he removed to New Germantown, in the same county, where he purchased 200 acres of land from Ralph Smith, upon which he built a new mill, removing the gear from the old one. This property became his homestead, and, though not since then continuously possessed by his posterity, is now owned and occupied by a descendant, Peter W. Melick (24). Tunis was actively interested in the affairs of his vicinity; served as county freeholder from 1776 to 1794, inclusive, for a number of years was a leading member of Zion Lutheran Church, and was instrumental in founding the first Methodist congregation of his county. (See p. 88) For his 8 ch. see p. 683.
3. II. MARIA CATHARINE, b. 13 July, 1732, d. 22 Jan., 1807; m. 3 Apl., 1755, John Henry, son of John Valentine Müller, b. 22 May, 1728, in "*Duder Mosh-oten in Ampt Lantzberg in der Platz Zweibrücken*," Germany; d. 9 Feb., 1819. He landed in Philadelphia, 12 Aug., 1750, and removed to New Jersey 3 Apl., 1758. He is said to have been a Redemptioner; if this be true he probably paid for his passage and gained his liberty before reaching New Jersey. He settled near New Germantown in Hunterdon county, where he became a valued citizen, being for thirty-one years the clerk of Tewksbury township. He was a devout Christian and prominent in the Zion Lutheran congregation. His family Bible, which has been preserved, freely testifies as to his deeply religious nature. On entering in German the record of his marriage, he added: "May the good God rule our hearts and minds through His Holy



Spirit in Christ Jesus. Amen." The birth of his first child is inscribed as follows: "In 1758 on the 11th day of July has the dear God rejoiced us with a daughter, and has permitted her to come happily into the world and to receive Holy Baptism on the 6th day of August and has given her the Christian name of Elizabeth." An equally pious announcement is made of the advent of each child. When the list was complete he wrote: "May the dear God guide and rule these my dear children with His Holy and good Spirit and grant that they may be religious and God fearing. May they love God and walk in his ways. May they love right and justice and avoid sin. Amen." This old family register thus recounts the death of his wife: "1807. To day the 22d Jan. at 12 o'clock noon, has my dear wife Maria Cathrina fallen peacefully asleep in the Lord and will be buried on the 25th day. After we have lived fifty-one years nine months and three weeks together in the Holy estate of Matrimony. And she is the first one who has died in my house. May the dear God prepare us who are left behind to follow piously after, for the sake of His dear Son Jesus Christ. Amen." John Henry Müller and Maria Catharine Melick had 3 ch.,

- I. ELIZABETH, b. 11 July, 1758, d. 6 Jan., 1845, m. 12 May, 1772, Christian, the son of Godfrey Kline, who emigrated from Bendorf, Germany; this Godfrey was born in Bendorf 30 Oct., 1726, and was the son of Christian Kline, a "military horseman" from Homburg (see p. 91); Elizabeth and Christian had 12 ch., *Elizabeth*, b. 10 Sep., 1779, d. 22 Sep., 1781; *Mary Catharine*, b. 5 Jan., 1781, m. Simeon Wyckoff, and removed to Illinois; *Henry M.*, b. 10 Jan., 1783, m. Sarah Ramsey; *David M.*, b. 1 Jan. 1785, d. 6 Dec., 1861, m. Elizabeth Hager, who d. 19 Mch., 1835; *Ida*, b. 8 Dec., 1786, m. Harmon Dilts; *Elizabeth*, b. 4 Dec., 1788, d. 9 Jan., 1861, m. John Ramsey; *Phebe*, 18 Oct., 1790; *Esther*, b. in 1792, d. in infancy; *Hannah*, b. 1 Nov., 1794, m. a Henry; *Sarah S.*, b. 22 June, 1797; *Jacob M.*, b. 23 July, 1799, m. *first*, Phebe Kuhl, *second*, a Fisher; *Lasettah*, b. in 1801, d. in 1815.
- II. MARIA CATHRINA, b. 12 Feb., 1763, m. Baltis Stiger.
- III. HENRY, b. 7 Nov., 1766, m. *first* a Baird, *second*, Catherine Sharp, their 3 ch., *Jacob B.*, *Ann* and *John P.*
- IV. DAVID, b. 28 Apl., 1769, m. Elizabeth Welch, their 9 ch., *Jacob W.*, *William W.*, *David W.*, *Henry*, *Eliza*, *Dorothy*, *Mary*, *Catherine*, and *Lydia Ann*. (H. W. Miller, pres. Morris Co. Savings Bank at Morristown is a son of Jacob W., and owns John Henry Miller's (the immigrant) family Bible.
- V. JACOB, b. 8 June, 1771, m. Elizabeth Sharp.
4. III. JOHN was a tanner and currier in the city of New York, where he died in 1767, his will being dated 26 Sep., and proved 24 Dec. of that year. His executors were his brother Tunis and his brother-in-law, Henry Miller, of N. J., and Peter Grimm, of N. Y. city. The will named a wife Christiana and 6 ch., I. JOHN, II. MARY, III. ELIZABETH, IV. CATHERINE, V. MARGARET, VI. SARAH.

### THIRD GENERATION (C.)

Tunis Melick (2) had 8 ch.

5. I. PETER, b. 4 Dec., 1758, succeeded his father on the homestead where he d. 18 Nov., 1818; m. 27 Feb., 1783, Susanna, dau. of Nicholas Egbert, of Readington, tp., b. 3 Mch., 1763, d. 2 May, 1837. For his 10 ch. see p. 686.
6. II. ANNA, d. about 1831, m. 7 Dec., 1779, Isaac Farley, of Cokesburg, Hunterdon Co., who d. about 1814; had 11 ch., viz: (order of names partly conjectural.)
  - I. ANTHONY (Tunis) b. 7 Sep., 1780, d. 8 Apl., 1846; m. Elizabeth, dau. of Richard Sutton, of Tewksbury tp.; their 10 ch.; *Richard S.*, b. in 1802, d. in 1831, m. Margaret, dau. of Herbert Appgar, and had 10 ch.; *Isaac*, d. unm.; *Eliza*, m. Samuel Crooks and had 2 ch.; *Mercy*, m. *first*, a Johnson, *second*, John Ryan; *Mary Ann*, had 3 husbands; *Althea*, who m. John Force, of Rochester, N. Y.; *Ellen*, res. Phila., m. James Buist, and has 4 ch.; *Frances*, m. William Benjamin;

- Anthony*, res. Scotch Plains, N. J., m. *first* Harriet Lyons, *second*, Mary Roll; *Margaret*, res. Plainfield, N. J., m. *first* John Meeker, *second*, Charles Coltier.
- II. MINARD, b. in 1782, d. in 1843, m. Mary Frazer, b. in 1783, d. in 1849, removed from N. J. in 1828, settling in N. Y. State, and 4 years later at South Lyons, Washtenaw Co., Michigan, where he died; their 9 ch.; *Isaac*, b. in 1803, d. in infancy; *David*, b. in 1805, d. in 1888, m. Rosina Blackmar, and had 4 ch.; *William*, of Albion, Mich., b. in 1807, d. in 1872, m. Sally Ann Ostrom, and had 4 ch.; *Sarah F.*, b. in 1809, d. in 1852, m. Lemuel Droelle, and had 2 dau.; *Isabel*, res. Salem, Mich., b. in 1812, m. Eli Smith, has 2 ch.; *Eleanor*, b. in 1814, d. in 1882, unm.; *Archibald*, b. in 1816, dec.; *Anthony M.*, b. 19 May, 1817, d. in 1882, m. Rosina Packard, and had 3 sons; *Manning F.*, b. in 1820.
- III. WILLIAM, dec., m. *first* a Pa. Quakeress, by whom one son, *William*, a Phila. physician; m. *second*, Anne Garretson of New Germantown, N. J., by whom several ch.
- IV. BARBARA, m. Minard Pickel of White House, N. J., dec.; they removed to Ohio, thence to Indiana; left ch.
- V. MARGARET W., b. 27 Dec., 1792, d. 17 Nov., 1860, m. Joseph Stevens, b. in 1792, d. in 1864; their 10 ch., *Henry J.*, b. in 1813, d. in 1885, m. Margaret R., dau. of Joseph Hoffman, of Lebanon, N. J., and had 3 ch.; *Dennis W.*, m. *first*, Sarah, dau. of John Ramsey, *second*, Elizabeth, widow of John Rodenbaugh, *third*, Amanda, dau. of George Neighbour, no ch.; *Isaac F.*, res. Illinois, m. Naomi, dau. of John W. Gaston, of Pluckamin, N. J., and had 5 ch.; *Elizabeth*, b. in 1819, d. in 1878, m. Zachariah Z. Smith, of Peapack, N. J., and had 4 ch.; *Mary*, m. Amos Oliver, of New Vernon, N. J., and had 8 ch.; *George J.*, b. in 1822, d. in 1872, m. *first*, Phebe Ann Oliver, of New Vernon, by whom 3 ch., m. *second*, Elizabeth, widow of George Neighbour, by whom 2 ch.; *Catherine*, m. Van Arsdale Cortleyou, of Bedminster, N. J., and had 7 ch.; *Margaret*, res. Somerville, m. Eli Crater, of Peapack, no ch.; *Joseph C.*, m. *twice* and has one ch.; *Sarah*, res. Raritan, N. J.
- VI. CATHERINE, d. in 1832, m. Jacob Hoffman, of Lebanon, N. J., dec.; their 2 ch., *Angeline*, b. in 1825, d. in 1847, m. William S. Burrell, no ch.; *Hannah*, res. Somerville, m. Stephen Jerolainen, and has 4 ch.
- VII. ELEANOR, m. Aaron Smock, and removed with her husband to Ohio.
- VIII. ELIZA, b. about 1800, dec., m. Robert Blair, dec., their 3 ch., *William*, who is m. and lives in Ohio; *Lydia*; *Ellen*, res. Chicago, Ill., m. Martin Hoagland, and has 3 ch.
- IX. MARY ANN, b. in 1802, d. 1887, m. *first*, Jacob Apgar, b. in 1802, d. in 1850, by whom 4 ch.; m. *second*, Charles Wolverton, of Tewkesbury, tp., Hunt. Co., N. J.; her ch. by Apgar, *Ann Elizabeth*, m. John W. Melick, of New Germantown, and had 7 ch.; *Catherine C.*, b. in 1824, d. in 1868, m. Peter W. Melick, and had 10 ch.; *Maria C.*, b. in 1827, d. in 1850, m. Stephen B. Ransom, of Jersey City, and had 3 ch.; *Lydia*, res. Streator, Ill., b. 1 Nov., 1830, m. *first*, Henry T. Hageman, of Bedminster, by whom one son; m. *second*, Edward Kline, by whom 6 ch.
- X. CHARLES, d. in youth.
- XI. ANNA, d. in youth.
7. III. MARY CATHERINE (TREENIE), b. 15 Feb., 1763, d. 13 Mar., 1832, m. Mindart Farley, of Cokesburg, N. J., had 3 ch.
- I. BARBARA, b. 22 Dec., 1783, d. 17 Dec., 1851, m. Archibald Kennedy, b. in 1787, d. in 1857, their 2 ch., *Mary*, b. in 1806, d. in 1833, m. Daniel K. Reading, of Flemington, N. J., had one son, dec.; *Catherine*, b. in 1813, d. in 1838, m. Rev'd. George F. Brown, of N. J. M. E. Conference, one son, dec.
- II. ANTHONY M., b. in 1789, d. in 1831, m. *first*, Keturah, dau. of Col. William McCullough, of Asbury, N. J., by whom 5 ch., *William M.*, d. in infancy; *Catherine*, d. in infancy; *Minard*, res. N. Y. city, unm.; *William*, res. New Germantown, unm.; *Elizabeth*, res. Pelhamville, N. J., m. George H. McGalliard, and has 3 ch.,

- Anthony M. Farley, m. *second*, Sarah E., dau. of Judge Miller, of Ithaca, N. Y., d. in 1843, by whom 4 ch., *Sarah H.*, who m. Lyman Crego, and has 3 ch.; *Margaret E.*, res. Trumansburg, N. Y., m. Faith Williams, no ch.; *two sons* who d. in infancy.
- III. FRANCIS ASBURY, b. 17 Apl., 1807, d. 16 Sep., 1880, m. 19 Jan., 1873, (at the age of 65), Calvina, (aged 14) dau. of Christopher B. Hageman, of Pottersville, N. J., no ch.
8. IV. ELIZABETH, m. 30 Apl., 1789, Martin Mehle, of Germantown, Pa., and had 3, perhaps more, ch., viz.:-
- I. ELEANOR, d. 5 May, 1816, m. 5 May, 1812, Aaron Lambert, b. in 1789, d. in 1869; their 3 ch., *Mary Ann*, res. New Hope, Pa., b. in 1813, unm. *Caroline*, res. N. H., unm.; and *Elizabeth*, who d. in infancy.
- II. ANTHONY M.
- III. JACOB, m. a Miss McAulay and had 4 ch., *Edward*, *Theodore*, *Elizabeth*, and *Eleanor*.
9. V. MARGARET, b. 27 Nov., 1769, d. 19 Apl., 1837, m. 22 Nov., 1792, Dennis Wyckoff, of White House, N. J., b. 17 Apl., 1760, d. 6 Dec., 1890; he was a justice of the peace and an influential citizen; had 7 ch.
- I. SIMON D., Ulster Co., N. Y., twice married, had 4 ch. by first and 2 by second wife.
- II. TUNIS, b. 25 Jan., 1797, d. 4 May, 1871, m. *first*, Ann Vosseller, b. in 1797, d. in 1847; m. *second*, Mrs. Ruth Reas, d. 4 July, 1876; he left Hunterdon Co., N. J., in 1836, moving his family in wagons to Wooster, Wayne Co., Ohio., where he bought a farm upon which he lived until his death, had ch., all by first wife. *Margaret M.*, res., North English, Iowa, b. 17 May, 1819, m. Thomas Buckley, and has 6 ch., *John V.*, res. Richfield, O., *Ann Eliza*, b. in 1824, d. in 1884, m. Ezra Munson, left 5 ch.; *Dennis*, b. in 1826, d. in 1876, unm.; *Luke V.*, res., West Richfield, O., b. 23 Mch., 1829; *Sarah E.*, res. Wooster, O., b. 29 May, 1831, m. Joseph Kimber, their eldest son, D. W. Kimber, lives at Excelsior Springs, Mo.; *Mary*, b. in 1834, d. in infancy.
- III. GEORGE D., b. in 1800, d. in 1829, m. Maria Waldron, and had 4 ch., but two living.
- IV. DENNIS, m. Martha Lowe, and had 5 ch.
- V. ELEANOR, m. *first*, Henry Vroom, by whom one dau., *Henrietta*, b. in 1836, d. in 1875, who m. Lewis Van Doren, of Peapack, N. J., and had 3 ch. (see p. 250); *Eleanor Wyckoff* (V) m. *second*, John Kline, of Readington, N. J., b. in 1784, d. in 1880.
- VI. PETER M., b. in 1809, d. in 1834, m. in 1832, Alice Polhemus, left one son, *Edgar P.*, who lives in Brooklyn, unm.
- VII. ELIZA, m. Abraham Van Pelt, of Branchburg, N. J.; their 3 ch., *Ralph*, res. Bound Brook, N. J., m. Kate Powelson, and has 2 ch.; *Matthew*, res. Bound Brook, m. a Ditmars, and has 4 ch.; *Henry*, res. Iowa.
10. VI. ELEANOR, b. 3 Feb., 1772, d. about 1861, m. *first*, 30 Oct., 1794, Cornelius Vliet, of New Germantown, by whom 2 sons; m. *second*, her brother-in-law, Martin Mehle, of Germantown, Pa., by whom 2 dau's. ELIZABETH and MARY ANN, both d. unm.; had ch. by first husband.
- I. ABRAHAM M., b. in 1797, d. in 1868, m. in 1832, Ann, dau. of George Biles, of Warren Co., N. J.; their 6 ch., *Eleanor M.*, res. Frelinghuysen, Warren Co., N. J., b. 23 Aug., 1823, m. W. H. Cook; *Margaret*, res. Frelinghuysen, b. 10 Mch., 1823, m. Jonathan Lundy; *Sarah E. F.*, b. 4 July, 1827, m. Gideon L. Albertson; *William D.*, res. Hackettstown, N. J., b. 24 Jan., 1829, m. Elizabeth Decker; their 3 ch., John, George and Rosella; *Eana*, b. in 1831, d. in 1834; *Daniel*, res. Hope, N. J., b. 13 Sep., 1833, m. *first*, in 1860, Maria E., dau. of Robert Ayres, of Frelinghuysen, d. 12 Sep., 1864, by whom one ch. Anna M.; m. *second*, in 1866, Mary E., dau. of Alexander Decker, of Blairstown, by whom 4 ch., Abraham M., Rosa E., Emma D. and Mary E.
- II. JOHN, b. in 1798, d. in 1841, m. in 1819, Rachel W. Werts, b. in 1800, d. in 1883, their 10 ch.; *Thomas Stewart*, d. unm.; *Eleanor A.*, res. Brooklyn, N. Y., m. *first* Gilbert B. Stoothoff, by whom 9 ch., m. *second*, R. F. Sheppard, of Bridgeton, N. J.; *Mehtable*, res. Brooklyn, m. John Pearsall, dec., and has 9 ch.; *Peter W.*, dec., unm.; *Mary W.*, dec.;



*Marettta Louisa*, res. Newark, m. George Squire, and has 5 ch.; *Amos M.*, d. unm., served in War of Rebellion; *John*, b. in 1835, d. in 1889, m. Mary Chapman, had 5 ch., served in War of Rebellion, in 14th Brooklyn Regt., returning as adjutant; *Melinda J.*, res. Beattytown, Warren Co., N. J., m. Robert Martin, has 7 ch.; *Emma Frances*.

11. VII. ABRAHAM, b. in 1776, d. 28 Nov., 1793.
12. VIII. MARIA DOROTHEA (Dolly), b. 16 July., 1778, d. 30 May, 1803, m. 2 Apl., 1795, John Vliet, of Bedminster, N. J.; had 2 ch.
  - I. ELEANOR, dec., m. a Frenchman and removed to Conn.; no ch.
  - II. SIMON J., b. in 1797, d. in 1875, m. Eliza, dau. of Nicholas Emmons, of Morris Co., N. J.; their 9 ch., *Mary Ann*, res. Morristown, N. J., m. Jacob H. Lindabury, of White House, and had 5 ch., Henry, dec., Richard V., of Elizabeth, and Frank, Isaac, and George B., of Morristown; *John*, res. Peapack, b. in 1821, m. *first*, in 1845, Aletta W., dau. of Captain John Hoffman, of Cokesburg, N. J., b. in 1826, d. in 1860, by whom 4 ch., m. *second*, Martha J. Blazier, of Basking Ridge, N. J., by whom 3 ch.; *Dorothy Ellen*, b. in 1823, d. in 1880, m. John B. Demond, b. in 1823, d. in 1877, and had 4 ch.; *William S.*, b. in 1825, m. Dorothy Sharp and has 2 ch.; *Jacob E.*, b. in 1827, d. in 1847; *Elsie*, b. in 1829, d. in 1848; *Isaac E.*, b. in 1831, d. in 1854; *Richard*, b. in 1835, d. in 1850; *Sarah Ann*, res. Peapack, N. J., m. Henry Kice, had 6 ch.

## FOURTH GENERATION (C).

Peter Melick (5) had 9 ch.

13. I. TUNIS, b. 15 Meh., 1784, d. 15 Oct., 1862, m. 18 May, 1805, Sarah, dau. of Andrew Van Syckle, of Tewksbury tp., Hunt. Co., N. J., b. 26 Oct., 1784, d. 22 Jan., 1859.
14. II. MARY, b. 4 Apl., 1786, d. 4 Aug., 1868, m. 2 Sep., 1809, Moses Felmly, of Tewksbury tp., b. in 1789, d. 16 Nov., 1819; had 5 ch.
  - I. DAVID, res. Rockford, Ill., b. 30 Sep., 1810, d. 3 Oct., 1853, m. in 1834, Sarah, dau. of Maj. John Logan, of Peapack; their 10 ch., *John N.*, res. Cedar Falls, Iowa, b. in 1835, m. in 1855, Cynthia E. Davis, and has 3 ch. living; *Mary J.*, res. Rockford, Ill., b. in 1836, m. in 1854, William A. Davis and has 5 ch. living; *Moses C.*, b. in 1838, killed in Dec., 1862, at battle of Murfreesboro, Tenn.; *Almarin*, b. 1840, d. in 1858; *William L.*, b. in 1842, m. in 1877, Sylvia S. Hall, no ch.; *Susan A.*, res. Cedar Falls, Iowa, b. in 1844, m. in 1866, Stephen B. Collins, has 2 ch., he d. in 1866; *Catherine and Sophia*, b. in 1846 and 1848, d. in infancy; *Ellen*, res. Cedar Falls, Iowa, b. in 1850, m. in 1869, Robert Sirling, has 10 ch. living; *Sarah L.*, b. in June 1852, unm.
  - SUSANNA, b. 10 Nov., 1812, m. 27 Dec., 1830, Morris J. Welsh, of Tewksbury Tp., b. in 1799, d. in 1873, their 6 ch., *Lydia Ann*, b. in 1832, d. in 1856, m. in 1853, Peter P. Philhower, and left one ch., Sarah J., who m. Abraham V. Honeyman, of White House, N. J.; *Peter M.*, res. Bedminster, b. 1835, m. 1864, Margaret, dau. of William Honeyman, of Lamington, has 5 ch.; *Sarah C.*, b. 1841, unm.; *Jacob*, res. Bedminster, b. in 1843, m. 1865, Sarah E., dau. of John I. Reger, of Tewksbury tp., has 2 ch.; *Morris J.*, res. Tewksbury tp., b. 1851, m. 1873, Emma L., dau. of James O. Hughes, of Clinton, N. J., has 4 ch.; *Dorothy*, b. 1854, m. 1873, James E. Ramsey, of Tewksbury tp., no ch.
  - III. PETER M., b. 30 Nov., 1814, m. 14 Sep., 1836, Gertrude, dau. of Zachariah Smith, of Peapack, their 3 ch., *Edwin*, res. Pleasant Run, b. 1837, m. 1859, Phebe A., dau. of John I. Reger, of Tewksbury tp., and have 9 ch.; *Mary Ann*, b. 1839, m. 1862, Abraham Van Cleef, of Somerset Co., have 4 ch.; *Clarissa*, res. Fairmount, N. J., b. 1852, m. 1872, Theo. Fisher.
  - IV. JOHN S., b. 5 Nov., 1816, d. 1 May, 1860, m. *first*, 1837, Ann M., dau. of Henry Stoothoff, of Bedminster, b. 1819, d. 1853, by whom 4 ch., *Garret V.*, b. 1840, d. at City Point Hospital, Va., 26 June, 1864; *Sarah S.*, res. Harlingen, N. J., b. 1843, m. 1869, Gordon N. J. Higgins, M. D., b. 1845, d. 1872, has 1 ch.; *Jonathan C.*, b. 1846, d. 1865; *Morris W.*

- b. 1849, is in U. S. A. John S. Felmley (IV), m. *second*, 9 Aug., 1854 Ellen, dau. of Garret Voorhees, of Mine Brook, Somerset Co., b. 1825; their 2 ch., *David*, res. Illinois, b. 1857, m. 1887, Auta Stout, has 1 ch.; *John*, res. Griggsville, Ill., b. 1860.
- V. ANTHONY M., b. 29 May, 1818, d. 2 Dec., 1873, m. *first*, 1838, Catherine, dau. of John Van Dyke, of Flanders, N. J., b. 1817, d. 1850, by whom 2 dau., *Maria Jane*, m. John B. Van Dyke, of Sedalia, Mo., and *Susanna*, m. Austin Hoffman, of same place. Anthony M. (V), m. *second*, 1858, Margaret, dau. of Henry Cortelyou, of Bedminster, by whom 3 ch., *William*, d. unm.; *Mary*, d. unm.; and *Sarah*, d. 1876, m. Charles Courtney, of Sedalia; Anthony M. (V), m. *third*, Adeline, dau. of James Park, of Tewksbury, N. J., b. 19 Aug., 1831, by whom no ch.
15. III. NICHOLAS EGBERT, b. 18 Aug., 1788, d. 23 Jan., 1872, m. *first*, 11 Apl., 1812, Elizabeth, dau. of Christopher Backer, b. 17 June, 1789, d. 21 Feb., 1852; m. *second*, Anna Krymer, wid. of John Rockfellow, of Round Valley, N. J., b. 29 May, 1791, d. 4 Mch., 1872; no ch. by last wife; Nicholas Egbert (15) was a prominent citizen of Tewksbury tp., serving frequently as a county freeholder, member of town com., and as town collector; in 1824 he was one of the incorporators and trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Soc., of New Germantown, N. J. For 10 ch. see p. 689.
16. IV. PETER, b. 2 Jan., 1791, d. 24 Jan., 1873, m. 12 Jan., 1813, Ruth, dau. of Amos Leake, of Chester, N. J., b. 8 Jan., 1793, d. 3 Nov., 1876; in 1832 he removed from New Jersey to Zanesville, Ohio, from there in 1847 to Owen Co., Indiana. For 13 ch. see p. 690.
17. V. ABRAHAM, b. 4 Apl., 1794, d. 2 Jan., 1855, m. 1814, Mariah (Sarah S), dau. of Christian Kline (C 3-I), b. 23 June, 1797, d. 29 Dec., 1867. For 9 ch. see p. 691.
18. VI. JAMES, of Peapack, N. J., b. 21 Mch., 1795, d. 29 Apl., 1868, m. 20 Sept., 1817, Lydia, dau. of Andrew Van Sickle, of Readington, N. J., b. 30 Apl., 1800, d. 27 Sept., 1874. For 7 ch. see p. 692.
19. VII. JOHN V., of Bedminster, F. J., b. 7 Feb., 1797, d. 1 May, 1857, m. 7 Mch., 1818, Mariah Brunt Able, of Peapack, N. J., b. 5 Apl., 1799, d. 31 Dec., 1885. For his 9 ch. see p. 693.
20. VIII. ELEANOR, b. 1 Sept., 1799, d. 6 Apl., 1867, m. in 1818, Andrew Van Sickle, of Readington, N. J., b. 23 Mch., 1797, d. in Nov., 1848. About 1822 she removed with her husband to Tompkins Co., N. Y., later to Steuben Co., where she died, had 6 ch.,
- I. ANDREW, b. 15 May, 1819, d. 3 Jan., 1860, m. 1840, Sarah, dau. of James Kennedy, their 2 ch., *Henry* and *John K.*
- II. JOHN M., res. Hornellsville, b. 13 Dec., 1820, m. 4 July, 1842, Ethylinda, dau. of Uriah Nicholls, of Mass., b. 3 Nov., 1819, their 3 ch., *Robert L.*, b. 1843, d. 1863; *Charles A.*, res. Hornellsville, b. 1848, m. 1876, Abbie Betts, 1 ch. dec.; *Emma*, b. 1858, d. 1863.
- III. HANNAH, b. 25 Feb., 1823, d. 3 Dec., 1865, m. about 1853, Robert Brundage, of Steuben Co., N. Y., their 2 ch., *Frank*, b. 1848, d. 1857, and *Ella*, b. about 1851.
- IV. PETER, b. 15 Apl., 1825, d. 10 Dec., 1878, m. Susan, dau. of Alvah Mead, of Steuben Co., their 2 ch., *Ellen* and *Sarah*.
- V. CHARLES, b. 12 Mar., 1832, d. 26 Dec., 1863, m. 1858, Sarah, dau. of Charles Coasting, of Steuben Co., their 1 ch., *Ernest*.
- VI. NELSON, b. 22 Sep., 1838, dec., m. Eliza dau. of Henry Harrison, of Alleghany Co., N. Y., 2 ch.; both dec.
21. IX. ELIZABETH, of Springdale, Ohio, b. 20 Nov., 1801, d. 7 Jan., 1852, m. 20 May, 1821, Charles Williams, of New Germantown, N. J., b. 12 Mch., 1797, d. 3 May, 1874, removed to Ohio about 1824; had ch.
- I. EDWIN, of Grundy Co., Mo., m. *first*, 22 Sep., 1844, Ann Adams, of Laurenceburg, Ind., b. 1826, d. 1872, by whom 8 ch., m. *second*, 8 Mar., 1875, Mrs. Helen Berry, b. Maybee, of Grundy Co., by whom no ch.; had ch. by first wife.
- Edwin C.*, b. 1845, d. 1851; *Ferdinand P.*, res. Browning, Sullivan Co., Mo., b. 24 Sep., 1847, m. 1873, Victoria A. Blackwood, b. in Jackson Co., W. Va., 16 May, 1851, and has 5 ch.; *Martin L.*, res. Custer Co., Montana, b. 6 Aug., 1850; *Walter D.*, res. Scottsville, Sullivan

- Co., Mo., b. 6 Apl., 1852, m. 31 Jan., 1882, Mrs. Ella J. Smith, b. 21 Sep., 1856, has one ch.; *Martha Elizabeth*, res. Keokuk, Iowa, b. 7 May, 1854, m. 20 Dec., 1871, E. H. Caywood, b. in Ohio, 1 Feb., 1850, has 4 ch.; *Cornelia B.*, b. 1856, d. 1874; *Charles*, b. 1859, d. 1860; *Charles T.*, b. 11 May, 1862 and another.
- II. SUSAN, of Clinton Co., Ind., b. 12 June, 1823, d. 4 Dec., 1872, m. *first*, 1842, John Emmons, of Preble Co., Ohio, b. 1811, d. 1854, by whom 4 ch.; m. *second*, 1856, Moses Davis, of Clinton Co., and had 2 daus., both decd.; had ch. by first husband, *Charles*, res. Frankfort, Clinton Co., Ind., b. 12 Dec., 1843, m. Frances Lucas, who d. 1889, has 2 ch.; *Elizabeth*, b. 1845, d. 1875, m. 1865, Edward Miller, b. 1840, had 5 ch.; *William*, res., Frankfort, Ind., b. 1847, m. 1872, Harriet V. McNelly, b. 1854, has had 6 ch.; *Martha Jane*, res. Frankfort, Ind., b. 1852, m. *first*, 1870, Samuel Moore, b. 1848, d. 1887, by whom 3 ch., all dec.; m. *second*, 1888, James Pickering, b. 1849.
- III. THOMAS, b. 1825, d. 1832.
- IV. PETER M., res. Lonoke, Ark., b. 4 Mch., 1827, m. 6 Apl., 1853, Elizabeth Ann Lucas, of Clinton Co., Ind., their 7 ch., *Newton L.*, b. 1854, m. 1875, Josephine Cameron, has 3 ch.; *Reuben*, b. 1857, d. 1885; *James A.*, b. 1863; *Charles*, b. 1868; *Marion and Samantha* (twins) b. 1872; *John*, b. 1877.
- V. HENRY CLAY, res. Hepler, Crawford Co., Kan., b. 25 Dec., 1828, d. 25 Oct., 1824, m. 1852, Hannah Morris, of Ohio; their 2 ch.; *Charles H.*, res. Cincinnati, O., b. 1853; *Clarence*, res. Hepler, Kan., b. 1867.
- VI. ISAAC NEWTON, b. 1830, m. *first*, Maria Pinckley, of Ohio, by whom 4 ch.; *Charles*; *Elizabeth*, dec.; *Edwin* and *Newton*; Isaac Newton (VI.) m. *second*, a widow, born Susan Marpole, by whom 3 ch., *Peter*, *Annie* and *John*. He served from 1861 to the end of the Civil War in an Ohio Reg't.
- VII. MARY JANE, b. 1833, d. 1853.
- VIII. ELIZABETH ELLEN, res. Springboro, Warren Co., Ohio, b. 23 Jan., 1836, m. 8 Apl., 1858, Samuel Stowe, of Salem Co., N. J., b. 1831, d. 1834, their 7 ch.; *Morris*, b. 1859, d. 1873; *Edward*, b. 1861; *Mary Jane*, b. 1863; *Charles W.*, b. 1867; *Clara B.*, b. 1870; *Laura M.*, b. 1872; *Louella*, b. 1879.
- IX. THOMAS, res. Platville, Taylor Co., Iowa, P. O. Athelstan, Mo., b. 28 Mch., 1838, m. in 1861, Julia House, of Ind., their 6 ch., *Camillus*; *Morton*; *Ida*; *Charles*; *Elizabeth*; *Mary*.
- X. SUSANNA, b. 21 Dec., 1803, dec. m. Cornelius Mefore, of Readington, N. J., and removed to Steuben Co., N. Y., had at least 2 ch.
- XI. CATHERINE ANN, b. 1807, d. 1809.

## FIFTH GENERATION (C).

Tunis Melick (13) had 3 ch.

22. I. SUSANNA, b. 9 Sep., 1806, d. 28 Dec., 1868, m. 29 Apl., 1824, Jacob D. Trimmer, b. 12 Aug., 1802, d. 27 July, 1864; had ch.
- I. ANTHONY M., res. Clinton, N. J., b. 24 Jan., 1825, m. 23 May, 1847, Mary Maloney, of Phila., b. 27 Nov., 1835; their 2 ch., *James M.*; *Mary A.*, who m. William C. Freeman, of Phillipsburg, N. J.
- II. SARAH ANN, b. 1827, d. 1883, m. 1847, Archibald R. Johnston, b. 1823; their 2 ch., *Mary A.*, res. New Hampton, N. J., b. 1852, m. Charles A. Underwood, and has 4 ch.; *Johanna*, res. Glen Gardner, N. J., b. 1857, m. J. Calvin Gardner.
- III. DAVID W., d. in infancy.
- IV. MARY ELIZABETH, b. 26 Mar., 1832, d. 28 June, 1866, unm.
- V. ELLEN ANGELINE, b. 25 Mch., 1834, d. 24 Dec., 1884, m. 18 Mar., 1858, Peter Todd, of Lamington, N. J., present res. Lambertville; no ch.
- VI. PETER W., res. Harford Mills, N. Y., b. 28 Dec., 1836, m. 19 Mch., 1862, Minerva L. Moore, of Liberty Corner, N. J., their 5 ch., *Mamie E.*, b. 1863 is m.; *Kate L.*, b. 1867, is m.; *Israel M.*, b. 1871; *Augusta M.*, b. 1873; *Lena B.*, b. 1877.
- VII. MARIA LOUISA, res. Lambertville, N. J., b. 26 July, 1840, m. 17 Jan., 1861, John C. Swayze, b. 1833, d. 1882, their 4 ch. d. in infancy.
- VIII. ANDREW V. S., b. 26 Feb., 1842, d. in infancy.



- IX. MARTIN LUTHER, b. 11 Aug., 1843, m. 16 Nov., 1869, Henrietta C., dau. of Stephen Beach, of Pluckamin, no ch.
- X. JACOB, A. W., b. 28 Aug., 1848, d. 12 May, 1863.
23. II. ANDREW VAN SYCKLE, b. 7 Feb., 1810, d. 12 June, 1863, m. 17 Mar., 1831, Rachel, dau. of John McKinsley, b. 15 Sep., 1811, d. 2 Mar., 1885, had 3 ch.
- I. SARAH JANE, res. Griggstown, N. J., b. 4 Aug., 1832, m. 29 Apl., 1858, Henry D. Wilson; their ch., I. *Mary McKinstry*, b. 4 Apl., 1859, m. 23 Aug., 1882, Abram Williamson, res. Lebanon, N. J., has 3 ch;
- II. *Andrew Luther*, b. Sept., 1866, unm.
- II. ANTHONY, res. New Germantown, N. J., b. 27 June, 1834, m. 3 Mch. 1868, Joanna, dau. of J. Mehelm Brown, of Pluckamin, N. J.; their 2 ch., I. *John M. B.*, b. 13 Sept., 1876; II. *Andrew V. S.*, b. 23 Aug., 1881.
- III. ANDREW LUTHER, b. 6 Oct., 1842, d. 29 Apl., 1863, at Acquia Creek, Va., while member of 31st Regt., N. J. Vols.
24. III. PETER WHITEFIELD, res. Barnet Hall, New Germantown, N. J., b. 21 Sep., 1823, m. *first*, 15 Oct., 1844, Catherine C., dau. of Jacob Apgar, of New Germantown, by whom 10 ch.; m. *second*, 27 Oct., 1870, Emma (Rea), widow of Charles Iliff, of Kansas, b. Aug., 1845, by whom 2 ch.; his 10 ch. by first wife.
- I. TUNIS DE WITT, b. 31 Oct., 1845, m. 22 Feb., 1872, Sarah M., dau. of Lawrence V. Studdiford, of South Branch, N. J., and has 7 ch., I. *Lawrence S.*; II. *Caroline C.*; III. *Sarah L.*; IV. *Etta*; V. *Florence*; VI. *Tunis*; VII. *Edith*.
- II. SARAH ELIZABETH, b. 25 Feb., 1847, d. 19 Apl., 1849.
- III. MARY JOSEPHINE, b. 7 May, 1849, d. 19 May, 1850.
- VI. ARABELLA, b. 13 Mch., 1851, d. 12 Feb., 1868.
- V. FRANKLIN, res. Garden City, Kansas, b. 23 July, 1853, m. a Swede, and has 3 ch.
- VI. CORILLA, b. 23 Jan., 1856, d. 17 Oct., 1862.
- VII. WILBUR FISKE, res. Ross Forks, Idaho Ter., b. 26 Oct., 1858, unm.
- VIII. GEORGIANA, b. 3 Aug., 1861, d. in infancy.
- IX. GEORGE WASHINGTON, res. Denver, Col., b. 18 July, 1862, unm.
- X. JACOB IRVING, res. Garden City, Kansas, b. 10 Nov., 1864, unm.
- Peter W. (24) had 2 ch. by second wife.
- XI. PETER WHITEFIELD, b. 17 Jan., 1873.
- XII. MARTIN RAUB, b. 13 June, 1874.

#### FIFTH GENERATION (C.)

Nicholas Egbert Melick (15) had 10 ch. by first wife.

25. I. PETER, b. 20 Nov., 1812, d. 21 May, 1878, m. *first*, 17 Apl., 1837, Jane Maria, dau. of Samuel Miller, of New Germantown, N. J., b. 7 Nov., 1815, d. 3 Aug., 1861; by whom 4 ch., m. *second*, 3 Mar., 1862, Kate, wid. of Siberno G. Larrinaga, b. 16 Feb., 1823, d. 1877; no ch., m. *third*, in autumn of that year Urania Cummings, no ch. In 1859 he removed to Lincoln, Nebraska, where he became a justice of the peace and prominent in affairs. For 4 ch. see p. 694.
26. II. CHRISTOPHER BACKER, res. Clinton, N. J., b. 31 Jan., 1815, m. 2 Nov., 1837, Maria V., dau. of Abraham Cortelyou, b. 30 Nov., 1818, d. 3 Apl., 1866. For his 10 ch. see p. 695.
27. III. JOHN WESLEY, of Ill., b. 18 July, 1817, d. 1871, m. Sep., 1841, Anne E., dau. of Jacob Apgar, of New Germantown, N. J., b. 9 Apl., 1822, d. 14 Apl., 1898.
28. IV. JAMES, res. New Germantown, N. J., b. 22 July, 1819, m. 5 June, 1845, Eme-line M., dau. of Bernhardt S. Kennedy, and granddau. of Revd. Saml. Kennedy, Basking Ridge, N. J., b. 8 Jan., 1823. (See pp. 159, 402) had 5 ch.
- I. ANNIE E., b. 1 Oct., 1847.
- II. EGBERT, b. 9 Feb., 1849, m. 17 Jan., 1878, Palmyra Louise, dau. of Richard Goodchild, artist; res., Bayonne, N. J.
- III. EDWIN R., b. 2 May, 1850.
- IV. LOUIS M., b. 14 Feb., 1855, m. 20 Oct., 1887, Ella A., dau. of John Hoff.
- V. ADELAIDE K., b. 19 Sept., 1861, m. 1 Jan., 1883, to Edward, son of David Park, b. 20 Oct., 1857, d. 10 Feb., 1884, res. New Germantown, N. J.

29. V. SUSAN A., b. 16 July, 1823, d. 16 May, 1855, m. Sep., 1845, William Creger, of Lebanon, N. J.; had 2 ch.,
  - I. ANNE ELIZABETH, b. 12 Mch., 1848, m. 18 Nov., 1876, George F. Case; no ch.
  - II. JOHN H., b. 27 Jan., 1852, m. 18 Nov., 1876, Louise J., dau. of George Apgar.
30. VI. EDWIN, res. Clinton, N. J., b. 20 Sep., 1824, m. 8 Oct., 1850, Phebe E., dau. of Aaron Dunham, b. 12 Jan., 1829; has one ch.,
  - I. AARON DUNHAM, b. 31 Aug., 1851, m. June, 5 1889, Estelle, dau. of Revd. T. H. Jacobus, of Somerville, N. J.,
31. VII. NICHOLAS T., d. in infancy.
32. VIII. WILLIAM J., res. 82 Congress St., Newark, b. 13 Nov., 1823, m. Jan., 1855, Mary E., dau. of Wm. B. Fisher, b. 28 Oct., 1856.
33. IX. CATHERINE, res. Pottersville, N. J., b. 16 Mch., 1831, d. 10 Jan., 1867, m. 16 Oct., 1851, Stephen M. Wortman, b. 23 Aug., 1827; he is an elder in the Reformed Church; had 7 ch.
  - I. MARY E., b. 26 Sep., 1852, d. 28 Aug., 1854.
  - II. ANNA L., res. 86 Elm St., Newark, b. 26 June, 1855, m. 13 Dec., 1873, John Rowe, b. 24 July, 1844; their 6 ch., *Addie C.*, b. 1874; *Mary E.*, b. 1876, d. in infancy; *Wm. W.*, b. 1878, d. 1882; *Alice C.*, b. 1881; *Harold W.*, b. 1884; *Hattie A.*, b. 1888.
  - III. MARY, res. Califon, N. J., b. 2 May, 1857, m. 1 Jan., 1880, Aaron K. Creger, b. 19 Nov., 1853; their 2 ch., *Lizzie*, b. 1881, d. in infancy, and *Herbert S.*, b. 1886.
  - IV. WILLIAM M., res. Pottersville, b. 22 Dec., 1859, m. 17 Oct., 1883, Milly S., dau. George Pickel, b. 13 May, 1860; their one ch., *Vernon P.*, b. 1886.
  - V. MARTHA, res. Peapack, N. J., b. 9 Jan., 1861, m. 6 Dec., 1882, Joseph M. Pickel, b. 16 Sep., 1859; their one ch., *Mamie V.*, b. 1883.
  - VI. EGBERT, b. 1862, d. 1864.
  - VII. KATE, res. Pottersville, b. 11 Sep., 1864, m. 9 Nov., 1886, Henry M. Rarick, b. 11 Nov., 1863; their one ch., *Mervyn W.*, b. 1888.
34. X. ELIZABETH L., b. 18 Apl., 1833, d. 23 Apl., 1876, m. 25 Dec., 1864, Samuel Sutton; had 9 ch.,
  - I. ESTHER ANNA, b. 14 Dec., 1855, d. 29 Mch., 1881, m. 29 Mch., 1879, had one dau.
  - II. CATHERINE LOUISA, res. New Germantown, b. 20 Feb., 1858, m. 8 Jan., 1881, Wm. Cox; their 3 ch., *Samuel Lewis*, b. 1881; *Stella Belle*, b. 1883; *William Johnson*, b. 1885.
  - III. WILLIAM E., b. 24 Aug., 1860, m. 24 Jan., 1885, Alice Apgar; no ch.
  - IV. EMMA ELIZ'ETH, res. Bloomingdale, Passaic Co., N. J., b. 19 Sep., 1862, m. 25 Dec., 1883, George H. Maxfield; their 2 ch., *John*, b. 1884, and *William*, b. 1887.
  - V. EGBERT MELICK, b. 1864, d. in infancy.
  - VI. EDWIN MELICK, b. 22 Apl., 1867.
  - VII. MARY WORTMAN, b. 19 July, 1870.
  - VIII. SAMUEL LINCOLN, b. 2 May, 1873.
  - IX. JENNY P., b. 1875, d. in infancy.

## FIFTH GENERATION (C.)

Peter Melick (16) had 13 ch.

35. I. MARTIN MEHL, res. Cuba, Owen Co., Ind., b. 9 Sep., 1814, m. 30 Mch., 1843, Martha Parrish, b. 11 Nov., 1824. For 8 ch. see p. 695.
36. II. MARTHA, res. Cuba, b. 2 Feb., 1816, unm.
37. III. ELIZABETH, res. Zanesville, Ohio, b. 11 Oct., 1817, m. 26 Mch., 1844, Peter Flesher, who d. 10 Dec., 1886; had 4 ch.,
  - I. NANCY, res. Zanesville, O., b. 24 Feb., 1845, m. 20 May, 1869, Perry Redman; their 2 ch., *Arthur B.*, b. 1870, and *Charles W.*, b. 1872.
  - II. SAMANTHA, res. Newark, Ohio, b. 28 Aug., 1846, m. 17 Jan., 1878, Milton Smith, no ch.
  - III. JOHN WESLEY, res. Zanesville, b. 9 Aug., 1848, m. 29 June, 1880, Matilda Urania Kine, no ch.
  - IV. RUTH ELLEN, b. 1850, d. 1877, no ch.
38. IV. NANCY, of Johnson Co., Ind., b. 21 Nov., 1819, d. 17 Dec., 1881, m. *first*, 1840, Wm. Wood, of Ohio, who d. about 1850; m. *second*, 1851, Isaac Farrand,

- of Ind., who d. about 1866; m. *third*, Wm. St. Johns, of Terre Haute, Ind.; m. *fourth*, Joseph T. Hall, of Franklin, Ind.; no ch.
39. V. PETER, res. Freedom, Owen Co., Ind., b. 22 Apl., 1822, m. 16 Dec., 1852, Kate Blair, b. in Tenn., 31 Oct., 1828; has one ch.
- I. JAMES RICHARD, b. 1 Sep., 1885, and is m.
40. VI SUSAN, res. Fish Creek, Madison Co., Mont. Terr., b. 13 Feb., 1824. m. 1850<sup>r</sup> Andrew J. Rundell, of Ind., has 7 ch.
- I. GEORGE A., b. 18<sup>th</sup> Mch., 1858, m. 18 Nov., 1880, Sarah E. Ravenscroft.
- II. WHITFIELD, b. 18 Aug., 1852.
- III. CHARLOTTE MELINDA, b. 12 Aug., 1857, m. 23 May, 1878, E. E. Rennix.
- IV. HENRY M., b. 23 June, 1859, m. 31 Dec., 1886, Dolly Sarry.
- V. FINLEY H., b. 23 Nov., 1861.
- VI. ALICE M., b. 8 Feb., 1864, m. 5 Nov., 1882, F. H. Scott.
- VII. ROSA L., b. 21 Oct., 1865, m. 10 Dec., 1882, E. E. Baker.
41. VII. CHARLOTTE, res. Cuba, b. 21 Oct., 1825 m. *first*, 1862, Walker Ennis, of Ind., who d. in 1879, m. *second*, 1882, David Coble, of Indiana, no ch.
42. VIII. JOHN, res. Cuba, b. 29 Mch., 1827, m. *first*, 1853, Sarah Gaston, b. 1829, d. 1881, m. *second*, 1882, Mary Ellen Wright, by whom no ch.; had 3 ch., by first wife.
- I. JAMES, b. 1854, d. in infancy.
- II. WILLIAM M., res. Spencer, Owen Co., Ind., b. 3 July, 1856, m. *first*, 4 July, 1882, Amanda Spears, who d. 1884, by whom one son, *Alvin R.*, b. 1884; m. *second*, 1886 Belle Hickson.
- III. HENRY, res. Lyons, Green Co., Ind., b. Apl., 1861, m. Sep., 1885, Rosa Gillespie, from whom div.; no ch.
43. IX. MARY ELLEN, res. Cuba, b. 25 Feb., 1829, m. 22 Apl., 1855, Washburn Ennis of Ind., from whom div., 1887; had 8 ch.,
- I. RUTH ELLEN, b. 1 Mch., 1856.
- II. WALKER, b. 16 Dec., 1857.
- III. JERUSHA ANN, res. Romney, Tippecanoe Co., Ind., b. 21 Feb., 1860, m. 19 Feb., 1880, Marcus Lafayette Spratt; their 4 ch., *Bertha H.*, b. 1881; *Cena Alice*, b. 1883; *Emma Gertrude*, b. 1884; *Anna B.*, b. 1887.
- IV. ROSA FLORENCE, b. 1862, d. in infancy.
- V. ALFRED O., b. 1 Apl., 1865.
- VI. THEODORE C., b. 23 Oct., 1867.
- VII. an infant twin bro. d. unm.
- VIII. TUNIS W., b. 28 Nov., 1870.
44. X. RUTH, res. Cuba, b. 10 Aug., 1832, m. 21 Aug., 1850, R. J. Rundell, of Ind.; had 6 ch.,
- I. PETER F., b. 29 July, 1851, d. 15 Apl., 1889, m. 1872, Samantha F. Cantwell; their 3 ch., *Ernest E.*, b. 1875; *Herbert*, b. 1880; *Elsie*, b. 1887.
- II. ALVIRA, b. 22 Mch., 1855, d. 5 Jan., 1889, m. 30 Nov., 1877, Shelton Ennis; their 1 ch., *Grace*, b. 1878.
- III. RILEY S., res. Indian Ter., b. 26 Aug., 1856, m. 1879, Elnora Criss; their 3 ch., *Bertha*, b. 1879; *Ossie*, b. 1880; *Otis*, b. 1881.
- IV. CYNTHIA A., res. Morgan Co., Ind., b. 6 Jan., 1858, m. 2 Oct., 1882, John Flake; no ch.
- V. ELMA E., res. Morgan Co., Ind., b. 26 Aug., 1859, m. 16 Dec., 1882, Alice Glover; their 3 ch., *Bertie*, b. 1884; *Pearl B.*, b. 1886; and a baby, b. 1888.
- VI. MINNIE B., b. 10 Jan., 1869.
- Peter (16) had 3 other ch. who d. in infancy.

## FIFTH GENERATION (C.)

Abraham Melick (17) had 9 ch.

45. I. LUCETTA, res. Paterson, N. J., b. 4 Apl., 1815, m. Garret C. Post, who is dec.; had ch.,
- I. MARY KATHERINE, res. Paterson, m. Wm. King; their one ch., *Abraham*.
- II. SARAH, m. John Crown, who is dec.; their 5 ch., *Zeno*; *Abraham*; *John*; *Buddie*; *Nelly*, m. Frank Arrison, of Paterson.
46. II. ELLEN, b. 16 Mar., 1817, d. 1871, m. *first*, Joseph Clearwater, of Paterson, who was drowned in Lake Hopatcong; m. *second*, Lawrence Hagar, of German Valley, N. J., dec.; no ch.



692 CHILDREN OF JAMES MELICK OF PEAPACK, N. J.

47. III. ELIZABETH M., b. 4 Dec., 1820, m. 1844, William Courter, of Paterson; their 5 ch.,
  - I. ALTHEUS, m. Carrie Haslar, no ch.
  - II. SIBERNO, G. L., res. Rutherford, N. J., m. Emma Consaul; their 2 ch. *Altheus*, and *Edith*.
  - III. EMMA, res. Elizabeth, N. J., m. James Harris; their 3 ch.; *DeWitt*; *Wilhelmina*; *Jane Elizabeth*.
- IV. V. Two sons d. in infancy.
48. IV. CATHERINE, b. 1823, d. 1877, m. *first* Siberno G. Larrinaga, a Cuban; m. *second*, 3 Mch., 1862, Peter Melick (C. 25), of Lincoln, Neb., no ch.
49. V. MARY, res. Chester, N. J., b. 24 Mch., 1826, m. Joseph Berry; their 4 ch.
  - I. ELLA, m. Richard Engelman, of Peapack, N. J.
  - II. SABINA, m. Richd. Treadway, of Chester.
  - III. ABRAHAM.
  - IV. JANE.
50. VI. JOSEPH H., res. Joilet, Ill., b. 15 Sep., 1828, m. *first*, 4 Nov., 1856, Mary E., dau. of John Bosenbury, of New Germantown N. J., m. *second*, 1876, Mary, dau. of Garret L. Emmons, of N. G., by whom no ch.; had ch. by first wife.
  - I. ABRAHAM, b. 5 Feb., 1858, d. 15 Jan., 1861.
  - II. CLARA, b. 12 Apl., 1860, m. 10 Dec., 1879, Israel Howell, of Hopewell, N. J., no ch.
  - III. ROBERT D., res. Chicago, Ill., b. 11 Feb., 1862, unm.
  - IV. ANNA DEWITT, b. 12 Dec., 1864, m. 24 May, 1887, Abraham Hall, of New Germantown; their one ch., *Allen H.*, b. 1888.
51. VII. WILLIAM C., res. Newark, N. J., b. 16 Sep., 1833, m. 13 Oct., 1858, Harriet, dau. of Garret L. Emmons, of New Germantown, b. 9 Nov., 1837, d. 25 June, 1886; had ch.,
  - I. EMMA DELORA, b. 1859, m. George Duran, of Newark, N. J., their one ch. d. in infancy.
  - II. JEROME E., res. Newark, b. 7 Dec., 1860, unm.
  - III. ABRAHAM LINCOLN, res. Newark, b. 2 Jan., 1863, unm.
  - IV. JENNY, b. 18 Nov., 1866, m. Edgar L. Courter, of Newark.
  - V. LIZZIE, b. 10 May, 1873.
  - VI. WILLIAM, b. 3 Oct., 1877.
52. VIII. ANGELINE, b. 1836, d. 1832.
53. IX. EMMA R., res. Paterson, N. J., b. Aug., 1837.

FIFTH GENERATION (C.)

James Melick (18) had 7 ch.

54. I. PETER V., b. 14 Aug., 1818, d. 1848, at Toledo, O., m. 1 Nov., 1838, Elizabeth, dau. of Capt. Henry A. Post, of Readington, N. J., b. 9 Feb., 1820; had 4 ch.
  - I. MARTHA ANN, b. 1839, d. 1882, m. Peter Sutphen, of North Branch, N. J.; their 10 ch., *Augusta*; *Anna*, m. Charles Stevens, of Plainfield; N. J., *Wilson*; *Elizabeth*; *Alice*; *Emma*; *Jane*; *Mary*; *Susan*; *Joseph*.
  - II. JAMES HENRY, res. Somerville, N. J., b. 31 May, 1841, m. Sarah Ann, dau. of Joseph S. Ten Eyck, of South Branch, N. J.; their 5 ch., *George A.*, b. 13 Oct., 1865; *William T.*, b. 15 Oct., 1866; *Stephen H.*, b. 1868, d. 1888; *Mary Ella*, b. 19 May, 1870; *Eva T.*, b. 1872, d. 1874.
  - III. GEORGE ANDERSON, b. 27 June, 1843, a private in 2nd N. J. Cavalry during Civil war, captured in Tenn. and confined at Andersonville, Ga., afterwards at Florence, S. C., where he is supposed to have died.
  - IV. MARY JANE, res. Killisca, Iowa, b. 22 July, 1846, m. Lewis E. Ellick; their 5 ch., *Charles*, d. 1884; *Annie P.*; *George A.*; *John D.*; *Frank*.
55. II. ANTHONY, of Peapack, N. J., b. 1 Aug., 1820, d. May, 1851, m. 1842, Jane Dalley, of Bedminster; their 2 ch.,
  - I. LYDIA, b. 1847, m. Dr. Erastus Marshall, of Mass., who is dec.; no ch.
  - II. SUSAN ANN, b. 1849, d. 1874, unm.
56. III. REBECCA, b. 3 Sep., 1822, d. 4 July, 1868, m. 1841, Isaac L. Philhower, of Peapack, N. J., had 5 ch.,
  - I. JOHN, res. Peapack, b. 1842, m. Mary, dau. of Silas Thompson, of Mendham, N. J.; has 2 ch.

## CH. OF DAVID B., JOHN L., JOHN V. & PETER MELICK. 693

- II. ISAAC, res. Peapack, m. Matilda, dau. of Adrian H. Pickel, of White House, N. J.; has one ch.
- III. LEWIS, b. 14 Oct., 1857, d. 27 Apl., 1879.
- IV. EMILY, b. 1860, d. 1868.
- V. CYRUS, res. Florida.
- 57. IV. DAVID BARTINE, of Peapack, N. J., b. 13 May, 1825, d. 4 Jan., 1880, m. 30 Nov., 1859, Mary A., dau. of Robert Woodruff, of Mendham, N. J., b. 18 May, 1840, had 4 ch.,
  - I. JAMES ROBERT, b. 28 Oct., 1860, d. 2 Aug., 1884.
  - II. GEORGE WOODRUFF, res. Montclair, N. J., b. 24 Aug., 1868.
  - III. MARY CAROLINE, b. 2 Oct., 1870.
  - IV. DAVID BARTINE, b. 13 May, 1872.
- 58. V. ANDREW VAN SYCKLE, b. 11 June, 1829, d. Sep., 1867, in California, leaving a wife, 4 sons, and 1 dau., who remain there.
- 59. VI. SUSAN, res. Peapack, N. J., b. 3 June, 1832, m. 14 Dec., 1853, Elias Philhower, b. 28 May, 1832; had 4 ch.,
  - I. \*ANNIE, b. 22 Aug., 1856, m. 3 Apl., 1876, Amos Blain, of Peapack; has 5 ch.
  - II. LAURA, b. 28 Feb., 1858, m. 14 Nov., 1877, Jonathan Tharpe, of Peapack, had 5 ch.
  - III. EMMA JANE, b. 6 Apl., 1863, m. 3 Feb., 1883, Elmer De Kyne; has 3 ch.
  - IV. RACHAEL, b. 17 Oct., 1867, m. 31 Dec., 1885, James Rodenbaugh, of Clinton, N. J.; has 1 ch.
- 60. VII. JOHN LENHART, of Peapack, N. J., b. 5 May, 1835, d. 25 Feb., 1870, m. 1 Sep., 1858, Angeline, dau. of Jacob Petrie, of Peapack; had 5 ch.,
  - I. AUGUSTA, b. 1861, m. a Lindaberry, of Tewksbury, and had one ch., *Edna*.
  - II. ELI, res. Pottersville, N. J., b. 11 June, 1863, m. 1885, Fanny, dau. of Abraham Cole, of Peapack; their 1 ch., *Addie*, b. 1888.
  - III. BERTHA, b. in 1865, unm.
  - IV. JOHN, b. Feb., 1868.
  - V. MARY, b. in 1872.

### FIFTH GENERATION (C).

John V. Melick (19) had 9 ch.

- 61. I. PETER, res. Mendham, N. J., b. 27 Nov., 1821, m. 14 Sep., 1842, Margaret, dau. of Cornelius La Tourette, b. 10 Aug., 1823; had 6 ch.
  - I. MARIA JANE, b. 28 Sept., 1843, m. 28 Oct., 1868, John L. Denton, b. 29 July, 1843; res. Cuba. Mo.
  - II. GERTRUDE, b. 23 Aug., 1845, d. 13 May, 1882, m. 21 July, 1863, E. A. Weeks, b. 2 Mch, 1839; res. Somerville, N. J.; had ch., I. *Charles F.*, b. 23 Sept., 1864, d. 30 July, 1867; II. *Wilbur Kelsey*, b. 23 Oct., 1871; III. *Louis Berge*, b. 28 Nov., 1873.
  - III. ELIZABETH, b. 10 June, 1848, d. 20 July, 1887, m. 29 Jan., 1878, John M. Crane, b. 3 May, 1842; res. Mendham, N. J.; had ch., I. *John Samuel*, b. 25 Feb., 1880; II. *Howard Clayton*, b. 21 Nov., 1882.
  - IV. ANNA, b. 29 July, 1850, m. William Ballentine, b. 6 Dec., 1853; res. Irvington, N. J.; had ch., I. *Lena*, b. 16 Aug., 1874; II. *Jane*, b. 29 Feb., 1876; III. *Raymond Peter*, b. 26 Oct., 1876, d. 27 July, 1878; IV. *Margaret*, b. 28 May, 1886.
  - V. ELLA, b. 6 Apl., 1858, d. 3 June, 1865.
  - VI. JOHN WALTER, b. 29 Nov., 1862, m. Annie V. D. Fleury, b. 3 Mch., 1868; res. Morristown, N. J.; had ch., I. *Victor Raymond*, b. 30 May, 1887.
- 62. II. WILLIAM TENNENT, res. Peapack, N. J., b. 4 Apl., 1821, m. 8 Dec., 1842, Rachel Ann, dau. of John Philhower, of Peapack, b. 19 June, 1825, had 3 ch.
  - I. HARRIET ANN, b. 13 Dec., 1843, m. Jacob Flomerfelt, of Peapack; their 6 ch. *William T.*, b. 12 May, 1867; *Frederick T.*, b. 1871, d. 1875; *Laura M.*, b. 28 May, 1876; *Rachael M.*, b. 21 Jan., 1878; *James A.*, b. 21 July, 1885; *Cyrus N.*, b. 1887, d. in infancy.
  - II. CYRUS H., res. Newark, b. 18 Oct., 1845, m. Sarah, dau. of Zachariah Flomerfelt, of Peapack; their 3 ch., *Era*, b. 2 Aug., 1868; *J. Walter*, b. 16 Feb., 1870; *William Tennent*, b. 15 Aug., 1873.

694 CH. OF WM. T., ERNEST E., AND JOHN V. MELICK.

- III. LAURA V., b. 7 Dec., 1852, d. 24 Apl', 1882, m. Henry Savage, of Peapack; their 1 ch., *J. Chester*, b. 2 Nov., 1878.
- 63. SUSAN E., res. New Germantown, N. J., b. 14 Aug., 1828, m. 21 Feb., 1850. John Lane; had 6 ch.
  - I. ANNA LAVINIA, b. 27 Jan., 1850, m. 1 June, 1870, Elias Miller, of Pottersville, N. J.; their 4 ch., *Lizzie*, d. in infancy, *Lillie Almita*; *Emma L.*; *Raymond P.*
  - II. ERNEST E., res. Pluckamin, N. J., b. 5 Sept., 1852, m. 24 Oct., 1877, Abby Louisa, dau. of Elisha Waldron, of New Germantown; their 2 ch., *Maud W.*; *Edith Louisa*.
  - III. LOUISA, M., b. 7 July, 1854, m: 26 Nov., 1873, Peter V. Vroom, of Pluckamin; their 4 ch., *John W.*, *Margaret L.*, *Charles P.*, *Susan Bernetta*.
  - IV. JOHN WARREN, b. 1859, d. 1864.
  - V. MATTHEW RAYMOND, res. New Germantown, b. 2 Nov., 1864.
  - VI. EMMA ELIZABETH, b. 4 May, 1867.
- 64. IV. JANE, res. Newark, N. J., b. 5 Mar., 1830, m. 15 Dec., 1849, Andrew Smith Cole, of Peapack, N. J., who d. 27 Nov., 1875; had 6 ch.
  - I. JOHN H., res., Westfield, N. J., b. 9 July, 1851, m. Dec., 1872, Ada Pound; their 2 ch., *Victor*, *Beulah*.
  - II. LILLIE WILLANA, b. 27 Nov., 1853, m. 1872, Philetus Smith, of N. Y. C.; their 2 ch., *Clarence*; *Harold*.
- III. CHARLES I., res. Newark, N. J., b. 3 Sept., 1855, m. 1881, Minnie Benedict, their 2 ch., *Millicent*, *Frank*.
- IV. ALVAN, res. California, b. 3 Oct., 1857, m. 1885, Cetha B. Martin, of Cal.; no ch.
- V. ANDREW F., res. Newark, b. 22 Nov., 1859, unm.
- VI. KATE FRANCES, b. 16 Aug., 1863, m. 14 Nov., 1883, Orlando W. Young, of Newark; no ch.
- VII. JENNIE MAN, b. 1869, d. 1871.
- 65. V. ERNEST E., res. New Germantown, N. J., b. 30 Jan., 1832, m. 2 Mar., 1854, Fannie T., dau. of David T. Hoffman, of Potterstown, N. J., had 5 ch.
  - I. JOHN E. V., res. Springfield, Ill., b. 1 Sept., 1855, m. 2 Dec., 1879, Frances Althea Sprague; no ch.
  - II. PETER P., res. Kansas City, Mo., b. 9 July, 1859, m. 10 Jan., 1888, Jennie Cardegan, of Ill., b. 10 Sept., 1864.
  - III. ARTEN W., b. 26 Sept., 1865.
  - IV. CAIUS CASSIUS, res. New Germantown, b. 12 Mar., 1868.
  - V. SEROSA, b. 18 June, 1873.
- 66. VI. MARIA LAVINIA, b. 5 Feb., 1834, m. 14 Feb., 1856, Austen Clark, of New Germantown, had 3 ch.
  - I. SAMUEL, res. Morristown, N. J., m. Harriet, dau. of Peter Apgar, of Peapack, and has 1 ch.
  - II. SALLIE, m. James Apgar, of Peapack, and has 3 ch.
  - III. MAGGIE.
- 67. VII. JOHN V., res. New Germantown, N. J., b. 25 Nov., 1836, m. 28 Mar., 1860, Margaretta, dau. of John Craig, of New Germantown, b. in 1839; had 3 ch.
  - I. JOHN ELMER, res. Brooklyn, L. I., b. 8 Sept., 1861, unm.
  - II. WALTER CAMERON, b. 1 Jan., 1863; unm.
  - III. EUDORA ELOISE, b. 22 Jan., 1865, unm.
- 68. VIII. EMELINE, res. New Germantown, b. 4 May, 1843, m. 1 Jan., 1868, Jacob Specht, b. 1837, their 1 ch., *Everetta*, b. 1869
- 69. IX. SARAH, b. 1 April, 1845, d. in infancy.

SIXTH GENERATION (C).

Peter Melick (25) had 4 ch.

- 70. I. MARY ELIZABETH, b. 8 Jan., 1838, m. 28 Feb., 1861, Adam Harriman, b. 17 Mch., 1834; had 11 ch., I. LILY J., b. 23 Sept., 1861; II. FANNY K., b. 6 Dec., 1862, d. 20 Feb., 1864; III. CHARLES, M. D., b. 15 Feb., 1865; IV. SAMUEL E., b. 6 Sept., 1867; V. MICHA E., b. 7 Jan., 1869; VI. EUGENE O., b. 7 Jan., 1871; VII. ETHEL M., b. 8 Oct., 1872; VIII. LIZZIE A., b.



- 1874, d. 1 Apl., 1878; IX. ALEXANDER, b. 8 Feb., 1877; X. LULU M., b. 4 June, 1879; XI. MILLER, b. 17 Sept., 1881, d. 14 Mch., 1882.
71. II. EMMA J., b. 31 Jan., 1842, m. 13 Mch., 1873, Warren Hallett, b. 15 Feb., 1833; had 2 ch., I. MAGGIE C., b. 30 Dec., 1875, d. 26 July, 1880; II. OLIVER, b. 2 Oct., 1877.
72. III. NICHOLAS EGBERT, res. Davey, Lancaster Co., Neb., b. 25 Aug., 1847, m. 28 Mch., 1873, Priscilla, dau. of James M. Scott, b. 13 Dec., 1845; Nicholas Egbert was justice of the peace for 6 years following 1882; has had 8 ch., I. EGBERT, b. 23 Mch., 1873, d. in infancy; II. KATIE M., b. 9 June, 1874; III. CAROLINE M., b. 12 Nov., 1875; IV. CHAS. WESLEY, b. 20 May, 1877; V. FRANK E., b. 2 Dec., 1878; VI. EMMA PRISCILLA, b. 8 Nov., 1880; VII. BERTHA LUCILLA, b. 24 June, 1882; VIII. MARION MAUD, b. 5 Nov., 1883.
73. IV. SAMUEL M., b. 24 Mch. 1850, res. Lincoln, Neb., now (1888) and has been for 6 years sheriff of Lancaster Co.; m. *first*, 25 Feb., 1869, Maria F., dau. of Philip Ogan, b. 1. Jan., 1848, d. 19 June, 1880; m. *second*, 29 Dec., 1881, Mrs. Catherine Langdon Dewey, dau. of Milton Langdon, b. 29 Mch., 1856; had ch. by first wife; I. MINNIE M., b. 4 Dec., 1870; II. MAY E., b. 13 Mch., 1872; III. WALTER W., b. 12 Apl., 1873; IV. SAMUEL M. JR., b. 14 Nov., 1874, d. 10 Aug., 1875; V. NELLIE J., b. 8 Feb., 1876, d. 9 Apl., 1879; VI. URANIA R., b. 17 May, 1878, d. 15 Apl., 1879.

## SIXTH GENERATION (C.)

Christopher Backer Melick (26) had 10 ch.

74. I. ELIZABETH, res. Pittstown, N. J., b. 28 Sep., 1838, m. 1868, Martin Frace; has one dau.
75. II. ABRAHAM C., b. 2 Jan., 1840, d. 12 Apl., 1857.
76. III. N. THEODORE, res. Clinton, N. J., b. 5 Aug., 1841, m. 19 Dec., 1866, Catherine Ann, dau. of Elias W. Haver, of Lebanon, N. J.
77. IV. ELLEN L., b. 25 Mch., 1843, unm.
78. V. JOHN WESLEY, res. Clinton, N. J., b. 29 Feb., 1845, m. May, 1868, Susan J., dau. of James Boss, of Clinton.
79. VI. LAURA ANN, b. 28 Dec., 1848, unm.
80. VII. CATHERINE C., res. Pittstown, N. J., b. 24 June, 1852, m. 6 Dec., 1876, David M. Bird; has 3 ch.
81. VIII. WILLIAM KELLY, res. Clinton, b. 1 Sep., 1854, m. 14 June, 1876, Minnie A., dau. of Isaac K. Demott, of Clinton; she d. Mch., 1887.
82. IX. ALICE EMELINE, res. Jutland, N. J., b. 19 Apl., 1856, m. 27 Nov., 1879, Theodore Housell; has one dau.
83. X. PHEBE GARETTA, res. Cherryville, N. J., b. 5 Oct., 1859, m. 15 Dec., 1880, William K. Hoffman.

## SIXTH GENERATION (C.)

Martin Mehl Melick (35) had 8 ch.

84. I. CYNTHIA A., of Quincy, Owen Co., Ind., b. 22 Apl., 1844, d. 4 Oct., 1885, m. 18 Dec., 1865, William H. Steel; had 8 ch., I. ADOLPHUS M., res. Petersburg, Pike Co., Ind., b. 27 Nov., 1866; II. JOHN S., b. 27 Aug., 1868; III. MARGARET E., b. 18 Aug., 1871; IV. DELLA M., b. 16 July, 1873; V. FLORESIE M., b. 18 Dec., 1875; VI. WILLIAM J., b. 3 Nov., 1877; VII. DASIE, b. 8 Aug., 1881; VIII. DOVIE A., b. 5 May, 1884.
85. II. WILLIAM J., res. Cataract, Owen Co., Ind., b. 1 Aug., 1845, m. 27 Feb., 1868, Sarah Ennis; had 8 ch., who all d. in infancy.
86. III. RUTH T., res. Spencer, Owen Co., Ind., b. 16 Jan., 1848, m. 1870, William H. Medaris; has 9 ch., I. MINNIE, b. 1870; II. CHARLES, b. 1872; III. LESSIE M., b. 15 Apl., 1873; IV. ORIE L., b. 30 Sep., 1874; V. STEPHEN C., b. 8 July, 1875; VI. LUTHER, b. 3 Feb., 1877; VII. THOMAS E., b. 10 Jan., 1879; VIII. MARTHA, b. 15 Mch., 1882; IX. WILLIAM R., b. 4 Oct., 1885.
87. IV. MARY E., res. Spencer, Ind., b. 11 Oct., 1850, m. 26 Oct., 1874, Ozias W. Evans; has 4 ch., I. OSCAR, b. 30 Nov., 1876, II. LUTHER J., b. 6 Mar., 1879; III. WINFIELD H., b. 31 May, 1885; EMMETT E., b. 9 Mch., 1887.
88. V. CATHERINE C., of Danville, Ind., b. 26 Nov., 1854, d. 19 Dec., 1882, m. 14 Dec., 1878, Levi H. Brown; no ch.

89. VI. EMMA E., res. Pike Co., Ind., b. 6 Mch., 1856, m. 18 Dec., 1879, Oliver P. Hackathorne; has 2 ch., I. ADA L., b. 24 Mch., 1881; II. DALTON H., b. 20 July, 1887.
90. VII. LUTHER M., res. Cuba, Ind., b. 25 Nov., 1859.
91. VIII. THEODORE T., res. Cuba, Ind., b. 23 Aug., 1862, m. 12 Feb., 1885, Ida L. Corns; has 2 ch., I. GOLDIE A., b. 24 Nov., 1885; GLADYS G., b. 7 Dec., 1886.

### JOHAN DAVID MOELICH (DAVID MELICK) (D).

of Hunterdon Co., N. J., and his descendants.

1. JOHAN DAVID MOELICH was the son of Hans Peter (VIII) of Bendorf on the Rhine, and the grandson of Jonas (V), who migrated to that place from Winnigen on the Moselle, in 1688. David Melick, as he was known in later life, was born 12 Oct., 1715, in Bendorf; with that his record ends in Germany. The date of his emigration to America is unknown, but he next appears as a trustee in 1749, of Zion Lutheran church in New Germantown, in Lebanon, now Tewksbury township, Hunterdon Co., N. J., and in 1757 was one of the two church wardens of that congregation. His wife was probably named Elizabeth, as Elizabeth Melick, a widow, stood sponsor at the baptism of David, the eldest child of his son Christian. David's (1) eldest brother Jonas, b. 27 July, 1710, d. in Mch., 1788, probably came with him to America, as this brother was also a prominent member of Zion Lutheran congregation at New Germantown, and in 1755 was elected the first constable of the newly formed township of Tewksbury. David died about the year 1764; he certainly had four children perhaps more, (see pp. 79, 628.)

### SECOND GENERATION (D).

David Melick (1) had 4 children.

2. I. CHRISTIAN, often called Christopher, b. in 1744, d. in 1788, m. Anna, dau. of Balthazar Pickel, 2d, and granddau. of Balthazar Pickel, of White House, and of Zion Congregation, New Germantown, N. J. She was born 9 Apl., 1749, d. in N. Y. city, 23 Jan., 1823, as the widow of Rev. William Graff, of New Germantown, and is buried at Lebanon, N. J., Christian spent most of his life in Tewksbury township, removing shortly before his death to Woodbridge, Middlesex Co., where he is buried, his tombstone being marked Christopher. For his 6 ch. see p. 696.
3. II. PETER, b. in 1754, d. 17 Nov., 1829, m. Hannah Gillespie. For his 6 ch. see p. 697.
4. III. LEONARD, b. in 1760, d. at Oak Tree, near Plainfield, N. J., in 1813, m. Mary Glaspey, of Woodbridge, N. J. For his 7 ch. see p. 698.
5. IV. A DAUGHTER, who m. Peter Hendershot, and who d. in Sept., 1778, and is buried in the Lutheran graveyard at New Germantown.

### THIRD GENERATION (D).

Christian Melick (2) had 6 ch.

6. I. DAVID, of New Germantown, N. J., (sometimes called "Captain David,") b. 29 Nov., 1767, the sponsors at his baptism being Christian Sturm and Elizabeth Melick, d. at res. of his brother Balthazer, in N. Y. city, 5 Nov., 1825, buried at Lebanon, N. J., m. 12 Oct., 1794, Margaret, dau. of John Swoloff, of New Germantown. For his 6 ch. see p. 698.
7. II. BALTHAZER, P., of New York city, b. 26 Oct., 1770, the sponsors at his baptism being Balthazar Pickel, and wife, d. 20 Nov., 1835, unm.; at the age of thirteen he went to New York carrying his worldly effects upon his back. Securing a situation in a mercantile house his industry

and capabilities ensured rapid advancement until at the early age of twenty-one he was admitted to a partnership. For many years he was a prosperous merchant being the founder of the great commercial house of Melick & Burger, which did a heavy West India business at 76 Washington St. The firm owned vessels plying between New York and Santa Cruz, among them the ship "Chase," a famous craft of that day, whose captain was David Rogers, afterwards prominent in the sugar trade. Baltus Melick, as he was called, was the secretary of a social club called "The Friary," of which Dr. Charles Buxton was the Chancellor and which met every first and third Sunday in the month at 56 Pine St. He was the first president of the Chemical Bank, holding the position for seven years until his death; his will divided a considerable estate between his brothers, sisters, nephews, nieces, and appointed as executors his sister "Susan," his brother "Jonas and his nephew Balthazer;" he is buried at Lebanon, N. J.

8. III. SOPHIA, of New Germantown, b. 17 Oct., 1774, the sponsors at her baptism being Godfrey Reinhart and wife, d. 23 June, 1849, m. 8 Mch., 1807, William Lambert, b. 1 Mch., 1782, d. 31 Aug., 1854; had 3 ch.
  - I. SUSAN A., b. 22 Mch., 1808, d. 28 Mch., 1887, m. 20 June, 1832, Adam Reger, of White House, N. J., b. 7 Aug., 1826, d. 1 Sep., 1868; their ch., *Sarah Sophia*, b. 30 Oct., 1833, d. 13 Mch., 1856, m. 1 Jan., 1855, Peter H. Diamond, of N. Y., and had one ch., who d. in infancy; *Elizabeth M.*, b. 15 Mch., 1840, d. 25 Oct., 1863; *Garett L.*, b. 4 Nov., 1842, d. 27 July, 1867, m. 20 Feb., 1866, David N. Foster, of N. Y.; left one ch., Frederick, who is married and lives at Terre Haute, Ind.
  - II. JEREMIAH, of N. Y., b. 12 Jan., 1812, d., 30 Oct., 1866, m. 11 Mch., 1840, Garetta V. D., dau. of Simon Vliet, of Bedminster, N. J.; their ch., *William*, res. N. Y., who m. 23 May, 1880, Fanny, dau. of R. S. Tallmadge, of N. Y.; *John James*, res. N. Y., who m. 24 Feb., 1874, Josie Oakford, and has 2 ch.; *Anna Elizabeth*, res. N. Y.
  - III. ELIZABETH CHICHESTER, of New Germantown, b. 12 Oct., 1816, d. 21 Apl., 1847, m. 1 Mar., 1838, John P. S. Miller, of New Germantown, and left no ch.
9. IV. JONAS, of Round Valley, N. J., b. 10 Feb., 1777, the sponsors at his baptism being Jonas Melick and wife, d. 31 Dec., 1859, m. in 1803 Catherine, dau. of Matthew Adams, b. 12 July, 1783, d. 8 Sep., 1850; for his 11 ch. see p. 698.
10. V. ELIZABETH, of N. Y., b. 18 Aug., 1783, the sponsors at her baptism being Daniel Schaefer and wife, d. 23 Nov., 1866, m. *first*, Gilbert Chichester, a merchant of N. Y., who d. 7 Sep., 1852, aged 66, by whom no ch.; *second*, 16 June, 1859, David Neighbour, res. German Valley, N. J., b. 25 Nov., 1797, and still living; she is buried at Lebanon.
11. VI. SUSAN, of N. Y., b. 26 Dec., 1785, the sponsors at her baptism being her parents; d. 24 Aug., 1871; m. in 1838, Simon Vliet, of Bedminster, N. J., b. in 1783, d. 8 Apl., 1868; no ch.

### THIRD GENERATION (D.)

Peter Melick (3) had 6 ch.

12. I. DAVID, b. in 1790, d. 19 Oct., 1827, m. Mary, dau. of Hon. Ephraim Harriott, of Woodbridge, N. J.; had one son who d. at age of 20.
13. II. PETER B., b. 8 Aug., 1798, d. 8 May, 1872, m. 5 Feb., 1823, Mary Moore, dau. of William Harriott, of Woodbridge, N. J. For his 4 ch. see p. 699.
14. III. JOEL, res. Rahway, N. J., b. 26 May, 1803, unm.
15. IV. PARMELIA, m. a Dixon of N. Y. City, address of her son, Geo. W. Dixon, 333 Washington St., N. Y. C.
16. V. HARRIET, b. 2 Oct., 1800, d. 12 Jan., 1875, m. 1821, Nicholas La Forge, b. 20 Dec., 1798, d. 19 July, 1881; had 5 ch., all d. in early youth excepting one dau., FRANCES A., b. Sep. 2, 1836, res. Rahway, N. J.
17. VI. MARY, b. 22 Oct., 1806, d. 15 Aug., 1867, m. 28 Dec., 1842, James Kaseby, b. 11 July, 1814, d. 22 Nov., 1870; had 2 ch., I. FRANCES ADELIA, b. 25 Jan., 1845, d. infancy; II. MARY ANNA, b. 7 Oct., 1849, m. in 1870 William Ellis who d. in 1882, has 5 ch.



## THIRD GENERATION (D).

Leonard Melick (4) had 7 ch.

18. I. FANNY, b. in 1787, d. in Apl., 1853.
19. II. NANCY, b. in 1789, d. 25 Dec., 1858, m. William Adams; res. of her dau. Althea Hart, Metuchen, N. J.
20. III. JOHN, b. in 1791, d. 8 Aug., 1856, m. Mary F. Clarkson, b. in 1800, d. 25 May, 1851. For 6 ch. see p. 700.
21. IV. HANNAH, b. in 1794, d. in 1859, m. Joseph Bower, of N. Y. City; had 2 ch.,  
I. MARGARET ANN, unm.  
II. ELIZABETH, m. Jerry Yearance.
22. V. DAVID B., of Rahway, N. J., b. in Hunterdon Co., in 1797, d. 13 Aug., 1867, m. 1829, Mary E., dau. of John Campbell, of Metuchen, N. J., b. in 1799, d. 31 Oct., 1839; had 4 ch.,  
I. MARY ELIZABETH, b. 1 Oct., 1831, unm.  
II. JOHN L., b. 1 Feb., 1833, unm.  
III. HENRY C., b. 18 Jan., 1835, unm.  
IV. CECELIA ANN, b. 30 July, 1837, d. in Aug., 1839. Mary, John, and Henry occupy a homestead farm adjoining the city of Plainfield, N. J.
23. VI. ISAAC B., of Plainfield, N. J., b. 31 Aug., 1801, d. 22 Nov., 1871, m. Sarah M. Thorp, b. 14 Feb., 1811, d. 20 Jan., 1887. For his 14 ch. see p. 701.
24. VII. ALTHEA, b. in 1803, d. in 1850, m. Randolph Morris; res. of her son Randolph Morris, South Plainfield, N. J.

## FOURTH GENERATION (D.)

David Melick (6) had 6 ch.

25. I. JOHN S., of New Germantown, b. 3 Nov., 1795, d. in 1865, m. Eva Elizabeth, dau. of Jacob Appgar, of Cokesburg, N. J., b. in 1790, d. 3 Apl., 1857. For his 4 ch. see p. 701.
26. II. CHRISTOPHER, of Lambertville, N. J., b. 3 Aug., 1797, d. in Feb., 1854, m. in 1827, Elizabeth, dau. of Gershom Lambert, of Lambertville, who d. in Jan., 1868. For his 5 ch. see p. 701.
27. III. BALTHAZER, of Somerville, N. J., b. 27 Aug., 1799, d. 9 Dec., 1868, was for many years a merchant in N. Y., m. *first*, Mary Ann, dau. of Asa Hall, of N. Y., d. about 1834, by whom 2 ch.; m. *second*, Charlotte S., dau. of Asa Hall, of N. Y., b. 26 Jan., 1809, d. 14 Sep., 1875, by whom 5 ch. For his 7 ch. see p. 702.
28. IV. WILLIAM GRAFF, of New Germantown, b. 9 Feb., 1801, d. in 1857, m. Rebecca Hunter, of New Germantown, who d. in Feb., 1861, by whom one ch., SOPHIA, b. in 1832, d. 26 Mch., 1859, who m. Benjamin Appgar, of Califon, N. J., and had 2 dau., both of whom died without ch.
29. V. PETER KLINE, of New Germantown, N. J., b. 19 Sep., 1806, d. 25 Jan., 1879, m. 23 Oct., 1830, Eliza, dau. of Joachim Gulick, of New Germantown, b. 6 Mch., 1808, d. 3 May, 1881, had ch.  
I. JOSEPH B., b. 10 Aug., 1831, d. 28 Oct., 1849.  
II. BENJAMIN V. D., b. 8 June, 1834, d. 5 Sep., 1873, m. Ella, dau. of Freeman Smith, of N. Y., and had no ch.  
III. ANNA G., res. Newark, N. J.  
IV. ELIZABETH C., who d. 17 Jan., 1845, aged 3.  
V. ELIZABETH, m. Martin Richardson, res. Hackettstown, N. J., and has 2 ch., *Ida May* and *Benjamin M.*  
VI. MALVINA M., who d. 22 June, 1880.
- VII. FRANCES, m. Charles Eddowes, res. Newark, N. J.; had 3 ch., *Charles Frederick*, b. 16 July, 1881, d. 3 July, 1887, *Miriam M.*, b. 6 Sep., 1883, and *Helen Margaretta*, b. 14 Nov., 1888.
30. VI. CHICHESTER, b. 14 Jan., 1811, followed the sea for many years, when he settled in California, marrying a widow with one ch.; whether he is living is unknown.

## FOURTH GENERATION.

Jonas Melick (9) had 11 ch.

31. I. CHRISTOPHER, of Round Valley, N. J., b. 2 Dec., 1803, d. 1 Jan., 1874, m.

Sarah, dau. of Abraham Voorhees, of Readington, N. J., b. 3 Feb., 1807, d. 25 Mch., 1873; for his 8 ch. see p. 702.

32. II. JOHN U., b. 14 Mch., 1805, d. 19 Sep., 1809.
33. III. HANNAH GRAAF, b. 19 Sept., 1807, d. 21 May, 1868, m. in Dec., 1829, John R. Conover, of Potterstown, N. J., b. 16 Mch., 1803, d. 20 Nov., 1880; had 4 ch.
  - I. GARRET, res. White House, N. J., b. 29 Nov., 1830, m. 27 Dec., 1856, Christiana, dau. of Andrew Emmans, of Readington, N. J.; their ch., *Garret G.*, b. 5 Mch., 1863; *Annie R.*, b. 13 Feb., 1865, m. 3 Nov., 1870., John W. Ramsey, of Potterstown, b. 19 Mch., 1865; *Lizzie B.*, b. 15 Oct., 1867, and *Mary E.*, b. 3 Nov., 1870.
  - II. CATHERINE, b. 19 Oct., 1833, d. 3 July, 1882.
- III. JONAS M., res. Round Valley, N. J., m. Amanda, dau. of Richard De Mott, of Stanton, N. J., their ch., *Kate R.*, b. 4 Oct., 1865, m. George Reger, of White House, N. J.; *Richard D.*, res. Appar's Corner, N. J., b. 10 Sept., 1867, m. 16 Nov., 1887, *Annie B.*, dau. of William Fulper, no ch.; *Jenny M.*, b. 4 Oct., 1871; *Laura B.*, b. 23 July, 1873; *John R.*, b. 12 Apl., 1875; and *Cora M.*, b. 16 Nov., 1879.
- IV. MARGARET, b. 20 Sept., 1843, m. 9 Nov., 1867, John R. Haver, of Round Valley, N. J., b. 27 Apl., 1838, and has 6 ch., *William E.*, b. 6 Aug., 1869; *Georgiana*, b. 1 Mar., 1873; *Christopher B.*, b. 16 Dec., 1874; *James A.*, b. 8 Oct., 1877; *Stella S.*, b. 15 Mch., 1880, and *Ida May*, b. 24 Feb., 1887.
34. IV. MATTHEW ADAMS, b. 1. Sep., 1809, d. in infancy.
35. V. HANNAH M., of Brooklyn, N. Y., b. 23 Feb., 1811, d. 12 Apl., 1884.
36. VI. ELIZABETH CHICHESTER, b. 7 Mch., 1813, d. 29 Mch., 1877, m. Philip Lee, of Newark, N. J., has ch.
  - I. PHILIP, unm.; II. JONAS M., unm.
  - III. JOHN P., who is m. and has 1 dau., *Josephine*.
37. VII. SUSAN SELL, b. 17 Dec., 1815, d. 24 July, 1843, m. John C. Wyckoff, of Potterstown, N. J., b. 20 Oct., 1817, d. 11 Mch., 1845; had 3 ch.,
  - I. GEORGE, res. High Bridge, N. J., b. 31 July, 1839, m. 22 June, 1861, Hester A., dau. of Joshua Henderson, of Tewksbury tp., b. 22 Mch., 1844; has 4 ch., *Wilbur*, b. 26 Jan., 1864; *Elsie*, b. 14 Aug., 1869; *Jenny E.*, b. 6 Jan., 1873, and *Lewis G.*, b. 26 Sep., 1881.
  - II. SUSAN, a twin, res. 472 Fifth Ave., Brooklyn, L. I., m. William Carlisle; has one son, *Balthazer*.
  - III. CORNELIA ELIZABETH, a twin, res. Gouldsboro Station, Pa., b. 15 July, 1845, m. *first*, 25 Nov., 1864, William Baker, b. 30 Apl., 1834; m. *second*, John Wyckoff; has 3 ch., *John W.*, b. in Mch., 1866; *Jenny*, b. 23 Oct., 1867, and *Martha J.*, b. 28 Jan., 1871; all m.
38. VIII. BALTHAZER A., res. Lebanon, N. J., b. 31 Dec., 1817, m. 26 Sep., 1838, Williampe W., dau. of Lucas Vorhees, of Round Valley, N. J. For his 5 ch. see p. 702.
39. IX. JONAS, of Rosemont, N. J., b. 21 Nov., 1820, d. 19 Apl., 1882, m. 18 Nov., 1846, *Elsie E.*, dau. of Joseph Anderson, b. 30 Apl., 1824; had one son,
  - I. JOSEPH A., res. Rosemont, N. J., b. 23 Apl., 1848, m. 12 Dec., 1869, Hannah Elizabeth, dau. of Henry Wood; their son, *Edward J.*, b. 30 June, 1873.
40. X. CATHERINE A., of Potterstown, N. J., b. 23 Sep., 1822, d. 28 June, 1857, m. Nicholas W. Appar, b. in 1821, d. 23 Nov., 1846; left no ch.
41. XI. SARAH J., res. Round Valley, N. J., b. 30 Dec., 1824, m. Jacob T. Wolfe, of Peapack, N. J., dec.; had ch.
  - I. AMADEE, res. Plainfield, N. J., m. *first*, Catherine Somers, of Bedminster, N. J., by whom 3 ch.; *Alexander*, *Emma L.*, and *Florence May*; m. *second*, Lizzie Tillman, of Plainfield, N. J., by whom one ch., *Anna Beulah*; II. JOHN, who m. Martha Peer, of Pottersville, N. J.
- III. ANNA AUGUSTA.
- IV. SIMON V.
- V. WILLIAM C.

## FOURTH GENERATION (D).

Peter B. Melick (13) had 4 ch.

42. I. JOSEPH MATTISON, res. Toledo, O., b. 12 July, 1829, m. 1 May, 1851, Anna

- Hartley, dau. of Rev. Wm. Bryant Barton, of Woodbridge, N. J., b. 4 June, 1832, had 3 ch.
- I. ANNIE B., res. Woodbridge, N. J., b. 21 Mch., 1852, m. 23 Dec., 1873, Willett Denike, asst. U. S. Atty. for N. Y., who d. 7 Dec., 1874; their one ch., *Willett*, b. 1874.
- II. WILLIAM BARTON, b. 21 June, 1853, dec.
- III. ADDIE, res. N. Y. C., b. 21 June, 1855, m. 4 Feb., 1881, Wethered B. Thomas, of N. Y.; their 3 ch., *Eranina Wethered*, b. 1881, d. in infancy; *Lewin Hartley*, b. 1883; *Bryant Ellicott*, b. 1884, d. 1888.
43. II. JOEL, res. Woodbridge, N. J., b. 5 Sep., 1839, m. 24 Oct., 1860, Annie E., dau. of Isaac S. Payne, of Woodbridge, N. J., b. 7 Oct., 1841; had 3 ch.
- I. ELMER E., b. 12 Mch., 1862; II. CLARA M., b. 9 Aug., 1864; III. WILLARD P., b. 2 Oct., 1870.
44. MARY F., b. 18 Nov., 1836, m. 17 Aug., 1864, Charles O. Holmes; has 4 ch., I. LEWLA, b. 6 Oct., 1866; II. HARRY GRANT, b. 22 Oct., 1868; III. MARY HARRIOTT, b. 8 Sep., 1874; IV. FANNY VOORHEES, b. 22 Dec., 1877.
45. IV. PETER BRITTON, res. Berwyn, Chester Co., Pa., b. at Woodbridge, N. J. 26 May, 1894, m. 3 Oct, 1853, Mary Elizabeth, dau. of George Hutchings, of Newark, N. J.; has 3 ch.,
- I. ELIZABEEH CORIELL, b. 27 Sep., 1854, m. 10 Feb., 1874, Griffith Williams Thomas, of Phila.; their 3 ch., *Mary Melick*, b. 23 Nov., 1874; *Peter Britton*, b. 12 Nov., 1877; *Griffith Harrington*, b. 1 Apl., 1877.
- II. FANNY HARRIET, b. 13 Nov. 1856, m. 13 Nov., 1876, George A. Leinau, of Phila.; their 5 ch., *George Britton*, b. 8 June, 1877; *Fanny Williston*, b. 8 July, 1878; *Malin*, b. 27 May, 1880; *Andrew*, b. 13 Sep., 1882; *Norman*, b. 3 Jan., 1886.
- III. EDWARD L., b. 27 Nov., 1858, d. 14 May, 1863.

## FOURTH GENERATION (D).

John Melick (20) had 6 ch.

46. I. ISAAC C., b. 26 Nov., 1817, d. 29 Apl., 1888, m. 12 Dec., 1855, Sarah E., dau. of Henry Moore; had 2 ch.
- I. MARY S., b. 3 July, 1856, m. George W. Hawes, and has 2 ch.
- II. WILLIAM SEWARD, res. Port Richmond, S. I., b. 21 May, 1860, widower, no ch.
47. II. DAYTON L., res. Plainfield, N. J., b. 28 May, 1819, is a farmer owning 170 acres of land just beyond the city limits, m. 13 Dec., 1843, Sarah Lever, of Plainfield, N. J., b. 6 Sep., 1821; had 5 ch.,
- I. WILLIAM L., b. 20 May, 1847, m. Lillie, dau. of Marselis Parks, of New Brooklyn, (South Plainfield,) N. J., and has one ch., *Dayton*.
- II. WALTER S., b. 27 May, 1852, m. Harriet, dau. of Meeker Hetfield, of Dunellen, N. J., and has one ch., *Frederick*.
- III. SARAH S., b. in Jan., 1855, dec.
- IV. JOHN, b. 14 Oct., 1858, m. Nellie, dau. of William Phillips, of Brooklyn, N. Y., and has one ch., *Lester*.
- V. LEONARD, b. 6 Oct., 1863, m. Josephine, dau. of Frank Baker, of Westfield, N. J.; no ch.
48. III. MELANCTHON, res. Menlo Park, N. J., m. *first*, Sarah A. Randolph; had one ch.,
- I. ANNA, m. James Liddel, res. Woodbridge, N. J., m. *second*, Caroline Flomerfelt, of German Valley, N. J., by whom 2 ch., *John* and *George*.
49. IV. ELIZABETH, d. in 1841, m. John Haviland, of Rahway, N. J.; no ch.
50. V. SUSAN F., m. Joseph Brewster, of Woodbridge, N. J., both dec.; had one ch.,
- I. HENRIETTA, m. Daniel Berry, res. Plainfield, N. J.
51. VI. JOHN J., res. Franklin, Pa., widower; has 4 ch., 2 sons and 2 dau's.

## FOURTH GENERATION (D.)

Isaac B., Melick (23) had 14 ch.

52. I. HARRIET L., b. in 1829.
53. II. JAMES T., res. Rahway, N. J., b. in 1831, m. in 1860, Rachel B. Clarkson, has 3 ch., SARAH C., JOEL C., and CHARLES R.



## CH. OF JOHN S., CHRISTOPHER & BALTHAZER MELICK. 701

- 54. III. LEONARD, b. in 1833, d. in Nov., 1854, in Columbus, Ga.
- 55. IV. MARY A., b. in 1835, d. in March, 1885.
- 56. V. HULDAH R., b. in 1837, d. 8 Nov., 1871.
- 57. VI. SARAH E., b. in 1839, m. William Van Nest.
- 58. VII. SUSAN F., res. Fanwood, N. J., b. in 1841, m. Thomas J. Lee.
- 59. VIII. WILLIAM R., res. Rahway, N. J., b. in 1843, m. Nelly Clawson, and has one ch., NELLY.
- 60. IX. ISAAC F. b. in 1845, d. in 1880, m. Georgie Parkes; had 2 ch., I. LETTA; II. JOHN J.
- 61. X. VIRGINIA, b. in 1847, d. in 1870.
- 62. XI. GEORGETTE, b. in 1850, d. in 1873.
- 63. XII. ALICE, res. Newark, N. J., b. in 1852, unm.
- 64. XIII. AUGUSTA, res. Rahway, N. J., b. in 1854, m. Lester Laforge.
- 65. XIV. DORA, res. Newark, N. J., b. in 1856, m. William Marsell.

### FIFTH GENERATION (D.)

John S. Melick (25) had 4 ch.

- 66. I. BALTIS P., res. Elizabeth, N. J., who m. Nancy McCord, of New Germantown. His 5 ch.
  - I. J. LAMBERT, res. Elizabeth, N. J.
  - II. JACOB RUNKLE, res. Hunter's Point, L. I., who m. twice and has 2 dau's. by first wife, and 2 sons, *John* and *Frederick Baltis*, by second wife.
  - III. SARAH, m. Joseph Smith, res. Elizabeth, N. J.; has 4 ch.
  - IV. MARGARET, res. Elizabeth, N. J.
  - V. JOHN, res. Elizabeth, N. J., m. Georgie Ketcham, and has 2 ch., *John Raymond* and a dau.
- 67. II. WILLIAM A., of New Hampton Junction, N. J., b. 6 June, 1823, d. 18 Apl., 1889, m. 19 June, 1845, Charity C., dau. of John Apgar, of Cokesburg, N. J., b. Sep., 1827. For his 9 ch. see p. 703.
- 68. III. MARGARET A., m. *first*, J. Foley, of New Germantown, N. J., and has one son.
  - I. BALTIS P. MELICK, res. Lynden, Kansas, who m. Alice dau. of Samuel Schureman, of Ill., and has one son *Bradford W.*; m. *second*, John Dilley, of New Germantown, N. J.
- 69. IV. JACOB A., of New Germantown, N. J., d. 28 Mch., 1876, m. in 1858, Margaret Tharp, of New Germantown, N. J., had ch.; I. ANNA ELIZABETH, res. Dover, N. J.; II. CHARLES E., res. New Germantown, N. J.; III. EMMA AUGUSTA, m. in 1888, Seldon Wildricks, res. Dover, N. J.; IV. LOTTIE B., m. Frank W. Lindsley, res. Drea Hook, N. J., has 2 ch.; V. LAURA VIRGINIA, res. New Germantown, N. J.

### FIFTH GENERATION (D.)

Christopher Melick (26) had 5 ch.

- 70. I. GERSHOM LAMBERT, res. Lambertville, N. J., b. 14 Apl., 1823, m. 1 Jan., 1852, Cornelia B., dau. of Hiram Price, of Hunterdon, b. 25 Mch., 1831; has 2 ch.,
  - I. WALTER C., b. 12 June, 1859.
  - II. CHRISTOPHER P., res. Milford, Ct., b. 10 Oct., 1865, m. in June, 1888, Ida Bigley, of Riegelsville, Pa.
- 71. II. MALVINA,
- 72. III. HANNAH A.,
- 73. IV. DAVID, res. Huntington, L. I., m. Maria L. Ketcham, of Brooklyn, N. Y.; has ch., I. RAYMOND D. and II. CLARENCE.
- 74. V. AUGUSTA.

### FIFTH GENERATION (D.)

Balthazer Melick (27)\* had 2 ch. by *first* wife.

- 75. I. MARGARET ELIZABETH, m. Abraham V. Melick (83), res. Round Valley, N. J.; has one ch., I. CHARLOTTE, m. Theodore Hendershot, of Round Valley, and has no ch.
- 76. II. SARAH ANN.

## 702 CH. OF CHRIST., BALTUS P., & BALTHAZER A. MELICK.

Balthazer Melick (27) had 5 ch. by *second* wife.

77. III. MARY N., m. William J. Shotwell, res. Woodbridge, N. J.; had ch., I. WILLIAM, II. HATTIE, III. ROBERT, dec., and one other.
78. IV. SUSAN V., res. Somerville, m., *first* John J. Jones, of N. Y., by whom no ch.; *second*, Peter Van Nest, of Somerville, N. J., b. 17 July, 1841, d. 15 Oct., 1881, by whom one ch. I. LILY MAY.
79. V. DAVID, d. aged 4.
80. VI. GARETTA L., res. Brooklyn, N. Y., m. Robert S. Wardell, of N. Y., and has 2 ch.
81. VII. GILBERT C., res. Somerville, N. J., m. Emma, dau. of Leonard Bunn, of Somerville; had ch., I. JOHN J., b. in 1870, d. in 1888; II. LEONARD B., III. ANNIE, IV. ALVAH, V. GRACE.

### FIFTH GENERATION (D).

Christopher Melick (31) had 8 ch,

82. I. JONAS C., res. Peapack, N. J., b. 3 Feb., 1828, m. 7 Jan., 1863, Sarah M. Lane; of Readington, N. J., b. 14 Aug., 1835; has 2 ch.  
I. SIMON V., b. 23 Oct., 1863; II. THEODORE H., b. 18 Nov., 1866.
83. II. ABRAHAM VOORHEES, res. Round Valley, N. J., m. Margaret E., dau. of Balthazer Melick (27) had 2 ch.  
I. MARY ANN, b. 28 May, 1855, d. 1 May, 1864.  
II. CHARLOTTE, who m. Theodore Hendershot, of Round Valley, N. J., and has no ch.
84. III. JOHN V., res. Round Valley, N. J., m. Eleanor Smith; had ch., I. SARAH, m. John Craft, of Round Valley, and has 4 ch.; II. WILLIAM GILBERT, b. 12 Oct., 1858, d. 22 Apl., 1864; III. JACOB.
85. IV. JANE, m. William Thompson, res. Raritan, N. J.; has 5 ch., I. ANNIE; II. CHRISTOPHER; III. HANNAH; IV. HENRY; V. JOHN.
86. V. BALTUS P., res. Fairview, Fulton Co., Ill., b. 1 May 1836, m. 21 Nov., 1856, Phebe Thompson, of Readington, N. J., b. 22 Dec., 1838; had 4 ch.;  
1. HENRIETTA V., b. 21 June, 1858, m. 26 June, 1875, Sanford Westervelt, b. 22 Jan., 1850; their 2 ch., Baltus M., b. 30 July, 1880, and Mandela, b. 26 May, 1883.  
II. JEREMIAH, V. T., b. 31 Dec., 1861, m. 23 Aug., 1885, Irene Parks, b. 25 Apl., 1866; their 1 ch., Christopher, b. 18 Aug., 1886.  
III. ELIZABETH N., b. 21 July, 1864, m. 21 Aug., 1885, Walter Parks, b. 10 Aug., 1858.  
IV. JOHN S., b. 18 July, 1873,
87. VI. SUSAN V., m. Daniel Sheets, dec., res. Stanton, N. J; no ch.
88. VII. HANNAH W., m. Theodore Hubbard, res. Lebanon, N. J.; no ch.
89. VIII. WILLIAM, res. Round Valley, N. J., m. Sarah dau. of William Reger, of White House, N. J.; had ch., I. ABRAHAM VOORHEES; II. SUSAN A.; III. WILLIAM R.; IV. CHARLOTTE.

### FIFTH GENERATION (D).

Balthazer A. Melick (38) had 5 ch.

90. I. CATHERINE A., b. 27 Aug., 1839, d. 28 Mch., 1845.
91. II. SIMON V., b. 10 Oct., 1842, d. 4 June, 1863, at Acquia Creek, Virginia, a soldier of Co. A., 31st Regt., N. J. V.
92. III. LUCAS V., of Lebanon, N. J., b. 30 Oct., 1844, d. 18 June, 1881, m. 17 Dec., 1867, Hettie Lucretia, dau. of Nathan Hoffman, of Lebanon; had ch., I. WILLIAMPE V., and II. JOHN C.
93. IV. GILBERT C., res. Lebanon, N. J., b. 4 June, 1848, m. *first*, 3 Feb., 1874, Jennie, dau. of Martin Wyckoff, of White House, N. J., b. 21 July, 1852, d. 5 July, 1881; m. *second*, 21 Nov., 1883, Annie, dau. of William Fleming, of Lebanon, N. J.; no ch.
94. V. SUSAN M., b. 1 Aug., 1854, m. 20 Oct., 1874, John D. Bonnel, res. White House, N. J.; has ch., I. GILBERT C., and II. MARION.

SIXTH GENERATION (D.)

William A. Melick, (67) had 9 ch.

95. I. MARY E., res. Elmira, N. Y., b. 7 Mch., 1847, m. 14 Sep., 1864, Oliver Elmen-dorf, of Rahway, N. J., b. 26 Mch., 1841; he served throughout the Civil War in a N. Y. regt.; has 2 ch., I. WILLIAM M., b. 17 Oct., 1865; II. BERTHA, b. 23 June, 1870.
96. II. JAMES S., res. Dover, N. J., b. 18 Nov., 1851, m. Susan Vanatta, of Glen Gardner, N. J.; has been clerk of Randolph tp. 4 years, assessor for 4 years, and was appointed postmaster of Dover by Pres. Cleveland, 22 June, 1888; has 2 ch., I. NETTIE and II. JAMES.
97. III. GARETT A., res. 988 Atlantic Av., Brooklyn, m. Sam'l P. Hodgkiss; he served in Civil War in a Mass. Reg't.; has 2 ch., I. SAMUEL; II. HENRY.
98. IV. JOHN W., res. Asbury Park, N. J., b. 3 Nov., 1855, m. 20 Feb., 1877, Jessie Lowe, b. 28 July, 1856; no ch.
99. V. GEORGIANNA, res. Dover, N. J., b. 18 Dec., 1858, m. 28 July, 1878, John P. Egen, b. 26 Dec., 1854; has 5 ch., I. NELLIE, b. 10 Sept., 1879; II. GEORGE, b. 24 Dec., 1880; III. DAVID, b. 27 Aug., 1882; IV. JENNY, b. 28 Feb., 1884; V. JOHN P., b. 10 Nov., 1888.
100. VI. EMMA LEONORA, res. Dover, b. 9 June, 1861, m. 12 Nov., 1878, Joseph H. Buchanan, b. 8 Sept., 1849; has 4 ch., I. WILLIAM, b. 1 July, 1879; II. FREDERICK, b. 3 Feb., 1881; III. EMORY V., b. 23 Mch., 1883; IV. JOSEPH R., b. 4 Sept., 1885.
101. VII. NELLY A., res. Dover, b. 21 Sept., 1864, m. 30 Aug., 1882, Fred'k. H. Dick-erson, b. 8 Apl., 1860; no ch.
102. VIII. KITTIE G., b. 18 Dec., 1865.
103. IX. FRANK Z., b. 22 July, 1868.

JOHAN PETER MOELICH (E).

Peter Melick, of Columbia Co., Pennsylvania, and his descendants.

1. I. JOHAN PETER MOELICH (E), was the son of Hans Peter (VIII.), of Bendorf on the Rhine, Germany, and the grandson of Jonas (V), who migrated to that place from Winnigen on the Moselle in 1688. He was a brother of David (D) and Johan Jonas (XV.) both of whom emigrated to America (see pp. 79,696). Peter Melick, as he was known in later life, was born 12 Oct., 1715 in Bendorf; with that his record ends in Germany. The date of his immigration is unknown, but it is probable that he came with his brothers to America. As neither his nor their names appear among those of the Palatine arrivals in Pennsylvania, they must have landed at New York. Unfortunately that colony did not require arriving immigrants to register their names with the provincial secretary. Peter is said to have remained with his brothers for some time in New Jersey, and then migrated to Pennsylvania, taking up land in the vicinity of where is now the village of Espy, in Columbia County. Here he cleared the ground of its primitive forests and engaged in farming, and here many of his descendants are still living.

SECOND GENERATION (E.)

Peter Melick (I) had 7 ch.

2. I. JOHN, first settled in Northumberland Co., Pa., removing from there in 1800 to the vicinity of Northeast, Erie Co., Pa.; m. Catherine Scholler. He and his descendants spell their name *Malick*. For his 8 ch. see p. 704.
3. II. PETER, b. 18 Apl., 1752, d. 11 Feb., 1830, m. Rachel, dau. of John M. Clingman and granddau. of Jacob Klingemann, a German emigrant, b. 3 Apl., 1759, d. 2 Sep., 1841. Peter lived on his father's land near Espy, in Col-



umbia Co., Pa., until 1778 when his house was destroyed by the Indians in return for his activity in repelling predatory invasions of the savages. He and his family escaped to Fort Wheeler near by, then commanded by the celebrated Moses Van Campen. He then built a house on land he had bought in 1774 from John and Thomas Penn, proprietors of the Province of Penna., located midway between Light-Street and Bloomsburg in the same county. Here he lived until his death the property still being in the possession of his descendants. During the Revolution he served in the Continental army and spent the winter of 1777-8 with the army at Valley Forge. He is said to have gained the thanks of General Washington at this time because of making a tour through the state and securing for the army a large supply of grain which was ground in the old mill (still standing) at Valley Forge. Throughout his life he was an active member of the Methodist Church. For ch. see p. 704.

4. III. DAVID, m. a Conrad; settled first at the mouth of Fishing creek in Northumb., now Col. Co.; in 1772 removed to Augusta, now Rockafeller tp. near Sunbury, taking up six hundred acres of land, building a stone house in which he lived until his death in 1836. He had several daughters and at least six sons, viz.: JOHN, GEORGE, JACOB, DAVID, PETER, and HENRY. Peter the 5th son b. 1790, d. 9 Aug., 1863, m. Mary Reeser, b. 1796, d. 14 Nov., 1872; their — ch., I. WILLIAM, dec., m. a Heilman and had 5 ch.; II. SIMON P., res. Sunbury; III. HIRAM, dec.; IV. DAVID R., res. Sunbury; V. HARRIET, res. Sunbury, m. Sam. Keefer; VI. MARIA, res. Sunbury, m. Sam. Woolf; VII. JOHN R.; VIII. PETER, dec.; IX. SAMUEL, dec.; X. JEREMIAH; probably other ch. (No certainty is felt as to the correctness of this record).
5. IV. HENRY, m. Julia Alstot; for ch. see p 707.
6. V. MICHAEL, b. in Col. Co., Pa., in 1756, d. in Phila. in 1818, m. about 1780 Catharine Christian, b. in N. J. in 1758, d. in Phila., 12 Nov., 1834; he served in war of 1812; for ch. see p. 708.
7. VI. CHARITY, m. a Mr. Folselle; descendants living in Canada.
8. VII. MARGARET, m. Metsinger; descendants living in Ohio.

### THIRD GENERATION (E.)

John Malick (2) had 8 ch.

9. I. GEORGE lived and died in Ohio, m. and had several ch.
10. II. HENRY, b. 15 Mch., 1797, d. 26 Oct., 1875, m. 23 Aug., 1825, Elizabeth, dau. of Peter Musselman, of Canada, b. 5 June, 1800, d. 9 Oct., 1871. Lived for the most of his life at West Mill Creek, Erie Co., Pa., but d. at the res. of his son Henry P., (45) Girard, Pa.; for 5 ch. see p. 709.
11. III. DAVID, lived and died in Indiana.
12. IV. ANDREW, his son DAVID now living at North East, Pa.
13. V. PETER.
14. VI. JACOB.
15. VII. JOHN.
16. VIII. SAMUEL, res. Unionville, Ashtabula Co., O., b. in Pa. 9 June, 1809, m. 29 Oct., 1829, Polly Lull, b. in Oct., 1806, d. 2 Jan., 1887; moved to Ohio in 1865; no ch.

### THIRD GENERATION (E).

Peter Melick (3) had 11 ch.

17. I. JOHN, d. when 5 years old.
18. II. DAVID, d. near Geneva, New York, leaving at least 3 ch.; a married dau., res. Reading, Pa.; another dau., res. Philadelphia, and an only son, PETER, who served in war of Rebellion, and since then has been missing.
19. III. JACOB, b. 19 Apl., 1799, d. 19 Aug., 1886, m. 10 May, 1827, Elizabeth, dau. of Peter Willet, of near Light-Street, Penna., b. 27 Aug., 1807, on the farm of her father, almost within sight of where she died, 3 Mch., 1888. Throughout Jacob Melick's life he was distinguished for his business activity, for zeal in doing good, and as being a leading and valued

member of the Methodist church of his vicinity. Up to the time of his death for 21 years religious meetings of members of that communion were held in one of his houses on each Tuesday afternoon. He travelled extensively in Europe and America, and engaged in many important business enterprises, including that of tanning, store-keeping, mining iron ore, and operating a blast furnace. He made his home in Light-Street for 59 years, living on the homestead where he died since 1827. So large was the attendance of neighbors and friends at his funeral that the sermon was preached in a grove near his residence. Mrs. Melick, familiarly known as Aunt Betsy, was greatly beloved for her piety and good works. Possessed of a rarely beautiful nature in which strength and gentleness equally blended, her daily walk and conversation were considered a model in all that was best of womanhood. For 13 ch. see p. 709.

20. IV. PETER, b. 27 Feb. 1794, d. in Aug., 1867, m. in 1817, Margaret, dau. of Jacob Best, b. 27 June, 1801, d. in 1882. He was a farmer at Light-Street in Columbia Co., Pa., and a member, an officer and a class leader of the Methodist church. For 13 ch. see p. 710.
21. V. JOHN, d. when 4 years old.
22. VI. NANCY, b. 15 Oct., 1778, m. William Richart, a farmer of Columbia Co., Pa., had 7 ch.
  - I. ROBERT, b. 10 Dec., 1806, d. 21 Mch., 1879, m. 31 July, 1830, Elizabeth, dau. of Daniel Kase, b. 1 May, 1809, had one son *William C.*, whose res. is Rupert, Col. Co., Pa., his 7 ch. Elizabeth, b. 3 Dec., 1863, Mary F., b. 28 Feb., 1865, Charles H., b. 22 Nov., 1866, Infant dau., twin to Chas., d. at birth; Wilson G., b. 19 Oct., 1868, d. 21 Nov., 1879; Annie R., b. 12 June, 1870, and Hattie J., b. 7 Oct., 1872.
  - II. RACHEL, b. 8 Mch., 1809.
  - III. PETER, b. 17 Feb., 1811.
  - IV. CATHERINE.
  - V. JOHN SMITH, b. 1 May, 1819, d. in infancy.
23. VII. MARY, b. 10 Feb., 1781, d. 29 May, 1842, m. 12 May, 1801 Baltis Appleman, b. 10 Apl., 1778, d. 9 June, 1854, a farmer of Hemlock tp., Col. Co., Pa., had 8 ch.
  - I. RACHEL, b. 12 Feb., 1802, d. 16 May, 1837, m. 2 Nov., 1824, James Childs, b. 16 June, 1793, d. 10 Jan., 1871, a farmer of Valley tp., Col. Co., Pa., and had 6 ch., *James H.*, res. Hudson, St. Croix Co., Wis., b. 7 Oct., 1825; *John P.*, b. 20 May, 1827, d. in 1850; *Baltis A.*, b. 21 Nov., 1829; *Cordelia*, b. 9 Dec., 1831, m. in 1871 to Mr. Smith, and lives at Kalamazoo, Mich., (Box 224); *Oscar*, b. 7 Jan., 1834, and *Anna M.*, b. 20 June, 1835.
  - II. ELIZABETH, b. 20 Mch., 1804, m. 1 Nov., 1822, David Harris, b. 29 May, 1798, d. 19 Mch., 1877, and had 11 ch., *Mary Ann*, b. 14 Jan., 1825, d. in May, 1886, m. Abram Cramer, res. Hudson, Linawee Co., Mich.; *John*, b. 29 July, 1826, dec. leaving a wife, Mary, who lives at Wake-man, Huron Co., Ohio; *Lucinda*, b. 9 Apl., 1828, m. Jesse Rhoades, and lives at Mt. Pleasant, Isabella Co., Mich.; *Caleb*, b. 6 Sep., 1831, m. Ollie Ostrander, res. Jackson, Jackson Co., Mich.; *J. Washington*, whereabouts unknown, m. Melissa Rhenbottom, who lives at Union City, Branch Co., Mich.; *Harriet*, b. 2 Dec., 1832, m. and d. 12 Aug., 1866; *Job W.*, b. 1 Feb., 1836; *Elizabeth*, b. 7 Nov., 1838, d. in 1840; *Sarah E.*, b. 23 May, 1842, d. in 1877, m. Frank Henderson, who lives in Lansing, Mich.; *Hannah*, b. 30 Oct., 1843, m. George W. Waight, res. Colwell, Isabella Co., Mich.; *Alice*, b. 15 Sep., 1846, m. Alfred Phillips, res. Oscoda, Josco Co., Mich.
  - III. PETER, b. 2 Sep., 1805, m. *first*, in 1824, Hannah Rishel, and had 6 ch.; she d. 7 Aug., 1837, he m. *second* in Feb., 1840, Catherine Evans, and had one ch.
  - IV. MATTHIAS, b. 13 Jan., 1807, d. 16 Apl., 1837, m. in 1828, Sarah, dau. of Daniel Roat, d. in Oct., 1858; their ch., *Lewis*, b. in 1831, d. in 1861, m. in 1859, Mary E. Rishel; *Phoebe Jane*, b. in 1834, m. in 1851, Baltis White, res. Light-Street, Col. Co., Pa.; *Mary Elizabeth*, b. in 1836 dec., m. in 1859, George White.
  - V. BALDIS, b. 22 June, 1809, d. 16 Dec., 1859, m. in 1841, Margaret Aikman,

- dec.; their ch., *Clara A.*, b. 10 Feb., 1845, m. in 1866, Arthur Brandon, and has 2 dau's., Mary and Anna, res. Danville, Pa.; *Emma*, m. Wilson, res. Bloomsburg, Pa.; and *two other dau's.*
- VI. CALEB, b. 22 Apl., 1812, d. 20 Apl., 1888, m. in 1830, Mary Magdalene Rishel, b. 15 June, 1810; their ch., *Elmira*, b. 26 Aug., 1832, d. 1 Nov., 1866, m. *first*, in 1850, John Carr, *second*, in 1858, George Carr; *Sally Ann*, b. 16 July, 1835, m. in 1858, Charles A. Rentz, res. Muncy Station, Lycoming Co., Pa.; *Agnes*, b. 21 Jan., 1837, m. in 1870, James Vander-venter, res. Danville, Pa.; *Mary E.*, b. 11 Dec., 1838, m. in 1866, John C. Patterson, and has 2 ch., res. Danville, Pa.; *Margaret J.*, b. 16 Jan., 1841, m. in 1871, Jesse C. Amerman, res. Danville, Pa.; *Amos B.*, b. 19 Nov., 1842, res. Danville, Pa.; *Harriet*, b. 15 Nov., 1844, m. in 1868, Peter E. Rentz, res. Muncy Station, Pa.; *Eli*, b. 7 Feb., 1847, m. in 1871, Theresa Dildine, res. Danville, Pa.; *Caroline*, b. 2 Sept., 1849, m. in 1871, George Gilmore, res. Linden, Pa.; *Franklin P.*, b. 11 Sept., 1852, m. in 1877, Mary J. Hendricks, res. Danville, Pa.
- VII. ABBY M., b. 7 Aug., 1815, d. 13 Aug., 1847, m. 26 Jan., 1837, George W. Drisbauch, a miller, and had one son, *Elisha B.*, res. Montgomery Station, Lycoming Co., Pa., and 3 dau's.
- VIII. SALLY ANN, b. 26 Mch., 1817, m. 31 Jan., 1850, Arthur Buss, res. McEw-insville, Ohio; no ch.
24. VIII. ELIZABETH, m. William Robbins, res. Huntington, Pa.; no ch.
25. IX. RACHEL, b. 10 Oct., 1785, d. 16 Dec., 1849, m. *first*, in 1805, Henry Traugh, b. 26 Sep., 1765, d. 10 Dec., 1834; m. *second*, in 1836, Abraham Townsend; no ch. by last marriage; by Henry Traugh had 9 ch.,
- I. SUSAN, b. 4 Sep., 1808, m. Solomon Probst, a desc. of Philip Probst, who emigrated in 1693 from Probstzell, near Saalfeld, Saxony; their ch., *Barbara Ann*, m. *first*, Abraham Bernard Block, a native of France; m. *second*, Peter A. Kimburg, and now lives at Columbia, Lancaster Co., Pa.; her son is Colonel Williard T. Block, of Des Moines, Iowa, b. in Jan., 1853, who for 21 years has been prominent in railroad circles of Penna. and the West, and has twice been appointed to the staff of the Governor of Iowa; *Henry Clay*, another son of Susan Probst, lives at Minneapolis, Kansas; *Samuel McL.* at Hastings, Neb., and *Isidor*, her dau., m. George Brockway, and lives at Indianapolis, Iowa.
- II. HENRY, b. 11 Feb., 1811, dec.; his widow Rachel lives at Berwick, Col. Co., Pa.
- III. PETER, b. 31 July, 1812, dec. His dau. Mrs. Alice Brown, lives at West Pittston, Luzerne Co., Pa.
- IV. LEWIS, b. 26 Nov., 1815, d. 5 Nov., 1850, m. 7 Dec., 1842, Mary Ann, dau. of Samuel Adams, of Briar Creek, Pa.; their ch., *Rachel Arabelle*, b. 31 Jan., 1844, m. in 1873, Dillwyn S. Stehn, res. Hazleton, Luzerne Co., Pa.; no ch.; *Williard Sand*, b. 25 Mch., 1848, killed on the railroad at Weatherly, Pa., 26 June, 1872; *Mary Frances*, b. 24 Dec., 1850, m. in 1863, Capt. Samuel Simpson, of Jeansville, Pa., b. 30 Nov., 1844; has 2 ch. Capt. Simpson enlisted in Co. F, 143rd Regt. Pa. Vols., served 3 years taking part in battles of Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna, and others, commissioned captain by Governor Curtin for meritorious services and served as captain of militia during the strikes in the coal region.
- V. WASHINGTON, b. 5 Mch., 1817, d. 24 July, 1888, unm.
- VI. ANN ELIZA, b. 18 Mch., 1819, d. 21 Sep., 1840, unm.
- VII. OLIVIA EVE, b. 14 Oct., 1822, m. Jesse C. Buck, res. Nescopeck, Col. Co., Pa., b. 12 July, 1816; their 4 ch., *Mary Alice*, b. in 1849, d. in 1853; *Charles B.*, b. in 1850, d. in 1853; *Henry T.*, b. 3 June, 1854, res. 2545 Reese St., Phila.; *Jacob L.*, b. 27 Oct., 1855, m. in 1876, Phoebe Van Horn, and has 4 ch.
- VIII. RACHEL, b. 25 July, 1825, m. in 1848, John Williams, b. 23 May, 1821; their ch., *Milton F.*, a merchant and justice of peace at Nescopeck, Col. Co., Pa., b. 26 Mar., 1849, m. in 1873, Alice S. Adams, b. 25 Sep., 1850, and has 5 ch.; *Susan Elizabeth*, b. 24 Sep., 1850, m. in 1872, Oliver E. Yohey, and has 2 ch.; *Henry Clay*, b. 23 Dec., 1851, m. Susan Smith; *Harriet Maria*, b. 23 May, 1853, m. Eber H. Roth;



*John Wesley*, b. 6 Aug., 1855, m. Frankie Creasy; *William L.*, a teacher, b. 15 Feb., 1866.

IX. *NANCY*, b. 15 Mch., 1827, d. in infancy.

26. X. *MARGARET*, m. George Wirtz, of Columbia Co., Pa.

27. XI. *CATHERINE*, b. in Col. Co., Pa., 27 Jan., 1790, d. in Phila., 28 May, 1825, m. Philip, son of Jacob and Catherine Leidy, b. in Hatfield tp., Montgomery Co., Pa., 5 Dec., 1791, d. in Phila., 9 Oct., 1862; had ch.

I. *PETER*, b. 28 Dec., 1819, d. 29 Aug., 1820.

II. *CATHERINE*, b. 7 Aug., 1821, d. 20 Nov., 1822.

III. *JOSEPH*, b. 9 Sep., 1823, m. Anna, dau. of Robert Harden, dec.; no ch. M. D., 1844, Univ. Pa.; LL. D. 1886, Univ. Harvard. Prosector Anat., Prof. Anat. 1853, Univ. Pa.—; Director and Prof. Zoölogy and Compar. Anat. Biological Dept. 1884, Univ. Pa.—; Prof. Nat. Hist. Swarthmore Coll. 1871–85; P. Faculty Wagner Free Instit. Sc. 1885; Demonstrator Anat. Franklin Med. Coll. 1847–52. Memb. Acad. Nat. Sc. Philad. July, 1845, P. 1882; Amer. Philos. Soc. Oct. 1849; Amer. Med. Assoc. 1854; Philad. Co. Med. Soc.; Boston Soc. Nat. Hist. 1845; New York Acad. Sc. 1843; Hesse Nat. Hist. Soc. 1848; Amer. Acad. Arts and Sc. 1849; Biological Soc. Paris, 1851; Moscow, Soc. Naturalists, 1852; Mons. Soc. Sc. 1854; Elliot Soc. Nat. Hist. Charleston, S. C. 1855; St. Louis Acad. Sc. 1856; London Zoölogical Soc. 1857; Leopold Carol. Acad. Sc., Bonn, 1857; Munich Acad. Sc. 1858; Prague Bohem. Acad. Sc. 1860; Zoölogical and Botan. Soc. Vienna, 1861; Econom. Agricult. Acad. Florence, 1861; Geological Soc. London, 1863; Nat. Hist. Soc. Dublin, 1863; National Acad. Sc. U. S. 1863; Essex Instit. Salem, Mass. 1866; Linnean Soc. London, 1872; Anthropological Soc. London, 1872; Cherbourg Soc. Nat. Sc. 1873; Nat. Hist. Soc. Mexico, 1874; Liverpool Lit. and Philos. Soc. 1877; Washington Biological Soc. 1884; Copenhagen Soc. Sc. 1886. Pathologist St. Joseph's Hosp. 1852; Contract. Surg. U. S. A. General Hosp. Philad. 1862–65. Fellow of the College of Physicians Philada., 1851; res. Philadelphia, Pa.

IV. *THOMAS*, b. 21 May, 1825, d. 20 Apl., 1870, m. 13 Sep., 1849, Rebecca, dau. Joseph Johns, d. in 1853.

### THIRD GENERATION (E.)

Henry Melick (5) had 7 ch.

28. I. *MARY*, b. 2 Aug., 1790, d. 9 May, 1860, m. 2 Nov., 1814, Henry Martin Trembley, b. 25 Jan., 1787, d. 8 July, 1837; had 5 ch.

I. *JOHN*, b. 24 July, 1815, d. 29 June, 1871, had 4 daus. and 4 sons, all dec. but *Ellis C.*, res. Council Grove, Morris Co., Kansas, and *William A.*, res. Afton, Columbia Co., Pa.

II. *HENRY*, b. 2 Dec., 1816, d. 12 Feb., 1878, and had 2 sons and 4 daus., of which are living, *Elisha P.*, *Mary E.*, *Sarah C.*, who m. P. Jacobi, res. Afton, Col. Co., Pa., and *Bernetta*, who m. G. Mills, res. Afton, Col. Co., Pa.

III. *SARAH*, b. 14 Aug., 1819, d. 2 Sept., 1837.

IV. *WILLIAM*, b. 9 Dec., 1822, d. 25 Sept., 1853, m., no ch.

V. *HARRIET*, b. 25 Mch., 1825, m. 24 Feb., 1847, David Whitmire, who lives at Espy, Col. Co., Pa., and was b. 9 Nov., 1820; their ch., *Mary Ellen*, b. 24 Oct., 1850, m. 30 May, 1872; *William E. Diettick*, who lives at Espy, Col. Co., Pa., and was b. 28 Feb., 1849; *Anna Clara*, b. 28 Nov., 1853, d. in infancy; *Myrtilla G.*, b. 6 Aug., 1857, d. in infancy.

29. II. *SAMUEL*, b. 10 Feb., 1796, d. 13 Jan., 1887, m. *first*, in Feb., 1820, Sarah Brown, b. 2 Feb., 1795, d. 6 Nov., 1861; m. *second*, in 1863, Lavinia Mosteller; for 5 ch. see p. 711.

30. III. *JOHN*, of Light-Street, Pa., b. 22 Jan., 1799, d. 11 Oct., 1875, m. Martha Creveling, b. 1 Feb., 1799, d. 2 Dec., 1853. For 8 ch. see p. 711.

31. IV. *SUSAN*, m. George B. Sloan, of Briar Creek, Col. Co., Pa., b. 28 Aug., 1802, d. in 1853; had 4 ch.,

I. *SAMUEL*, b. 26 Aug., 1820, d. in 1843 by being drowned in the Pa. canal; he was a merchant at Light-Street, Pa.

II. *MARY JANE*, b. in 1861, m. Joseph Robbins, who lives at Greenwood, Pa.

## 708 CH. OF G. B. SLOAN, CHESTER SMITH & MICHAEL MELICK.

- III. MARGARET B., m. 12 Oct., 1853, Isaiah Melick. (60) res. Dixon, Ill.; he was born 6 Mch., 1824; for 7 ch see p. 713.
- IV. MARTHA ELIZABETH, b. 13 Mch., 1835, m. 8 Jan., 1858, Henry Wesley Creasy, b. 7 Oct., 1825, d. 30 Oct., 1868; her res. Bloomsburg, Pa.; their 5 ch., *Mary Ellis*, b. 26 Mch., 1859, d. in infancy; *Wilbur Fisk*, twin, b. 26 Mch., 1859, d. in infancy; *Samuel Clyton*, a lumber merchant of Bloomsburg, Pa., b. 21 Nov., 1860; *Maggie A.*, b. 17 Feb., 1867, d. 9 Nov., 1871; *George Edwin*, b. 29 May, 1863, d. 23 Sep., 1868.
- 32. V. RACHEL, b. 6 Nov., 1794, d. 19 Sep., 1875, m. Chester Smith, b. 30 Sep., 1794, d. 19 Aug., 1865; had 5 ch.,
  - I. MIRIAM, b. 3 Nov., 1823, m. John Kitgus, res. Huntersville, Lycoming Co., Pa.
  - II. CLARISSA, b. 11 June, 1825, m. John Edgar, res. Trenton, Col. Co., Pa.
- III. MARTHA, b. 1 Sep., 1826, d. 1 Sep., 1884, m. Jacob Christian, res. Derrs, Col. Co., Pa., and has 7 sons and 2 daus.
- IV. THEODORE W., res. Derrs, Col. Co., Pa., b. 30 May, 1821, m. 12 Oct., 1865, and had one ch., *Julia*, b. 5 Nov., 1829, unm., res. Derrs, Col. Co., Pa.
- V. THOMAS F., res. Clifton, Munro Co., N. Y., b. 21 July, 1833, m. 12 May, 1869, Euphemia Curtis, dau. of Nathan Tyler, of Sullivan Co., N. Y.; a clergyman, graduated in 1866 at Lewisburg University, Pa.; and has 2 ch.
- 33. VI. DANIEL, b. 1 Jan., 1806, m. 14 May, 1837, Sarah, dau. of John Hazelett, of N. J., b. in 1807, d. in June, 1868. For 8 ch. see p. 712.
- 34. VII. SARAH, m. Asa Evered.

### THIRD GENERATION (E).

Michael Melick (6) had 6 ch.

- 35. I. MARIE, b. 10 Jan., 1785, d. 10 Aug., 1870, m. *First*, Captain, afterwards Commodore Burbank, of the U. S. Navy, who d. at Buenos Ayres, S. A., about 1820; he was an officer of the American frigate "Constitution" at the time of her fight with the British ship "Guerrier;" she m. *second*, Jacob Coats, of England; no ch.
- 36. II. JOHANNES, b. 20 May, 1787, d. in Oct., 1843, m. in 1819, Julianna, dau. of John Myers; he served in war of 1812; had ch.
  - I. CHRISTIANA, b. 20 Oct., 1821, dec., m. James Crommie; their son *John's* address is 13 North Tenth Street, Phila.
  - II. CATHERINE, b. 2 Nov., 1826, m. 9 July, 1846, Thomas A. Ward; res. 244 Juniper Street, Phila., b. 17 Mch., 1828; has one ch. *Henry*, b. 27 May, 1851, is married and has one son.
  - III. HENRY, b. 16 July, 1829, unm., res. 244 Juniper St., Phila.
  - IV. EMMA, b. 2 Feb., 1839, m. a Mr. Bryan; res. 1743 North 13th St., Phila.
- 37. III. PETER, b. 26 Mch., 1789, d. 7 Mch., 1820, m. in 1815, Susannah, dau. of John Myers, b. in 1758, d. in 1833; he served in war of 1812; had ch.
  - I. CATHERINE, b. 18 June, 1816, d. in infancy.
  - II. MARY ANN, b. 3 Nov., 1818, d. in infancy.
  - III. JULIANA, b. 17 Jan., 1820, m. James Lee, b. in 1822, d. in 1883; her res. 755 South 15th St., Phila.
- 38. IV. AMELIA, b. 12 Jan., 1791, d. in infancy.
- 39. V. SAMUEL, b. about 1794, d. unm., final audit of his estate was dated 2d July, 1827; served in war of 1812.
- 40. VI. CHRISTIANA, b. 29 July, 1797, d. 6 Jan., 1881, m., as *second* wife (see 27), 25 May, 1826, Philip Leidy, b. 5 Dec., 1791, d. in Phila., 9 Oct., 1862, served in war of 1812; had ch.
  - I. CHRISTIANA TALIANA, b. 22 Feb., 1827, d. 24 Oct., 1878, m. 4 June, 1849, James Cyrus Umberger, b. in 1817, d. 18 Sep., 1855; their 2 ch., *Caroline Julia* who m. a Mr. Parker and lives at 717 Spruce st., Phila., *James Horace*, b. 1852, d. in 1884; res. of widow 1536 North 8th st., Phila.
  - II. FRANCIS, b. 14 Dec., 1828, d. 3 June, 1856. unm.
- III. ASHER, b. 3 July, 1830, d. 6 July, 1873, m. 14 Apl., 1851, Almira, dau. of Henry Lechler; he was colonel of 99th Pa. Regt., Kearneys Brigade, and Brevet Brigadier General, seriously wounded at Fred-

- ericksburg. Va., Dec., 1862; their 2 ch., *Philip Henry*, b. 25 Oct., 1853; *Francis James*, b. 14 Dec., 1856; d. in 1864.
- IV. HELEN, b. 30 Sep., 1833, d. 3 Dec., 1839.
- V. CATHERINE MELICK, b. 28 Mch., 1837, d. 12 Aug., 1839.
- VI. PHILIP, res. 526 Marshall St., Phila., b. 29 Dec., 1838, m. 15 Feb., 1865, Penelope Maury, dau. of Robert Isaac Watts Polk, of Winchester, Va. Philip Leidy received degree of M.D. 1859, Univ. Pa. Memb. Medico-Chirurgical Soc. P. 1868; Amer. Med. Assoc. 1870; Philad. Co. Med. Soc. 1876; Med. Soc. State Pa. 1878; Juniata Valley Med. Soc. 1882; Med. Jurisprudence Soc. Philad. 1883; Neurological Soc. Philad. 1886; Northern Med. Soc. Philad. P. 1885. Resid. Phys. Philad. Hosp. 1859-61; Surg. U. S. Vol. 1861-65; U. S. Exam. Surg. for Pensions 1866-70; Port Phys. Philad. 1874-83; Consult. Phys. Home for Incurables 1875-78; Consult. Phys. Odd Fellows' Home 1878-87; Phys. in Chief, Philad. Hosp. Insane Dept., 1886; Consult. Phys. Philad. Hosp. for the Insane, 1887; Memb. (Sectional) Board of Education. Fellow of the College of Physicians of Philada., Consulting Physician Masonic Home, Odd Fellows' Orphanage. Medical Directors, Dept. of Shenandoah, Va., 1864. Member of the Military Order of the Loyal Legion of the United States and Grand Army of the Republic, Soc. Army of Potomac, etc., etc., etc.; their ch., *Joseph*, b. 11 Apl., 1866; *James Fontaine Polk*, b. 10 Jan., 1869, d. in infancy; *Clarence Maury*, b. 28 June, 1873; *Gertrude Harwood*, b. 31 Oct., 1879.; *Katherine Melick*, b. 2 May, 1882.

## FOURTH GENERATION (E).

Henry Malick (10) had 5 ch.

41. I. SOPHIA JANE, b. 25 Apl., 1827, d. 25 Aug., 1833.
42. II. CATHERINE, b. 29 Dec., 1828, d. 28 Mch., 1857, m. Luther Wright, of West Mill Creek; had 2 ch.,  
I. HENRY, lives at Battle Creek, Mich.
43. III. SAMUEL BARRIS, b. 12 Sep., 1830, d. in California 20 June, 1871, just after his marriage; no ch.
44. IV. JOHN WESLEY, res. Platea, Erie Co., Pa., b. 27 May, 1824, m. 7 Sep., 1854, Emeline Johnson, of Springfield, Pa.; has 5 ch.,  
I. IDA, d. when 27 years old.  
II. SAMUEL W., of Huntington, W. Virginia.
- III. FRANK, b. 9 Apl., 1867, m. 12 May, 1888, Mary, dau. of Michael B. Bain, of Conneautville, Pa., b. in 1850.
- IV. MAUD.  
V. GEORGE.
45. V. HENRY PRESTON, b. 22 Aug., 1837, d. 4 Nov., 1888, m. 24 Dec., 1861, Lucy, dau. of Ethan Loveridge, of Girard, Pa., where she now resides, b. 11 Jan., 1835; had 3 ch.,  
I. CAROLINE ELIZABETH, b. 6 Feb., 1864.  
II. GRACE ADELIA, b. 19 Feb., 1865.  
III. HERBERT PRESTON, b. 31 July, 1866.

## FOURTH GENERATION (E.)

Jacob Melick (19) had 13 ch.

46. I. NORMAN L., b. 20 Feb., 1828, d. 16 July, 1832.
47. II. BERNETTA, b. 29 July, 1829, d. 15 Oct., 1880, m. 10 May, 1848, George, son of Rev'd George Boyd, D. D., of Phila., b. 16 Nov., 1826, d. 17 Nov., 1885; had 9 ch.,  
I. GEORGE JACOB, b. 28 Apl., 1849, d. 16 Mch., 1850.  
II. ELIZABETH LIVINGSTON, b. 8 Oct., 1850, d. 5 Dec., 1855.
- III. WILLET LIVINGSTON, res. 209 North Water St., Phila., b. 20 Feb., 1856, m. 20 May, 1880, Sophia, dau. of James C. Allen, of Phila., and have 3 ch., *Catherine Allen*, b. 28 Dec., 1882; *Livingston*, b. 6 June, 1887, d. in infancy, and *Bernetta*, b. 10 Aug., 1888.
- IV. GEORGE MELICK, M. D., b. 11 Aug., 1861, res. 1702 N. 16 St., Phila.; graduated in 1882 at the University of Pa.; now practicing medicine.



## 710 CH. OF JACOB AND P. MELICK OF LIGHT-STREET, PA.

- V. ROBERT THOMAS, b. 22 May, 1863, res. 1702 N. 16 St., Phila.
- VI. AGNES ELLIS, b. 17 July, 1865.
- VII. SARAH SMUCKER, b. 11 June, 1868.
- VIII. JACOB MELICK, b. 5 Jan., 1870.
- IX. BERNETTA CLINGMAN, b. 19 June, 1875, d. 3 Feb., 1888.
- 48. III. CAMPASPA, b. in Nov., 1830, d. 8 July, 1876, m. in May, 1849, George H. Hagenbuch, res. Williamsport, Pa., b. 25 June, 1825; had 7 ch.
  - I. ALETHA E., b. 6 Jan., 1851, m. 27 Nov., 1877, Ellis H. Masters, res. East Orange, N. J., b. 30 Oct., 1846, and has 2 ch., *George LaRue*, b. 24 June, 1880, and *Mabel* b. 20 Sep., 1883.
  - II. AN INFANT son, b. in 1852, d. in 1854.
- III. MARTHA M., b. 16 Feb., 1857, m. 6 June, 1878, Charles W. Hiles, res., Williamsport, Pa., b. 24 Apl., 1843, and has 1 ch., *Miriam* b. 2 Aug., 1879.
- IV. CLOTILDA B., b. 31 Jan., 1859.
- V. CAROLINE M., b. 1 July, 1865.
- VI. KATHRIN, b. 17 Oct., 1868.
- VII. NETTIE, b. 7 Apl., 1873, d. in infancy.
- 49. IV. MIRANDA, b. 13 Sep., 1832, d. 22 Dec., 1835.
- 50. V. LUTHER, b. 13 Dec., 1834, d. 2 Dec., 1835.
- 51. VI. ELIZABETH SARAH, b. 5 Oct., 1836, d. 31 Mar., 1877, m. 7 May, 1856, Solomon Smucker, res. Phila., b. 22 June, 1830; had 6 ch.
  - I. EDWIN M., b. 19 Feb., 1857, m. Emma, dau. of Charles Scott, of Phila., res. 1811 Hart St., Phila.
  - II. JOHN R., b. 8 July, 1859.
  - III. BESSIE, b. 21 Nov., 1861.
  - IV. BENETTA, b. 24 Nov., 1870, and 2 ch. d. in infancy.
- 52. VII. WILHELMINA, b. 20 Apl., 1839, d. 23 Jan., 1842.
- 53. VIII. SAMANTHA, b. 22 Jan., 1841, m. 21 Apl., 1864, Darlington, I. Brown, res. Light-Street, Pa., and has 2 ch.
  - I. MARY ELIA, b. 14 July, 1868.
  - II. JACOB MELICK, b. 8 Oct., 1870.
- 54. IX. PULASKI, res. Light-Street, Col. Co., Pa., b. 2 Mch., 1843, m. 6 Dec., 1866, Cecilia, dau. of Benjamin Thornton, b. 13 Sep., 1844; had one child, I. WILLET S., b. 18 June, 1868.
- 55. X. ORION, res. Light-Street, Col. Co., Pa., b. 21 Mch., 1845, m. 7 June, 1881, Sarah, dau. of James Backman, b. 16 Sep., 1867; no ch.
- 56. XI. QUITIMA, b. in 1847, d. in infancy.
- 57. XII. LEONI, counsellor-at-law, of Phila., b. 5 May, 1851, unm.
- 58. XIII. RACHEL, b. in 1853, d. in infancy.

### FOURTH GENERATION (E).

Peter Melick (20) had 13 ch.

- 59. I. JACOB B., res. Lyons, Iowa, b. 7 Oct., 1820, m. *First* 16 June, 1842, Mary, dau. of Adam Hilliard, who d. 21 Sep., 1851; *second*, 1 Feb., 1852, Martha, dau. of Benjamin F. Reeser; for 5 ch. see p. 713.
- 60. II. ISAAH S., res. Dixon, Ill., b. 6 Mch., 1824, m. 12 Oct., 1853, Margaret B. Sloan; for 7 ch. see p. 713.
- 61. III. DELILAH, b. 21 Nov., 1825, d. in Feb., 1865, m. 7 Apl., 1847, Andrew Best, of Col. Co., Pa., his present res. Lock Haven, Pa., had ch.
  - I. MARY M., b. in Clinton Co., Pa., in August, 1843, m. in Dec., 1865, G. W. Macdonald, of same Co., b. 5 Sep., 1845, res. Atchison, Kansas; their ch., *Atason A.*, b. in July, 1873, and *George*, b. in Apl., 1880.
  - II. PETER MELICK, res. Kansas City, Mo., b. in Clinton Co., Pa., 24 July, 1852, m. 22 June, 1887, Ella M. Cole, dau. of H. C. Cole, of Lawrence, Kansas, b. in Charlestown, Mass.; has one ch., *Ella M.*, b. 24 Dec., 1888.
- III. BERNETTA RACHAEL, b. in Clinton Co., Pa., 14 Dec., 1854, d. 7 May, 1877, in Kansas City, Mo., m. to George Robinson, b. in Maine, d. in Mo. 31 Dec., 1849; they left one ch. *George*.
- IV. LLOYD BYRON, res. Ogden, Utah Terr., b. 4 Sep., 1856, unm.
- V. LILY ELLEN, b. in Clinton Co., Pa., 9 Jan., 1863, m. 31 Dec., 1885, in Mo., D. L. M. Reanes, b. in 1859, res. Kansas City, Mo., has one ch., *Ruth Delilah*, b. 31 Oct., 1886.

62. IV. PETER B., res. Lock Haven, Pa., b. 22 July, 1827, m. 24 June, 1862, Mary Elizabeth dau. of Judge John J. Dentler; had ch.,  
 I. NELLIE G., b. 5 Apl., 1863.  
 II. MARY, b. 24 Nov., 1866, d. 29 Jan., 1867.  
 III. BLANCHE, b. 5 Nov., 1868, d. 1 Aug., 1869.
63. V. RACHEL B., b. 26 Apl., 1829, m. Rev. E. H. Waring, res. Oskaloosa, Iowa, had two ch., *Edmund*, who is deceased, and *Rachel B.*
64. VI. CHARLES FOREST, b. 31 Jan., 1831, d. 3 Mch., 1854, at Moscow, Virginia, by the explosion of a cannon.
65. VII. HIRAM B., b. 27 Feb., 1833, res. Williamsport, Pa.
66. VIII. ANNA MARGARET, b. 26 Aug., 1835, m. Daniel Shane, res. Burns, La Cross Co., Wis.
67. IX. PHEBE S., b. 8 Mch., 1837, m. 23 Feb., 1860, Zebboth Oman, res. Burr Oak, Michigan, b. 5 Jan., 1835; had ch.,  
 I. ELLA MARGARET, b. 6 Aug., 1861, m. 29 May, 1883, Freemont Burkholder, res. Goshen, Indiana, b. 7 Dec., 1856.  
 II. ALTA CATHERINE, b. 13 Nov., 1863, m. 7 Oct., 1884, Delzon Crooks, res. Goshen, Indiana, b. 5 July, 1854.  
 III. MARY DELL, b. 6 Oct., 1865.  
 IV. ADA RACHEL, b. 12 Oct., 1867.  
 V. SAMUEL WILLIS, b. 8 Feb., 1870.  
 VI. MABEL MAY, b. 27 May, 1878.
68. X. ABNER D., res. Los Angeles, Cal., b. 2 Dec., 1838, unm.
69. XI. LAVINA I., b. 6 Nov., 1840, m. 1 Jan., 1879, Dr. Henry Adam Hendrix, res. New Freedom, York Co., Pa., b. 25 Jan., 1828.
70. XII. WILSON D., res. Sunbury, Pa., b. 19 Oct., 1842, m. 28 Mch., 1867, Sarah Josephine, dau. of Joseph Brittain, of Luzerne Co., Pa.; had ch., I. OLIVE LOGAN, b. 29 Nov., 1868; II. RALPH LASHELL, b. 10 Jan., 1872; III. CHARLES FOREST, b. 16 Oct., 1874; IV. ANNA MARGARET, b. 24 May, 1876; V. HARRY VINCENT, b. 8 June, 1880; VI. GEORGE OTTIS, b. 30 Jan., 1885.
71. XIII. MARY CATHERINE, b. 18 Aug., 1844, d. in 1857.

## FOURTH GENERATION (E).

Samuel Melick (29) had 5 ch.

72. I. JULIA A., b. 8 Apl., 1821, m. 12 Dec., 1842, Joseph E. Barkley; had 3 ch.,  
 I. SARAH, b. 23 Feb., 1844, m. in 1869, Chester S. Ferman.  
 II. GLOVEINA, b. 9 Jan., 1848, m. in 1870, Elias R. Ferman.  
 III. CLARA J., b. 21 Jan., 1860, d. 23 Sep., 1880.
73. II. ALMIRA, b. 17 Feb., 1827, m. 23 Jan., 1850, John A. Funston, now pres. of the Bloomsburg Banking Co., of Columbia Co., Pa., b. 9 Feb., 1820; had 3 ch.,  
 I. MIRETTA SARAH, b. 17 Jan., 1851, m. 1 Jan., 1878, Paul E. Wirt; their ch., *Karl F.*, b. 11 Oct., 1878; *Pauline*, b. 24 Apl., 1881, and *Max Eslerly*, b. 9 Nov., 1885, d. in infancy.  
 II. EVA LILIAN, b. 26 June, 1855, m. 24 Nov., 1880, H. O. Rodgers, res. Hazleton, Pa.; their ch., *Estella*, b. in July, 1887, and *Kenneth F.*, b. 11 Sep., 1888.  
 III. CHARLES WESLEY, b. 10 Jan., 1859, unm.
74. III. JAMES D., res. 2219 South Broad St., Phila., b. 12 Sep., 1829, m. in 1851, Harriet Bettle, of Wilkes-Barra, Pa., and has 4 ch.
75. IV. WESLEY, a physician of Osage, Vernon Co., Mo., b. 13 Nov., 1831, m. 8 June, 1859, Mary, dau. of Leonard Dodge, b. 24 Sep., 1840; had 9 ch.,  
 I. ANNA B., b. 29 Aug., 1860, m. Constantine T. Whitfield, and has 3 ch.:  
 II. LEONARD, b. in 1862; III. VICTOR, b. in 1867; IV. PRINCE, b. in 1869; V. IDA, b. in 1871; VI. LAILA, b. in 1874; VII. UNIS, b. in 1876;  
 VIII. EFFIE, b. in 1878; IX., BEULA, b. in 1881
76. V. WILLIAM B., b. 17 Apl., 1835, m. Mary Bracken, of Phila.

## FOURTH GENERATION (E).

John Melick (30) had 8 ch.

77. I. JUSTUS A. (Rev.), born at Light-Street, Pa., 11 March, 1823, d. at Harrisburg, 22 March, 1886, m. *first*, 29 Oct., 1851, Emeline E., dau. of John Patchin,

of Clearfield Co., Pa., d. 5 Aug., 1862; m. *second*, 22 June, 1864, Ann Dunmire, of McVeytown, Pa., who lives at 800 Elder street, Harrisburg, Pa. After being educated at Harford, Pa., Academy, and at Genessee Wesleyan Seminary, at Lima, N. Y., he in 1848 entered the Methodist ministry, supplying successive pulpits in Pa. and N. J. until 1877, when he was incapacitated by ill health from further work in the itinerancy. All testimony concurs in naming Mr. Melick's ministry as being of great value and helpfulness to his several charges. His biographer mentions him as a mighty exhorter who had wonderful fervency and liberty in prayer, and says that his character was built upon solid pillars of integrity and domed over with a cheerful, constant faith in God. "While he was broad enough to appreciate and admire with fraternal regard the character and work of other denominations, he was a thorough Methodist. He loved the doctrines and enjoyed the experience, and glorified the polity and emulated the heroic examples which have given distinction to Methodism. Living a quiet, peaceful life in all godliness and honesty, fulfilling his ministry amid the toils of the itinerancy with zeal and effectiveness, never striving for place or power, unpretentious, genuine and true, our brother has left behind him an influence and a name which will not soon be forgotten." Had ch.

- I. MARY, b. 13 Dec., 1856, m. 27 Apl., 1885, George B. Dunmire, M. D., res. 1116 Arch St., Phila., Pa.; no ch.
- II. JOHN P., res. 802 North Second St., Harrisburg, Pa., Deputy Prothonotary and Clerk of Courts, b. 18 Aug., 1858, m. 20 Oct., 1887, Elizabeth K., dau. of Joseph M. Black, of Harrisburg, Pa.
- III. EMMA, b. 31 Jan., 1861, res. 800 Elder St., Harrisburg, Pa.
78. II. HARRIET, b. 22 Aug., 1825, m. in 1853, James W. Sankey, b. in 1833, res. 253 Boas St., Harrisburg, Pa., and has one ch., EMMA, b. in 1861.
79. III. HENRY, res. Atalissa, Muscatine Co., Iowa, b. 20 Sep., 1827, m. 16 Oct., 1851, Martha A., dau. of George Wirt, b. 2 Oct., 1831; had 4 ch.,
  - I. MILLARD FILLMORE, b. 5 Nov., 1853, m. 20 Dec., 1877, Nina M. Barkalow.
  - II. JOHN WARREN, b. 5 Sep., 1855, m. 5 Sep., 1876, Mollie A. Croxen.
  - III. JUSTUS A., b. 5 Sep., 1857, m. 23 Dec., 1886, Eva Kline.
  - IV. TANTA B., b. 15 July, 1864.
80. IV. CHARITY LOUISA, b. 27 Aug., 1829, d. 13 June, 1849.
81. V. JOHN NELSON, res. Hiner's Run, Clinton Co., Pa., b. 23 Dec., 1832, m. and has 3 ch.
82. VI. MARTHA JANE, b. 2 Oct., 1834, d. in March, 1879, m. a Mr. Mead, and had one ch., BERTHA, who m. John Barnet, a merchant of Schickshiny.
83. VII. MARGARET EMILY, b. 2 Apl., 1836, d. 17 Jan., 1842.
84. VIII. EMMA, b. 15 Feb., 1844, m. 30 Jan., 1867, John M. C. Ranck, lawyer, res. Light-Street, Col. Co., Pa., b. 19 April, 1831; had 4 ch.
  - I. HARRIET ALWILDA, b. 17 Oct., 1868, II. HORATIO -PIERCE, b. 8 Dec., 1870; III. JOHN HANDLEY, b. 9 Dec., 1879; IV. EDWARD MELICK, b. 10 May, 1885.

#### FOURTH GENERATION.

Daniel Melick (33) had 8ch.

85. I. HARVEY, res. Shiloh, Ohio, b. 5 June, 1823, m. 16 Sep., 1852, Elizabeth, dan. of Frederic Smalley, of Cumberland Co., Pa.; had one dau., b. 22 Mch., 1854, who is married and has 2 ch.
86. II. MARY, b. 27 Aug., 1831, unm.
87. III. AMANDA, b. 25 July, 1836.
88. IV. ARAMINTA, b. 5 Jan., 1838, m. 18 Dec., 1866, Jacob Kaylor; res. Shiloh, Ohio; had 4 ch.; 3 sons and 1 dau.
89. V. VIRGINIA, b. 8 Nov., 1840, m. 17 Sep., 1868, William Baldwin, res. Shiloh, Ohio.
90. VI. BENSON, b. 5 Mar., 1843, d. in the Union Army 3 Sep., 1864.
91. VII. ALVERNON, b. 28 Feb., 1846, m. 21 Sep., 1869, Orville Squires, res. Greenwich, Huron Co., Ohio, b. 27 Mch., 1837, in Steuben Co., N. Y.; had ch.;
  - I. WILBUR B., b. 11 June, 1872; II. ROY S., b. 25 July, 1876, res. Ganges, Ohio.



92. VIII. SARAH, res. Ganges, O., b. 24 Oct., 1854, m. 31 Dec., 1885, Joseph Hisey, b. 10 June, 1833; their 1 ch., BEULAH, b. 27 Jan., 1887.

## FIFTH GENERATION (E.)

Jacob B. Melick (59) had 3 ch by first wife.

93. I. STEWART PIERCE, res. Dallas Center, Iowa, b. 5 Aug., 1844, m. 25 Feb., 1869, Augusta H., dau. of Charles P. Partridge, of De Kalb Co., Ill.; had ch.  
 I. MARY ALICE, b. 14 Oct., 1870, d. 23 Dec., 1872.  
 II. LOUIS EARLE, b. 27 Dec., 1871.  
 III. JAY B., b. 6 Sep., 1873, d. in infancy.  
 IV. MARTHA AUGUSTA, b. 5 May, 1876.  
 V. CHARLES STEWART, b. 3 Feb., 1879.
94. II. SARAH E., b. 7 Oct., 1846, m. 16 June, 1870, Williard Ives Tripp, of Watertown, N. Y., present res. 1522 South 11th St., Omaha, Neb., b. 25 June, 1842; had 6 ch.  
 I. FRANK S., b. 26 May, 1871, d. in infancy.  
 II. ROBERT B., b. 2 Sep., 1873.  
 III. GEORGE W., b. 19 July, 1875.  
 IV. NELLY MAY, b. 28 Aug., 1878, d. in infancy.  
 V. ALBERT LEE, b. 24 May, 1881, d. in infancy.  
 VI. LEWIS E., b. 21 Aug., 1883.
95. III. JOLILA, b. 7 Dec., 1849, d. 18 Sep., 1851.  
 Jacob B., (59) had 2 ch. by second wife.
96. I. EDGAR B., b. 2 Jan., 1854, d. 21 July, 1885.
97. II. LULU M., b. 6 June, 1853, m. 3 Jan., 1888, Stephen Porter Harlan, of Cecil Co., Md., present res. Rincon, New Mexico, where he is supt. of bridges and buildings of A. T. and S. F. R. R., b. 2 Dec., 1848; had one ch.  
 I. JACOB MELICK, b. 17 Oct., 1888.

## FIFTH GENERATION (E.)

Isaiah Melick (60) had 7 ch.

98. I. BYRON, b. 21 Feb., 1854, d. in Aug., 1855.
99. II. OTTIS, res. Adrian, Minnesota, b. 16 Nov., 1855, m. in Mch., 1886, Emma Reese, of Dodgeville, Wis.
100. III. LILLIE, b. 28 June, 1859, d. in Chicago, where she held a position as teacher and stenographer, 24 Oct., 1855.
101. IV. ABRO P., b. 6 Sept., 1860, d. 12 Dec., 1861.
102. V. WALTER SCOTT, res. Neenach, Los Angeles Co., Cal., b. 13 Mch., 1863, graduated at Northern Illinois Normal College, and is now in the Stock, Bond, and Real Estate business in Los Angeles.
103. VI. MATTIE E., b. 13 Mch., 1866, d. 20 Jan., 1855.
104. VII. CLYDE M., b. 29 Nov., 1869.

## ADDENDA.

The monument to be seen in the foreground of the illustration of the Evangelical Head Church at Bendorf on the Rhine (page 92) was erected by the municipality in honor of soldiers from that place, who served in the war of 1770-71 against France. A marble tablet records that among others whom the shaft is intended to honor is Carl Möllich of the 3d Hohenzollern Regiment, who, being wounded at the bloody battles of Gorze and Metz, on the fourteenth and eighteenth of August, 1870, died on the eighth of October, at the military hospital in the Castle of Engers.



## BIBLIOGRAPHY.

- Albany, R. Pearson's Genealogies, and First Settlers in.
- America, Annals of, by Abiel Holmes, D. D.
- America, Letters from, Between the Years 1760 and 1767, by Edward Eddis.
- America, Narrative and Critical History of, by Justin Winsor.
- America, The British Empire in, by J. Oldmixon.
- America, Winterbottom's History of. American Antiquarian Society, Part I of Vol. V, New England Slave Trade, by Wm. B. Weeden.
- American Biography, Library of, by Jared Sparks.
- American Theatre, by William Dunlap.
- Arts of Design, History of, by William Dunlap.
- Axtell Record, The
- Bangs, Lieut. Isaac, of the Mass. Militia, Journal of, Proc. of N. J. Hist. Soc., 1st Series, Vol. VIII.
- Baptists, Benedict's History of the
- Basking Ridge Presbyterian Church, History of, by Rev. John C. Rankin, D. D.
- Bedminster Church History, by Rev. Henry P. Thompson.
- Bell, Andrew, Journal During March of British through the Jerseys, 1778, Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 1st Series, Vol. VI.
- Bergen, Annals of the Classis of, by Rev. Benj. C. Taylor, D. D.
- Bergen Family, The, by Teunis Bergen.
- Bertholf, Rev. Guillaume, Aaron Lloyd in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. IX.
- Bi-Centennial History East N. J., by A. Q. Keasbey, Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. VII.
- Biddle, Charles, Autobiography of.
- Bloomfield, Gov. Joseph, William Nelson, in the Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. IX.
- Boundbrook Surprise, Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. XI, p. 187.
- Burlington, The Settlement of, by Henry Arnitt Brown.
- Burr, Aaron, Military Record of, by Charles H. Peck, in Mag. Amer. Hist., Vol. XVIII.
- Cadwalader, Col. Lambert, a Sketch of, by William K. Rawle, M. A., LL. D., in Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. X., No. 1.
- Campaigns in America, My, by Count Wm. de Deuxponts.
- Carroll, H. H. in "One Hundred Years of Temperance."
- Carteret Genealogy, Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. I.
- Church in the Colonies, by Rev. Samuel A. Clark.
- Churches, Our Older, by Rev. William W. Blauvelt, in the Somerville Magazine, "Our Home," 1871.
- Colfax, Captain William, by William Nelson, in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., Vol. IV.
- Colonial and Revolutionary Currency, by Prof. W. D. Sumner in Harper's Magazine.
- Colonial Entry Book S. P. O. No. 92.
- Colonial History of the State of New York.
- Colonial New York, by George W. Schuyler.
- Colonial Salaries, by John Ruther-

- ford, in *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 2nd Series, Vol. I.
- Colonists at Home, by Edward Eggleston, in the *Century Magazine*, April, 1885.
- Constitution of the United States, Paper by Hon. Joseph P. Bradley Read before N. J. Hist. Soc., January, 1851.
- Constitution, Origin of Federal, by Prof. Francis N. Thorpe, in *Mag. Amer. Hist.*, Vol. XVIII.
- County and Township Records.
- Court Circles of the Republic, The, by Mrs. E. F. Ellet.
- Customs and Manners, by Thomas E. Osmun.
- Cutler, Mannassah, Diary of.
- Days of Old, The, by Rev. Matthew H. Henderson, M. A.
- Declaration of Independence, a Biography of the Signers of, by L. Carol Judson.
- Department of State at Trenton, records of.
- Documents Relating to the Colonial History of the State of New York, edited by E. B. O'Callaghan.
- Dorchester, Rev. Daniel, D. D., in "One Hundred Years of Temperance."
- East Jersey under the Proprietors, by William A. Whitehead.
- Eighteenth Century, Hitchman's Essays and Studies of.
- Elizabethtown, N. J., History of St. John's Church, by Rev. Samuel A. Clark.
- English Colonies in America, by Henry Cabot Lodge.
- Episcopalians in Revolution, Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. XI, p. 171.
- Evangelical Head-Church, Bendorf, Germany, Archives of.
- Familiar Letters, on Public Characters, by Sullivan.
- First Century of the Republic, Harper's Magazine, No. 295, Vol. L.
- First Reformed Church, of Somerville, N. J., Archives of.
- Franklin, Benjamin, Before Parliament in 1766, Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. X, p. 220.
- Frelinghuysen Memorial, by Rev. Talbot W. Chambers, D. D.
- French Allies, Our, by Edwin Martin Stone.
- French Officer, Diary of a, Mag. Amer. Hist., June, 1880.
- German Valley, Blauvelt's Historical Sketch of the German Reformed and Presbyterian Church of.
- German Emigration, Christopher Lower's Account of, Dawson's Hist. Mag., Vol. IX, p. 100.
- German Exodus, The, Contribution to the Nineteenth Century.
- German Life in the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Centuries, Pictures of, by Gustav Freytag.
- German Slavery in North America, by Ernest Otto Hopp.
- German Soldiers in the Wars of the United States, Paper read before Rhode Island Hist. Soc. in 1887, by J. G. Rosengarten.
- German, Swiss, Dutch and French Immigrants in Pennsylvania, by Prof. J. D. Rupp.
- "Good Order Established in Pennsylvania, and New Jersey in America," by Thomas Budd, Jr., 1685.
- Graham, Memoirs of Lieut. Gen. Samuel.
- Green, Ashbell, Life of, by Rev. James M. Jones.
- Greene, Nathanael, Life of, by Prof. George W. Greene.
- Hamilton, Alexander, Life of, by Samuel M. Smucker, A. M.
- Henry, Patrick, Tyler's Life of.
- Hessian and other German Auxiliaries, by Edward K. Lowell.
- Hessians, Diary of Ewald Gustav Schaukirk, Pastor of N. Y. Moravian Church, 1775-1783, Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. X, No. 4.
- Historical Discourse, Millstone R. D. Church, by Rev. Edward Tanjore Corwin, D. D.
- Historical Magazine, Morrisania, Ed. by H. B. Dawson.
- Hudson County, History of, by Charles H. Winfield.
- Hunterdon County, First Century of, by Dr. George T. Mott.
- Hunterdon and Somerset Counties, History of, by James P. Snell.
- Hunterdon County, N. J., St. Thoma's Church of Alexandria, (Episcopalians in Revolution,) by Henry Race, A. M., M. D., Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. X, No. 4.
- Indians of N. J., by Samuel Allinson in *Proc. of N. J. Hist. Soc.*, 2nd Series, Vol. IV.



- Indians, Raritan, Rev. George C. Schenck's Paper read before N. J. Hist. Soc. in May, 1851.
- Indians, The Aborigines, of N. J., by Archer Gifford in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 1st Series, Vol. IV.
- Tappan, The Massacre near Old, by William S. Stryker.
- Jersey Line at Battle of Brandywine, Mag. of Amer. Hist., Vol. XVIII, p. 463.
- Jerseymen, The Goodly Heritage of, by the Right Rev. George Washington Doane, D. D., LL. D.
- John Jay, Life and Times of, by William Whitlock.
- Johnston, Col. Philip, William S. Stryker in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. IV.
- Joseph Clark, of the Continental Army, The Diary of, Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 1st Series, Vol. VII.
- Journalism, History of, by Frederic Hudson.
- Juet's Journal, N. Y. Hist. Soc. Coll's.
- Kirchen, Buch der Corporation von Zion, in New Germantown, in West Jersey.
- Knickerbocker Life in N. Y., Last Days of, by A. C. Dayton.
- Knox, Memoir of Gen. Henry, by Francis S. Drake.
- Knox, Henry, Gen., Manuscript Papers of, New England's Hist. and Gen. Soc., Boston.
- Krafft, John, Chas. Phil. von, (Hessian) Journal of, ed. by Thos. Henry Edsall, in Coll's N. Y. Hist. Soc., 1882.
- Lafayette, Life of, by Bayard Tuckerman.
- Lamb, John, General, memoirs of the life and times of, by Isaac L. Leake.
- Laurens, Henry, Peter Force in Dawson's Hist. Mag., Vol I, p. 132.
- Lebanon, German Reformed Church of, by Rev. Charles P. Wack, in the Somerville Magazine, "Our Home," 1873.
- Lee, Charles, Gen., Treason of, by George H. Moore.
- Lee, Charles, Papers Relating to, Coll's N. Y. Hist. Soc., 1873.
- Lee, Charles, Life of, by E. Langworthy.
- Letters from an American Farmer, by St. John.
- Lincoln, Benjamin, Gen., manuscript papers in possession of S. T. Crosby, Esq., Hingham, Mass.
- Livingston, Life of Governor William, by Sedgwick.
- Long Island, Battle of, by H. P. Johnston, in Vol. III, Pub's of the L. I. Hist. Soc.
- Long Island Historical Society, Memoirs of.
- Long Island, History of, by Benjamin F. Thompson.
- Loyalists in Canada, Mag. of Amer. History, Vol. XVII, p. 416.
- Lutheran Church, Hist. of the American, by Ernest L. Hazelius, D. D.
- Luttrell's Diary.
- Manuscripts, Family.
- Manuscripts, Numerous in Private Hands.
- McDowell Family, Sketches of the, Dr. A. W. McDowell in the Somerville Magazine, "Our Home," 1873.
- Medicine in the American Colonies, Historical Sketch of State of, by John B. Beck.
- Memoirs of an American Lady, by Mrs. Anne Grant.
- Memoirs of My Own Times, by General James Wilkinson.
- Memoirs of Sixty Years in Pennsylvania, by Graydon.
- Memorial by Col. Morris, Concerning the State of Religion in the Jerseys, 1700, N. J. Hist. Coll's.
- Men and Manners in America One Hundred Years Ago, by H. E. Scudder.
- Millstone Centennial Memorial, by Rev. Edward Tanjore Corwin.
- Mettelfranken, Germany, Archives of the Historical Society of.
- Monmouth County, History of, by Edwin Salter, in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vols. IV and V.
- Moore, Benjamin, Lieut. and Adj't., of Col. Moses Hazen's Regiment; Order Book, Mem. Book and Manuscripts, in possession of Thomas W. Moore of Plainfield, N. J.
- Morgan, General Daniel, Life of, by James Graham.
- Morris County, Annals of, by Rev. Joseph F. Tuttle.
- Morris County, Early History of, by Rev. Joseph F. Tuttle, in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. I and V.

- Morris County, History of, Pub. by Munsell, 1883.
- Morris Family, Genealogy, Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. VII.
- Morris, Gouverneur, Diary of.
- Morris, Mrs. Margaret, Journal of.
- Morristown, Capt. John Steele, at, Dawson's Hist. Mag., Vol. IX, p. 187.
- Morristown in Revolution, by Rev. Jos. F. Tuttle, D. D., and Rev. Sam'l L. Tuttle in Dawson's Hist. Mag., March, May and June, 1871.
- Muhlenberg, General Peter, The Life of, by H. A. Muhlenberg.
- Muhlenberg, Peter, Gen., Career of, by Dr. Germann, in the Deutsch-Amerikanisches Magazin, Oct., 1886.
- Narragansett Church, Opdyke's History of.
- Navesink, by Asher Taylor, in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., Vol. IX.
- Newburgh, N. Y., History of, by E. M. Ruttenber.
- Newbury, Mass., Coffin's History of.
- New Germantown, Local History of, by R. R. Honeyman, in the Somerville magazine, "Our Home," 1873.
- New Jersey, Archives of the N. J. Historical Society.
- New Jersey, Early Cities of, by Prof. Austin Scott, of Rutgers College, in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. IX.
- New Jersey, Elmer's Reminiscences of.
- New Jersey, Extracts from the Journal Provincial Congress held at Trenton, May, June, August and September, 1775.
- New Jersey, Historical Collections by Barber & Howe.
- New Jersey Historical Society, Proceedings of.
- New Jersey, History of, by J. Sypher, and E. A. Apgar.
- New Jersey, History of, by Thos. F. Gordon.
- New Jersey, History of, by Samuel Smith.
- New Jersey, History of Medicine in, Stephen Wickes, M. D.
- New Jersey, Journal of Votes and Proceedings, Committee of Safety, sitting in January, 1776; also sitting of Provincial Congress at New Brunswick from January 31 to March 2, 1776.
- New Jersey, Journal of Votes and Proceedings, Convention of New Jersey, at Burlington, Trenton and New Brunswick, from June 10 to August 21, 1776.
- New Jersey, Lippincott's Cabinet History of.
- New Jersey, Memorial of the Centennial of the Protestant Episcopal Church in.
- New Jersey, Presbyterian Churches in, by Rev. E. T. Hatfield, D. D., in Dawson's Hist. Mag., for March, April and May, 1868.
- New Jersey, Taxes and Money in, Before the Revolution, by R. Wayne Parker, Proc. N. J. Hist. Society, 2nd Series, Vol. VII.
- New Netherlands, O'Calahan's History of.
- New Travels in the U. S. A., Performed in 1788, by J. P. Brissot de Warville.
- New York, History of the State of, by John E. Brodhead.
- New York, Documentary History of.
- New York Historical Soc. Collections.
- New York, History of the City of, by Martha J. Lamb.
- Olden Time Series, by Henry M. Brooks.
- Old Princeton, its battles, cannon and history.
- Old Time, Social Life of, in Eighteenth Century, by John Ashton.
- Old Times in the Colonies.
- Our Grandmother's Gowns, by Mrs. A. W. Hunt.
- Our Home, Somerville, N. J., Magazine edited by A. V. D. Honeyman, Vol. I, 1873.
- Palatinate Colonists, Migrations of, by Edward Eggleston.
- Palatinate Colonists, Emigration to England in 1709, by Prof. Henry F. Homes.
- Pausch, Journal of Captain, Chief of the Hanau Artillery, Translated and annotated by William L. Stone.
- Peapack, N. J., History of the Reformed Church at, by Rev. Henry P. Thompson.
- Pennsylvania, History of the Commonwealth of, by William H. Egle, M. D.
- People of the United States, by John Bach McMaster.
- Perth Amboy, History of, by William A. Whitehead.

- Philadelphia and Pennsylvania, Annals of, in the Olden Time, by John F. Watson.
- Pluckamin, One Hundred Years Ago, by A. W. McDowell, in the Somerville magazine, "Our Home," 1873.
- Proprietors of East New Jersey, A Bill in the Chancery of New Jersey, at the suit of John, Earl of Stair, and others . . . against Benjamin Bond and some other Persons of Elizabethtown . . . to which is added the Publications of the Council of Proprietors; and Mr. Nevill's Speeches concerning the Riots, etc., by James Parker, N. Y., 1747.
- Proprietors East New Jersey, Address of Hon. Cortlandt Parker, at the bi-centennial celebration of 1884.
- Proprietors of East New Jersey, Archives of Board of, at Perth Amboy.
- Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, An Historical Account of the Society for the, by D. Humphreys.
- Provincial Congresses, L. Q. C. Elmer, in Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., 2nd Series, Vol. I.
- Putnam, Israel, Life of, by William Cutler.
- Putnam, Israel, Memoirs of, by Humphrey.
- Raritan, The Dutch Settlers of, by Teunis G. Bergen, in the Somerville magazine, "Our Home," 1873.
- Raritan, The, and Its Early Holland Settlers, by Ralph Voorhees, in the Somerville magazine, "Our Home," 1873.
- Readington Church, History of, by Rev. Henry P. Thompson.
- Recollections of an Aged Minister, by Rev. W. W. Blauvelt.
- Reformed Church in America, Centennial of the Theological Seminary of, at New Brunswick.
- Reformed Dutch Church in America, Memorial of, by Rev. Edward Tanjore Corwin, D. D.
- Revolution, American, A Biographical Dictionary, or Remembrancer of the Departed Heroes, Sages, and Statesmen of.
- Revolution, American, Battles of, by Henry B. Carrington, Col. U. S. A.
- Revolution, American, Diary of Christopher Marshall.
- Revolution, American, Field Book of, by Benson J. Lossing.
- Revolution, American, History of, by David Ramsey.
- Revolution, American, History of New York during, by Thomas Jones.
- Revolution, American, Holme's Annals of.
- Revolution, American, "Indian Campaign in 1779," by William S. Stryker.
- Revolution, American, Men and Times of, by Elkanah Watson.
- Revolution, American, New Jersey at outset of, Address by Charles D. Deshler before New Brunswick Hist. Club, Dec., 1875.
- Revolution, American, New Jersey Volunteers in, (Loyalists,) by William S. Stryker.
- Revolution, American, "New Jersey Continental Line in the Virginia Campaign of 1781, by William S. Stryker.
- Revolution, American, Official Register of Officers and Men of New Jersey in, by Adjutant-General William S. Stryker.
- Revolution, American, Personal Recollections of, by Sydney Barclay.
- Revolution, American, Principles and Acts of, by H. Niles, 1822.
- Revolution, American, Records of, together with general orders of Washington, Lee, and Green, by W. T. R. Saffell.
- Revolution, American, The Block House at Toms River, by William S. Stryker.
- Revolution, American, The Book of Registry and Copy of Inventory of Damages done by the Enemy, and their Adherents, to the Inhabitants of Middlesex County, State Library.
- Revolution, American, "The Princeton Surprise," by William S. Stryker.
- Revolution, American, The Pulpit of, by John Wingate Thornton.
- Revolution, American, Uniforms in, by Thompson Wescott, in Dawson's Hist. Mag. 1860, p. 353; Pa. Archives, Vol. VII, p. 293, and files of various newspapers, 1776, 1779.
- Revolution, American, Virginia Regiments in, Paper of Thomas R. Jones, read before Chicago Hist. Soc., 17 March, 1863.



- Revolutionary Incidents, by Onderdonk.  
 Revolutionary Times, by Edward Abbott.  
 Revolutionary War, Anecdotes of, by Alexander Garden.  
 Revolutionary War, Military Journal during the, by James Thacher, M.D.  
 Revolution, Chaplains and Clergy of, by J. T. Headley.  
 Revolution, Diary of the, by Frank Moore.  
 Revolution, Domestic History of, by Mrs. E. F. Ellet.  
 Revolution, Presbyterian in the, by Breed.  
 Revolution, Women of the, by Mrs. E. F. Ellet.  
 Riedesel, Major-General, Memoirs, Letters and Journal of, Translated from the original of Max von Eeling, by William L. Stone.  
 Rodney, Captain Thomas, MSS Diary in possession of J. M. C. Rodney, Coolspring, Wilmington, Del.  
 St. James Lutheran Church, Phillipsburg, N. J., Archives of.  
 Schuyler, Cornelia, Marriage of, by Mrs. Martha J. Lamb, in *Mag. Amer. Hist.*, Vol. XVIII.  
 Shaw, Major, Samuel, Memoir of, by Jos. Quincy.  
 Sloop, Travel, A Paper read by John Jay Smith, before N. J. Hist. Soc. in May, 1860.  
 Smith, Autobiography of Gen. Samuel.  
 Social Condition in the Colonies, by Edward Eggleston in *Century Mag.*, June, 1884.  
 Somerset County, N. J., Centennial History of, by Rev. Abraham Messler, D. D.  
 Somerset County, Historical Notes of, Rev. Abraham Messler, D. D.  
 Somerset County. Penna., Husbands' Annals of the Early Settlement of.  
 Steam Boats, First in New Jersey, a Paper read by John D. Ward before the N. J. Hist. Soc., May, 1862.  
 Steuben, William von, The Life of, by Frederick Kapp.  
 Sterling, Lord, Life of, by Duer.  
 Stirling, Lord, MSS papers in possession of Mrs. John K. Van Rensselaer.  
 Stories of the Rhine Border, by Erckmann, Chatrian.  
 Sullivan, Life of, by his grandson, Thomas C. Amory, Boston.  
 Sussex and Warren County, N. J., History of, Edited by C. Snell.  
 Temperance, Centennial Volume.  
 Temperance, Pioneer, Footprints of.  
 Temperance, One Hundred Years of.  
 Tennent, Gilbert and William, Pennsylvania Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. X, p. 348.  
 Tilghman, Lieut.-Col. Tench, Memoir of, Joel Munsel, Albany.  
 Tour in the United States of America, by Smyth.  
 Trades and Plantations, MSS. Report of Board of, London.  
 Travels in Middle Settlements in North America in 1749, by Burnaby.  
 Travels in North America in 1748, 1749, 1750, by Peter Kalm.  
 Travels in North America, by The Marquis of Chastellux.  
 Travels Through the Interior Parts of America, Lieut. Thomas Anburey, of Burgoyne's Army.  
 Travels Through the United States of North America, by Duc de la Rochefoucauld-Liancourt.  
 Travels Through the States of North America, 1795-1797, by Isaac Weld, Jr.  
 Trenton and Princeton, An Account of the Engagements at, by Mr. Hood, 3d Batt., Pa. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. X, No. 3.  
 Trenton, Battle of, Penn. Mag. of Hist. and Biog., Vol. X, p. 203.  
 Trenton, History of the Presbyterian Church, by Rev. John Hall, D. D.  
 Trenton, One Hundred Years Ago, by William S. Stryker.  
 Trumbull, Jonathan, Stuart's Life of.  
 Union and Middlesex Counties, History of, by W. Woodford Clayton.  
 United States, History of, by George Bancroft.  
 United States, History of, in Chronological Order, by Emery E. Childs.  
 United States, Journal of a Journey through, in 1796, by Thomas Chapman, Dawson's Hist. Mag., June, 1869.  
 United States of America, Hist. of the Rise, Progress and Establishment of the Independence of the, by William Gordon, D. D.  
 United States, Pictorial History of, by Benson J. Lossing.  
 Van Bergh, Dinah, Manuscript Journal of, in Sage Library, New Brunswick, N. J.

- Van Bergh, Dinah, Manuscript Sketch of Life of, by Rev. William Demarest, in possession of Miss Maria Demarest, Passaic, N. J.
- Waldo, Surgeon Albigeance, Diary of, 1778.
- Washington and his Army During their March through New Jersey, by C. C. Havens.
- Washington and his Generals, by J. T. Headley.
- Washington and the Generals of the American Revolution, Philadelphia, 1847.
- Washington, George, Facsimile of his accounts with U. S., June, 1775, to June, 1783.
- Washington, George, Life of, By Edward Everett Hale.
- Washington, George, Life of, by Jared Sparks.
- Washington, George, Life of, by Washington Irving.
- Washington, George, Reception of, by the People of New Jersey in 1789, by William S. Stryker.
- Washington, George, Writings of, Jared Sparks.
- Washington's Order Books, Congressional Library.
- Washington's Servant Billy, by Mrs. Burton Harrison, in Century Mag., Vol. XXXVII.
- White House, Local History of, Rev. William Bailey, in the Somerville magazine, "Our Home," 1873.
- Winningen, Germany, Archives of Lutheran Church at.
- Woodbridge, History of, by Rev. Jos. W. Dally.
- Woolman, John, A Journal of the Life, Gospel, Labors, Etc., of that Faithful Minister of Jesus Christ, late of Mount Holly, in the Province of New Jersey.
- Zion Lutheran Church, New Germantown, N. J., Archives of.





## INDEX.

- A** BEL ANDREAS, Senr., 90  
Aberdeen, Earl of, 131  
Adams, John, letter to Gen. Lee, 339; protests against liquor selling, 620  
Achter Koll, 183  
Addison, as a friend of Gov. Robt. Hunter, 44  
Agricultural implements of last century, 235  
Agriculture in last century, 234  
Ahanderhamock, 184  
Albigenses, 24  
Alcide, arrival of ship, 204  
Alexander, James, 160, 186  
Alexander, Mary, 93  
Alexander, William, 160; (see Lord Stirling)  
Allen, Bill, tavern-keeper, 3  
Allen, Judge George, 561  
Allen, Lt. Col. Isaac, 558  
Allen, Robert and Joseph, 268, 269  
Allen, William, 267, 268  
Allied armies in N. J., 535  
Altenkirchen, 68  
American landscapes, 15  
American Society for the promotion of temperance, 623  
Amnesty offered by British, 327, 328  
Amsterdam, classis of, 252  
Amusements, 239, 429, 432  
Anburey, Lieut. Thomas, 367, 367  
Anchor-chains, when invented, 50  
Anderson, John, 173  
Anderson, Thomas, 562  
Andre, Major John, 527  
Andross, Gov. Edmund, 118  
Anhalt, Zerbest, troops from 354, 356  
Annapolis Convention, 551  
Ann driessen Lourens, 118, 191  
Anne, Queen, connection with German Emigration, 38, 40, 44; charters St. James' church, Piscataway, 198; encourages slave trade, 220  
Annin, Samuel, 595  
Anspach, its political history, 68  
Anspach-Beyreuth, troops from, 351, 353, 354, 356  
Appelman, John, of Zion Ch., 87; will of, 93; of St. Paul's Ch., 94; summoned by Council of safety, 430  
Appelman, Tice, 430  
Apple-jack introduced in N. J., 615  
Architecture, Colonial, the old stone house 16, 153; Phila. dwellings in 1735, 54; State-house and Christ church, Phila., 55, 56; Raritan dwellings in 1752, 175; Low Mansion at Raritan Landing, 180; op de Millstone Church in 1752, 181; Ross Hall, 189; Perth Amboy examples, 210, 211. First Bedminster Ch. 265.  
Armada's Light-corps, 367  
Arms and Accoutrements in Revolution, 332, 333, 335, 341, 405  
Armstrong, Major Richard, 503, 508  
Armstrong, Rev., 445  
Army, Burgoyne's, German contingent of, 357; Hesse Hanan Artillery, 364; at Cambridge, 367; Lincoln at capture of, 411; surrender of, 449; artillery taken with, 454  
Army, Clinton's, retreat from Phila., 450; embarks at Sandy Hook, 451; march through Elizabeth in 1780, 521, 523; evacuates N. J., 525; provincial officers in, 557  
Army, French, arrival of in 1780, 526; in Westchester in 1781, 534; across N. J. to Virginia 536-40; uniforms, 536; appearance of, 538  
Army, Howe's arrives in N. Y. harbor in 1776, 312; at battle of Long Island, 315; at Dobbs Ferry in 1776, 317; first occupies N. J., 319; in Piscataway, 323; thieving and outrages of, 322, 324, 327, 365, 493; strength at Head of Elk, 368; strength at Assunpink, 372; at Bound Brook in 1777, 408; in Somerset in June, 1777, 416; evacuates New Jersey in 1777, 422; enters Virginia Capes in '77 427; provincial officers in, 557  
Army, Lee's, 332, 334, 340, 343.  
Army, Washington's, strength of, at Cambridge, 291; strength of, in Aug., 1776, 313; at battle of Long Island, 315; enters N. J., in 1776, 318; retreat through N. J., 319 to 322; strength of in Dec., 1776, 322; entering Phila. in 1777, 333; strength 20 Dec. 1776, 347; march from Trenton to Morristown in 1777, 371; at Assunpink, 372; at battle of Princeton, 377; at Valley Forge, 374; marching down the Millstone, 381, 382; in Plucka-



- min after Princeton, 383; at Morristown in 1777, 390, 392; different posts in spring of 1777, 401; condition in Feb. 1777, 404; receives new arms in April, 1777, 405; strength of, May, 1777, 414; at Middlebrook in 1777, 415-422; at Quibbletown, 420; in a rainstorm, 423; marching down the Delaware in 1777, 427; effect of campaign, 448; at New Brunswick, July, 1778, 452; at Camp Middlebrook in 1779, 454-492; condition in 1779, 457; at Morristown in 1780, 512-524; its extremity in 1780, 514; executions, 489, 520, 531; strength in May and June, 1780, 521; winter quarters of 1781, 528, mutinies of, 529, 531, 548; combines with French army in Westchester, 534; across N. J. to Virginia, 535; at Yorktown, 540; disbanding of, 547
- Arnold, Benedict, 368, 527, 532
- Arrowsmith, Nicholas, 597
- Arrowsmith, William, 611
- Arnold, Capt. Jacob, 394
- Arthur, Rev. Thomas, 193
- Artillery, attempted capture of at King's Ferry, 454
- Artillery Brigade uniforms, 462
- Asgill, Capt., 543-6
- Ashdore, Henry, 366
- Assunpink, battle of, 372, 395, 444, 557
- Astor, John Jacob, 367
- Atrocities of British during Revolution, 320, 322-327, 365, 382, 495
- Auckersz, Jacobus, 191
- Augsburg Confession, 86
- Augsburg, league of, 33
- Aunt Ann, 251
- Axtell, Charles F., 136
- Axtell, Daniel, buys the Winder tract, 130; buys portion of Peapack patent, 133
- Axtell, Daniel, the regicide, 133, 135
- Axtell Family in N. J., 136
- Axtell, Samuel B., 136, 513
- Axtell tract, the, 134
- Axtell, William, 135, 161, 249
- Ayres, Enos, tavern, 592
- Ayres & Freeman, 586
- Ayres, Jacob, Reuben, and Samuel, 324
- Ayres, John, 160
- Ayres, Mrs. Obadiah, murdered at Amboy, 226
- Ayres, Obadiah, Amboy tavern of, 228
- Ayres, Obadiah, of Basking Ridge, 160
- Ayres, Obadiah, settles at Woodbridge, 108; John Pike's bequest to, 109
- B**ACON, Dr. LEONARD, 618
- Bailey, James, Jinny and Peggy, 273
- Bailey John, 106
- Bailey, Samuel 478
- Balding, John, 187
- Baldwin, Rev. Burr, 440
- Baltimore, 581
- Baltimore, Lord, 105
- Bancroft, George, 221, 353, 356, 373, 483
- Bank of N. J., 581
- Bank of N. Y., 581
- Banks, first in N. J., 581
- Banta, Jacob, 263
- Baptist Churches, Piscataway, 196, 197
- Barbarossa, 24
- Barker, Thomas, 112, 120
- Barber, Lt. Col. Francis, on Indian campaign, 491; at Yorktown, 532; record and death of, 533; celebrates Am. Independence, 622
- Barber and Howe, 119
- Barclay, John, 124, 178
- Barclay, Robert, 112; first gov. under props., 119
- Barclay's Recollections of the Revol. W., 363
- Bard, Lt. Col. John, 558
- Barnes, Major John, 557
- Barnet, Surgeon Wm. M., 410
- Barnett, Oliver, 602, 604
- Barnett Hall, 604, 688
- Barnhardt, Saml., of Zion Church, 82, 91
- Bartles, Mr., of Zion Church, 84
- Bartow, Revd. John, 141
- Bartow, Thomas, 141, 209
- Basking Ridge, first settled, 159; first church 114, 160; Lord Stirling's house and park, 307, 402, 493; General Lee at, 336, 342, 344; captured at, 342; General Greene at in 1777, 401; society at in 1777, 402; the wedding of Lady Kitty Stirling, 493; decay of the Stirling mansion, 494; French army at, 538
- Basse, Gov. Jeremiah, 120, 121
- Bayles, Capt. Platt, 313
- Beach, Rev. Dr. Abraham, 330
- Beacon posts, 513
- Bedminster R. D. Church, the present building, 5; Sunday morning at in 1860, 6; building the first ch., 263; appearance of, 265; first service in, 265; borrows money from John Van der Veer, 276; disciplining a member of, 432; Sunday morning at in 1778, 434; Sunday booths at, 437; refuses a grave to Knox's child, 470; John Duryea's salary receipts, 593
- Bedminster township, line of, 4; Indians of, 99; appearance of, in 1752, 156; condition in 1763, 249; Com. of Observation and Inspection, 286; Com. of Correspondence, 287; Lee's army in, 332, 336, 343; Muhlenburg marches through in 1777, 424; Lafayette's march through, in 1781, 533; paupers of, 596 to 599.
- Bedminster village, stage arrives at, 8; store and school-house, 9 and 10; first house in, 304; Lee's encampment night of his capture, 343; Muhlenburg marches through in 1777, 424; Lafayette's march through in 1781, 533; first tavern in, 565; Captain Fulkerson as tavern-keeper, 579.
- Beecher, Dr. Lyman, 618, 621
- Belcher, Gov. Jonathan, arrival of, 203; his portrait stolen, 495; names Nassau Hall at Princeton, 496
- Bellona, the steamboat, 588, 589
- Bellona Hall, 589
- Bendorf, description of, 23, 628; in 1745, 66; transferred to Anspach, 66, 68; political history of, 68; news of in 1749, 72; New

- Jersey citizens from, 91; news of in 1760, 246; news of in 1769, 278; furnishes England with troops, 353
- Benediction, an Indian's, 102
- Bennet, Adrian, and Angenietje, 189
- Bennett, Abraham, 187, 189
- Bergen Co., first inhabitants, 103, 106, 118; origin of name, 119; slavery statistics, 227
- Bergen, George I., 582
- Bergen, John B., 582
- Bergen-op-Zoom, 119
- Bergen Point, 502, 587
- Berger Caspar, 147, 148, 264
- Berger, Charles and Catherine, 597
- Berkeley, Lord John, receives patent for N. J., 104; sells his half of N. J., 110
- Bernard, Gov. Francis, 101, 204
- Bernards township first settled, 159; French army in, 537
- Bernardsville, the night of Lee's capture, 343; Pa. mutineers at, 530; Bullion's tavern at, 537
- Berry, Gideon, 597
- Bertaut, General, 141
- Bertholf, Rev. Guillaume, 252, 253
- Bibliography, 714
- Beverages of last century, 207, 237, 615
- Biddle, Col. Clement, 415
- Billings, Edward, 110, 111, 112
- Billings, Captain, 529
- Billop, Christopher, 188, 198
- Billop's Point, 188, 503
- Bishop, Abigail, 481
- Bishop, James, 585
- Black Bear Tavern, 544
- Blackheath, emigrants encamped on, 40
- Black Horse Tavern, 251
- Blair, John, 579
- Blair, Robert, 478
- Blanchard, Claude, 537
- Blanchard, Lieut., 543
- Blauvelt, Rev. W. W., 500
- Bleeding, 572
- Blodget, Major, 385
- Bloomfield, Joseph, 219, 577
- Bloomfield, Thomas, 108 and 109
- Blue Anchor Tavern, 69, 228
- Board of Proprietors of East N. J., 113, 121
- Boardman, Rev. F. W., 446
- Bond, Benjamin, 106
- Bonham, Hezekiah, 197
- Bonham, Nicholas, 194, 199
- Bonhamtown, 199
- Bonnell, Benjamin, 478
- Boone, Gov Thomas, 204
- Boston, evacuated by British, 312
- Boston Port Bill, 283
- Boudinot, Elias, copper mine of, 193; at Basking Ridge in 1777, 402; his daughter's marriage, 403; church connection, 443; at Princeton in 1783, 496
- Boudinot, Elisha, 219
- Bound Brook, pres. ch. at, 114, 171; Johannes' first visit to, 166; in 1752, 168; origin of name, 169; Jacob de Groot's vault, 180; stages to, 230; Gen'l Lincoln at in '77, 401; Lincoln surprised at, 408; Steuben's quarters in 1779, 472; Simcoe at, 503, 505; allied armies at, 535; wagon traffic through, 584
- Bourbonnais regt., 536
- Bontekoe, arrival of ship, 190
- Bows and Arrows, 333
- Boylan, Dr., 410
- Boylan, John, 163, 384, 581, 582
- Boylston, Dr. Zabdiel, 572
- Bradford, Andrew, his newspaper, 44
- Bradford, William, att.-gen'l, 403
- Brain, James, 112
- Brandywine, Battle of, 333, 334, 428, 468, 524
- Branford, Conn., 109
- Brew-houses, 57, 176
- Bries, Hendrik, 185
- Bronson, E. Vantine, 253
- Brook, Rev. John, 497
- Brooklyn, condition of in 1776, 303
- Brooks, Rev. Mr., 198
- Brunswick, Duke of, troops from, 353, 356
- Brush, Sarah, 583
- Bryant, Eleanor, 617
- Bryzelius, Rev. Paul, of Zion Church, 82
- Buck's Co. Light Dragoons, 503, 505
- Budd, Barnabas, 575
- Bullion, Capt. 163
- Bullion's Tavern, 410, 537
- Bunker Hill, battle of, 291, 477
- Bunn, Martin, 565
- Burd, John, 96, 161
- Burlington, assembly meets at, 110; founding of, 110; a P. O. in 1752, 156
- Burnet, Gov. William, 201
- Burnet, Robert, buys and sells Haywoods, N. J. interests, 121
- Burr, Major Aaron, 301, 400, 500
- Burr, Rev. Aaron, 499
- Burroughs, John, 275
- Buschurch, Rev., of Phila., 85
- Buskirk, Capt. Abraham, 558
- Buskirk, Capt. John, 558
- Buskirk, Capt. Lawrence, 558
- Buskirk, Lt. Col. Abraham, 558
- Butler, Col. of Pa. line, 530
- C**ABOTS, Voyages of, 103
- Cade, Jack, 40
- Cadwalader, Col. Lambert, 282, 350
- Cæsar's death sentence, 225
- Caldwell, Mrs. James, death of, 522
- Caldwell, Rev. James, 431, 442, 443, 622
- Calvin, Bartholomew S., 102
- Calvin, John, 442
- Camden, battle of, 407, 526, 532
- Campbell, Archibald, 171
- Campbell, Charles, 171
- Campbell, John, 171
- Campbell, Lewis, 478
- Campbell, Lord Neal, as dep. gov., 119, 126; his Raritan plantation, 170; his son John, 219
- Camp-field, 458
- Carey, Thomas, 598
- Carey's museum, 535
- Carl Wilhelm Friedrich, Margrave of Anspach, 68; his wickednesses, 69

- Carleton, Sir Guy, in 1776 retreats from Ticonderoga, 341; breaks up Board of Loyalists, 455  
 Carleton's legion, 558  
 Carmen, Lewis, 190  
 Carpenter, Sam'l, of Phila., 60  
 Carriage tax, 595  
 Carroll, Charles, 296  
 Carteret, Gov. Philip, his arrival and marriage in 1665, 105; buys portion of E'town grant, 106; buys land at Bound Brook, 169  
 Cartaret, Lady Elizabeth, 105, 112  
 Carteret, Sir George, receives patent for N. J., 104; death and will of, 112  
 Castner, Abraham, 430  
 Castner, Elizabeth, 596  
 Castner, Jacob, 430  
 Castner, John, 173, 430  
 Castner, Margaret, 164  
 Cessation of Hostilities, 547  
 Charles I, Axtell, at trial of, 133  
 Charles II, patents N. J. to Duke of York, 104; return of, 133  
 Charles VII, 358  
 Charles Alexander, Margrave of Anspach, 352  
 Charles Augustus of Saxe Weimar, 353  
 Charleston, British repulsed at, 291; fall of, in 1780, 521  
 Chastellux, Marquis de, 365  
 Chatham, N. J., 535, 541, 545  
 Chatham, N. Y., 547  
 Chatham, Earl of, 283  
 Cheasman, William, 188  
 Chingarora, 183  
 Christ Church, New Brunswick, lottery for benefit of, 174; grave of Dr. Alexander Ross, 189; in 1752, 193; during Revolution, 330  
 Christ Church, Phila., 57, 58, 370  
 Christian Augustus, of Sweden, 540  
 Church of England in Revolution, 329  
 Clandenin, Thomas, 267  
 Clarke, Abraham, 443, 525  
 Clarke, Benjamin, 177, 194  
 Clarke, Mrs. Thomas, 361  
 Clarke, Rev. Jonas, 287  
 Clayton's History of Union Co., 523  
 Clearing N. J. lands, 234  
 Clermont, the steamboat, 587  
 Clinton, Genl. George, 535  
 Clinton, Sir Henry, at Charleston, 291, 312; departure from N. Y. in 1782, 360; retreat, from Phila., 368; takes command, 449; opinion of Queen's Rangers, 502; at Charleston in 1780, 521; reinforces Knyphausen in N. J., 524; sends agents to Pa. mutineers, 530; deluded by Washington in 1781 534, 540  
 Clover-seed first used in Somerset, 235  
 Coates Point, 543  
 Coblenz, 22  
 Cochran, Dr., 516  
 Cocks, William, 506  
 Codrington, Thomas, 170  
 Coens, Rev. Henricus, 180  
 Colchester, Lord, 569  
 Coldstream guards, the, 521  
 Cold winter of 1780, 511  
 Coleman Jacob, 61  
 Coleman, John, 103  
 Coles, George W., 76  
 Colfax, Capt. William, 477  
 College of New Jersey, educates Shawriskhe-kung, 102; lottery for benefit of, 174; Jonathan Edwards' presidency, 214; Witherspoon's presidency, 296; at battle of Princeton, 378, 495; the Commencement of 1779, 495; during Revolution, 495; Gov. Belcher's library, 496; naming Nassau Hall, 496; founding of college, 497; removal to Princeton, 497; studies in last century, 500; confers degree on Nathan Strong, 619  
 Collier, Sir George, 315, 359  
 Colonial currency, 134  
 Colonial farm life, 233  
 Colts Neck, 542  
 Committee of Correspondence, first meeting of, 283; state convention of, 284; meeting of May, 1775, 287  
 Committee of Observation and Inspection, of Westminster, who composed, and minutes, 286, 289, 290, 291  
 Committee of Safety, 292, 429  
 Committee to depose Gov. Franklin, 300  
 Concessions and agreements of the Lords prop'rs, 107  
 Concessions and agreements of the 24 prop., 113  
 Condit, Rev. Dr. Ira, 260, 262  
 Confederation, The, 549  
 Congress, continental meeting of first, 285; meeting of second, 294  
 Congress (U. S.) after the Revolution, 550  
 Connecticut Farm, Pres. Church destroyed at, 433, 523; fighting at, 522  
 Constables Hook, 3 British troops on, 318  
 Constitution of N. J. adopted, 298  
 Constitution ratified by N. J., 553  
 Constitutional Convention, 551, 552  
 Constitutional Courant, 282  
 Convention, Army, 357, 364, 367  
 Convention of the State of N. J., 298  
 Cook, Governor, 324  
 Cook, William, 225  
 Cooper, Benjamin, 574  
 Cooper, Robert, 225  
 Cooper, Thomas, 112, 120  
 Copley, the artist, 221  
 Coriell, Jane, 565, 633  
 Corle's Mills, 171  
 Cornbury Lord, first gov. under crown, 121; opposed by Thomas Farmar, 188; character of, 201  
 Cornwallis, Lord, pursues Washington's army across N. J., 319, 322; his expedition to capture Lee, 345; Assumpink, 372; at battle of Princeton, 390; attacks Bound Brook, 408; fights at Woodbridge and Plainfield, 421; in Virginia in 1781, 532, 534; surrender of, 365, 367, 541  
 Coryell's Ferry, 424  
 Cosby, Gov. William, 202  
 Costumes in 19th century, in 1735, 59; in 1752,



- 194, 218; of a king's councillor, 217; in court, 219; in farm families, 241; at Bedminster church in 1778, 435; on grand stand at Bound Brook Review, 494
- Council of Safety, 292, 429
- Council of the Proprs., 126
- Country merchants, 582, 586, 592
- Courten, Stephen, 190
- Courtland Parker, 104
- Cowpens, battle of, 407, 532
- Cox, William, 188
- Coxe, William, 282
- Cradle, introduction of, 235
- Craig, Aaron, 430
- Crooked Billet Tavern and Wharf, 50, 228
- Croze, Christopher, 560
- Cross, Rev. John, 212
- Crow, Justice, 504
- Crusade, the third, 24
- Culloden, Battle of, 296
- Cummins, Christian, 560
- Cummins, William, 611
- Cunningham, Provost Marshall, 316, 317
- Currency depreciation, 98, 491, 494, 515, 519
- Cushtunk Mountain, 79
- Cussart, George, 170
- Custer, Gen. George A., 367
- Custine, Count de, 540
- Custis, G. W. P., 352
- D**ALLEY, JOHN, 188, 229
- Dartmouth, Earl of, 220
- Davenport, Richard, 543
- Davison, Judge David, 560
- Day, Jacob, 439
- Dayton, Gen. Elias, 443, 521, 523, 545, 546, 622
- Dayton, Gen. Jonathan, 443, 525, 611
- Declaration of Independence, adoption of, 295; when signed, 296; N. J. signers, 326, 525; anniversary celebrations of, 350, 453, 622
- Deed, first, of N. J. land, 118
- Deerfield, Mass., 617
- DeGroot, Jacob, 170, 173, 180
- DeGroot, John, 173
- DeHaas, General, 414
- DeHart, Major, 310
- DeKalb, General, 532
- Demarest, Rev. William, 259
- Demun, Peter, 158
- Demund, John, 597
- DePeyster, Abraham, 135
- Derr, John, 636
- Deshler, Chas. D., 325
- Despatch, ship, arrival of, 122
- De Stael, Madame, 132
- Dick and Nance, 604-9
- Dickinson, Genl. Philemon, at battle of Princeton, 377; fight at Weston, 399; at Millstone in 1717, 401; follows Clinton's army in 1778, 450
- Dickinson, Rev. Jonathan, dau. of 288; effect of preaching, 431; first president of Princeton, 496; character and death of, 497-8-9; today at installation of, 618
- Diet of farm families, 237
- Dillon, Capt. and Major, 539
- Dillon, William, 543
- Dipple, Lucas, 94
- Disaffection in 1776, 327-329
- Disbrow, Griffen, 141
- Division between E. and W. Jersey, 111
- Dochlar, John Conrad, 367
- Dodd, Lebbeus, 291
- Dogs as meat roasters, 54
- Donation visits, 239
- Dongan, Gov., 177, 187
- Donop, Count von, death of, 360; at Mount Holly, 363; at Assunpink, 372; at Bound Brook in 1777, 408
- Dover light infantry, 374, 381, 396
- Drake, George, 194, 196
- Drake, John, 195, 196
- Drinking habits, in Phila. in 1735, 57; Raritan valley in 1752, 176; flip, 207; tavern rates for in 1748, 228; various tipplers, 237; at cessation of hostilities, 547; tavern customs, 565; at trainings, 578; the habit at present, 613; in Pagan times, 614; in the 18th century, 614-623
- Drummond, Evan, 188
- Drummond, John, 112
- Drummond, Major Robert, 558
- Duchess, tract known as the, 131
- Duer, William, 467, 493, 495
- Dunham, Azariah, 324
- Dunham, Azeria, 197
- Dunham, Benajah, 194, 197
- Dunham, Capt. Jehu, 592
- Dunham, David, of Bedminster, 290
- Dunham, David, of Piscataway, 324
- Dunham, Dorothy, Dinah, Jane, Mary, and Phoebe, 197
- Dunham, Edmund, 194, 197
- Dunham, Elisha, John, and Josiah, 324
- Dunham, Ephraim, 197
- Dunham, John, 197
- Dunham, Jonathan, settles at Woodbridge, 108, 197, 324
- Dunlap, William, 210, 218, 323, 392
- Dunn, Capt. Hugh, 325
- Dunn, Elizabeth, Esther, Hester' and Rebecca, 197
- Dunn, Hugh, settles in Piscataway, 107, 194; settles in Woodbridge, 108, 197
- Dunn, Hugh, Jr., 197
- Dunn, Jeremiah, Daniel and Justus 325
- Dunn, Major John, 309, 325
- Dunn, Jonathan, 197
- Dunn, Lieut. Col. Micajah, 325
- Dunn, Micajah, 197
- Dunn, Samuel, Jr., 197
- Duponceau, Capt. Peter S., 473, 487, 537
- Duryea, Rev. John, 593, 594
- Dutch, early emigration to America, 27; in Raritan Valley in 1703, 169, 176, 191, 229; in New Brunswick in 1684, 184; on the King's highway in 1748, 186; in New Brunswick in 1730, 185, 192; of Long Island, 229
- Dutch migration to N. J., 168, 176, 183, 185, 229
- Dutch Reformed Churches, Bedminster, 6; 263-266, 431, 435, 437, 593; New Brunswick, 185, 190, 193, 254; Three Mile Run, 185, 252; Op de Millstone, 180, 54; Raritan, 251;

- North Branch, 251; Six Mile Run, 252, 254;  
 Harlingen, 180, 254; Sunday observances  
 and customs, 435, 437; Singing by note in,  
 436; Dutch preaching, 437  
 Dutch Trail, 184  
 Duval Claude, 40
- E**ASTERN BATTERY of STATE TROOPS,  
 376  
 East Jersey, set off from W. J., 111; sold to 24  
 proprietors, 112; condition in 1682, 114-117;  
 government tld. to Crown, 120  
 Easton, Indian Conference at 101  
 Eating in last century, 237  
 Eaton, Benjamin, 478  
 Eddis, Edward, letters from America, 149  
 Edwards, Rev. Jonathan, 214, 253, 431, 499  
 Elking, Max von, 322, 358, 363, 366, 368  
 Egbertsen, Hendrick, 191  
 Eggleston, Edward, his German emigration  
 researches, 35, 46; Pluckamin, 165  
 Ehrenbreitstein, 22  
 Elizabethtown and Somerville Railroad, 230  
 Elizabethtown bill in chancery, 106, 130, 131,  
 134, 141  
 Elizabethtown, First Pres. Church of, 433,  
 443, 496, 499, 516, 618  
 Elizabethtown, founding of and origin of  
 name, 105; first English settlement, 106; first  
 assembly meets at, 110; condition in 1682,  
 117; lottery for benefit of, 175; in 1776, 303;  
 First Pres. Church of, 433, 443, 496, 499, 516,  
 618; surprised by British in 1779, 490; college  
 of N. J. at, 497; religious condition in 1717,  
 498; surprised by Col. Buskirk, in 1780, 516;  
 British march through in 1780, 521, 523  
 Elizabethtown, St. John's Epis. Church, 444,  
 497, 498  
 Ellets' Domestic History, 361, 396  
 Elmer, Lieut. Ebenezer, 623  
 El Mora, 522  
 Embury, Philip, 331  
 Emigration, German, 26-49, 80, 186, 187, 216, 233;  
 Scotch, 27, 114, 126; Dutch, 27; Swedish, 27;  
 French, 27, 33; English, 27  
 Eoff, Christian, 163  
 Eoff, Jacob, Jun'r, 430  
 Eoff, Jacob, Sen'r, subscribes to St. Paul's  
 Ch., 93, 94; buys site of Pluckamin, 140, 162;  
 his tavern, 164, 384; summoned by Council  
 of Safety, 490  
 Eoff, Sarah, 163  
 Episcopacy in N. J., 444, 497, 498  
 Episcopalians in Revolution, 329, 331  
 Equipage, at Bedminster Church, 6; Phila.,  
 in 1735, 61; in Amboy in 1752, 202; in New  
 York in 1775, 281; tax on, 595, at Aaron  
 Malick's funeral, 610  
 Ernest, Duke of Saxe-Gotha, 383  
 Erskine, Lord, 468  
 Essex Co., first inhabitants, 103  
 Establishment, First, N. J. Line, organiza-  
 tion of, 307; uniform and pay, 333  
 Establishment, Second, N. J. Line, organiza-  
 tion, uniform and pay, 333  
 Eta-beta-pi Club, 456  
 Eutaw Springs, battle of, 532, 541
- Evangelical Head-Church, Bendorf, 23; sup-  
 plies Zion Ch. New Germantown with mem-  
 bers, 91, 628; its monument, 713  
 Evil-doers, a parade of, 55  
 Ewing, General, 350  
 Executions in Continental Army, 489, 520, 531
- F**ABRICS now obsolete, 242  
 Fac similes, 143, 582, 598, 602  
 Faesch, Herr, 278  
 Fairlie, Captain James, 487  
 Fairs, 206  
 Falkenberg, Christopher and Margaret, 75  
 Falkirk, battle of, 296  
 Farmer, Thomas, 187, 188  
 Farmers, colonial, industries of, 239  
 Farmers of last century, 234  
 Fashion, N. J. mare, 420  
 Fassbenders, of Bendorf, 91, 630, 632  
 Fassbender, Jacob, of New Germantown, 91  
 Father Matthew's Socy., 623  
 Feather Bed Lane, 5  
 Fein, Gottfried, of Zion Ch., 87  
 Fenner, John, Junr., 163, 383  
 Fenton, John, 478  
 Fenwicke, John, 110  
 Fermoy, Gen. de 372  
 Fersen, Count Jean Axel de, 540  
 Field, Benjamin, 172  
 Field Family, 176  
 Field, Jeremiah, 172, 178  
 Field, John, his Raritan purchase in 1695,  
 176  
 Field, Michael, 172  
 Field, Richard I., 178  
 Fine John, of New Germantown, 88  
 Fine, John and Philip, 636, 671  
 First Delaware Regt., 375; First Establish-  
 ment, N. J. Line, 307; First Presb. Ch., of  
 Elizabethtown, 433, 443, 496, 499, 516, 618  
 First R. D. Ch. of Somerville, 252  
 Fisher, George H., 504  
 Fisher, Hendrick, 267, 292, 293, 294  
 Fisher, Isaac J., 173  
 Fiske, Prof. John, 365  
 Fitch, Daniel, 188  
 Fitz-Randolph, 194, 196  
 Flatbush, 229  
 Flax and its uses, 242  
 Flemington, 230  
 Flip, 207  
 Flowers of last century, 236  
 Flying machines, 590  
 Folkers, John, 179  
 Folly, The, 269  
 Footstoves, 265  
 Ford, Col. Jacob, Jr., 395  
 Ford, Jacob, Senr., 396  
 Ford Mansion, 395, 512  
 Ford, the counterfeiter, 575  
 Fort Washington, fall of, 316  
 Fort Lee, 318, 319  
 Fossey, John, 430  
 Foulke, Joseph, 198  
 Franklin, Benjamin, testifies in 1766 as to  
 German Emigration, 49; dines at Crooked  
 Billet Tavern, 50; his newspaper, 54; his

- description of Phila. constables, 55; supplies Braddocks army with wagons, 62; voyage to Amboy, 230; protests against unjust taxation, 281; in London in 1765, 282; his illegitimate son, 299; letters to Lee in '76, 333, 339; objects to inoculation, 573; temperance appeal, 620
- Franklin, Gov. William, his arrival in N. J., 205; address regarding roads, 231; opposes the Revolution, 284, 297; character and record of, 298; is deposed from office, 300; as Pres. of Board of Loyalists, 545
- Franklin tp. Tax List, 175, 190
- Franklin, William Temple, 299
- Frederick Augustus of Saxony, 353
- Frederick II, Elector Palatine, 41
- Frederick III, Elector Palatine, 41
- Frederick the Great, 34; in 1745, 67; example of on rulers, 68; father of, 69, 73; in 1747 over-runs Holland, 257; condemns furnishing England with soldiers, 353; military opinions of, 373
- Frederick, William, the great elector, 32
- Freehold, 364, 365
- Freeman, Matthew, 585
- Free-willers, 149
- Frelinghuysen, Frederick, petitions against wearing gowns in court, 219; tribute to, 255, 298; asst. sec'y to Prov'l Congress, 288; Com. of Safety, 292; members of Prov'l and Contl. congresses of 1776, 297; his bro's-in-law, 327; capt. of Eastern battery, 376; at battle of Princeton, 377
- Frelinghuysen, Rev. Johannes Henricus, 253
- Frelinghuysen, Rev. John, 254, 255, 258
- Frelinghuysen, Rev. Theodorus Jacobus, 253, 431
- Frelinghuysen tavern, 504
- French alliance, news of, 449; first anniversary of, 466
- French army (see army French)
- French fleet, arrival at R. I. in 1780, 526; at Virginia Capes, 533, 534
- French Revolution, effect upon America, 623
- French and English Wars, 569
- French, Philip, 185, 193
- Freusburg, 68
- Friedewald, 68
- Fruit of last century, 236
- Fruer, Ensien Carle, 368
- Fukeroth Adam, of Zion Ch., 91
- Fulkerson, Lieut. Wm., 577, 579
- Fulton, Robert, 587
- Funerals in the olden time, 609, 617
- Furniture of last century, 18, 54, 241
- Fussle, Jacob, 430
- G**AIANT, M. de, 343
- Galloway, Samuel, 328, 454
- Gannett, Rehoboth, 194
- Garden, the old, 18
- Garretson, origin of name, 118, 191, 192
- Garrets, John F., sells land to Johannes, 74
- Garrish, Michael, 585
- Garrison, origin of name, 118, 191, 192
- Gasler, Michael, 560
- Gaston, Joseph, 564
- Gaston, Margaret, 564
- Gaston, Robert, 598; genealogy, 635
- Gatenois regiment, 538
- Gates, Gen. Horatio, 341, 458, 522
- Gayarre, History of Louisiana, 48
- Genealogy, 627
- General Training, 578, 607
- Generals as shoemakers, 239
- Gentry in Colonial times, 216
- George I. charters Amboy Ferry, 122
- George II, hates music and poetry, 184; charters New Brunswick, 187; employs Hessians, 358
- George III. in 1767 charters St. Paul's Ch., 94; obtains troops from Germany, 353
- Gerard, M., betting on Mrs. Jay's complexion, 477; reaches Camp Middlebrook in 1779, 482; at Bound Brook Review, 486; entertained by Steuben, 487
- German Emigration before 1735, 26; original cause of, 28; the growth of, 33; present yearly exodus, 35; Germans now in America, 35; in the Netherlands, on Massachusetts Bay and the Delaware, 35; to Pennsylvania, 36-49; to New Jersey, 37; to Newburg, 38; to London in 1709, 39; to Ireland, 41; to Virginia and Carolina, 43-44; to New York with Governor Hunter in 1710, 44; to Louisiana in 1722, 48; Prof. Homes' paper on, 39; emigrants a religious people, 80; immigrants on the King's Highway, 186-187; thrift, 216, 233
- German farmers, 233
- German interior, a, 277
- German newspapers, first in America, 63
- Germans and Irish mutually repugnant, 238
- German thrift, 216, 233
- Germantown, battle of, 334, 369, 428, 466
- Germantown, Columbia Co., N. Y., Palatines at, 46
- Germantown, Pa., founded, 36; King of Prussia Inn, 61; Johannes starts for, 62; appearance in 1735, 63
- German Valley, N. J., settlement of, 37
- Germany, in the 18th Century, 28; Treaty of Westphalia, 31; other wars of the 17th century, 33; condition in 1745, 67; a patchwork of large and small governments, 28, 68, 73; condition in 1749, 73
- Gerritsen, Gerrit, 118, 192
- Gerritsen, Hendrick, 191
- Gibbons, Thomas, 588
- Gibbs, Barbara Margaret, 573
- Gibson, Elder William, 197
- Gibson William, 112
- Gilman, Charles, settles in Piscataway, 107, 194
- Gloucester Landing, 319
- Gluck, John, Amboy tavern of, 228
- Goelet, Captain, 253
- Goelet, Peter, 188
- Goethe, 353
- Gordon, Catherine, Duchess, of, 131, 132
- Gordon, Charles, 177
- Gordon, Major, 544, 546



- Gordon Patrick, dep. gov. of Pa., receives the immigrants, 56; his coach, 61
- Gordon, Robert, a proprietor of East, N. J., 112; propriety interests, 120
- Gordon, Thomas, 120, 124, 125
- Gordon, Thomas, of Trenton, 113
- Gordon, Thomas, F., 373
- Gordon's Hist. of N. J., 44
- Göttingen, University of, 80
- Gouverneur, Johanna, 180
- Governor's Island, Palatines encamp on, 45
- Governors under the crown, 201
- Governors under the proprietors, 119-121
- Graduations, early college, 500
- Grafe, Cornet August, 362
- Graff, Rev. William A., of Zion Ch., his arrival in 1775, 86; appearance and character, 89; death, 90; various spellings of name, 95; at Daniel Cooper's wedding, 574; at Aaron Malick's funeral, 609
- Graffenried, Christopher de, 43
- Graham, Captain Sam'l, 406
- Graham, Ennis, 504
- Graham, James, 203
- Grant, Gen'l, 323, 408
- Grasse, Count de, 534, 538
- Grave, first white man's in N. J., 103
- Gravelly Point, 542, 543
- Graydon's Memoirs, 361
- Great Raritan Road, 167
- Green, Rev. Ashbel, Sunday in his boyhood, 438; as orderly sergeant, 445; his estimate of Washington, 469; as Princeton valedictorian, 496; as a physician, 572
- Green, Rev. Jacob G., 438, 619
- Greene, Col. Christopher, 390
- Greene, Gen. Nathanael, at Fort Lee in 1776, 318; his opinion of Tories, 323; letter in 1776 as to Howe's ravages, 324; at battle of Trenton, 349; letter to John Adams in 1777, 368; at Pluckamin in 1777, 385; at Morristown in 1777, 395; record of, 401; quarters at Lord Stirling's in 1777, 402; opinion of Gov. Livingston's daughters, 403; marches to Lincoln's support in 1777, 409; reconnaissance in 1777, 410; lays out camp Middlebrook, 415; at the Van Veghten house in 1779, 458, 459, 474; Washington's eulogy of 459; describes Mr. and Mrs. Knox, 464; describes the Lott Family, 475; at Bound Brook Review, 485; orders inhabitants to fight snowdrifts, 514; at battle of Springfield, 525; transferred to southern dept., 532; staff-officers 395, 475, 533
- Greene, Mrs., at the Van Veghten House, 459; at Washington's levees, 460; at Pluckamin Fete, 469; gives a dance at Middlebrook, 474; her friendship for Lee, 479; her Georgia home and grave, 479; at Bound Brook Review, 494; at Morristown in 1780, 516
- Greene, Prof. George W., 516
- Greenman, Rev. Nehemiah, 445
- Greenwich, Eng., German emigrants at, 40
- Gressen, University of, 86
- Griffin, ship, arrival of, 110
- Griggs, Benjamin, 179
- Groom, Samuel, 112
- Grunstadt, Bavaria, 86
- Guest, Capt. Moses, 506
- Gustavus, Adolphus, 36
- HACKENBERG, 66, 68
- Hacker, Ludwig, 439
- Hackettstown, origin of name, 203; Sunday-schools introduced at, 439
- Hagaman, Adrian, Denyse, and Liurstia, 190
- Hagaman, Dolis, 187, 190
- Hager, Johannes Georg, his letter of 1745, 65; appearance of, 277; letter of 1769, 278
- Haines, Samuel, 575
- Halberstadt, emigration from, 37
- Hale, Edward Everett, 455
- Hale, Nathan, 317
- Hall, Dr. John, 618
- Hallam's theatrical co., 218
- Halliday, Rev. Mr., 123, 198, 498
- Halsey, Rev. Jeremiah, 441
- Hamilton, Alexander at Hopewell Council, 450; character and appearance, 475, 476; appointed aide-de-camp, 476; at the Bound Brook Review, 486; meets Elizabeth Schuyler, 517; aids in forming Constitution, 551-2; leniency towards loyalists, 558; passes loyalist disfranchising act, 550
- Hamilton, Mrs. Alexander, 402, 469, 517
- Hamilton, Andrew, gov. under props., 119, 120, 121, 126, 131
- Hamilton, John, 120, 202
- Hampshire, ship, arrival of, 82
- Hancock, John, extols N. J. militia, 311
- Hand, Col. Edward, 388
- Harcourt, Lt.-Col. Wm., 345
- Hardenbergh, Johannes, 255
- Hardenbergh, Jufvrouw, her friend Alche Van Doren, 250; marries John Frelinghuysen, 254, 258; Hardenbergh's wooing and marriage, 255, 259; character of, 256-260; journal of, 257; letters to Dr. Livingston, 261; in Bedminster, 263; death of, 262
- Hardenbergh, Rev. Jacob R., birth and parentage, 255; wooing and marriage, 256, 259; installed pastor of Raritan Churches, 256; removal to New Brunswick and death, 261; member Prov'l Congress, 297; Revolutionary record of, 434; at Bedminster Ch. in 1778, 435; his letters to Washington at Camp Middlebrook, 489; resigns from Bedminster Ch., 594
- Hardy, Gov. Josiah, 204
- Harlingen, 181
- Harlingen Church, 180, 254
- Harpending, Peter, 504
- Harris, Benjamin, 331
- Harris, William, 172
- Harrison, John, 124, 125, 160
- Harrisonburg, Va., Germans at, 43
- Hart, John, 294
- Hart, Thomas, 112
- Hartshorne, Hugh, 112
- Hartwick, Rev. John C., 81
- Harvesting in last century, 235
- Haslet, Col. William, 375
- Hastier, John, 612

Hatfield, Capt. John, 502  
 Haverhill, Mass., 108  
 Hawdon, Michael, 130  
 Hawkins, Sir John, 222  
 Hazelius, Dr. of Zion Church, 82  
 Hazen, Judge Thomas, 561  
 Hazen, Col. and Genl. Moses, 535, 544.  
 Headley, James T., 341  
 Heard, Nathaniel, Col. and Brig.-gen., 300, 309, 313  
 Heath, Daniel, 178  
 Heath, General, William, 317  
 Heerbrand, Capt., 150  
 Heeringen, Col. von, 366  
 Heidelberg, 42  
 Heister, Genl. de, at battle of L. I., 358, 359, 360  
 Henry and Francis ship, 126, 127, 189  
 Henry, Capt. George, 374, 381  
 Henry, Dr. Robert, 599  
 Henry, Patrick, at first Continental Congress, 288; hunts with Muhlenburg and Washington, 413; leniency towards loyalists, 560  
 Herbert, John, 480  
 Herbert's Island, 171  
 Herkimer Genl., Rittenburgh's eulogy of, 38  
 Hesse-Hanau, troops from, 363  
 Hesse-Cassel, troops from, 363  
 Hesse, village of 190  
 Hessians, 8000 reach N. Y. in 1776, 312, in Piscataway 325; at Trenton and Bordentown, 348; captured at Trenton, 349; just a little in their favor, 352; troops in America, 363; Schiller's testimony, 355; uniforms of 358, 417; courtesy of officers, 360, 362; at Reading, Pa., in 1778, 361; good behavior of 362, 365; at Yorktown capitulation, 365; at battle of L. I., 365; desertions, 366-369; at Bound Brook in 1777, 408  
 Hetfield, Stephen, 478  
 Heywood, John, 112, 120, 121  
 Hillsborough, 166  
 Hillyer, Rev. Asa, 445  
 Himroth, Simon Ludewig, (Himrod) 277-279, 656  
 Hindersheid, Pastor, of Zion Church, 91  
 Hitchcock, Col. Daniel, 395  
 Hixson, Joseph, 560  
 Hoagland, Christopher, 381  
 Hoagland, Wm., 97, 158, 161  
 Hogback, The, 268  
 Hohenfriedberg, battle of, 67  
 Holcomb, Samuel, 585  
 Homes, Prof. H. A., paper of, on German emigration, 39, 41; as to Hudson River Palatines, 46  
 Hope Express Co., 230  
 Hopewell Council of War, 450  
 Hopp, Dr. Ernest Otto, 150, 152  
 Hornbaker, Joseph, of Zion Church, 82-91.  
 Horse-racing, 429  
 Horticulture in last century, 236  
 Houston, William C., 552  
 Howard, Dr. Charles A., 189  
 Howe, Gen. Sir William, character of, 322; von Elking's estimate of, 322; departure of, 449 (see Army, Howe's)

Howe, Lord, confers with Franklin, Adams and Rutledge, 188; offers amnesty, 328  
 Howell, Richard, 219, 577  
 Huddy, Capt. Joshua, 502, 542, 544  
 Hude, Adam, 189  
 Hude, James, 187, 189  
 Hudson Co., first inhabitants, 103  
 Hudson Hendrick at Newburg, in 1609, 38; lands in Monmouth Co., 102  
 Hughes, Thomas, 562  
 Hull, Benjamin, 194, 195  
 Hull, Hopewell, settles in Piscataway, 107, 194, 196  
 Hull's Tavern, 193, 194, 195  
 Hunt, Abraham, 349, 618  
 Hunt, John, 583  
 Hunt, Marmaduke, 331  
 Hunt, Stephen, buys mills on Peapack Brook, 269; member of Com. of Observation and Inspection, 286, 289, 290; Col. 1st Somerset Batt., 308; Col. Provisional N. J. Regt., 313  
 Hunter, Governor Robt. in N. Y., 38; character of, 44; his residence at Perth Amboy, 45, 201; brings fleet of German emigrants to N. Y., 45; condemns Mr. Halliday, 123  
 Hutchinson, Capt. William, 561  
 Hutchinson, Duncan, 187

**I**NDENTED servants, 149  
 India King Tavern, Phila., 57  
 Indians, Massacre of Germans by Tuscaroras, 44, 99; in State House Square, Phila., 56  
 Delawares, or Lenni Lenape, 57, 98; Six Nations of N. Y., 57, 98; Walking Treaty, 57; Narraticongs, 98; Raritan Indians, 99; traces of, on Old Farm, 100; Easton conference, 101; New Jersey's fair treatment of, 101; On the Raritan in 1650, 169; Paths across N. J., 108, 125, 182, 183; at Amboy in 1752, 215; Sullivan's campaign against, in 1779, 490; Captain Voorhees in campaign, 407  
 Indian paths, from E'town to Delaware, 108, 182; Peapack path, 125; Minisink path, 183; Somerset path, 183; through Burlington Co., 185  
 Industries of farm families, 239  
 Inglis, Charles, 454  
 Idians Ferry, 184, 186  
 Inians, John, 184  
 Inoculation, 573  
 Inquisition against loyalists, 560  
 Insley, Lt. Christopher, 558  
 Installation balls, 446  
 Ireland, Palatinates settled in, 41  
 Irish and Germans mutually repugnant, 238  
 Irvine, General, 515, 528  
 Irving, Washington, 44

**J**ACOBS, ANTHONY I., 290  
 Janse, Auke, 191  
 Jansen, Michael, 118  
 Jaques, Henry, 108  
 Jay, John, 404  
 Jay, Mrs. John, 404, 477  
 Jefferson, Thomas, introduces plough shares,

- 235; Declaration of Independence, 295; presidency of, 595  
 Jenny, ship, 602  
 Jersey Blues, 333  
 Jersey City, first settlement, 118; in 1776, 303  
 Jersey, Island of 104, 106  
 Jersey Line, First and second establishments of, 307, 333, uniforms of 333; at Brandywine and Germantown, 334; uniforms in 1779, 463; surprised at Elizabethtown in 1779, 490; starts on Sullivan's Indian campaign, 491; station in 1780, 521; at Connecticut Farms and Springfield, 523; march to Virginia, 535; at Chatham in 1782, 541  
 Jersey, origin of name, 105  
 Jinny Hole, the, 273  
 Johan Frederick, Margrave of Anspach, 68  
 Joh. George I., Duke of Sachsen-Eisenach, 68  
 Johnes, Rev. Timothy, 394, 432  
 Johnson, Alfred, 304  
 Johnson, Coart, 560  
 Johnson, David, 560  
 Johnson, Dr. Sam, 331  
 Johnson, Thomas P., 599  
 Johnston, Col. Philip, 313, 314  
 Johnston, Gen. Jeremiah, 314  
 Johnstone, Andrew, 120, 209  
 Johnstone, Dr. Lewis, 140  
 Johnstone, Euphemia, 137  
 Johnstone, John, Indian purchase, 100; complaints of mosquitos, 114; propriety interests, 120; buys Peapack patent, 126, 137; marriage of 127; Amboy residence, 127, 210; daughters of 137; death of and will, 139; sentences a negro, 225  
 Johnstone, Mary, 140  
 Jones, Judge, 354, 366, 441  
 K ALM, Prof. Peter, his account of the Hudson River Palatines, 47; His lodging expenses in Phila., 67; arrival and fellow-passengers of, 150, describes New Brunswick, 186; opinion of the Dutch, 192; describes Trenton in 1748, 229; tells of a N. J. wedding, 244; at Princeton, 499; mentions women doctors, 567 (see errata)  
 Kapp, Frederick, 356  
 Kean, John, 302  
 Keith, George, 178  
 Kelley, Joseph, 430  
 Kelsey, Enos, 292  
 Kemper, Mr. and Mrs., 538  
 Kennedy, Capt. W., 600  
 Kennedy, Rev. Samuel, 159, 402  
 Kent, ship, arrival of, 110  
 Kettledrums at Pluckamin Camp, 465  
 Keyport, 183  
 Kichiner, Dr., 456  
 Kieft, Gov. William, 177  
 Killing frolics, 239  
 Kill von Kull, 183  
 Kimball Hill, 512-526, 528  
 Kimball, Richard, 615  
 King, Charles, 181  
 King, C. L., 181  
 King, David, 93, 94  
 King George, arrival of ship, 253  
 King, Marcus, 276  
 King, Marcus of Zion Ch., 87, 93  
 King, Maria and Magdalena, 276  
 King's Councillor, the, at Amboy, 217  
 King's Highway, 185, 186, 193  
 Kingsland, Isaac, 118  
 King's Rangers, 501  
 King St., (New Germantown) 78  
 Kingston, 321  
 Kippold, Preceptor, 70  
 Kirberger, Andreas, 66, 71, 632  
 Kirberger, Anton, curator, 66, 71; a letter from, 72; death of, 278, 633  
 Kirberger, Ehrenreich, Aaron Malick's god-father, 71, 630  
 Kirberger, Gottfried, Burgomaster of Bendorf, 25; his two wives and children, 71, 631, 632  
 Kirberger, Joh. Geo., 246  
 Kirberger, Joh. Heinrich, Burgomaster of Hochstenbach, 66, 71; letter of 1760, 246  
 Kirberger, Joh. Wilhelm, 71, 632  
 Kirberger, Veronica Gerdtrutta, marries Otto, 65; her death, 66, 70; her birth, 71  
 Klein, Christian, of Bendorf, 91, 683  
 Kleinsmith, Ensign, 368  
 Klincken, Arents, 36  
 Kline, Godfrey, of Hunterdon Co., 91, 630, 683  
 Kline, Jacob, marries Johannes' daughter Veronica Gerdtrutta, 75; his home and tannery in 1750, 75; Warden of Zion Church, New Germantown, 82, 91; birth of, 95; granddaughter, Mary, 178; first tastes sugar, 238; old age crowds upon, 554; sells a slave to Aaron Malick, 603; buys slave-boy Joe, 611; genealogy, 631, 632, 648  
 Kline, John, of Readington, 75  
 Kline, John William, 95  
 Kline, Mary, 178  
 Klines, Mills, 164  
 Knebel, Gottfried, 66, 70  
 Knox, General Henry, at Phoenix tavern, 290; at Assunpink, 372; at battle of Princeton, 378; Aaron Malick's description of 386; marching from Trenton to Morristown, 389; his artillery train in 1779, 454; orders a new uniform, 462; at Pluckamin in 1779, 463; death of child of, 470; at Bound Brook Review, 485  
 Knox, Mrs. Henry, reaches Morristown camp in 1777, 395; at Pluckamin in 1779, 464; at the French alliance fete, 467; death of her 7 children, 470; character and appearance, 464; at Bound Brook Review, 484; at Morristown in 1780, 516  
 Knox, John, 442  
 Knox, Peter, 465  
 Knox, William, 462  
 Knyphausen, Genl. von, character of, 369; hangs a deserter, 368; enters N. J. in 1780, 521, 524  
 Kockerthal, Joshua, his colony, 38, 39  
 Kohl, a German traveller, 41  
 Kraff, von Charles, Philip, 364, 365, 368  
 Kuntz, Rev., of Phila., 65  
 Kurtz, Rev., of Zion Church, 84



- LAFAYETTE**, Genl., 532, 533, 541  
 Lafayette House, the, 4  
 Lambertson, Lawrence, 560  
 Lambertville, 230  
 Lamb's Artillery Regt., 377  
 Lamb, Mrs. Martha J., *Hist. of City of N. Y.*, 135, 360  
 Lamington, Pres. Ch., Founding of, 114, 158; Synod meets at, in 1778, 434; during the Revolution, 441; communion Sunday at, 445; Betty McCoy 446; minister treats elders, 447  
 Lancaster, Pa., 544  
 Landar, Labau, 478  
 Lane, Cornelius, 263  
 Lane, Matthias, 286  
 Lane, Matthew, 163, 286, 383  
 Lane, origin of name, 192  
 Lanen, Matthys Janz Van Pelt, 192  
 Langendorf, 36  
 Langstaff, John, 194  
 La Monte, George, 170  
 LaTourette, Mr. and Mrs. Cornelius W., 472  
 LaTrappe, Pa., 81  
 Laurens, Col. John, 452  
 Laurens, Henry, 467  
 Lauzun-Biron, Duc de, 539  
 Lauzun's legion, 539  
 Lawrence, Capt. Wm., 105  
 Lawrence, Elisha, 557  
 Lawrence, Elizabeth, 105  
 Lawrence, Thos., Mayor of Phila., 1735, 52  
 Lawrie, Gawen, buys share in N. J., 110, 112; as deputy gov., 119; calls Benjamin Clarke a "devil," 178  
 Laws, odd colonial, 208  
 Lawyer's bill, 599  
 Lead, a precious metal, 291  
 Lee, Captain Joseph, 568  
 Lee, David, 188  
 Lee, Genl. Charles, his burial, 60; at New-castle in 1776, 318; ordered to join main army, 319, 321; his army encamps on Peter Melick's land, 332, 335, 343; at Basking Ridge, 336, 341; character and record, 337; marches to N. Y. in 1776, 339; at Charleston, 340; captured by the British, 342, 344; will of, 346; court-martial of, 453  
 Lee, Henry, (Light-horse Harry,) appearance and record, 479; quarters of, at Camp Middlebrook, 480; at Bound Brook Review, 485; attacks Powles Hook, 492; his graduation, 500; opinion of Simcoe, 504; at battle of Springfield, 525  
 Lee, Richard Henry, 294  
 Lee, Robert E., 485  
 Lee, William, 488  
 Lee's Legion, uniform of, 463  
 Leume, Johann Gottfried, 356  
 Lenzi-Lenape, or Delaware Indians, 98, 99  
 Lenzi Whittuck, Indian name for Delaware, 98  
 Leslie, Capt. William, record, death and burial of 378, 385  
 Leslie, Genl., 372, 380  
 Leslie George, as Willock's heir, 137; buys Bedminster land, 138; limits of his tract, 140; sells the old farm to Johannes Moelich, 96, 141  
 Leslie's brook, 75  
 Leslie's ridge, 75, 76  
 Lesser Cross Roads, appearance of in 1860, 1, 8; store and school house, 9-10; first house in, 304; Lee's army at 334  
 Letters, their subtle charm, 70  
 Letters from Bendorf, Preceptor Hager, 65, 278; Anton Kirberger, 72; H. Kirberger, 246  
 Leven, Earl of, 378, 379, 386, 387  
 Lexington, battle of, 287  
 Leydt, Rev. John, 193, 250, 254  
 Liberty Hall, 302, 403, 404  
 Life Guard, Washington's, its flag, 352, uniform of, 463; appearances and uses, 478  
 Lillie, Captain, 464-465  
 Lime, introduction of, 234-235  
 Lincoln, Genl. Benjamin, quarters of at Bound Brook in 1777, 401; surprised by Cornwallis, 408; character and record of, 411; at Charleston in 1780, 521; march to Virginia, 535  
 Linn, James, 93, 219, 297, 469  
 Lippencott, Capt. Richard, 502, 544, 545  
 Literature, value of in 17th century, 109  
 Little Egg Harbor Inlet, 111  
 Livingston, Betsy, 404, 477, 517  
 Livingston, Capt., 475  
 Livingston, John, 404  
 Livingston, John R., 587  
 Livingston, Kitty, 404, 477, 517  
 Livingston Manor Patent, 46  
 Livingston, Philip, 617  
 Livingston, Rev. Dr. John H., 261, 500  
 Livingston, Robert, 285  
 Livingston, Robt. James, 587  
 Livingston, Robt. R., 587  
 Livingston, Sarah, marries John Jay, 404; at Camp Middlebrook in 1779, 477  
 Livingston, Susan, plants a tree at Liberty Hall, 302; at the Stirling mansion in 1777, 403; her cleverness and humor, 404; at Morristown review, 517  
 Livingston, William, committee to depose Gov. Franklin, 300; appointed Gov. of N. J., 301; record and residence of, 302; testifies as to British atrocities in 1776, 323; at Parsippany in 1777, 403; Family of, 403; church connections, 443; correspondence with Washington in 1779, 457; Simcoe tries to capture, 503; at Morristown review, 517; Maxwell's letter to, in 1780, 523; aids in forming constitution, 551, 552; pardons 17 loyalists, 556  
 Lowantica Valley, 392  
 Logan, William, 158  
 Log-house, building the, 145  
 London, arrival of German emigrants in 1709, 39  
 Long Ferry, 137, 206  
 Long Ferry Tavern, 206  
 Longfield, Henry, 188  
 Long Island, battle of, 314, 315, 367, 358, 365, 375, 466

Long Island, minute men on, and political aspect of, in 1776, 310; Washington's retreat from, 317

Lords-Proprietors, 107

Lossburg, Col., von, 366

Lossing, Benson J., 368, 469, 473

Lott, Abraham, 475

Lott, Cornelia, 475

Lott, Cornelius, 506

Lotteries, 171, 173, 590

Lowell, Edward K., 353, 357

Louisiana, Gayarre's history of, 48

Louis XIV. in Germany and Holland, 33; destroys Heidelberg, 42

Louis XV. intrigues with N. J. Indians, 101; in 1747 over-runs Holland, 257

Louis XVI., 132, 540

Love Grove, 205

Loveland, Lord, gov. under crown, 38, 201; locates Kockerthal's colony, 38; his death, 44

Lowe, Cornelius, Jr., 180, 585

Lowrance, Elisha, 580

Loyalists, or Tories, their oppressions in 1776, 323; treatment of, 505, 554-562

Lucas Nicholas, 110, 111

Lucas Roelef, 185

Ludlow, Henry, 161

Ludovic V., Elector Palatine, 41

Ludwick, Christopher, 369

Luther, Martin, 442

Luzerne, Chevalier de la, 517

Lyon, William, 381

# MACKEN, JOSEPH, 560

Madison, N. J., Sunday-school, in 440

Madison, James, 551, 552

Mag. of Am. History, 360

Magna Charta, 24

Mahew, the widow, 596

Mails, in 1752, 156; in 1790, 303

Malick, Aaron (Moelich Ehrenreich), birth of, 25; Warden of Zion Ch., 85, 87; Warden of St. Paul's Ch., 93; signature of, 94; marries Charlotte Miller, 243; succeeds Johannes on farm, 248; household in 1775, 276; his bond to John Van der Veer, 276; member of Com. of Observation and Inspection, 286; entertains General Sullivan, 336; arrest and release of, 344; visits the army of Pluckamin, 384; entertains Washington, 391; various Church connections, 440; survey of household in 1780, 511; letter to William and John Melick, of Canada, 554; buys Peter's Bedminster Farm, 565; sells Bedminster Tavern, 579; his sheep contract, 580; various bills of, 580, 581, 584, 592; pays carriage tax, 595; overseer of the poor, 596-9; buys slaves, 602-4; death of, 608; funeral of, 609; genealogy, 632, 633

Malick, Andrew (Andreas Moelich) 25; marriage of, 245; settles in Warren Co., 305; founds St. James' Ch., 305; commissioned a captain, 305; tombstone of, 306; juror on inquisition against Wm. Melick, 560; genealogy, 632, 636

Malick, Catherine (wife of Andrew), 306

Malick, Charlotte (Miller), 87, 243, 573, 603, 606

Malick, John (son of Aaron), his Revolutionary record, 306; marches to Long Island, 310; in provl. N. J. Reg., 313; captured at Battle of Long Island, 314; in N. Y. Sugar house, 316; marriage of, 565; keeps Bedminster tavern, 565; Dr. McKissack's bill to, 566; removes to Schoharie Co., N. Y., 579; genealogy, 633, 638

Manning, James, 195

Manning, Jeffrey, 194

Manuscript, pleasures derived from old, 142

Maria Theresa, 67

Marie Antoinette, 540

Marshall, Thomas, 189

Marston Moor, battle of, 379

Martin, John, settles in Piscataway, 107, 194

Martin, William, 478

Marvel, Andrew, 282

Mary, Queen of Scots, 442

Mary, ship, arrival of, 150

Mason, Rev. John, 441

Massachusetts bank, 582

Mather, Dewitt C., 457

Mather, Cotton, 572

Matthews, B. B., 504

Matthews, Genl., 408, 521

Mawhood, Lt.-Col., 328, 372, 378

Maxwell, Wm., Col., 1st Sussex Regt., 305; at Brandywine and Germantown, 334; captures Hessians at E'town, 369, 399; his command in 1777, 406; record of, 406; follows Clinton's army in 1778, 450; surprised at Elizabethtown in 1779, 490; at Connecticut Farms and Springfield, 523, 525

Mayflower, the sloop, 587

McCoy, Betty, 446

McCoy, John F., 174

McCrea, Jennie, 158

McCrea, Revd. James, 158, 171

McCullough, Benjamin, 560

McDaniels, Col. William, 164

McDonald, Maj. William, 166, 327

McDowell, Dr. A. W., 567

McDowell, Ephraim, settles on Axtell tract 135, 162; at Lamington Ch., 158

McDowell, Rev. John, 162, 611

McDowell, Rev. William, 162

McKean, Thomas, 541

McKidd, Calvin, 608

McKissack, Dr. William, 566

McKnight, Rev. Charles, 445

McMaster, John Bach, 233, 572

McWhorter, Rev. Alex., 431, 445

Meade, Dr. 569

Meat roasters, dogs as, 54

Medicine, 566-572

Meehan, Mrs. Jane, 455

Meg Merilles, Bedminster's, 274

Mehel, John, Vice-Pres. Provl. Congress, 293; member Com. Safety, 294, 431; Committee to depose Gov. Franklin, 300

Meizner, Conrad, 94

Meldrum, John, 600

Melick, Anthony, Anton or Tunis, of Hunterdon, his birth, 80; Father Muhlenberg's

- mention of, 85; member of Zion church, 87; entertains a Methodist and is disciplined, 88; genealogy, 682
- Melick, Cathrine (dau. of Aaron), 245, 564, 634.
- Melick, Catherine (dau. of Peter), 304; marriage and death, 336; statement as to Lee's capture, 336; genealogy, 337, 637
- Melick, Catherine (of Zion Ch.), 87; becomes a Methodist, 88; her habits of prayer, 88; genealogy, 682
- Melick, Christian, 87
- Melick, Daniel, of Bedminster (son of Aaron), executor of John Appelman, 93; birth of, 245, 564; as a militia Captain, 579; old store bills of, 583, 594, 592; as overseer of the poor, 596-599; goes to Georgia, 600-602; at Aaron's funeral, 609; buys Dick and Nance, 611; genealogy, 635, 639
- Melick, David (of Hunterdon Co.), 79; 629, 696
- Melick, Eleonora, 87
- Melick, Elizabeth (dau. of Aaron), birth and death of, 276
- Melick, Godfrey, emigrates with Johannes, 25; baptism, 71; settles in Warren County, N. J., 74; his marriage, 75; genealogy, 630; 670
- Melick Hill, view from, 14
- Melick, Jacob D., of Pa., 678
- Melick, Jacob, son of Godfrey, 554
- Melick, John (son of Daniel), 251, 640
- Melick, John (son of Godfrey), 554, 555, 671, 674
- Melick, Jonas (of Hunterdon Co.), 79, 87, 629
- Melick, Margaret (dau. of Aaron), 276, 511, 564
- Melick, Maria (dau. of Aaron), birth of, 276, 511, 635
- Melick, Peter (son of Johannes Moelich) vestryman of St. Paul's, 93; birth of, 95; marriage, 276; home and inheritance of, 304; takes British oath, 328, 399; summoned by council of safety, 430; sells his Bedminster farm to Aaron, 564; genealogy, 633, 637
- Melick, Peter (of Columbia Co., Pa.), genealogy, 629, 703
- Melick, Philip, (son of Johannes Moelich) birth of, 95; marriage of, 276; summoned by council of safety, 430; genealogy, 633, 636
- Melick, William, loyalist, 554, 555, 560, 670, 672
- Mellick, 927; various spellings of name, 94, 627
- Melsheimer, Chaplain Carl, 369
- Melyen, Rev. Samuel, 618
- Mendham, original settlers at, 159; origin of name, 165; Quakers of, 332
- Mendham Pres. Church, founding of, 159; singing by note introduced, 436
- Menge, Ernest, 596
- Mercer, Fort, 360
- Mercer, Genl. Hugh, 319, 375, 377, 378, 387
- Mercury, ship, voyage and arrival of, at Phila., 50
- Meserau, John, 590
- Messler, Dr. Abraham, 100, 134, 169, 252, 253, 256, 505, 508, 510
- Methodists, first in Hunterdon Co., 87; first in N. J., 331; during Revolution, 331
- Metlar, George W., 180
- Metlar, Samuel, 585
- Mew, Richard, 112
- Michell, Lewis, 43
- Middlebrook, 166; Indian name for, 169; wagon traffic through, 584
- Middlebrook Camp in 1777, established in May, 415; breaking camp in June, 422
- Middlebrook Camp in 1779, established in Nov., 454; weather at, 457; construction of huts at, 458; Steuben's quarters at, 472; its agreeable features, 474; brilliant young men at, 475; headquarters dinners, 456, 476; arrival of Spanish and French envoys, 482; grand review, 484, 488; Steuben's banquet, 487; an execution at, 489; breaking camp, 492; Washington-Hardenbergh correspondence, 489; Simcoe at, 505; sale of horse at, 515
- Middlebrook Tavern, 172, 490
- Middlesex Co., first inhabitants 103; patented by Gov. Nicholls, 117; Indian path through, 183; British ravages in 1776, 326
- Middletown, assembly meets at, 110; settlement and origin of name, 115; 117; Indian path through, 183
- Militia, formation of in 1775-1777, 308; a tribute to N. J., 311; record of N. J., 312, 419; attack Howe's army in 1777, 419; fighting snowdrifts, 514; at Connecticut Farms and Springfield, 522-5; after the Revolution, 577-579
- Miller, Catherine, (Melick) of Zion Ch., 87; becomes a Methodist, 88; Religious nature, 88; genealogy, 682
- Miller, Henry, of New Germantown, 87, 88; genealogy, 682
- Miller, Paul, 187
- Millidge, Ensign Phineas, 557
- Millidge, Major Thomas, 557
- Mills on Peapack Brook, 236, 249, 266
- Mills on the Raritan in 1752, 179
- Mills, Rev. Henry, 440
- Millstone, made the county seat, 166; Washington's army at in 1777, 382; Genl. Dickinson at, 401; Howe's army at in 1777, 417; Revolutionary devastation, 433; Simcoe burns the court-house, 505
- Millstone river, mills on, 179
- Mine Brook swimming hole, 11
- Ministers, importance of, in last century, 434; visiting taverns, 565; drinking habits of, 447, 617, 618; as distillers, 619
- Minnisink Path, 183
- Minute men, 309, 310
- Miralles, Don Juan de, betting on Mrs. Jay's complexion, 477; reaches Camp Middlebrook in 1779, 482; at Bound Brook Review, 486; entertained by Steuben, 487; reaches Morristown in 1780, 516; death and burial, 517
- Mississippi River, how considered in last century, 483
- Moelich, Andreas, (Malick, Andrew), 25; marriage of 245; settles in Warren Co., 305; founds St. James' Ch., 305; commissioned a captain, 305; tombstone of, 306; genealogy, 632, 636



- Moelich, Anna Cathrine, 25, 629
- Moelich, Ehrenreich (see Malick, Aaron), 25;
- Warden of Zion Ch., 85, 87; Warden of St Paul's Ch., 93; signature of, 94; genealogy, 632, 633
- Moelich, Georg Anthon, 71, 633
- Moelich, Gottfried, emigrates with Johannes, 25; baptism, 71; settles in Warren Co., N. J., 74; his marriage, 75; two loyalist sons of, 554, 555; estate of at death, 561; widow of, 562; genealogy, 630, 670
- Moelich, Hans Peter (of Bendorf), 79, 629
- Moelich, Johan David (of Hunterdon Co.), 79, 91, 92, 629
- Moelich, Johannes, in Bendorf, 25; why he emigrated, 27; his arrival in Pa., 1735, 50; registers with Secy. of Pa., 56; letters from the old country, 66, 70, 72, 246; two children die in Bendorf, 70, 632; his home in Hunterdon Co., N. J., 1750, 75; a warden of Zion church, 76, 79, 82, 91; how he spells his name, 90, 91, 92, 94, 143; subscribes for St. Paul's church at Pluckamin, 92; his family in 1750, 95; purchase of the old farm, 96, 141, 143; facsimile of signature, 143; builds Old Stone House, 145, 146, 153, 154; starts for Perth Amboy in 1752, 156; appearance in the saddle, 157; rides through the woods, 166; first visit to Bound Brook, 167; rides down Raritan Valley in 1752, 175; clearing old farm, 234; grandfather, 245; household of in 1760, 245; death of, 247; will of, 304; grave of, 385; genealogy, 629, 631
- Moelich, Johan Peter, his emigration, 26; arrival in Pa., 52; his son Tunis, 80; genealogy, 629, 682
- Moelich, Johan Peter (of Columbia Co., Pa.), 629
- Moelich, Johan Wilhelm (father of Johannes), 25, 629
- Moelich, Joh. Michael, 72
- Moelich, Jonas (of Hunterdon Co.), 79, 87, 629
- Moelich, Maria Katrina in Bendorf, 25; first walk in Phila., 51; rests at Indian King Tavern, 58; her father's family, 71; at the building of the Bedminster house, 146, 153, 154; no gadding housewife, 240; character of, 240; a grandmother, 245; death of, 248
- Moelich, Marie Cathrine (dau. of Johannes), birth, 25; marries Simon Himrod, 277; genealogy, 633, 656
- Moelich, Veronica Gerdrutta, birth of, 25; godmother of, 71; marries Jacob Kline, 75; calls her husband "a dumb Irishman," 238; genealogy, 632, 648
- Molleson, John, 194, 195
- Moltke, Gen. von, 377
- Moneybaird, 219
- Monmouth, battle of, 385, 368, 456, 466, 488
- Monmouth Co., first inhabitants, 103; settlement and origin of name, 115; Indian path through, 183; slavery statistics, 227
- Monmouth, England, 115
- Montfort, Simon de, 24
- Montgomerie, Gov. John, 202
- Montrose, Earl of, 203
- Moody, Ensign James, 557
- Moore, Alexander, 188, 190
- Moore, Jonathan, 478
- Moore, Michael, 188
- Morgan, Col. and Gen. Daniel, reaches Morristown in 1777, 406; record of, 407; at Van Veghten's bridge in 1777, 415; harasses Howe's army at Millstone, 419; attacks Cornwallis at Woodbridge, 421; following Clinton's army in 1778, 450
- Morris, Col. Lewis, settles Shrewsbury, and wives of, 115; St. Peter's Ch., 123
- Morris County, first settlement, 159; slavery statistics, 227; apple-jack introduced in, 615
- Morris, Dr. Jonathan Ford, 508
- Morris, General Lewis, 115
- Morris, General Staats, birth of, 115; marriage of, 131
- Morris Gouverneur, birth of, 115; agent of Duchess of Gordon, 131; character of, 132; receives testimony as to British treatment of prisoners, 316, 362; his estimate of Mississippi river, 483; at constitutional convention, 552
- Morris, Gov. Lewis, birth of, 115; opinion of Cornbury, 201; appointed governor, 203; character of and death, 203
- Morris, Mrs. Margaret, 383
- Morris, Richard, settles Morrisania, N. Y., 115
- Morris, Robert, 339, 468
- Morristown, founding of, 159; army at in 1777, 390, 415, 423; population at outset of war, 397; churches of during Revolution 397; punishing church members, 432; church established at, 159; encampment of 1780, 512; review at in 1780, 517; executions in 1780, 520; members of congress at in 1780, 524; meeting of Pa. line, 528; Benjamin Cooper's trial, 574
- Morristown Pres. Church, first established, 159; during the Revolution, 397; Pres. discipline, 432
- Mortimer's History of England, 40
- Morton-house, ship, arrival of, in 1728, 52
- Morton, Jacob, 402
- Morton, John, home of, at Basking Ridge, 402; entertains French officers, 538
- Morton Washington, runs off with Cornelia Schuyler, 402
- Mosquitos, 114, 590
- Mott, Dr., 203
- Mount Holly, Hessians at 363; Revolutionary devastation at, 433
- Mount Hope Mine, 367
- Mount Pleasant, 419, 459
- Mount Vernon, 541
- Moylan, Col. Stephens, uniform of his dragons, 463; appearance and marriage of, 480; home and character of, 480
- Muhlenburg, General, John, Peter, Gabriel, Ruttenburg's Eulogy of, 38; Pastor of Zion Church New Germantown, 04; at St. James Luth. Ch., 306; reaches Morristown in 1777; 412; characters and record of, 413; his command at Morristown, 413; promoted brig

- genl., 414; marches through Bedminster in July, 1777, 424; gives a ball at Middlebrook in 1779, 458; at Bound Brook review, 485
- Muhlenberg, Rev. Henry Ernst, 85
- Muhlenberg, Rev. Henry M., (Father) reaches America, 80; his character, 81; his letters to Zion Ch., 85-87; rector of Zion Ch. at New Germantown, 83; complains his conduct is misconstrued (Irish tricks), 238
- Muklewath, Elder, 344
- Muller, Rev. George, 628
- Mundaye, Nicholas, 194
- Muller, John Henry (Henry Miller), 82, 682
- Mundy, Enos, 336, 637
- Murray, Robert, 282
- Murray's Notes on Elizabethtown, 499
- Musconetcong Valley in 1707, 37
- Mutinies of Pa. and N. J. lines, 528-531
- Mutiny of Pa. levies in 1783, 548
- N**APOLÉON'S Art of War, 421
- Narraticong, or Raritan Indians, 98, 99
- National League, 623
- Nautilus, the steamboat, 588
- Navesink or Nauvessing, 183
- Neil, Capt. Daniel, 377
- Nelson, Col. John, record of and residence, 398, 585; after Queen's Rangers, 506
- Neilson, Mrs. John, 397
- Nelson, James, 187
- Neshanic, R. D. Ch., 256, 263
- Neuwied, 36
- Neversink, 183
- Nevill, Samuel, coming to America of, 141, 142; honors and dignities, 142; death of, 143; dwelling of, 211
- Nevill's laws, 142
- Nevius, Capt. Joseph, 249, 251
- Nevius, Johanna, 617
- Nevius, Johannes, 251
- Nevius, Petrus, 251
- Nevius, Wilhelmus, 617
- New American Magazine, 142
- Newark Bay, first Europeans on, 103
- Newark Causeway, 590
- Newark, settlement and origin of name, 109; condition in 1682, 117; in 1776, 303; Washington and Howe's army in, in 1776, 320; Pres. Church destroyed, 433; first Sunday school in, 440; in 1784, 590
- New Barbadoes, 118, 477
- New Brunswick, condition in 1730, 180, 185, 186, 187; first inhabitant of, 184; first church building, 185; first charter, 187; churches in 1752, 193; copper mines at, 193; stage lines, 228; condition in 1776, 303; Washington and Cornwallis at, in 1776, 321; Christ Ch., in, 189, 193, 330; Howe's army at, 408; Howe evacuates in 1777, 419; Revolutionary devastation at, 433; Washington's army at, 4 July, 1778, 452; furnishes queensware for headquarters, 456; allied armies at, 535; banks established at, 582; prosperity after the Revolution, 584; old merchants of, 585; first steamboat to, 587; Bellona Hall, 589; Raritan bridge destroyed, 591; arrival of stage coaches at, 592
- New Brunswick R. D. Church, 185, 193, 254
- Newburg, settlement of, 38
- Newburn, N. C., origin of name, 43
- Newbury, Mass., 108
- New England slave trade, 223
- New Germantown, N. J., founded in 1730, 76; Zion Lutheran Ch. at, 77; name first mentioned, 78; Lee's army at, 344; council of safety meet at, in July, 1777, 430.
- New Jersey in Revolution, 319
- New Jersey levies, 376
- New Jersey line, first establishment, 307; second establishment, 404; third establishment, 405; at Pompton in 1781, 528; mutiny of, 531
- New Jersey, origin of name, 104; birth of state, 299; in Revolution, 319; ratifies constitution, 551, 553
- New Market, Seventh Day Church at, 197; Washington's army at, in 1777, 420; Simcoe at, 504; Thomas Randolph tarred and feathered, 556
- New Netherlands, 103, 104; recaptured by Dutch in 1673, 110
- Newport bridge, 600
- New Providence, N. J., 106
- New Providence, Pa., 81, 83
- Newspapers, first Revolutionary, 282
- New York city, its charters of 1676 and 1730, 187; growth in 1778, 596
- Nicoll, Mathias, 203
- Nicholls, Gov., protests against the dukes giving away N. J., 105; patents Elizabethtown grant, 106; patents Monmouth to Richd. Stout, 117
- Nisbitt, Jonathan, 141
- North Branch, R. D. Church, 224, 251, 252
- North Branch of Raritan, view of, from Peapack stage, 4
- North, Major William, 473, 488
- Nova Cesarea, 104
- Nut Island, Palatines encamp on, 45
- Nymeguen, treaty of, 33
- O**AKLEY, JACOB, 187, 191
- Oakey, origin of name, 192
- Oakey, William, 187
- O'Brien, Daniel, 228
- Obstetrics, 568
- Ogden, Aaron, 491, 588
- Ogden, Col. Matthias, 507
- Ogden, Dr. Uzal, 226
- Ogden, John, 106
- Ogden, tory, 530
- Ogilby, Prof. John, 386
- "Old Farm," approach to the, 12; description of, 13-21; purchase of, 96; boundaries in 1751, 97; cost and title, 98; Indian traces on, 100; clearing the land, 234; life on from 1752 to 1763, 233
- Olding, William, 195
- Old Sow, 513
- Old Stone House, first view of, 16; living room or farm kitchen, 18, 240; building of, 145, 146, 153; the first meal in, 154; eating and drinking in, 17, 18, 154, 239, 240; sugar first used in, 238; industries of, 239, 242;

- furniture of, 18, 241; utensils in, 241; wearing apparel of inmates, 241; Washing day 243; first baby, 245; household in 1760, 245, on a military thoroughfare, 390; Washington's visit to, 391; survey of household in 1788, 564; Daniel Cooper's wedding in, 573; negro slaves in, 602-9; household in 1798, 604
- Onderdonk's Revolutionary Incidents, 362, 368
- Op de Millstone Church, 190, 254
- Opie Farm, 14
- Opie, Walter, 76
- Oppey, Ann, 597
- Opsinderin, 190, 263
- Otto, Georg Peter, 65, 71, 72
- Otto, Magdalena Christina Catharina Antontta, 65
- P**ACK-HORSES in Phila. in 1735, 61
- Paintings, first collection in America, 210
- Palatinates, their hegira to London in 1709, 39; their settling in Ireland, 41; the Carolinas, 43; N. Y., 44, 46; Livingston Manor, 47; Pennsylvania, 48; their numbers on the Hudson, 46; their grievances against N. Y., 47; Pa. laws as to registry, 46
- Paoli, Wayne's surprise at, 466
- Parker, Elisha, 108
- Parker, James, of Amboy, 211, 328
- Parker, James, of Woodbridge prints E'town bill in chancery, 107; prints Nevill's laws and Smith's hist. of N. J., 142
- Parker, John, 120
- Parker, Sir Peter, 291, 312
- Parsippany, 403
- Pastorius, Francis Daniel, settles German-town, 36, 39; His death, 61
- Paterson, William, asst.-sec., 1st Prov. Congress, 287; member Provl. Congress of 1776, 297; Committee to depose Gov. Franklin, 300; record of, 301; member Council of Safety, 431; at Constitutional Convention, 552
- Paulus Hook, 590
- Paupers, 596
- Pausch, Captain, 364
- Pauw, Michael, 118
- Pavonia, 118
- Peace, treaty of, 547
- Peale's, Washington, 495, 496
- Peapack, the stage, 1; origin of name, 125; Indian paths, 125, 183; lime first used, 235
- Peapack Patent, granted to Johnston and Willocks, 125; its limits, 130, 132; Axtell buys portion of, 133; division of remainder, 137, 139
- Pearson, Abraham, 109
- Penhorn Creek, 118
- Penn. John, 299
- Penn. William, his American grant, 36; his inducements for settlers, 39; Phila. house of, 58, 59; buys an interest in N. J., 110, 111, 112
- Pennington, in 1776, Cornwallis' army at, 345
- Pennsylvania, inducements it offered to German emigrants, 28, 38, 39; arrival of the Palatinates, 48; its German population in 1717, 1719, 1727, 1738, 4749, and 1766, 48-49
- Pennsylvania Merchant, brigantine, voyage, and arrival in 1733, 51
- Peppard, Rev. Francis, 436
- Pepys' opinion of Lady Carteret, 105
- Perine, Peter and Daniel, 564, 634
- Perry, Samuel, 430
- Perth Amboy, settlement and origin of name, 113; Raritan and S. I. ferries establd., 122; in 1752 is Somerset's P. O., 156; corporate limits of, 187; as a provincial capital, 200; chartered in 1718, 201; beauty of, 199, 205; Love Grove, Sandy Point, and Town Green, 206, 207; lack of patriotism, 208; St. Peter's Ch., 123, 137, 141, 211. Pres., Ch., 212; social aspects, 215; tales of a King's councillor, 217; taverns in 1752, 206, 228; stage; routes through, 229; a garrison town, 329; disaffection at in 1776, 208, 329; Simcoe at, 503; treasury robbed at, 575
- Perth, Earl of, 112
- Perth, Scotland, 113
- Pettinger, John, 560
- Petty, John, 560
- Pewter, use of, 54
- Philadelphia, in 1735, 50; population of, 52; Indian King tavern, 57; Christ Church adjoins the Pond, 57; Quakers in 1735, 58; Penn's house, 58; Equipage in 1735, 61; yellow fever in, 63; stage lines to, 228; continental army in 1777, 333; Washington at, 370; British evacuate, 450; allied armies at, 535, 537, 540; Yorktown surrender announced at, 541; bank of N. A. established, 581; old Union Line to, 588
- Phila. light-horse, 1st troop, 376
- Philip, ship, arrival of in 1665, 105
- Phillips, General, 532
- Phillips, Maj. Joseph, 313
- Phillipsburg, Lee's army at, 344
- Phil's Hill, 480, 503
- Phoenix, John, 290
- Phoenix, Sarah, 290
- Physicians, 566-572
- Physicians, ministers as, 438, 497
- Pickel, Abraham, 147
- Pickel, Balthazar (Baltis) advent'n Hunterdon Co., 79; grave, 79; warden of Zion Ch. 78-87
- Pickel, William, 147
- Pickel's Mountain, 79
- Pictorial Effect of War, 416
- Piece of Eight, value of, 98
- Pierce, Daniel, 108
- Pieterse, Christian, 118, 191
- Pike, Genl. Zebulon Montgomery, 108
- Pike, John, patriarch of Woodbridge, 108-109
- Pinhorne, William, 118
- Piscataqua Maine, 108
- Piscataway, an Indian village, 99; settlement and name of, 108, 184; assembly meets at, 110; condition in 1682, 117; Johannes' visit to, in 1752, 193; town records, 195; Baptist churches established, 196, 197; St. James' Church, 198; Howe's army in, in 1776, 323



Pitlochie, Laird of, 126, 127  
 Pittsburg, in 1776, 302  
 Plainfield, 230, 303; Quaker meeting at 331; fighting at, 421  
 Plainfield, South, 125  
 Plaquemine, 165  
 Plows in last century, 235  
 Pluckamin, first view of, 3; arrival of stage, 4; St. Paul's Lutheran Ch. at, 84, 85, 92, 93, 94; Eoff's purchase, 140, 162; appearance in 1752, 162-164; origin of name, 165; cavalry raids in, 326; Washington's army at, in 1777, 383; Mrs. Washington at, 397; the artillery park in 1779, 461; General and Mrs. Knox at, in 1779, 463; the French alliance fete, 466; death of Julia Knox at, 470; Jacobus Van der Veer's insane daughter, 471; general trainings at, 478, 607; old time storekeepers, 531, 583; burial of Aaron Malick, 610  
 Pluckamin Mountain, first view of, 3  
 Plumsted, Clement, 112  
 Pompton, army halts there in rainstorm, 423; the Schuyler and Colfax homesteads, 477, 478; N. J. line at, in 1781, 528; mutiny at, 531  
 Pool, John, 585  
 Post Offices in 1752, 157  
 Post, Theunis, 224  
 Potts, Joseph C., 350  
 Potts, Stacy, 350, 599  
 Pound, colonial, in 1752, 98  
 Powelson, Jacob, 131  
 Powles Hook, Lee attacks, 492  
 Pres. Church, Amwell, 174; Bound Brook, 171, 173; New Brunswick, 193; Princeton, 175, 495  
 Presbyterians in the Revolution, 433, 443; beer at presbytery, 618  
 Princeton, army retreats through in 1776, 321; General Putnam at in 1877, 400, 401; Revolutionary devastation, 433; Pres. Church in Revolution, 495; appearance in 1748, 499; allied armies at, 535; Claude Blanchard's description of, 537  
 Princeton, Battle of, 377, 395, 466, 495  
 Princeton College, educates Shawriskhekung, 102; lottery for benefit of, 174; Jonathan Edwards' presidency, 214; Witherspoon's presidency, 296; the commencements of 1779 and 1883, 495; at battle of Princeton, 378, 495; during Revolution, 495; Gov. Belcher's library, 496; naming Nassau Hall, 496; founding of college, 497; removal to Princeton, 499; studies in last century, 500; confers degree on Nathan Strong, 619  
 Procession of the seasons, 266  
 Procter's Artillery Regt., 376, 409  
 Propriety interests, their sub-div., 119, 120  
 Provincial Congresses, 287, 289, 291, 293, 297  
 Provincial officers in English army, 557  
 Provisional N. J. Regt., 313, 314  
 Prussia, 67  
 Putnam, Genl. Israel, at Princeton in 1777, 400; at Camp Middlebrook in 1779, 457; protests against liquor selling, 620

QUAKERS, in Penna. in 1766, 49; in Phila. in 1735, 58; buy half of N. J., 110; Benjamin Clarke disciplined by, 178; at Plainfield, 331; in Revolution, 331; in Mendham, 332  
 Quassaick Creek, 38  
 Queen's American Rangers, the, 501  
 Queen's College, 261, 500  
 Queen's Own, the, 345, 521  
 Quibbletown, Seventh Day Church at, 197; Washington's Army at, 420; Simcoe at, 504; Thomas Randolph tarred and feathered, 556  
 Quick, Abraham, 131  
 Quilting frolics, 239  
 Quinti partite deed, 111  
 R AID of Queen's Rangers, 501  
 Raikes, Robert, 439  
 Railroad statistics, 232  
 Rall, Colonel, 343, 349  
 Randolph, Peyton, 285  
 Randolph, Thomas, 556  
 Rankin, Rev. John C., 159  
 Rapahannock, Va., the Falls of, Germans at 44  
 Raritan Church, when erected, 251, 252; destruction of, 433, 505, 509; present church built, 510  
 Raritan Indians, 98, 99, 169  
 Raritan Landing, lots sold by lottery, 174, industries in 1752, 179; destruction of water-power, 180; the Low mansion, 180; Simcoe's raid, 506; stores and warehouses at, 585  
 Raritan river in 1650, 169; Mills on, in 1752, 179; Col. Laurens description, 452; frozen for 4 months, 513  
 Raritan, the steamboat, 588  
 Raritan Valley, in 1650, 169; in 1752, 175; John Field's purchase in 1695, 176; mills in 1752, 179; distilleries in 619  
 Ratisbon, treaty of, 33  
 Raynal, the abbe, 221  
 Read, Rev. Israel, 171  
 Reading, John, 203, 204  
 Readington township, origin of name, 203  
 Redemptioners, 148-153  
 Reed, Chas., of Phila., 56  
 Reed, Col. Joseph, 377, 500  
 Religion during Revolution, 433  
 Religion in last century, 213, 427  
 Religion in N. J., in 18th century, 213, 431, 498  
 Rentals in last century, 205  
 Reporter, Revolutionary, 469  
 Reuber, Corpl. Joliannes, 358  
 Reusch, Rev. Johannes, 629, 630, 631, 670  
 Revolutionary War, cause of, 281; close of, 547; prostration after, 549, 553  
 Reynolds, Daniel, 575  
 Reynolds, Sir Joshua, 485  
 Rhodes, Charles, 561  
 Ribble, George, 560  
 Richardson, Joseph, 597, 599  
 Richards, Rev., 445  
 Richie, Ann, 137, 138  
 Richmond, Duchess of, 516

- Richmond, James, 586  
 Ridley, Matthew, 401  
 Riedesel, Baroness, 239  
 Riedesel, Gen. von, 239, 359  
 Riggs, Ambrose, 112, 120  
 Rinehart, Godfrey, of Zion Ch., 88  
 Road, a country, 12  
 Roads, early, Bernardsville to Lamington, 161; Great Raritan, 167; Dutch trail and King's highway, 182; Trenton to Amboy, 229; York, 230; Somerville to Pluckamin, 166; their condition in 1768, 231  
 Roberts, Lieut. Owen, 543  
 Robeson's Mills, 179  
 Robin, Abbe, 537  
 Robinson, Joseph, 291  
 Rochambeau, Count de, 526, 534, 540  
 Rochefoucault-Liancourt, Duke of, 502  
 Rocky Hill, 179, 321  
 Rodgers, Rev. John, 441, 442, 445  
 Rodney, Capt. Thomas, at Assunpink and Princeton, 374; diary of, 381, 386; at Pluckamin in 1777, 385; marching to Morristown, 388; James Tilton's letter to, 538  
 Roe, Rev. Azel, 445  
 Roelifson, Lawrence, of Zion Church, 82, 90  
 Rogers, Major Robert, 501  
 Rogers Rock, 501  
 Romeyn, Rev. Theo. F., 594  
 Rosbrugh, Rev. John, 444  
 Rosengarten, J. G., 367  
 Ross, Dr. Alex., 189  
 Ross Hall, 189, 585  
 Roxiticus, 159  
 Royal Deux Pont's regt., 536  
 Roycefield, 170  
 Royce, John, 170  
 Ruckert, Simon Ludwig, 66, 70  
 Rudyard, Benjamin, 120  
 Rudyard, Thomas, 112; as deputy-gov., 119, 120, 132; buys land at Bound Brook, 170  
 Run, Johannes' first drink of, 57; introduced in America, 614  
 Runyon, David D., 195  
 Runyon, Noah D., 195  
 Runyon, Peter A., 195  
 Runyon, Peter P., 598  
 Rupp, Prof. I. D., 41  
 Rush, Dr. Benjamin, when he signed the Declaration, 296; letter to Gen. Lee, 339; at battle of Princeton, 377, 379; at funeral of Capt Leslie, 385; record of, 387; his graduation, 500; as a temperance reformer, 620-623  
 Rush, Leane, 596  
 Rutgers College, 261, 500  
 Rutgers, N. J., origin of name, 192  
 Rutherford, 118  
 Rutherford, Walter, 135  
 Ruttenburgh, E. M., Newbur's historiand, 38  
**S**ABINES loyalists, 557, 559  
   Sagorighweysghsta, 101  
 St. Clair, Gen. Arthur, 373  
 St. James' Ch., Piscataway, 197  
 St. James, Lutheran Ch., 905  
 St. John's Church, Etown, 174  
 St. Paul's Lutheran Ch. Pluckamin, 84, 85, 94; damaged by British, 326; as a prison in 1777, 384, 434; Capt. Leslie buried in churchyard, 385  
 St. Peter's Church, Amboy, 123; benefits by Willock's will, 137; pewholders in, 141; parsonage, 211; Sunday morning at, 219  
 Saintonge reg't, 536  
 Salaries, official, 301  
 Salem, N. J., founding of, 110  
 Salmon's Herbal, 569  
 Sand as a floor covering, 17, 54, 154  
 Sanford, Capt., 503, 5, 7, 8  
 Sanford, Capt. Wm., 118  
 Sandy Hook, first white man's grave in N. J., 103; first shipwreck on, 116; Clinton's army on, 450; hanging of Huddy, 542, 543  
 Sandy Point, 206  
 Santhicans, 99  
 Saugerties, Palatines at, 46  
 Savannah, 601  
 Sayn-altenkirchen, county of, 68  
 Scammel, Major Alexander, on Sullivan's staff, 341; sacrifice of, at Camp Middlebrook, 481; correspondence and death of, 482; march to Virginia, 535  
 Scarborough, arrival of ship, 203  
 Schenck, Alce, 250  
 Schenck, Capt. Henry, 327  
 Schenck, Col. John, 327  
 Schenck, Hendrick, 179  
 Schenck, John, 429  
 Schenck, Peter, 292, 429  
 Schenck, Rev. George, 6  
 Scheyichbi, Indian name for N. J., 98  
 Schmidt, Rev. Joh. Georg., of Bendorf, 70, 630, 633, 656, 670  
 Schnizlein, Carl, 354  
 Schoharie Co., N. Y., Palatines in, 46  
 Schomp's Mills, 16; establishment of, 249, 267; description of, 270; purchased by N. Arrowsmith, 598  
 Schooley's Mountain in 1707, 37  
 Schrenck, Rev. Ludolph H., of Zion Ch., 82  
 Schureman, James, 508  
 Schuyler, Abm., David and Philip P., 189  
 Schuyler, Arent, 477  
 Schuyler, Casparus, 477  
 Schuyler, Colfax, 478  
 Schuyler, Cornelia, 402  
 Schuyler, Derrick, 187, 189  
 Schuyler, Elizabeth, 516  
 Schuyler, Gen. Philip, 341, 476, 477, 517, 560  
 Schuyler, Hester, 478  
 Schuyler, Peter, buys Gov. Carteret's house, 105  
 Schuyler's "Colonial New York," 180  
 Schwartz, George, of Zion Ch., 91  
 Schwenckfelders, arrival of in Pa., 51  
 Scotch emigration, 27, 114, 127, 442  
 Scotch Johnny's N. Y. tavern, 228  
 Scotch Plains, Gen. Sullivan at, in 1777, 401  
 Scott, George, 126, 127  
 Scott, Prof. Austin, 188, 190  
 Scudder, Dr. John, Joseph and Mary, 315  
 Seabury, Rev. Samuel, 174

- Seahorse, the steamboat, 588  
 Sears, Isaac, 281  
 Sebring, Abraham, 179  
 Sebring, Roelef, 185  
 Segars, 241  
 Sergeant, Jonathan D., 287, 288  
 Seventeenth British Reg't, 328, 373, 378, 386  
 Seventh-Day Baptists, 197  
 Sharp, Christian, 560  
 Shaw, John, 430  
 Shaw, John C., 459  
 Shaw, Major Samuel, 465  
 Shawriskhekung, 102  
 Sheep contract, a, 580  
 Sheldon's light-horse, 341, 491  
 Shenandoah Valley Germans, 43  
 Shippen, Dr. William, 568  
 Shippen, Joseph, Jun'r, 499  
 Shoemakers, generals as, 239  
 Sholtze, David, arrival in Pa., 51  
 Shooting matches, 432  
 Shrewsbury, settlement of, 115  
 Shuppman, Jacob, of Zion Ch., 90  
 Silesia, 67  
 Siloy, Samuel, 430  
 Simcoe, Col. John Graves, 502  
 Singing in churches, 436  
 Six Mile Run, 165, 179  
 Six Mile Run Church, 252, 254  
 Six Nations of N. Y. send the Delawares  
   west, 57; their locality, 99; honor Gov. Bern-  
   nard, 191; in 1776, 302; Sullivan's campaign  
   against, 490  
 Sixteenth British Light Dragoons, 345  
 Skelton, Thomas, Phila's first hackman, 61, 62  
 Skinner, Courtlandt, 329, 557  
 Skinner, Rev. William, 123, 198, 211, 329  
 Slater, Edward, 194, 195, 196  
 Slaves, buying ground of, 13; a negro auction  
   in Phila., 53; short hist. of, in N. J., 220; in  
   Perth Amboy, 223; New England, 223; value  
   in N. J., 224, 226; cruel punishments, 225;  
   colonial and N. J., slavery statistics, 227;  
   manumission laws, 227; in Georgia in 1792,  
   600; on the Old Farm, 602-612; auction sale  
   of, on Old Farm, 611  
 Slave trade, 221  
 Sloops on the Delaware, 231, 587  
 Sloops on the Raritan, 585  
 Sloop travel, 229, 230  
 Smalley, Isaac, 195, 196  
 Smalley, John, 194  
 Smallpox, 572  
 Smallwood, Col. William, 374  
 Smiley, William R., 611  
 Smith, Dr. Stanhope, 500  
 Smith, Ensign William, 579  
 Smithfield (New Germantown), 78  
 Smith, Margaret, 137  
 Smith, Miles, 585  
 Smith, Peter, 560  
 Smith, Ralph, the founder of New German-  
   town, 77; leases land to Zion church, 78  
 Smith, Richard, 105  
 Smith, William Lovet, 75  
 Smith's Hist. of N. J., 142  
 Snell's Hist. of Hunterdon and Somerset, 134  
 Society for propagation of the Gospel in  
   foreign parts, 123, 196, 198, 497  
 Soissonnais reg't, 536  
 Soldiers of 1776, 332, 334  
 Somerset Co., first permanent inhabitant,  
   106; when set off, 165; wild beasts in, 167;  
   Indian path through, 183; first church in,  
   185; slavery statistics, 227  
 Somerset Land Grants, 129  
 Somerville, stage routes, 1, 230; birth of, 165,  
   509; condition in 1779, 455  
 Sonmans, Arent, 112, 141  
 Sonmans, Joseph, 101  
 Southard, Abraham, 160  
 Southard, Henry, 161, 402  
 Southard, Samuel L., 101, 161, 402  
 Southern campaign of 1791, 532-541  
 Spain, relations with, in 1779, 483  
 Spinning, 175, 239, 242  
 Spinning visits, 239  
 Springfield, N. J., stages through, 230; patriotic  
   women, of, 333; Pres. Church destroyed,  
   433; first Sunday-school in, 440; battle of,  
   523, 525  
 Spring Valley, 392  
 Staats, Barent and Katrina, 189  
 Staats House at Bound Brook, 472, 457  
 Staats, Major Abraham, 115  
 Stage coaches, 591, 592  
 Stage travel, 1742 to 1752, 228; Swiftsure  
   coach line, 230; hardships of, 231, 591  
 Stair, Earl of, 106  
 Stamp act, The, 281, 282  
 Stanwix, Fort, 622  
 State House at Phila. when new, 56  
 Staten Island, Stirling's sally in 1780, 515  
 State troops, 376  
 Steamboats, introduction of, 587  
 Steele, Richard, as a friend of Gov. Robert  
   Hunter, 44  
 Steele, Capt. John, 524  
 Steel, John, 430  
 Stelle, Benjamin, 196  
 Stelton, 196  
 Stephen, Genl., Adam, 372  
 Sterling, Genl., 521  
 Steuben, Baron Frederick W. A., at Valley  
   Forge, 374, 472; character and appearance,  
   471, 472; his "Regulations for infan-  
   try," 473; quarters of at Bound Brook, 472;  
   at Bound Brook review, 485; staff officers of,  
   533  
 Stevens, John, 188  
 Stewart, Col. Charles, 398  
 Stewart, Col. (of Pa. line) 530  
 Stewart, James, 561  
 Stewart, Lieut. James, 504  
 Stillwater, George, 76  
 Stirling, Lady, as a hostess in 1777, 402  
 Stirling, Lady Kitty, as a hostess in 1777, 402;  
   at Pluckamin Fete, 467; wedding of, 493;  
   entertains Manasseh Cutler, 495  
 Stirling Lord, wife of, 135; house and estate  
   of, 160, 307; arrests Gov. Franklin, 300;  
   removed from King's Council, 298; John



- Penn's letter to, 299; record of, 306; on retreat through Jerseys, 321; at battle of Trenton, 349; at battle of Long Island, 314, 357, 358, 375; sends relief to Lincoln at Bound Brook, 410; staff officers of, 491, 533; decay of his mansion, 493; loss of fortune, 494; sally on S. L. in 1780, 515
- Stockton, Major Richard, 558
- Stockton, Richard, 78, 219, 326
- Stockton, Robert, 599
- Stone, William, L., 296, 358, 360
- Stony Point, attack on, 492
- Stoothoff, Sarah, 191
- Storekeepers, 582, 586, 592
- Stout, Family, 117
- Stout, Josiah, 586
- Stout, Richard, receives patent of Monmouth Co., 117
- Stover's Mills, 203
- Stoves, first in Bedminster Ch., 265
- Stowe, Mrs. Harriet Beecher, 223
- Streit, Leonard, 94, 135
- Streit, Rev. Christian, 305
- Strong, Rev. Nathan, 619
- Stryker, Capt. John, 387
- Stryker, Genl. Wm. S., 306, 373, 532, 557
- Stryker, Sarah, 582
- Stutzer, Cornet Johan, 362
- Sugar, first used in Old Stone House, 238
- Sugar-houses, 316, 445
- Sullivan, Genl. John, eulogy of Col. Johnston, 314; appearance of, 336; commands Lee's army, 341, 344; at battle of Trenton, 349; Aaron Malick's description of, 385; at Scotch Plains in 1777, 401; his Indian campaign, 490; staff officers of, 533
- Sumner, Prof., W. D., 98
- Sunday observances, 437, 438
- Sunday-schools, introduction of, 439
- Sutphen, Guisbert, subscribes to St. Paul's ch., 93; at Lamington ch., 158; aids in building Bedminster ch., 263; treasurer of Bedminster ch., 276; member of Com. of Observation and Inspection, 286, 289; commissioned justice of the Peace, 576
- Sutphen, John, 290
- Sutphen, Peter, 577
- Sutton, Levi, 597, 607
- Swift, Dean, as a friend of Gov. Robert Hunter, 44
- Swiftsure coach line, 230
- Symmes, John Cleves, 302, 396, 404
- Symmes, Judge Timothy, 561
- T**ANNERY on Leslie's Brook, 75; on Peapack Brook, 236, 267, 271
- Tansy punch, 616
- Tarleton, Banastre, 345
- Tavern rates in 1748, 228
- Taylor, Adj't. William, 558
- Taylor, General John, 602, 603
- Taylor, Sheriff John, 558
- Tea first used in N. J., 238
- Teepie, Christopher, 94; residence of, 164
- Teepie, George, subscribes to St. Paul's Ch., 93; buys Bedminster land, 130; residence of, 164
- Teepie, John, subscribes to St. Paul's Ch., 93; residence of, 135, 164; summoned by Council of Safety, 430
- Teepie, Peter, 430
- Telegraph, first in N. J., 230
- Teller, Rev. W., 440
- Temperance movement, 620-623
- Ten Eyck, Capt. Jacob, 178, 306
- Tennent, Dr. V. B., 568
- Tennent, Rev. Gilbert, 193, 213, 253, 431
- Terhune, Albert and Eva, 253
- Terrible, arrival of ship, 204
- Thacher, Surgeon James, 457, 458, 468
- Theatre, first in America, 218
- Theodoric, king of Glamorgan, 115
- Theology in last century, 213
- Theveny, Pastor, 628
- Thirty Years' War, 30, 36; Destruction of Langendorf, 36; Destruction of Heidelberg, 42
- Thomas, Capt. Evan, 543
- Thomas, Lt. Col., 309
- Thompson, Elder, Wm., 440
- Thompson, Hon. Jos., 75
- Thomson, John, 430
- Thompson, Rev. Henry P., 432
- Thompson, Samuel, 170
- Thompson, John, 188
- Thoreau, 275
- Three Mile Run, 185
- Three Mile Run Church, 185, 252
- Thumers, Rev. Georg of Bendorf, 71
- Tilghman, Col. Trench, character and appearance of, 475; engagement and marriage, 517; brings news of Yorktown surrender, 541
- Tilghman, Philemon, 475
- Tilton, Jane, 538
- Tinturn, Vale of, 115
- Tinton, 115
- Tobacco in last century, 241
- Tomer, Margaret, 562
- Tolstoi's Science of War, 393
- Toms River, 543, 568
- Toucey, Isaac, 172
- Tories and loyalists, their oppressions in 1776, 323; treatment of, 505, 554-562
- Tory Jim, 504
- Training days, 478, 578, 607
- Travelling, stage routes across N. J., 228, 229, 236, 589, 590; roads and taverns, 228, 231, 691, 592; sloops, 230, 596, 597; steamboats introduced, 587; stage coaches, 591, 592
- Treadwell, A. M., 393
- Treat, Robert, 109
- Trenton, battle of, 349, 358, 368, 466
- Trenton, founding of, 60; a P. O. in 1752, 156; in 1748, 186; stage lines to, 228; prosperity in 1748, 229; Washington's army reaches, in 1776, 321; first Methodist in, 331; first Sunday-school in, 440; Mrs. Washington at, in 1780, 516; allied armies at, 532, 537; Washington's quarters, Jan., 1777, 557
- Trent, William, of Phila., 60
- Troup, Lieut. Robert, 316
- Trumbull, Gov. Jonathan, 297, 300

- Tryon, Gen'l, 521  
 Tucker, Dr. Dean of Gloster, 330  
 Tucker, Sam'l, 292, 294, 328  
 Turenne, General, 33  
 Turkey, N. J., 106  
 Turner, Robert, 112  
 Tuscarora Indians massacre Germans in  
     No. Carolina, 44; join the Five Nations of  
     N. Y., 99  
 Tuttle, Rev. Joseph F., 397  
 Tyneson, John, 252  
 Twenty-four proprietors of East N. J., 112  
 Tye, Col., 642  
 Tyler Wat, 40  
**U**NIFORMS, Continental in 1776, 332, 335,  
     341; of N. J. Line, 333; of Sheldon's  
     light-horse, 341; Queen's Own, 345; Hessians  
     358, 417; British, 417; Brunswick Dragoons,  
     358; Continental in 1779, 463; Knox's artillery,  
     462  
 Uniforms, French, 536, 538, 539  
 Union Co., Clayton's history of, 523  
 United States, condition of, in 1776, 302  
 Utensils, household, 241  
**V**ACCINATION, 573  
     Vail, John, 142  
 Valley Forge, 374, 449, 488  
 Van Ardsdale, Capt. Isaac, 327  
 Van Ardsdalen, Hendrick, subscribes to St.  
     Paul's Ch., 93  
 Van Ardale's hotel, 600  
 Van Bergh, Dinah, her friend Alche Van  
     Doren, 250; marries John Frelinghuysen,  
     254, 258; Hardenbergh's wooing and mar-  
     riage, 255, 259; character of, 256-260; journal  
     of, 257; letters to Dr. Livingston, 261; in  
     Bedminster, 263; death of, 262; at Bedmin-  
     ster Ch., in 1778, 435  
 Van Busshkerk of Zion Ch., 87  
 Van Boskerck, origin of name, 118, 191  
 Van Buskirk, Lieuts, John and Thomas, 558  
 Vanderbilt, Cornelius, 588, 589  
 Vanderea, David, 560  
 Van der Veer, Dr. Henry, 5, 327  
 Van der Veer, Dominicus, 162  
 Van der Veer, Elias, 162, 327  
 Van der Veer Family, origin of, 162; varied  
     spelling of name, 276  
 Van Der Veer Jacobus, at Lamington Church,  
     158; settles on the Axtell tract, 135, 161; aids  
     in building Bedminster Ch., 263; his bond  
     to John Van der Veer, 276; Knox quarters  
     with, 463; death of his insane daughter, 470  
 Van der Veer, Jansse, 161  
 Van der Veer, John, 131  
 Van der Veer, John, of Flatbush, 276  
 Van der Veer, J. T., 131  
 Van der Veer, Philip, 131  
 Van der Veer's Mills, 4, 162  
 Vandeventer, Christopher, 430  
 Vandeventer, Jacob, 597  
 Van Doren, Alche, 250  
 Van Doren, Christian, 249  
 Van Doren, Jacobus, 249  
 Van Doren, John, Washington quarters with,  
     382  
 Van Doren, Mrs. John, hung by the heels, 382  
 Van Doren, Lewis A., 250  
 Van Doren, Sheriff Abram, 226, 249  
 Van Doren, William A., 250  
 Van Dorn & Ditmars, 592  
 Van Dyck, John, of New Brunswick, 188  
 Van Dyck, origin of name, 191  
 Van Dyke, Lieut. John, 376  
 Van Dyke, Major John, 558  
 Van Dyke, Ruloff, 294  
 Vanetta, Peter, 560  
 Van Horne, Cornelius, 147  
 Van Horne, origin of name, 191  
 Van Horne, Philip, 480, 503  
 Van Houten, John G., 147  
 Van Neste, Jacob, John, and Peter, 226, 250  
 Van Neste, Pieter, 252  
 Van Neste, Rynier, 263  
 Van Nest, Jerome, 131  
 Van Norden, Peter, 173  
 Van Norden, Tobias, 173  
 Van Nuys, John, 188, 192  
 Van Nuys, origin of name, 192  
 Van Pelt, origin of name, 192  
 Van Princis, Penelope, 116  
 Van Quellen, Robt., 108-109  
 Van Ripper, or Van Ripen, origin of name, 191  
 Van Schoenderwoert, Jacobus, 192  
 Van Tienhoven, Cornelius, 161  
 Van Veghten's Bridge, Simcoe at, 503, 505  
 Van Veghten, Derrick, 416, 458  
 Van Veghten House, 458, 459, 474, 479  
 Van Veghten, Michael, 252, 458  
 Van Voorn, Jacobus, 249  
 Van Voorst, Cornelius, 118  
 Van Wagenen Family, 118, 192  
 Van Wart, origin of name, 192  
 Van Winkle, origin of name, 191  
 Vaughan, Rev. Edward, 122, 198, 497  
 Van Zant, origin of name, 191  
 Vealtown, the night of Lee's capture, 343;  
     Pa. mutineers at, 530; Bullion's Tavern at,  
     537  
 Vegetables of last century, 236  
 Veghte, John V., 111  
 Vendues in the olden time, 515, 610, 616  
 Vergennes, Count de, 482, 546  
 Verplanck, Abm. I. and Catalyna, 189  
 Village greens, 207  
 Violent William, 120  
 Virnejoux, M. Jan Louis de, 342  
 Volser, Jacob, 94  
 Von Bulow, D., 152  
 Von Heeringen, Col., 315  
 Von Rauser, Christopher Wilhelm, 69  
 Voorhees, Capt. Peter V., 506, 507  
 Voorhees, Coert Van, 179, 187, 190, 191  
 Voorhees, Garret, 506  
 Voorhees, Jacques, 235  
 Voorhees, John, of Bedminster, 296  
 Voorhees, John D., 173  
 Voorhees, Minnie, 188, 190  
 Voorhees, origin of name, 191  
 Voorhees, Ralph, 100; 179, 180, 250, 260, 619  
 Voorleeser, 253  
 Vreeland Family, 118

- Vroom, John, 594  
 Vroom, Peter D., 439
- W**ASHINGTON, French minister, 181  
 Wagon traffic, 229, 584
- Waldeck, Prince of, troops from, 354  
 Walker, Capt. Benjamin, 473, 487  
 Walking Treaty, 57  
 Wallace House, 455, 456, 476  
 Warne, Thomas, 112
- Washington, George, meets Germans in Va., in 1748, 44; as Pres. of a lottery scheme, 174; his ride to first continental congress, 285; at Phoenix tavern, 290; takes command of army, 291; extols N. J. militia, 311, 525; letters as to the disaffected, 329; equipoise of, in face of adversity, 347; treatment of Hessians, 359, 363; letter about Hessian desertions, 368; Hessian coachman of, 370; at Assunpink, 373; at battle of Princeton, 378; at Millstone after Princeton, 382; in Pluckamin after Princeton, 383; Aaron Malick's description of, 385; at Morristown in 1777, 390; at the Old Stone house, 391; appearance in the saddle, 381, 392, 485, 488; the world's testimony of, 392; his quarters at Morristown in 1777, 394; meets his wife at Pluckamin, 396; letter to Gov. Cook, 393; talents as a general, 393; hunts with Muhlenburg, 413; at Middlebrook in 1777, 415-422; at Hopewell Council, 450; headquarters at Somerville in 1779, 455; orders queensware, 455; behavior at dinner, 456; correspondence with Livingston in 1779, 457; his eulogy of Greene, 459; regards for Mrs. Greene, 460; at the Pluckamin Fete, 467, 468; at Staats House, Bound Brook, 463, 487; his "Lowland Beauty," 479; M. Gerard's impressions of, 482; at Bound Brook Review, 485; his servant "Bill," 488; letter of, to consistories of Raritan church, in 1779, 489; at Princeton in 1783, 495; at Morristown in 1780, 516; at Morristown, review, 517; at Connecticut Farms and Springfield, 523; winter quarters in 1721, 528; quells Jersey line meeting, 531; deluding Sir Henry Clinton in 1781, 534; in Bedminster on the way to Virginia, 535; compliments Count de Ferson, 540; at Mount Vernon in 1781, 541; letters regarding Captain Asgill, 545, 546
- Washington, appearance and character of, 285, 347, 370, 381, 385, 391, 392, 393, 456, 463, 482, 485
- Washington, Mrs. George, reaches Morristown Camp in 1777, 395; her annual visits at headquarters 396; at Pluckamin in 1777, 397; her life at Morristown, 397; travelling expenses in visiting camp, 398; at Camp Middlebrook in 1779, 455, 456; at the Pluckamin Fete, 467; knits a queue net for Colfax, 477; false alarms at headquarters, 479; at Bound Brook Review, 484; at Morristown in 1780, 516, 524
- Washingtonian Movement, 623
- Waterloo, 516
- Watkey, Henry, 291
- Watson Brook, 221
- Watson, Elkanah, 590
- Watson, John, 210
- Wayne, Gen'l Anthony, at Phoenix tavern, 290; promoted brig-gen'l, 414; letter in 1777 from Mount Pleasant, 419; encamps at Middlebrook in 1779, 460; surprised at Paoli, 466; at Bound Brook review, 485; attacks Stony Point, 492; quells Pa. line mutiny, 528-31; in Virginia in 1781, 533
- Weddings, observances and laws relating to, 243
- Weedon, Col. and Gen'l, 375, 414
- Weiss, Philip, of Zion Ch., 82, 90
- Welcome, ship, her arrival with William Penn, 51
- Wesley, John, "Calm address" of, 331; primitive physick of, 568; stigmatizes rum sellers, 620
- West, Ann, 130, 131
- Westfield, Revolutionary devastation at, 433
- West Indies, slaves in, 224
- West Jersey, settlement of, 110; partition from E. J., 111; government transferred to crown, 120
- West, John, 131
- Westminster, Treaty of, 110
- Weston, fight at, 399
- Weston, mills established at, 179
- West, Robert, 112
- Weygand, Rev. Joh. Albert, of Zion Ch., 82
- Wharton, Robt., 120, 131
- Whetten, Mrs. Captain, 361
- Whippany, N. J., 636
- Whitaker, John, 108
- Whitefield, George, 431
- Whitehead, William A., 114, 119, 125, 127, 194, 210, 211, 224, 617
- White House, 75, 594
- White, Philip, 543, 544
- White Plains, battle of, 317
- White, Rev. Dr. William, 330
- White slavery in N. J., 148-153
- White's Tavern at Basking Ridge, 336, 341
- Wickes, Dr. Stephen, 568
- Wick's Farm, 513
- Wicks, Tempe, saves her horse, 526
- Widows, laws relating to, 244
- Wied, Count Frederic of, 36
- Wild beasts, 62, 67
- Wilbrord, Missiopyary, 628
- Wilkinson, Major James, 341, 342, 343
- William of Orange, 33
- William III. of England, 33
- Williams, Peter, 401
- Williamson, Genl., 395
- Williamson, James and Peter, 560
- Williamson, Lawrence, 187, 190
- Williamson, Peter, 173
- Williamson, William, 187
- Williamson's History of No. Carolina, 44
- Willmott, Samuel, 267
- Willocks, Dr. James, 120, 122
- Willocks, George, Indian purchase, 100; marries Margaret Winder, 120, 122; arrives in

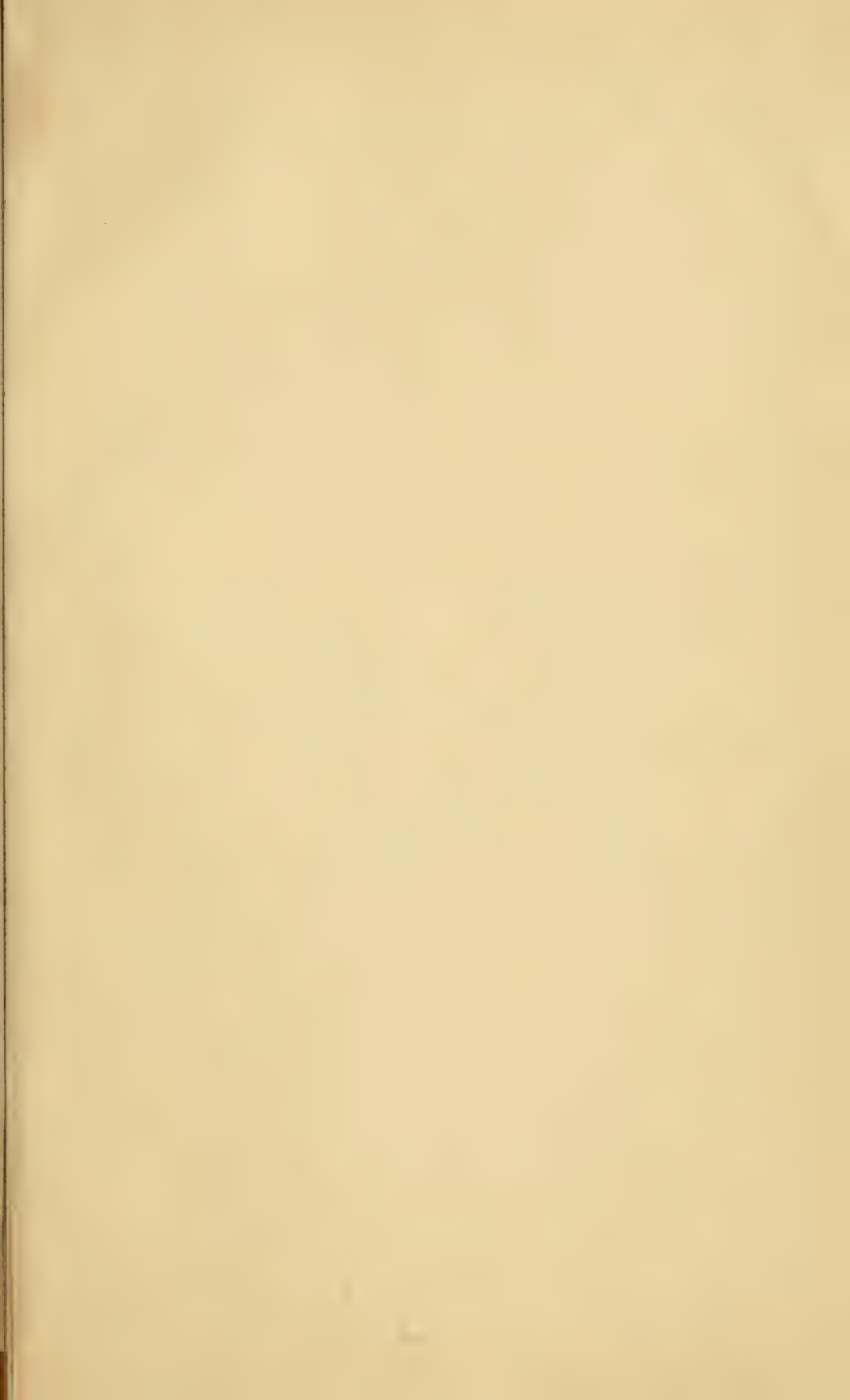


- N. J., 122; home of, 122; benefactions to St. Peter's, 124; buys Peapack Patent, 125; death and will of, 136
- Willocks, Margt., marriage, 122; death, 124
- Willot, Thomas, 430
- Wilson, Capt. Robt. and Mrs., 398
- Wilted Grass, 102
- Winder, Margaret, marries George Willocks 120, 122, 130; death of, 124; buys Somerset land, 130
- Winder, Sam'l, 120, 122
- Winfield, Charles H., 119
- Winnigen, 25, 628
- Winslow, Betsy and Sallie, 465
- Winterbottom's history of America, 568
- Wintersteen, James, 596
- Witherspoon, Rev. John, at second cont'l congress, 295; record of, 296; at prov'l congress, 297; rebukes Gov. William Franklin, 300; home of, in Scotland, 379; his dress in congress, 442; at Phila. Synod in 1775, 442; questions Mrs. Jay's complexion, 477; aids in forming constitution, 551, 552
- Wolfenbruttel, emigration from, 37
- Women, occupation on farms, 239, 242
- Woodbridge, N. J., settlement and origin of name, 108, 184; assembly meets at, 110; condition in 1682, 117; first Sunday-school in, 440; religious condition in 1717, 498
- Woodbridge, Rev'd John, 108
- Wood frolics, 239
- Wood, Rev'd Mr., 193
- Woods, Dr. Leonard, 618
- Woodstock, Va., 84
- Worms, destroyed in 1689, 36
- Worth, Richard, 108-109
- Wortman, Johnnes David, 630
- Wortman, John, 164, 286, 289, 290, 384
- Wortman, Widow, 597
- Wrangel, Charles Magnus, 87
- Wyckoff, Cornelius M., 249
- Wyckoff, Peter, 560
- Y**ELLOW Fever in Phila., 63
- Yombo, 608, 612
- York, Duke of, his grant of N. J., 104; second grant of N. J., 110; grant to 24 props., 112; patents Monmouth to Richard Stout, 117;
- York road, The, 203
- Yorktown, surrender at, 365, 367, 406, 482, 491, 532, 538, 541
- Yungstraem, Prof. Kalm's companion, 57
- Z**ENGER Johanna, her arrival in America, 46
- Zenger, John Peter, his trial for libel, 46
- Zion Lutheran Church, New Germantown, N. J., when founded, 76; the lease of church lot, 77; Father Muhlenberg's connection with, 80; its various ministers, 81-90; letters from Father Muhlenberg to, 83-86; the congregation in 1773, 87; extracts from its archives, 77, 86, 91, 92, 93



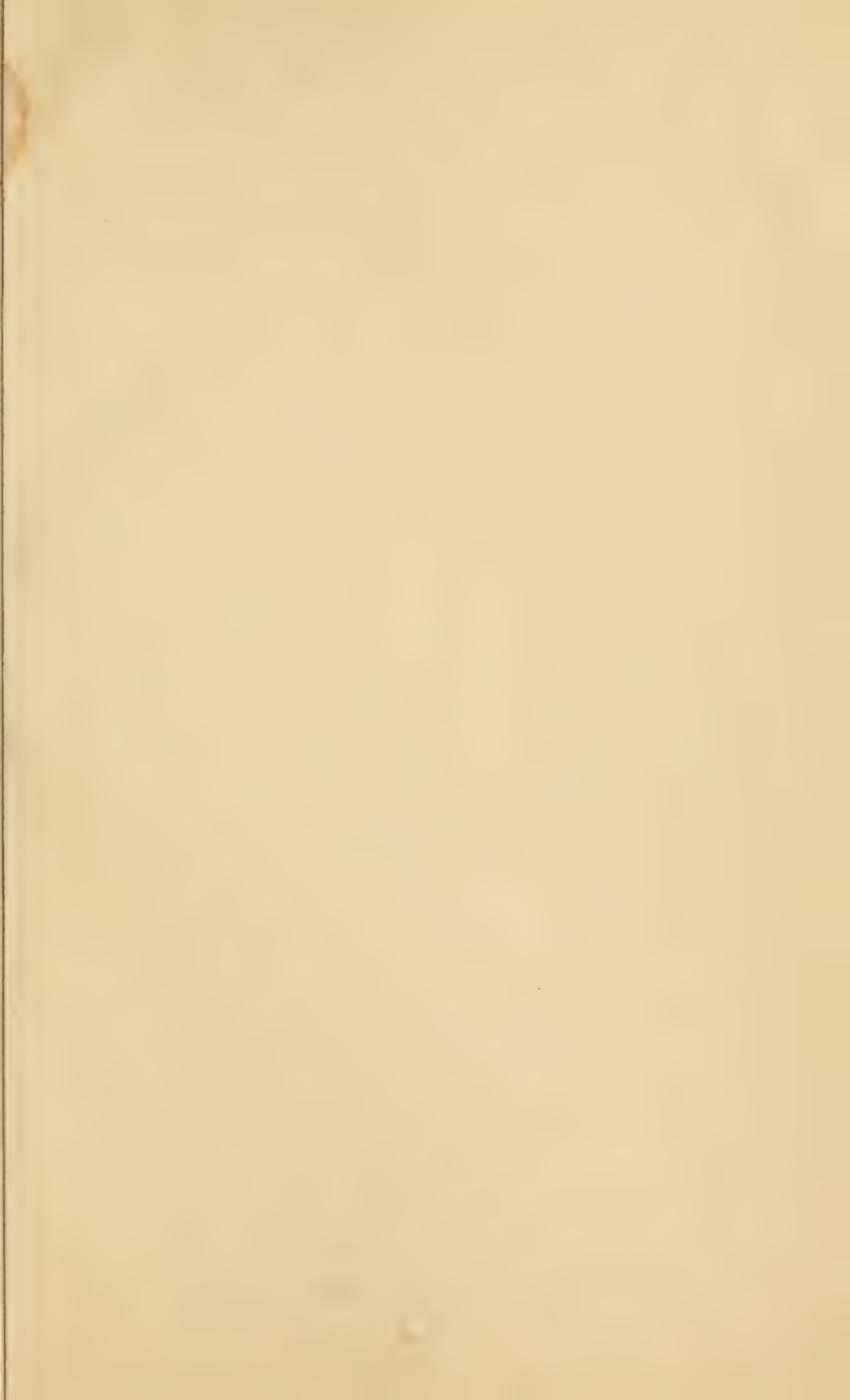
## ERRATA.

- Page 6—First paragraph; for "cheery-cheeked." read chërry-cheeked.
- Page 31—Seventh line from end of first paragraph; for "were" appalling read was appalling.
- Page 57—Second paragraph; Professor Kalm's visit to Philadelphia was in 1743, not 1728.
- Page 104—Eleventh line of second paragraph; for "Cartaret" read Carteret.
- Page 277—First line of second paragraph; for "fourth" child read sixth child.
- Page 290—First line of third paragraph; for the "company" met read the committee met.
- Page 414—Seventeenth line of second paragraph; for "DeBoore" read DeBorre.
- Page 454—Ten lines from end of second paragraph; for "J. Galloway" read Samuel Galloway.
- Page 541—First paragraph; it was after midnight on the twenty-third, not the twentieth, that Lieutenant Colonel Tench Tilghman reached Philadelphia bringing the news that Cornwallis had surrendered on the nineteenth.
- Page 629—Twelfth line of fourth paragraph; omit "he standing godfather in 1712 for her son Johan David (XVII.)."; second line below, for "Johan Peter (XIX.)" read (XXVIII.) Johan Peter (C).
- Page 656—For "Marie Cathetine" (A 7) read Marie Cathrine.
- Page 660—In caption of page for "Himrod" read Ryan.
- Page 671—Andrew (8) was born in 1751, not in 1759.
- Page 682—Maria Catharine (3); her husband John Henry Müller (Henry Miller) was not active in the affairs of Zion Lutheran Church at New Germantown, N. J., he being of the German Reformed persuasion. See p. 87.
- Page 689—James (28-IV.) has six ch., the eldest being Bernhardt Kennedy, b. 1 June, 1846, m. 18 Oct., 1876, Frances C., dau. of Cornelius Perry, M. D., of Winfield, Kansas.
- Page 691—Wm. and Mary K. King's (45-I.) one ch. is not Abraham, but E. Brown; he m. Stella Ramsey of Paterson, N. J., and has 3 ch. The fourth child of John and Sarah Crown (45-II.) is not Buddie but David.
- Page 693—The one child of John Walter (61-VI.) is Victor Raymond, b. 31 May, 1887.



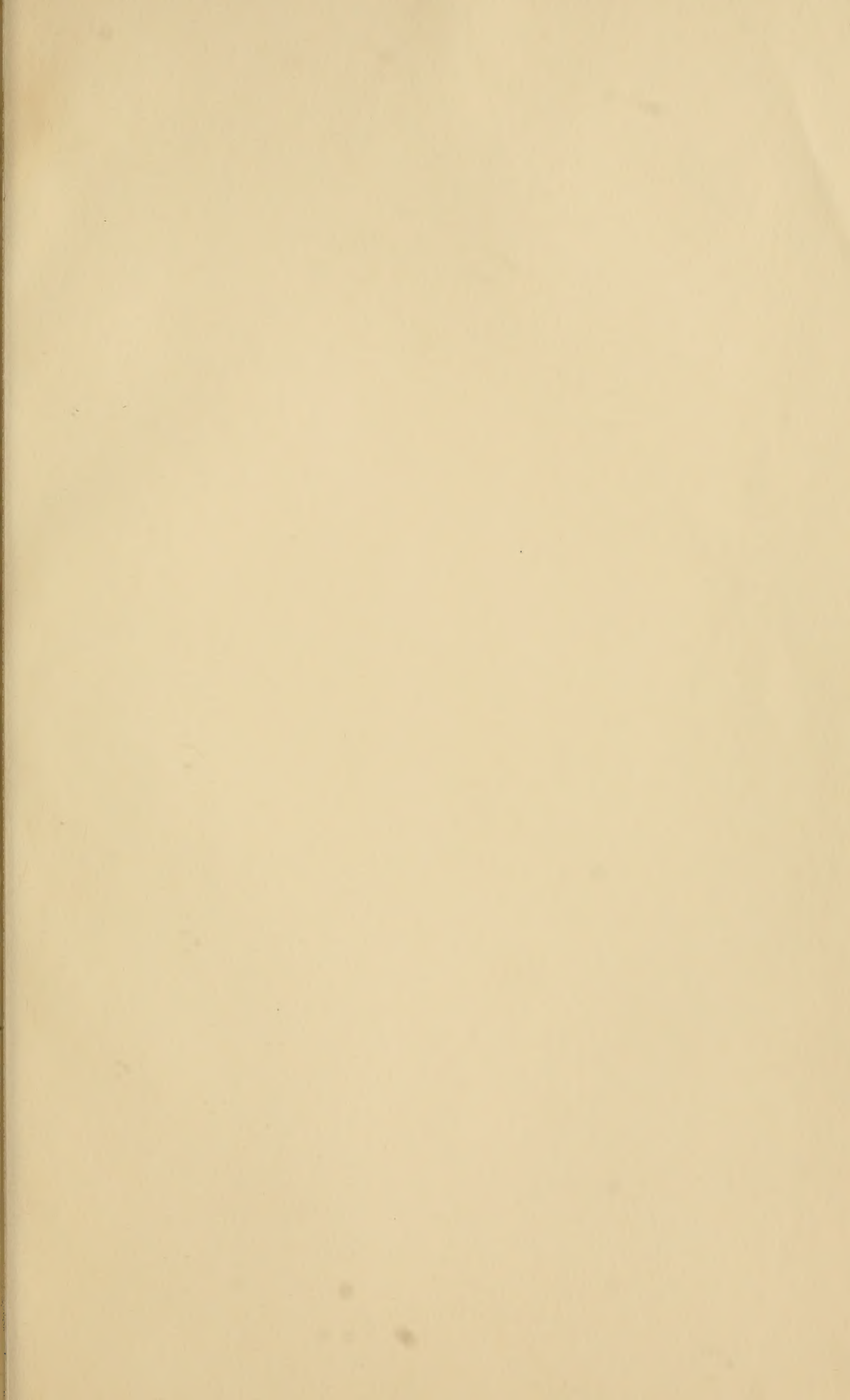


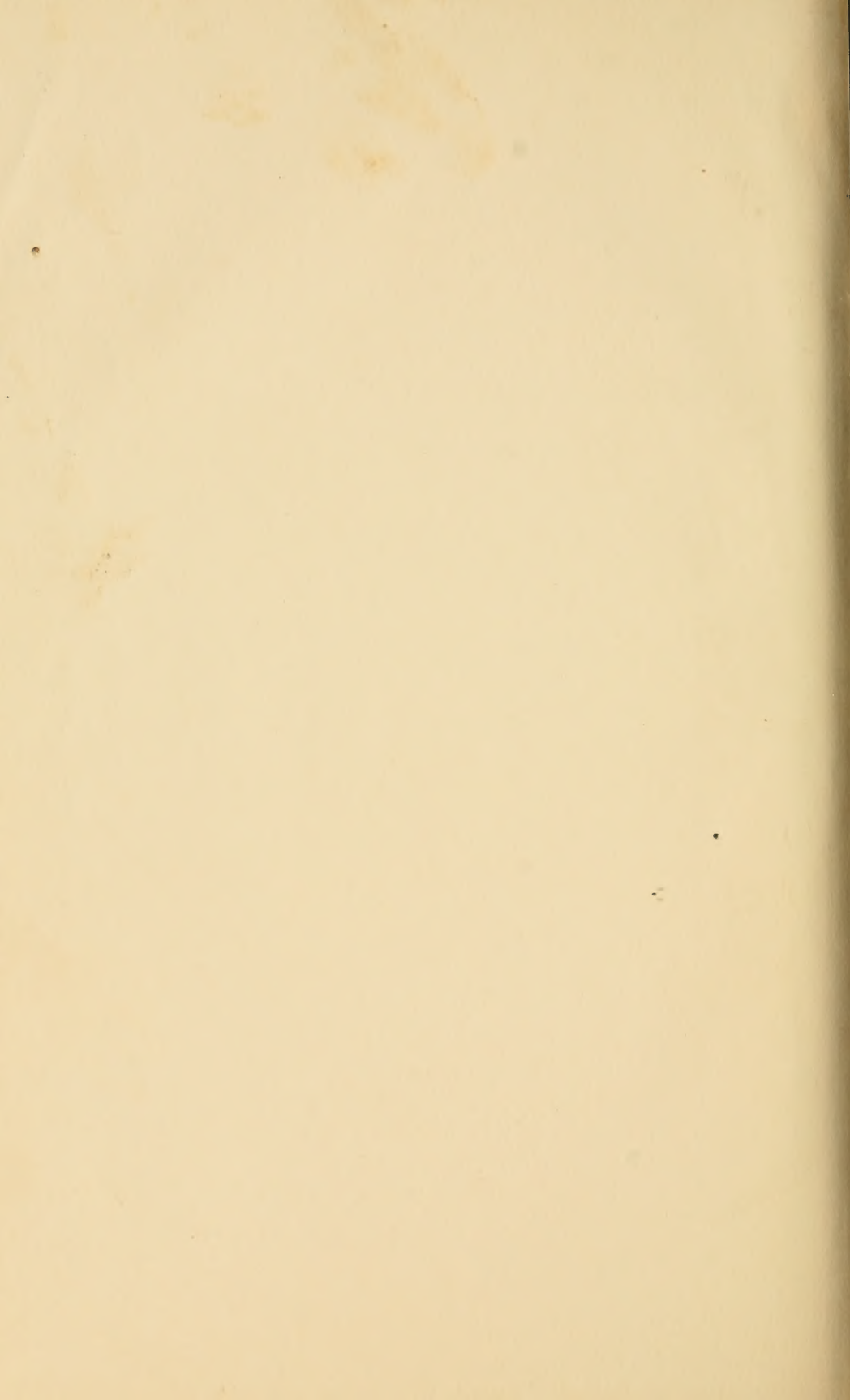


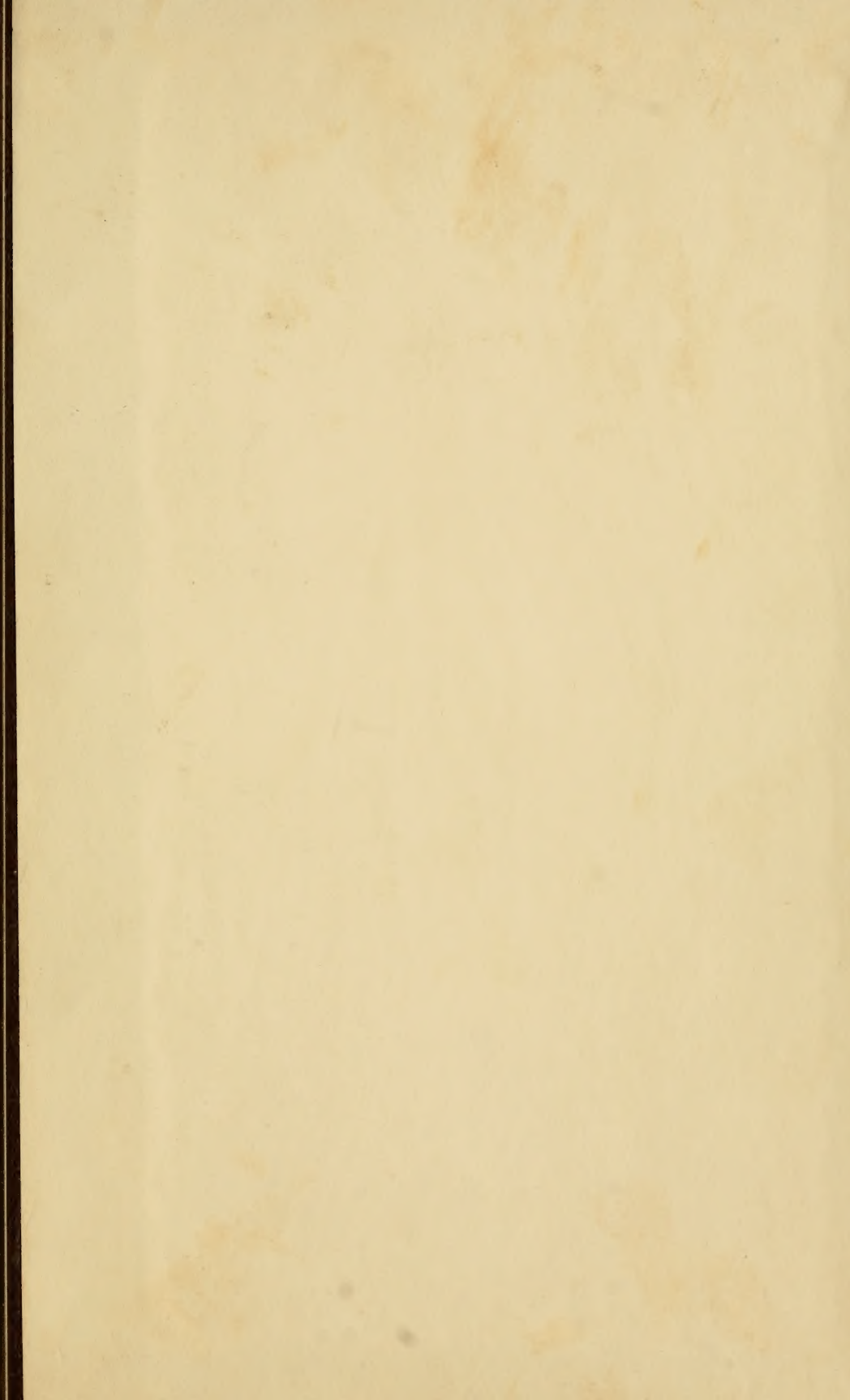














LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 209 058 2

